

581.974.727

B631







Pedigrees in vol. 2:

- 40. Pell.
- 88. Schuyler.
- 197. Jay.
- 216. Heathcote.
- 233. Tomkyns.
- 240. Popham.
- 350. Bartow.
- 405. Underhill. (5)
- 422. Ferris.
- 424. Ludlow.
- 446. Leggett.
- 455. Morris.
- 616. Van Cortlandt.
- 653. Odell.
- 673. Strang.



THE  
HISTORY  
OF  
THE SEVERAL TOWNS, MANORS, AND PATENTS  
OF THE  
COUNTY OF WESTCHESTER,  
FROM  
ITS FIRST SETTLEMENT  
TO THE  
PRESENT TIME.

*Carefully Revised by its Author.*

---

BY THE LATE REV. ROBERT BOLTON,

AUTHOR OF THE "GUIDE TO NEW ROCHELLE," AND  
A MEMBER OF N. Y. HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

EDITED BY THE REV. C. W. BOLTON, NEW ROCHELLE.

---

VOLUME II.

*"It is the privilege of History to impart the experience of age, without its infirmities; to bring back things long obscured by time, or sinking into oblivion; and enable us to form some reasonable conjectures of what may happen to posterity".—POULSON'S HIST. OF HOLDERNESS.*

---

NEW YORK:  
CHAS. F. ROPER, 27 ROSE STREET.  
1881.

F127

.WS

B64

1881

V.2



VOL. II.

THE TOWN

OF

OSSIN-ING.

---

This township is bounded on the East and South by Mount Pleasant, (of which it once formed a part,<sup>a</sup>) on the West by the Hudson river, and on the north by New Castle and the Croton river. Like the neighboring townships, it was originally included within the honour and fee of Philipsburgh.

*Ossin-ing*, the proper Indian orthography of the word variously written Sin-sing, Sing Sing, Sin Sinck and Sink Sink, is derived from *ossin*, (a stone) and *ing* (a place) or "stone upon stone:"<sup>b</sup>—a name exceedingly characteristic of this beautiful town, whose coast is guarded by a vast munition of rocks and ancient boulders. At a very early period *Ossin-ing* constituted a part of the possessions of a powerful Mohegan clan called the Sint Sings.

April the 22d, 1643, appeared before the Dutch Director General Kieft in Fort Amsterdam, Oratatrim, sachem of Ack-kin-kas-hacky, who declared he was deputed by those of Tappan, Reekgawanck, Kicktawanc and Sint Sinck, to conclude a peace with the Dutch in the following manner, viz.: that all the injustices committed by the said nations against the Netherlanders, or by the Netherlanders against said nations, shall be forgiven and forgotten for ever; reciprocally promising one another to cause no trouble the one to the other; but whenever the savages understand that any nation not mentioned in

---

<sup>a</sup> This town was separately organized, May 2d, 1845. Laws of N. Y., 1845. Also 69 Session, 1846, chap. XXX., 265 section.

<sup>b</sup> N. Y. Hist. Soc. Pro-1844, 101. *Ossin* in the Chippeway denotes "a stone," and *Ossineen* "stones." Trans. Amer. Antiq. Soc. vol. ii., 70.

this treaty might be plotting mischief against the Christians, then they will give to them timely warning, and not admit such a nation within their own limits. To secure and confirm this peace, presents were given on both sides, while God is prayed that this peace may be duly observed by the savages. <sup>a</sup>

30 August, 1645. Aepjen, chief sachem of the Mohegans personally appeared at Fort Amsterdam, as a delegate to the general council held there, in behalf of the Wappinecks, the Weckquaesqueecks, the Sint Sings and the Kicktawancks. <sup>b</sup>

In the year A. D., 1663, the Sint Sings appear to have been without a chief. <sup>c</sup>

Between the Indian village of Sin-sing and the Kitchawanck, (Croton,) the early Dutch maps place another Indian settlement, called in Van der Donck's map of 1656, Kestaubuiuck; in that of Nicholaus Johannes Visschers, 1659, Kestauboiuck. <sup>d</sup>

"Along the East shores of the Tappan, says Mr. Schoolcraft, is the village of Kastoniuck, (a term still surviving in the opposite village of Niuck or Nyack.) The name of Nyack does not occur, continues the same authority, in records of the earliest period for the position of the present town. The word is found in an opposite Indian village of Kastoniuck. <sup>e</sup>

The first grantee, under the Indians of Ossin-ing, was Frederick Phillipse to whom on the 24th of August, 1685, they released "all of that tract or parcel of land situate, lying, and being by the northermost part of the land late purchased by Frederick Phillipse, and so running alongst Hudson's river to the creek or river called Ketchawan, and called by the Indians Sint Sinck, with the use of half the said creek, and from thence running up the country upon a due east line until it comes to a creek called Niperan, by the Christians, Yoncker's creek, and so running alongst the said creek till it comes to the northerly bounds of the said land of Mr. Frederick Phillipse, and from thence alongst the said land till it comes to Hudson's river, together with, &c., &c. The grantors were

WESKENANE,  
KEANARHAM,  
MAMANNANE,

CRAWMAN,  
WEUNICKTANON,  
WEREMENHORE.

WAPPUS,  
AQUAINES,

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Rec. ii. 220.

<sup>b</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N. p. 356.

<sup>c</sup> Alb. Rec. xxi. 247.

<sup>d</sup> See map attachment to the new series of the N. Y. Hist. Soc. vol. i.; also Dutch map, printed by Thomas Starling, Wilmington Square, London, from the original in the possession of S. Converse, publisher, N. Y.

<sup>e</sup> Proceedings of N. Y. Hist. Soc. 1844.



Here followeth the schedule or particular of the goods paid by the grantee for the above said lands.

|     |                        |       |                        |
|-----|------------------------|-------|------------------------|
| 50  | feet of black wampum,  | 12    | blankets,              |
| 100 | do. white wampum,      | 12    | fathom of stroudwater, |
| 11  | kettles,               | 50lb. | of powder,             |
| 12  | larger ditto.          | 30    | bars of lead,          |
| 15  | fathom of trade cloth, | 20    | axes,                  |
| 12  | guns,                  | 15    | hoes,                  |
| 15  | shirts,                | 40    | knives,                |
| 12  | pair of stockings,     | 20    | stone jugs             |
| 2   | ankers of rum,         | 1     | iron chain,            |
| 12  | drawing knives,        | 2     | rolls of tobacco,      |
| 6   | adz's,                 | 2     | pistols. <sup>a</sup>  |

This Indian purchase was confirmed to his son Phillip Philipse by royal patent, dated 12th January, 1686, under the hand and seal of his Excellency, Thomas Dongan, Governor of the Province.

"For all that land situate upon Hudson river to the northward of land purchased by Frederick Phillipse, and reaches to Kitchawan creek, (Croton,) and is called by the Indians Sinck Sinckes, which is to run upon an east line to Bronx river, the northerly bounds thereof to be Kitchawan creek. And whereas the aforesaid Philip Philipse hath by virtue of the said license, and by my approbation, according to the law and practice of this government, for a valuable consideration purchased of the natives and Indian owners all their right, title and interest, claim and demand, of, in and to a certain tract or parcel of land, being a part of the land aforementioned within the aforesaid license, and situate and being by the northernmost part of the land purchased by Mr. Frederick Phillipse of the city of New York, merchant, and so running alongst Hudson's river to a certain creek or river called Kitchawan, and from thence running along the said creek two English miles, and from thence running up the country upon a due east line till it comes to a creek called Niperan, by the Christians Yoncker's creek, and so running along the said creek until it comes to the northerly bounds of the said land of Frederick Phillipse, from thence along said land until it comes to Hudson river, as by the Indian deed of sale thereof, bearing date 13th of August, A.D., 1685."

On the death of Frederick Philipse, A. D., 1700, this portion of the Manor of Phillipsburgh passed by will to his second son Adolphe Philipse; who dying without issue in 1749, it became vested in his nephew, the Hon. Frederick Philipse, son of his eldest brother, Philip

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Book of Pat. v. 90.

Philipse. The last mesne lord was Colonel Frederick Philipse, with whose attainder these lands expired in the Philipse family.

The subsequent proprietors who purchased under the commissioners of forfeitures, were the Wards, Orsers, Cranks, Bazelies, Ackers, Purdys, Merritts, McCords, Bishops, Balyeas, Storms, Jones, Millers, Ryders, and others.

The village of Sing Sing, is remarkable for the beauty of its situation ; in which respect, it is hardly surpassed by any of the river towns. Spreading on the delightful banks of the Hudson it rises gradually to a height of one hundred and eighty feet above tide water overlooking the magnificent scenery of the Tappan Bay, near its confluence with the Croton. A beautiful ravine intersects the village, running nearly east and west, through which flows a pretty stream called the Sin Sinck run, or Kill brook. These waters rise among the hills east of the village, and after giving animation to numerous picturesque scenes, empty into the Hudson, near the vicinity of the upper dock. The course of this brook, a mile above the village, is marked by some singular phenomena. Among these are the Devil's stairs, formed in the face of a perpendicular rock 60 feet high, consisting of 16 steps. This extraordinary freak of nature is best seen from the south-west bank of the ravine. Directly beneath the stairs in the rocky bed of the river, are some rude marks closely resembling the prints of horses shoes. These, however, are only visible at low water. Immediately to the south, and almost close to the waters edge, is situated the Indian cave. The rocks of the same region abound in copper ores, such as copper pyrites, black sulphuret of copper, and green carbonate of copper ; likewise iron pyrites ; but they are not found in such abundance as to warrant any extensive operations.

North-east of the village is the Dale Cemetery, incorporated January 17, 1851, with about fifty acres improved ; it has twelve trustees. The first president, Aaron Ward ; vice-president, Marlborough Churchill ; treasurer, S. Lockwood ; secretary, Geo. E. Stanton.

The following monuments are to be found there :

This was the first interment :

IN MEMORY

of

REV. JACOB GREEN,

for 27 years Pastor of the

Presbyterian Church of Bedford,

Westchester County.



Private Chaplain of the  
Sing Sing Prison,  
Born Aug. 13, 1790,  
Died Oct. 25, 1851.  
Aged 61 years.

In the work of the  
Gospel Ministry he spent  
a devoted and useful life  
He endured unto the end  
He fought a good fight  
He finished his course  
with joy  
Mark the perfect man  
and behold the upright  
for the end of that man  
is peace, xxxvii Psalm, xxxvii.

*Front.*

HERE REPOSE  
The Mortal Remains  
of  
ABRAHAM HYATT,  
one of that Band  
of  
Incorruptible Patriots  
who achieved the  
Independence of their Country  
and transmitted  
to their Posterity  
The Fairest Form of Government  
That Human Wisdom  
can devise.

*West End.*

This ardent and devoted friend of American Independence, entered the army in 1776, as a Second Lieutenant with a Commission from John Hancock: and in 1779, by a Commission from John Jay: under these Commissions he was ever found at the post of danger, and faithfully served the Country until the close of the Revolutionary struggle.

*South End.*

ERECTED

to the

Memory

of

ABRAHAM HYATT

by

His surviving children

and

Grand children

A.D. 1857.

*North Side.*

HE DEPARTED THIS LIFE

June 30th, 1820,

Aged 73 years and 13 days.

“The setting of his evening sun  
Was like the fading of a summer's day  
That sinks through cloudless glory to repose.”

Here, also, repose

the mortal remains

of

SARAH RIDER,

the wife of ABRAHAM HYATT,

who died

June 14th, 1805,

aged 55 years,

3 months and 13 days.

ANN

Wife of ABRAHAM HYATT,

who departed this life

April 10th, 1856,

In the 43d year of her age.

“Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord from henceforth ; yea, saith the spirit, that they may rest from their labours, and their works do follow them.”

“Life's Duty done, as sinks the clay,  
Light from us lead the spirit dies,  
While heaven and earth combine to say,  
How blest the righteous when he dies.”

I. H. S.

Capt. CHARLES C. HYATT,

United States Army.

Born

Jan'y 5th, 1840,

Died

October 5, 1867.

WARD B. HYATT,

Com. Lieut.

6th New York Artillery.

Died

Sept. 20, 1867,

Aged

26 years.

Act well your part—

There all the honor lies.

ANDREW KISSAM HOFFMAN, M. D.,

Born March 26, 1797,

Died May 5, 1871.

And

JANE THOMPSON,

his wife,

Born April 20, 1801,

Died February 11, 1876.

At Rest.

Hope, Peace,

Rest.

CATHERINE WARD,

Wife of

M. L. COBB,

Born Feb. 6, 1820,

Died March 25, 1871.

“He that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live.”

ANNIE A.,

Wife of

HARRY CONELLY,

Died October 26, 1878.

My Darling Wife,

THE GRAVE OF

CHARLES YOE

And MARY, His Wife.



CHARLES YOE,

Died Jan'y 25, 1853,

Aged 77.

MARY YOE,

Died March 31, 1837,

Aged 55.

AARON WARD,

Died

Feb. 27, 1867,

Aged

76 years 7 months and 23 days,

‘ If we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus, will God bring with him.”

---

AARON WARD,

And

MARY L. WATSON,

His Wife.

---

MARY L., wife

Of AARON WARD,

Who departed this life

May 1st, 1853,

In the 55th year of her age.

Sacred to the memory of the dead—

The dead ! Religion answers no ;

She is not dead, she cannot die,

A Christian left this vale of woe,

An angel lives on high.

FRANCES died October 10, 1827, aged 3 years and 7 months ; LOUISA OCTAVIA died in August, 1838, aged 5 months ; ELIZABETH MALCOLM died September 25th, 1841, aged 11 months and 16 days ; CHARLES WATSON, January 22, 1850, aged 16 years and 26 days, children of AARON and MARY L. WARD.

IN

Memory of

LIEUT. SAMUEL YOUNG,

Who served during the Revolutionary war in

COLONEL WEISENFEL'S

Regiment of Infantry,

And  
Won for himself the reputation  
Of a brave and gallant  
Officer.  
“ He was elected a member of the  
State Legislature, and for several  
years held the office of Surrogate  
of  
Westchester County.”  
Born Dec. 4, 1760,  
Died Sept. 12, 1839.  
In the 79th year of his age.  
This monument is erected by  
Major General AARON WARD,  
2d Div. of New York S. M.,  
In testimony of his high appreciation  
of the services of a brave officer and a  
true patriot.

The site of the present village of Sing Sing, is supposed to occupy partly the ground on which stood the ancient Indian settlement of Sing Sing, nearly two hundred years since. The existence of Indian habitations upon this particular spot, is amply proved by the vast number of shell beds, arrow heads and stone axes, still found in the neighborhood. Adrian Van der Donck, in his Dutch map before alluded to, styles the place Sin Sing; the same name now in use, with the exception of the single letter “g.”

At an early period, Sing Sing appears to have been a favorite landing-place for shipping the various marketable produce raised in the interior.

There are several landings, from which numerous steam-boats and vessels are constantly plying to and from the City of New York; a distance of thirty-three miles.

This village was incorporated by an act of the Legislature, passed A.D. 1813; afterwards amended May 15, 1837. The population of the village of Ossin-ing is (by the last census) about 6,800, without the convicts, which number about 1,500 more. It contains one national bank—president, C. F. Maurice; and one savings' bank—president, G. B. Hubbel. The village contains, also, several academies and schools. Among the former is the Mount Pleasant Academy, situated in State Street. This institution was first founded by the inhabitants, A.D. 1814, and was incorporated on the 24th of March, 1820, and subse-

quently received a charter from the Regents of the University. The location of the school is beautiful. The course of study varies, as the pupil is intended for commercial or professional life. The Bible is a standard class-book of the institution, and is used by every member.

Belonging to the institution is a well selected and valuable library of 12,000 volumes; to this the pupils have frequent access. The pupils are under the wholesome and effective discipline of a mild but decidedly military system. The exercises in this department consist of infantry and artillery drills, target practice, and fencing with small and broad swords. The Sabbath is strictly regarded as a day of rest; and the pupils are required to attend some place of worship with their teachers. The number of the pupils is limited. The principals are Messrs. Benjamin and Allen.

Ossining Institute for Young Ladies stands in a retired part of the village, and in the midst of large well shaded grounds. The building, which is unusually attractive and home-like, commands some of the finest river views that can be obtained at any point along the Hudson. The institution aims to combine superior educational advantages, with the choicest home influences. A symmetrical development of the physical, intellectual and moral powers, is constantly sought as the best possible preparation for future usefulness in life; and the acquisition of that wisdom, the beginning of which is "the fear of the Lord," is held to be supremely important. The principal is the Rev. C. D. Rice, A.M.

Occupying a very conspicuous situation, above the rest of the village, stands St. John's School. This school for boys succeeded the admirable work inaugurated on the same spot, and in the same building, by Mr. M. Churchill, a quarter of a century before, and from which he retired in 1869. The Rev. I. Breckenridge Gibson, D.D., now rector and principal, purchased the property on Mr. Churchill's withdrawal, and changed the name. For more than thirty years he has been engaged in Christian education; and by Christian education he means "the whole work of fitting body, mind and soul, for the duties of this life, and for the happiness of that which is to come."

The location is about 250 feet above the level of the noble Hudson; commanding one of the finest views of that river, from the Highlands on the north, to the Palisades on the south. The advantages of the position, as regards accessibility, beauty and healthfulness, could hardly be surpassed. The building is of brick; ample in its dimensions; erected and arranged with great care and regard for the comfort, convenience and safety of his pupils. The grounds (about six acres) afford abundant room for those games and sports which are so essential to the happiness



of boys, and to the development of physical health. Both of the above named objects are also attained by a gymnasium, provided for their use, and by the neighboring hills and country, over which they are allowed to roam under certain necessary restrictions, and within certain limits.

Near the centre of the village, is situated the Episcopal church of St. Paul's, a beautiful Gothic structure of Sing Sing marble. Beneath the body of the edifice is an extensive basement, containing lecture, vestry



St. Paul's Church, Sing Sing.

and robing rooms. Above the tower entrance, a neat escutcheon bears the following inscription :

ST. PAUL'S  
CHURCH  
A.D.  
MDCCCXXXV.

The interior is neat and appropriate. The altar and font are of polished marble, richly carved ; the latter presented by Miss Ludlow.

The communion service, consisting of a flagon, two chalices and paten, were the gift of Mrs. Jacob Arthur. The tower contains a large bell manufactured by "A. Meneely, West Troy, N. Y., 1835," weight, 1500lb. It was purchased by the vestry at a cost of four hundred and fifty dollars. The deep tones of this powerful bell can be heard for many miles, over the adjoining hills.

"As wave on wave, the tide of sound  
Fills the bright atmosphere."—*Christmas Bells.*

The corner stone of this church was laid by the Right Rev. B. T. Onderdonk, November 6th, 1834, in the presence of a large concourse of people; on which occasion an address was delivered by the Rev. Edward N. Mead, Deacon, minister of the parish. The Rev. Peter S. Chauncey, A. B., then a Deacon, minister of Christ church, Rye, in this county was also present and assisting. In the stone were deposited a Bible and Book of Common Prayer, as an evidence that the church is spiritually founded upon "apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone;" also the canons of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the United States of America, journals of the General and Diocesan Conventions, with other journals and pamphlets, together with a glass bottle closed and sealed, containing among many other things a parchment, on which was the following inscription:

ST. PAUL'S CHURCH, INCORPORATED NOVEMBER 11TH, 1833.

REV. EDWARD NATHANIEL MEAD, A.M., *Rector*.

GEORGE W. CARTWRIGHT AND CALEB BACON, *Church wardens*.

JOHN STRANG, PETER R. MAISON, WILLIAM DARJUE, JACOB C. ARTHUR.

JOHN SING, JOHN BARLOW, JOSEPH HUNT, AND ROBERT WILTSE, *Vestrymen*.

JOHN SMITH, *Clerk of the Vestry*.

SAMUEL C. NICHOLS, *Superintendent of the Sunday School*.

MRS. JOHN STRANG, *Superintendent of the Female Department*.

CARMAN NICHOLS, *Secretary*; ROBERT WILTSE, *Treasurer*.

JOHN BARLOW, *Librarian*.

JACOB C. ARTHUR, JOSEPH HUNT, GEORGE W. CARTWRIGHT.

JOHN STRANG AND JOHN SING, *Building Committee*.

LEDYARD H. HALSEY, *Builder*.

CALVIN POLLARD, *Architect*.

PAUL McCORD, *Superintendent*.

On Wednesday, July 6th, 1836, it was consecrated and set apart to the worship and service of Almighty God, under the title of St. Paul's church, by the Rev. B. T. Onderdonk, Bishop of the Diocese.

From the church records we extract the following memoranda, 3rd October, 1833. "A meeting of Episcopalians residing in this village and vicinity, was held at the house of Mr. Caleb Bacon, who resolved to form themselves into a society for the purpose, under Divine favor and assistance, of forming a church in said village; and that we will communicate with our Episcopal friends and neighbors on the subject, and urge by our best efforts their co-operation in the good work." This is signed by George W. Cartwright, William Darjue, John Barlow, C.

Bacon and John Strang; they also agreed to write to the Rev. Mr. Jelliff of North Salem, who has expressed "a wish to aid in establishing a church with us"

Previous to this date there had been occasional services held at some private house, when a clergyman of the Church happened to be in the village or vicinity.

November 11th, 1833, the first election of officers took place.

December 4th and 5th, 1833, "it was resolved to memorialize the rector, church-wardens and vestry of Trinity church, New York, for aid by funds in the erection of a church edifice. In this memorial, which was presented by James Smith, Esq., the petitioners state, among other matters, "That some years past an old Episcopal church in this neighborhood, at New Castle,<sup>a</sup> (of wood) falling to decay, its congregation was broken up, and some of the descendents of its members have become Quakers, notwithstanding portions of them have until lately adhered to the forms of the Episcopal Church; and your memorialists entertain a hope that with the blessing of Divine Providence, by the means of the establishment of a church at Sing Sing, many of the descendants of this ancient congregation may be brought back to our Church, &c." Trinity church nobly responded to this call by an appropriation of \$2000, the remainder being raised by public subscription.

On the first Thursday of October, 1834, this church was admitted into union with the convention of the diocese.

In 1864, the rectory was built at a cost of \$11,000 of brick.

In 1870, the spire was built through the instrumentality of M. L. Cobb, Esq., and the stained glass windows through the exertion of the Rev. James I. Helm, D.D.

#### LIST OF RECTORS.

##### CALL OR INSTIT.

July 7, 1836  
Dec. 16, 1839  
Oct. 16, 1846  
Dec. 20, 1847  
March 8, 1857  
Nov. 1, 1863

##### MINISTERS.

REV. EDWARD N. MEADE, A.M., Presb.  
REV. CHARLES HENRY HALSEY, Presb.  
REV. CHARLES TOMES, Presb.  
REV. WILLIAM F. HALSEY, Presb.  
REV. I. HENRY BLACK, Presb.  
REV. JAMES I. HELM, D.D., present incumbent.

In 1868, a secession of a portion of the members of St. Paul's church formed a second Episcopal church, known as Trinity church, and purchased the brick Presbyterian church for their place of worship, at a cost

<sup>a</sup> St. George's church, New Castle.



of \$16,000. They removed the galleries and built a recess chancel, and otherwise improved the church, both internally and externally.

The Rev. Clarence Buel was called and accepted the rectorship July 30, 1868. On December 12, 1871, the Rev. George W. Ferguson was called and accepted the rectorship, and is the present incumbent. The parish is entirely free from debt; it has purchased a plot of land on the Highland avenue, 130 feet by 200 deep, as a site for a new church edifice. The cost of this land was \$14,500.

The Methodist Episcopal church is a plain building of wood, fronting on Main street, erected A.D. 1817. The Methodist Society was first formed in this town, through the exertions of the Rev. Messrs. Cornelius Cook and Peter Moriarty, in 1787, who occasionally performed services here when on their route to the Croton. The earliest class meetings were organized in the valley beyond Sand Sutton's, and the vicinity of Scrabble street. The first class leader appears to have been Joshua Ryder, who afterwards became a local preacher. Adjoining the church, is a neat parsonage and lot.

A building committee, for a new church, was appointed March 22, 1851, and the church was completed in 1853. May 1, 1873, a lot for a new church was purchased on Highland avenue for \$13,500. It was commenced in 1877, and is expected to cost \$55,000.

The Baptist Society in this place was first organized November 12, 1790; a church was erected A.D. 1834, to which is attached a small burial ground. The present church edifice was completed in 1874, and the parsonage in 1850.

#### LIST OF PASTORS OF THE BAPTIST CHURCH, SING SING.

| NAME.                | DATE OF CALL.         |
|----------------------|-----------------------|
| JOHN KITCHEN,        | 1796.                 |
| ELIJAH WHEELER,      | 1799.                 |
| THOMAS STEPHENS,     | 1801.                 |
| STEPHEN S. NELSON,   | 1802.                 |
| JACOB H. BROUNER,    | 1814.                 |
| P. L. PLATT,         | 1823.                 |
| T. C. F. FREY,       | 1830.                 |
| JOHN PUBES,          | 1833.                 |
| C. C. WILLIAMS,      | 1825.                 |
| WM. M. DOOLITTLE,    | 1839.                 |
| SIDNEY A. CORY,      | 1841.                 |
| WILL C. LOCKE,       | 1843.                 |
| B. C. MORSE,         | 1844.                 |
| ALONZO WHELOCK,      | 1848.                 |
| W. S. MIKELS,        | 1850.                 |
| R. J. W. BUCKLAND,   | 1857.                 |
| L. J. MATTISON,      | 1864.                 |
| JAMES BOXER,         | 1869.                 |
| A. D. GILETTE, D.D., | 1874.                 |
| N. R. EVERTS,        | 1879.—present pastor. |

At a meeting of the Dutchess County Presbytery, convened at Bedford, June 28th, 1863, a petition signed by a number of the inhabitants of Sing Sing was laid before that body, requesting the Presbytery to supply them with the stated and regular preaching of the Gospel; whereupon the Presbytery appointed the Rev. Mr. Smith to supply them on the first Sabbath of August and October, and the Rev. Mr. Peck on the first Sabbath of September. At various times onward, until the year 1768, we find the people of Sing Sing making application to the Presbytery to provide them with occasional preaching; until, at a meeting of Presbytery, held at Salem on the 30th of August, 1768, we find an application from a joint committee, appointed by the congregations of White Plains and Sing Sing, asking advice from the Presbytery as to a proper person to preach alternately at the above named places, with a view to settling among them as their minister. At this date the Rev. Ickbbod Lewis became the successor of the Rev. John Smith, in the church at White Plains and Sing Sing.<sup>a</sup> At or near this time, the first Church edifice was erected; having for its site what is now known as the old burying-ground at Sparta, about a mile and a half south of the village of Sing Sing. The land was originally given by Col. Phillips, the proprietor of the manor. The gift was three acres, set apart and donated for the use of a church; and when, after the war, the whole manor property was confiscated and sold, the land held and occupied for church and burial purposes was reserved from sale, and the claim of the church fully recognized and confirmed.

The following is the copy of the Act, passed March 18, 1808, confirming the title of the church to the property:—

“Be it enacted by the people of the State of New York, represented in the Senate and Assembly, that all the right, title and interest of the people of this State in and to a certain lot of ground heretofore allotted by Frederick Philips to the trustees of the Presbyterian church and congregation of the town of Mount Pleasant, in the County of Westchester, be and the same is hereby vested in said trustees and their successors, to the use of the said church and congregation forever.”

The church edifice, which had been much injured during the war, was repaired in 1778, and continued to be occupied as a place of worship until the year 1800; at which time it was decided to remove the church to the village of Sing Sing. In 1798 Col. Moses Ward offered the said church a lot on Pleasant Square, upon condition that the church be removed to Sing Sing—which was accepted; and, in 1800, a church edifice was built upon the said lot.

<sup>a</sup> Gillet's Hist., vol. I., p. 379.

This continued to be the place of worship until the year 1834; at which time the building still standing on pleasant Square and occupied by Trinity church, was erected.

In the year 1866, the trustees were authorized by the congregation to purchase a suitable site for a new church edifice; in obedience to which the present site was purchased, and a church built at the cost of \$100,000. The corner-stone was laid by the pastor, November 5th, 1868, and the building consecrated May 24, 1870.

#### LIST OF MINISTERS AND SUPPLIES OF THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH AT SING SING.

| INSTALLED OR CALL. | MINISTERS.               | VACATED BY.     |
|--------------------|--------------------------|-----------------|
| 2d Aug., 1798,     | REV. MR. TOWNLEY,        | resig.          |
| Pro. tem. 1814,    | REV. THOMAS JACKSON,     | "               |
| 1818,              | REV. ASA LAYMAN,         | "               |
| 1819,              | REV. GEORGE BOURNE,      | "               |
| Pro temp. 1825,    | REV. ——— JOHNSON,        | "               |
| 1826,              | REV. R. W. DICKERSON,    | "               |
| Pro temp. 1830,    | REV. NATHANIEL S. PRIME, | "               |
| Novemb'r 1832,     | REV. JAMES V. HENRY,     | "               |
| 1842,              | REV. DANIEL TEESE,       | "               |
| 1849,              | REV. JOHN P. LUNDY,      | "               |
| 1857,              | REV. WILSON PHRANER,     | present pastor. |

The burial ground belonging to this church adjoins the site of the old church edifice, about one mile and a half south of Sing Sing. One of the principal monuments in this yard, is that of the Ladau family. It is constructed of brick, and bears on one side four tombstones. Some of the inscriptions are nearly obliterated.

IN MEMORY OF  
ANNA LADAU,  
wife of ABRAHAM LADAU,  
who departed this life  
December 25, 1795,  
Aged 68 years, 11 mo. and 25 days,

Also, ABRAHAM LADAU, husband  
of ANNA LADAU, who departed  
June 21st, — — — years, 4 mo. and 5 days.



IN MEMORY OF  
ABRAHAM LADAU,

son of ABRAHAM and ANN LADAU,  
was born A.D. September the 28th, 1767,  
and departed this life Oct. the 21st, 1774,  
Aged 7 years.

Here stop awhile ; let pity draw  
The sympathizing tear, if old thou art prepare to die,  
If young—thyself in virtue train.  
Here lies a son, and only son and heir ;  
He lived admired, and while he lived,  
Him good and just we hoped to see,  
But death our hopes deceived.  
Here all our joy and comfort lies ;  
Here lies our only darling son—  
He fell to death a sacrifice,  
Scarce had his glass began to run :  
His soul is flown to mansions of the just—  
To that great God in whom we weep and trust.

HERE LYETH THE BODY OF  
SARAH LADAU, born in the year 1750,  
April 26th,  
who departed this life August 15, 1764,  
aged 5 years and 7 mo. and 11 days,  
daughter of ABRAHAM and ANNA LADAU.

IN MEMORY OF  
DANIEL LADAU, who was born  
in the year of our Lord, 1694,  
and departed this life Nov. the 5th, aged 73.

IN MEMORY OF  
MARY LADAU, who was born  
in the year of our Lord, 1695,  
and departed this life May 11, 1775, aged 78.

There are also memorials of Moses Ward, William Kemeys, Henry Roscoe, Enoch Crosby, and others. The Roman Catholics occupy the brick building formerly used as a Reformed Dutch Church, situated on the property of Mr Albertus.

There are several hotels in the village, which afford excellent accommodation for travellers: 2 File Works; 1 Cotton-gin Manufactory:

1 Manufactory of Cotton-gin Saws; and Brandreth's Mill Factory. Four weekly newspapers are issued from this place, entitled the *The Hudson River Chronicle*, *The Republican*, *The Standard*, and *The Register*.

A number of handsome residences adorn the higher grounds of the village. Among others may be noticed the mansion of the late Maj. Gen. Aaron Ward,<sup>a</sup> who for a number years represented this district in Congress, and also that of Mr. H. J. Baker. General Ward holds a part of the patrimonial estate which covered nearly the whole southern portion of the village, his father the late Moses Ward, Esq.,<sup>b</sup> having been one of the original purchasers under the commissioners of forfeitures in 1785. At this early period there were but three dwelling houses in Sing Sing, one of which (an old stone mansion, used as a fortress to defend the settlers against the Indians,<sup>c</sup>) was the residence of Mr. Ward. This family descends from Richard Ward of Fairfield, Connecticut.<sup>d</sup> Gen. Ward's residence is a fine building of Sing Sing marble, presenting a neat Ionic portico to the river, with wings on either side. The interior is embellished with several excellent pictures by native artists, viz., Falls of Niagara, by Vanderlyn; St. Nicholas, by Weir; Boy hoeing corn, by Mount; Village of Sing Sing, by Havel; Gipsy Girl, by Freeman; View in New Hampshire, by Doughty; Girl and Child, by Chapman. The family portraits are by Ames, Vanderlyn, and Gilbert.

One of the most striking features of this hilly region is the romantic ravine (already alluded to) intersecting the village; both sides of it are bounded by steep acclivities covered with a luxuriant growth of hemlock and spruce, and near its mouth the banks rise to a height of one hundred feet above the bed of the stream. In the vicinity of Brandreth's mill the Croton aqueduct crosses this ravine by means of a handsome arch constructed of solid masonry, in the most durable manner. The space between the abutments is 88 feet, and the rise from the bottom of the creek is about 100 feet. So securely were the foundations of this noble structure laid, that upon the removal of the uprights the whole work settled but one inch. It was erected under the superintendence of Mr. Young, engineer of the works; commenced May, 1838, and completed October, 1840.

Near the village landing are situated the green-houses of C. F. Klunder, the florist. In the vicinity of Sing Sing the shores of the Croton

<sup>a</sup> During the last war with Great Britain General Ward held a captain's commission in the United States service, and at the close of it conducted a battalion of 700 British prisoners from Pittsfield, Massachusetts, to Canada.

<sup>b</sup> Moses Ward married a niece of Col. Samuel Drake of the Continental army.

<sup>c</sup> The old stone fortress stood a little east of Mr. R. K. Forster's dwelling house.

<sup>d</sup> See Eastchester, p. 159.

bay are decked with numerous country seats. The first property south of the Croton in this town is that of the late Col. Joseph Hunt, whose family purchased of the commissioners in 1784. The next place in succession is the old McChain estate lately owned by Thomas Oliver, Esq., now owned by O. B. Potter. The house is prettily situated on a finely wooded point, at the extremity of which lies a great rock, commonly called Frank's rock, near a gigantic tree where a white or bald headed eagle has for a long series of years built her nest.

Adjoining the above on the south is the Albert Orser property, now Thos. Hand's. It was in the old Orser residence that a body of Continental troops, under the command of Capt. Daniel Williams, were surprised by a superior force of British cavalry, led by Capt. Bearmore; the circumstances attending the event are thus related by an eye-witness. During the winter of 1782, Capt. Daniel Williams (who had been for some time stationed at Croton in command of the American guard upon the lines,) undertook, with a small party of dragoons, a foraging expedition into the neighborhood of Morrisania. Success had attended the enterprise, and they were thus far on their way homeward when they halted to refresh themselves. Not apprehending pursuit, they neglected to post guards, and the road leading from the highway being hidden by a small knoll which rose directly in front of the windows, they were not aware of an enemy's approach until nearly surrounded by Capt. Bearmore and his dragoons.

The confusion that ensued, may be imagined. Some of the Americans were cut down within and about the house; others rushed along the steep bank to the river, which was frozen, their enemies following in hot pursuit. Several were slain upon the ice; among the latter, was George McChain. Capt. Williams himself fled down the adjoining bank, closely followed by a British dragoon, who was gaining fast upon him, when he suddenly checked his horse, and, as his pursuer (unable to stop) dashed by him, rose in his stirrups and dealt a back handed blow with his sword, which brought the dragoon to the ground. He also succeeded in capturing his adversary's horse, with which he arrived safe at headquarters.

In the same neighborhood are the estates of the late John Strang and General Sandford.

Nearer the village are situated the residences of Benjamin Brandreth and Philip van Wyck, both delightfully embosomed in trees, and commanding extensive views of the river. The latter contains some fine portraits of the Van Cortlandt family, viz., Philip Van Cortlandt, son of Stephanus van Cortlandt, first lord of the manor of Cortlandt, artist un-

known; Catherine De Peyster, wife of Philip; the Hon. Pierre van Cortlandt, by Jarvis; and General Philip van Cortlandt, by the same. Philip van Wyck, Esq., is the son of the late Theodosius van Wyck, by his wife Catherine, daughter of the Hon. Pierre van Cortlandt.

A short distance north of Mr. Brandreth's pill manufactory is situated *Crab-bucky point*; literally, crab-cove point. The adjoining beach was once famous for its shad fishery; four thousand have been taken at one lift.

On the margin of the river are two deep grooves, apparently chiselled in a hard gneiss rock. These marks indicate the commencement of the *two mile line* of the manor of Philipsburg, which, according to the royal patent,<sup>a</sup> extended two miles north from the *mouth* of the Croton, until it struck the southern line of Cortlandt manor. In an old "map of the township of Bedford, Stamford, Greenwich, the North river, and Keightawank or Croton's river, by a survey, April the 6th, &c, 1763, by Charles Webb, surveyor," two spots are marked. First, "the station fixed by Cortlandt at the sand beach to measure up the river." This lies nearly mid-way between the Sing Sing brook and the next stream to the north. Secondly, a "rock four chains and sixty links north of the brook." (the first stream above the Sing Sing brook,) "fixed by Bedford committee to begin to measure up the river."<sup>b</sup>

Mining operations were formerly carried on to a considerable extent in Sing Sing, under the flattering idea that silver ore existed here; the old shafts sunk for this object are still visible. The following entries in the Secretary of State's office, refer to these mines:—

No. 54.]

STEPHEN LYON, Westchester County, town of Mt.

Pleasant, about 100 rods south of  
the discoverers dock, and about 80  
rods south of the farmers dock  
at Sing Sing landing, upon lands  
of John F. Marsh, (gold and silver.) Nov. 14, 1820. 41 204.

No. 57.]

STEPHEN LYON, Westchester County, town of Mt. Pleasant,

additional vein south of the mine,  
which is now on file, extending 1 mile  
south of said mine, (gold and silver.) Jan. 30, 1824. 41 296.

Galena has been obtained here in small specimens, as well as several ores of copper—one specimen of the latter yielding from fifty to seventy-

<sup>a</sup> See Patent of Philipsburg. The same kind of mark is found near the division line, between the townships of Yonkers and Greenburgh; both of them are probably Indian lines.

<sup>b</sup> From the original map in the possession of the Hon. William Jay, Bedford.



five per cent. ; also iron pyrites. Sulphuret of zinc, and oxide of manganese occasionally occur in the lime-stone rock. "Sing Sing is also celebrated for its marble quarries, which are worked to a great extent by the State prison convicts—who have here erected two large prisons, a keeper's house, and several ranges of work-shops, from materials found on the State farm." The marble found in this vicinity is the dolomitic or white coarse grained, of excellent quality, and almost inexhaustible ; large quantities are annually quarried and sent to the city of New York and other places.

The Mount Pleasant State Prison, situated about half a mile south of the village of Sing Sing, is thirty-three miles north of New York City ; it contains about 1,500 convicts. The prison grounds used to consist of 130 acres of land, lying between the villages of Sparta and Sing Sing, bounded on the east by the Highland turnpike, and on the west by the Hudson river ; since which time the land has been sold, and but a few acres retained. An Act of the Legislature, passed March, 1824, authorized the building of a new State prison in the first and second senatorial districts, with commissioners appointed for the purpose ; they selected the present site, owing to its exhaustless bodies of marble, its healthy situation, and its accessibility by water. It was completed in 1829, when it contained eight hundred cells ; it has been enlarged, and now contains one thousand cells. In 1828 the convicts then in the old State prison, in the city of New York, were removed to Sing Sing ; and the old city prison was abandoned.

Zion Hill, a mile below the prison, the property of Mr. Peter Weatherby, is famous as being the scene of Matthias' impositions ; this was the property of Henry R. Runson.

A few Revolutionary incidents connected with Sing Sing deserve to be recorded here.

In the year 1774, a regiment under the command of Colonel James, (director of the silver mines in this place,) was stationed at Sing Sing. Upon the breaking out of hostilities it was ordered to Boston.

Some days previous and subsequent to the memorable battle of White Plains, the British vessels of war—consisting of the *Tartar*, *Roe-buck* and *Phoenix*—lay off Sing Sing.

"On the 28th of October, 1799," observes General Heath, "Captain Hopkins of the dragoons took the Captain of the *Bellona* transport, a serjeant and corporal of the 64th British regiment, and two seamen who had ventured too far on the shore near Sing Sing."<sup>a</sup>

---

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Mem. 214.

There is still preserved in the village a small cannon, well known by the cognomen of "Old White," which is said to have been the identical piece fired at the sloop of war *Vulture*, as she lay off Teller's Point, on the morning of September 22, 1780.

"No sooner (remarks the biographer of Arnold,) had the parties Arnold and André arrived at Smith's house than a cannonade was heard down the river. It was discovered to be against the *Vulture*, which, although distant several miles, was in full view, and for some time seemed to be on fire.

"It had been reported to Colonel Livingston by messengers from Teller's Point, that the vessel was so near the shore as to be within reach of cannon-shot, and that the inhabitants were likewise apprehensive boats would land and commit depredations. Colonel Livingston accordingly sent from Verplanck's Point a party with canon, who fired upon the *Vulture* and compelled her to remove from the position she had held during the night, and drop farther down the river, till she was beyond the reach of the shot. André beheld the scene from the windows of Smith's house with anxious emotion. At length the firing ceased, and he then resumed his wonted spirits and composure."<sup>a</sup> He was in an upper apartment of Smith's house, on the opposite side of the river.

On every anniversary of the Fourth, "Old White" emerges from his lurking place, and is paraded through the streets in triumph.

Mrs. Sussanna Ryder was a God fearing woman. On one occasion when a company of soldiers had their quarters at her husbands', Jacob Ryders barn, one of them deserted; he was retaken, tried and condemned to be hung. The gallows was prepared near the house, she immediately went to the commanding officer and begged for his life; he became angry, and raised a stick to strike her. She then went into her chamber and earnestly prayed God to interfere, and incline the officer to mercy; when she returned she found the soldier had been reprieved ed, and the officer came and saluted her.

Twice she walked from Sing Sing to New York to get pins and needles and spelling-books for her own family and for her neighbors, passing through the lines of the British without being molested, and returning in safety.

A person by the name of John Arthur bought a farm about three or four miles north of Sing Sing, who had been a merchant in the city of New York; he removed his family and goods from the city at the outbreak of the rebellion for protection, and amongst the various

<sup>a</sup> Sparks' Life of Benedict Arnold, 206.

articles of trade was a quantity of tea and loaf-sugar—at that time a great luxury, and very difficult to procure. It was soon noised abroad among the neighbors, and many of the old Dutch settlers longed for a share; accordingly a party of fifty women organized themselves into a raiding party, and appointed a day when and where to meet, and then proceed to the farm, now called the Secor farm.

The day previous to the one fixed by this party, John Arthur set out upon a journey from home on horseback; and when a little below Tarrytown he saw a woman riding ahead, and putting spurs to his horse soon overtook her, gave her the usual salutation, and entered into conversation on general subjects; but the tea and sugar were uppermost in her mind, and soon she asked him if he was going to join the party. "There is one Arthur, she said, come up in the country above, from New York—and has brought a fine lot of tea and sugar—and has them in his house, and to-morrow a number of us are going to make a raid on his place." "Ah! Ah!" said Arthur, "is that so?" He rode freely along with her, until she had disappeared. Then he returned and rode home, informing his family and consulted as to the best line of action. They determined to bury the tea and sugar in the garden, and defend themselves. They therefore barricaded the doors and windows, armed themselves, and determined to resist all intruders. Early the next morning Mr. Arthur dispatched his oldest son on horseback to Jacob Ryders, now known as Willett Ryders farm—and from the barn which stood near the road he stationed himself, awaiting the advance of the raiders; as soon as they appeared he rode home and gave the alarm. They advanced twenty couple, riding two and two, with two men. One, a Captain Owen, who lived, it is said, in Sleepy Hollow; the other was said to be Abraham Van Tassel. They had their trouble for nothing, as they found it impossible to gain admission into the house. There were two Abraham Van Tassels that figure to a great extent in this section of country; one was the father of the celebrated Katrina, in the Sleepy Hollow legend; one was called Brim Bones, the other Brom Bounce. Others say that Mr. Arthur treated the whole party to plenty of punch with abundance of sugar, and they all separated peacefully, without tasting the tea.

The small but beautiful stone church, of All Saints, Briar Cliff, is situated at the junction of two roads, on a height behind Sing Sing, commanding one of the finest views along the whole length of the noble Hudson. That beautiful river lies in the distance like a lake of ten miles of extent, while the villages which dot its banks and the high rocks which border its western shore and the plains and hills that lie

still beyond in the back ground, are spread out like a map beneath the eye of the spectator, standing by the porch or bell gable of the building. It seems, indeed, a house of prayer and praise set where the glorious works of God are full in view to stimulate devotion. Struck with the beauty of this spot, the late Rev. John Ogilby, D.D., had selected it as a retreat for himself and family. Before his dwelling was completed, the thought entered his mind, that a humble wayside sanctuary in which he might officiate would prove a blessing to the neighborhood; by the help of generous friends in the vicinity and elsewhere, he was enabled to carry out the good work near to its completion, when disease interrupted him and death stayed his hand. His friends knew that the use of the church, if completed, would depend upon the family by whom the place



All Saints' Church, Briar Cliff.

was occupied; Henry McFarlan, Esq., of New Jersey, offered to bear the whole expense of its completion. The edifice was opened for divine service Dec. 13, 1854. All the windows are of stained glass. The chancel window is intended as a memorial window to Dr. Ogilby, and bears most beautifully inscribed upon it those three articles of the Creed, "I Believe in the Communion of Saints, the Resurrection of the Body, and Life Everlasting." In the centre light of the Triplet are the Cross, the emblems of the Communion, and the letters I. H. S.; at the base of the window is the inscription, "In Memoriam Funditoris." This was the gift of A. Beresford Hope, Esq., a noble layman of the Church of England, and a warm friend of Dr. Ogilby. The font, one of the most beautiful ever seen, was given to Dr. Ogilby by a devoted Christian



lady. The Communion service was presented by a family of St. James' church, Philadelphia, through the Rev. Dr. Morton.

The present rector is Rev. A. H. Gesner.

The village of Sparta is situated one mile south of Sing Sing.

The ancient boundary line of 1684, which divided the two colonies of New York and Connecticut passed a short distance south of Sparta."

The "Bishop Rocks," so called from John Bishop, who purchased these lands in 1785, lie one mile south of this place. They constitute a portion of the Southern boundary of Ossin-ing. White point is a celebrated fishing place in the same neighborhood. "The surface of this town is mostly hilly, soil productive and well cultivated." There is also a good proportion of interval and meadow land. The principal streams are the Sing Sing brook, and the Mill river or Pocanteco. The latter has its source in New Castle, and was particularly described in the account of that town.

The first independent election for town officers took place, April the 7th, 1789, upon which occasion the following persons were chosen for the ensuing year.

ELIJAH HUNTER, *Supervisor.*

DANIEL MILLER, *Town Clerk,*

NATHANIEL TUCKER, *Constable.*

|               |                     |
|---------------|---------------------|
| JOHN OAKLEY,  | } <i>Assessors.</i> |
| MOSES FOWLER, |                     |
| JESSE BAKER,  |                     |
| JAMES McCORD, |                     |

|                 |                                |
|-----------------|--------------------------------|
| ABRAHAM LE DUE, | } <i>Overseer of the Poor.</i> |
| JAMES REQUA,    |                                |

|                   |                         |
|-------------------|-------------------------|
| NATHANIEL TUCKER, | } <i>Commissioners.</i> |
| JOHN BISHOP,      |                         |
| ISAAC G. GRAHAM,  |                         |

THOMAS LAWRENCE, *Collector.*

|                 |                         |
|-----------------|-------------------------|
| ABRAHAM LE DUE, | } <i>Fence Viewers.</i> |
| JOHN SHUTE,     |                         |
| ISAAC VAN WART, |                         |
| JAMES HAMMOND,  |                         |
| JESSIE BAKER,   |                         |
| THOMAS DEAN,    |                         |

|                     |                         |
|---------------------|-------------------------|
| EBENEZER SCOFFIELD, | } <i>Pound Masters.</i> |
| HENRY VAN WART,     |                         |
| RICHARD GARRISON,   |                         |

---

" Three miles above Frederick Phillipse's mills at Sleepy Hollow. See Boundary Letters, Secretary of State's office, Hartford, Conn., fol. ii. letter 46.

Upon the erection of the present towns in 1845, the following officers were chosen :

JOSEPH HUNT, *Supervisor.*

GEORGE SHERWOOD, *Town Clerk.*

|                   |   |                               |
|-------------------|---|-------------------------------|
| CHARLES YOE,      | } | <i>Justices of the Peace.</i> |
| HENRY HARRIS,     |   |                               |
| THOMAS CATTERALL, |   |                               |
| WILLIAM PUGSLEY,  |   |                               |

NICHOLAS J. GREENE, *Supt. of Common Schools.*

|                   |   |                   |
|-------------------|---|-------------------|
| CALEB SMITH,      | } | <i>Assessors.</i> |
| WILLIAM ORSOR,    |   |                   |
| STEPHEN MARSHALL, |   |                   |

|                     |   |                                   |
|---------------------|---|-----------------------------------|
| JOHN RYDER,         | } | <i>Commissioners of Highways.</i> |
| EDWARD J. BAYLES,   |   |                                   |
| DAVID C. CODINGTON, |   |                                   |

|                 |   |                               |
|-----------------|---|-------------------------------|
| WILLET HOLMES,  | } | <i>Overseers of the Poor.</i> |
| WILLIAM MANGAN, |   |                               |

ABRAHAM MILLER, *Collector.*

|                 |   |                    |
|-----------------|---|--------------------|
| ABRAHAM MILLER, | } | <i>Constables.</i> |
| JAMES RYDER,    |   |                    |
| JOHN ROMAINE,   |   |                    |

#### FIRST DISTRICT.

|                  |   |                                |
|------------------|---|--------------------------------|
| CHARLES YOE,     | } | <i>Inspectors of Election.</i> |
| GEORGE SHERWOOD, |   |                                |

#### SECOND DISTRICT.

|                  |   |                                |
|------------------|---|--------------------------------|
| WILLIAM H. PECK, | } | <i>Inspectors of Election.</i> |
| DAVID MCBETH,    |   |                                |

THOMAS E. BRIDGER, *Town Sealer.*

LEVI PECK, *Pound Master.*

# THE TOWN OF PELHAM.

---

This town is enclosed on the East and North by the township of New Rochelle, on the West by the Aqueanouncke or Hutchinson's River, which separates it from Eastchester, and on the South by the Manunketesuck or Sound.

Prior to the Revolution, Pelham formed a portion of the old manor of that name, which originally embraced nine thousand one hundred and sixty-six acres.

The name itself is of Saxon origin, and compounded of the two words **Pel** (remote) and **Ham** (mansion or dwelling).<sup>a</sup>

"**Ham** in Germany is written **Heym** and importeth as much as **Home** now doth with us. **Ham** originally signifieth a coverture or place of shelter, and is thence grown to signify one's **Home** (as now uncomposed we pronounce it) that is to say one's birth-place or most proper habitation. It is one of our greatest terminations of surnames, as of *Denham*, for having his home or residence down in a valley. Of Higham for the situation of his **Ham** or **Home** upon high ground; and accordingly of many others, distinguished one from another in like manner upon one or other cause."

In **Foord**, in **Ham**, in **Len**, and **Tun**,  
The most of English surnames run.

(A Restitution of Decayed Intelligence in antiquities concerning the most noble and renowned English nation. By the study and travel of R. W. (Richard Verstegan) London, printed by T. Newcomb for Joshua Kirton at the King's arms in St. Paul's church yard, 1655.)

---

<sup>a</sup> Pelham, the name conferred upon this town by the Pells "is derived from the lordship of Pelham, Herefordshire, England, where anciently stood a castle, the owner of which in 1265, was amerced in the then very large sum of forty pounds for a contempt in not coming to an inquest to be taken concerning a trespass of the Mint. This lordship of Pelham is recorded to be part of the possessions of Walter de Pelham in 1292-3, and it is believed that his ancestors held it prior to the Conquest."—*Burke's Peerage*.

"I am inclined," says Camden, "to favour the opinion of those who fetch it (Belgæ) from the old Gaulish tongue (which our Welsh in a great measure keep entire) and who will have the Belgæ *so named from Pel, i. e. remote*. For they were the remotest people in Gaul; and at the greatest distance from the Roman province, &c. Britannia, or a geographical description of Great Britain and Ireland, &c., by Will Camden. Clarenceux, King at Arms, second edition by Edward Gibson, D.D. Rector of Lambeth and now Bishop of Lincoln, &c., London M. DCCII., vol. I, p. 67.

It is very evident that the Pells were a younger branch of the illustrious house of Pelham, which is evinced from the unerring testimony of their descendants, bearing the same coat armour with additions and not plain; it being a standing rule in ancient times, as is well known to all who are acquainted with the differences then used to distinguish the Cadets from the principal branch of any family, that they either alter their Tinctures or add Bordures, Orles, Bends, Chiefs, Cantons, &c., for that purpose; whence the Pelhams, who bore the coat plain and unaltered, is proof that they were chief of the family. The Pelhams bearing the field azure, three pelicans arg. vulning themselves ppr. The Pells by way of difference bearing the field ermine on a canton azure a pelican or, vulning itself ppr.

Like the greater part of Westchester County, it formed originally a portion of the Indian territory of *Nykagyl*, as laid down in the Dutch carte of 1614. Its early inhabitants were a clan of the Mohegans or "*Enchanted Wolf Tribe*," called *Siwanoy*s, whose possessions extended, it is well known, from Norwalk to the neighborhood of Hell gate. The latter place being their winter quarters. From the Indians this tract of land, with others adjacent, passed to the Dutch West India Company in 1640, as appears by the following: "In order to maintain the charter of this company, Kieft, the Dutch governor, dispatched Secretary Van Fienhoven, on the 19th day of April, 1640, with instructions to purchase the 'Archipelago' or group of Islands at the mouth of the Norwalk River, together with all the adjoining territory on the main land," "and to erect thereon the standard and arms of the high and mighty Lords States General; to take the savages under our protection, and to prevent effectually any other nation encroaching on our limits." These directions, we are assured, were fully executed; and the West India Company thus obtained the Indian title to all the lands between Norwalk and the North River.<sup>a</sup> This sale was confirmed on the 14th of

<sup>a</sup> Hist. State of N. Y., by Broadhead, 1st. period, 1709-1664. Alb. Rec. ii., 78, 147; De Lact viii.; Hazard ii., 213; O'Call, I., 215.



July, 1649, when the Director General, Peter Styvesant, in behalf of the same company, purchased "WECHQUAESQUEECK"—which, like the former grant, comprehended much of the present County of Westchester—from the three Indian sachems "Megteghickama, Otcyschgue, and Wegtakockken."

On the day following the above conveyance to the Dutch, on the 20th of April, 1640, we find an agreement betwixt Daniell Patricke and Mahackem, and Naramake and Pemenat. Hewnompom, Indians of Norwake and Makentouk, in which the latter conveyed to the former the ground called Sacunyte Napucke, also Mekanworth; thirdly, Asumsowis; fourthly, all the land adjoining to the afore-mentioned, as farr up in the country as an Indian can goe in a day from sun risinge to sun settinge and twoe islands neare adjoininge to the sayed Carantenayneck, all bounded on the west side with Noewanton, on the east side to the middle of the river of Norwake, &c. Norwalk records Book of Deeds in the year 1672. Only two months prior to these sales Mahachemo, Sachem, Tomakergo, Tokaneke, and Prosewamenos, Indians of Norwalke, conveyed to Roger Ludlow all the lands, &c., "between the two rivers, the one called Norwalke the other Soakatuck to the middle of sayed rivers, from the sea a dayes walk into the country."<sup>a</sup>

In the Summer of 1642, the widowed Anne Hutchinson, her son Francis and her son-in-law, Collins, "A young scholar full of zeal," to avoid the bitter persecutions of the Puritans, fled here for protection and commenced a plantation.<sup>b</sup>

This Colony was situated on Pelham Neck formerly called "*Annie's Hoeck*," and was long distinguished as the "*Manor of Anne Hooch's Neck*," and nearly adjoined the Dutch district of "*Vredeland*" or the "*Land of Peace*." Yet no patent or ground-brief appears on record for these lands, and why? for the simple reason that Mrs. Hutchinson was cut off before the purchase had been completed. This is fully confirmed by the testimony of Thomas Pell, the subsequent proprietors, given before a Court of Assize, held in New York 29th of September 1665, wherein he states "that he bought the land (Pelham and Westchester) in question in the year 1654 of the natives and paid them for it. He pleads his being a free denizen of England, and hath thereby liberty to purchase in any of his Majesties dominions within which compass this is. He alleges the fifth clause in the Kings treaty, sent over hither to make for him, as declaring this land to be within his Majesties do-

<sup>a</sup> Norwalk records Book of Deeds in the year 1672, 75 Alb. Rec. Lib. G. G., 323:507.

<sup>b</sup> Neal, the Puritan Historian says that Anne Hutchinson "removed with her family into one of the Dutch Plantations called *Heboute*." Neale's Hist. of New England, vol. 1, p. 178. Chandler says: "the whole family of the Hutchinsons removed from beyond New Haven to East Chester in the Territory of the Dutch." Chandler's Crim. Trials, vol. 1, p. 27.

minion; he saith the government and council of Connecticut took notice of this land to be under their government, and that they ordered magistratical power to be exercised at West Chester; and that he had license from them to purchase. He pleads that where there is no right there can be no dominion; so no patent could be granted by the Dutch, they having no right. *Several testimonys were read to prove that ye Indians questioned Mr. Cornell's and other plantations there about not paying for these lands, which was the occasion of their cutting them off and driving away the inhabitants; but the defendant hath payed a valuable consideration to the natives."*<sup>a</sup>

Here, is a flat denial on the part of Pell, supported by the authorities of New England, that the Dutch had any claim whatever on these lands; although the latter had discovered the country in 1609, and besides had purchased the very territory in question of the Indians, for a valuable consideration in 1640, just fourteen years previous to Pell's conveyance. Take the whole transaction together with the subsequent proceedings, and it looks uncommonly like a collusion between the New England authorities and the Indians. Let it be remembered, too, that the latter, who afterwards murdered Mrs. Hutchinson and her family, the Throgmortons, the Cornells, and the Moody's (all refugees from New England persecution, and carried off Mrs. Hutchinson's youngest daughter into captivity,) belonged to a tribe of Mohegan Indians which owned the supreme authority of the Uncas Chief Sachem "who had always been the unscrupulous ally of the English."

It is a little singular that the permission given by the Dutch authorities to Throgmorton to settle himself, with thirty-five English families within twelve miles of Fort Amsterdam, bears the date of 2d of October, 1642, only a few months after Mrs. Hutchinson's settlement on Pelham Neck. There can be no doubt that the Throgmortons and Mrs. Hutchinson, with the Cornells and Moody's,<sup>b</sup> were associated in their plans, all coming, as they did almost simultaneously from New England to New Netherlands—and besides all this the gallant old campaigner, Captain John Underhill, who professed to hold Mrs. Hutchinson's doctrines, had established himself two years prior to this, at Greenwich only a few miles to the eastward of Vredeland, the former being then under the authority of the Dutch.<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Assize Rec. p. 15.

<sup>b</sup> In 1640, Lady Deborah Moody a person of noble family and of heroic character, whom Winthrop styled "an anciently religious woman came to Massachusetts." Life of Henry Dunston by Chapin, p. 42.

<sup>c</sup> Underhill blames the Dutch authorities for the massacres of Mrs. Hutchinson, and the Coluses, as appears from the following extract taken from his "Vindication" dated 20th of May 1653. "We have transported ourselves hither at our own cost, and many of us have purchased their land, from the Indians, the right owners thereof. But a great portion of the

The family of Hutchinson is supposed to be derived from Mitonensis, who came over to England from Castle Cronenburgh with Harold Harfager, and settled at or near Bishop Middleham, then a fortified place. A family of Hutchinson was settled at Cowlam or Cowland, in Yorkshire, about the middle of the thirteenth century, and from which descended——Hutchison, of Lincoln, who had four sons—William Hutchinson, mayor of Lincoln in 1552; Rev. Christopher Hutchinson,——Hutchinson, and John Hutchinson, mayor of Lincoln in 1556 and 1565, whose son, Edward Hutchinson was the father of William Hutchinson, who emigrated in 1663 to this county from the neighborhood of Boston, County Lincoln, England. Truly has it been said that this family “of the Hutchinsons,” up to the day “when Anne Hutchinson commenced her expoundings,” had been the most favored of the day; wealth, rank and influence had been the portion of successive generations, and had, in truth, been merited by the ability of many of the name.”<sup>a</sup>

Anne Hutchinson, wife of William, the emigrant and owner of the colony called “Anne Hook’s Neck,” was of gentle descent. Her father was the Rev. Francis Marbury, of Gresby, County of Lincoln, of a family in good position there,<sup>b</sup> and her mother was Bridget, daughter of John Dryden, of Canon Ashby, County of Northampton. Erasmus Dryden, grandfather of the poet, was the brother of Bridget, and was created a baronet 16th of November, 1619.<sup>c</sup>

One wonders in amazement at the singular elevation of purpose and daring heroism that could have induced a woman of such rare mental powers and gentle descent as Anne Hutchinson to tear herself away from the civilized society of Rhode Island to bury herself and family in the wilderness between Connecticut and New Netherland, right in the

---

lands which we occupy, being as yet unpaid for, the Indians come daily and complain that they have been deceived by the Dutch secretary, called Cornelius, whom they have characterized even in the presence of Stuyvesant, as a rogue, a nave, and a liar; asserting that he himself had just put their names down in a book, and saying that this was not a just and lawful payment but a pretence and fraud similar to this which occasioned the destruction of Joes Hutchinson and Mr. Collins to the number of nine persons.” Holland, Doc. ix. relating to Col. Hist. of N. Y., vol. ii. 151. Underhill’s testimony however must be received with some caution.

<sup>a</sup> Notes upon ancestry of William Hutchinson and Anne Marbury by Joseph Samuel Chester of Boston, 1868, 9 to p. 24. The arms of the Hutchinsons of Lincolnshire, and now borne by Bingham Hutchinson, Esq., of England, the descendant of William and Anne Hutchinson, are: Per pale gu. and az. seme’e of crosses crosslet or, a lion rampant. grg. armed and langued of the third. Crest—a cookatrice az. crested jeloed, and armed gu. issuing out of a ducal crown or.

<sup>b</sup> The Marburys of Gresby, County of Lincoln, were of the same family as the Marburys or Merburys of Walton, in the County of Chester, temp. Edward Third as their arms and crest prove viz. arg. on a fess engr. gn. three garbs or—crest—a mermaid ppr. holding in the dexter hand a mirror, and in the sinister a comb or.

<sup>c</sup> Notes upon ancestry of William Hutchinson and Anne Marbury by Joseph Samuel Chester of Boston, 1868, 9. to p. 24. The Baronetcy is now represented by the Rev. Sir Joshua Dryden of Canon Ashby. “In Canon Ashby, says Brydges, (Hist. of Northamptonshire), there is one room of thirty feet long, upon twenty feet wide, which is reported to be entirely, floored and wainscoted with the timber of a single oak which grew in that lordship.” (Burke’s Extinct and Dormant Baronetcies.)

very midst of the favorite haunts of the savage Siwanoy. "She was," indeed, "far from human help," and trusted, no doubt, as the historian has well observed, "to the Divine protection" alone; she must, indeed, long have relied upon no other power; for among men, she had met only bitter persecution and constant injustice."<sup>a</sup>

It appears that scarcely had this noble, generous and tender-hearted woman settled down her little colony of sixteen persons, either on Pelham Neck or somewhere in close vicinity thereto,<sup>b</sup> than Governor Kieft aroused the wild fury of the native Indians by his inhumanity and treachery. Whereupon they resolved to exterminate the Dutch, and all connected with them. "An army of fifteen hundred warriors swept over Long Island, and ravaged Manhattan Island to the gates of the fort at the Battery. Bloomingdale and Corlear's Hook swarmed with brazen warriors, and the flames of blazing bonfires, and the shrieks of dying men and women spread terror over Manhattan Island. The savage, for the moment, seemed to have recovered his old domain."<sup>c</sup>

An Indian, it is said, came to Anne Hutchinson's house in the morning, professing friendship, ("as was their wont when making their visits") but on discovering the defenceless condition of the inmates, returned at night killed Mrs. Hutchinson and her son-in-law, Mr. Collins, with her son, Francis, and all the other members of her family save the youngest daughter, besides a number of other persons in the neighborhood belonging to the families of Mr. Throgmorton and Mr. Cornhill. One of Mrs. Hutchinson's daughters, while attempting to escape, was dragged through a ledge by the hair and carried to a stump where her head was chopped off. We are assured that a greater slaughter would have been made at this time and place, but for the arrival of a boat while the tragedy was enacting—into which several persons, women and children, escaped; but two of the boats' crew were killed, in their humane exertions to save these distressed people. "To close the scene, the horses and cattle were driven into the barns, the barns were set on fire, and the helpless animals

<sup>a</sup> "Anne Hutchinson: a Remarkable Woman."—Read before New York Hist. Soc. Feb. 5, 1867. See, by Eugene Lawrence, Esq., *Hist. Mag.*, New Series, Vol. I., No. 3, pages 159-166. Morrisiana, N. Y., Henry B. Dawson.

<sup>b</sup> In the grant of the "Ten Farms" by Thomas Pell, to James Eustis and others, in 1664, there appears to be a direct allusion to the first house erected in the vicinity of Reed's mill, on the "good planting ground," viz., "at *Hutchinson's river*," that is, *where the house stood, at the mouth and up-ends, on Hutchinson's river*." This was just twenty-one years after the massacre. Close by Reed's land is a small rivulet, called "*Back Dog Brook*," and, sometimes, "*Hutchinson's Brook*." Perhaps the Back Dog had some kind of connection with the massacre of Mrs. Hutchinson in 1643. Tradition asserts, however, that Anne Hutchinson's residence was located on the property of George A. Prevost, Esq., of Pelham, near the road leading to the Neck, on the "old Indian Path." Certain it is that the ruins of an old house on the Prevost estate, near Hutchinson's river, are still to be seen, a little south-west of the "Split Rock;" also, some ancient apple trees and shrubs; while close by is a fine spring of fresh water; all of which are claimed to have been associated with the history of this remarkable woman.—[Editor.]

<sup>c</sup> "Anne Hutchinson," by Eugene Lawrence. *Dawson's Hist. Mag.*



were roasted to death in the flames."<sup>a</sup> The youngest daughter of Mrs. Hutchinson, quite a small child, was taken prisoner and remained in captivity for four years; after her release had been procured by the Dutch Governor at New York, she was restored to her friends; but she had forgotten her native language, and was unwilling to be taken from the Indians."<sup>b</sup> "She afterwards married a Mr. Cole of Kingston in the Narragansett country, and lived to a considerable age."

One of the principal Indian proprietors of this territory, who sold to Thomas Pell in 1654, just eleven years after the above mentioned massacre, assumed Mrs. Hutchinson's Christain name; for he constantly styled himself in the early deeds "Ann-hoock,"<sup>c</sup> alias Wampage. This

*An hoock*  
**AH**  
*his mark*

individual may have taken an active part in the destruction of Anne Hutchinson, for nothing was more common among the Indians than for a warrior or brave to assume the name of his victim—material traces of his existence still linger around the scene of this bloody tragedy, for his grave or mound is still pointed out, and there is also a rock upon the south side of the neck bearing the same name, which is said to have been a favorite fishing place of the above mentioned sachem. Towards the extreme point of the neck, sometimes called Rodman's Point (after Samuel Rodman who married Mary, grand-daughter of Thomas Pell, third proprietor of the manor) quite near the waters' edge is located an ancient burying ground, said to have been used by the Indians; but a thorough examination, conducted in the presence of Thomas Pell, fifth in descent from John Lord Pell, proved it to be a place of sepulture for the white race only—how far back it is impossible to say. The first mound opened contained the skull and larger bones of a female skeleton in a horizontal position.

"The heroic Anne Hutchinson, who had so long and so nobly withstood the fiery trials of New England persecution, was worthy of a better fate than to fall before the fury of an Indian murderer; yet death, horrible as was the form in which it came to her, did not appease the rancor of her Puritan enemies. They rejoiced at the butchery; and afterwards spoke of it in terms of pious exultation, as the judgment of an

<sup>a</sup> Hist. of Indians of Conn., by De Forest, 205.

<sup>b</sup> Drake's Book of the Indians, 69.

<sup>c</sup> Hence Anne's-Hoeck and the Manor of Anne Hook's neck.

offended God. The Puritans believed, or affected to believe, that all who disagreed with them in their peculiar dogmas were in league with the devil; and would surely be visited, sooner or latter, by some terrible retribution from on High."<sup>a</sup> "When the news of her sad fate was told in Boston, her clerical enemies rejoiced over it as a new proof of her guilt. The ruling faction smiled at the recital, if never before, like Philip II. at the news of St. Bartholomew." "The Lord," said Welde, "heard our groans to heaven, and freed us from our great and sore affliction."<sup>b</sup> "The Indians set upon them and slew her and all her children, save one that escaped (her own husband being dead before) a dreadful blow. Some write that the Indians did burn her to death with fire, her house, and all the rest named that belonged to her; but I am not able to affirm by what kind of death they slew her, but slain it is, it seems she is, according to all reports. I never heard that the Indians in those parts did ever before this commit the like outrage upon any one family or families; and, therefore, *God's hand is the more apparently seen herein, to pick out this woful woman to make her and those belonging to her an unheard of, heavy example of their cruelty above others.*"<sup>c</sup> "Heaven, they thought had avenged them of their sharp-tongued foe. They even invented shocking calumnies to prove that she was Satan's minister. No tales were too gross and shameless, even for the wise Winthrop and the haughty Dudley; their hate pursued her to her lonely grave, and they sought to hold her up for the execration of posterity as the heavenly detested enemy of the church."

Anne Hutchinson's family did not wholly die out; one of her sons had remained in Boston and was the ancestor of Hutchinson, the Tory governor of Massachusetts in the Revolution. A daughter, too, was married and settled in Boston; and the blood of Annie Hutchinson still flows in the veins of several New England families."<sup>d</sup>

The next proprietor, as we have had occasion to show previously, was Thomas Pell of Fairfield, Connecticut, gentleman, (as he is styled) who obtained a grant from the Indians on Tuesday, 14th of November, 1654—embracing all that tract of land called West Chester, which is bounded on the East by a brook, called Cedar Tree Brook or Gravelly Brook, and so running Northward as the said brook runs into the woods about eight English miles, thence West to the river Aquebung or Bronck's river to a certain bend in the said river, thence by marked trees South until it reaches the tide waters of the Sound, which lyeth

<sup>a</sup> The Manhattan Papers, No. 10, by Jan Vogelvanger, *Sunday Times*, New York.

<sup>b</sup> Anne Hutchinson by Eugene Lawrence, *Hist. Mag.*, March, 1867, p. 158, by Dawson.

<sup>c</sup> Welde's Rise, Reign and Ruin of the Antinomians. Preface.

<sup>d</sup> Annie Hutchinson—By Eugene Lawrence, Esq., *Hist. Mag.*, March 1867, p. 158.

between Long Island and the main land, together with all the Islands, lying before that tract of land so bounded as before expressed, and so running East to place of beginning, etc., etc.<sup>a</sup>

This grant was signed by the Sachems, Maminepoc, Annhook, *Alias* Wampage, and five other Indians, beneath the spreading limbs of a venerable white oak; this formerly stood a little to the westward of the residence of the late Robert Bartow, Esq. This grant was subsequently confirmed in Council.

Thomas Pell stated before a Court of Assize, held in 1665, that he had obtained license to make the purchase from the authorities of Connecticut, and that he had paid large sums of money for the same.<sup>b</sup> It appears from the very beginning of the disputes between Connecticut and New Netherlands, concerning their respective boundaries, that the former had determined to secure, as far as possible, all the lands within the limits of her charter; while the latter was just as resolute in resisting any encroachments on her territory. Just nine days previous to Pell's purchase "it was resolved, at a meeting of the Director General and Council of New Netherlands," "that, whereas *a few English* are beginning a settlement, at a great distance from our out-posts, on lands long before bought and paid for, near *Vreedlandt*, to send their, interdict, and the Attorney-General, Cornelius van Tienhoven, and forbid them to proceed no farther, but to abandon that spot. Done at Fort Amstel on the 5th of November, 1654, in New Netherlands," "on lands purchased from the Indians by the Hon. Thomas Pell, of Fairfield, Conn."<sup>c</sup> On the 15th of March, 1656, the Attorney-General of the New Netherlands thus addresses the Director General and Council:—

*Respectful Lords:*—It is not only known to your honors, but every one residing in this country, that since many years, the district called Vreedlandt was cultivated and inhabited in letters patent, granted by your Honors and their predecessors by the Dutch, under your government, till the period of the general war in 1643. Now it has happened that one Mr. Pell, residing at Onkeneg, in New England, has dared, against the rights and usages of Christian countries, to pretend that he bought these lands of the natives, (which long since were purchased of them and paid by your Honors, as evidently appears from the trans-

<sup>a</sup> This Indian conveyance was seen some years since by the late Mr. John Soulice of New Rochelle, who kindly furnished the author with the above particulars. One Dyckman occurs as a witness to the deed; and certain reservations were made by the Indians, for whaling purposes.

<sup>b</sup> At a session of the General Assembly at Hartford, March 10th 1663, John Winthrop, Esq., Governor, "This Court doth grant liberty to Mr. Thomas Pell to buy all that land of the Indian proprietors between West Chester and Hudson's river (that makes Manhatoes an island) and lay it to West Chester, provided that it be not purchased by any before, nor in their possession." Col. Rec. of Conn. 1636-1665, by Trumbull, p. 418. Upon the 13th of Oct., 1663, Thomas Pell met the Dutch Deputation sent by the Dutch general at Hartford. Holl. Doc., vol. ii., p. 38.

<sup>c</sup> Alb. Rec. vol. ix., 275.

fers in your records,) and actually made a beginning of settling and cultivating these lands without your Honors previous knowledge or consent, directly contrary to the limits and decisions of 1650, concluded with the United Colonies of New England at Hartford, against which usurpation your Attorney General, in his quality and in the name of the Lords his masters, had in due form entered his protest," &c.<sup>a</sup>

Notwithstanding this and further protestations, made by the Dutch authorities, followed by threats to drive him off his plantation, Thomas Pell continued to keep watch and ward until the surrender of the Dutch in 1664. Upon the 16th of June 1664 the inhabitants of West Chester surrendered all their rights to Thomas Pell, as the just and rightful owner of a tract of land called West Chester, which he had obtained by an agreement made on the 14th of November, 1654," from "divers persons."

In 1675 the Indians must have been still residing on the neck in considerable numbers for at a General Court of assize held the same year in New York, it was resolved, "that the Indiyans at Mr. Pell's or Anne Hook's Neck, be ordered to remove to their *usual winter quarters*, within Hell Gate, upon this island; and further, that all canoes belonging to Christians or Indiyans on the north side of Long Island to the east of Hell Gate shall be (within three days from the publication of this order) brought to the next towns and delivered to the constables to be secured near the Hook house; any canoes found upon the sound after that time to be destroyed." "This order is said to have been made to prevent the Indians of Long Island joining King Philip against New England."<sup>b</sup>

Near the entrance of Pellam neck, is situated the favorite burying ground of the Siwanoy's tribe, to which the Indians were in the habit of bringing their dead over from Greenwich for interment. Numerous mounds are still visible near the water's edge, on the Rapelyea estate. Two of the largest mounds are pointed out as the sepulchres of the Siwanoy's sachems, Ann-hook and Nimham; both of whom are said to have lived to advanced ages.<sup>c</sup>

The former was opened some years since, and found to contain a large sized skeleton, by the side of which lay the stone axe and flint spear head of the tenant of the grave. We have carefully examined several mounds near the waters edge; one of these held the remains of an Indian boy about twelve years old, in a sitting position, together with a beautiful specimen of native pottery formed by the hand alone, rudely ornamented with zigzag lines, in which we discovered an arrow head of

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Rec. vol. II., 301. See West Chester.

<sup>b</sup> Dunlap's Hist. of N. Y., vol. II., appendix cxviii.

<sup>c</sup> Nimham, sachem of Miereckacky occurs in 1669.



quartz and the bones of a small animal. This practice of burying their favorite utensils and weapons with the deceased, is known to be an ancient Indian custom. By way of accounting for the numerous mounds which occur so close to the waters edge, on the north-east side of the neck, it is said that the small-pox was introduced among the Indians through the medium of blankets, and that when they applied for a remedy they were told to bathe in the salt water which proved almost instant death to hundreds. Near the residence of the late L. R. Marshall, the remains of an Indian were found in a very perfect state of preservation with a gun by his side. On the extreme point of this beautiful neck which commands the magnificent scenery of Hutchinson's Bay, lies another Indian cemetery. The shores of the "Great Bay of the Island of shells" Sewanhacky, shaded with their ancient forests of nut and oak, interspersed with grassy glades must have afforded favorite sites for the Indian villages. Here the Indians would obtain their supplies of fish, which they so much needed, especially in the winter season to eke out the scanty subsistence derived from the chase; and here, too, they found an abundant supply of their favorite Quackog from which they manufactured their Seawant or wampum; well, then, might they call the country "LAAPHAWACHKING," or *the place of stringing beads*, bordering on the "Maminketesuck" or "Broad Flowing River."

On the property of Mr. Elbert Roosevelt, just west of Pelham Priory, great quantities of Indian arrow heads have been discovered in one particular spot; leading to the supposition, that an extensive manufactory of that article once existed here.

Directly in front of the Priory, on the opposite side of the post-road, leading from Pelham through to New Rochelle, is situated a rocky knoll covered with cedars overlooking Shoal harbor, the Sound and neighboring Islands called the "Haunted Cedar Knoll." There was formerly a current belief in the neighborhood, that the forms of many headless Indians, might be seen on moonlight nights, in a circle, performing a kind of war dance on its summit, with heads in their hands, and that these apparitions still haunted the cedars and surrounding glens and woods. It is more than probable that a severe and sanguinary battle had taken place here, in early times between the Matinecocks of "Sewanhacky" and the Siwanoy's of "Laaphawachking" which resulted in the defeat of the latter and their subsequent decapitation. Hence, the headless apparitions of "Cedar Knoll."

Nearly opposite the Knoll on a point of Hunter's Island is located a mossy rock, or boulder stone, called the "Grey Mare." To this piece of rude natural sculpture, the Indians invariably paid just respect, be-

believing it to have been placed there by the direct interposition of their God or guardian Manito, for their especial benefit or favor. These called stones he called Shingaba-wossins—or in general phrase Muz-in-a-wun, or images.

Fine specimens of Indian hatchets, and javelins of chert, quartz and horn stone, are constantly found in the neighborhood of these shores.

Upon the 6th day of October, 1666, a large proportion of the Indian grant of 1654, was confirmed to Thomas Pell, Esq., by his excellency, Richard Nicholls, governor of New York, and erected into a township and manor; the proprietor rendering and paying in fealty therefor yearly, unto his royal highness, James, Duke of York, or to such governor as should from time to time, be by him appointed, as an acknowledgment, one lamb upon the first day of May, (the feast of S. S. Philip and James) if the same should be demanded.

#### THE ROYAL PATENT OF PELHAM MANOR.

Richard Nicholls, Esq., governor under his royal highness, the Duke of York, of all his territories in America. To all whom these presents shall come, sendeth greeting. Whereas: there is a certain tract of land within this government upon the main, situate, lying and being to the Eastward of Westchester bounds, bounded to the Westward with the river called by the Indians, Aquicomeke, commonly known by the English, by the name of Hutchinson's river, which runneth into the Bay lying between Throckmorton's neck and Ann Hooks neck, commonly called Hutchinson's Bay, bounded on the East, by a brook called Cedar Tree Brook or Gravelly brook, on the South by the sound which lyeth between Long Island and the main land, with all the islands in the Sound, not already granted or otherwise disposed of, lying before that tract of land so bounded as is before expressed, and northwards, to run into the woods about eight English miles in breadth as the bounds to the Sound, which said tract of land hath heretofore been purchased of the Indian proprietors, and due satisfaction given for the same. Now know ye, that by virtue of the commission and authority unto me given, by his Royal Highness, James, Duke of York, &c., upon whom by lawful grant and patent from his majesty, the proprietary and government of that part of the main land as well as of Long Island, as all the Islands adjacent, among other things is settled, I have thought proper to give, grant, confirm and ratify unto Thomas Pell of Onckway, *alias* Fairfield, his majesty's colony of Connecticut, gentleman, his heirs and assigns, all the said tract of land bounded as aforesaid, together with all the lands, islands, sea-bays, woods, meadows, pastures, marshes, lakes, waters, creeks, fishing, hawking, hunting and fowling, and all other profits, commodities, emoluments and hereditaments, to the said tract of land and islands belonging, with their appurtenances, and of every part and parcel thereof: and that the said tract of land and premises, shall be forever hereafter held, deemed, reputed, taken and be an enfranchised township, manor and place itself, and shall always from time to time, and all times hereafter, have, hold and enjoy, like and equal privileges and immunities,

with any town, enfranchised place or manor, within this government; and shall in no manner of way, be subordinate or belonging unto, have any dependency upon, or in any wise be under the rules, orders or directions of any riding, township or townships, place or jurisdiction, either upon the main or upon Long Island, but shall in all cases, things and matters, be deemed, reputed, taken and held, as an absolute entire, enfranchised township, manor and place of itself in this government, and shall be ruled ordered and directed, in all matters as to government accordingly, by the governor and his council, and the general court of assizes only, always provided that the inhabitants on the said tract of land granted as aforesaid, shall be obliged to send forwards to the next towns, all public packets and letters, or Hue and Cries, coming to this place or going from it, to any other of his majesties colonies, to have and to hold the said tract of land and grant, with all and singular the appurtenances, premises, together with the privileges, immunities, franchises, and advantages herein given and granted, unto the said Thomas Pell, his heirs and assigns to the proper use and behoof of the said Thomas Pell, forever, firmly, freely and clearly, in so large and ample manner and form and with such full and absolute immunities and privileges as before is expressed, as if he had held the same immediately from his majesty the King of England, &c., &c., &c., &c., his successors, as of the manor of East Greenwich, in the county of Kent, in free and common socage and by fealty only, yielding rendering and paying, yearly and every year, unto his royal highness, the duty forever, and his heirs, or to such governor as shall from time to time, be by him constituted and appointed, as an acknowledgment, one lamb upon the first day of May, if the same shall be demanded. Given under my hand and seal at Fort James, in New York, on the island of Manhattan, the sixth day of October, in the 18th year of the reign of our sovereign, Lord Charles the second, by the grace of God, of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the faith, &c., &c., &c., and in the year of our Lord God, 1666.

RICHARD NICHOLLS.

*Entered and recorded in the Office of New York, }  
the 8th day of October, 1666.*

MATHIAS NICOLLS, *Sec'y.*

The Pells, who were formerly lords of the Manor, boast a very remote antiquity; tracing their descent from the ancient family of that name at Walter Willingsley and Dymblesbye in Lincolnshire, England. In the visitation of Lincolnshire in 1564, William Harvey, Clarenceux, King at arms, by his deputy. Robert Cooke, Chester Herald, records William Pell as first seated at Walter Willingsley in the year (about) 1368; his son was Thomas Pell of the same place, whose son Richard was the father of John Pell, whose eldest son, William Pell of Walter Willingsley, married Alice, daughter and heiress of Robert Buller of Barkeston, by Joane, his wife, daughter and heiress of Robert Wyther of Barkeston, whose wife, Joane, was the daughter and heiress of John Pounder. The only son of William Pell by Alice Buller was Thomas Pell, of Walter



Willingsley; who married first, Alice, daughter of Henry Flower, of Langer in the County of Nottingham, by whom he had two sons, Edward Pell of Walter Willingsley, (the father of Thomas Pell and Thomas Pell, "the younger,") and Thomas Pell. "Thomas Pell of Walter Willingsley, married, secondly, Alice, daughter of William Thorold, Lord of Marston and Blankney in the County of Lincoln and High Sheriff of that county in 1558-1559, who died 24th of November, 1569." Their son was Sir Richard Pell of Dymblesbye<sup>a</sup> in the County of Lincoln, Knight, one of the executors of his cousin, Sir Anthony Thorold, son and heir of William, ancestor of the Thorolds of Marston, now represented by Sir John Charles Thorold, Baronet. Sir Anthony Thorold died 1594. Sir Richard Pell Knight, by his first wife, Margaret, daughter of Edward Tirwhitt—Knight and Baronet of Stanfield, Essex, had two daughters—Anne, who died without issue and was buried at St. Giles, Criplegate, London; and Ursula, who married, first, Edward Ellis of Chestertown in Cambridge, second, Lewes Cockaine of Cockaine Hatley in Bedford. By his second wife, Catharine, daughter of Anthony Meeres of Kirton in Holland, Sir Richard Pell had three sons and two daughters. The eldest son was Sir Anthony Pell, of Dymblesby, Knight, who by his first wife, Elizabeth, daughter of Sir William Willoughby of Carlton in the County of Nottingham, had four sons, viz., Richard, William, Anthony and John, who were all probably living when the visitation of Lincolnshire was made in 1592 by Richard Lee, Richmond Herald, deputy of Robert Cooke, Clarenceux King at arms.<sup>b</sup>

A branch of this Lincolnshire family had removed into the County of Norfolk, of which was John Pell, gentleman, of Derringham, in that county, Lord of the manor of Shouldham Priory,<sup>c</sup> and Brookhall, who married Margaret Cletheron, and died April 4th, 1556, leaving an only son, John Pell, Esq., steward or master of the king's cup, and Lord Mayor of Lynn Regis, who was born May 5th, 1527; married Margaret, daughter and heiress of William Overend, Esq., and died May 5th, 1607. Upon an altar-stone at the east end of the south aisle of St.

<sup>a</sup> Sir Richard Pell of Dymblesbye had a grant of arms, Oct. 19th, 1594, from Richard Lee, Clarenceux King at arms, of the following: "Ermine on a canton azure a pellican, or—Crest a pellican, or standing on a garland vert, full of roses, or. This coat and vest exactly correspond with those borne by the Pells of Norfolk, Sussex and Westchester which prove them to have been of one and the same family.

<sup>b</sup> Harl. MSS. 1559 fol. 137,<sup>a</sup> 138 and 138,<sup>a</sup> visitations of Lincolnshire, 1564, 1592. British Museum. Burke's Extinct and Dormant Baronetcies. Collectanea Typographica et Genealogica, vol. iv., 373.

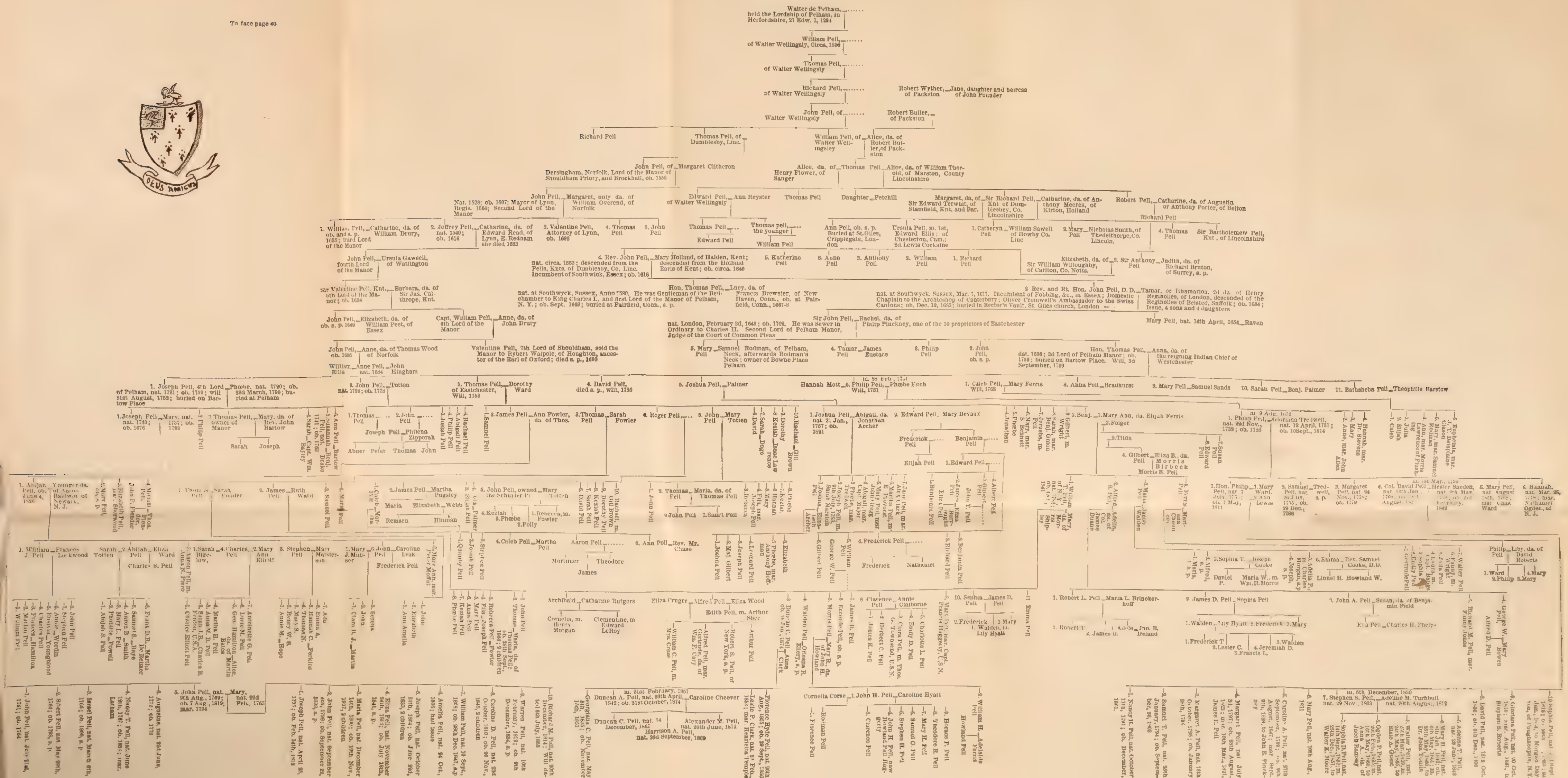
<sup>c</sup> At the dissolution, Shouldham Priory was granted, May 1544, 36th, Hen. VIII., to John Dethick, Esq., who in the 38th, 1546, had license to alien it to John Pell and his heirs. The manor of Brookhall, an old hall conveyed by Sir Giles Capel, son and heir of Sir William Capel, Lord Mayor of London, in the thirty-second year of Henry VII., (1541,) to John Pell grant by fine, in which family it continued, as in Shouldham Priory Manor, till left to Mr. Walpole; the Earl of Oxford being its present Lord. The aforesaid John Pell, gentleman, by his will, dated Sept. 16, 1554, requires to be buried in the church of Derringham.



PEDIGREE OF PELL, OF WALTER WELLINGSLY, LINCOLNSHIRE, NORFOLK, ENGLAND, AND PELHAM, WESTCHESTER COUNTY, NEW YORK.

Arms:—Ermine, on a chevron azure, a Pelican vulned gu. Crest:—On a chaplet vert, flowered cr, a Pelican of the last vulned gulea. (Granted October 19th, 1594).

To face page 40







Nicholas' church, Derringham, are engraved the effigies of this John Pell and Margaret, his wife, together with the following inscription :—



*Memoria Sacrum.*

Hei jacet Johannis Pell de Dersingham, armiger, quonda major Linnæ Regis, qui uxorem duxit Margaretam, filiam, unicam Gulielmi Overend, armigeri, annos 61 foeliceiter und vexerunt, sex filias et tres filias inter se habuerunt, Hec versum annos 80 compleverat quinto die February, A. Dui 1607, matura sinec-tute, mortem obut et octavo die ejusdem mensis corpus sepulchro condibatur.

John Pell and Margaret Overend had six sons and three daughters ; his eldest son was William Pell, Esq., who married Elizabeth, daughter

of William Drury, Esq., of Fincham, and died without issue in 1535. Jeffrey Pell, his brother, married Catherine, daughter of Edward Rand, of East Bendham, and left issue John Pell, Esq., fourth lord of the manor of Shouldham, whose great-grandson, Valentine Pell, gave Shouldham and Brookhall to Robert Walpole, ancestor of the Earls of Oxford; another son of John and Margaret was Valentine Pell, an attorney at Lynn, who died in 1603; another son was Thomas Pell; while a fifth son is said to have been the Rev. John Pell, incumbent of Southwyck, in the county of Sussex. Others, however, assert that although the latter was descended of the ancient Lincolnshire family, yet his branch had removed some time into Sussex.<sup>a</sup> The Rev. John Pell, of Southwyck,<sup>b</sup> was born about 1553, and married Mary Holland, of Halden, County of Kent. This accomplished lady was descended of the royal family; her branch being allied to the Hollands, Earls of Kent, who flourished in the reigns of Edward III. and Richard II., Kings of England. Sir Thomas de Holland, second son of Robert de Holland, Knight of the Garter and a Baron of the realm, (who led the van of Prince Edward's army at the famous Castle of Cressy,) married Joane Plantagenet, celebrated for her beauty under the name of "*The Fair Maid of Kent*," only daughter of Edmund Plantagenet, surnamed "of Woodstock," Earl of Kent, second son of King Edward III. This distinguished woman inherited (upon the decease of her brother John, the third Earl of Kent,) that dignity, with the Barony of Woodstock, honors of her father, and the *Barony of Wake*, a dignity of her mother's; from which latter peerage, she styled herself "*LADY OF WAKE*."<sup>c</sup> The Rev. John Pell died at Southwyck in 1616, leaving two sons, Thomas Pell, "gentleman of the bed-chamber" to King Charles I., and first Lord and proprietor of the manor of Pelham; and the Rev. John Pell, D.D., rector of Fobbing, in Essex. Thomas Pell, the eldest son, appears to have been born at Southwyck, Sussex, about 1608, although by some he is styled of Norfolk; the exact period of his arrival in America is uncertain;<sup>d</sup> that he was one of the first settlers of New England, however, there remains no doubt; for, at a very early period,

<sup>a</sup> *Biographia Britannica*. It is a little singular that John Pell, second Lord of the manor of Pelham, should be so frequently styled, in the records, "Sir John Pell," which seems rather to connect him with the Enfranchised Baron of Dymalsey, in Lincolnshire.

<sup>b</sup> This living is a discharged rectory in the deanery of Lewes, and is valued in the King's books at 20, *l. s. 6d.* It is in the patronage of the crown. The church is dedicated to St. Michael. The Registers commence in 1653.

<sup>c</sup> *Burke's Extinct and Dormant Peerages*. *Hasted's Hist. of Kent*, vol. ii. 281. The arms of Holland, of Holland, temp. King John, az. a lion ramp. guard betw. six fleurs-de-lis ar.; these were also the arms of Robert de Holland, summoned to Parliament, S. Edward II., and his descendants, the Earls of Kent.

<sup>d</sup> Two of this name appear as emigrants to New England in 1635.—"6th Apr. 1635. Those ptes hereunder mentioned are to be transported to New England, in company to the Planters Nels. Trarice M., bound thither: they have brought certificate from the Justice of Peace



we find his name associated with Roger Ludlow, a member of the Rev. John Warhams' company who settles first at Dorchester, Massachusetts, June, 1630, and afterwards removed to Windsor Connecticut, in 1635. subsequently Ludlow, with ten families, commenced a plantation at Unquowa, (the Indian name for Fairfield, Conn.) here we find Mr. Pell, in 1635. His name first occurs in the New Haven colonial records, as attorney for the executors of Richard Jewell in 1639.<sup>b</sup> In 1642, he was a resident there; and on the 10th of March, 1646, his name is recorded as the occupant of the first seat, on the cross-benches or pews at the end of the meeting house.<sup>c</sup> In 1647, he traded to the Delaware and Virginia. The year following, he was called upon to take the oath of allegiance to New Haven, but he declined compliance with this order, on the ground that he had taken the oath in England, "and should not take it here." This refusal we think was not prompted by his attachment to the royal cause, but from conscientious scruples in taking any oath at all; for this he was pronounced guilty of contempt, and fined. He would not pay the fine, however; and, as "his carriage had been full of high contempt," he was again summoned before the authorities and again amerced.<sup>d</sup> In 1646-7, he married Lucy, widow of Francis Brewster, of New Haven, and in June or July of that year removed to Fairfield.

A.D. 1654 (the same year of his purchase here,) Mr. Thomas Yale presented to the General Court, held at New Haven, a note under hand of Mr. Thomas Pell, wherein he desires the said Mr. Yale to make entry of the lands he had sold to Allan Ball, James Russell and William Bradley.<sup>e</sup>

and Ministers of ye parish, that they were conformable to the orders of ye Church of England, and are no subsidy men. They have taken the oath of supremacy and allegiance due as aforesaid.

A carpenter, Thos. Pell, . . . 26.

Marie Pell, . . . . . 26.

Marie Pell, . . . . . 1.

These names are said to be crossed out in the original MSS. list of emigrants to America 1600-1700. J. W. Bouton, N. Y., "April, 1635, in the Hopewell, Wm. Burdlock, master, bound to New England; a tailor, Thos. Pell, aged 22." Mass. Coll. "Founders of New England," by Samuel Drake.

<sup>a</sup> John Warham was a pious and celebrated preacher at Exeter, England, but was forced to flee to New England for refuge from the storm. Previous to his departure, a congregation being gathered at Plymouth, he was after solemn fasting and prayer chosen one of its pastors; and in the year 1630, many pious families out of Devonshire, Dorsetshire and Somersetshire, accompanied them to New England. Lives of the Puritans, by Brook. Princess Chron Hist. vol. i., p. 200, 204.

<sup>b</sup> New Haven Col. Rec. vol. i., p. 63.

<sup>c</sup> "At a general court, held on that day and year were recorded the names of the persons seated in the meeting house; first middle seat, the Governor and Deputy Governor, &c. in the cross seats, at the end, first seat, Mr. Pell, Mr. Tuttle and brother Fowler," &c. New Haven Rec., vol. i., p. 280.

<sup>d</sup> Hist. of Netherlands, by O'Callighan, vol. ii., p. 233; see note.

<sup>e</sup> In 1647 Mr. Pell was attached for £200, a debt which his wife, late widow of Mr. Francis Brewster, had contracted before her marriage with him. This debt, it appears, Mr. Pell refused to pay, notwithstanding the court took the liberty to inform him that his wife's debts were his own. On being afterwards brought up to court, he declared "that it was against his judgment to take an oath." New Haven Col. Rec., vol. i., 315-3rd. Eighteen pages of the Col. Rec. are occupied with the trying details of a trial of Lucy Brewster for slander; but this was before her marriage to her second husband, and may have contributed to produce it in order to obtain manly protection. Savages' Bis. Dict.

<sup>f</sup> New Haven Col. Rec.

Upon the 9th of February, 1653, Thomas Pell purchased land in Fairfield of Henry Rowland, Philip Pinckney, Alexander Briant and others; also a house which was sometime Nathan Gould's, in 1654.<sup>a</sup> In 1662 he was made a freeman of that town, and chosen its representative to the General Court in 1665.

Thomas Pell's death must have occurred in September, 1669; he is said to have died of hasty consumption, and was buried at Fairfield, his wife, Lucy, probably died at the same place in 1668.

#### THE LAST WILL OF THOMAS PELL.

In ye name of God, Amen—It hath pleased ye all wise God many years to exercise me with much weakness of body, and having lately taken to himselfe my beloved wife Lucy, it being ye good pleasure of God to deny me natural issue of my owne body, His good hand of mercy continuëing unto me to keep me in perfect memory and my understanding in a comfortable measure, according to proportion of wisdom and knowledge, where he saw meet to proportion to me, I desire in faith to give up my soule to God which gave it, my body to a comely burial, that I may be decently buryed in such a comely manner that God may not be dishonored. It beinge my desire that peace may be attended in enjoyment of what God hath been pleased to give to me—this being my last will and testament—I doe make my nephew, John Pell, living in ould England, the only sonne of my only brother John Pell, Doctor of Divinity, which he had by his first wife, my whole and sole heire of all my lands and houses in any parte of New England, or in ye territoryes of ye Duke of Yorke. I also give to my nephew John Pell (my whole and sole heire) all my goods, moveable or immoveable whatsoever—money, plate, chattells and cattle of all kinde—except such parcells and legacies which I give and bequeath to persons as followeth, my just debts being first paid: and if my nephew, John Pell, be deceased, and hath left a sonne or sonnes surviving him, then what I have above given to my nephew, John Pell, I give to such issue of his; and in ye default of such issue, it's my will that my brother John Pell's daughter shall enjoy ye above said portion; and in case they or any of them be deceased, then it is my will that the children of my brother's daughters shall inherit the above said portion, to be equally divided amongst them. It is my will, that in case my nephew, John Pell, my brother's sonne by his first wife, be deceased, and hath left no male issue, if my brother hath a sonne or sonnes by his last wife, he or they shall enjoy ye above said portion; and in ye default of them or their male issue, then my brother's daughters, or their children, shall enjoy ye above portion as is above expressed. I give to Abigall Burr, ye wife of Daniell Burr, ye best bed in my house in Fairfield, and boulstis, with two blancoates, a rug and dornink suit of curtains, six cushions, two paire of sheets, six chairs, the brewing kettle in use, two new keclers, a brewing tub, six silver spoons, with ye use of all ye plate in the house, if she desire of my executors of trust, till my heire or heires come or send his or their order how or which way all things shall be disposed of. *Item*

<sup>a</sup> Fairfield Town Rec.

<sup>b</sup> Hazard's State Papers, vol. ii, pp. 231-245-342-343.

—I give to Daniell Burr all my horses and horse colts which have in New England, and in ye territoryes of ye Duke of Yorke: I except my mares and mare colts, which I do not give him; I except my saddie gelding, which my heir is to have if he come over—otherwise, Daniell Burr is to have him. Daniell Burr is to take ye horse flesh as they run; without any further dehinery, lett the mares be disposed of according to ye understanding of my executors of trust. *Item*—I give to my sonne, Francis French, all my tobacco, growing or not growing, in casks, or otherways made up in rolls or twist. *Item*—I give to Nathaniell French two young coves and one young bull. *Item*—To Elizabeth White I give the worst feather bed and boulster, one iron pott, six porringers, six spoons of alcamy, six pewter platters, one brass skellet, and fiftene pounds more in goods or cattle, current pay, and two comely suits of apparel—one for working days, another for Sabbath dayes, with two paire of shoes. *Item*—to Mary White I give six pounds and one suite of aparell of serge, with two shifts, and wool for stockings. I give to Nathaniell White, an apprentice to some handicraft trade; and if it be for his advantage, to give tenne pounds with him out of my estate, not diminishing his twenty pounds, which is to be improved for his use. I give to Barbary, my servant—I sett her at liberty to be a free woman a month after my burial, except my nephew, John Pell, come in person; she then to attend his occasions whilst he is there, not exceeding three months. Further, I do give to Barbary, my servant, one flock bed and boulster, and two blancoats, a pair of sheets, and cotton rug, one iron pott, an iron skellet, six trays and chest, with a lock and key to it, six porringers, two pewter platters, six pewter spoons or ye value of them, two coves or the value of them. I give to my ancient maid, Katherine Rysten, five pounds in cattle or county pay. I make, ordain, constitute and appoint Daniell Burr and John Bankes to be my executors of trust, and order them to pay, after my burial, all just debts and legacyes, and to make sale of any utensils which are subject to decay—old cattle—and to be accountable to my heire or heires, and to keep up housing and fences upon my heires' charge, that the estate may not suffer. I give to my said executors of trust twenty pounds apiece, and to be paid what first charge they are at upon any incumbrances. *Item*—I give those poor men their debts upon my booke, whose names follow—Joseph Pathon, James Evers, Thomas Bassett, Roger Percy; and that this is my last will. In witness whereof, I have hereunto sett my hand this twenty and one yeare of the raigne of our sovereigne lord, King Charles, and the twenty-first of September, 1669. Me, THOMAS PELL

Signed in the presence of us,

NATHAN GOULD,

JOHN CABELL.

John Cabell gives oath that he was wisse to Mr. Pell signing this will, with Mr. Gould, as he hath entered his hand. Taken upon oath before me,

NATHAN GOULD, *Assistant*.

This 3d of ———, in his Majestie's

Colony of Connecticut, September, 1669,<sup>a</sup>

Upon the 13th of October, A.D. 1669, the Court of Assize issued the

<sup>a</sup> This will may be found in the Probate Rec. of Fairfield Co, 1665 to '75, vol. ii, p. 43-44. Also Surrogates office N. Y. Wills and Adm., 1665 to 1683, vol. i., p. 83.

following order, authorizing and appointing Mr. John Richbell, Mr. William Leyden, and Mr. Samuel Drake, to take an inventory of the estate of Thomas Pell, deceased :

"Whereas, Mr. Thomas Pell, of Ann Hook's Neck, is lately deceased, and having left a considerable estate in this government, of which no inventory is as yet returned."<sup>a</sup>

In the inventory, we have a thorough and particular account of the whole furniture and household array of a wealthy merchant and gentleman of that early period.

*J<sup>mt</sup> Tho<sup>v</sup> Pell.*

An inventory of ye estate of Sir Thomas Pell, late deceased, appraised by us whose names are underwritten, and yt according to an order or commission directed unto us by ye Rt. Hon'ble ye govern'r, and his Royal High., ye Duke of Yorke, of all his territories in America.

|   |    |    |   |
|---|----|----|---|
| Imprimis 1 old feather bed, 2 feather bolsters, 2 pillows, 1 rug, 1 |    |    |   |
| blankett, 1 coverlett, 1 bedstead, and 1 pr. of old sheets,         | 14 | 0  | 0 |
| 1 paire of old kitterminster curtains and vallance,                 | 1  | 0  | 0 |
| 63 yds. of canvass at 2s. pr. yd.                                   | 6  | 6  | 0 |
| 36 drest buck and doe skins at 4s pr. piece,                        | 7  | 0  | 0 |
| 1 pr. of wooden scales and weights,                                 | 0  | 3  | 0 |
| 2 paire of old sheep sheres   | 0  | 4  | 0 |
| 1 table and frame,  | 0  | 10 | 0 |
| 6 silver spoons and 1 dram cup,                                     | 2  | 0  | 0 |
| 9 pound of tacks,   | 0  | 4  | 0 |
| 1 pr. of brasse scales and pound weights,                           | 0  | 5  | 0 |
| 1 piece of girt web and lead lyne,                                  | 0  | 6  | 0 |
| 1 pound of pepper,  | 0  | 2  | 0 |
| 4 knives,   | 0  | 2  | 0 |
| 14 buckles and 2 bridle bits,                                       | 0  | 2  | 0 |
| 2½ yds. of bongala at 3s pr. yd.                                    | 0  | 7  | 6 |
| 14 yds. of peniston at 2s p. yd.                                    | 1  | 8  | 0 |
| 6 yds. of Holland at 4s. p. yd.                                     | 1  | 4  | 0 |
| 21 yds. ½ of Brockram at 1s. 6d. p. yd.                             | 1  | 12 | 3 |
| 60 lbs. of pewt. at 12d pr. lb.                                     | 3  | 0  | 0 |
| 8 old napkins, 1 table cloath and towell,                           | 0  | 14 | 0 |
| 1 old lynnenn wast coate, 1 pr. of drawers and 2 shirts,            | 0  | 16 | 0 |
| 1 chest,  | 0  | 5  | 0 |
| 1 old wast coate,   | 0  | 6  | 0 |

<sup>a</sup> Assize Rec. Albany, vol. ii. 79.



|  |    |    |   |
|--|----|----|---|
| 5 pr. of woosted stockings at 4s pr. pair,                                 | 1  | 0  | 0 |
| 1 pr. of home spun stockings,  | 0  | 4  | 0 |
| 1 pair of serge boot hose and tops,  | 0  | 6  | 0 |
| 4 cushion cases,   | 0  | 10 | 0 |
| 13 yds. of several remnants of several stuffs at 2s pr. yd.                | 1  | 6  | 0 |
| 12 yds. more ye sd stuffs,   | 1  | 4  | 0 |
| 9 yds. of remnants of serge at 3s pr. yd.                                  | 1  | 7  | 0 |
| 1 piece of serge,  | 3  | 0  | 0 |
| 11½ yds. of remnants of kersey at 4s. pr. yd.                              | 2  | 6  | 0 |
| 24 yds. of flew linnen at 2s. pr. yd.                                      | 2  | 2  | 0 |
| 4 yds. of penistone at 2s. pr. yd.   | 0  | 8  | 0 |
| 5 yds. of cotton at 2s. 6d. p. yd.   | 0  | 12 | 6 |
| 3 lb. of black and browne thread,  | 0  | 6  | 0 |
| Remnants of gimp. and other laces,   | 1  | 0  | 0 |
| 1 pair of cotton cards,  | 0  | 1  | 6 |
| 14 lb. and ½ of lead in barres at 3d. p. lb                                | 0  | 3  | 2 |
| 1 pair of bridle reines,   | 0  | 1  | 6 |
| 3 quire of paper,  | 0  | 1  | 6 |
| 1 chest with a lock,   | 0  | 10 | 0 |
| 2 joynt stooles,   | 0  | 4  | 0 |
| 3 chaires at 2s. per chair,  | 0  | 6  | 0 |
| 7 lb of powder at 1s. per lb.  | 0  | 7  | 0 |
| 1 old neckcloth, 5 old bands, 2 hankerchiefs, and old red cap,             | 0  | 10 | 0 |
| 3 gunnes,  | 3  | 0  | 0 |
| 1 old patch flock bead, 2 boulsters, 3 old blanketts, 1 old coverlett,     | 0  | 10 | 0 |
| 1 chaffe bed being broke, 1 feath. bolster, 1 per of course sheets,        | 2  | 0  | 0 |
| 1 hammock,   | 0  | 12 | 0 |
| 1 old coate,   | 0  | 4  | 0 |
| 2 feather bol. 1 pillow, 2 blanketts and 1 coarse sheet,                   | 2  | 10 | 0 |
| 1 dressed boar skin,   | 0  | 4  | 0 |
| 1 very old boat sayle,   | 0  | 4  | 0 |
| 1 old bible,   | 0  | 4  | 0 |
| Culpeper's dispensatory, wh 3 other small books,                           | 0  | 10 | 0 |
| 2 of Cradock's works in quarto,  | 0  |    | 0 |
| 2 brushes,   | 0  | 1  | 0 |
| 18 old fashioned felt hats wh bands  | 5  | 0  | 0 |
| 2 yds. of bayes and duffets for 1 paire of Indian breeches                 | 0  | 7  | 0 |
| 15 bushells of winter wheat at 6s. p. bushell,                             | 3  | 0  | 0 |
| 3 bushells of Indian corn at 2s. 6d. p. bushell,                           | 0  | 7  | 6 |
| A parcell of sheep's wool,   | 2  | 0  | 0 |
| A parcell of cotton wool,  | 1  | 6  | 0 |
| A parcell of lumber casks in ye chamber,                                   | 0  | 12 | 0 |
| 380 lb. of nayles at 10d. p. lb.,  | 15 | 0  | 8 |
| 7 bolts for dores,   | 0  | 4  | 0 |
| 2 paire of bridle raines,  | 0  | 3  | 0 |
| 1 paire of bridle bitts,   | 0  | 1  | 0 |
| 1 feth'r bed, 1 boulster, 2 blanketts, 2 rugs, 2 pillows, 1 pr. of sheets, | 5  | 0  | 0 |
| 1 large feather bed, 1 boulster, 2 blanketts, 1 rug, 1 pr. sheets,         | 7  | 0  | 0 |

|   |     |    |   |
|---|-----|----|---|
| 2 blankets,   | 1   | 0  | 0 |
| 1 old feather bed, 1 boulster, 1 pillow, 1 paire of sheets, 1 blanket<br>and 1 coverlett,   | 5   | 0  | 0 |
| 17 yds. of coarse broad-cloth at 7s. p. yd.   | 5   | 19 | 0 |
| 17 lumber casks,  | 0   | 17 | 0 |
| 1 old chest without a lock,   | 0   | 5  | 0 |
| 4 iron potts, 1 skillett, 3 pair of pot hooks,  | 2   | 10 | 0 |
| 3 brasse kettles, 1 skillett, 2 chafing dishes, 1 pestell and mortar,<br>and 1 copper skillett,   | 5   | 0  | 0 |
| 2 trammells, 1 dripping pan, 1 spitt, 1 frying pan, 1 paire of tongues,<br>1 gridiron, 1 smoothing iron,  | 1   | 15 | 0 |
| 2 doz. trayes, 2 boults, 1 cheesplate, 5 wooden bottles, 8 peales, 1½<br>bushell, 1 peck, 1 quarter cann, 1 old small churn,                                      | 1   | 5  | 0 |
| 2 ploughs, 2 shares, 2 coulter, bolts, collars and 1 pr. of chaines,  | 1   | 10 | 0 |
| 3 draught chaines, 1 timber chaine,   | 2   | 0  | 0 |
| 2 paire of geres for horses   | 1   | 0  | 0 |
| 6 falling axes and 1 hatchett   | 0   | 14 | 0 |
| 2 mattocks, 2 spades, 2 iron crowes, 2 sledges, 6 wedges, 1 drawing<br>knife, 1 hedging bill, 1 clapboard hoe, 1 crosse cut saw, 1 hand<br>saw, and beetle rings, | 2   | 10 | 0 |
| 1 piece of an iron barre,   | 0   | 10 | 0 |
| 2 old carts, 3 paire of wheels, 1 paire of them shod with iron, and<br>1 cart rope,   | 5   | 9  | 0 |
| 3 old table napkins, 1 table cloth, 6 old towells,  | 0   | 10 | 0 |
| 1 warming pan, &c.  | 0   | 16 | 0 |
| 24 harrow teeth, 1 swivell, 1 horse lock, 1 small chaine, 3 gimblets,<br>8 howes,   | 1   | 10 | 0 |
| 1 small bag with ginger,  | 0   | 1  | 0 |
| 20 yearling cattle,   | 40  | 0  | 0 |
| 9 two yeare old,  | 22  | 10 | 0 |
| 9 three yeare old,  | 31  | 10 | 0 |
| 6 four yeare old,   | 27  | 0  | 0 |
| 6 milch cows,   | 27  | 0  | 0 |
| 12 oxen,  | 72  | 0  | 0 |
| 5 calves,   | 5   | 0  | 0 |
| 1 hogsd. and 1 barrell of mollasses,  | 4   | 0  | 0 |
| 4 barrells of salt,   | 1   | 10 | 0 |
| 16 lumber casks,  | 0   | 16 | 0 |
| All ye tobacco, old and new,  | 50  | 0  | 0 |
| 2 hydes,  | 1   | 0  | 0 |
| 1 parcell of feathers in a pillow case, and 1 pr of old stockens,   | 0   | 4  | 0 |
| Horses and horse colts as they run in the woods,  | 40  | 0  | 0 |
| Mares and mare colts,   | 50  | 0  | 0 |
| 53 sheep,   | 22  | 0  | 0 |
| Swyne, small and greate,  | 40  | 0  | 0 |
| The howsing, lands, barnes, islands, adjoyning from Hutchinson's<br>River westward, and so far eastward as were Mr. Tho. Pell's<br>inst. and lawful right,        | 500 | 0  | 0 |

|  |      |    |   |
|--|------|----|---|
| House and land in Westchester, . . . . .   | 20   | 0  | 0 |
| 6 new sythes, . . . . .  | 0    | 18 | 0 |
| 6 unwashed fleeces of wool, . . . . .  | 0    | 12 | 0 |
| 6 old scythes, . . . . .   | 0    | 14 | 0 |
| In Applebyes keeping, 2 cows and 1 plow chaine . . . . .   | 9    | 8  | 0 |
| In Jonathan Burge his keeping, 2 oxen, 3 cowes, 2 yearlings,<br>4 calves, 1 timber chaine, 1 plough chaine, 1 colter, 1 share and<br>boulte, . . . . . | 35   | 10 | 0 |
| 1 plough share, colter, boulte, collar and yoke irons, in John Holy's<br>hands, . . . . .  | 2    | 0  | 0 |
| 64 load of hay, . . . . .  | 16   | 0  | 0 |
| 5 firkins of sope and parcell of tallow, . . . . .   | 3    | 0  | 0 |
| $\frac{1}{2}$ barrell of rum, . . . . .  | 1    | 10 | 0 |
| 1 paire of stillyards, . . . . .   | 0    | 10 | 0 |
| 3 yoaks and 2 grind stones, . . . . .  | 0    | 12 | 0 |
| 1 canow, parcell of beef, and 2 small parcells of sugar, . . . . .   | 1    | 10 | 0 |
| 4 cowes more, . . . . .  | 18   | 0  | 0 |
| 4 oxen, . . . . .  | 24   | 0  | 0 |
| 2 of two years old, . . . . .  | 5    | 0  | 0 |
| 2 of three years old, . . . . .  | 7    | 0  | 0 |
| 2 calves, . . . . .  | 2    | 0  | 0 |
| 1 bull stag, . . . . .   | 6    | 0  | 0 |
| Whcate, . . . . .  | 12   | 0  | 0 |
| 30 bushells of Indian corne . . . . .  | 3    | 0  | 0 |
| Old wheat, . . . . .   | 5    | 0  | 0 |
| 2 draught chaines, 1 timber chaine, 1 pr. cart wheels, boxes and rings,<br>1 colter, 1 share colter and boulte, . . . . .                              | 3    | 0  | 0 |
| 1 broad axe, 3 iron wedges, 1 pr. of beetle rings, 1 cart rope, 1 collar<br>for a horse, 2 pitchforks, 1 grind stone . . . . .                         | 1    | 10 | 0 |
| 1 flock bed and boulster, 1 handsaw, 2 augurs, 2 hamers, and 1<br>paire fell'rs, . . . . .   | 1    | 10 | 0 |
| 1 iron pott, pot hooks and tramell, 1 brasse kettle, 1 kellett and<br>candlestick, 1 pewter pint pott, 2 old pewter platters, . . . . .                | 2    | 0  | 0 |
| 6 alchymy spoons, . . . . .  | 0    | 1  | 0 |
| 15 old lumber casks, . . . . .   | 0    | 15 | 0 |
| $\frac{1}{2}$ firkin butter and 2 cheeses, . . . . .   | 0    | 15 | 0 |
| 2 cowe hydes, . . . . .  | 0    | 10 | 0 |
| Total sume, . . . . .  | 1294 | 14 | 4 |

This inventory and appraisem't was finished ye 20th of October, 1669. as witness o'r hands, we having according to o'r best knowledge and understanding, done as witness o'r hands ye day and yeare aforesaid, we have appraised as money of this country,

JOHN RICHBELLS,  
WM.  $\boxplus$  HOYDEN.  
his marke.  
SAMUEL DRAKE.

John Bankes one of ye Exec'rs of ye said will entered into bond of £200 Sterl. to perfourme ye said will. Ye bond was dated ye 13 October, 1669.<sup>a</sup>

During the same year an execution was granted against ye estate of Thomas Pell, of Ann Hooks neck, for £16 19 10, of ye goods or chattels belonging and reserved by ye executors, in trust, for the use of his heirs, the said sum being due for several charges relating to a matter in difference between Charles Bridges and Sarah his wife, plaintiffs, and ye said Thomas Pell defendant, wherein ye said defendant was overthrown, and condemned to pay ye costs of suit.<sup>b</sup>

FRANCIS LOVELACE.

[*To Mr. Robert Coe, high sheriff or his deputy, to cause this execution to be served.*]<sup>c</sup>

By the will of Mr. Thomas Pell, it will be observed, that he bequeathes all his "lands and houses in any part of New England, or in ye territory of ye Duke of York," to his nephew John Pell, living in Ould England, the only son of his only brother, John Pell, Doctor of Divinity.

The Rev. John Pell, D.D., second son of Rev. John Pell and Mary Holland, was born at Southwyck, in Sussex, on the first of March, 1611. His father, we are told, died whilst he was only five years old; but his mother, who was of the Holland family, residing in Kent, did not allow this loss to be an injury to his education. From her tuition he went to that of Mr. John Jefferies, master of the free school at Steyning, and made such proficiency that at the age of thirteen he proceeded to Trinity College, Cambridge.<sup>d</sup> He was an excellent linguist, understanding well Arabic, Italian, French, Dutch and Hebrew, as well as the two classical languages. Mathematics, however, were his favorite and distinguishing study. At the age of nineteen he composed a treatise upon the use of sun-dials, and engaged in a correspondence relating to logarithms with the learned Mr. H. Briggs. In the year 1636, he took the degree of M.A., and the following year proceeded to finish his studies at Oxford, where he was greatly esteemed. On the 3d of July, 1632, he married Tehamaria, "Tamar or Athamar," second daughter of Mr. Henry Reginolle,<sup>e</sup> of London, by whom he had four sons and the same number of daughters." John, their only surviving son, as we shall see presently, succeeded his uncle as second lord of Pelham.

"In December, 1643," Dr. Pell "went to Amsterdam to fill the professorship of mathematics. He succeeded Martin Hortensius. His pub-

<sup>a</sup> Probate Rec. Fairfield Co., 1665-1675, 2 vol. pp. 43, 44. Also Surrogate's Office, N. Y., Wills & Admin, 1665 o 1683, vol. 1, p. 87.

<sup>b</sup> Westchester Town Rec.

<sup>c</sup> Assize Rec., Albany, 215.

<sup>d</sup> Trinity College, Cambridge, was founded by Edward III, and the Black Prince and Pell as being of founders kin was entitled to certain privileges attached thereto.

<sup>e</sup> Henry Reginolles, or Reginalles, was descended of a family of that name resident at Belsted, county of Suffolk. The following guard of arms was made to Reginalles (Belsted, county of Suffolk,) in 1584, "Sa. on a chief ar. three mullets pierced of the field." Burke's Gen. Armory.



lic lectures upon Diophantus were much applauded, as is testified by his learned colleague, Gerrard John Vossius, who styles him, in his *De Scientiis Mathematicis*, 'a person of various erudition, and a very acute mathematician;' though, as Dr. Pell tells Sir Henry Cavendish, in a letter, still preserved in the British museum, '*stupidus, stolidus, cani similis, temerarius, petulans juvenis*,' and the like titles, hath Longomontanus bestowed upon your honor's most humble servant, JOHN PELL."<sup>a</sup> "This letter is dated from Amsterdam, in February, 1644-5. In 1646, in compliance with the wishes of the Prince of Orange, Mr. Pell removed to the Professorship of Philosophy and Mathematics in *Schola Illustris* which his Highness founded that year at Breda. In the same year appeared his '*Controversia cum Christiano Longomontano de vera circuli mensura*.' While at Breda he had Lord Brereton<sup>b</sup> under his tuition. In 1651, was published his '*Idea Mathematicus*,' which is the best of his works. In 1652, he returned to England, and two years subsequently was sent by the Protector Oliver Cromwell as his *obligatus*, or agent, to the Protestant Cantons of Switzerland, but subsequently he received orders to continue there as resident minister. He chiefly resided at Zurich."<sup>c</sup>

The Pell MSS.<sup>d</sup> in the Lansdowne Collections, in the British Museum, are written in an excellent style and afford interesting illustrations of Dr. Pell's domestic and literary character. They contain letters to and from Dr. Pell. Amongst his correspondents are Mr. Secretary Thurloe, Boswell, Monk, Moland, Drury and Hirtzell. To which is appended Dr. Pell's diary during his residence at Zurich. The latter commences thus:—

1654.

March 1, I was forty-three years old.

March 2, My Lord Protector sent for me, and first proposed that journey to me.

March 3, The Low-Dutch ambassador came.

March 21, Marcus first waited upon me.

March 24, I received at Whitehall, £200 sterling advance.

<sup>a</sup> Harleian MSS. 6796, 72 c.

<sup>b</sup> The son of the second Lord Brereton, of Leaghlin, in Ireland, to whose title he succeeded, and was member for Cheshire in the reign of Charles II. He died in 1679. Vaughan's Protectorate of Cromwell, vol. ii, 383.

<sup>c</sup> History of Sussex, by Thomas Walker, vol. ii, 218. Besides the works already mentioned. Dr. Pell published—1. *Modus Supputandi Ephemerides Astronomicus*, 1630; 2. *Clef de la Steganographie* de Jean Tretheim, 1631; 3. Letter to Edward Wingate upon Logarithms, 1631; 4. *Astronomical Account of Celestial Appearances*. &c., 1634; 5. *The Art of Calculating Eclipses*, 1634; 6. *Easter not Mis-timed*, 1664; 7. *Table of 10,000 Square Numbers*, &c., 1672; 7. *Inaugural Oration* at Breda. His *Demonstration of the 2 and 10 b'ks of Euclid*, his alterations and additions to Rhonun's Algebra, with many others on miscellaneous subjects, letters, &c., are some of them preserved in MSS. in the library of Lord Brereton, in Cheshire.

<sup>d</sup> In the Lansdowne MSS. are 11 vols. of Dr. Pell's. The first vol. is composed of a vast fund of interesting information respecting the persecution of the Piedmontese.

April 5, Dismissed by my Lord Protector. I supped with my wife and bade her adieu.

April 6, We came to gravesend.<sup>a</sup>

The first article in his correspondence (as ambassador) opens with a letter to Mr. Secretary Thurloe, dated Utrecht, April 20th, O. S., 1654.

In a letter from Morland, to the Right Hon. John Pell, dated Whitehall, January, 15th, 1656-7, he makes the following allusion to the family of the latter: "To-morrow, God willing, I shall not fail to go and present your five children with five gold angels according to your order, as I have this evening sent her ladyship a note, though it were after I received the enclosed from her to you, &c., &c."

August 26th, 1654, Mr. Pell thus writes to his wife concerning his children: "Let Mary learn to cut and carve with her right hand. Take heed that John<sup>a</sup> lose not his Roman with learning secretary, or else get a rambling hand writing, neither of them will," &c.

"To Mrs. Pell, at her house behind six trees, in Gardiner's lane, near King street, Westminster. In a letter of August 28th, O. S. 1655, to his wife, he writes, "you have reason to thank the councillor that persuaded you to write to me for pearls and jewels. You tell me that you know I have rich presents; you might do well to tell me, who gave them me, when, and where, and what they are, for I know none of all these. Nobody wears pearls or jewels here. If they were to be sold, they cannot be sent safely to you in a letter through the hands of many posts; and I have no other way to send to you from hence. It would a great deal better become you, to advise your daughters to cast off all thoughts of such bravery, as would not be fit for them, though their father were worth twenty times as much as he is, all his just claims being reckoned with that which he hath now in his power. This letter will come to Whitehall, about the very beginning of the Parliament, so that Mr. Secretary and those about him, may be so full of business, that they may forget to send you this letter in due time, and then it may miscarry, which is the cause that this time I tell you no more of my mind concerning Ma and the rest, of whom I cannot think without much sadness.

God Almighty bless them and direct you."

Zurich, May 26th. Mr. Pell to Mrs. Pell. "Since my last of April 20th, &c., &c., I have received two of yours. In them you ask advice concerning my son. If he be not fit to get long lessons, by heart, he will never be fit for that school; but you must take heed that you displease not Mr. B. by taking him away. If our friends can help you to find out a good school for him, you may send him thither in the school

<sup>a</sup> Dr. Vaughan's Protectorate of Cromwell vol. ii, 485. The journey from Westminster to Zurich, says Pell, was forty-three days; "our way was worked, and at least seven hundred miles long."

vacation ; or else my uncle may help you to an excuse, by pretending a desire to see him ; and then (as if it were his humor in my absence to have him better grounded before he return to such a great school) he may be sent to some other school, where there are fewer boys ; for in large schools, the masters are forced to ease themselves by laying great burdens upon their scholars' memories. But it will be very hard to find a good school. God Almighty direct you, and bless him and his sisters."<sup>a</sup>

"October 15th, Mr Pell to Mrs. Pell. Since my last of July 16, I have received seven of yours, &c. The fourth tells me that you like mine of July 16th so ill, that you may well content yourself without my letters. In it you sent me a Latin letter enquiring whether *he that wrote it will be a scholar or a 'prentice*. That question will be better answered three years hence ; they that will now judge of him may be very much mistaken in him ; with your next, let him send me the names of the books which he now learns in school, &c."

October 2d, 1656, concerning his daughter Mary's marriage, he writes: "I perceive by yours, that M. hath much abated her height of her first flight. First a rich husband or none at all, then two hundred pounds a year at least ; now, a younger brother, that hath no land, but some money in other men's hands, almost enough to purchase four-score pounds a year free land.

Now she hath found one rich enough for her, you must try whether she is rich enough for him ; you may therefore tell him or her that you have order to pay him two hundred pounds upon the day of her marriage, without promise that she or hers shall receive any more from me, or by me, till I am dead, &c. &c."<sup>b</sup>

On May the 6th, 1658, Mr. Pell received the following letter of recall from the Protector.

*Oliver Cromwell to Mr. Pell.*

Sir:—The state of affairs being much altered in those parts, so that your longer abode there seemeth not so necessary, and that your return hither may be more serviceable to us, I have thought fit hereby to recall you ; therefore you will do well, having taken your leave there, in the best manner, to repair homewards, that we may receive from you the account of your whole negotiation, and you from us the encouragement which you have deserved.<sup>c</sup>

Sir, I rest your loving friend,                      OLIVER P.

By his highness's command,

JO THURLOE.

<sup>a</sup> John Pell here alluded to, was the second Lord and proprietor of the Manor of Pelham. In Mr. Pell's diary, Feb. 3, 1634, he remarks my son as eleven years old.

<sup>b</sup> Mr. Pell's daughter was mar. Nov. 27, 1656.

<sup>c</sup> The tedious negotiations at Baden, ended in a peace, which left the Swiss Cantons in the same relation to each other and Europe as before.

On the 23d of June, 1658, he took leave of the Swiss Cantons, in a Latin oration, and arrived in England on the 13th of August following, just as Cromwell was dying. In his diary Mr. Pell thus records the death of the Protector and the proclamation of his son :

September 3d, 1658, *Olivarus Protector obiit alb, aula.*

September 4th, 1658, *Ricardus Westminsterii et Londine proclamation.*

The following notes relate to his attendance on the Protector's funeral:

GARDINER'S LANE, NEAR KING STREET.

"I do hereby request that the proportion of cloth allowed unto me by the right honorable council as mourning for his late highness, the lord protector, may be delivered unto my neighbor, Mr. Samuel Harthib, the younger. Written with my own hand, Sept. 26th, 1658.

JOHN PELL.

WHITEHALL, AT THE GREEN CLOTH, SEPT. 27. 1658.

MR. CLEEKE, *Comptroller*.:—"I desire you to direct the delivery of nine yards of black cloth of twenty-four shillings per yard, and six yards of fifteen shillings per yard, for John Pell, Esq.

BARRINGTON.

JOHN PELL, Esq. :—"You are desired to attend the funeral of the most serene and most renowned OLIVER, late Lord Protector, from Somerset House, on Tuesday, the 23d of November, instant, at eight of the clock in the morning at the furthest, and bring with you this ticket; and that by Friday next, you send to the Herald's office, near Paul's, the names of your servants that are to attend in mourning, without which they are not to be admitted; and also to take notice that no coaches are to pass, on that day, in the streets between Somerset House and Westminster."<sup>a</sup>

While abroad Mr. Pell had performed considerable services for King Charles II.<sup>b</sup> and the Church of England for which he was favored by the Royalists party. Being ordained Deacon by the Bishop of Lincoln on the 31st of March, 1661, and a priest in the June following; the same year he obtained from the crown the rectory of Fobbing<sup>c</sup> in Essex, to which the Bishop of London added the rectory of Lasingdon or Lainden in 1663.

<sup>a</sup> Vaughan's Protectorate of Cromwell, vol. ii., 341, 342.

<sup>b</sup> In his diary he records the King's birth day thus: "1657, May 29, Carlus, twenty-seven years old."

<sup>c</sup> The living is a discharged rectory, in the deanery of Lewes, and is valued in the King's books at £9 13s. 9½d. It is in the patronage of the owner. The church is dedicated to St. Michael.



Among the Pell papers occurs the following letter from his curate, the Rev. John Nye, dated:—

LAINDEN, FEB. 10, 1677-8.

REVEREND SIR:—You expect, I presume, some intimations concerning the place and people where, as your substitute, I serve the cure; after tedious deliberation, I thought to give your worship the following notice, viz.:—As far as the winter extremities, the incontinuity of country houses, and private necessities do permit, our churches enjoy full congregations, the people being reverent and observant, and lovers of the desk as well as pulpit. I know not one perfect dissenter; only Mr. Andrews, of Lainden, once held a conventicle in his house since my coming. The appearance at Christmas communion was tolerable—about twenty persons; and we hope Easter will exceed. Our school is occupied by a licensed, grave, and good man. All officers for church and town are legally qualified, *i. e.* men honest, able, judicious. All church ornaments and repairs are exact, except only Barseldon, where two casualties are fallen, viz.: the bell roof is ready to drop, and one side of the church needs shoring; the total charges are pre-estimated about fifty pounds. As for my own acceptance and success, it is not wholly in vain, praised be God! I know not one drunkard nor swearer amongst us, except only Gaffar Fryer of Lainden—who on many accounts forgets piety, but especially by swearing and miserableness. My Lord Bishop of London urges the duty of catechising with much fervor; I shall begin on the 17th of Feb. next, being the first Sunday in Lent; but my lord (when I sued out a license,) did profess Lent season too short for such a work, and hardly endured to have the matter contested. Our parishes have not observed perambulations for several years; I suppose it will be convenient to stir them thereto against the 5th of May next, Rogation Sunday. Reverend sir, I know your minutes are precious, your importances constant; *ergo*, it is duty and love without rhetorical am-bages, to profess myself, as I ought to appear,

Your worship's humble servant and ready curate.

JOHN NYE.

Mr. Andrews (of whom my letter speaketh,) is a constant churchman, attentive and observant at the common prayer, and carefully avoideth sly reflections against the government; but, as it seems, best satisfied with the Presbyterian discipline.

The same year of his appointment to Laindon he was made domestic chaplain to the Archbishop of Canterbury. "It was expected he would have risen to some of the highest dignities of the Church; but, careless of his interests, and neglectful of his pecuniary resources, he was cheated by his tenants, and defrauded by his relatives, and never attained to a higher rank than D.D. Finally, he was roused to a sense of his imprudence in devoting all his time to study, by actually wanting the necessaries of life; but it was too late, he was committed to the King's Bench prison for debt; and though speedily released by those who admired his talents, it seems to have had a fatal influence upon his

health. He lived for about a year at the College of Physicians with Dr. Whistler; and had just removed thence to the house of one of his grand-children, residing at Westminster, when death procured him a still more friendly removal, on the 12th of December, 1685. He was buried at the joint expense of Dr. Busby, a master of Westminster school, and of Mr. John Sharp, rector of St. Giles's, in the rector's vault.<sup>a</sup>

John Pell, the only son of the Rev. John Pell, D.D., by Ilhamarie. Tamar or Athamar, Reynolds, was born in London, Middlesex county, on the 3d of February, 1643. By the will of his uncle, Thomas Pell, he became the next proprietor of the manor of Pellham. He must have arrived at Boston, Massachusetts, sometime during the Fall of 1670; bearing a letter of introduction to Governor Winthrop by his friend Lord Brereton, from London, 23d June, 1670.<sup>b</sup>

The following certificate of recognition was issued by the Governor and assistant of Connecticut in 1670:

"Att a meeting of the governor and assistants in Hartford, December 9th, 1670, upon the desire of Sir John Pell, the governor and assistants thought good hereby to certify whom it may concern, that they are fully satisfied by several letters and testimonials that the governor hath received from persons of honor in England, that the bearer of them, Sir John Pell, senior, in ordinary to His Majesty, and son of Dr. Pell of London, is the undoubted nephew of Mr. Thomas Pell, late of Fairfield, and the person whom he hath made his heir in his last will and testament, to whom the inventory in trust ought to surrender the estate bequeathed to him by the said Mr. Thomas Pell, deceased, and the just account thereof according to his will. Signed by order of the governor and assistants, per me,

JOHN ALLEN,

Secretary of His Majesty's Colony of Connecticut.

This is a true copy according to the original received the  
15th December, 1670, per me

WILLIAM HILL CLARKE.<sup>c</sup>

The above certificate was confirmed by Governor Lovelace of New York.<sup>d</sup>

In the year 1675, John Pell of Ann-hooks Neck, binds and makes over unto John Burr of Fairfield, his heirs and assignees, &c., all his meadow lying in Fairfield, on the Mill river, &c. Upon the 20th of October, 1687, the whole territory was erected into one entire enfranchised township, manor, and place of itself, henceforth to be called

<sup>a</sup> Hist. of Sussex, by Thos. Walker, vol. ii, 218. See Bothopia Britannica, vol. v.

<sup>b</sup> The original letter was in the possession of the late James Savage, LL.D. of Boston.

<sup>c</sup> Probate Rec. Fairfield Co., 1665-75, p. 49.

<sup>d</sup> Surrogate's Office, N. Y., Will & Adm., 1665 to 1683, vol. i, page 102.

"THE LORDSHIP AND MANOR OF PELHAM," under the feudal tenure of paying yearly, thereupon, twenty shillings at the city of New York, on the 25th day of March (Annunciation of the Blessed Virgin Mary).<sup>a</sup>

### THE ROYAL PATENT OF PELHAM MANOR.

THOMAS DONGAN, Captain General and Governor-in-chief in and over the province of New Yorke, and the territories depending thereon in America, under his most sacred Majesty, James the Second, by the grace of God, Kinge of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, defender of the faith, &c.—to all to whom these presents shall come, sendeth greeting: Whereas, Richard Nicholls, Esq., late governor of this province, by his certaine deed in writing, under his hand and seale, bearing date the sixth day of October, in the eighteenth year of the reigne of our late soveraigne lord, Charles the Second, by the grace of God, of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, Kinge, defender of the faith, &c., and in the yeare of our Lord God one thousand six hundred sixty and six—did give, grant, confirm and rattefy, by virtue of the commission and authoritie unto him given by his (then) royal highness, James, Duke of Yorke, &c., (his now Majesty,) upon whome, by lawful grant and pattent from his (then) Majesty, the propriety and government of that part of the maine land, as well of Long Island and all the islands adjacent. Amongst other things was settled unto Thomas Pell, of Onkway, alias Fairfield, in his Majesty's colony of Connecticut—gentleman—all that certaine tract of land upon the maine lying and being to the eastward of Westchester bounds, bounded to the westward with a river called by the Indians Aquaconounck, commonly known to the English by the name of Hutchinson's River, which runneth into the bay lying betweene Throgmorton's Neck and Anne Hooke's Neck, commonly called Hutchinson's Bay, bounded on the east by a brooke called Cedar Tree Brooke, or Gravelly Brooke; on the South by the Sound, which lyeth between Longe Island and the maine land, with all the islands in the Sound not before that time granted or dispossessed of, lying before that tract of land so bounded as is before expresst; and northward to runne into the woods about eight English miles, the breadth to be the same, as it is along by the Sound, together with all the lands, islands, soyles, woods, meadows, pastures, marshes, lakes, waters, creeks, fishing, hawking, hunting and fowling, and all other proffitts, commodities and heriditaments to the said tract of land and islands belonging, with their and every of their appurtenances, and every part and parcel thereof; and that the said tract of land and premises should be forever thereafter held, deemed, reputed, taken and be an intire infranchised townshipp, manner and place of itself, and should always, from time to time, and at all times thereafter, have, hold and enjoy like and equall priviledges and immunities with any towne infranchised, place or manner within this government, &c., shall in no manner of way be subordinate or belonging unto, have any dependance upon or in any wise, bounds or the rules under the direction of any riding, or towne, or towne-

<sup>a</sup> The year of our Lord, until a century ago, was reckoned from the 25th of March because with the miraculous conception, the work of our redemption; and hence the era of Grace began. "The change of New Year's Day from 25th of March to the 1st of January was adopted legally by France in 1562, by Scotland in 1600, and by England and Ireland at the change of style, 1752." Chambers Miscellaneous Questions, by J. B. Lippincott & Co., 1898.



ships, place or jurisdiction either upon the maine or upon Longe Island—but should in all cases, things and matters be deemed, reputed, taken and held as an absolute, intire, infranchised townshipp, manner and place of itselfe in this government, and should be ruled, ordered and directed in all matters as to government, accordingly, by the governour and Councill, and General Court of Assizes—only provided, always, that the inhabitants in said tract of land granted as aforesaid, should be obliged to send fforwards to the next townes all publick pachquetts and letters, or hew and cryes coming to New Yorke or goeing from thence to any other of his Majestic's collonys; to have and to hold the said tract of land and islands, with all and singular the appurtenances and premises, together with the priviledges, imunities, franchises, and advantages therein given and granted unto the said Thomas Pell, to the proper use and behoofe of the said Thomas Pell, his heires and assignes for ever, fully, freely, clearly, in as large and ample manner and forme, and with such full and absolute immunities and priveledges as before is expresst, as if he had held the same immediately from his Majesty the Kinge of England, &c., and his suckcessors, as of the manner of East Greenwich, in the county of Kent, in free and common sockage and by fealty, only yealdeing, rendering and payeing yearely and every yeare unto his then royall highness, the Duke of Yorke, and his heires, or to such governour or governours as from time to time should by him be constituted and appoynted, as an acknowledgement, one lambe on the first day of May, if the same shall be demanded as by the said deede in writing, and the entry thereof in the bookes of records in the secretarie's office for the province aforesaid, may more fully and at large appeare. *And whereas*, John Pell, gentleman, nephew of the said Thomas Pell, to whom the lands, islands and premises, with appurtenances, now by the last will and testament of him, the said Thomas Pell, given and bequeathed, now is in the actual, peaceable and quiett seazeing and possession of all and singular the premises, and hath made his humble request to mee, the said Thomas Dongan, that I would, in the behalfe of his sacred Majesty, his heirs and suckcessors, give and grant unto him, the said John Pell, a more full and firme grant and confirmation of the above lands and premises, with the appurtenances, under the seale of this his Majesty's province: *Now Know Yee*, that I, the said Thomas Dongan, by virtue of the commission and authority unto me given by his said Majesty, and power in me being and residing, in consideration of the quitt rent hereinafter reserved, and for divers other good and lawfull considerations me thereunto moving, I have given, rattefied and confirmed, and by these presents doe hereby give, grant, ratifie and confirme unto the said John Pell, his heirs and assigns for ever, all the before mentioned and rented lands, islands and premises, with the heridatements and appurtenances, priveledges, imunities, franchises and advantages to the same belonging and appertaining, or in the said before mentioned deede in writing expresst, implied or intended to be given and granted, and every part and parcell thereof, together with all that singular messuages, tenements, barnes, stables, orchards, gardens, lands, islands, meadows, inclosures, arable lands, pastures, feedeings, commons, woods, underwoods, soyles, quarreys, mines, minnerally, (royall mines only excepted,) waters, rivers, ponds, lakes, hunteing, haucking, fishing, ffloweing, as alsoe all rents, services, wasts, strayes, royalties, liberties, priviledges, jurisdictions, rights, members and appurtenances, and all other immunities, royalties, power of franchises, profits,



commodities, and hereditaments whatsoever to the premises, or any part or parcel thereof belonging or appertaining: and further, by vertue of the power and authority in mee being and residing, I doe here grant, rattefie and confirme, and the tract of land, island and premises aforesaid are, by these presents, erected and constituted to be one lordship and manner—and the same shall from henceforth be called the lordshipp and manner of Pelham; and I doe hereby give and grant unto the said John Pell, his heirs and assigns, ffull power and authority at all times hereafter, in the said lordshipp and manner of Pelham aforesid, one court leete and one court barron, to hold and keepe at such times and so often yearly as he and they shall see meete, and all sines, issues and amerciements at the said court leete and court barron, to be holden and kept in the manner and lordship aforesaid, that are payable from time to time, shall happen to be due and payable by and from any the inhabitants of or within the said lordshipp and manner of Pelham abovesaid; and also all and every the powers and authorities hereinbefore mentioned, for the holding and keepinge of the said court leete and court barron, ffrom time to time, and to award and issue forth the customary writs to be issued and awarded out of the said court leete and court barron, and the same to beare test and to be issued out in the name of the said John Pell, his heirs and assignes, and the same court leete and court barron to be kept by the said John Pell, his heirs and assignes, or his or their steward, deputed or apportioned; and I doe further hereby give and grant unto the said John Pell, his heirs and assignes, full power to distraine for all rents and other sums of money payable by reason of the premises, and all other lawful remedys and meanes for the haveing, receiving, levyng and enjoying the said premises and every part thereof, and all waifts, straves, wrecks of the sease, deadands and goods of felions happening and being within the said manner of Pelham, with the advowson and right of patronage of all and every of the church and churches in the said manner, erected and to be erected—to have and to hold all and singular the said tract of land, islands and manner of Pelham, and all and singular the above granted or mentioned to be granted premises, with their rights, members, jurisdictions, privileges, hereditaments and appurtenances, to the said John Pell, his heirs and assignes, to the only proper use, benefitt and behoofe of the said John Pell, his heirs and assignes, for ever; to be holden of his most sacred Majestye, his heirs and successors, in free and common soccage, according to the tenure of East Greenwich, in the county of Kent, in his Majestye's kingdom of England, yielding, rendering and paying therefore yearly and every year for ever, unto his said Majestye, his heirs and successors, or to such officer or officers as shall from time to time be appointed to receive the same—twenty shillings, good and lawful money of this province, at the city of New Yorke, on the five and twentyth day of the month of March, in lieu and stead of all rents, services and demands whatsoever.

In testimony whereof, I have signed these presents with my handwriting, caused the seale of the province to be thereunto affixed, and have ordained that the same be entered upon record in the secretary's office, the five and twentyth day of October, in the third yeare of the Kinge Majestye's reigne, and in the year of our Lord one thousand six hundred eighty and seven.<sup>a</sup> THOMAS DONGAN.

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. A. 240, Alb. Book of Pat. No. ii. 306. The original document is in the possession of Mrs. Maria Fay, of East Chester.

In 1684-5 John Pell married Rachel, daughter of Philip Pinckney, Esq., one of the first ten proprietors of the town of East Chester, a lineal representative of the Pinkney's, of Pinkney's manor, in the county of Norfolk, England.<sup>a</sup>

"On the 20th of September, 1689, John Pell, gentleman, and Rachel his wife, for a valuable consideration, conveyed to Jacob Leisler of New York, merchant, all that tract of land in the manor of Pelham, (now called New Rochelle), containing six thousand acres, and also one hundred acres of land for the use of the French church erected or to be erected thereon," and "The grantees and his heirs yielding as an acknowledgement therefore unto the said John Pell and his heirs, as lords of the manor," one fat calf on the festival of St. John the Baptist.

By a writ of summons served on the 20th of March, 1691, John Pell was returned by the High Sheriff to represent the county of West Chester, in the Provincial Assembly.<sup>b</sup> He was also Judge of the Court of Common Pleas for this county, from 1688 until the day of his death.

The Hon. John Pell is said to have been cast away and drowned in his pleasure boat which foundered in a gale off City Island, sometime in the fall of 1702. He died intestate, leaving issue by his wife Rachel, two sons and two daughters.

Thomas Pell, the oldest son, was born at Pelham in 1686, and became invested with the inheritance and legal rights of his deceased father.

On the 3rd of March, 1729, occurs an indenture between:—

Thomas Pell of the Manor of Pelham, in the County of West Chester in Colony of New York, Esq., and Anna his wife of the first part, and Edward Blagge of the City of New York, gent, of the second part, for the consideration of £50, "hath granted, bargained, aliened and confirmed unto the said Blagge, his executors and administrators all that certain full equal one-fifth of all that large Tract of land which is contained in the bounds of the said Manor of Pelham to wit: of that part of the said Manor, which lyes on the north side of the Boston Road or Highway, which leads from East Chester to New Rochelle, and also the one full equal fifth part of all that tract of land within the said manor which lyes to the eastward of New Rochelle bounds, with all the hereditaments and appurtenances therunto belonging, excepting and reserving out of this present grant, all those lands which do belong to the Township of New Rochelle, and also all that plantation on which Phillip Pell now lives, and also all that land formerly conveyed to Isaac Coutine, Daniel Samson, John June, and William

<sup>a</sup> The arms of Pinkney or Pinchené (of Buckinghamshire, Essex and Northamptonshire townships, Edward I.) as given by Burke, are —or four lozenges in fesse gu: which exactly agrees with the sketch of the Pinkney coat found in the corner stone of the French church at New Rochelle deposited in 1697. See East Chester for Pinckney family.

<sup>b</sup> Smith's History of New York, quarto edition 73.

Pineknucy, or any other person or persons whatsoever, who have any lawful claime to any of the said lands by virtue of any Deeds or Conveyances from the said Thomas Pell or his father John Pell deceased. To have and to hold, etc., and defend said Blagge against all other persons claiming any right to the same, etc. Upon the 15th day of March, 1732. Edward Blagge (for the value of £40,) did bargain, sell, release and sett over the within recited and mentioned tract of land and premises to Thomas Pell, Jr. <sup>a</sup>

Tho: Pell



Anna A Pell



The following Indenture from Thomas Pell, Sen., to Thomas Pell, Jun., for another fifth part of all his lands in the Manor of Pelham, lying and being to the northward of the King's highway or Country road, from the city of New York to Boston occurs on 25th of April, 1732.

EDWARD BLAGGE.



This Indenture made the twenty-fifth day of April, in the fifth year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord George the Second, by the Grace of God, of Great Britain, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, &c.. Annoq Dom.: Seventeen hundred and thirty-two, between Thomas Pell, Senior, of the Mannour of Pelham, in the county of Westchester and province of New York, Esq., of the one part, and Thomas Pell, Junior, of the Mannour aforesaid, Gent., of the other part, Witnesseth, That the said Thomas Pell, Senior, for and in consideration of the sum of one hundred pounds current money of New York to him paid at and before ye Ensealing and Delivery of these presents by the

<sup>a</sup> Copied from original document in possession of Geo. H. Pell, of New York; also March 23, 1729, an Indenture between Thomas Pell, gent, and Anna his wife, and Samuel Clowes of Jamaica, Queens County, for one other certain full equal one-fifth part of the same considered £50. Witnesses, Edward Blagge, Thomas Pell, Jr. and Jno Pell, Jr.; also Indenture March 23, 1729, from Thomas Pell, Sr. and Anna his wife to Thomas Pell, Jr. for another fifth part of same, considered £50. Witnesses, S. Clowes, Edward Blagge and John Pell, Jr.; also Indenture March 23, 1729, between Thomas Pell and Anna his wife and John Pell for another fifth part of same, considered £50. Witnesses, S. Clowes, E. Blagge and Thomas Pell, Jr. All the above are in possession of Geo. H. Pell, and have never been recorded.

said Thomas Pell, Junior, the receipt whereof the said Thomas Pell, Senior, doth, hereby acknowledge and himself therewith fully satisfied and paid, and thereof doth freely and absolutely exonerate and discharge him, the said Thomas Pell, Junior, his heirs, Executors and Adm<sup>rs</sup>, and every of them for ever by these presents hath granted, bargained, sold, conveyed and assigned, and by these presents Doth freely, fully and absolutely grant bargain, sell, convey and assign unto the said Thomas Pell, Junior, his heirs and assigns for ever all the right and title which he the said Thomas Pell, Senior, hath at the time of executing these presents, of in or to any Lands in the Mannour of Pelham, abovesaid, lying and being to the Northward of the King's highway or Country road from the City of New York to Boston which have not been heretofore conveyed by the said Thomas Pell, Senior, or his honoured father, John Pell, late of the aforesaid Mannour of Pelham, Esq., Deceased, to any person or persons whatsoever by Deed of FFeoffment or otherwise Together with all and Singular, the Appurtenances, profits and advantages thereunto belonging or in any wise appertaining. To have and to hold all the right and title of him the said Thomas Pell, Senior, of in or to the Lands in the Mannour of Pelham abovesaid, lying and being in the Northward of the King's highway or Country road from the City of New York to Boston which have not been heretofore conveyed by Deed of FFeoffment or otherwise to any person or persons whatsoever by him the said Thomas Pell, Junior, or his honoured father, John Pell abovesaid, late Deceased, and the appurtenances and advantages to the said right belonging unto him the said Thomas Pell, Junior, his heirs and assigns to the only proper use and behoof of him the said Thomas Pell, Junior, his heirs and assigns for Ever. In Witness whereof the said parties have to these presents interchangeably set their hands and Seals the day and year first above written.

Sealed and Delivered and the  
Consideration Money acknow-  
ledged to be received in the pre-  
sence of

*Thos. Pell*



WILL THOMPSON.

JOSEPH PELL.<sup>a</sup>



Thomas Pell, sen., died at the Manor house, Pelham, sometime in 1739.

<sup>a</sup> Copied from original in possession of Geo. H. Pell, of N. Y.



## THE WILL OF THOMAS PELL, SEN. OF THE MANOR OF PELHAM.

In the name of God, Amen. This third day of September, in the 13th year of the reign of King George ye second Anno Domini, 1739, I, Thomas Pell, Sen., of the manor of Pelham, in the County of West Chester and Province of New York, being sick and weak in body, but of perfect mind and memory, thanks be given unto God therefore, and calling unto mind the mortality of my body, knowing it is appointed for all men once to die, doe make and ordain this, my last, will etc., in manner and form following, to say: Principally and first of all I give and recommend my soul into the hands of God who gave it, and my body I recommend to the earth to be buried in a Christian like and decent manner att the discretion of my executors hereinafter named, and touching such worldly estate as it hath pleased God to bless me with all in this life. After my just and lawful debts are first satisfied and paid out of my moveable estate, as also my general charges of my executors hereinafter named—I give, Devise and Dispose of the same in the following manner and form: Imprimis, I give unto my daughter Ann, Broadhurst the use of the room she now lives in, during the time she remains a single woman without a husband; but, if in case after my decease, my son Joseph Pell doth not like or approve of her living in said room during the time aforesaid, that then he shall build her a small house of about sixteen feet square, and allow her that and the use of six acres of land out of his land, during the time she remains a single woman and without a husband as aforesaid; and I also give unto my said daughter, Ann Broadhurst, the sum of sixty pounds, current money of New York, to be levied and paid her out of my moveable estate by my executors after my decease, and to be enjoyed by her, her heirs and assignees forever.

*Item.*—It is my further will and mind, that my brother, John Pell, should have houseroom, lodging, victuals and cloaths, comfortable for him during his lifetime, which I order my son Joseph Pell to provide.

*Item.*—I give and bequeath unto my beloved wife, Ann Pell, the use of the best room in my house and timber in any part of my land, and the use of sixty acres of land and chamber and cellar room in my house, during the time she remains my widow; and I also give unto my said wife, the sum of one-hundred pounds, current money of New York, by her if she sees cause to take it in money out of my moveable estate after my decease; to be enjoyed by her, her heirs and assignees forever; and also I further give unto my said wife, the best bed and furniture in my house.

*Item.*—I give and bequeath unto my son John Pell, the sum of five pounds, current money of New York, to be levied and paid him out of my moveable estate, by my executors after my decease; to him, his heirs and assignees forever, he having received the use of his portion already.

*Item.*—I give and bequeath unto my son Thomas Pell the sum of three pounds, current money of New York, to be levied and paid to him out of my moveable estate, by my executors after my decease; to him, his heirs and assignees forever, he having received the use of his portion already.

*Item.*—I give and bequeath unto my son Joshua Pell, the sum of three pounds, current money of New York, to be levied and paid to him out of my moveable estate, by my executors after my decease; to him, his heirs and assignees forever, he having received the use of his portion already.

*Item*.—I give and bequeath unto my son Philip Pell, the sum of three pounds, current money of New York, to be levied and paid to him out of my moveable estate, by my executors after my decease ; to him, his heirs and assignees forever, he having received the use of his portion already.

*Item*.—I give and bequeath unto my son Caleb Pell, the sum of three pounds, current money of New York, to be levied and paid to him out of my moveable estate, by my executors after my decease ; to him, his heirs and assignees forever, he having received the use of his portion already.

*Item*.—I give and bequeath unto my son Joseph Pell, all and singular, my lands, meadows, houses, tenements, buildings etc., that now belong unto mee, as also the houses, rooms and land, and rooms before reserved for my wife att her marriage or decease, to him, his heirs and assignees. To his and their own and only proper use, benefit and behoof forever after my decease.

*Item*.—I give and bequeath unto my daughter, Mary Sands, the sum of seventy pounds current money of New York, to be levied and paid her out of my moveable estate by my executors upon my decease, to her, her heirs and assigns forever.

*Item*.—I give and bequeath to my daughter, Sarah Palmer, the sum of five pounds current money of New York, to be levied and paid her out of my moveable estate, by my executors after my decease ; to her, her heirs and assignees forever.

*Item*.—I give and bequeath unto my daughter, Bursheba Pell, the sum of one hundred and fifty pounds current money of New York, to be levied and paid her out of my moveable estate, by my executors after my decease ; to her, her heirs and assignees forever.

*Item*.—It is my will and mind, that all my moveable estate, excepting what I have before reserved to my wife, should by my executors be sold and the aforesaid legacies (after my just and lawful debts and funeral charges are satisfied and paid), to be paid out of the overplus thereof.

I give and bequeath unto my grandson, Samuel Broadhurst, the sum of ten pounds current money of New York, to him, his heirs and assignees forever, and the remainder thereof it is my will and mind should be equally divided among my four daughters, Mary Sands, Ann Broadhurst, Sarah Palmer, and Bathsheba Pell, and be enjoyed by them, their heirs and assignees forever ; and for executors of this my last will and testament, I do hereby nominate, constitute and appoint my two sons, Philip Pell and Joseph Pell, sole executors of this my last will and testament ; and I do hereby dissolve, revoke and disannul all and every and other former wills and testaments, legacies and executors whatsoever made by me before this time, named, willed or bequeathed.

Ratifying and confirming this, and no other, to be my last will and testament, in testimony whereof, I have hereunto sett my hand and seal, the day and year first above written.

THOMAS PELL. *a* (L. S.)

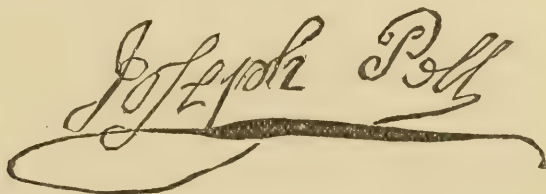
Joseph, his eldest son, died in 1752, aged 31, and was buried at Pel-

*a* Surrogates office, N. Y. Rec. of wills. Fol. Xong, pp. 155, 156. 1751-54. This will was proved.

ham.<sup>a</sup> His eldest son Joseph Pell, the fourth and last lord of the manor, died in 1776, leaving issue five sons who all died issueless save John Pell who had six sons and four daughters. The last of the six sons, who all died without issue, was the late Richard Moore Pell Esq. of New York, who died there on \_\_\_\_\_ 1868, and was interred

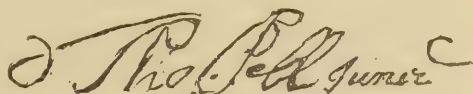
This gentleman was a tall noble looking person, who well represented the manorial lords of Pelham, as their nearest male heir in a direct line from John Lord Pell. The present representatives of this branch of the family, are the children of Maria Pell, who married Amelia Pell; and the son and two daughters of Caroline Pell, who married \_\_\_\_\_ Delano.

The decendants of John Pell, second son of Thomas Pell, and grandson of John Lord Pell, were Thomas, his eldest son, the father of Jos-



eph, who married his cousin Zipporah Pell, daughter of John Pell, and left issue: Abner, Peter, Thomas, John and Philena, who married Thomas Disbrow, whose children are Joseph, Livingston, Thomas, Clara, Louisa wife of George J. Penfield, Libby and Susan the second wife of Mr. Penfield, of New Rochelle. John Pell Jr., second son of John Pell, Sr., had Josiah and Zipporat, who married Thomas her cousin as above.

Thomas Pell, third son of Thomas Pell and grandson of John Lord Pell, by his will dated July 3d, 1739, and proved 28 \_\_\_\_\_ bequeathes his "*silver tankard and silver tumbler* that formerly belonged to his grandfather, John Pell, to his son David.



<sup>a</sup> The will of Joseph Pell is dated 1 Aug. 1752. Proved 25 Sept. 1752, Surrogates office N.Y. See Pell burying ground on property of late Robert Bartow of this town, for monument of Joseph Pell and wife.

David Pell, "*also the great Bible.*" "His executor he empowers to execute good and sufficient deeds and Conveyances of his lands and remainders of the moneys, which shall be arising from the sale of one-half of his farm, lying in East Chester, and the island lying in ye manor of Pelham, and my right in lands lying within ye Patent, at the north end of New Rochelle lands, etc., and to dispose of my lands lying in Fairfield, Connecticut." <sup>a</sup> His descendants are Samuel, who died without issue; James, who married Ann Fowler, daughter of Richard Fowler of East Chester, who had Abijah, who married Mary Baldwin, and had William James, Abijah, Aaron B., Charles Shute, Stephen, John and William; James, the eldest, residing in New Jersey; Abijah, the second, deceased, left four sons; Aaron B., the third, died without issue; Charles Shute, the fourth son, deceased, is the father of Charles Elliott, and Geo. Hamilton of New York. The Hon. Stephen, the fifth son, resides in Brooklyn, L. I. John, the sixth and youngest, at Poughkeepsie, N. Y. Roger was the third son of Thomas Pell; John, the fourth son of Thomas married Mary Totter, and had issue, John; Thomas Pell, who married Maria, daughter of Thomas Pell, and had two sons: Samuel Pell, now living on City Island, and John; David was the fifth and youngest son of Thomas Pell.

The descendants of Joshua Pell, fourth son of Thomas, eldest son of John Lord Pell, were numerous; among others, was Joshua who married — Palmer, and left Joshua the father of Joshua, Edward (whose son Frederick had Elijah Pell of New York) and Joseph. Benjamin, the third son of Joshua Pell, and — Palmer, married Ann, daughter of John Ferris, of the grove farm West Chester, and had among other sons, William Ferris Pell the founder of the famous auction firm of Pell & Co. of New York. The sons who succeeded him in the business, were all New York men by birth, and presented a splendid appearance.

The theory that city life impairs physical development might have been combatted by the appearance of this family, and it is doubtful if this city ever beheld a nobler trio of brothers than Duncan, Walden, and Clarence Pell, each of whom stood six feet high and were well proportioned.

I well remember attending one of Pell's sales where an individual was gazing with admiration on the crier, who, as he turned from time to time in that direction, beheld the admiring gaze. At last, suspicious that the man was not of a business turn, Mr. Pell exclaimed, "Was that your bid?" "No sir," was the reply. "Well, then, please stop looking at me," said the Apollo of the red flag.

<sup>a</sup> Rec. Surrogate's office, N. Y., No. xviii, 403.



Duncan Pell was the finest looking man of his day in Wall street, but to this he added not only commercial skill, but a love of learning, which was shown by the prize which he founded in the Free College in this city. Mr. Pell was not afraid to administer reproof, and the writer is indebted to him for a very valuable one. I was at that time (which is thirty years ago), a clerk in a small retail store in Broadway. One morning having swept out, I sat down to read the paper; but soon was addressed by some one, whom I answered in an indifferent manner, and without lifting my eyes from the paper. In a moment I heard a voice of thunder exclaiming, "Look up, young man and mind your business." The reproof needed no repetition. I looked up and saw a noble-looking man, whose frown at once passed away as he saw the effect of his words.

These three elegant men are now dead (as well as a fourth brother, James K. Pell), but the firm is still in successful existence in Hanover Square.<sup>a</sup>

Duncan Pell being Lieut. Gov. of Rhode Island, and his son, Duncan Archibald, Colonel on Genl. Burnside's staff during the war of 1861.

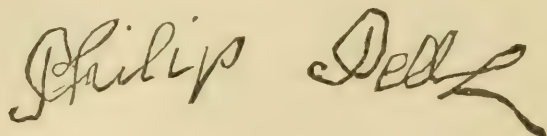
The eldest of the five brothers was Archibald Pell, Esq., the father-in-law of Edward A. Leroy of New York. The only daughter of Benjamin Pell, just mentioned (and sister of William Ferris Pell), was Maria, a noble and excellent woman, who married at the age of nineteen Jacob Treadwell Walden, a leading merchant of New York in the India trade. Their two sons, Alfred Pell Walden and Joseph Walden, died unmarried; and of four daughters, only one now survives, viz; Emma Walden, the wife of Samuel Cooke, D. D., Rector of St. Bartholamew's church, New York City. The second son of William Ferris Pell, was Alfred Sands Pell, who married Adelia, daughter of Col. James Duane, first Mayor of New York after the Revolutionary war, and a Judge of the Supreme Court of the United States, whose son is the present Robert Livingston Pell, of Pelham, Ulster Co., N. Y.

The descendants of Philip Pell, Esq., (fifth son of Thomas, the eldest son of John Lord Pell), are also numerous and distinguished. His eldest son Philip, who married Hannah Mott,<sup>b</sup> died in 1788, and was the father, first of the Hon. Philip Pell, Judge Advocate of the Continental Army in the revolutionary war, and a member of the Cincinnati Society. This illustrious individual had the honor of riding by the side of General Washington when he entered New York City upon "Evacu-

<sup>a</sup> Sketches of some of our old auctioneers. *Evening Post*, March 3d, 1871.

<sup>b</sup> This marriage took place before the Quaker meeting assembled at Westbury, L. I., 5th of March, 1731. The marriage certificate is signed by 26 witnesses; among these occurs the name of his brother Caleb Pell.

ation Day," Nov. 25th, 1783. He was a graduate of Kings College<sup>a</sup> (now Columbia), in 1766 and is said to have been one of the best Greek scholars of that day. His only son was Philip Pell of Pelham, the father of



Philip Pell of San Francisco, Cal. The second son was Major Samuel Treadwell Pell of the Second New York Regiment, who greatly distinguished himself under General Gates at Saratoga, in October, 1777. For his services on this memorable occasion he received from the State, three-hundred acres of bounty land. The following epitaph is inscribed on his head stone in East Chester church-yard.

MAJOR SAMUEL PELL,

ob. 29 Decr. 1786,

in the 32nd year of his age.

"Thus after returning victorious,"

From the Field of Mars, he

Cheerfully obeys the summons

Of eternity from whence there

is no return.

The third son of Philip Pell was Colonel David Jones Pell, also an officer in the Continental army, whose son was the late Stephen Snedan Pell, the father of Ogden Philip Pell and Walter Turnbull Pell, both of New York city.

Caleb Pell, the sixth and youngest son of Thomas Pell, oldest son of John Lord Pell, also left a numerous family whose descendants are scattered throughout the country.

A beautiful valley, called Swiss Dale, borders the Acqueanouncke or Hutchinson's River on the west side of the town. The Acqueanouncke or more properly the Acquacknouncke (an Indian name, descriptive of the red cedar tree,) rises in the town of Scarsdale, upon the lands of Lewis G. Morris.

Pelham Dale, the property of Hargous, is delightfully situated near the junction of the salt and fresh waters of the Acqueanouncke. This estate

<sup>a</sup> Philip Pell was admitted to Kings Coll. 1766.

formerly belonged to Colonel David Pell; and upon the division of his property, was purchased by the late James Hay, Esq.;<sup>a</sup> The dwelling house is a handsome structure of stone, and commands a beautiful view of Hutchinson's River, together with the distant village and spire of Eastchester. The garden contains a choice collection of trees and shrubs, and is also enlivened by a running stream.<sup>b</sup> About half a mile further up the valley is situated the "*Race Field*," once famous in the annals of the turf, adjoining which is the village of Pelhamville; here is a depot of the New Haven Railroad and a small Episcopal church, called the Church of the Redeemer; at present a chapel of ease to Christ church, Pelham. A grand feature in this beautiful valley is an extensive range of forests called the Pelham woods.

On the margin of the East River Creek, or Aqueanouncke, near the Boston Boulevard in this town, is situated "The Shrubbery," the residence of the Prevost family. George A. Prevost, Esq., the brother of the present owners, is the only surviving son of the late Mayor George William Prevost. This place was formerly the property of Joshua Pell, Esq., whose son, Joshua, sold it to Colonel Aaron Burr, from whom it passed by purchase to his step-son, Augustine James Frederick Prevost.<sup>c</sup> The latter, subsequently conveyed it to Major General Prevost. The Prevosts were originally from Geneva in Switzerland, being descended from Major General Augustine Prevost, of that place, who married Anne, daughter of the Chevalier George Grand, of Amsterdam, Holland.<sup>d</sup> The father of the late proprietor was Major General Augustine Prevost, brother of Lieutenant General Sir George Prevost, Baronet, Governor General and Commander-in-Chief of the British North American Colonies now represented by the Rev. Sir George Prevost, Baronet of Belmont, Hampshire, England. The brothers of the late proprietor were Colonel Augustine Prevost, lost at sea, and Capt. Henry Prevost, who fell in the storming of Ciudad Rodrigo, in Spain.

<sup>a</sup> James Hay was a descendant of James Hay, Esq., of Netherinch, Scotland, who joined the army of Prince Charles Edward in 1745, and was wounded at the "night of Falkirk." He was buried in Kilsyth church yard, Scotland. The family coat of arms, a.g. 3 escutcheons, gu. are to be seen on the north side of the house at Pelham. The tradition is that these arms were granted by Kenneth III., King of Scotland, anno. 989 to the first Hay and his two sons for their bravery at the battle of Lancaster Perth, as they had proved themselves the "copy to the."

<sup>b</sup> The old road to Pell's Point, or Neck, from the "King's highway," or "Westchester Path," as it was anciently called, formerly ran south of this house, making almost a circuit about the ground.

<sup>c</sup> Augustine James Frederick Prevost was the son of Colonel Frederick Prevost by his wife Theodosia Bartow, who afterwards married Colonel Aaron Burr.

<sup>d</sup> At the Synod of London in 1645, for the Province of Poictou, appeared John Chabroll Pastor of the church of Thouars, accompanied with Sir Peter Prevost, Knight Lord of La Javerne, Bides in the church of Chantonnay and Puybelliard, and Charles Prevost, Esq., Lord of La Simonne, elder in the church of Champagne and Mouton. "Quicks Synodicon, vol. ii, 502. At 5th Colloquy of Alençon appeared Stephen Le Prevost, Lord of Buisson, Quicks Synodicon, vol. ii, 735. The arms and crest of the Prevost family are, azure, a dexter arm in fesse issuing out of clouds from the sinister fesse point, the hand grasping a sword, erect ppe. a pomme and hilt, or, in chief, 2 mullets, or. Crest a demi lion rampant, azure, charged with a mural crown, or, on the Crest.

The following item relates to the old well that formerly stood in this vicinity, near the iron suspension bridge :

"April, 1726. Joseph Fowler is permitted to erect a dam or mill on the creek that runs between *Mr. Pell's* and *Eastchester*, at a certain place commonly called and known by the town land, provided he makes room for the water to be drawn off the meadows and for the canoes to pass."<sup>a</sup>

On the heights of Pelham, overlooking the village of Eastchester, stands the residence of the late Remsen Hinman, whose wife, Elizabeth, was a daughter of Col. James Pell, son of Roger Pell, fourth son of Thomas Pell, grandson of Hon. John Lord Pell. From the records of the Court of Chancery, it appears that Colonel Pell's property originally consisted of four hundred and forty acres. His last will is recorded in 1790. Nearly opposite this place, which fronts on the Boston Boulevard, a road pursues the eastern side of the heights towards Pelham. This road passes on the left, Woodside, the residence of J. C. Curn. From this place, many pleasant views of the valley and adjacent country are obtained, with the meanderings of the Aqueanouncke, on its way to the Sound.

Pelham Neck, a portion of the southern extremity of this town (we have seen), was formerly called Ann Hook's Neck—subsequently Pell Point and Rodman's Neck. Before entering the neck, on the high ground to the west, stands the residence of the late Richard Morris, Esq., commanding a pretty bay on the east, and some fine woodland scenery on the north-west. Upon the north-west side of the Neck lies the "*Indian burying-ground*," already alluded to. In fact, the whole of the Neck appears to have been used by the Indians for the purpose of sepulture ; in proof of this, their remains have been found in almost every part of it. The largest proportion of mounds, however, are situated on the grounds of the late George Rapelye, Esq. This individual was the son of Rem. Rapelye, a noted royalist, who married March 14, 1751, Ellen, daughter of Abel Hardenbrook, and amassed a large fortune in mercantile pursuits in New York. He died at Pelham in 1805, in his seventy-seventh year. George Rapelye, his son, who was born in New York, August 9, 1771, and educated at Columbia College, married July 19, 1798, Susan Eliza, daughter of the Rt. Rev. Samuel Prevoost, D.D., first Bishop of the Diocese of New York. He was not only distinguished for his wealth, but for his great public enterprises, and was a warm friend and supporter of the Protestant Episcopal Church. He was a liberal benefactor to St. Paul's church, East Chester. He published a book of travels in

<sup>a</sup> Eastchester Town Rec.



1834.<sup>a</sup> The Rapelyes purchased this property of the Rodman family, the Rodmans having obtained it through the marriage of Samuel Rodman with Mary Pell, daughter of Caleb Pell, grandson of Hon. John Lord Pell. The property is still vested in the heirs of George Rapelye; the house is beautifully situated near the eastern shore of the neck, and is justly celebrated for its extensive views of the sound and Long Island.

Hawkwood, the residence of the late Elisha King, Esq., is now owned by the widow of the late Levin R. Marshall, and adjoins the property of Captain J. R. Steers, on the south. The house is built of stone, in the Grecian style, and presents a fine front of columns to the water. The beauty of the scenery in this vicinity is greatly heightened by the close proximity of City Island, and the richly wooded shores of the Point. The grounds, containing a great variety of choice trees, were laid out by the celebrated gardener, André Parmenteer. Nearly adjoining Hawkwood, in the south-west, is Longwood, the residence of A. Newbold Morris, Esq.

Pelham Neck is terminated by the property of the late Gilbert Bowne. On the site of the dwelling-house, stood the residence of Thomas Fell, Esq., first lord of the manor. Perhaps the finest view of City Island and the adjacent waters are to be had from this portion of the Point. It deserves to be mentioned, that this district affords a favorite haunt for the fish hawk (*Falco Halioetus*), whose nests may be seen in the lofty summits of the venerable oaks and chestnuts which abound on the neck and neighboring shores. These birds are greatly respected, and a kind of superstition prevails that it is a lucky omen if one builds on the farm. The nest is an immense fabric of rotten sticks—"Itself a burden for the tallest tree." They subsist altogether on the finny tribes that swim in the bays and creeks adjacent, procuring their prey by their own active skill and industry."

"The regular arrival of this noted bird at the vernal equinox, when the busy season of fishing commences, adds peculiar interest to its first appearance, and procures it many a benediction from the fishermen"

"Soon as the sun, great ruler of the year,"  
Bends to our northern climes his bright career,  
And from the caves of ocean calls from sleep  
The finny shoals and myriads of the deep;

<sup>a</sup> "Annals of Newtown James Riker, Junr." The Rapelye family is descended from that of the de Rapelle, which as early as the eleventh Century, possessed large estates in Bretagne and ranked among the *arriere*—born of the French nobility. Jarvis Jansen de Rapelle, from Rochelle, in France, who came to this country in 1623, was the father of Pronimus, whose son Teunis, was father of the above George Rapelye. Arms, azure, three bars or, crest—out of a ducal coronet a chapena azure, with three bars, or, surmounted with six ostrich feather  $\propto$  of blue and gold.

When freezing tempests back to Greenland ride,  
 And day and night the equal hours divide;  
 True to the season, o'er our sea-beat shore,  
 The sailing Osprey high is seen to soar  
 With broad, unmoving wing; and, circling slow,  
 Marks each loose straggler in the deep below,  
 Sweeps down like lightning! plunges with a roar!  
 And bears his struggling victim to the shore.

The long-housed fisherman beholds, with joy,  
 The well-known signal of his rough employ;  
 And, as he bears his nets and oars along,  
 Thus hails the welcome season with a song:—

#### THE FISHERMAN'S HYMN.

The Osprey sails above the Sound;  
 The geese are gone, the gulls are flying;  
 The herring shoals swarm thick around;  
 The nets are launched, the boats are plying.  
 Yo, ho, my hearts! let's seek the deep,  
 Raise high the song, and cheerly wish her,  
 Still as the bending net we sweep,  
 "God bless the fish hawk and the fisher."

She brings us fish—she brings us Spring,  
 Good times, fair weather, warmth, and plenty;  
 Fine store of shad, trout, herrings, ling,  
 Sheeps-head and drum, and old wives' dainty.  
 Yo, ho, my hearts! let's seek the deep,  
 Ply every oar, and cheerly wish her,  
 Still as the bending net we sweep,  
 "God bless the fish hawk and the fisher."  
 She rears her young on yonder tree;  
 She leaves her faithful mate to mind 'em;  
 Like us, for fish, she sails to sea,  
 And, plunging, shows us where to find 'em.  
 Yo, ho, my hearts! let's seek the deep,  
 Ply every oar, and cheerly wish her,  
 While the slow-bending net we sweep,  
 "God bless the fish hawk and the fisher."<sup>a</sup>

In May, 1755, a public ferry appears to have been established between Ann Hooks Neck and Gravelly or Cedar Tree brook, on the north side of the East river and Hempstead harbor, and Matagariesons Bay on the

<sup>a</sup> Wilson's American Ornithology, New York News, Pennsylvania Gazette, June 18th, 1752. Wednesday last we had a great deal of thunder with some rain, which we hear, shattered a large tree on Ann Hook's Neck in Westchester County, and an ox, a cow and a calf, under it, were killed; and at New Rochelle, we hear, a house was much damaged.

opposite shore, under such regulations as had been usual and customary. "The patentees were Samuel Rodman, owner and proprietor of a tract of land lying on Pell's Neck, in the County of Westchester, adjoining upon and extending along the East river about one mile and a half, and John Wooley, owner and proprietor of a certain tract of land in the township of Hampstead in Queens County, on Nassau Island, opposite to the landing place on the said Samuel Rodman's plantation, adjoining upon and extending along the said river about half a mile."<sup>a</sup>

It was upon Pelham neck that the British forces, consisting of the grenadiers and light infantry, landed, October 18th, 1776, ten days previous to the battle of White Plains.<sup>b</sup>

Two days prior to the enemies landing, General Heath inform us "that the general officers of the American army rode to reconnoitre the ground at Pell's neck, &c., and it was determined that the position of the American army should be immediately changed; the left flank to be extended more northerly, to prevent its being turned by the British, who were at this time posted on Throgmorton's neck."<sup>c</sup> "On the 18th of October the wind was more fresh at southwest, the British urged to the other side of Frog's neck, embarked on board their boats, crossed over the cove, landed on Pell's neck, and moved briskly upwards. Three or four of the American regiments advanced towards them and took a good position behind a stone fence. When the British had advanced sufficiently near, they gave them a pretty close fire, which checked them, and even obliged them to fall back; but, being immediately supported, they returned vigorously to the charge. The action was sharp, for a short time; but the Americans were soon obliged to give way to superior force. Shepard's, Reid's, Baldwin's, and Glover's regiments had the principal share in this action. The Americans had between thirty and forty men killed and wounded; among the latter Col. Shepard, in the throat, not mortally, although the ball came well nigh effecting instant death. The loss of the British was not known, but must have been considerable. They advanced almost to New Rochelle, and halted. The American army extended its left."<sup>d</sup>

We copy the following from the diary of President Styles:

CAMP AT MILE SQUARE, E. CHESTER, 23 Oct. 1776.

"Friday morning last, the 18th, we were alarmed, and the enemy landed at Rodman's Point, (a place about four miles from our encampment,) with their

<sup>a</sup> Albany Rec. Book of Patents, No. xvi.

<sup>b</sup> Stedman's Hist. of the Rev.

<sup>c</sup> Heath's Mem. p. 71.

<sup>d</sup> Heath's Mem. pp. 72, 73.

whole force, the brigade under the command of Col. Glover consisting of about 700 men, one regiment being absent for guard. We marched down towards the place where the enemy were advancing with a body of 1600, with a very large artillery train. The first attack was made by a small party on their advance guard. We were effectually routed, and forced to retreat to the main body, who, when they came up, were fired upon by two regiments advantageously posted, Col. Glover's and Major Lee's, who behaved gallantly; we brought many of them to the ground.<sup>a</sup> Thus we continued fighting them and retreating the whole afternoon, until they came to a stand, where they now remain, except stretching along down toward Connecticut, I suppose for forage. Our men behaved like soldiers, conformed to the orders of their officers, and retreated in grand order. Our loss is about nine or ten killed, and about thirty wounded. People may think what they please of the regular and spirited behavior of the British troops, but I that day was an eye witness to the contrary; I saw as great irregularity, almost, as in a militia regiment. They would run out from the body and fire single guns. As to their courage, the whole body of the 16th were forced to return by the fire of a single regiment, and many of them old troops. The fourth regiment was one that ran, and had we been reinforced with half their numbers might have totally defeated them.

"The next day General Lee (under whose command we are), came and publicly returned his thanks to Colonel Glover and the officers and soldiers under his command for their noble-spirited and soldier like conduct during the battle."<sup>b</sup>

NORTH CASTLE, October 29th, 1776.

"We have secured and encamped on every hill and dale, between this and New York, last Friday week, (18th.) Our whole brigade that then lay at Eastchester under command of Colonel Grover, was ordered to oppose the progress of a large body of the enemy, then landing at Rodman's Point. Three regiments were ordered to pass a causeway (the only passage), and march to oppose them, and our regiment with three pieces of artillery was posted on an eminence overlooking the causeway, to secure a retreat for the others, and to prevent the enemy from advancing. Col. Glover so posted the three other regiments in the wood that they annoyed the enemy greatly. But discovering that they had determined to flank them he ordered a retreat. We had six or seven killed and about eighteen wounded. The enemies' loss about one hundred and forty or one hundred and fifty. After the skirmish we retreated to Mile Square, where we lay encamped till Friday, (25th Oct.) when, with the remainder of General Lee's, we joined the main body of the American army at White Plains."<sup>c</sup>

There are several islands, belonging to this town lying opposite the southern extremity of Pelham neck, which add much to the beauty of the sound scenery, the principal of these is "Great Minniefords,"<sup>d</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Balls and brass ornaments are frequently found on the heights of Pelham. Near the residence of the late James Hay, Esq., part of a soldier's hut was discovered, marked 16th regiment.

<sup>b</sup> Diary of President Styles, Library of Yale College, vol. vi.

<sup>c</sup> Diary of President Styles.

<sup>d</sup> This word invariably occurs in the genitive, (Minniefords, Minifers, Minnewies land) from which we infer that it was originally the name of its Indian proprietors.



sometimes styled "Minnewies" or "Minnewits," but, commonly called City Island. "Upon the 11th of December, 1685, John Pell, Esq., by conveyance made over to John Smith, of the town of Bruckland, Great Minneford's Island, which lies situated opposite to Ann-hook's Neck, formerly in possession of William Pate and Robert Godfrey." The principal proprietors of the island in 1700, appear to have been William Euerden and Gabriel Umbric, from whom it passed to Amos Dodge. On the 21st and 22nd of June, 1753, Amos Dodge and Sarah, his wife, "in consideration of the sum of £2300, "did by certain indentures of lease and release," "sell and convey unto Samuel Rodman, his heirs and assigns forever a certain tract of land called Minnefers Island," &c.,<sup>a</sup> upon the 1st of June, 1755. Samuel Rodman sells to John Jones of Jamaica, Queens County, Island of Nassau for the sum of 5s, all that certain island, commonly called Minneford's Island, &c., containing by estimation 230 acres of land and meadow, yielding and paying therefor, at the expiration of the said year, one pepper-corn, if the same should be lawfully demanded.<sup>b</sup> The next proprietor of the island was Joseph Palmer, who, on the 19th of June, 1761, conveyed the whole to his brother Benjamin Palmer. "Upon the 19th of October, 1761, occurs a deed of covenants, grant and partition from the latter individual and twenty-nine others, quit claiming to each other their respective rights in severalty as designated by a map drawn by Samuel Willis of the said island."<sup>c</sup> Previous, however, to the above deed of covenants, Benjamin Palmer conveyed to the several proprietors their respective thirtieth parts. Upon the 27th of May, 1762, Governor Robert Monckton laid out for Benjamin Palmer and others the breadth of four hundred feet of the ground, round the east side, south, and part of the west side of a certain island lying in the Sound or East River, in the manor of Pelham, &c., called and known by the name of Minneford's Island. The petitioners on this occasion were David Hunt, Jonathan Fowler, Caleb Hunt, Edmund Ward, Samuel Ward, John Wooley, Isaac Barnes, Enoch Hunt, Joseph Mullineux, James Lewis, Aaron Hunt, Benjamin Palmer, Joseph Palmer, Samuel Le Roux, and many other proprietors of Minneford's Island, &c."<sup>d</sup> "Sept. 3d, 1762,

<sup>a</sup> On the 6th of Aug., 1755, Amos Dodge, was firmly bound unto Samuel Rodman, yeoman, in the full sum of £2300 for the purchase of the Island. Co. Rec. Lib. G. 465 and 467. See original doc. presented by Richard E. Mount, Esq., to New York Hist. Society.

<sup>b</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. G. 467.

<sup>c</sup> Copied from original MSS., presented by Richard E. Mount, Esq., to N. Y. Hist. Society. "The map of City Island," says Aaron Burr, "was drawn between the 11th of August and the 29th of October, 1761." See Mount Rogers, a map of a portion of Minneford's Island, made by Alexander Colden, surveyor general, May 5th, 1763, is preserved in Sec. of State Office, Albany, No. 159.

<sup>d</sup> See docket on file in Sec. State Office, Albany.

Benjamin Palmer, Joseph Palmer, and Samuel Le Roux prayed for letters patent to be granted for the land under water, six-hundred feet from common high water mark, surrounding Minefors or Minneford's Island in the Sound, being part of the manor of Pelham in the County of Westchester, &c."<sup>a</sup> A second petition occurs on the 27th of November, 1762, from David Hunt and fourteen other persons named in behalf of themselves and associates to the number of one-hundred proprietors of Minneford's Island, praying letters patent for four-hundred feet of the soil under water, from common high water mark into the Sound, beginning at that part of the island, which in a due east line is opposite the house of Samuel Rodman, and holding the same distance westward into the Sound, in every part round the island, and so running along the east end of said island with that part thereof which is opposite to the most southerly point of an island in said Sound, commonly called High Island, the property of Capt. John Wooley."<sup>b</sup>

The prayer of the petition, however, was not granted until the 27th of May, 1763, when letters patent were issued by Cadwallader Colden, Captain General and Governor of the Province, to Benjamin Palmer, for four hundred feet of land under water from high water mark round Mineford's Island, which patent recognizes the plan of the island and that it was made by the surveyor general.<sup>c</sup>

Upon the 3d of October, 1763, a deed of Covenant and Division for the water lands was made between the proprietors of the Island.<sup>d</sup>

In a letter addressed to His Excellency General Maunsell, by Benjamin Palmer, dated New York, June 1st, 1790, the letter says that:—

"In the year 1761, I bought an island in the Manor of Pelham, in the County Westchester and the Province of New York in North America, commonly called Mineford's Island, for £2,730 and divided it into thirty equal parts; sold twenty-six parts to one gentleman in order to make a trading town of it, because it lay very advantageous for Foreign Trade. Four-thirtieth parts I preserved to myself, which were six hundred house lots, twenty-five feet front and rear and one hundred feet in length, except some of the lots against the Market place (and some of the slips were shortened to make room for the Market place and for vessels) as by a map of said island will appear. The whole number of house lots on said island, forty-five hundred besides two squares of thirty lots each reserved for public use for building of churches, meeting-house, &c. I have sold and otherwise disposed of one hundred and eighty-seven of my lots, so that I had still remaining

<sup>a</sup> Land papers, Albany, vol. xvi, p. 313; also pp. 115, 116 and 119.

<sup>b</sup> Land Papers, Albany, vol. xvi. p. 316, p. 136 of original.

<sup>c</sup> Copied from MSS. in the Mount collection in possession of N. Y. Hist. Soc., entitled "A Case," in the Supreme Court, *Benj. Palmer vs. Geo. Berrian*, supposed to be in Aaron Burr's hand writing.

<sup>d</sup> Ditto.

four hundred and thirteen lots on said island in the time of the war between England and these States. I sold many of my lots for £10 each, and bought some for that price, and so have the other proprietors; for £10 was the stated price for each lot. I was offered £300 for one square by Mr. Gomez, a Jew that lived in Hanover Square in the City of New York, containing thirty house lots. I also was offered £1000 for one right, that is one thirtieth part of said Island containing thirty house lots, &c."<sup>a</sup>

The water rights on the island were supposed to be principally invested in the estate of the late John Hunter, Esq., the State having sold them some years ago for quit-rent to an individual from whom Mr. Hunter purchased.

In the possession of the New York Historical Society, is an ancient MSS. entitled, "Number one, Book of Laws, ordered by the Community of Minniford's Island, made the tenth day of May, one thousand, seven hundred and sixty-three." From which we take the following :

"May 10th, 1763, this day, we, the Community of Mineford's Island, have thought proper to apoint a stated ferry acroost from Mr. Samuel Rodman's Neck to said Island, in manner and form as foiloweth : The ferryman to keep a good sufficient craft to ferry a man or men acroost from Mr. Rodman's Neck to said Island, and from said Island to the neck, at all times and from Day Light to Day Light, and shall not fail to give good attendance Durering and for the ensuing year from the date hereof, and likewise to keep a sufficient craft to take in a horse and chair, or two horses in manner and form as abovesaid, and the ferry man shall receive for each chair and horse not to exceed the sum of one shilling and sixpence, and for each person the said ferry man not to exceed the sum of four coppers for each time crossing said ferry, &c."

The same year the ferry at the north end of said island was disposed of to the best and fairest bidder, viz : Mrs. Deborah Hicks. On the 13th of May, 1766, Jeremiah Fowler was ferryman ; 11th of June, 1776, the ferry was sold to John Bridgewater.

The ferry across from the south end of Minneford's Island, to the opposite shore of Long Island, was established 13th of May, 1766, and let to John Barnes for the term of five years.

"On the 14th day of June, 1763, Isaac Barnes, Benjamin Palmer, John Barnes, Enock Hunt, Joseph Mullinix and Joseph Palmer were chosen by the proprietors trustees of the island." The year following, "8th of May, Capt. John Woolcy, Israel Pinckney, Aaron Hunt, Benjamin Palmer. Isaac Barnes and Caleb Hunt were appointed the committee, and Benjamin Palmer, clerk and treasurer, to the proprietors of the Island for one year."

<sup>a</sup> Copy of original doc., endorsed on the back, "sent to England," among Richard E. Mount's papers, N. Y. Hist. Soc.

"At a meeting of the committee of the Proprietors of Miniford's Island, assembled at the house of Isaac Barnes, the 11th day of May, 1765,

"Present :

|                  |   |                  |
|------------------|---|------------------|
| "MOSES OWNS,     | } | {SAMUEL RICE,    |
| DUNOAN CAMPBELL, | } | {JOSEPH PALMER." |

"The committee ordered that no owner or proprietor of the said Island, not residing thereon, shall put or cause to be put on more than two creatures of any kind; likewise, any owner or inhabitant living and residing upon the said Island may bring on two cows, if a two wheeled carriage, one horse, and if a waggon two horses per each night; any person, proprietor, owner or inhabitant disobey these orders and putting on more than the No. above written, must expect to have them put in common pound and dealt with according to law, &c."<sup>a</sup>

The last election recorded in the "Book of Laws," (No. 1) took place May 10th, 1791, when Joseph Mullinex, clerk, and Aaron Hunt, Joseph Mullinex, Thomas Baxter, Augustus Drake, Jr., Brusted Barnes and James Lewis were chosen trustees.

It appears that upon the first settlement of the island, the proprietors had conceived the idea of erecting thereon a large commercial city, under the supposition that an extensive East India trade could be advantageously carried on with the States of Holland. Its agreeable and beautiful situation on the Sound, lying over against the broad side of Long Island, its close vicinage to New York, besides its healthiness, oystering and fishing conspiring to render it, as its projectors vainly imagined, the best place, for the aforesaid trade in the United States. The Revolution, however, breaking out, suspended operations for a time; but soon after the closing of hostilities the project was again revived, as appears from the following document signed by some of the proprietors:

"Whereas, the thirteen United States of North America is become Free, Independent and Sovereign States, and have the Like Liberty to Carry on Their Trade and Commerce To Foreign Nations as well as other States, Nations and Kingdoms, Excepting the East india Trade, and some others, which are formed in Like Companies; and, Whereas, the Seven United States of Holland are also Free, Independent and Sovereign States and they Have great Possessions in the East Indies and Carry on an Extensive Trade To and from it, and have plenty of Cash Shipping and Sailors To make the Trade To that part of the World much more greater Than it now is: and, Whereas, they have been Friendly in assisting the American States To their Independancy; therefore, We Do Earnestly Recommend To the State of New York To give and grant Liberty To the merchants in Holland to bring over Some of their East india produce To

<sup>a</sup> In May, 1770, Isaac Barnes had two cows, 2 yearlings and 1 colt, making in all 5 head; Benjamin Palmer, 2; Joseph Mullinex, 1; Dukin Campbell, 5; Minor Hinard, 10; John Pinkney, 4; John Barnes, 2; Markos Baxter, 4; Deborah Hicks, 8; Widow Brucks, 4.



this State and to set up some of their manufactories in some Convenient place for such purpose which Would be a great advantage to both Countries. For the American States are New and have no Possessions in the East indians nor can they have any unless they purchase it with money or Conquer it in War, but some of the Merchants of these States might join the Holland Merchants and Trade with them as occasion might serve ; and Whereas there is an Island lying about 25 miles from New York in a very agreeable and Beautiful Situation and is Counted as Healthy a place as any in the World ; it Lyes off against the broad side of Long Island and almost joins the main Land on the Manor of Pellham in Westchester County and State of New York, and Round it is a great plenty of Oysters. Fishing and Fowling in their season, a Ferry has been kept From thence to Long Island for many years ; Liberty has been granted by the Legislature to Build a Bridge over the Narrows from the Island to the Main, it is imagined that when the Bridge is Built that it will be one of the greatest Fisherries in the Sound, for the greatest part of the Fish that comes Down the East River is thought to go through these Narrows. This Island is laid out in a Regular form for a Town, it contains about forty-five Hundred House Lotts, each Lott contains one hundred feet in length and twenty-five feet in Breadth. The Pilots that is acquainted with the Sound says that the largest ships can come Down the Sound with the greatest safety to said Island, therefore we the Subscribers Do Earnestly Recommend this Island to be the best place for carrying on the aforesaid Business of any in the States. The plan of said Island may be seen in the Bowery Lane, No. 38, New York.

“SAMUEL LERUE, *Surveyor*.

BAMP AYES,  
DANIEL TEIR,  
JOHN HAWKINS,

JAMES SEDIKER,  
JEREMIAH FOWLER,  
BENJ. PALMER.”

It is almost needless to say, however, that its projectors failed in their plans, and were compelled to seek a less exposed and more eligible site. From this circumstance the place acquired its present name, “City Island.”

Benjamin Palmer, one of the principal proprietors, appears to have been a great sufferer during the Revolutionary War, losing almost every thing for his attachment to the American cause ; upon the 29th of September, 1789, we find him petitioning His Excellency, General Washington, President of the United States, for redress under his grievances. He complains “that himself and his family were taken prisoners by the British, who used us very ill, and then ordered us off my plantation, which I then had on said Island, to New York, where I have continued with my family ever since.” The reason he assigns for their using him so cruelly, was on account of his sending a letter to General Howe, the commander of the British army, in vindication of, and setting forth the just cause the people of this country had to oppose the King’s orders.”<sup>a</sup> In

<sup>a</sup> Copied from original document, presented by Richard E. Mount, Esq., to N. Y. Historical Society.

his humble petition for damages, to His Excellency, George Clinton, Esq., Governor in and over the State of New York, Vice-Admiral of the Navy of the same, dated, February 28th, 1788, he sets forth "that your petitioner in the beginning of the late war between Great Britain and America, employed Minor Hilliard to hire for him a plantation in New England, which he said he did for £25 per annum. The British fleet then lay at Staten Island; it was expected the first invasion would have been at New York, which prevented your petitioner moving on the said plantation. He waited to see how the contest would go between the fleet and city; but instead of attacking New York, the Admiral sent three armed ships up the Sound early one morning, and came to anchor off City Island, where your petitioner then lived; they sent three of their boats on shore with about one hundred men, who took your petitioner and all his family prisoners; killed and destroyed his creatures, and plundered many things, all of which they carried off and never paid for, &c." "He then complains of Capt. Brown, of the guard ship *Scorpion*, who, in the beginning of the year 1779, ordered him to cut his wood on Jesse Hunt's Island, and at no other place—threatening to burn down his house in case of refusal, as the men-of-war and refugees cut their wood there. The island being then in the possession of the British, and Col. Benjamin Hunt had a protection for the island from General Howe and Governor Tryon, the British commanders refusing him permission to supply himself with necessaries from New York for his family use; neither would they permit him to ship his produce for that place, threatening to sink his boats if he dared to go to the rebels. He thereupon came to New York and purchased property of Nicholas Bayard, Esq."

Benjamin Palmer, one of the principal proprietors of the island, was the second son of William Palmer, of Westchester, who died sometime in April, 1676.<sup>b</sup> Benjamin Palmer married —— daughter of Underhill Barnes, of Philipsburgh, in this county, by whom he had a daughter, who married Ware Branson. The latter married secondly a daughter of Henry Ritter, who was the grand mother of Richard E. Mount, Esq., of New York.

In 1818, Nicholas Haight and Joshua Husted owned nearly the whole island, together with Rodman's Neck and the Marshall estate. Upon the 1st of January, 1819, Nicholas Haight and Mary, his wife,

<sup>a</sup> From original MSS. presented by Richard E. Mount, Esq., to the N. Y. Historical Society.

<sup>b</sup> Will dated June 2, 1670. Will and admint. Surrogate's office, N. Y. Inventory, April 26th, 1676. No. 1. ut. supra. His other children were Joseph, Samuel, Obadiah, Thomas, Speicher, and a daughter Martha. Palmer complains that he was trusted by all the proprietors to keep the plan and books and other papers concerning said island, and had them in his possession all the time of the war between England and the States, and had never lost the plan, the books or the papers, in all the troubles, although himself and family were driven from one place to another like fugitives on earth.

sold to George W. Horton forty-two acres of land on the lower, or southerly part of City Island. Most of this property is still held by his two sons—Capt. Stephen Decatur Horton, and Capt. George Washington Horton. The former owns the extreme point of this beautiful island, overlooking Hutchinson's bay, Throgmorton's Neck, the Stepping Stone light, the great necks upon Long Island, besides the most extensive views of the Sound, Hart Island and neighboring shores.<sup>a</sup>

Among the earliest projects of the first proprietors of the island was the construction of a bridge across the narrows, to connect with the main. To enable them to effect this the State Legislature passed an act allowing the erection of the bridge; and upon the 7th of September, 1804, a subscription list was opened for this object, but the attempt then failed for want of support. About six years ago, another effort was attended with better success; and a bridge erected by a joint stock company, connecting the island with the main, and was thrown open to the public on the 1st of December, 1873. It is a singular fact that the present structure stands within a few rods of the bridge laid down on the map of 1761. The bridge, which is one thousand feet long, is constructed of nineteen abutments, of heavy wooden cribs filled with stone; these are ninety-six feet long, by twenty-four feet wide, finished with a draw one hundred and twenty feet long. The greater part of the materials used in its erection were taken from the old United States frigate of war, *North Carolina*.

The navigation of the Sound, which is considered exceedingly dangerous for the larger class of vessels, has given employment to some sixteen or twenty resident pilots at an income of \$70,000; but since the last war, tug or tow boats have almost superseded the occupation of the pilots on the Sound. At the present time, more vessels actually pass through Hell Gate than through the Narrows. It is estimated that one hundred and fifty vessels pass through the former, daily.

About seventy-five to one hundred oystermen, heads of families on the island, are engaged in doing a lucrative business in the surrounding waters, under a capital of over \$200,000.

On the eastern side of the island, Mr. David Carll has a fine dock yard. Here are three marine bridges, and the largest marine railway out of the city of New York. Quite a number of yachts have been constructed in this yard—among which may be noticed the *Atlanta*, for William Astor; the *Resolute*, for Ayres S. Hatch; the *Henrietta*, for James G. Bennett; the *Magic*, which won the Queen's cup in 18—, for

<sup>a</sup> In a grove, upon this point, the celebrated Italian artist, Pietro Varni, shot himself, in the summer of 1775. One of his small cabinet pictures is in the possession of Capt. Stephen D. Horton.

Frank Osgood, and the *Vesta*, for Pierre Lorillard. Mr. Carll has altered the *Wanderer* for Mr. Stillman, the *Sappho* for William Douglass, and is now engaged in lengthening the *Vesta* twelve feet for her present owner, Mr. Samuel H. Mills, of New York city. Four yachts are now on the stocks. To these may be added a large floating light-house for the United States Government, furnished with steam whistle.

The island contains two churches, a Protestant Episcopal and a Methodist Episcopal. The former called Grace church, situated at the corner of Main street and Pilot avenue (not far from the site originally designed by the proprietors in 1761 for the erection of a church<sup>a</sup>) was organized in 1862. First services were held in May, 1861. On the 12th of October, 1863, George W. Horton and Margaret A., his wife, conveyed to the Rector, Church-wardens and Vestrymen of Christ church, Pelham, a lot of land, 50 feet by 100 feet, situated on Main street and Pilot avenue, for the site of a church. A release of the proceeding to the Rectors, Church-wardens and Vestrymen of Grace church, City Island, took place 1st of December, 1868.

A church edifice was commenced in 1863, and consecrated the same year. It continued for a time as a part of Christ church, Pelham, Rev. Samuel S. Chevers acting as assistant to the Rector of Christ church, but residing on the island and officiating as pastor. Under the Rectorship of the Rev. E. W. Syle, it was set apart as an independent parish.

The church building is of wood, built in the gothic style, containing a small chancel window of three stained lights representing the trial of Christ before Pontius Pilate, by the Rev. William J. Bolton. The edifice will seat over two hundred. It deserves to be recorded here that the Miss Boltons, of Pelham Priory, from the first, have been the unfailing friends and supporters of the Island church. Without their aid in the beginning, the parish would never have been formed; and without their liberal contributions to the support of the Rector, the parish would have been deprived of the services of the church; they have done a quiet, but a blessed work."

Attached to the church is a rectory on Main street valued at \$2,500. Upon the 5th of March, 1871, Stephen Decatur Horton and Caroline L., his wife, conveyed to the Rector, Church-wardens and Vestrymen of Grace church, City Island, a lot for a rectory, 100 feet square, for the above mentioned object.

A communion service was presented by Miss Catharine Lorillard Wolf. The service books, by Isaac O. Barker, Esq.

<sup>a</sup> Nos. 62 and 90 of the Public Squares on the island were set apart for churches and meeting houses.



## LIST OF RECTORS OF GRACE CHURCH.

| INST. OR CALL.  | RECTORS.                   | VACATED.        |
|-----------------|----------------------------|-----------------|
| A. D. 1868,     | REV. WILLIAM V. FELTWELL,  | per resig.      |
| Jan., 15, 1871, | REV. GEORGE HOWELL,        | "               |
| Oct., 1, 1874,  | REV. JOSHUA MORSELL, D.D., | present rector. |

Upon the island are five stores, three blacksmiths, small town house for Justice's Courts, and three hotels, viz : Cunningham Villa, kept by Mr. Cunningham ; City Island Hotel, kept by Capt. Joshua Leviness, and the Minnieford Shore House, by Charles McClennon, at the steam boat landing, well known for its clam bakes and refreshments. Boats, tackling, &c., can be easily obtained at Captain C. H. Stringham's or Philip Flynn's, two well known fishermen. Three lines of stages are in constant service running to and from the island to the Harlem River Railroad, a distance of only two miles.

During the Revolutionary war, the island was greatly exposed to the enemy's shipping.

"On the 27th of August, 1776, early in the morning (says General Heath), two ships and a brig came to anchor a little above Frog Point. Our General immediately detached Col. Graham with his regiment, to prevent their landing to plunder or burn. Before he arrived several barges full of men landed on *New City Island*, and killed a number of cattle. Two companies of the regiment, immediately on their arrival, ferried over to the island. The enemy carried off one man and fourteen cattle ; the remainder of the cattle were secured."<sup>a</sup>

"30th of January, 1777 (observes the same authority), the storm cleared up, when fifteen ships, one brig, two schooners and two sloops came too, between Hart and *City Island*. They were from the eastward, and were supposed to have troops on board."<sup>b</sup>

In 1777, a party from Darien, Connecticut, consisting of John Dibble, Isaac Quintard, — Mead and eight others, captured the British armed vessel of war, called the *Shuldham*, off *City Island*. They carried their whale boats across Pell's Neck, where they seized a market boat, which had just returned from New York, laden with three hundred bushels of salt and twelve ten-gallon kegs of brandy. With this vessel they bore down, aided by a fair wind, upon the guard ship *Shuldham*, as she lay directly off the north side of *City Island* ; as they neared, her captain, Roney, who was at the helm, and the watch, cried out : "What sloop is that ?" They answered, "the little *Stanton* !" "Take care ! take care !

<sup>a</sup> (Copy torn.)

<sup>b</sup> ——— Mem. p. 113.

you will be foul of us!" was the reply. "Never fear, never fear," they rejoined; and coolly added: "The whale boats are out on the sound to-night, and we wish to get under your lee." Another moment and their bow-sprit was in the *Shuddam's* netting; it took but a short time to cut the ropes with their broad swords, when all sprang on deck and drove the watch below. During this affray, the British were firing upon them fiercely from City Island. As they did not understand the management of so large a vessel, they were compelled to use two of their prisoners, whom they afterwards released, to navigate her into port. This was immediately followed by the capture of six other vessels, laden with wood; two of which were ransomed, while the other four were taken into Stamford. It appears that the original intention of the captors, on this occasion, was to have seized the fort at Whitestone Ferry, upon Long Island; but that the unexpected sight of the guard-ship induced them to alter their plans.<sup>a</sup> A large force of whale-boat men afterwards landed on the island, and arrested all the inhabitants; but paroled them immediately.<sup>b</sup> At one time there seems to have been a tacit understanding between the British and Americans, that the former should hold the island in the day-time, while the latter at night occupied it.

Hart Island lies to the east of the former. Here is a Hospital under charge of the Department of Charities and Correction of New York city, accommodating between eight and nine hundred patients. In connection with the Hospital is also a work-house at the north end of the island. The present Protestant chaplain is the Rev. Marinus Willett. In 1774, Oliver De Lancey was seized in demesne as of fee of all that certain island, situate and being in Long Island Sound, commonly called Spectacle, or Hart Island, or one of the Minneford Islands, containing eighty-five acres. From Oliver de Lancey it passed to the Rodmans and Haight's. The latter sold it to the late proprietor, John Hunter, Esq. The south-west end of the island affords a safe anchorage for the river shipping, during the prevalence of South-easterly storms. High Island is situated near the south shore of Pelham Neck. The Narrows between Hart and City Island and the Blauyes are much frequented by vast flocks of wild ducks. The varieties consist principally of the old wive, broad bill, coot, black duck and whistler. In the Fall of 1846, one thousand ducks are said to have been shot here, in the course of six hours.

The Pelham Bridge, sometimes called the Eastchester Creek Bridge, communicates with the neck and the Westchester shore. This place is

<sup>a</sup> McDonald MSS., in possession of G. N. Moore, of New York.

<sup>b</sup> Jessie Mullinex, of New Rochelle, remembered Colonel Thomas' attempt to take the island, when he, with others, armed with long duck guns, helped to drive him off. McDonald MSS.

well known as a favorite resort for anglers, when the tide serves, fish of various kinds, and particularly the largest sized bass are taken. On the 3d of June, 1844, Mr. Benjamin Fowler captured a striped bass, weighing sixty-three pounds; when measured, it was found to be four feet six inches long. A single steak of this fish weighed eight pounds. The late Des Brosses Hunter, Esq., also caught a bass here weighing fifty pounds.

During the summer, 1841, a bass drifted on the neighboring beach, weighing forty-three pounds; and Mr. George Cox Furman, with a reel, caught another weighing twenty pounds. In the Fall of 1838, a former proprietor of the bridge informed me that seven hundred and sixty-nine bass of various sizes were taken at this place by angling. September and October are considered the best fishing months. Sheepshead are, also, occasionally taken here. A few years since a monstrous seal was shot in the bay, opposite the bridge, weighing eight hundred pounds.

Pelham Bridge was originally commenced by a company of gentlemen in the immediate neighborhood, who after sustaining severe losses, were compelled to relinquish the enterprize, which was reserved for the late George Rapelye, Esq., to complete. The bridge was afterwards purchased of his heirs and rented out annually, until the present iron structure was erected a few years since at a cost of \$60,000. It is said to require three men and a boy to open the draw. A little west of this structure is the bridge and draw of the New Haven and Harlem River Railroad.

From the Pelham Bridge there is a most extensive view of Hutchinson's Bay, terminated only by the shores of Long Island, the fertile valley through which the Aqueanounck winds on its passage to the former, and the heights of Westchester. On the south-east shore of Pelham is situated the estate of the late Robert Bartow, Esq. This property was once a portion of the estate of Thomas Pell, third Lord of the Manor, eldest son and heir of John Lord Pell. In March, 1790, Thomas Pell, grandson of the above Thomas and Phœbe, his wife, conveyed the same to John Bartow,<sup>a</sup> and Ann Pell, his wife, third daughter of Joseph Pell, grand-parents of the late Robert Bartow, Esq. The dwelling house which is constructed of native stone, presents a fine Grecian front to the road, with wings on the east and west. The old manor house which was pulled down, not many years ago, stood near the summer house in the garden a little south-west of the present stone mansion. Here the manor courts were held and tenants came to do suit and service from time to time to the Mesne Lord.

In a small cemetery south of the site of the old manor-house, repose

---

<sup>a</sup> The father of John Bartow was Theophilus Bartow, who married Bathsheba, daughter of Thomas Pell, eldest son of John Lord Pell.

the mortal remains of the Pell family. The oldest monument, legible, bears the following inscription :

“HER LYES ISEC PELL, D. DEC. 14, ANNO 1748,”

Another, surmounted with the figure of a rude cherub, bears this epitaph :

“HER IS THE BODY OF JOSEPH PELL, AGED 31, D. 1752.”

This individual was the third Lord of the manor, and son of Thomas Pell, the eldest son of John Lord Pell.

The inscription to his wife, is as follows :

IN MEMORY OF

PHŒBE PELL,

the widow of JOSEPH PELL.

She departed this life

On the 22d day of March, 1790,

In the 70th year of her age.

This lady, together with the executors of her husband, confirmed to Trinity church, New Rochelle, in 1763, the one hundred acres of land given by John Lord Pell for the use of the French church in 1689. Another stone is inscribed :

HERE LYES THE BODY OF

SALOME PELL, BORN JAN. 13TH, 1759,

and Departed This Life

Oct. ye 10th, 1760, Aged 1 year,

8 months and 27 Days.

The following records the death of Sussannah, the second daughter of the before mentioned Joseph and Phœbe Pell.

IN MEMORY

of SUSSANNAH, wife

of BENJAMIN DRAKE, who

Died March 4th, 1763 ;

Aged 22 years.



The last legible inscription is :

IN MEMORY  
of JOHN, son of  
JAMES and PHCEBE BENNETT,  
who died Aug<sup>t</sup> 6, 1768,  
Aged 21 months.

In 1862 a white marble slab was erected on the spot, by the late James K. Pell, Esq., of New York, with the following inscription :

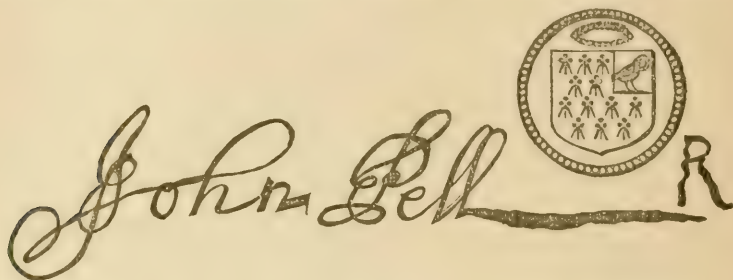
THIS STONE  
is placed here in token of  
respect for the  
memory  
of, and to mark the spot where  
lie buried the mortal remains of  
several of the descendants of

JOHN PELL,  
who was born in the year 1643.  
and died in the year 1700.  
The son of  
the REV. JOHN PELL, D.D.,  
of Essex, in England,  
and nephew of  
THOMAS PELL,  
the first proprietor  
of the  
Lordship and Manor of Pelham.  
born in the year 1603.

Not very far west of the site of the old manor house stood, a few years ago, one of the largest and finest oak trees in the country ; interesting as the very tree beneath which the Indian sachems ceded these lands to Thomas Pell, on the 14th of November, 1654.

On what was once the Bartow estate is located the Bartow station of the Harlem River branch of the New York and New Haven Railroad. The distance is computed to be seven miles from New York centre, and fifty-three minutes from business centres. From this station are daily lines of stages connecting with Yonkers, Mount Vernon and City Island.

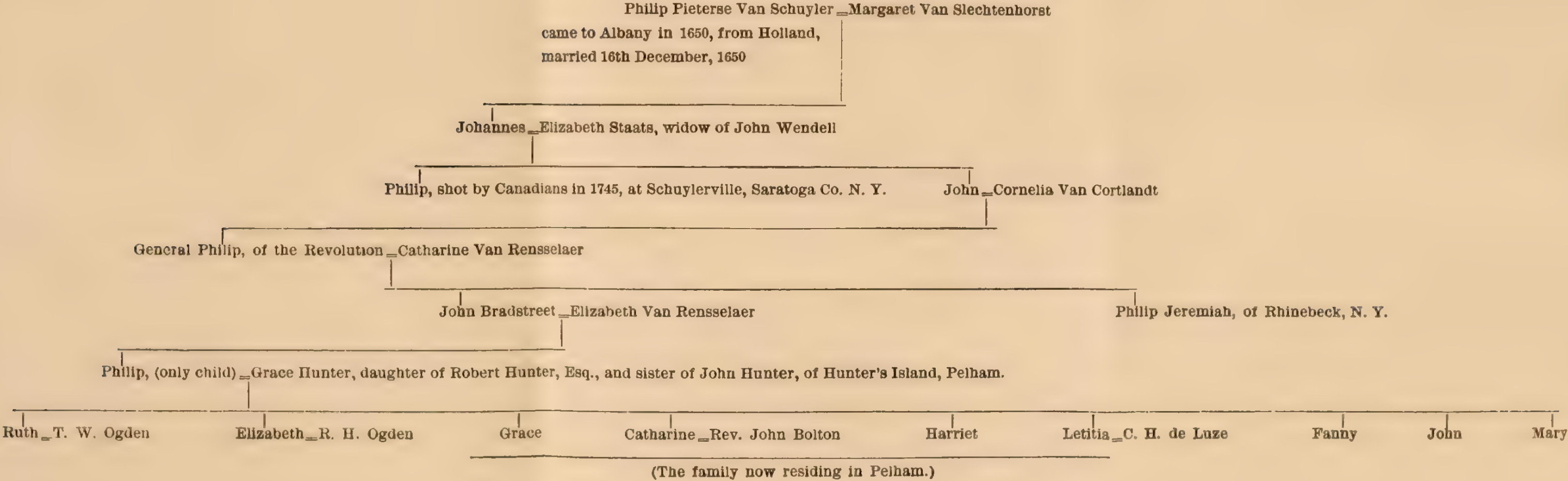
The ground, on which has been commenced the new village of Bartow, rises gently from Hutchinson's River, and commands fine views of the Sound, Mount Vernon, and an extensive landscape. The Town Hall of Pelham township is adjacent, and likewise the Pelham bridge, which affords the finest fishing and boating along that side of the River. West Neck, the estate of the late Philip Schuyler, Esq., joins the village on the north, originally belonged to John Pell, a grandson of John Lord Pell. The old mansion, which formerly occupied the site of the Schuyler residence, was removed in 1850 and is now used as a carriage house and stable. Here, during the Revolutionary war, the daughters of John Pell and Mary Totten were frequently in the habit of entertaining the British officers, who would drive up from New York. The ad-



joining estate to the Bartows on the east is Oakshade, the property of Richard Lewis Morris, M. D., son of James Morris, and grandson of General Lewis Morris of Morrisania, one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence. The house is a very beautiful specimen of the Italian villa style. The south front commands a fine view of the Pelham Neck and the Sound. The old Le Roy mansion, now the estate of the Rodgers' family, is also finely situated, and embraces every variety of water view. But the most to be admired in this situation is the good taste with which art has added her charms to those of nature, the grounds being tastefully laid out to the water's edge, and embellished with extensive green and fruit houses.

Hunter's Island, sometimes denominated Henderson's or Appleby Island, now owned by Alvah Higgins, Esq., is connected with the main by a stone causeway and bridge. The mansion which is situated about the centre of the Island, has the most commanding views of the vicinity. It is constructed of stone, with wings on the east and west. The south front presents a collonade of the Ionic order, from which an extensive and delightful prospect presents itself to the eye. Before you is a fine belt of woods, to the east a boundless expanse of water, while on the

PEDIGREE OF SCHUYLER, OF PELHAM.







south-west a lovely bay stretches towards Pelham Neck and Throgmorton's Point. These features render it one of the most beautiful spots on the sound or East River. The north front of the house overlooks the winding creek and distant woods of Pelham. In 1743 this island, and twenty acres on the main, were in possession of Joshua Pell, Esq., son of Thomas and grandson of John Lord Pell, from whom the former passed to the Hunts and Hendersons. The latter sold it to the late John Hunter, Esq.\* The Island embraces an area of 250 acres. Large quantities of fish are constantly taken in the waters south of the island. A thousand weight have been captured in one morning with a fyke-net.

The *no nation reefs* and *green flats*, lying nearly south of the island, are also well-known fishing places. On the south-east end of the island is situated the great Indian Rock "Mishow," while on the east lies the well known boulder, called the "Gray Mare."

On the main, nearly fronting the causeway leading to the Island, is situated the residence of Mrs. Elizabeth DeLancey, eldest daughter of the late Elias Des Brosses Hunter, (who died on the 22d of March, 1865, aged 65, son of John Hunter, Esq., the former proprietor of those lands and the adjoining Island. The building is of native granite, and commands beautiful views of the Sound and adjacent creeks and islands. Here is the original portrait of the Hon. Caleb Heathcote, Esq., Lord of the Manor of Scarsdale in this County. Surveyor General of H. M. Customs, and Judge of the Court of admiralty, and one of H. M. Council for the Province of New York. "On the day of his death, Feb. 28, 1721, this excellent man went about doing good in procuring a charitable subscription"<sup>b</sup> Adjoining this estate on the south, is the residence of John Munro, Esq., son of the late Peter Jay Munro, and grandson of Rev. Harry Munro, first Rector of St. John's church, Yonkers.

The residence of the late Elbert Roosevelt, Esq., now occupied by his sons, is pleasantly located directly on the banks of the Sound, and has fine views of Long Island and the surrounding shore. The Roosevelt family, which have settled here since 1802, is of Dutch extraction; and claim descent from Claus Martens ze van Roosevelt, *i. e.* Nicholas the son of Martin of the Rose-field, a native of Holland, and first of the name who came to America. His son was Nicholas, whose son Johannis was the grandfather of Cornelius, father of the late Elbert Roosevelt, Esq., of Pelham.

In this vicinity is the Priory, the former residence of the late Rev. Robert Bolton, a native of Savannah, Georgia, whose father, Robert

\* Many years ago Peter Jay Maune levied a fine and recovery in behalf of John Hunter, Esq., for the entire Island.

<sup>b</sup> *American Weekly Mercury*, N. Y. March 6th 1721.

Bolton, was a well known merchant of that city, the only son of Robert Bolton, Esq., the first post-master of Savannah, in 1764, who removed from Philadelphia, Pa., into Georgia about one hundred and thirty-two years ago, whose father was Robert Bolton, Gent., merchant of Philadelphia and senior warden of Christ church in that city, A.D., 1727, born at Wales in Yorkshire, 26th of July, 1688, and a lineal descendant of the Bolton's, of Bolton, in Lancashire. A collateral branch of this family gave to the Church of England, the well known author and divine, Robert Bolton, B. D., (great grand uncle of the last mentioned Robert Bolton of Philadelphia,) rector of Broughton, North Hamptonshire, who died in 1631, and penned the recently republished edition of "Bolton's Four Last Things."



The Residence of the Rev. Robert Bolton, Pelham.

The mansion house, which is of stone, affords a good specimen of the old English style, and accords well with its romantic situation. The building has two towers, affording splendid views in which wood and water are beautifully blended. The interior arrangements correspond with the style of the house, and carry the mind back to days of old. The armory is decorated with a mantle-piece brought from Venice, two or three suits of ancient armor, besides helmets, morions, breast plates, chain armor, &c., and a curiously carved chair of oak, found at Dorchester near Oxford, bearing the date of 1639. There are paintings here of members of the Bolton family, and among them a portrait of Robert Bolton, merchant of Savannah, Ga., whose great wealth gained for him the sobriquet of "King;" he died in 1802. He is represented, dressed in

dark blue coat, with yellow vest, and cocked hat; also the portrait of his wife, Sarah McClean, in high cap, stiff cambric handkerchief and tight brown silk bodice. They are copies of the originals, by Walter Robertson, in 1797; also the portraits of the late Rev. Robert Bolton, and his wife, Anne Jay, daughter of the Rev. William Jay, of Bath, England, with her two children, Robert and Anne, painted by the celebrated William Etty, of the Royal Academy of England; also an original portrait of Bunyan, formerly in the possession of the Rev. George Whitefield. There is in the library a good collection of autographs, the oldest of which is that of Henry VII., of England. The signatures of Queen Mary and Queen Elizabeth, with her council, are worthy of notice; also those of Oliver Cromwell and Richard Cromwell, presented by the late Oliver Cromwell, of Chestnut Park, England, their last direct male representative; letters of Lord Fairfax, Pope, Cowper, Chatterton, Lord Nelson; signatures of Napoleon, Sir Christopher Wren, Percy, author of the ballad, Bishop Burnet, Kosciusko, &c., &c. Among the American autographs are those of William Penn and his sons, the proprietors of Pennsylvania, Francis Lovelace, Governor of New York in 1671, Jonathan Edwards, Increase and Cotton Mather, Washington, La Fayette, Franklin, Jefferson, Schuyler, Sterling, Arnold, the signers of the Declaration of Independence, and various other eminent characters.

The terrace in front of the house forms a fine promenade. A beautiful flower garden on the west end of the house is laid out in geometrical plots, in which the plants are well disposed for the display of the flowers. The grounds are ornamented with natural walks leading to various objects of interest, among which deserves to be noticed the "*rocking stone*."<sup>a</sup> This natural curiosity is a rock supposed to weigh about twenty tons.

"A rock, chance poised and balanced, lay  
So that a stripling arm might sway  
A mass no host could raise.

"In Nature's rage at random thrown,  
Yet trembling like the Druid's stone  
On its precarious base."

Rocking stones, used in ancient Druidical worship, are found both in Great Britain and America. They were consulted in various ways by the Druids; sometimes as an oracle through which Jehovah spoke, for they believed one Supreme God although they adored lesser objects. It seems that these stones originated in the time of Moses, as mentioned in

<sup>a</sup> Rocking stones were called "*rogan stones*" by the Saxons, from the old Saxon principal of the verb "*roggan*," to shake, which is used by the poet Chaucer. "And him she roggeth and awaketh soft."—*Legend of Good Women*.

Joshua xxiv: 17—' And Joshua took a great stone, and set it up there under an oak, and he said unto all the people, ' Behold this stone shall be a witness unto us ; for it hath heard all the words of the Lord, which He spake unto us ; it shall be therefore a witness unto you, lest ye deny your God.' Ancient history mentions their existence in various places ; and, without doubt, from ancient Britain their use was introduced into this country, where they are numerous, but I shall only mention a few. In *Sailmaker's Journal*, O. Mason notices two rocking Stones in the neighborhood of Providence, N. E.,<sup>a</sup> and Dr. J. Porter, two in Massachusetts ; another writer, speaks of several near Roxbury in the same State ; one at Andover, and another at Duxham, in New Hampshire. Putnam's Rock, thrown by some soldiers during the Revolutionary war from a cliff into the Hudson river, where it is now visible, was a Druidical Rocking stone. According to American history, it " was so a loitly poised and easily moved that it attracted general attention." Speaking of the usages of the ancient British Druids, an English writer says : " They erected also great stones, called by moderns '*Rocking Stones*,' so cunningly fitted one upon another, that if the upper one were touched in a certain place, though only with a finger, it would rock ; whereas no strength of man could avail to move it, if applied to any other part. Hither they led those accused of any other crime, and—under pretence that the gods, would, by this form of trial, show the guilt or innocence of the party—directed him where to touch, and make the proof ; and thus, at their direction, (how like the priest-craft of every age,) they either absolved the accused, or made them appear guilty—knowing where the laying of the finger would move the rock, and where no human power could effect it." The author of "*Mexican and American Antiquities*," published in France, mentions the existence of Rocking Stones among South American ruins ; he terms them " balancing rocks, similiar to the Celtic monuments of France and of England." The Spanish historian Fuentes, speaking of the customs of the Aborigines of Gautimala, South America, alluding to their mode of trying criminals, says : " After the sentences of the criminals were given, it was necessary to have them confirmed by the oracle, for which purpose three of the judges left their seats and proceeded to a deep ravine, where there was a place of worship containing a sacred stone, on the surface of which the Diety was supposed to indicate the fate of the criminal. If the decision was approved, the sentence was executed immediately—if nothing appeared on the stone, the accused was set at liberty." Juarros, in his history of Guatemala, speaking of

<sup>a</sup> There is a rocking stone called " Drum Rock," within two miles of Wickford, North Kingston. The stone resembles a drum ; it can be heard a great distance off. Some say to the next stone : near it is a burying ground.—[Ed.]



a Rocking Stone among the ruins in Copan, says: "Astonishment is forcibly excited on viewing the structure; because, large as it is, and although entirely of stone and of enormous weight, it may be set in motion by the slightest impulse of the hand." Among the Greek's, Rocking Stones occur as funeral monuments; and frequently on cliffs overhanging the sea. Fosbroke, an English writer, in his "Antiquities," speaking on the subject, says: "There is a singular conformity to the Greek custom in the following passages of Ossian: 'A rock bends along the coast, with all its echoing wood. On the top is the circle of Loda: the mossy stone of power;' and again—'The king of Lora is my son; he bends at the stone of my power.' It appears that the bards walked around the stone singing. That at Staunton, England, evidently in order to be conspicuous, is placed on the nose of a promontory loftier than the neighboring heights." The North American Mandan Indians have a sacred stone, and so vivid is the similarity, that I can almost say it originated with the Druids, the ceremonies only being modified by the varying ages and circumstances through which they have passed. The "Book of the United States" says: "The Mandans have their medicine stone, which is their great oracle; and they believe with implicit confidence whatever it announces. Every spring, and occasionally during the summer, a deputation, accompanied by jugglers, magicians, or conjurors, visits the sacred spot where there is a large stone, about twenty feet in circumference, with a smooth surface. There the deputies smoke, taking a few whiffs themselves and then ceremoniously offering the pipe to the stone, they leave there their presents and withdraw to some distance during the night. Before morning (Druidical *priest-craft* again) the presents have disappeared—the Great Spirit, according to their belief, having taken them away; and they read the destinies of their nation on some marks on the stone, which the juggling priests, who have made them, and secretly manage the whole transaction, can easily decipher. The Minnatree Indians have, also, a stone of the same kind." Bradford in his "American Antiquities," speaks thus of a rocking stone, near Caxamatca, South America, which, from the accumulation of dirt around it, had lost its rocking character—"It is a large block of free-stone. It has two grooves cut across it, near to the centre, four inches deep and five wide. The site of this stone commands a most beautiful prospect of the valley of Caxamatca. Doubless in that groove the Druidical priest sat administering *unjust* justice."<sup>a</sup>

At a short distance from the priory near the angle formed by the in-

<sup>a</sup> Correspondence of the Baltimore Sun, Iverson Letters on Antiquities by Robert H. Livingston, Lancaster, Ohio, 1844.

tersection of Pelhamdale avenue with the sea-side boulevard, stands the parochial edifice called Christ church.

It may be as well to state here the progress of religious affairs in Pelham prior to the erection of this church in 1843. Under the royal charter of 1687, the Pelis were possessed of the "impropriation and the patronage of the church or churches erected or to be erected within the manor." In 1689, John Pell did give and grant to Jacob Leisler for the French Refugees at New Rochelle "one hundred acres of land for the use of the French church erected or to be erected by the inhabitants." This glebe, which was situated only a short distance from Christ church was held for nearly one hundred and fifteen years by Trinity church, New Rochelle; upon the 19th of March, 1697, John Pell, Esq., as impropriator laid the corner stone of the French church at New Rochelle, which instituted the only edifice within the Manorial limits for one-hundred and forty-six years.

By the act of Assembly passed 24th March, 1693, the Manor of Pelham had been made of the four precincts of West Chester Parish; and the first vestryman elected under it, in 1702, was the said impropriator John Pell, Sen., Esq.; in May, 1703, the quota contributed by Pelham Manor toward the rector's support and poor of the parish was £2.13s. "At a meeting of ye church-wardens, vestrymen, freeholders and parishoners of ye Borough of West Chester, etc., held in West Chester the 10th day of January A. D. 1709-10," etc. "Mr. Thomas Pell was chosen and appointed ye vestryman of ye Manor of Pelham." The quota for the precinct the same year was £3.0.0; in 1720 the quota furnished by Pelham Manor had increased to £4.4s. 1½d.

As early as 1695 a clergyman of the Church of England was settled in the manor of Pelham; but as the freeholders were obliged to pay towards the rector's support at West Chester appointed to him by act of Assembly, they were rendered incapable of doing anything for their own minister; so that the principal support which the three French ministers of the Manor of Pelham, residing at New Rochelle, received prior to the Revolution, was derived from the Venerable Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts.

In 1788, New Rochelle was separated from the Manor of Pelham, but the latter still remained united, for all ecclesiastical purposes with the former until 1840, when the late Rev. Robert Bolton, the rector of the parish of East Chester, first extended his ministerial labors to this town, which was as yet, destitute of the services of the Church. At this time, Mr. Bolton, besides his stated duties in East Chester, held a Sunday service at his residence in Pelham, accomodating in the ample hall a neigh-

borhood peculiarly destitute of spiritual culture. Through his instrumentality, a parish was finally organized; and the corner stone of a church was laid on his own estate, Friday, the 28th of April, 1843—being the first building devoted to religious worship and instruction ever commenced in Pelham. The good seed has spread since then, for there are now no less than three Episcopal churches in this town, viz: Grace church, City Island; the Church of the Redeemer, Pelhamville; and the Parish church. The edifice thus happily begun was finished the same year, and consecrated the 15th of September by the name of "Christ church, Pelham." Prior to this event, the Reverend Founder prepared a deed transferring the church, and a quarter of an acre of land on which it is situated, to a parochial corporation, when one should be there formed—reserving, however, six free seats, the southeast and northwest transepts,



Christ Church, Pelham.

and two vaults beneath the floor of the church; and, further, it provides that no rector or minister can be called or employed to officiate in the said church without the written consent of a majority of his heirs residing in America be given thereto." The act of incorporation bears date 25th of September, 1843. Richard Morris and Henry Grenzabach, church-wardens; Isaac Roosevelt, George F. Mills, John Bolton, William J. Bolton, Peter V. King, Jacob LeRoy, Cornelius Winter Bolton, and Robert Bolton, Jun., vestrymen.<sup>a</sup>

Upon the organization of the parish the Rev. Robert Bolton became its rector. He was born at the family residence in Oglethorpe Square, Savannah, Georgia, 10th of September, 1788. His father has already

<sup>a</sup> County Rec. Rel. Soc. Lib. B, p. 85. Day of annual election, Monday in Easter week.

been referred to as Robert Bolton, merchant of Savannah. He was ordained deacon by the Bishop of New York, 25th July, 1837; and Priest by the same on the 12th of November following. In 1852 he resigned the rectorship, and died at Cheltenham, England, 19th of November, 1857.

The parish church comprises a nave, sixty-five feet by twenty-two, with two small transeptal buildings, east porch and a bell turret over the eastern gable. It is constructed of common granite, in a very solid manner. In the rear, is a small wooden school and vestry-room out of all keeping with the main edifice.

The style is gothic, and may be called the transitional second pointed. The chancel window, of three lights, is filled with stained glass of exquisite coloring, representing the adoration of the magi; over this is a circular light bearing the *Agnus Dei* with the appropriate legend, "Behold the Lamb of God that taketh away the sins of the world." This window, and several of the nave, were executed and presented to the church by the Rev. William Jay Bolton, A. M., vicar of Stratford East, near London, England. The two windows, on either side of the chancel, are after patterns in Salisbury cathedral; and were executed and presented by the Rev. John Bolton, rector of Trinity church, Westchester, Penn. The northern window of the transept bears the arms of the old Manorial Lords, Ermine, on a canton azure, a pelican or, vulned gules, while the southern is charged with those of the Reverend Founder: sable, a label for difference, a falcon argent, beaked, jessed, membered and belled or, charged on the breast with a trefoil, slipped ppr. The open rafters of the church rest on half length figures of angels projecting from the wall. The interior contains the following monumental inscriptions:

SACRED

to the memory of

ABBY BOLTON,

who slept in peace,

June 16th, 1849.

She was the fifth daughter of the

REV. ROBERT BOLTON,

Founder and first Rector

of this Church.

Loving purity from principle,

she courted the shade.

Her religion dwelt upon the Spirit,



and was sweetly exhibited  
in the every-day duties of life.  
This is pure and undefiled religion

"Her God sustained her in her final hour,  
Her final hour brought glory to her God."

This tablet is erected by her friends.

IN MEMORY OF

THE REV. ROBERT BOLTON,

eldest son of

ROBERT BOLTON, Esq., merchant, of Savannah, Georgia.

He was born in that city Sept. 10, 1778. He died in Cheltenham,  
England, Nov. 19, 1857. He was founder and first rector of this church.

ALSO

ANN,

his tenderly beloved wife,

who fell asleep in Jesus at Brighton, England, Sept. 27, 1859.

She was the eldest daughter of the Rev. William Jay, of Bath, England,

Author of "The Morning and Evening Exercises."

Their children here record in gratitude to God their tender  
affection, prevailing prayers and pure example.

IN MEMORY OF

our beloved nurse,

ANN GRIFFIN,

who after twenty-four years of devoted service, fell asleep in Pelham,

August 29th, 1854, aged 54.

"Well done thou good and faithful servant, enter thou into the joy of thy Lord" (St. Matt.  
xxv: 21.)

SACRED

to the memory of

MRS. MARY ANNE THOMAS,

who fell asleep in Jesus,

March 24th, 1849, aged 36 years.

Her dying words were:—

"*There is a reality in religion.*"

IN MEMORY OF

ISAAC ROOSEVELT,

who died in Pelham, Sept. 30th, A.D. 1856, aged 43 years.

An honest man; a sincere friend, and humble Christian.

"He was an early promoter and constant friend of this church, serving as vestryman and treasurer from the time of its formation to his death. Possessed of a sound mind, a kind heart, and a generous hand, he labored to promote the welfare and happiness of the neighborhood in which he lived. He died respected, beloved and universally lamented."

SACRED TO THE MEMORY

of

SARAH WILMINGTON NORTON,

of Savannah, Georgia,

who died in Pelham, on the 15th of July, 1845,

aged 17 years.

"Remember now thy Creator in the days of thy youth."—(Eccles. xii chap. 1 Verse.)

This tablet is erected by her affectionate young friends.

IN MEMORY

of

SARAH SMITH CHERBULIEZ,

who died in Pelham,

Feb'y 6, 1858,

aged three years and three months.

"Is it well with the child?" And she answered: "It is well."

In a vault, beneath the pulpit, repose the mortal remains of William Matthew Evans, Esq., of Savannah, Georgia, son of William Evans, and Sarah (second daughter of Robert Bolton, Esq., of Savannah, Ga., and Sussannah Mauve, of Vivay, Switzerland,) who departed this life in Eastchester, on the 18th of November, 1837, aged sixty-three; also Abby Bolton, fifth daughter of the Rev. Robert Bolton, and Anne Jay, his wife, who was born at Henley upon Thames, Oxfordshire, England, Feb. 3d, 1827, and died in Pelham, June the 16th, 1849; also her sister-in-law, Elizabeth Rebecca, first wife of Rev. Robert Bolton, and second daughter of James Brenton, Esq., of Newport, Rhode Island, who was

<sup>a</sup> This individual was the son of Benjamin Brenton and grandson of Jahlee Brenton of Newport, R. I., (a son of Ebenezer,) and grandson of William Brenton, Governor of Rhode Island in 1693, by his wife, Frances, daughter of Samuel Cranston, Governor of Rhode Island, son of John Cranston, Governor of the same, son of James Cranston, Chaplain to King Charles I., who was the son of John Cranston by his wife, Christian, daughter of Sir Robert Stewart, predecessor to the Earls of Traquair, who was son of James Cranston (brother of John Lord Cranston) by his wife, Lady Elizabeth, daughter of Francis Stewart, Earl of Bothwell. Mary Clarke, wife of Samuel Cranston, Governor of Rhode Island, was the daughter of Governor Walter Clarke by his wife, Freeborn, daughter of the celebrated Roger Williams

born at Pittstown, in this State, on the 2d of August, 1814, and died in New Rochelle on the 12th of March, 1852; also Richard Woodhull, sixth son of Rev. Robert Bolton, and Josephine Woodhull, born at Bedford, Nov. 10th, 1864, died there, April 19th, 1868.

In the Schuyler family vault are the following: Philip Schuyler, Esq., born October 26th, 1788, died Feb. 12, 1865; Grace Hunter Schuyler, born April 10, 1790, died Dec. 23, 1855; Harriet Schuyler, daughter of the above, born Oct. 26, 1823, died Nov. 22, 1877.

The organ was built in June, 1872, by Jardine & Sons, of New York; it has two banks of keys, twenty stops, two octaves of foot pedals, with the modern improvement of swell and coupler, and cost \$2,500.

The bell, weighing one hundred and eighty-four pounds, was presented to the church by Lydig Suydam, Esq. The communion plate, which was the gift of Mrs. C. L. Spencer, daughter of Peter Lorillard, Esq., bears the following inscription: "Christ church, Pelham, May 11th, 1844." A chalice was also presented by the late Miss Georgiana C. Pell, daughter of Governor Duncan C. Pell, inscribed with the appropriate motto: "This do in remembrance of Me." This lovely young lady, who was a pupil of the Priory, and died 15th of November, 1851, aged sixteen, was a lineal descendant of John Lord Pell. The service books were presented by the late Gerardus Clark, Esq.; and a set of beautifully illuminated tablets, by the Rev. John Bolton.

To Christ church, Pelham, is attached a small stone rectory, in the Norman style, erected in 1843.

By an indenture bearing date 4th of May, 1867, Nanette Anne Bolton of the town of Pelham, County of West Chester and State of New York, conveyed to the Rector, Church-wardens and Vestrymen of Christ church, Pelham, parties of the second part "a certain parcel of land situated in the town of New Rochelle; begining at the south-westerly corner of a road running past Christ church, Pelham and the Pelham road, 226 feet thence north-westerly, parallel with the road leading past Christ church, Pelham, 75 feet, thence north-easterly, parallel with said Pelham road, 226 feet to the aforesaid road running past Christ church; thence south-easterly along the last mentioned 75 feet to the point or place of beginning. To have and to hold the said premises hereby conveyed to the said parties of the second part and their successors in office for parish purposes forever; subject nevertheless, to the following reservation, viz: that in case the said parties of the second part should ever abandon the use of said premises for parish purposes, then and in that case the said premises shall revert to the party of the first part, her heirs and assigns forever, &c.

NANETTE ANNE BOLTON.

In presence of

CHARLES W. ROOSEVELT. *a*

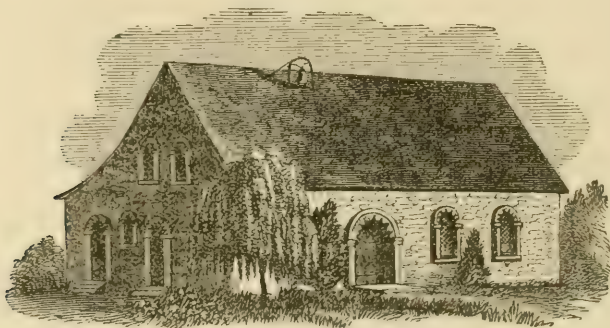
---

*a* Copied from the original document in the possession of the vestry.

## RECTORS OF PELHAM.

| INST. OR CALL.  | INCUMBENTS.                          | VACATED BY.        |
|-----------------|--------------------------------------|--------------------|
| 28 April, 1843, | REV. ROBERT BOLTON, Presb.           | resig.             |
|                 | REV. ALEXANDER SHIRAS, D.D., Presb., | resig.             |
|                 | REV. M. M. DILLON, Presb.,           | resig.             |
|                 | REV. EDWARD W. SYLE, Presb.,         | resig.             |
|                 | REV. J. McALPINE HARDING, Presb.,    | resig.             |
|                 | REV. CHARLES HIGBEE,                 | present incumbent. |

Near to the entrance of the Priory, on the grounds of Miss Lydia Emmet, daughter of the late Hon. Robert Emmet, Judge of the Supreme Court of the State, son of Thomas Addis Emmet, the celebrated Irish jurist, is another large boulder, weighing several tons.



Parochial School of Christ church, Pelham.

Deveau town is a small scattered hamlet in this vicinity, so named after Abel Deveau, an old whig of the Revolution, and proprietor of a small estate. This individual was proud of relating how he and others were deployed as skirmishes to way-lay the British near the causeway, after their landing on Pelham Neck, in 1776, firing behind the rock near Rapelye's, and retiring, as they advanced, towards Eastchester. The late Abel Deveau, of Pelham, was his son; and one of his grandsons is the present Richard Deveau, of New Rochelle.

From the town records we take the following extracts:—

“At a town meeting held at the school house in the town of Pelham, on Tuesday the seventh day of April, 1801, for the purpose of electing town officers for



the said town to serve the ensuing year, the following persons were appointed to the following offices and places," viz :

PHILIP PELL, Supervisor.

DAVID J. PELL, Town Clerk.

DAVID J. PELL, }  
WILLIAM BAYLEY, } Assessors.  
JOSHUA HUESTIS, }

PHILIP PELL, }  
JOHN BARTOW, } Commissioners of Highways.  
WILLIAM BAYLEY, }

Joshua Huestis, overseer of highways, for the within district of the town, to extend as far north till it come to the gate between the farms of Mr. John Bartow and Charles Turnbull deceased ; and Elijah Horton, overseer of the highways of the northern district of the town, as far north till it comes to the before mentioned gate :

ELIJAH HORTON, }  
GEORGE CRAWFORD, } Overseers of the Poor.

JESSE MULLINEX, }  
JOSHUA HUESTIS, } Fence Viewers.  
ELIJAH HORTON, }  
ESAIE GUION, }

DAVID J. PELL, }  
JESSE MULLINEX, } Pound Masters.

PHILIP PELL, }  
JOHN BARTOW, }  
ALEXANDER ANDERSON, } Commissioners of Schools.  
WILLIAM BAYLEY, }  
ISAIE GUION, }  
REM RAPALJE, }  
JOHN WILLIAMS, }

JOSEPH BAYLEY, Constable and Collector.

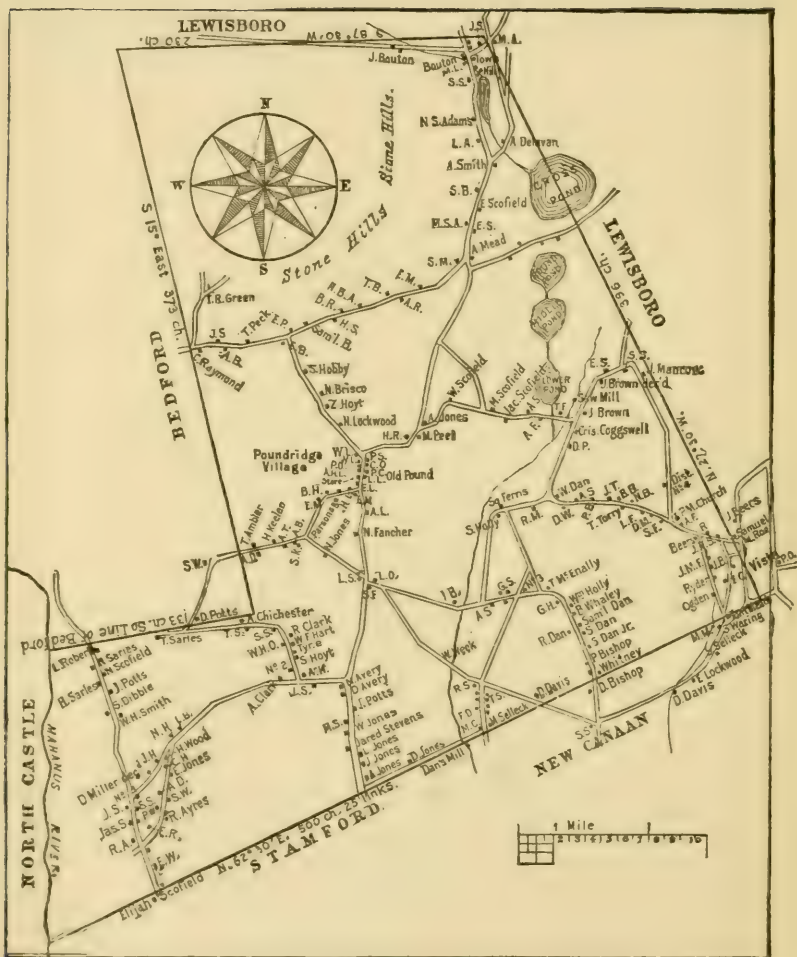
In 1875, was commenced the Huguenot Forest Memorial chapel, a pretty wooden structure, facing the Boston boulevard, at its junction with the Pelham Dale avenue. It was opened for public worship, Sunday, July 9th, 1876. The Rev. Charles E. Lord having assumed the pastorate.

In this portion of the town has been organized and legally incorporated, a company styling themselves, "*The Pelham Manor and Huguenot Heights Association*,"<sup>a</sup> for the purpose of combining capital and skill in the control and improvement of land for villa or cottage residences. This company own about five hundred acres, stretching from the New

<sup>a</sup> S. H. Witherbee, President, C. J. Stevens. Secretary, office, 187 Broadway.

Haven Railroad on the north, to the beautifully winding shores of the Sound on the south. On the southerly portion of these lands, facing on Pelhamdale avenue, nearly opposite the Priory grounds, is situated "Allwood," the residence of Mr. C. J. Stevens, and this avenue leads to the Pelham Manor Station, a depot of the Harlem River branch of the New Haven R. R., ten miles from North New York, where the boats connect for Fulton or Peck Slip. Fourteen trains run daily, and the time is estimated at twenty-one minutes.







# THE TOWN OF POUNDRIDGE.

---

Poundridge is situated fifteen miles north-east of the village of White Plains, and distant one hundred and thirty-nine miles from Albany ; bounded north and east by Lewisboro, south-east by the State of Connecticut, and west by Bedford and North Castle ; and was organized on the 7th of March, 1788.

The name of this town is, undoubtedly, derived from the ancient "Indian Pound," which formerly stood at the foot of a "high ridge" a little south of the present village of that name. On account of its natural boundaries, this section of country was peculiarly adapted for the favorite Indian practice of entrapping wild game. Upon the north, stony mountains formed an impassible rampart ; whilst the long chain of ponds and streams on the east line of the town, closes up all avenues of escape in that direction. The Indians, therefore, availing themselves of these natural barriers, constructed a palisaded pound at the southern extremity of the ponds, into which they drove the wild game from the west.

Van der Donck, the historian, informs us " that the Indians frequently united in companies of from one to two hundred, when they have rare sport. On these occasions they drive over a large district of land, and kill much game. They also make *extensive fikes with palisadoes, which are narrow at the terminating angles, wherein they drive multitudes of animals and take great numbers ;* at a word, they are expert hunters for every kind of game, and know how to practise the best methods to insure success."<sup>a</sup> The shouts and yells of these savage huntsmen must

---

<sup>a</sup> Van der Donck's Hist. of N. N. New York Hist. Soc. Coll. New Series, vol. I.




have often reverberated in frightful echoes from the neighboring woods and hills, serving no doubt much to bewilder their timid prey.

Poundridge was originally included in the Indian grant of Toquams, made to John Turner of Quinnipiacke or New Haven, on the 1st of July, 1640. The sale is thus recorded in the town book of Stamford:

### INDIAN DEED OF TOQUAMS.

“Bought of Ponus, sagamore of Toquams,” (Stamford,) “and Wasoussue, sagamore of Shippan, by me Nathaniel Turner of Quinnipiacke,”<sup>a</sup> (New Haven,) “all the ground that belongs to both the above-named sagamores, except a piece of ground which the aforesaid sagamore of Toquams reserved for his and the rest of the said Indians to plant on; all which ground being expressed by meadows, uplands, grass, with the rivers and trees; and in consideration hereof, I, the said Nathaniel Turner, am to give and bring or send to the above said sagamores within the space of one month, twelve coats, twelve hoes, twelve hatchets, twelve glasses, twelve knives, four kettles, and four fathoms of white wampum; all which land both we the said sagamores do promise faithfully to perform both for ourselves, our heirs, executors or assigns to the above said Nathaniel Turner of Quinnipiacke, his heirs, executors or assigns, and hereunto we have set our marks in the presence of many of the said Indians, they fully consenting thereto.”<sup>b</sup>

Witnessed by us,  
WILLIAM WILKES,  
JAMES, &c.

Ye marke of  PONUS, sagamore.  
Ye marke of  WASOUSSUE, sagamore.  
The marke of  OWENOKE, the son of Ponus.

Rec'd in part payment,  
12 glasses,  
12 knives,  
6 coats.

Besides Poundridge the above sale also embraced the present townships of Darien, Stamford, New Canaan, and the greater part of Bedford and Greenwich.

The planting grounds reserved by the sachem Ponus, were situated four miles south of Poundridge, in the vicinity of the street still bearing his name. In 1644, “the western Indians being at war with the Dutch, had communicated their hostile feelings to those around Stamford, who at this period numbered one thousand warriors; but the firmness and courage of Capt. John Underhill compelled the whole of them to sue for peace. Upon occasion of its ratification the Wappings of Stamford pre-

<sup>a</sup> Capt. Nathaniel Turner purchased in behalf of the people of New Haven.



<sup>b</sup> See Bedford.

sented themselves with others at Fort Amsterdam, April 6th, 1644.<sup>a</sup> In 1655, occurs the following agreement between the inhabitants of Stamford and the Indian Sachem Ponus, &c. :—

“Our agreement made with Ponus, Sagamore of Toquams, and with Onox, his eldest son. Although there was an agreement made before with the said Indians and Captain Turner, and the purchases paid for, yet the things not being clear, and being very unsatisfied, we come to another agreement with Onox and Ponus for their land from the town plot of Stamford north about sixteen miles, and then to a marked white oak tree with ST, and from that tree we went towards the Mill river side, we marked another white oak tree with ST, and from that tree west we were to run four miles eastward, and from this east and west line we were to have further to the north, for our cattle to feed, full two miles further, the full breadth only, the said Indians reserve for themselves liberty for their planting ground, and the above said Indians, Ponus and Onox, with all other Indians that be concerned in it, have surrendered all the said land, &c., for and in consideration hereof, the said town of Stamford is to give the said Indians four coats which the Indians accept of as full satisfaction for the aforesaid lands although it was paid before. Hereby all Ponus's posterity is cut off from making any claim or having any right to any part of the aforesaid land, &c., the said Ponus and Onox his son, having this day received of Richard Lane, four coats, acknowledging themselves fully satisfied for the aforesaid land.

Witness the said Indians hands this fifteenth day of August, A.D. 1655.

WITNESS WILLIAM NEWMAN,  
RICHARD LEWIS.

PONUS  his mark,  
ONOX  his mark.”

Upon the 7th of January, 1667, Taphance, son of Ponus, and Pow-hag or Pinaghag, son of Onox, confirmed to the people of Stamford the agreement of 1655. By these sales Poundridge became a part of Stamford township, within Fairfield county.

On the 26th of May, 1685, the General Court of Connecticut, issued the following patent to the inhabitants of Stamford, embracing all those lands.

“Bounded on the south west by ye five mile brook, between Stamford aforesaid and Norwalk, from the mouth of the said brook, till it meet with the cross-path, that is, where the county road crosses the said river, and from thence to run up into ye country till twelve miles be run out upon the same line, that is between Stamford and Fairfield, and upon the west, to Totomak brook, where the lowermost path or road that now is to Greenwich, east by ye said brook, and from thence to run in a straight line to the west end of a line drawn from the falls of Stamford mill river, which line is to run a due west point towards Greenwich bounds, a short mile, and from the west end at the said line, to run due north, to

<sup>a</sup> The Wappings were probably engaged “in the great battle fought between the Dutch and Indians in that part of Houseneck called Strickland's plain, now included in the town of Greenwich, Connecticut.” *O'Callahan's Hist. N. N.*, 302.

the north of ye present country road to Rye, and from thence run up into the country, the same line that is between Norwalk and Stamford, to the ends of the bounds, the said land having been by purchase or otherwise, lawfully obtained of the Indians, native proprietors. And whereas, the proprietors the aforesaid inhabitants of Stamford, in the colony of Connecticut, have made application to the Gov. and company of said colony of Connecticut, assembled in court, 25th May, 1685, that they may have a patent for confirmation of the aforesaid land, so purchased and granted to them as aforesaid, and which they have stood seized and quietly possessed of for many years late past, without interruption. Now, for a more full confirmation of the aforesaid lands, as it is butted and bounded aforesaid, unto ye present proprietors of the said town of Stamford, &c., &c. Know ye, that the said Gov. and company aforesaid, in general court, according to the conditions granted to them by his majesty in his charter, have given and granted and by these presents, do give, grant, ratify and confirm, unto Mr. John Bishop, Mr. Richard Lowe, Capt. Jonathan Silleck, Capt. John Silleck, Lt. Francis Bill, Lt. Jonathan Bull, Ensign John Bales, Mr. Abraham Ambler, Mr. Peter Ferris and Mr. Joshua Hoyt, and the rest of the said present proprietors of the township of Stamford, their heirs, successors and assignees forever, the aforesaid parcel of land as it is butted and bounded together, with, &c. &c., that the aforesaid tract of land, shall be forever hereafter deemed, reputed, and be an entire township of itself, to have and to hold the said tract of land, premises, &c. &c., yielding rendering and paying therefore to our sovereign Lord the king, his heirs and successors, his dues according to charter. In witness whereof we have caused the seal of the colony to be hereunto affixed, this 26th of May, 1685, in ye first year of the reign of our Lord King James the second, &c. &c.

ROBERT TREAT, Gov.


This patent included the southern portion of Poundridge; for, until the final arrangement of the boundary lines in 1731, Stamford extended over the greater part of the present town.

Upon the temporary settlement of the colonial lines, A.D. 1701, we find the Indian sachem Catonah, confirming Robert Walters and others in these lands.

“This indenture, made the 25th of February, 1701, betwixt Robert Walters John Chollwell, Leigh Atwood, Cornelius Depeyster, Richard Slater, Barne Cosens, Lancaster Symes, Matthew Clarkson, Robert Lurting, Peter Matthews, and Caleb Heatheote, of the one part, and Sagamore, Katonah, Wakemane and Weewanessege, Indians, of the other, for the consideration of a certain sum in hand paid by the said Robert Walters, &c., at and before the ensealing and delivering of these presents. The receipt whereof they do hereby acknowledge, &c., &c., have given, granted, bargained and sold, aliened, enfeoffed, released and confirmed, and do by these presents, clearly and absolutely give, grant, bargain, and sell, alien, enfeoff, release and confirm, unto the said Robert Walters, &c., a certain parcel or tract of land, lying and being in the County of Westchester, in the province of New York, butted and bounded as followeth, viz., westward by



Bedford and by the patent granted to Caleb Heathcote and others, northerly by Col. Cortlandt's purchase and Croton's run, *southerly and easterly by colony lines*, to have and to hold, &c., &c.<sup>a</sup>

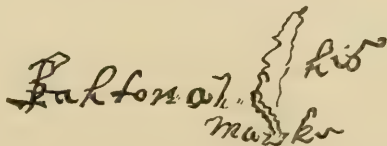
The mark of  CATONAH."

On the 2d day of March. 1701, William the Third, by his royal letters patent, under the great seal of the colony of New York, did grant and confirm unto Robert Walters, John Cholwell, Leigh Atwood, Cornelius Depeyster, Richard Slater, Barne Cosens, Lancaster Symes, Matthew Clarkson, Robert Lurting, Peter Matthews and Caleb Heathcote, a certain tract of land in the County of Westchester.

"Bounded to the south by the east division line between the province of New York and the colony of Connecticut, and on the east by the other division line; and so along the said line, until it meet with the patent of Adolph Philips, and so along his southern boundaries, till it meet the patent of the manor of Cortlandt, and from thence by a line that shall run upon a direct course, until it meet with the end of the first easterly line of twenty miles of the said manor of Cortlandt, and from thence, along the said line westerly, until it meet with the patent granted, to Robert Walters and others; then, southerly, along the said patent, until it meet with the bounds of the township of Bedford, and thence along the said bounds, till it meet with the patent granted to Col. Caleb Heathcote and others; and, along the bounds of the said patent, unto the colony line, which said tract of land, on the 25th day of February, was by the said Robert Walters, in his aforesaid company purchased of the native Indian proprietors, &c., &c."

This grant, which not only embraced the whole of Poundridge but a portion of Lewisboro, was subsequently known by the name of the *East Patent*.

The same year occurs the following confirmation from the Indian sagamore Catonah to the "inhabitants of Stamford, in their former sales under ye hands of Taphance, son of Ponus, and Penaghag, son of On-ox."



"We the said Catonah and other Indians do by these presents sell and fix bounds as followeth, that is to say westward as far as ye west bounds of Bedford purchase, bounded north by ye south side of Bedford purchase and by ye Stone hills, upon a straight line eastward unto ye upper end of ye Long Pond, and from thence an east line until it meets with a line drawn north from ye

<sup>a</sup> Indian deeds, Alb. Rec. warrant for Survey, Lib. i. 100.

upper end of Five Mile river, which is ye east line of our several purchases, and we, ye said Catonah and other Indians, give, grant, and quit claim all ye meadows, trees, feeding grounds, rivers, pools, and other privileges that doth belong to ye said lands and meadows within to ye southwards of ye north bounds above mentioned unto ye said inhabitants of Stamford, &c. Also we do acknowledge by these presents to have received of ye said inhabitants a considerable and valuable sum of money for all ye said lands, &c. It is to be understood that ye above said Catonah and other Indians doth by these presents confirm all ye said old deeds of Taphance, Ponus and Penaghag, and old Onox, also young Onox, also that deed made to Capt. Turner in behalf of ye town of Stamford, also that deed of Nonatomonoa, that is to say, a quit-claim to any parte or parcel of lands and meadows within ye said bounds above mentioned. In witness of truth, we whose names are underwritten have hereunto set our marks and seals, at Stamford, this eight day of July, 1701.

Signed, sealed and  
delivered in the presence  
of John O

The marke of KENHOCTAM H

The marke of RAMBORNE L

The marke of SYNGO R

The marke of ARUTAR O

The marke of CATONAH M sagamore.

The marke of MANINUS O

The marke of WEQUACUMOKE. X

The marke of PEPIAMAH V

The marke of WOKEA H

The marke of PAPAUMEMA S

The marke of TEMON A

The marke of POHORUS O

The marke of MOCKEA X

By the final settlement of the boundary lines on May 14th, 1731, Poundridge was transferred to the province of New York.

In 1744, John Crawford was appointed assessor for the *East Patent*.<sup>a</sup>

The following items are from the town records.

#### OLD POUNDRIIDGE, April ye first day, 1760.

"At a town meeting held at the house of Ebenezer Lockwood, in said *Old Pound*, in Westchester county, under ye Province of New York, we the freeholders, inhabitants and residents proceeded as follows: first, by major vote, Joseph Lockwood to be town clerk, and by Major vote, William Forster to be constable, &c., &c.

"January 14th 1762. It was voted that Joseph Lockwood be clerk of said meeting and Lieutenant John Gauspur be moderator.

"April 20th, 1776. Voted Ebenzer Lockwood as moderator, Joseph Lockwood as clerk, Lieut. William Jones, constable.

Upon the 7th day of August, 1766, the *East Patent* formerly granted to Robert Walters and others, was sold, in pursuance of a certain act of the Lieutenant Governor, the Council, and General Assembly of this colony, entitled: "An act for the more effectual collecting of his

<sup>a</sup> North Castle Rec. In 1746, Joseph Lockwood was assessor for the East Patent.

Majesties quit rents in the colony of New York, and for the partition of lands in order thereto," &c. The principal purchasers under the act, appear to have been the Lockwoods, Amblers, Forshers, Bishops, Ferrises, Hoyts, Hollys, Browns, Sillicks and Scofields, &c., &c.<sup>a</sup> In 1826, the Legislature of this State claimed, as successor of the Crown, the sum of \$243.71, due as quit rent on the *East Patent*.<sup>b</sup> To satisfy this claim nine hundred acres of land were sold in the southern part of the Patent.<sup>c</sup>

The *village* of Poundridge occupies an elevated situation near the centre of the town, and contains two churches, two stores, a school house, a post office and 15 or 20 dwellings. As early as the year 1744, a settlement was commenced on this spot by Captain Joseph Lockwood, and a few associates<sup>d</sup> from Stamford Connecticut. At this early period the surrounding country was one vast *wilderness* heavily covered with timber. Upon a commanding eminence which rises above the rest of the village stands the Presbyterian church. This building which was erected in 1786, occupies the site of the old church destroyed by the British troops, A. D. 1779. The Presbyterian Society of Poundridge was first organized in 1760.<sup>e</sup> The first church edifice, however, was not erected till 1770. Its incorporation occurs on the 28th of April, 1788. Nathaniel Bouton, William Fancher, John Hoyt, Benaiah Brown, Thaddeus Seymour and Ebenezer Seymour, trustees. "The said church to be governed according to the Directory of the now Established Church of Scotland. *f* From this date to 1822, it remained in connection with the Westchester presbytery. Upon the 8th of May, 1822, it was received into communion with the General Assembly.

At a meeting of the congregation held the 22d of April, 1828, it was resolved, that whereas "some doubt existed with regard to the due legal organization of the Presbyterian church and congregation in Poundridge, they hereby declare themselves to be a Presbyterian congregation under the style of the "Presbyterian Congregation of Poundridge, belonging to the Presbytery of the North River, under the care of the

<sup>a</sup> The Wetmores also appear to have been among the early proprietors: for, at a late period James Wetmore, attorney at law, (then residing in Nova Scotia,) served a writ of ejectment upon the Lockwood Family to recover certain lands in Poundridge.

<sup>b</sup> See Revised Statutes for 1813.

<sup>c</sup> "Socage lands were not deemed discharged of any rents, certain or other services incident or belonging to tenure in socage, due to the people of the State, (who are considered to stand in the place of the Crown.) Therefore, on the 1st day of April, 1786, the Legislature of this State passed an Act, entitled an Act for the collection and commutation of quit rents."

<sup>d</sup> The descendants of the original settlers are numerous, and some of them still reside in the village.

<sup>e</sup> At the first meeting of the congregation, Captain Joseph Lockwood was unanimously chosen chairman, and Mr. Jarvis, secretary.

<sup>f</sup> Co. Rec. Religious Soc. Lib. A. 21.

General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in the United States." On this occasion Horatio Lockwood, Joseph St. John and Samuel Weed, were elected trustees.<sup>a</sup>

This church and congregation are now in connection with the Bedford Presbytery.



#### LIST OF MINISTERS OF THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH AT POUND-RIDGE.

| INSTAL. OR CALL | MINISTERS.                                 | VACATED BY.       |
|-----------------|--|-------------------|
| 1770,           | REV. MR. STRONG,                           | resig.            |
| 1774,           | REV. BLACKLEACH BURRITT,                   | do.               |
| 1791,           | REV. BENJAMIN JUDD,                        | do.               |
| 1795,           | REV. SAMUEL BLATCHFORD, D.D., <sup>b</sup> | do.               |
| 1800,           | REV. RICHARD ANDREWS,                      | do.               |
| 1819,           | REV. JOHN LOWE,                            | do.               |
| 1823,           | REV. MR. CROCKER,                          | do.               |
| 1824,           | REV. MR. BRONSON,                          | do.               |
| 1830,           | REV. JOHN WHITE, <sup>c</sup>              | do.               |
| 1832,           | REV. CHARLES G. THOMPSON,                  | do.               |
| 1834.           | REV. WILLIAM PATTERSON,                    | present minister. |

#### CHURCH MEMORANDA.

|       |         |     |          |    |
|-------|---------|-----|----------|----|
| 1826, | members | 46, | baptisms | 0  |
| 1836, | ditto   | 62: | ditto    | 1  |
| 1846, | ditto   | 90; | ditto    | 3  |
| 1875, | ditto   | —   | ditto    | 0. |

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Religious Soc. Lib. A. 197.

<sup>b</sup> The Rev. Samuel Blatchford, an Englishman, succeeded Dr. Dwight, at Greenfield, Conn. when the latter was called to the presidency of Yale College.

<sup>c</sup> This individual was a native of Scotland and a classmate of Robert Pollock, author of the Course of Time.



A considerable eminence rises a little to the east of the Presbyterian church, from the summit of which is an extensive prospect of the beautiful country bordering the Sound and the distant shores of Long Island, &c.

Prior to 1775, Poundridge constituted one of the precincts of Rye parish. In 1816 Episcopal services were performed here by the Rev. George Weller, and subsequently by the Rev. Alfred H. Partridge.

The Methodist Episcopal church of this place was first incorporated in 1822; James Brown, John Haws and Samuel K. Olmstead, trustees.<sup>a</sup> The present church edifice was erected in 1833. Parsonage on Bedford road, \$1,500.

The village grave-yard is pleasantly situated about a quarter of a mile south of Poundridge upon a gentle acivity. The head stones record the names of Thaddeus H. Lockwood who died in 1774; Ebenezer Lockwood, Esq., who died July 29th, 1821, æt. 84; John Ferris who died A.D. 178-, and Captain John Grinnell, born in Nantucket, Mass., December 7th, 1795, and died in Cronstad, Russia, June 3d, 1831, æt. 34, &c., &c. Others are simply inscribed with the initials of the deceased, A. B., 1771; I. M. L., 1787, &c.

On the south side of the village, and near the Methodist church, formerly stood the old mansion house of the Lockwood family. The Lockwoods are originally derived from a place of that name in Staffordshire, England.

This place was settled by Joseph Lockwood, son of Jonathan and grand-son of Robert Lockwood, who came from England in 1630 and settled in Watertown, Mass.

About the year 1646 he removed from Watertown to Fairfield, Conn., where he died, and his will was probated. His son Jonathan, born in Watertown, Sept. 10, 1634, settled in Stamford, Conn., and afterwards removed to Greenwich, where he became a prominent citizen. Jonathan's son, Joseph, was born in Stamford in 1666. He married Elizabeth Ayres and a second wife, Margery Webb. The removal of the family to Poundridge occurred in the Spring of 1743, and consisted of three generations, namely: Joseph Lockwood, first, seventy-seven years of age, a widower, (having buried his second wife, Margery Webb;) his son, Joseph Lockwood, second, with his wife, Sarah Hoyt Lockwood; and their two sons, Joseph third, aged twelve years, and Ebenezer, aged six years. It was Joseph, third, who was afterwards known as

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Religious Soc. Lib. A, 170. A second incorporation occurs on the 21st of December, 1832. The Methodist Protestant Church and Society in Poundridge, were incorporated on the 16th of March, 1833. Selby Fancher, William Brown and Joseph Waterbury, trustees. Co. Rec. Religious Soc. Lib. B, 12.

Captain Joseph Lockwood; and who married Hannah, daughter of Solomon Close of North Salem, N. Y. Ebenezer was known as Major Lockwood through the Revolutionary war, and afterwards as Judge Lockwood. Hons. Ezra and Horatio were sons of Ebenezer. Captain Joseph, third, was father of Joseph, fourth, and Solomon. Joseph, fourth, was father of Hon. Saml. Drake Lockwood, who was born in Poundridge and removed to Illinois in early life, where he became one of the most prominent men in the State, and filled many honorable positions, among which were those of Attorney General and Judge of the Supreme Court.

One of the oldest grave stones in the burial ground in Poundridge is that of Captain Joseph Lockwood, the third. It is of slate-colored stone and lies horizontally on the ground, bearing the inscription—

“JOSEPH LOCKWOOD,

Died March 15, 1792.”

His brother's is an upright marble slab, inscribed:—

“MAJOR EBENEZER LOCKWOOD,

died July 29, 1821,

Æ. 84 years.”

Then his two sons—

“HORATIO LOCKWOOD,

died Nov. 5, 1853,

aged 74 years.”

And—

“EZRA LOCKWOOD,

died May 29, 1853,

aged 75 years, 11 mo. 2 days.”

Another is that of—

“SOLOMON LOCKWOOD,

died March 9, 1841,

aged 74 years, 6 mo. 9 days.”

## SKETCH OF MAJOR EBENEZER LOCKWOOD.

---

BY HIS SON, HON. EZRA LOCKWOOD.

---

Ebenezer Lockwood, late of Poundridge in Westchester County, deceased, was born in Stamford, Conn., on the 31st of March, 1737, and was the fourth son of Joseph Lockwood, who emigrated to Poundridge in the spring of the year 1743, and settled in the central part of the town (now village) on a right of land belonging to one of the original proprietors of the Stamford Patent, so called, and which fell within the jurisdiction of New York.

He continued on the farm with his father engaged in agricultural pursuits, during his minority; but soon after engaged in various other pursuits of extensive usefulness.

Soon after the demise of his father, which occurred June 15, 1757, the paternal patrimony consisting of some four or five hundred acres, was divided between his older brother and himself, being the only surviving sons, which still remains in the possession of the descendants after the lapse of a century. It was the circumstance of a pound being erected on that handsome ridge of land now owned by one of his sons, that gave to the town the name of Poundridge. At the age of twenty-five he was engaged in merchandise and was appointed one of his Majesty's Justices of the Peace, and one of the Quorum, which office he held until the commencement of the Revolutionary war. At the breaking out of hostilities, to wit, on the 19th October, 1775, he was commissioned a major in the regiment of Westchester County Militia, commanded by Col. Thomas Thomas; and was in active service during most of the campaign of '76, when the enemy took possession of the lower part of Westchester County.

In the month of May, '76, he attended the Provincial Congress, then sitting in New York, having been elected to that office on the third Tuesday in April previous, for one year; and was in continued service from that period until the close of the war, either as Major, Member of the Provincial Congress, or Committee of Safety and other posts of active duty in favor of American Independence until its final acknowledgement by Great Britain in 1783.

After the Declaration of Independence he was elected a member of the Provincial Convention for forming a Constitution of Government for the State, and as such, aided in the formation and adoption of the first Constitution, and was returned as a Member of the Legislature for several years after the close of the war.

Other stations of public employment also engaged much of his time and called him from the domestic circle at considerable sacrifice of interest and comfort. His unwearyed zeal and activity in the American cause, also was accompanied with much pecuniary loss and sacrifice of property.

In the year 1779, when the whole county of Westchester was the theatre of blood, rapine and plunder, and life and property, endangered from foes without and traitors within, his hospitable dwelling was opened

as a military cantonment and rendezvous of Col. Sheldon's Regiment of Light Dragoons. The regiment was engaged in frequent skirmishes with the enemy and served as a protection to the Northern frontier from the incursions of the Tories and British from below the lines in the neighborhood of North Castle. It was for the capture of this regiment that Sir Henry Clinton resolved on sending Col. B. Tarleton with a detachment of the Royal Dragoons of the Seventeenth Regiment and a detachment of about three hundred men on the night of July 2, 1779.

The precaution of the Committee of Safety had placed a spy by the name of Luther Kinnicut in the enemy's camp below the lines, who on the day previous gave notice to Col. Sheldon of the intended attack in a short time but did not know the precise day. The night proved stormy, and the torrents of rain which fell would have retarded the progress of a commander of less intrepidity than Tarleton. Sheldon apprehended no danger on account of the storm.

Col. Moylan's regiment was daily expected to join Sheldon; and, had the junction been effected before Tarleton's arrival—from the well known bravery and courage of Moylan and his troops—the fate of Tarleton would not have been less disastrous than he received from the old Wagoner at the Cowpens.

Sentinels were placed about a mile from the Major's, on the north and the south roads leading to Bedford. The sentinels on the north road, at early dawn descried a large body of dragoons under rapid movement, who passed the junction of the road leading from Bedford to Poundridge, and continued on toward Ridgefield. This mistake of the enemy, in pursuing the Ridgefield road for half a mile or more, gave time for the vedette to return and give the notice.

Sheldon supposing it might have been Col. Moylan's regiment, who were expected, dispatched Major Benjamin Tallmadge with a small detachment to reconnoiter and bring back intelligence of the true state of things.

About half way to the junction of the road, as Tallmadge ascended a hill where the road turned to the right, from the unevenness of the ground an object could not be seen, except at a very short distance ahead; and at this place Tallmadge met Tarleton under full charge—wheeled and returned at full speed with Tarleton at his heels; while Sheldon, with his command, were preparing to mount their horses, which were tied to the fence on the east side of the road by the meeting-house. A general rout ensued, while Sheldon's regiment moved off down the road leading to Stamford for about three-fourths of a mile; then separated at the junction of the road leading to New Canaan, with Tarleton's dragoons harrassing his rear—killing, wounding and taking prisoners some eighteen or twenty. The enemy lost one killed, four prisoners, and wounded uncertain; one horse killed, and four taken.

Among the prisoners captured by Tarleton, was Alsop Hunt, a son-in-law of Major Lockwood; who, after being rifled of a gold watch, money, and other things of value about his person, was carried to New York and lodged in the Provost prison.

The pursuit lasted about four or five hours, when Tarleton, being un-



able to overtake Sheldon, returned, burnt the Major's house with most of its contents, permitting one of his soldiers cruelly to cut and maltreat his wife; drove off his valuable stock of sixteen cows; burnt the meeting-house, and were about committing further outrages when the militia under command of Major Levensworth began to approach, and Tarleton fled with all the precipitation he came.

Mr. Hunt, from religious scruples, was a non-combatant; yet a true friend to his country, and in vain appealed to the honor of a British soldier for protection against robbery and insult.

It may seem an unpardonable digression at this place, to notice some thrilling incidents that occurred on this occasion; but justice to the bravery of some individuals in Sheldon's command, demands a passing notice.

John Buckhout who happened to be in the rear of Sheldon's regiment, during the retreat and closely pursued, was accosted in the imperative tone of a British dragoon: "Surrender, you d— rebel, or I'll blow your brains out!" John, not heeding the threat, was saluted with a pistol shot, which hit his cap and perforated the scalp on the side of his head without further injury. "There, (says the dragoon,) you d—d rebel, a little more and I should have blown your brains out."

"Yes, d—n you, (replied John,) and a little more you wouldn't have touched me!" John continued his speed and escaped without further injury.

Jared Hoyt, a brave soldier, also in the rear of Sheldon's command, was hard pressed by Tarleton's advance, and within striking distance of his assailant received a blow from the heavy cutlass of his pursuer on the head. The blow only cleft the skin and hair from the side of his head; Hoyt instantly returned the blow back-handed, which struck his assailant directly in the mouth, nearly separating the top of his head from his body, which stopped his bawling.

One of the largest proprietors in the southeast section of this town was Elnathan Weed, Esq., who, in 1799, erected the old mansion<sup>a</sup> now occupied by Aaron Fancher, Esq., near the banks of the Rippowarrus, or Mill river. He is said to have held at one time seven hundred acres of land in Poundridge. His son, Elnathan Weed, was the father of Levi and George Weed. His daughter, Sarah, married Stephen Hoyt, of South Salem, whose sons are William Hoyt and Stephen L. Hoyt of Lewisboro'.

The Fanchers were also extensive owners of land in the southeast corner of the town and the vicinity of Trinity Lake. This family were originally from Stamford, Conn., and probably descended of the Fanshaws, of Fanshawgate, county of Derby, England.<sup>b</sup> John Fancher was living in

<sup>a</sup> The old iron door latch is still preserved and bears the initials and date, "E. W., 1799."

<sup>b</sup> Fanshaw (Fanshawgate, County Derby, Parsloes and Barking, County Essex, and West Park, County Stratford; from the last name derived the Lord Fanshawe) arms—or, a chev. betw. 3 *bour-de-lis* sa. Crest, a dragon's head erased vert, flames of fire issuing from the mouth, *cole*, ppr.

Stamford, A.D. 1734, and bought lands of John Jacklin in 1747. In 1750, his name is on the official list of that town. He married Eunice Bouton, November 19, 1736, and must have removed to Poundridge sometime after 1750. William Fancher, Esq., of Poundridge, son of John Fancher, was a judge of the Court of Common Pleas in Westchester county, a justice of the peace and captain of the minute men during the Revolutionary war. He was born 13th of November, 1739, and died August, 1820. His remains repose in the Presbyterian grave yard, Poundridge. By his wife, Sarah Smith, who was born 15 Oct., 1744, he had two sons—Dr. Nehemiah Fancher, the father of Henry Fancher, of Poundridge, and Thaddeus Fancher, the father of Alanson Decatur Fancher, who now owns the site of the old mansion, a little east of the Mill river. It was in the immediate vicinity of the old Fancher homestead that one of Col. Tarleton's hussars of the Legion calvary was shot in the summer of 1779, under the following circumstances: "Nearly one hundred Legion cavalry, after the skirmish at Poundridge village, had pursued the retreating Continentals down the Stamford road, at the junction of which, with the New Canaan road, they divided—about one half of them taking the road to William Fanchers, the other half going south; the latter captured Thaddeus Seymour, whom they carried off a prisoner to the sugar house in New York. The hussars pursuing east halted on the hill just above the site of the new school house, near Alanson D. Fancher's, and turned their horses into a field of oats, sending three of their mounted companies to search the house of William Fancher, which stood a little south of the present homestead. After rummaging around for some time they discovered an old wooden chest, which they insisted on Mrs. Fancher's opening; this, she resolutely refused to do; whereupon they broke it open by force. One of them immediately stuffed his bosom and pockets with the family papers, and both remounting started for the hill. Just as the robbers were crossing the brook, about fifty rods distant, up rose William Brown,<sup>a</sup> with his father, who had stationed himself behind the wall, and levelled his fowling piece. Seeing him in the act of firing, they both yelled out lustily for quarter. "Yes," shouted the patriot. "I'll quarter you!" And suiting the action to the word, fired. An empty saddle and a lifeless corpse soon told the story. The survivor started up the hill at full gallop, followed by the riderless horse. Mrs. Fancher ran out and recognized in the dead corpse the very man who had just robbed her. The papers were thus wonderfully rescued. Just at this moment the bugle sounded a recall on the hill, and the whole

---

<sup>a</sup> This William was the father of William whose son is the present Benj. W. Brown.

party remounted and rode off. Only fifteen minutes had elapsed when Leavenworth appeared with a strong force of American militiamen, who immediately followed the retreating Legion to Dan Town. Ere this, word had been sent all around; and but for their hasty retreat, the enemy would soon have been surrounded.

James Raymond in former times owned considerable landed property in and around what is now denominated Raymond Hill, once included in the East Patent, and bordering on the west side of the oblong; some of his descendants still reside in that vicinity.<sup>a</sup>

In the south-west corner of this town is located the Searles property, which formerly belonged to Major Samuel Lewis, who was living here in 1777. James Searles subsequently purchased the estate of his heirs. The father of James Searles, also named James, died in 1776 at Hartford, Connecticut, of small pox. This individual was once taken prisoner by the British, and confined in the New York provost. Nehemiah, his grandson, is now residing at Armonk in this county. The Searles cemetery is located one mile south of "Great Hill" on the Bedford and Stamford road. Among the oldest settlers of Poundridge was Nathan Slawson, son of Eleazar of New Canaan, and grandson of Jonathan, who is said to have removed from Holland to Norwalk, Conn. Nathan married Hannah, daughter of James Ferris, and left a son Nathan who died here in 1821; the latter by his wife Mary, daughter of Daniel Stephens, had two sons and two daughters, Eleanor of Poundridge, and Levi, of Columbia County; Eleanor married George Caldwell, of Stamford, Conn.; and Nannet married Charles Hoyt, of Stamford, east corner of Poundridge bordering on Lewisboro.

During the contest between England and the colonies, the inhabitants of Poundridge, generally appear to have taken a decided stand in favor of liberty and independence. The following letter from the committee of public safety, to the Hon. Provincial Congress, is found in the acts of the latter body.

POUNDRIDGE, 15th of October, 1776.

HONORED SIR:—We the sub-committee of Poundridge, in Westchester County, beg leave to inform your Honors, that we are apprehensive that there is danger of our prisoners leaving us and joining the ministerial army, as we are not above nine or ten miles from the water, where the sound is full of the ministerial ships and tenders. One of our number is already gone to Long Island, and numbers have gone from other places, who are no doubt now in the ministerial army. There are disaffected persons daily going over to them, which gives much trouble.

<sup>a</sup> Lois Raymond, a daughter of James was baptized in the old Danhouse which occupied the site of Samuel Caulfield's residence, and married Daniel Coggeshall, son of Lyman Coggeshall

Therefore, we humbly beg your Honors would give us some directions concerning them, that they may be speedily removed at some further distance. We would also inform you that for the misdemeanors of one of them and our own safety, we have been obliged to commit him to jail at the White Plains. These with all proper respects, from yours to serve.

JOSEPH AMBLER,<sup>a</sup>

*Chairman of Committee.*

In July, 1779, a skirmish took place in this village between the Americans and a strong force of the enemy, under Lieutenant Colonel Tarleton.

"About three hundred and sixty of the enemy's light-horse, and light-infantry (says General Heath,) came out from Mile-Square, and attacked Colonel Sheldon's light-horse, who were posted at *Poundridge*, about ninety in number. The superior force of the enemy obliged our horse at first, to retreat; but being reinforced by the militia, they in turn, pursued the enemy. Our loss was one corporal, one trumpeter and eight privates, wounded; three sergeants, one corporal, and four privates missing; and twelve horses missing. *The standard of the regiment being left in the house* when the dragoons suddenly turned out, was lost. Of the enemy, one was killed, four taken prisoners, four horses taken, and one horse killed. The enemy set fire to and burned the meeting house, and Maj. Lockwood's house;<sup>b</sup> They also burnt Mr. Hay's house, at Bedford."<sup>c</sup>

It appears that one of the principal objects in this sudden foray of the enemy, was the surprisal of Major Ebenezer Lockwood, before mentioned, for whose head forty guineas had been offered. The day previous, however Luther Kinnicut, a spy in the employ of the committee of public safety, gave notice of the intended attack, and advised the major to be on his guard. The night being very dark and stormy, Colonel Sheldon did not expect the enemy; he nevertheless ordered the horses to be tied up in readiness.

Major Lockwood, thus being destitute of a house or home, and apprehending further visits from the enemy, found an asylum for his family in the house of a friend in Ridgefield, while he continued in active service to his country in various stations of civil and military duty to the close of the war. Nothing disheartened by this reverse of fortune, he soon returned to his farm, converted a barn into a dwelling, was honored with the appointment of first Judge of the County Court, frequently elected to the Legislature from Westchester County, and was intrusted with loaning the moneys of the State in the county, and appointed to other responsible offices.

<sup>a</sup> The descendants of this individual still reside in the vicinity.

<sup>b</sup> The British would not "suffer the family to take anything away." See New York Journal, for Holts account of the action.

<sup>c</sup> Heath's Mem. 208.



When peace was established with Great Britain, the country, through the villany of Col. Austin, was destitute of a county court house and jail. The location of a public building is always calculated to excite the interested feelings of different sections of the territory to be accommodated, and it was so with Westchester county. Judge L. was one of the committee to settle this vexed question of locality and; through his influence principally, the present arrangement of court houses was effected, which has proved to give general satisfaction for more than half a century.

About the year 1795, he retired from all public employment; and spent the remainder of his days in the circle of his family and friends, until his death, July 29, 1821, beloved and esteemed by all who knew him.

From "Civil List," Ebenezer Lockwood, member of Second Provincial Congress, 1775-6; Third Provincial Congress, 1776; Fourth Provincial Congress, 1777, and Representative Convention; member of Assembly, 1778-9, 1784-5, 1786, 1787 and 1788; first Judge Common Pleas, March 15, 1791.

#### PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH.

The pastor of the Presbyterian church is Rev. William Patterson, who came to Poundridge and was installed in 1835. He married February 16, 1836, Sarah, daughter of Partridge Thatcher, and grand daughter of Major Ebenezer Lockwood.

#### HON. SAMUEL DRAKE LOCKWOOD.

*(From Batavia (Ill.) Weekly News.)*

Hon Samuel Drake Lockwood was born in Poundridge on the 2d day of August, 1789.

When he was ten years old his father died, and his mother was left with three small children, and with but slender means for their support. By this event his plans for a liberal education were broken up, and he was thrown very much upon his own resources.

In 1803, he went to Waterford, N. Y., to live with his uncle, Francis Drake, a lawyer in that place, and remained in his family as errand boy and law student until February, 1811, when he was licensed to practise law, and opened an office in Batavia, N. Y. The next year he removed to Auburn and continued in the practise of law there until the Fall of 1818, holding during a part of that time the office of Master in Chancery.

\* - \* \* \* \*

On the 19th of October, of that year he started for the West, and reached Shawneetown, Illinois, December 15th, and afterwards removed to Carmi, as a more favorable point for the practice of his profession.

At the second session of the Illinois Legislature, which was held in Vandalia in 1821, Mr. Lockwood was elected Attorney General of the State, and his acceptance of this office rendering another change of residence necessary, he chose Edwardsville for his future home.

In 1823 he was, very unexpectedly to himself, nominated by Governor Cole to the office of Secretary of State; but soon after accepting that office, he was greatly surprised by receiving from President Monroe a commission appointing him receiver of public moneys at the land office in Edwardsville. This commission was, in itself, as undesired as it was unsought; but the salary of Secretary of State was small and payable in depreciated currency, where the salary of receiver was liberal and payable in gold, and had attached to it a percentage on receipts. These considerations induced him to resign the office of Secretary and accept that of receiver.

At the next session of the State Legislature, 1824-5, he was, against his expressed wishes, elected Judge of the Supreme Court, which office he accepted and held until the State Constitution of 1848 went into operation, under which new judges were elected by the people.

\* \* \* \* \*

In 1829 he removed from Edwardsville to Jacksonville, and in 1853 from that place to Batavia, Kane county, where he died. He was sent from Morgan county as delegate to the Constitutional Convention of 1848, and in that Convention was chairman of the Committee on the Executive.

In 1851 he was appointed by the Legislature trustee of the Land Department of the Illinois Central Railroad, which office he held at the time of his death.

The position which he has held in the history of our State, is indicated by the offices which have been conferred upon him. Having a natural distaste for everything like office-seeking, and never putting himself forward for any official position, he has still been kept in offices of high position and trust for over fifty years.

\* \* \* \* \*

In Governor Ford's History of Illinois, are found the following notices of Judge Lockwood: "In 1820 was fought the first and last duel in Illinois. One of the parties fell mortally wounded, the other was tried and convicted of murder, and suffered the extreme penalty of the law by hanging. Judge Lockwood was then the Attorney of the State, and prosecuted in the case. To his talents and success as a Prosecutor, the people are indebted for this early precedent and example, which did more than is generally known to prevent the barbarous practice of dueling from being introduced into this State \* \* \* Judge Lockwood was an excellent lawyer, a man of sound judgment, and his face indicated uncommon purity, modesty, and intelligence, together with energy and strong determination. His face was the true index of his character."

Any account of Judge Lockwood's services to the State which should fail to notice his connection with the educational, benevolent and

religious interests, would come far short of doing him justice. As early as his residence in Auburn, he was so identified with the religious interests there as to be appointed one of the trustees of the Presbyterian Church.

In 1815 was formed the Cayuga County Bible Society, the first organized in the State of New York, two years before the organization of the American Bible Society; and Judge Lockwood's name also appears as one of the originators and directors of that organization.

Of the twenty four first directors of that society, he was the last survivor. The stand he thus took, as indicated by these incidents, he maintained through life.

Judge Lockwood, with others, started in this State the movement which resulted in the establishment of the Illinois College. His influence and liberality secured its location in Jacksonville; and while able to attend to the duties, he held the position of President of its board of trustees.

He took an active part in the planning and organizing each of the three State institutions now located in Jacksonville—the Asylum for the Deaf and Dumb, the Blind and the Insane, and was on the first board of trustees of each of these institutions. And in every place where he has resided in the State, his influence has been a strong, steady, and reliable power for good, always on the side of freedom, temperance, morality, and Christianity.

For the last twenty-one years, Judge Lockwood has had his residence in Batavia, in an honored old age enjoying his quiet home on the pleasant bank of our river, and rejoicing in every thing that tended to advance the material or moral prosperity of the State he had loved so long, and served so faithfully. On the 23d of April, 1874, he passed away from us in a death as quiet and peaceful as his life with us has been.

The following account of the action is thus given by Lieut.-Col. Tarleton in his report to Sir Henry Clinton :

DATED, CAMP ON THE BRONX, July 2, 1779, eleven P. M.

SIR:—I have the honor to inform your excellency, that I moved with the detachment you were pleased to entrust me with, consisting of seventy of the 17th light dragoons, part of the legion infantry and cavalry, Queen's rangers, Hussars and some mounted yagers, in all about two hundred, at half past 11 o'clock last night. The weather being remarkably bad, prevented my making North Castle church before 4 o'clock next morning, where I received confirmation of my intelligence relative to the numbers and situation of Sheldon's regiment and one hundred Continental foot, but no tidings of *Moyland's* regiment of dragoons. I pursued my route through Bedford to *Poundridge*, without any material occurrence, in the district of the ridge, and within three hundred yards of the enemy, who were not alarmed. My guide in front, mistook the road; another guide informed me of the error, and it was rectified as soon as possible." The enemy's vanguard had noticed our passing their front. The whole regiment was mounted and formed behind the meeting house. An attack was instantly made by the

advanced guard, consisting of the Seventeenth light dragoons, the ground not allowing more than seven or eight in front. The enemy did not stand the charge; a general route ensued. The difficulties of the country, and there being no possibility of obtaining their rear, enabled the greatest part of the regiment to escape. The pursuit continued for four miles on the Stamford and Salem roads. The loss of men in Sheldon's dragoons, upon enquiry and comparison of accounts, I estimate at twenty-six or twenty-seven killed, wounded and prisoners.<sup>a</sup> But their disgrace in the loss of the standard of the regiment and of hemlets, arms and accoutrements, was great. A part of the officers and regimental baggage fell into our hands. I have hitherto omitted mentioning the militia to the amount of one hundred and twenty, who, together with the Continental foot, broke and dispersed at the appearance of the king's troops. The militia<sup>b</sup> assembled again on eminences and in swamps, and before we quitted the ground on which the first charge was made, they fired at great distances. We were successful in killing, wounding and taking fifteen of them; the rest hovered almost out of our sight. The inveteracy of the inhabitants of Poundridge and near Bedford, in firing from houses and out of houses, obliged (us) to burn some of their meeting and some of their dwelling houses, with stores. I proposed to the militia, terms, that if they would not fire shots from buildings, I would not burn. They interpreted my mild proposal wrong, imputing it to fear. They persisted in firing till the torch stopped their progress, after which not a shot was fired."

With pleasure I relate to your excellency, that the loss sustained by his majesties troops is trifling—one hussar of the legion killed, one wounded, one horse of the Seventeenth dragoons killed. The whole of the detachment, except the above, being returned to camp. The infantry of the legion, mounted on horses, were extremely fatigued by a march of sixty-four miles, in twenty-three hours.

I have the honor to be, &c., [Signed,] BANASTRE TARLETON.

*Lt. Col. British Legion.*

The following additional particulars respecting this engagement, are contained in a letter from an officer (of Col. Sheldon's regiment as supposed) dated at Salem, July 3rd., 1779.

"Yesterday morning about sunrise, a detachment of the second regiment of light dragoons, consisting of ninety men, commanded by Col. Sheldon, posted near Poundridge meeting house, was notified of the advance of the enemy by our videttes. Our horses being previously saddled and bridled, the men were ordered immediately to mount. As soon as we were paraded, the enemy's horse were discovered rapidly advancing, about three or four hundred in number.

The enemy having driven in our advanced parties, they began the charge on the detachment, which, from the great superiority of the enemy, was obliged to move off. The enemy pushed hard on our rear for more than two miles, in the course of which, a scattering fire was kept up between their advance and our rear, and a constant charge with the sword; the country through which we passed being very mountainous and rocky, caused many of our horses to blunder and

<sup>a</sup> The prisoners he speaks of, were mostly the neighboring inhabitants who took no part in the affair.

<sup>b</sup> Major Leavenworth commanded the militia.



fall, which occasioned some to fall into the hands of the enemy. We immediately collected some of the militia, and began to pursue the enemy, following them below North Castle church. They moved off with such great precipitation, that we could not come up with them. Before the enemy moved off, they burnt the meeting house at Poundridge, and the dwelling house of Benjamin Hays, at Bedford. They (as usual) plundered most of the houses they came to, and set fire to several houses which were fortunately extinguished. Our loss on this occasion, was ten wounded, eight missing and twelve horses missing. The enemy's loss, one killed, wounded uncertain, four prisoners four horses taken, and one ditto killed."

The general surface of Poundridge, is uneven, and much of it stony; but having a due admixture of arable, with pasture and meadow lands, it forms a tolerably productive agricultural township. The soil consists principally of a gravelly loam, and is well adapted to grass and pasturage. It is also excellent for orchards and fruit trees of all kinds. The growth of wood consists of white, red and black oak, hickory and chestnut. &c. The northern portion of the town is occupied by a steep and lofty ridge of mountains, called the "Stoney Hills," which runs principally in a northeast direction for the space of three or four miles. The sides of these craggy mountains, intermixed with stunted trees and bushes, exhibit a variety of fantastic forms, presenting one of the wildest scenes in Westchester county. Here was a fine cover for the wild game that once abounded in these solitudes. At the base of these steep and rocky hills are luxuriant valleys, clothed in verdure and watered with numerous streams—the principal one of which is denominated "Stoney Hill brook," having its rise in Marshall's swamp. In the rear of N. B. Adam's residence, on the South Salem road, is a precipitous declivity in the mountains, nearly two hundred feet high, called the "Raven's Rock;" where, amid the stony ledges, the ravens used to build their nests of yore. The rocks here form almost a semi-circle, and bid defiance to the most daring climber, or trapper. This gloomy spot is still the favorite resort of the screech owl and crow. "These birds, but especially the owl, occupies places of honor and importance in the religions of Greece and Rome. Every note of the hideous and dismal owl, were invested with significance. The screech of this creature was regarded as a fatal presage:

"When screech owls croak upon the chimney top,  
It's certain then you of a corse shall hear."

The raven was also supposed to feel the shadow of coming calamity. The croak of this bird portended death. It is stated that one of these gloomy birds premonished Cicero of his approaching death. Crows were

also accounted prophetic birds. When flying in flocks, they were watched by the Romans in trembling; for if they passed on the right hand, they boded good; if on the left, evil. The flight of a crow over a house three times in succession, with a croak each time, was sure to be followed by a death in the family. An old writer was so profoundly convinced of the prophetic powers of this lover of corn, that he expresses the belief "that God showeth his privy counsailes to crows." The ravens have long ago disappeared from their favorite haunts, amid the rocky ledges, and gone west in quest of more abundant game. The "Devil's den" is a dark cavern at the base of the "Raven's rock," while below is a placid stream called "Stillwater." Stony Hill brook (which rises in Marshall's swamp) unites with the Cisqua, or Beaver Dam river, near the residence of Phineas Lounsbury.

The Stony Hill lands, soon after the Revolution, were divided into so-called wood lots, and granted by the State to Generals Philip Van Cortlandt and Van Rensselaer, for services rendered during the war. Governor John Jay and Dr. Peter Fleming, both of Bedford, also purchased some of them. The mountains are now occupied with charcoal pits and forsaken huts, and frequented by occasional trappers. About seventy years ago one Samuel Brown was killed by a large fox trap.

On the property of Lewis Green, and almost under the shadow of the Stony Hills, is an ancient burying ground, where the native Indians are said to have interred their dead long before it was used by the white settlers, more than one hundred years ago. Nothing, however, but the rudest kind of stones serve to mark the dwellings of the dead for two or three generations.

The Indians were in the habit of visiting this part of Poundridge, down to a period as late as 1800.

The late Jonathan Dibble, whose father David Dibble resided near the farm of Mr. William Barnes, (on the South Salem road) when a boy of ten years old fed twelve Indians who were "going down to salt" (salt water) under the black walnut tree, still standing just above the Brick House.

Boutonville is a hamlet in the north corner of Poundridge, near the outlet and junction of the Peppeneghak, or Cross River, with the Waccabuc Stream. Here is a Post Office, Grist Mill, and several dwellings.

Upon the north-east side of the town was formerly a singular chain of ponds, the largest of which was Lake Peppeneghak or Cross Pond, (supplied by several springs from the hills) and has its outlet in Cross River. The others were *Round Pond*, the *Middle-Pond*, and the *Low-*

*er-Pond*, now formed into one grand sheet of water, and called "Trinity Lake," which a little below the dam empties into the Rippowarus or Mill River. At North Stamford the waters are discharged into the reservoir which forms the supply from Stamford. The whole town is richly interspersed with hills and valleys, and much running water; having as we have seen the Peppenighak or Cross River, flowing through the extreme north corner, Rippowarus or Mill River flowing through the east part, and Myanas River forming part of the south-western boundary.





# THE TOWN

OF

# RYE.

---

This township, named after old Rye,<sup>a</sup> in the County of Sussex, England, formerly comprehended the present towns of Harrison and White Plains, and was separately organized upon the 27th of March, 1788.<sup>b</sup> It is situated directly in the south-east angle of West Chester County, bordering the sound; bounded on the east by the State of Connecticut and the Byram River, on the south by the sound, and on the west and north by the townships of Harrison and Northcastle.

In the year 1660, the lands of Rye were in the possession of Shanarockwell or Shanarocke, as he subsequently signed his name, an independent sagamore or chieftain of the Siwanoy's, whose clan formed a portion, if not one of the Mohegan tribes itself of the "sea coast."

Peningoe, Peninggoe or Poningoe, the Indian name of Rye, is apparently derived from Ponus, the<sup>c</sup> title of the aboriginal proprietor of this territory, A. D. 1640. The final termination *oe* or *oug*, denoting locality. Thus the whole word may emphatically express the place, or locality, of that sachems residence. Nothing however remains at this

---

<sup>a</sup> Yeake deduces this name, (Rye) from the British word 'rhy,' it signifying a ford, or, as some say, a bay, &c., Allen's History of Surrey and Sussex, vol. II, p. 621. Camden, speaking of Rye, says: 'But as to it's name, whether it took it from *Rive*, a Norman word, which signifies a Bank, I cannot say; yet since, in the Records, it is very often called in Latin, *Riput*, and they who bring fish from thence are called *Ripiers*; I rather incline to this original, and should incline yet more, if the French used this word for a *shore*, as Pliny does *Ripa*.' Camden, Britannia, Bishop Gibson; edition vol. 1. p. 212. Hastings and Rye, whose names were successively bestowed upon this place, are two neighboring towns on the south-east coast of England, both of great antiquity, and both numbered among the Cinqui Ports, or five privileged seaport towns on that coast. Chronicle of a border town: History of Rye, Westchester County, New York: 1660-1870; including Harrison and the White Plains till 1788. By Charles W. Baird—New York: A. D. F. Randolph & Co; 1871, Pp. i—xviii; 1—570—P. 35.

Laws of New York by Thomas Greenleaf, M. D. CO. XC: II, Vol. II; p. p. 153, 154.

<sup>c</sup> From annotations by the late Henry R. Schoolcraft, in 1816, upon the Indian names in West Chester County, made for the author.

late period, to establish the connections with any degree of certainty. Ponus himself, was one of the ruling sagamores of Rippowams, (Stamford) in 1640. This individual left issue three sons, Onenoke,<sup>a</sup> Taphance, and Onox; the latter had one son, Powhag.

The ruling sagamore of Peningoe or Poningoe in 1681, appears to have been, Maramaking commonly known as "Lame Will" His successor was Pathung or Pathunck, who with his son Wappetoe Pathunck,<sup>b</sup> granted to Joseph Horton in 1694, lands bordering the Mamaroneck River.

For the various localities within Poningoe, the Indians had other names. The meadows bordering the Armonck (Byram) were called Haseco and Mioschassaky, besides which there was a place named Rahowaness. The high ridge east of the Mockquams (Blind brook) Euketampucuson, and the territory bordering the Pockcotessewake (Stony brook or Beaver Meadow brook) Apawamis or Epawainos.<sup>c</sup>

The former existence of Indian habitations on the great necks of Poningoe is amply proved by the number of hunting and warlike weapons found in that neighborhood. The site of the principal Mohegan village was on or near Parsonage Point. In the same vicinity is situated *Burying Hill*, their place of sepulture. The remains of six Indians were discovered on excavating the present foundations for the Halstead mansion, which stands near the entrance of the great neck. "The level grounds along the shores of the creek, north of the present village of Milton, were cultivated as Indian fields. Here and there clusters of wigwams occurred on the western bank of the creek, overlooking the salt meadows, through which the Mockquams winds, to the great Manunketesuck, or Broad flowing river." Some Indian families, too, it would appear, had their homes on Manussing, or Mennewies island, "off the eastern shore of the neck,"<sup>d</sup> "while near by was the 'Indian path,' which formed the rude thoroughfare connecting the native settlements, which was early designated by the English as 'THE OLD WESTCHESTER PATH.'"<sup>e</sup>

The first grantees under the Indians of Poningoe, were the Dutch West India Company, who obtained a grant of the lands extending from Norwalk, in Conn., to the North river, on the 19th of April, 1640. Thus

<sup>a</sup> Owanceco was a son of Uncas, whose name and *totem*, both signify *Goose*, *Honck*, softened by the insertion of vowels, becomes *Oh-won-ek-ka*, Chapins Hist. of Glastonbury, Conn.

<sup>b</sup> Raresquash was the second son of the sagamore Pathunck.

<sup>c</sup> Apwonnah is the Indian term for an oyster. (Colton's Indian Vocabulary.) Along the valley of the Apawamis Indian arrow-heads have been found in great abundance.

<sup>d</sup> Baird's Hist. of Rye.

<sup>e</sup> Ditto.

the Dutch had full possession of most of the present county of Westchester, anterior to English purchase and settlement.

By the provisional treaty of Hartford, in 1650, the boundary line between New England and New Netherlands was to commence upon Long Island, from the westernmost part of the Oyster bay, so, and in a straight and direct line to the sea; and upon the main land, a line to begin upon the west side of Greenwich bay, being about four miles from Stamford, and so to run a northerly line twenty miles up into the country, and after as it shall be agreed by the two Governments, of the Dutch and of New Haven, provided the said line come not within ten miles of Hudson river.<sup>a</sup>

The successors of the Dutch West India Company in 1660, were Peter Disbrow, John Coe, and Thomas Studwell; "a fourth, John Budd, was associated with them in some of their purchases, and several others joined them in the actual settlement of the place; but the earliest negotiations appear to have been conducted in behalf of the three persons we have first named. They were all residents of Greenwich at the time when the first Indian treaty was signed. Their leader was Peter Disbrow, a young, intelligent, self-reliant man, who seems to have enjoyed the thorough confidence and esteem of his associates. His name invariably heads the list of the proprietors. Whenever there was a treaty to be formed or a declaration to be made, Disbrow's services were required."<sup>b</sup>

On the third day of January, 1660, we find Peter Disbrow in treaty with the Indians of Poningoe Neck for the purchase of that tract of land described as follows, "Lyeing on the maine between a certaine place then called Rahonaness to the East and Westchester path to the north and up to a river then called Moaquanes to the west, that is to say all that land lying betweene the aforesaid two rivers then called Penningoe extending from the said path to the north and south to the sea or Sound."

This first purchase on Poningoe Neck comprised the lower part of the present town of Rye, on the east side of Blind Brook.

The next purchase of the Indians was for the island they called *Manussing*, or *Mennewies*<sup>d</sup> about a mile in length, which lies east of Poningoe

<sup>a</sup> Hazard's State Papers, vol. ii., 218.

<sup>b</sup> Baird's Hist. of Rye.

<sup>c</sup> Land Papers Sec. of States office, Albany, vol. vii., p. 171. "The deed of this purchase has long since disappeared," says Baird, "It was lost during the lifetime of Disbrow himself." Town Rec. vol. B. "We have, however, an account of this purchase written some sixty years later that embodies facts relative to it which had doubtless been preserved by tradition." Baird's Hist. of Rye, p. 9, note.

<sup>d</sup> Minnis denotes an island in the Algonquin.

Neck and separated from it only by a narrow channel. This sale was effected on the twenty-ninth day of June, 1660, by Peter Disbrow, with John Coe and Thomas Stepwell in the following manner :

#### INDIAN DEED OF MANUSSING.

“Be it known unto all men whom it may concern both Indians and English, that we Shanarockwell Sagamore, Maowhobo and Cokensekoo have sold unto Peter Disbrow, John Coe, Thomas Studwell, all living at this present at Grenwige, to say a certain parcel of land, (the parcel of land which these Indians above mentioned have sold is called in the Indian name Manusing Island) and is near unto the main land which is called in the Indian name Peningo. This said island we above mentioned doe here by virtue of this bill doe sell all our right and title unto John Coe, Peter Disbrow, Thomas Studwell, quietly to enjoy from any molestation of us or any other Indians to them and their heirs, assigns, and executors forever ; and farther, we have given unto Peter Disbro, John Coe and Thomas Studwell feed for their cattle upon the main called by the Indians Peningo, and timbers or trees that is for their use and not to be molested by us or other Indians ; and we doe hereby acknowledge to have received full satisfaction for this purchase of land above mentioned, to say we have received eight cotes and seven shirts, fiftene fathom of wampone which is the full satisfaction for the parcel of land above mentioned, and for the witness we have hereto set our hands.

Witness, JOSHUA KNAP,  
HENRY DISBROW,  
Feb. 23, 1678.

|           |                |
|-----------|----------------|
| IPAWAHUN, | SHANAROCKWELL, |
| ARAMAPOE, | ARANAQUE,      |
| WONANAO,  | COKOW,         |
| TOPOGONE, | WAWATANMAN.    |
| MATISHES, | COKINSECO,     |
| RICHARD,  | MAOWBERT,      |
|           | QUARACKO.      |

By another deed bearing date the 22d May, 1661, Cokoe and other Indians sold another tract of land lying farther north, between the Blind Brook and Byram streams to Peter Disbrow.

#### INDIAN DEED OF RAHONANESS.

“Be it known to all men whom it may concerne, bothe English and Indians, that I. Cokoe, and Marrmeukhong, and Affawauwone, and Nahtimeman, and Shocoke, and Wauwhowarnt, doe acknowledge to have sold to Peter Disbrow, his heirs and assigns, a certain tract of land lying between Byram River and the Blind Brook, which tract of land is bounded as followeth, viz : with the river called in English Byram River, beginning at the mouth of the above said river on the east, and the bounds of Hasting on the south and southwest, to the marked trees, and northward up to the marked trees ; which may contain six or seven miles from the sea along the said Byram River side northward, and so from the said river cross the neck northwest and west to the river called Blind Brook, bounded north with marked trees which leads down to little brook, which runs



into Blind Brook. The which tract of land I, Cokoe, and the above said Indians, our fellows, heirs and assigns, do here promise and make good to the said Peter Disbrow, his heirs or assigns, peaceable and quiet possession for ever, without any molestation either from Dutch, Indians, or English. We the above said Indians have also sold this tract of land above mentioned, with all the trees, grass, springs, and minerals, with feed range and timber northward twenty English miles above the said purchase of land and do acknowledge to have received full satisfaction of the said land. In witness hereof we the above said Indians have set to our hands this present day and date above written.

Witness JOHN COE,  
JOHN JAGSON,

MARMEUKHONG, his mark.  
AFFAWAUWONE, his mark.  
NAHTIMEMAN, his mark.  
COKOE, his mark.

"These three purchases completed," says Baird, "the territory of Rye on the *east* side of Blind brook. Indeed, they took in also a part of the town of Greenwich, the tract of land between the present State line and Byram river; and we shall see that the claims of Rye to this tract, founded upon the Indian purchase just related, gave rise to not a little trouble in the subsequent relations of the two towns."<sup>a</sup>

Another purchase was made on the 2d day of June, 1662, by Peter Disbrow, John Coe, Thomas Studwell and John Budd, for a tract of land above Westchester Path, and west of Blind Brook, or directly north of Budd's Neck. This was the territory of the present town of Harrison.

#### INDIAN DEED OF MOCKQUAMS.

"Know all men whom this may concern that we, Peter Disbrow, John Coe, Thomas Studwell, and John Budd, have bargained, bought, and payd for, to the satisfaction of Showannorocot, Roksohtohkor, and Pewataham and other Indians, whose hands are underwritten, a certain tract of land above Westchester Path, to the marked trees, bounded with the above said river, Blind brook, which tract of land, with all the privileges, of wood, trees, grass, springs, mines and minerals, to the said Peter Disbrow, John Coe, Thomas Studwell, to them and their heirs forever, with warrant against all persons, English, Dutch or Indians. To this bargain and sale we the above said Indians do bind ourselves, our heirs and assigns, to the above said Peter Disbrow, John Coe, and the rest abovesaid, to them, their heirs and assigns, for ever; as witness our hands this present day and date, June 2, 1662.

SHUWANNOROCOT, 3 mark.  
ROMKQUE, his mark.

April the 28th, 1663, Peter Disbrow, John Coe, Thomas Studwell and John Budd, by a deed of sale conveyed the island and main land to the following planters, Samuel Allen, Richard Vowl, Philip Galpin,

<sup>a</sup> Baird's Hist. of Rye, p. 12.

Thomas Applebe, William Odell, John Brondig and John Coe, for which the latter were to pay forty shillings a lot in cattle or corn, between the above date and January next ensuing.<sup>a</sup>

Peter Disbrow by a declaration of trust, dated June 16, 1676, assigned all his right, title and interest in the Indian purchase to the rest of the proprietors of Rye then living between the two rivers, viz: the Byram river to the east, and a river called the Blind brook to the west. The original division of Rye consisted of ten acres to each individual planter, besides a privilege in the undivided lands.

From a note appended to this deed of trust it appears that John Horton had selected a spot of land not within the bounds of the Rye purchase.

“But lyeth considerably to the northward of the head of the Blind Brook, and consequently to the north of the north-west bounds, except they do claim it as comprehended within the twenty English miles range, whereof was granted to them, viz. the proprietors.

In 1662, the thirteen proprietors of the salt meadows within Hastings were,

THOMAS STUDWELL,  
JOHN BRONDIG,  
WILLIAM ODELL,  
THOMAS APPLEBE,  
PHILIP GALPIN,  
RICHARD VOWL,

WILLIAM ODELL,  
PETER DISBROW,  
JOHN COE,  
SAMUEL ALLEN,  
JOHN COE,  
THOMAS STUDWELL.

JOHN BUDD.

At this period Connecticut regardless of the Hartford treaty made in 1650, obtained from the native Indians a further grant of territory extending from the east line of that colony, to the present village of Westchester. Upon this purchase she claimed the lands of Rye, and required the submission of the inhabitants to her authority.

During the year 1633, King Charles the Second, by letters patent under the great seal, conveyed the province of New Netherlands, and that part of Connecticut lying westward of Connecticut River, to his brother James, Duke of York and Albany. Thus, by a wholesale usurpation excluding forever the rightful proprietors, utterly regardless of their just rights as discoverers; and in the face, too, of all existing treaties.

As early as 1641, it appears to have been the British policy as one means of counteracting the Dutch in America, “that the English put forth their plantations, and crowd on, crowding the Dutch out of those

<sup>a</sup> Rye Rec. Lib. A.

places where they have settled ;"<sup>a</sup> this continued to be the principle upon which the former acted until the subjugation of the latter, which happened 5th of September, 1664, when the Province of New Netherlands surrendered to Colonel Richard Nicholls, the Duke's governor.

The same year the commissioners appointed for settling the bounds of his Royal Highness the Duke of York's patent and the colony of Connecticut, did order and declare "that the creek or river, called Mamaroneck, which is reputed to be about twelve miles to the east of Westchester, and a line drawn from ye east point or side, where the fresh waters fall into the salt at high water mark, north north-west to the line of Massachusetts, shall be the western bounds of ye said colony of Connecticut."<sup>b</sup>

By this division Rye became annexed to the colony of Connecticut, and constituted a portion of Fairfield county.

The following bill of sale occurs December 8th, 1666, from John Coe, one of the original proprietors of Rye to Hachaliah Brown:—

"Know all ye men to whom it may concern, that I, John Coe, purchaser of the town of Rye, being one of the four men that bought this place in the colony of Connecticut, in New England, do sell and bind over unto Hachaliah Brown in the same town, one half of a 12th lot with all the privileges thereunto belonging; namely: one half of the upland and one half of the meadow, both fresh and salt, both divided and undivided, with four acres of upland lying in the neck called the Oxpasture neck, or otherwise called Scotch cap neck, of which two of the aforesaid four acres belong to the half lot. This four acres is bounded thus: with George Kniffen on the N. E. and front; with the Blind Brook towards the N. W. and Thomas Brown toward the S. W. and the waste land is the bounds to the S. E. This seven acres of land more or less, is thus bounded as is above mentioned. The aforesaid land I have purchased of the Indians, as doth appear by deed under the Indians hands. I say, I have sold with all privileges thereunto belonging, namely: trees, grass, rocks, minerals, and springs, with the fence or fencing which are or shall be belonging thereunto, and I do here bind myself, by promise, to make good the sale hereof from me, my heirs, assignees, or administrators to the said Hachaliah Brown, him, his heirs, assignees or administrators, quietly and peaceably to possess as his own forever, without any molestation either by or under me, &c., &c. And I do acknowledge to have received full satisfaction of the abovesaid Hachaliah Brown for this aforesaid land, as witness my hand this day and date, Dec. 8th 1666."<sup>c</sup> JOHN COE."

Witness:

THOMAS BROWN,  
GEORGE LANE.

<sup>a</sup> Col. Boundaries, Hart. Rec. fol. ii. letter L

<sup>b</sup> Col. Boundaries, fol. ii. letter xxii.

<sup>c</sup> Rye Rec.

May 11, 1671, the general court of Connecticut granted that the town of Rye bounds should extend up into ye country northward twelve miles.<sup>a</sup>

At first the pretences of Connecticut to the westward were unlimited, till the year 1683, and consequently so to the northward of Rye; hence the grant to extend twelve miles to the north, as being less exposed to be opposed by New York, leaving their bounds unlimited to the westward of Byram river, thus giving them an opportunity of extending their bounds twelve miles in that direction, so as to form a tract of twelve miles square; as they had already granted one of six miles square to Bedford. This grant, had it been allowed by New York, would have covered Harrison's purchase, the White Plains, Mamaroneck, the Mile Square, Tuckahoe, New Rochelle, and Eastchester, besides other places.

The twelve proprietors of the salt meadows in this town, A.D. 1672, were as follows:

|                   |                    |                      |
|-------------------|--------------------|----------------------|
| WILLIAM ODELL, 1; | JOHN COE, 5;       | JOHN COE, 9.         |
| JOHN BRONDL, 2;   | THOMAS APPLEBE, 6; | RICHARD FOWLER, 10.  |
| PETER DISBROW, 3; | THOMAS ALLEN, 7;   | THOMAS STUDWELL, 11; |
| WILLIAM ODELE, 4; | PHILIP GALPEN, 8;  | JOHN BUDE, 12;       |

"At a town meeting held March, 1672, it was agreed that the first of April following should be taxed of all persons and young cattle and horses, unless it be such as are wrought, and that they henceforward should goe out on the first of April, and whatsoever person hath not his fence up by that time shall forfeit five shillings a rod."

"28th January, 1673, the general court ordered that the bounds between Greenwich and Rye is to be from the mouth of Byram river, to run up the river one quarter of a mile above the great stone lying on the cross path by the said river; and from thence the sayd commons upwards, between Stamford bounds and the colony line, is to be equally divided between them by a parallel line with Stamford, and to Norwalk to the end of their bounds up in the country, &c."

This settlement was confirmed June 21st, 1696, by the general court sitting in Hartford, May 8th, 1693.

"Upon the 28th November, 1680, the town made choice of Peter Disbrow, Hachaliah Brown, Robert Bloomer, and Thomas Merritt, for to go with the Indians to view some land lying between the Blind brook and Biram river, and to make a thorow bargain with them if they shall see it best."

The result of this interview was a sale of land under the Indians sachem Maramaking, "of all that certain tract of land lying by a brook commonly called Blind brook, which tract of land is called by the Indians Euke-taupucuson, and by the English Hogg Pen Ridge."

<sup>a</sup> Hart Rec. vol. viii, p. 13.



## INDIAN DEED OF EUKETAUPUCUSON.

"To all Christian peopelle to whom these shall come greeting, know yee, that I, Marrmaking, commonly called by the English, Will, have for a valuabelle consideration by me Allradi Recaifed of Robart blomer, haccaliah Brown and thomas meritt, alinated and sould unto them the said Robt. blomer, Haccaliah brown and thomas merit, them their heirs, executors, adminstrators, or assignes a certain tractt of Land Lyeing by a brooke commonly called blind brook which tract of Land is called by the Indians Eauketaupacuson bounded as followeth: beginning at the southermost and which is betwene the above said brook and a branch thereof, and from thence to the great swamp at the ouldd marked tree which is now new marked with these Letters R B H T M, and from thence by marked trees to a small Runn which Runns into the above said brook and there is marked with a mark, the which tract of Land is called by the English name the hogg penn Ridge, to have and howlde the above said tractt of land for ever, and I the said Maramaking alise Will doe bind by selfe my heirs, executors and administrators firmly by these presents to warrant and make good the above said saile unto the above said Robert blomer, Brown and merit, their heirs, executors, administrators, or assignes without any Lett hindrance, molistation or trouble from or by any person or persons whatsoever that shall from or after the date hereof make or lay any claim or claims theareunto. In witness hereof I have set my hand this 4th day of September in the yere 1680.

Witness the mark of COUO,  
the mark of OWROWWOAHAK,  
JOHN OGDEN,  
JOHN STOKHAM.

The mark of MARAMAKING  
ALIS WILL.

Maramaking alise Will, hath acknliged this bill  
of sale before me in Rye this 28 of november,  
1680. JOSEPH HORTON, *Comissioner*.

"Know all men by these presents that wee, Robert Bloomer, Haccaliah Brown and thomas merit doe asigne over all our Right, titel and Intrust of this within written bill of salle to the propriatars of peningo neck, as witness our hands this second day of march, in the year sixtene hundred eighti one, we three above said Reserving our equall portions with the other propriatars above said.

Delivered in peresence of us.  
JOHN GEE his marke  
JOSEPH GALLPEN.

ROBERT BLOMER,  
HACKALIAH BROWN,  
THOMAS MERIT.<sup>a</sup>

"Lame Will's purchase commenced at a point where the 'branch' of Blind Brook joins the main stream. From thence the southern boundary ran eastward to 'the old marked trees,' at 'the Great Swamp,'<sup>b</sup> northward, it extended along Blind Brook to certain other marked trees, where the line now divides the town of Rye from that of North Castle."<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Town Rec. vol. B, p. xlii.

<sup>b</sup> "The Great Swamp extended over a considerable part of the region bounded on the east by King Sheep, and on the west by the Ridge road, north by the present Roman Catholic cemetery." Baird's Hist. of Rye, p. 57, [see note.]

<sup>c</sup> Baird's Hist. of Rye, p. 57.

"The second purchase from Maramaking was effected on the 8th of October, 1681. For the valuable consideration of 'three coats received' Lame Will sold to the inhabitants of Rye a tract of land 'between Byram river and the Blind Brook, or Honge;'<sup>a</sup> apparently lying north of the preceding purchases and within the present limits of North Castle."

### INDIAN DEED OF HONGE.

Know all Christian People to whom these shall come, greeting, know ye that I, Maramaking, Comonly called by the english will, have for a valuable consideration by the inhabtance of the towne of Rye allradi Resaived namely, three cotse In hand of the inhabitants of Rye by me Resaived, I, Maramaking, doe acknowledge that I have aLinated, covinanted, sould and deLivered unto them, the inhabitants of Rye, to them, theare heirs, Execetars, administratars, or assignes a sartain tract of Land Liing betwene Biram river and the blind brooke or honge; according as it is allradi marked by the Indians and bounded; to have and holdd the above said trackt of Land forever; and I, the said Maramaking, or else Will, doe bind my sellfe, my heires, execetars and administratars firmly by these presents to warrant and make good the above said sale unto the above named Inhabitants of Rye to them, thaire heires, execetars, assignes or administratars without any Let, hindrance, moListation or trouble from or by any person or persons what so ever that shall from or after the date here of make or Lay any claim or claims theare unto.

In witness here of I have set to my hand this 8th of Octobar, in the year 1681.

Witness the mark of WESSACONOW,

The marke of MARAMAKING,

The mark of COWWOWS,

or elce WILL

The mark of PUMMETUM,

JOSHUA KNAP,

JACOB PAIRS.

Maramaking, or else Will, both acknowledged this bill of sale before me in Rye, this 8 of October, 1681.

JOSEPH HORTON, *Commissioner*.

Recorded decem. 20, 1682.<sup>c</sup>

The above sales were long known and distinguished as "*Lame Will's two purchases*," and "do not appear to have been divided and improved until long after those on Byram ridge."

"Twenty years after the first division on Byram ridge, we find the following entry in the town records:"

"At a town meeting in Rye, February 14, 1699-1700, the town both made choice of Lieutenant Horton, Benjamin Horton, Joseph Purdy, Justice Brown, Sergeant Merritt and John Stoakham, who are to survey and lay out the three Purchases of land; that is to say, the White Plaine's purchase, and Lame Will's

<sup>a</sup> "The name Honge may have been applied to the upper part of Blind Brook, or to the branch already referred to." Baird's Hist. of Rye, p. 51, see note.

<sup>b</sup> Baird's Hist. of Rye, p. 57.

<sup>c</sup> Town Rec. vol. B, p. 15.

two purchases: and the town doth give them full power to call out such person or persons whom they shall see cause to have occasion of."<sup>a</sup>

Nothing, however, seems to have been done under this order. Will's Purchase was not actually laid out till ten years later.' The first division took place in 1709. 'This 11th day of April, 1709, the lots laid out in Will's purchases were drawn for.' 'Each allotment being thirty-eight acres.' 'February 18, 1711,' 'the second division of lots laid out in Lane Will's two purchases occurred. These were situated higher up, and on the east side of the colony line. A third draught of seven acre lots followed.'<sup>b</sup> 'The proprietors of these purchases numbered thirty-four. The list comprises the names of nearly all the proprietors of Peningo Neck.'

In 1681, Peter Disbrow sells his Indian purchase on Poningoe Neck to the rest of the proprietors. In 1683, Colonel Dongan arrived at New York as governor of the province. Soon afterwards the Governor and Council of Connecticut, in a letter to Dongan, dated October 5th, 1683, complain of a warrant having been issued to the constables of Rye, Greenwich and Stamford, which towns they claim are in Connecticut, by charter and agreement of 1664.<sup>c</sup> Dongan, in reply, October 9th, 1683,<sup>d</sup> asserts that the Duke's patent extends to Connecticut river, and refers to the former agreement, twenty miles east of Hudson's river, which he is by no means compelled to confirm, only refers to the old claim for the purpose of extending as far as he can eastward of Hudson's river.

In return the Governor and general court of Connecticut, October 16, 1684, refer Governor Dongan to the agreement of the King's Commissioners, A.D. 1664, as settling the boundary.<sup>e</sup>

Governor Dongan in reply, November 5, 1683, states, "that he must not be unmindful of his master's interest, thinks it not wrong to claim twenty miles from Hudson's river, eastward;" and also mentions "that the commissioners were assured by *Connecticut people, that Mammaronneck river was twenty miles from Hudson's river*, and concludes by assuring them he will have all twenty miles eastward of that river, or he will claim by Connecticut River; and further, wishes the matter settled."<sup>f</sup>

On the 28th of November of the same year the agents (appointed by the two governments,) came to an agreement that the line of partition

<sup>a</sup> See Baird's Hist. Rye. Also Town and Proprietors Meeting Book, No. C, p. 6.

<sup>b</sup> Baird's Hist. of Rye, pp. 59, 60. See Rye Rec. vol. B, p. 160 (back.)

<sup>c</sup> Col. Bound Hart. Rec. Lib. ii., Letter 42.

<sup>d</sup> Col. B. Hart. Rec. Lib. ii., Letter 43.

<sup>e</sup> Col. B. Hart. Rec. Lib. ii., Letter 44.

<sup>f</sup> Col. B. Hart Rec. Lib. ii., Letter 45.

should begin at Byram River at a point called Lyon's Point, where that river falls into the Sound, and run northerly at not less than twenty miles distance from the Hudson to the south line of Massachusetts.<sup>a</sup>

Upon the occasion of this change in 1683, we find the following letter addressed to Lieutenant Horton and selectmen of the town of Rye.

FAIRFIELD, DEC. 3, 1683.

LOVING FRIENDS:—We had purposed in our passage to York to have called upon you, but the badness of the weather and taking our passage by water we missed the opportunity of seeing you in our going thither, and in our return. And therefore we take this first opportunity to acquaint you that though we were loath to have parted with you, and would have been glad to have continued you in this government, yet the providence of God hath so disposed that by our agreement with Governor Dongan, we are forced to part with you, and could not help it, and the Governor promised us that he would not by this change alter any man's property or propriety; and therefore we thought it necessary to acquaint you of this change, and also to advise you speedily to apply him to grant you confirmation of your bounds and proprieties, which we doubt not but he will do also. We must acquaint you that you must by our agreement, pay to this colony this year's rates, which the treasurer will appoint you, to whom you shall pay it speedily it is one penny half penny upon the pound, according to the list presented to the general court, in October last, by the agreement with the Governor Dongan. The west bounds of our colony is now by Byram River, and it runs as the river till it comes to the road, and from thence it runs north, north-west, till it hath run eight miles from the east point of said Byram River.

Gentlemen, we do request you to be satisfied and content with this change, and to carry it suitably to the government under which you are now seated, and apply yourselves to the Honorable Governor, who is a noble gentleman and will do what you shall desire in a regular manner to promote your welfare, which with best respects is all the needful from your assured friends.

ROBERT TREAT, Governor,

NATHAN GOULD, }  
JOHN ALLEN, } *Assistants.*

Endorsed. These for LIEUT. JOSEPH HORTON,  
the selectmen of the town of Rye. These in Rye.

Notwithstanding this agreement, the towns of Rye and Bedford were again received into the colony of Connecticut, June 21, 1696–7.<sup>b</sup>

Governor Fletcher of New York justly complained of this treatment, and issued his proclamation, requiring Rye and Bedford to return to their allegiance, April 15, 1697.<sup>c</sup>

The whole matter was now referred to the king, who in council, March 28th, 1700, confirmed the former agreement made 1683, and

<sup>a</sup> Webster's Letters, p. 207.

<sup>b</sup> Col. Bound. Hart. Rec. vol. ii. letter 138.

<sup>c</sup> Col. Bound. Hart. Rec. vol. ii. letters 140, 141.



ordered "that the high sheriff of the County of Westchester, accompanied with two justices of the said county, do repair to the said towns of Rye and Bedford, and publish the said proclamation, requiring the inhabitants of the said towns, to give obedience to this government, pursuant to his majesties royal will and pleasure, at their peril.

Per order of Council, D. COSINS,  
L. COVENTRY."<sup>a</sup>

Oct. 10, 1700, the General Assembly of Hartford ordered the signification of the settlement to be sent to the inhabitants of Rye and Bedford.

The matter was not completed until May 14, 1731, when the lines were established as they now exist. The inhabitants of Rye in 1683, were the following :

|                    |                         |                      |
|--------------------|-------------------------|----------------------|
| HACHALIAH BROWN,   | JOHN SELLOCKES,         | ISAAO DENHAM,        |
| TIMOTHY KNAPP,     | JAMES WRIGHT,           | The town grants from |
| JONATHAN VOWLES,   | STEHHEN SHERWOOD,       | Hartford,            |
| JONAS STEVENS,     | STEPHEN SHERWOOD, Jun.  | ISAAO DENHAM,        |
| JOHN BRONDIG,      | HAMET GALPEN,           | ABRAHAM BRUSH,       |
| ISAAO SHERWOOD,    | SAMUEL ODELL,           | ABRAHAM SMITH,       |
| THOMAS LYON,       | JOHN MERRITT,           | JOHN OGDEN,          |
| JOHN SILLICK,      | SAMUEL JENKINS,         | SAMUEL BANKS,        |
| CALEB HIATT,       | JOOST PALDIN,           | JOSEPH STUDWELL,     |
| GEORGE KNISON,     | TIMOTHY KNAPP,          | PHILIP TRAVIS,       |
| JOHN PURDY,        | WILLIAM ODELL,          | JOHN MERBITT,        |
| THOMAS MERRITT,    | JOHN DISBROW,           | STEPHEN SHERWOOD,    |
| FRANCIS PURDY,     | ARNOLD BASSET,          | JOSEPH MERRITT,      |
| JOSEPH OGDEN,      | ROBERT BLOOMER,         | JOHN FEAST,          |
| ISAAO SHERWOOD,    | SIMON ROBAED,           | JONATHAN KNIFFEN,    |
| JOHN BOYD,         | JOSEPH HORTON,          | HUMPHREY UNDERHILL,  |
| ROBERT BLOOMER,    | JOSEPH SHERWOOD,        | JOHN TURNER,         |
| JAMES TRAVIS,      | JOHN DISBROW,           | ROBERT BLOOMER,      |
| ROBERT BLENER,     | ROBERT BLOOMER,         | HACHALIAH BROWN,     |
| JACOB PAREE,       | JOHN HORTON,            | JONATHAN HART,       |
| DELIVERANCE BROWN, | FRANCIS PURDY,          | EBENEZER KNIFFEN,    |
| PETER DISBROW,     | DANIEL BRONDIGE,        | JOHN BOYD,           |
| THOMAS LYON,       | JOHN CHURCH,            | ROGER PARK,          |
| GEORGE KNISON,     | STEPHEN SHERWOOD,       | JOOST PAULDINOK,     |
| JOHN BOYD,         | JOSEPH GURNEY,          | THOMAS MERRITT,      |
| THOMAS SLATHAM,    | JONATHAN KNIFFIN,       | JOSEPH BANKS,        |
| WILLIAM ODELL,     | CINIAMON HORTON,        | RUHAMAH BISHOP,      |
| THOMAS SLATHAM,    | STEPHEN SHERWOOD,       | FRANCIS PURDY.       |
| RICHARD BEATTE,    | FRANCIS PURDY,          | JOHN VAIL,           |
| JOHN BOYD,         | PETER BROWN,            | JOHN VAIL,           |
| SAMUEL JENKINS,    | The draft of the swamp, | ISAAO ANDEESON,      |
| JAMES WRIGHT,      | JAMES TRAVIS,           | JOHN MERRITT,        |

<sup>a</sup> Webster's Letters, p. 207.

|                  |                            |                          |
|------------------|----------------------------|--------------------------|
| JOHN HORTON,     | JOSEPH SHERWOOD,           | A draught of Will's pur- |
| RICHARD WATERS,  | The draught of lots by     | chase,                   |
| JOHN STOCKHAM,   | Biram River,               | JOSEPH PURDY,            |
| JOHN HORTON,     | DAVID OGDEN,               | RICHARD OGDEN,           |
| THOMAS MERRITT,  | ROBERT BLOOMER,            | HENRY HIATT,             |
| JOSEPH SHERWOOD, | The draught of Biram's     | Pond field draught,      |
| JOHN MERRITT,    | neck,                      | The three draughts in    |
| HACHALIAH BROWN, | THOMAS MERRITT,            | Will's purchase,         |
| CALEB HIATT,     | MARY OGDEN,                | JOSEPH ROBINSON,         |
| JOHN BODDEGARET, | JOHN BRONDIG,              | DAVID HORTON,            |
| JOHN BRONDIG,    | JONATHAN KNIFFEN,          | JOHN HIATT,              |
|                  | DAVID HORTON. <sup>a</sup> |                          |

In 1694, we find the Indian Sachem Patthunck, with the full consent of his son and heir Wappetoe Patthunck, conveying to Joseph Horton, a parcel of land beginning at certain marked trees, &c., with turf and twigg taken off the said ground and delivered to the said grantee, in peaceable and quiet possession by the said Patthunck, sen., and Patthunck, jr. The above tract of land was situated:—

“On the east side of the Mamaroneck river, and ran with a line of mark trees until it came to the said river, and again to a red oak tree, close by the river marked III, together with all the woods, &c., &c., to the said Joseph Horton, &c. Dated this 29th day of Dec. A. D. 1694.

Signed, sealed and delivered,

in presence of us.

The mark of

CAPTAIN ROBIN, Indian,

WILLIAM COALES,

The mark of R. P. MILLER.

The mark of PATTHUNCK, SEN.

The mark of WAPPETOE PATTHUNCK.

The mark of BETTY PATTHUNCK,

The mark of ACKANUM PATTHUNCK.

daughter of the above named

Patthunck, sen.”

“As early as 1686, we find the inhabitants of Rye applying for a Patent, doubtless in view of an order which the general court had issued the year before to all the towns within its jurisdiction, relative to the occurring of charters for their lands.”<sup>b</sup> November 23d, 1686, the town empowered Benjamin Colyer and John Brondige to treat with the Governor for a general patent for the township of Rye.”<sup>c</sup> The proprietors of

<sup>a</sup> “The investiture ‘by turf and twig.’ This was a relic of feudal times; it consisted in the delivery of a turf, a stone, a branch; or some other object, as a symbol of the transfer of the soil. Anciently, this had been practiced by the feudal lord, in conferring a fief upon his vassal. We find it observed on Manussing Island in 1693, with all formality, and on Budd’s Neck as late as 1765.” Baird’s Hist. of Rye; p. 132, see Hallam’s Middle Ages, vol 1, p. 170.

<sup>b</sup> Baird’s Hist. of Rye, p. 92.

<sup>c</sup> Town Rec. Lib. B, now lost.

Poningoe Neck also authorized the same individuals to obtain a particular patent for said neck. "The court, it appears, however well inclined, did not see fit just then to grant either of those applications. Again, in 1692, at the October session of the General Court,' Mr. Underhill, of Rye, and Zachary Robert's of Bedford, were in attendance, and the court granted them an allowance for their expenses in coming; 'to be payd at Stamford out of the county rate.'<sup>a</sup> But the time for this step did not arrive until five years later. At a meeting of the Governor and Council, January 19, 1697, Thomas Merritt and Deliverance Brown appeared in behalf of 'the town of Rie,' with the request that this plantation may be owned as included within the colony, and that a charter may be granted to them for their lands. The petition is granted, and a patent for the town is ordered to be prepared forthwith.<sup>b</sup> It is as follows:

"RIE PATTENT."

"Whereas the Hon<sup>l</sup> Gen<sup>l</sup> Court of the Colonie of Connecticut have, on May the fourteenth day, 1685, ordered and declared that every town within the said Colonie should take out Pattents or Charters for their severall grants of Lands Given them by the said Gen<sup>l</sup> Court, or derived by purchase or otherwise obtained, which Pattents they did order should be made and Given to them under the seal of the Colonie and hands of the Gov<sup>r</sup> and Secretary. And that such Pattents shall be a sufficient Evidence for all and every township that hath the same to all Intents and purposes for the holding the said lands firme to them, their heirs, successors and assignes forever, according to the Tenor given by his Majestie Charles the second In his Charter bearing date the three and twentieth day of Aprill, in the fourteenth year of his Reign. And the said Gen<sup>l</sup> Court having granted and assigned to severall persons a certain township to be known by the Name of Rie; bounded westward eight Miles upon the Dividing Line between the Province of New York and the Colonie of Connecticut, according as it was settled by his Majesties Commissioners, as appears by their act or Report thereupon; and Eastward on a line beginning at the mouth of Byram River and Running up the said River one quarter of a mile above the Great Stone lying in the path by the said River, and from thence Continued by a parrallel Line eight miles into the Countrey, and bounded southward upon the sea and northward upon the Wildernesse. Now know all men by these presents, that I, Robert Treat, Esq<sup>r</sup> Govern<sup>r</sup> of his Majesties Colonie of Connecticut, have given, granted, bargained, enfeoffed and Confirmed, and by these presents doe give, grant, bargain, enfeoffe and confirme unto Joseph Theale, Thomas Merritt, Deliverance Brown, John Horton, Joseph Horton, Francis Purdie, Hackaliah Brown, Timothie Knap, George Lane and John Merritt, their heirs, assignes and their associates forever, all that part or parcell of Land which lies and is contained within the bounds above-mentioned, With all and singular the Lands, hereditaments and appurtenances whatsoever are thereunto belonging or any way appertaining to the same or any part thereof.

<sup>a</sup> Public Rec. of Conn., vol. iv, p. 83.

<sup>b</sup> Baird's Hist. of Rye, p. 93.

As of his Majesties mannor of East Greenwich [in Kent] to Have and to hold in free and Common Soccage, And not in Capite nor by Knight Service. Excepting and reserving for his Majestie his heirs and successors the fift part of all the Oar of Gold and Silver which shall be found therein from time to time. In witnesse whereof the said Robert Treat with the Secretary of the Colonie have hereunto annexed our hands and affixed Our Colonie Seal, this two and twentieth day of January Anno Domini 1696.<sup>a</sup> And in the eighth year of the reign of our Sovereign Lord William by the Grace of God of England Scotland France and Ireland, King Fidei Defensor. Always provided that nothing herein Contained shall Extend or be understood or taken to Impeach or prejudice any Right, title, Interest or demand, which any person or persons hath or have or claim to have, of into or out of any part of the said township situated within the Limits above-mentioned according to the Laws and Gen<sup>l</sup> Customes of this Colonie but that all and every such person and persons May and shall have hold, and enjoy the same in such manner as if these presents had not been Made.

R. TREAT, *Gov<sup>r</sup>*

ELEAZAR KIMBERLY, *Secretary*<sup>b</sup>

#### DEPUTIES FROM RYE TO THE GENERAL COURT, 1664-1700.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| October, 1664, LU <sup>t</sup> JOHN BUDD, | May, 1676, PETER DISBROE,                                   |
| October, 1665, RICHARD VOWLES,            | October, 1676, TIMOTHY KNAP,                                |
| October, 1666, LT. BUD,                   | May, 1677, JOHN BRUNDIGE,                                   |
| May, 1667, MR. JN <sup>o</sup> BUD,       | October, 1677, MR. JOHN BANKES,                             |
| October, 1668, MR. JOHN BUDD,             | May, 1678, MR. JOHN BANCKES,                                |
| RICHARD VOWLES,                           | October, 1678, TIMOTHY KNAP,                                |
| May, 1669, RICHARD FOWELS,                | October, 1679, PETER DISBROUGH,                             |
| May, 1670, MR. JOHN BANKES,               | May, 1680, MR. JOHN BANKES,                                 |
| PETER DISBROE,                            | May, 1681, JOHN BRANDIGE,                                   |
| October, 1670, TIMOTHY KNAP,              | October, 1681, PETER DISBROE,                               |
| May, 1671, MR. JOHN BANCKES,              | October, 1682, TIMOTHY NAPP,                                |
| PETER DISBROE,                            | October, 1683, TIMOTHY KNAP,                                |
| May, 1672, MR. JOHN BANKES,               | May, 1697, MR. VM <sup>PH</sup> RIE VNDERHILL               |
| MR. JOS. ORTON,                           | MR. DELIVERANCE BROWN                                       |
| June, 1672, MR. JOHN BANCKES,             | May, 1698, MR. JOSEPH HORTON,                               |
| October, 1672, MR. JOHN BANKES,           | October, 1698, CAPT <sup>n</sup> VM <sup>PH</sup> RIE VNDER |
| May, 1673, PETER DISBROE,                 | HILL,   |
| October, 1674, MR. JOHN OGDEN,            | October, 1699, MR. THO <sup>s</sup> MEREIT,                 |
| May, 1675, MR. JOHN BANKES,               | LIEUT <sup>t</sup> JN <sup>o</sup> HORTON.                  |
| July, 1675, MR. JOHN BANKES,              |   |

13 April, 1705. The Indian chiefs Wapeto, Rarequash, and Mekeran, granted to Capt. Joseph Theall, Capt. John Clapp, and Capt. John Horton all of ye town of Rye.

<sup>a</sup> 1697, New Style.

<sup>b</sup> *Colony Book of Deeds, Patents, &c.*, MS., Hartford, vol. ii, p. 251. This document was printed for the first time by Baird in his *Hist. of Rye*, pp. 93, 94.



"A certain parcel of land lying and being within ye township of Rye, bounded by a certain beach tree standing upon the brink of Byram River, marked with J. G. J., and J. H. and J. C. running up ye said river northerly to a great swamp, where standeth an ash tree marked with the above said letters, and from thence in a direct course to an oak tree with stones laid at ye root, and from thence with a range of marked trees of the northermost corner of ye great pond so running down by ye said pond till it meeteth with a white oak sapling marked with ye above said letters, and from thence by certain marked trees to the above said marked beach tree by ye brink of Byram River.<sup>a</sup>

Signed, sealed and delivered  
in the presence of  
DANIEL STRANG.  
JOSEPH PURDY.  
The marke of PARE.

The true mark of WAPETOE  
The true mark of RARESQUASH,  
The true mark of MEKERAN.

A further grant and confirmation was obtained of the Indian proprietors. Seringoe, Raresquash, and Wapeto Patthunck, by John Clapp and others, 20 July, 1705.

"Of all that said tract of land which is butted and bounded as follows, viz: beginning at a beach tree standing by Byram river near a great rock, marked with letters J. H. J. P. J. C. then running up the said river north-west to a certain ash tree in the upper end of a place commonly called Pond Pound neck, marked with the letters aforesaid, &c., &c., to the Colony line, and thence by the said Colony line westwardly to the eight mile stake standing between three white oak trees, marked viz: one of the said trees is marked with the letters C. C. R. on the north side, and on ye south side J. D. and from said tree in a direct line runs to ye northermost corner of Rye Pond, and thence south 10 degrees westerly to a white oak sapling, marked by the Pond side with the letters J. P. thence by a range of marked trees south 64 degrees east to an ash tree standing by Blind brook on the east side thereof, and thence by another range of marked trees to a certain chestnut tree marked with the letters J. J. on ye north side, on the west side with the letters J. P. on the south-west side with letters J. H. and thence by a range of marked trees to ye place where it began.<sup>b</sup>

|                               |                                    |
|-------------------------------|------------------------------------|
|                               | The mark of SERRINGOE,             |
| Signed, sealed, and delivered | SERRINGOE's mark in behalf WAPETO, |
| in the presence of            | PATTHUNCK,                         |
| JAMES MOTT,                   | and of his brother RARESQUASH,     |
| HENRY DISEPOW,                |                                    |
| JOOST PALDINCK.               |                                    |

The above sales were again confirmed by the Indians, 13 September, 1705.

<sup>a</sup> See Warrant for Survey. Alb. Rec. Lib. I. 127, 8

<sup>b</sup> Warrant for Survey, Indian Deeds; Alb. Rec. Lib. I. 129.

<sup>c</sup> County Records, Lib. E, 46.

At a Court of General Assembly holden at New Haven, 12th October, 1710, "Captain John Clapp of the town of Rye, in the province of New York, presented a petition to this assembly on the behalf of himself and partners, praying for a patent to be granted to them of a certain piece or parcel of land lying in this Colony, and within the bounds of the said town of Rye, which they had purchased (with lycense) of the native Indians."

"Upon consideration whereof, this assembly do resolve that no patent shall be granted to them, forasmuch as the said land, hath been formerly granted by this government to the inhabitants of the said town of Rye, and also a *patent* given them for the same."<sup>a</sup>

Queen Anne the same year issued her royal letters patent "to Anne Bridges, John Clapp, Augustine Graham, John Horton, and Thomas Hyatt, for lands in Rye:—

Beginning at a beach tree standing by Byam river, near a great rock marked with ye letters J. H. J. P. J. C., thence running up by ye said river, north north-west to a certain ash tree in ye upper end of a place commonly called ye Pond Pound neck, marked with ye letters aforesaid, and to ye Colony line, and from thence by ye said Colony line westerdly to ye eight mile stake standing between three white oak trees, marked viz: one of ye said trees is marked with the letters C. C. R. on ye north side, and on ye south side J. D. and from ye said tree on a direct line, it runs to ye northermost corner of Rye Pond, and thence so to the westerdly to a white oak sapling marked by ye pond side with the letters J. J. P. thence by a range of marked trees, so by ye east to an ash tree standing by Blind brook on ye east side thereof, and thence by another range of marked trees to a certain chestnut tree marked with ye letters I. T. on ye north side, and on ye west side with ye letters I. P. on ye north-west side with ye letters I. H. and thence by a range of marked trees to ye place, where it began- &c., &c. To the above said patentees, &c., &c.<sup>b</sup>

The proprietors of Poningoe Neck in 1715 were as follows:

HACHALIAH BROWN,  
DELIVERANCE BROWN,  
JOHN STOAKHAM,  
ROBERT BLOOMER,  
GEORGE LANE,  
TIMOTHY KNAPP,  
RICHARD OGDEN,  
DANIEL PURDY,

JOSEPH SEERWOOD,  
ISAAC ANDERSON,  
JOHN MERRITT, Sen.  
JOHN BRONDIGE,  
GEORGE S. KNIFFEN,  
JOHN DISBROW,  
THOMAS MERRITT,  
EBENEZER KNIFFEN,

PETER BROWN.<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Hartford Records, vol. IV. 121.

<sup>b</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. E, 2.

<sup>c</sup> A Town Rec. At a meeting of the proprietors of Poningoe Neck, Dec. 11th, 1699, a grant was made to Richard Ogden, of an island commonly called Fox Island.

Upon the 1st of July 1715, Robert Hunter, Captain General and Commander-in-chief, set out for patent to Christopher Bridge, clerk, rector of the parish of Rye, and his heirs and assigns, twenty small parcels of land situate, &c., in the precinct and parish of Rye, &c., not heretofore granted under the seal of the Province; all which certain tracts of land, purchased by Christopher Bridge, contained two hundred and eighty-one acres.<sup>a</sup>

On the 20th of June, 1720, Daniel Purdy, Samuel Brown and Benjamin Brown, inhabitants of the township of Rye, petitioned for a Patent for the tract of land between Blind brook and Byram river, in behalf of themselves and divers other inhabitants of the said township of Rye, in the following manner:

*To the Honble Peter Schuyler ye President of his Majesties Counsell of the Province of New York and Territories thereon depending in America In Counsell:*

The Humble Petition of Daniell Purdy Son of John Purdy Deceased Samuell Brown and Benjamin Brown Inhabitants of the Township of Rye in the County of West Chester in behalfe of themselves and diverse other Inhabitants of the said Township of Rye.

Sheweth That one Peter Disbrow many yeares since by authority from the Colony of Connecticut (under whose Government the Township of Rye then lay) on the third of January 1660 purchased from the then Native Indian Proprietors a Certaine Tract of Land lyeing on the maine Betweene a sertaine plane then called Rahonansse to the East and to the West Chester Path to the North and up to a river then called Moaquanes to the West. That is to say all the Land lyeing betweene the aforesaid Two Rivers then called Pennigoe Extending from the said Path to the North and South to the Sea or Sound.

That the said Peter Disbrow also purchased of the said Native Indian Proprietors by authority as aforesaid a Certaine other Tract of Land lyeing Betweene Byram River and the Blind Brook which was bounded as followeth viz<sup>t</sup> with the Byram River Beginning at the Mouth of the aforesaid River on the East and the Bounds of Hasting (then soe called) on the south, and southwest to the marked Trees, and northward up to the marked Trees, abt six or seven miles from the sea along the said Byram River northward and soe from the said River a Cross the North Northwest and west to the said River called the blind Brook bounded northward with marked Trees which lead down to a little Brook runing into the Blind brook as by the said Two Indian Purchases may more fully appeare.

That the said Peter Disbrow having made such purchases afterward sold and Disposed of the same to many of the Inhabitants of the said Township of Rye who settled and Improved the same Lands<sup>b</sup> and were first under the Township of Rye under the Collony of Connecticut and Great part thereof hath since falen under the Government of the Province of New York:

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Rec., Book of Patents; Lib. viz. 185. The Patent appears to have been granted in 1715.

<sup>b</sup> Words [erased] and were first as a township.

That yo<sup>r</sup> Petitioners and other Inhabitants of the Town of Rye aforesaid and those under whom they Claime have beene ever since in the quiet and peaceable possession of the said Lands and premises and Cultivated and Improved the same.

But inasmuch as such Parts of the aforesaid Two severall Tracts of Land now Claimed by yo<sup>r</sup> Petitioners and those whom they Represent as aforesaid lyes now within the said Township of Rye under the Government of the said Province of New York and there having been as yet noe Grant from the Crown for the same under this Government Your Petitioners and those whom they Represent being willing and Desirous to have his majesties most Gracious Letters Patent for such part of the aforesaid Tracts of Land now in their quiet and peaceable possession under this Government viz<sup>t</sup> Beginning at the Southermost part of Pinnin-goe Neck and Runs along the sound Easterly until it comes to the mouth of By-gam River and Runing up the said River and the Land Betweene the Colony of Connecticut and the Province of New York Northward to the Antient marked Trees of Limping Wills purchase and soe with the said marked Trees a Cross the said purchase north west to the River called the Blind brook, and soe Runing down to the said River, and brook called Mill Creek to the Sound.

Yo<sup>r</sup> Petitioners therefore on behalf of themselves and the said other Inhabitants (who have fully authorized and Impowered yo<sup>r</sup> Petitioners to this Purpose) most humbly pray yo<sup>r</sup> honours will be pleased to Grant to yo<sup>r</sup> Petitioners his majesties most Gracious Letters Patent for the aforesaid Tract within the Limitts and Boundaries last above Described, In Trust for themselves and the aforesaid In-habitants according to their respective rights and Interest in the same under such Reservation and Restrictions as are appointed for that purpose.

And yo<sup>r</sup> Petitioners shall ever pray etc.

SAMUEL BROWN,

New York ye

BENJAMIN BROWN.<sup>a</sup>

20<sup>th</sup> June 1720.

Upon the 11<sup>th</sup> of August, 1720, the following Royal Letters Patent were issued to Daniel Purdy, Samuel Brown and Benjamin Brown in behalf of themselves and others, freeholders and inhabitants of the town-ship of Rye. The patentees yielding and paying therefore yearly to the King, his heirs and successors at the Custom House in New York, unto the Receiver-general of the Province, on the Feast of the Annunciation of Blessed Virgin Mary (commonly called Lady Day) the annual rent of two shillings and six pence "for every hundred acres thereof for the same four thousand, five hundred acres of land, island and premises so granted, &c."

#### ROYAL PATENT OF RYE.

*George by the grace of God, King of Great Britain, France and Ireland, De-fender of the faith, &c. To all To whom these presents shall come sendeth greet-ing: Whereas our Loving Subjects Daniel Purdy, son of John Purdy deceased, Samuel Brown and Benjamin Brown in behalf of themselves and others Free-*

<sup>a</sup> Land Papers, Albany, vol. vii, p. 171. See Baird's Hist. of Rye.



holders and Inhabitants of the *Township of Rye* in the *County of Westchester* in the *Province of New York* by their Humble Petition presented to our trusty and well-beloved Colonel *Peter Schuyler*, President of our Council for our Province of New York aforesaid, Have set forth that they and their ancestors and predecessors under whom they hold have held and improved at their great charge with their labour and industry, a Certain Tract of land bordering upon the line of Division between this Province and *Connecticut Colony* for which they nor their ancestors and predecessors hitherto have had no patent under the Seal of the province of New York, Which said Tract of land is situate and being between *Byram River* and *Blind Brook* and Begins at a Certain rock being the ending of a point of land commonly known by the Name of *Town Neck Point* and in the Southermost point of the said Tract of land, thence running Easterly by the Sound to a point near the mouth of said *Byrams River* called *Byrams Point* including a certain Island called *Mounsons Island* and from the said Byram Point Northerly up Byram River on the East side of the said River as the Colony line is at present supposed to be run by the inhabitants of the Neighborhood to a rock standing on the East side of the said River by the wadeing place and the high road leading to Connecticut, then North twenty-four degrees, thirty minutes, West three hundred and forty-eight chains as the line which divides this Province from Connecticut is supposed to run by the said inhabitants to a Walnut tree marked with three knotches on three sides being twelve chains on a straight line to an Ash Tree Marked with three knotches on three sides standing near blind Brook then down the said Brook untill it emptys it self into a Creek called Mill Creek and then by the said Creek to the place where it Begun, Containing Four Thousand and Five Hundred acres of Land or thereabout, after eighteen small Tracts of land which lye within the said bounds and are part of twenty small Tracts formerly granted the Reverend Christopher Bridge in his life time are deducted and allowance being made for the Kings Highways and prayed to have our Grant and Letters Patent for the same under the Great Seal of the Province of New York in the manner following that is to say. To Hold to them and their heirs and assigns for ever but to and for the use and uses following and to no other use whatsoever (that is to say) As for and concerning such Tracts of Land and hereditaments parts of the before receited Four Thousand Five Hundred Acres of Land and Island whereof they the said *Daniel Purdy*, *Samuel Brown* and *Benjamin Brown* are and stand Lawfully and Rightfully seized and possessed in their own severall and respective rights interests and Estate to and for the sole and only proper use Benefit and Behoofe of the aforesaid *Daniel Purdy*, *Samuel Brown* and *Benjamin Brown* severally and respectively and of their severall and respective heirs and assigns forever. And as for and concerning such other Tracts of Land and hereditaments parts of the before recited Four Thousand Five Hundred Acres of Land and Island which are belonging and Appertaining to severall other persons Freeholders and Inhabitants within the bounds and limits of the same Four Thousand Five Hundred Acres of Land and Island some of more some of less according to their severall separte and particular interest in trust to and for the sole and only proper use benefit and behoofe of each particular Freeholder and Inhabitant particularly and respectively and of each their particular and respective heirs and assigns for ever in as full and ample manner as if their particular Names and their particular and severall Freeholds

and Inheritances were particularly and severally Expressed Mentioned and Described under the usual Quitt Rent, Clauses, provisions conditions limitations and restrictions as are limited and appointed by our Royall Instructions for the Granting of Lands in our Province of New York, for that purpose. Which request wee being willing to grant *Know Yee* that of our Especial Grace certain knowledge and meer Motion Wee have given, granted, ratified and confirmed and do by these presents for us our heirs and successors for ever Give, Grant, Ratifie and Confirm unto the aforesaid *Daniel Purdy, Samuel Brown and Benjamin Brown* and to their heirs and assigns for ever. All that the aforesaid Tract of Land and Island Containing as before is set forth Four Thousand Five Hundred Acres together with all and singular Woods, Underwoods, Houses, Edifices, Buildings, Barns, Fences, Orchards, Fields, Fielding, Pastures, Meadows, Marshes, Swamps, Ponds, Pools, Waters, Water courses, Rivers, Rivoletts, Runs and Streams of Water, Fishing, Fowling, Hunting and Hawking, Quarrys, Mines, Mineralls, Standing Growing Lying and being or to be had used or enjoyed within the limits and bounds aforesaid and all other profits benefits libertys privileges, Hereditaments and appurtenances to the same belonging or any ways appertaining. And all that our Estate, Right, Title, Interest, Claim and Demand whatsoever of in or to the same. And the Reversion and Reversions, Remainder and Remainders and the Yearly Rents and Profits of the same (Excepting and always reserving out of this our present Grant unto us our heirs and successors for ever all such Fir Trees and Pine Trees of the Diameter of Twenty-four inches at Twelve inches from the ground or root as are or shall be fit to make Masts for the use of our said their Royall Navy. As also all such other Trees, as are or shall be fit to make planks and Knees for the use of our said their said Royall Navy only which now are standing growing or being in and upon any of the said Tract of Land and Island with Free Lycence and Liberty for any person or persons whomsoever by us our heirs and successors or any of them to be thereunto authorized and appointed under our and their sign Manual with Workmen Horses Waggons Carts and Carriages and without to enter upon and come into the same Tract of Land and Island and there to fell cut down root up hiew saw rive splitt have take cart and carry away the same Masts, Trees, Planks and Knees for the use aforesaid and also Except all Gold and Silver Mines, saving also and reserving unto the heirs and assigns for ever of the aforesaid *Christopher Bridge* Eighteen small Tracts of Land which Lye within the said bounds and are part of Twenty small Tracts formerly granted to him in his life time by Letters Patent under the Great Seal of our said Province of New York bearing Date the Nineteenth day of July in the Fourth Year of our Reign saving also and reserving unto Lemuel Rogers and Roger Parks, and to their several and respective heirs and assigns respectively for ever their Respective Rights Title Interest and Equity which they and either of them respectively do shall or may have or claim to the Southermost part of the said Island any thing in these Presents to the contrary thereof in any ways notwithstanding.) *To have and To hold* all that the aforesaid Tract of Land and Island containing in the whole Four Thousand Five Hundred Acres of Land and all other the above granted premises with the hereditaments and appurtenances (Saving and *Excepting* only as before is Excepted and Reserved) unto the aforesaid *Daniel Purdy, Samuel Brown and Benjamin Brown*, their heirs and assigns for ever, but to and for the uses following and to and

for no other use whatsoever (that is to say) As for and concerning such Tracts of land and hereditaments parts of the before recited Four Thousand Five Hundred Acres of Land and Island whereof they the said *Daniel Purdy, Samuel Brown and Benjamin Brown* are and stand Lawfully and Rightfully seized and possessed in their own severall and respective rights interests and Estate to and for the sole and only proper use benefit and behoofe of the aforesaid *Daniel Purdy, Samuel Brown and Benjamin Brown* severally and respectively and of their severally and respective heirs and assigns for ever. And as for and concerning such other Tracts of Land and hereditaments parts of the before recited Four Thousand, Five Hundred Acres of Land and Island which are belonging and apertaining to several other persons Freeholders and Inhabitants within the bounds and limits of the same Four Thousand Five Hundred Acres of Land and Island some of more, some of less according to their severall separate and particular interest in Trust to and for the sole and only proper use benefit and behoofe of each particular Freeholder and Inhabitants particularly and respectively and of each of their particular and respective heirs and assigns for ever in as full and ample manner as if their particular Names and their particular and several Freeholds and Inheritances were particularly and severally Expressed Mentioned and described in these presents. To bee Holden of us our heirs and successors for ever in free and common soccage as of our Mannor of East Greenwich in the County of Kent within our Realm of Great Brittain Yeilding rendering and paying therefore yearly and every year unto us our heirs and successors at our Custom House in New York unto our and their Receiver Generall of our said Province for the time being on the Feast of the Annunciation of the Blessed Virgin Mary commonly called Lady Day the Annual Rent of Two Shillings and six pence Lawful Money of New York for every Hundred Acres thereof in Lieu and stead of all other rents services Dues Duties and Demands whatsoever for the same Four Thousand Five Hundred Acres of Land Island and Premises, so granted as aforesaid *Provided* always and these presents are upon this condition that the same *Daniel Purdy, Samuel Brown and Benjamin Brown* and the other Freeholders and Inhabitants of the same Tract of Land and Island so granted as aforesaid and their heirs and assigns some or one of them have already or shall within the Term and Space of three Years next Ensuing the Date hereof settle clear and make improvement of three acres of land for every fifty acres of land at least for the same tract of land and Island so granted as aforesaid and so proportionably for a larger or smaller Tract or parcel thereof and in Default thereof or if the aforesaid *Daniel Purdy Samuel Brown and Benjamin Brown* and the other Inhabitants and Freeholders of any part or parts of the same Tract of land and Island or their heirs or assigns or any of them or any other person or persons whatsoever by their or any other of their privy consent or procurement shall set on fire and burn the Woods on the same Tract of land and Island or any part thereof to clear the same that then and there and in either of these Two cases this our present Grant and every Article and Clause therein or thereof shall cease determine and become utterly Void anything in these presents to the contrary thereof in any ways notwithstanding. And Wee do hereby Will and Grant that these our Letters be made Patent and that they and the Record of them in our Secretary's Office of our Province of New York shall be good and effectuell in the Law of all Intents and Purposes Notwithstanding the not true and well reciting of the premises or of



the limits and bounds thereof or any former or other Grant or Letters Patent for the same made or granted to any other person or persons or persons body polittick or corporate whatsoever, any Laws or other restraint incertainty or imperfection whatsoever to the contrary hereof in anyways Notwithstanding.

*In Testimony* whereof Wee have caused the great Seal of our Province of New York to be affixed to these presents and the same to be Entred on the Record in one of the Books of Patents in our said Secretary's Office remaining. *Witness* our said trusty and well beloved Colonel Peter Schuyler President of our Council for our Province of New York in Council at Fort George in New York the Eleventh day of August in the Seventh Year of our Reign Annoque Domini 1720.

Js. BOLIN. *Dept. Secy.*<sup>a</sup>

In 1786 the people of the State, (as successors of the Crown,) claimed the arrears of quit rent due upon the tract of four thousand five hundred acres, granted to Daniel Purdy, Samuel Brown and Benjamin Brown, on the 11th of August, 1720.

The lands west of the Blind brook, called by the Indians Apawamis, are to be distinguished from the rest of the township of Rye as constituting a distinct Patent, called Budd's Neck Patent. This territory, which was 'bounded on the east by Blind brook, on the west by the little stream whose Indian name was Pockcotessewake, since known as Stony brook, or Beaver Meadow brook, and extending northward as far as Westchester Path, and southward to the sea,' was purchased of the native sachem Shanarocke and other Indians by John Budd, of Southhold, Long Island, who now takes the lead instead of Peter Disbrow, the first English grantee, under the sachems of Poningoe.

#### INDIAN DEED OF APAWAMIS.

To all Christian people, Ingains and others whom it may concern, that we, whose names are hereunto subscribed, living upon Hudson's river, in America, that we, Shanarocke, sagamore, and Rackceate, Napockheast, Tawwheare, Nanderwhere, Tomepawcon, Rawmaquaie, Pawaytahem, Mawmawytom, Howhoranes, Cockkeneco, Tawwayco, Attoemacke, Heattomeas, all Ingains, for divers good causes and considerations us hereunto moving, have fully and absolutely bargained, and doe for ever sell unto John Budd, senior, of Southhole, his heires, executors, &c., all our real right, tittell and interest we or eather of us have in one track of land lying on the mayn, called Apawammeis, buted and bounded on the east with Mockquams river, and on the south with the sea against Long Island, and on the west with Pockcotessewake river, and at the north up to the marke trees nyee Westchester Path, all the lands, trees to fell at his pleasure, with all the grounds, and meadow grounds and planting grounds, moynes and minerals, springs and rivers, or what else lying or being within the said track of land, and also range, feeding and grasse for cattell, twenty English miles northward into the country, and trees to fell at his or their pleasure, and to their proper use and improvements of the said John Budd, his heirs, executors, &c., for

<sup>a</sup> Book of Patents, (Albany) No. viii. 407



ever to enjoy, possess and keep as their real right, as also peaceably to inherite the sayd track of land with all thereon, and we, the before named Ingains, doe acknowledge and confesse to have received in hand of the said John Budd, the juste sum of eightie pounds sterling in full satisfaction for the aforesaid land with all the limits, bounds and privileges with hegrece and regrece, without lett or molestation of any one. Now for the more true and reall enjoyment and possession of the said John Budd, his heirs, &c., we doe jointly and severally, us and either of us, or any by and under us, for ever assign and make over by virtue of this, our deed and bill of sale, disclayme any further right in the sayd tract of land from the day of the date hereof, and all and each of us do promise to put the said John Budd or his into quiet, peaceable possession, and him to keep and defend and mayntaine against all person or persons whatsoever that shall directly or indirectly lay any clayme or former grant, or shall trouble or molest the said John Budd or his, be they English or Dutch, or Ingains, or whatsoever. We the aforementioned Ingains doe engage ourselves, heirs, executors, &c., to make good this our obligations as aforesaid. I Shanarocke, Rackeate, Mepockheast, Tawwaheare, Nanderwhere, Tomepawcon, Rawmaquaie, Pawwaytahem, Mawmawytom, Howhoranes, Cockkeneco, Tawwayen, Attoemacke, Heattomees, have hereunto set our hands at time and times, and we doe approve of each of our hands to this deed to be good and firm. Witness this our hands this day, being

the 8th of November, 1661.


Signed, sealed and delivered,


THOMAS REVELL,  
JOHN COE,  
THOMAS CLOSE,  
HUMPHREY HUGHES,

The mark of SHANOROCKE,

NANDERWHERE,  
MEPOCKHEAST,  
HOWHORANES,  
RAWMAQUAIE,  
RACKEATE,  
PAWWAYTAHEM,  
COCKENSECO.'

Know all men, English and Ingains, that whereas Shanorock sold John Budd all the land from the sea to Westchester path, I Shenorock marked trees by Penning path do hereby give and grant and acknowledge that I have received full satisfaction of him, and according to the true intent of these bounds, he the sayd John Budd is to have and enjoy all the land by the Blind brook to Westchester path, witness my hand.

Witness the  
mark of  COKEO.  
PETER DISBROW.

The mark of SHANOROCKE, .  
The mark of REMAQUAIE.

Another deed executed eleventh month, fifth day, 1661, related to the islands in the Sound near the southern extremity of the territory of Apawamis. These were Hen and Pine islands, and the Scotch caps.

Know all men whom this may concern, that I Shenerock, sachem have bargained sold and delivered unto John Budd the islands lying south from the neck of land the sayd John Budd bought of me and other Ingains, and have received

full satisfaction of Thomas Close for the said John's use, and doe warrant the sale above written in the presence of Thomas Close and William Jones.

The mark of SHENOROCK, sachem.

Witnesse THOMAS CLOSE,

SHENOROCK.

WILLIAM JONES, his marke,

This transaction was followed, in a few days, by the purchase of the West Neck, or the tract of land adjoining Budd's Neck, proper, and lying between Stony Brook and Mamaroneck river.

" 11 MONTH, TWELFTH DAY, 1661.

'Know all men whom this may concern, that I Shenorock, Rawmaqua, Rackeatt, Pawwaytahan, Mawmatoe, Howins, have bargained sold and delivered unto John Budd a neck of land, bounded by a neck of land he bought of me and other Ingans on the south, and with Merremack river on the west, and with marked trees to the north, with twenty miles for feeding ground for cattle with all the woods, trees, manrodes, meadows and rivers and have received full satisfaction in coats and three score fathom of wompom of Thomas Close for the said John's use, and to engage myself to warrant the sale thereof against all men, English, Dutch and Ingans, and for the faithful performance hereof, I have set my hand in the presence of Thomas Close and William Jones, the day and year above written.

The mark of SHENEROCKE,

Witnesse THOMAS CLOSE,

RAWMAQUA, his mark.

WILLIAM JONES, his marcke,

HOWNIS,

PRAM, his mark,

RAZI, his mark.<sup>a</sup>

On the second day of June 1662, we found John Budd in company with Peter Disbrow, John Coe and Thomas Studwell, purchasing of the Indians Showannorocot, Romkque and others, a tract of land above the West Chester Path, and west of Blind Brook, or directly north of Budd's Neck. This was the territory of the present town of Harrison, and taken from Rye in 1702.

'Know all men whom this may concern that we Peter Disbrow, John Coe and Thomas Studwell and John Budd have bargained and bought and paid for to the satisfaction of Showannorocot and Roksohtohkor and Powataham and other Indians whose names are underwritten a certain tract of land above Westchester Path to the marked trees bounded with the above said river Blind Brook ; which tract of land with all the privileges of wood, trees, grass, springs, mines and minerals, to the said Peter Disbrow, John Coe, Thomas Studwell, to them and their heirs for ever ; with warrants against all persons, English, Dutch or Indians. To this bargain and sale we the above said Indians do bind ourselves, heirs, and assigns to the above said Peter Disbrow, John and the rest above said, to them,

<sup>a</sup> Col. Rec. Hartford, vol. 1, pp. 333, 334.

their heirs and assigns for ever; as witness our hands this present day and date,  
June the 2: 1662.

SHOWANNOROCOT, his mark  
ROMKQUE, his mark 'a

In 1665 John Budd, sen., grants to John Morgan and John Concklin of Flushing, lands situate in Rye upon the south-eastern neck, "bounded west by Mamaroneck River, east by great rock in a bottom, south with the creek, and north by marked Trees."

The next year John Budd obtains a confirmation of the Indian grant of November 8th 1661, of a tract of land extending northward into the country sixteen miles from Westchester Path from the Indian Sachems Shanarocke, Romackqua and Pathung:

#### SECOND INDIAN DEED OF APAWAMIS.

To all Christian people, Indians and others whom it may concern that wee who's names are hereunto subscribed living upon Hudson's River in America, Shonarocke Sagemore, and Romackqua and Pathung, whereas wee have formerly sold a tract of land unto Mr. John Budd, senior, bounded on the sea by the South, on the North by Westchester path and the name of the tract of land is commonly called Apauamiss, and whereas wee have sold unto the sayd Mr. John Budd twenty English miles northwards from the above said tract of land, which is called by Apauamis the above said twenty English miles wee doe acknowledge that wee have sold unto Mr. John Budd for range, for feed, for timber, for grasing, to him and his heirs forever, and now wee doe acknowledge that wee have bargained, sold and delivered, wee and every one of us from our Heirs, Executors, or assigns jointly and severally unto John Budd, his Heirs, Executors or Assigns a tract of land lying within the compass of the above sayd twenty English miles bounded on the south by Westchester path and on the East by the Blind Brook and on the West by Mamaroneck River and the north bounds is sixteen miles (English miles) from Westchester path up into the country, for which land we have received already in hand a certaine sume to the value of twenty pounds sterling for the above sayd track of land, for which land we are fully satisfied by the sayd John Budd for the above sayd track of land for the which wee doe acknowledge wee have bargained, sold and delivered unto John Budd and His Heirs forever with warrantie against all men, English, Dutch, and Indians and doe give him full possession and promise so to keep him to the which bargain and agreement wee have hereunto set our hands this day, being the 29th of April, 1666.

Witness, JOSEPH HORTON,

Witness, JOHN RAWLS,

The mark of COKOE the Indian,

The mark of SHANAROCKE,

The mark of ROMACKQUA,  
a sachems Son,

The mark of PATHUNG.

Recorded May 10, 1673, in the public records of ye book ffol 32, pme, Jno. Allyn, Secretry<sup>c</sup>. A true copie compared by Edward Colier.<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Baird's Hist. of Rye, p. 15.

<sup>b</sup> New York Col. MSS. Land papers. 1642-1681, vol. I. p. 10, 'Vol. Rec. of Conn., vol. (MS.) p. 234.

"By the several purchases now recorded," says Baird, "the founders of this town acquired the title to a very considerable territory. The southern part of it alone comprised the tract of land between Byram River and Mamaroneck River, while to the north it extended twenty miles, and to the northwest an indefinite distance. These boundaries, so far as they were stated with any degree of clearness, included, besides the area now covered by the towns of Rye and Harrison, much of the towns of North Castle and Bedford in New York, and of Greenwich in Connecticut; whilst in a northwesterly direction the territory claimed was absolutely without a fixed limit. Indeed, we shall see that as the frontier town of Connecticut, Rye long cherished pretensions to the whole region beyond, as far as the Hudson."

Yet as ambitious as the proprietors of this town appear to have been in general, they viewed with great suspicion the progress of individual enterprise, especially in selling or disposing of any of the lands in question. In consequence the extensive purchases and subsequent sales of John Budd gave them no little degree of anxiety; for we find the following petition dispatched to the General Court at Hartford by the inhabitants of Rye, on the 2d of October, 1668:

*The humble petition of the inhabitants of the town of Rye, to the Right Honorable the Governor and the rest of the gentlemen of the General Court at Hartford:*

May it please your Honor, with the gentlemen of the General Courte, to understand that about four years since, that John Budd did present a paper with several names to it, of inhabitants on his neck or island, so called and patented. It was for the settling of himself and children; on which we conceived had it been performed it had done noe great injury to the towne; but he noe ways pretended it, as doth agree, but hath and doth dayley let it and settle people upon it, extreemely prejudiciall to the towne, without the towne's approbation, which wee humbly conceave may be our injury if not speedily prevented; Doe humbly request that neck of land may be delivered up to the town, we paying him by Indian purchases with interest, he abating for what land he hath sold, if not prejudiciall to the towne. And them that are prejudiciall, may be removed, and that you would be pleased to depute two or three persones whom you shall think meet, to come and settell amongst us with what speed may be. Soe we rest your humble petitioners.

|                 |                   |                   |
|-----------------|-------------------|-------------------|
| PETER DISBROW,  | WILLIAM WOODHULL, | ROBERT BLOOMER,   |
| RICHARD VOWLES, | JOHN BRONDIG,     | STEPHEN SHERWOOD, |
| TIMOTHY KNAPP,  | THOMAS BROWNE,    | GEORGE LANE.      |

"On the 15th of October, 1672, the general courte assembled at Hartford, ordered that Mr. Budd and those of Rye, that have appropriated the lands of Rye to themselves shall appear at general court in



May next, to make appear their right. For the general court intends to settle those lands according to righteousness, that no plantation may be discouraged, and plantation work may goe forward to better satisfaction than formerly."<sup>a</sup>

The court must subsequently have confirmed John Budd, in his rights as proprietor, (while at the same time they showed the neck to be incorporated into the town of Rye,) for we find him in 1681-2, granting a piece of meadow land lying westward of John Ogden, to John Horton.<sup>b</sup>

In 1685, John Budd, of Southhold, in New England, sold to Joseph Purdy a certain tract of land in Rye, lying and being upon the neck called Epawainos, bounded on the east by Blind Brook, &c., &c. Also a parcel of land upon the same to Judith Brown and Joseph Ogden, April 29, 1685.<sup>c</sup>

The following orders were issued to the surveyor general, by his Excellency the governor in council, the 20th of February, 1695-6 :

"You are hereby required to survey and lay out for Joseph Budd in order to a patent, all the land contained in an Indian purchase in Westchester Co., made A. D. 1661 ; from the Sound to the marked trees near Westchester path, bounded on the west by the Mamaroneck River, on the east by parte of Blind Brook," and this shall be to you a sufficient warrant.<sup>d</sup>

BENJAMIN FLETCHER,  
To ANTHONY GRAHAM, *Surveyor General*, *By order of Council.*

In consequence of the unsettled state of the boundary lines between the two colonies of New York and Connecticut, Joseph Budd failed in obtaining his patent at this time.

The general court also refused him a patent for his paternal lands in 1710, upon the ground that the former patent granted was sufficient.<sup>e</sup> It was not until the year 1720 that the Crown confirmed the Budd purchase by royal letters patent under the great seal of the province of New York, to Joseph Budd, John Haight and Daniel Purdy ; the patentees yielding and rendering therefor yearly, to the Governor, on the feast day of the blessed Virgin Mary, commonly called Lady Day, the annual rent of one pound nineteen shillings :—

<sup>a</sup> Hartford Rec. vol. III. 29.

<sup>b</sup> County Rec. Lib. B. 84.

<sup>c</sup> County Rec. Lib. A. p. 14.

<sup>d</sup> Indian Deeds, Alb. Rec. warrant for survey, Lib. 39.

<sup>e</sup> Hartford, Rec. vol. IV, 121. 1. Local officers were sometimes appointed specifically by the town for the 'east side of Blind Brook'—2d of Aug., 1700, the town in general doth grant unto the inhabitance of the neck of appoquamas, the liberty to have pound and pounders and fence viewers.' Baird's Hist. of Rye.

## ROYAL PATENT FOR BUDD'S NECK.

George, by the grace of God, King of Great Britain, France and Ireland, Defender of the faith, &c. To all to whom these presents shall come, sendeth *greeting*, whereas our loving subjects *Joseph Budd, John Hoight and Daniel Purdy*, inhabitants of the *Town of Rye*, in the *County of West Chester*, by their petition presented to our trusty and well beloved Colonel *Peter Schuyler*, President of the Council for our Province of New York. Have set forth that in Virtue of a purchase made by *John Budd* in his life time, the Father of the aforesaid *Joseph Budd* by Licence from the Government of Connecticut Colony, bearing Date the Eighth Day of November, One Thousand Six Hundred and Sixty, of a certain Tract or parcel of land in the Bounds of the *Township of Rye*, in the *County of Westchester*, then called *Apurquannis*, bounded East by a River then called *Machquams River*, Southerly by the Sea or Sound against Long Island, now called the Island of Nassau, Westerly by a River then called *Porhoteswake River*, and Northerly by Marked Trees near West Chester Path, that the said petitioners with Diverse others of our Loving subjects, inhabitants of the same *Township of Rye*, who have and do hold and enjoy the same Tract of Land by from or under the same *John Budd*, and his heirs and assigns have cultivated and improved the same at their great charge, and with great labor and industry, and have been and are now hitherto peaceable and Quietly possessed thereof, praying to have the same confirmed to them by Letters Patent under the Great Seal of the Province of New York, in the manner as is hereafter Described (that is to say) all that Tract or Neck of Land in the *Township of Rye*, in the *County of Westchester*, in the *Province of New York* now called *Budd's purchase*, Beginning at a certain grist Mill, called *Joseph Lyon's Mill*, standing on a Brook called *Blind Brook*, thence up the stream of said Brook including the said Mill until it meets withal small Brook called or known by the name of *Bound Brook*, thence on a North West course until it meets with Westchester Old Road, then South Westerly along the said Road as it runs to a White Oak Tree Marked on two sides standing on the West side of a certain brook known by the name of *Stony Brook* which White Oak Tree is the South West corner of a certain patent called *Harrison's Patent* thence from said White Oak Tree on a North West course to an Ash Tree Marked on two sides standing on the East side of *Mamarroneck River* close by the edge of said River as it runs to the place where the said Mamarroneck River emptys itself into *Mamarroneck Harbour* or Creek thence Southerly to where said Mamarroneck Harbour or Creek falls into the Sound thence Easterly along the Sound untill it meets with a certain Creek called Mill Creek on the head whereof the aforesaid Grist Mill of *Joseph Lyon* is standing thence up the channell of said Creek as it runs until it meets the aforesaid Grist Mill where it first begun, Bounded Easterly by Blind Brook and Mill Creek Northerly by Westchester Road and *Harrisons Patent* Westerly by Mamarroneck River and Harbour and Southerly by the Sound together with a small Island called *Hen Island* lying in the Sound over against the said lands about a quarter of a Mile from the Main containing in the whole Main land and Island fifteen hundred and sixty acres, To Hold to them and their heirs and assigns forever, but to and for the use and uses following and to no other use whatsoever (that is to say) as for and concerning such Tracts of land and hereditaments part of the afore recited Tract of land and Island whereof they the said *Joseph Budd, John Hoight and*

*Daniel Purdy* are and stand Lawfully and Rightfully seized and possessed in their own severall and respective rights interest and estate to and for the sole and only proper use benefit and behoof of the aforesaid *Joseph Budd, John Haight* and *Daniel Purdy* severally and respectively and of their severall and respective heirs and assigns for ever, *And* as for and concerning such other Tracts of Lands parts of the before recited Tract of Land and Island which belonging and appertaining to severall other persons Freeholders and Inhabitants within the bounds of the same Tract of Land and Island some more and some less according to their severall separate and particular interest and for the sole and only proper use benefit and behoof of each particular Freeholder and Inhabitant particularly and respectively and of each of their particular and respective heirs and assigns for ever in as full and ample manner as if their names were particularly and severally mentioned and expressed and their particular and severall Freeholds were particularly and severally mentioned and Described under the usual Quit Rent with the usual Clauses provisions conditions limitations and restrictions as are limited and appointed by our Royall Instructions for Granting of land in our said province. Which request Wee being willing to Grant, *Know Ye* that of our, Especial Grace Certain Knowledge and Meer Motion Wee have given granted ratified and confirmed and do by these presents for us our heirs and successors give grant ratifie and confirm unto the said *Joseph Budd, John Haight,* and *Daniel Purdy,* and to their heirs and assigns for ever, All that the aforesaid Tract of land and Island before it containing in the whole Fifteen Hundred and Sixty Acres in manner and form as last mentioned and Described together with all and singular Woods, Under woods, Houses, Edifices, Buildings Barns Fences Orchards Fields Feedings, Pastures, Meadows, Marshes, Swamps, Ponds, Pools, Waters Water Courses Rivers, Rivoletts, Runs and Streams of Water, Fishing, Fowling, Hunting and Hawking Quarries Mines Mineralls, standing growing lying and being or to be had used and enjoyed within the limits and bounds aforesaid and all other profits benefits libertys privileges hereditaments and appurtenances to the same belonging or any ways appertaining, *And* all that our Estate Right Title Interest Benefit Claim and Demand whatsoever of in or to the same and the Reversion and Reversions Remainder and Remainders and the Yearly Rents and profits of the same Excepting and always Reserving out of this our present Grant unto us our heirs and successors for ever all such Fir Trees and Pine Trees of the Diameter of twenty-four Inches at twelve Inches from the Ground or Root as are or shall be fit to make Masts for our Royall Navy as also all such other Trees as are or shall be fit to make Planks or Knees for the use of our said Royall Navy only which now are standing growing or being which for ever hereafter shall be standing growing or being in and upon any of the said Tract of Land and Island with Free Lycence and Liberty for any person and persons whomsoever by us our heirs and successors or any of them to be thereunto authorized and appointed under our or their Sign Manual with Workmen Horses Waggones Carts and Carriages, and without to enter upon and come into the same Tract of Land and Island and there to fell cut down root up hiew saw rive split have take cart and carry away the same Trees Planks Masts and Knees for the use aforesaid and also Except all Gold and Silver Mines *To have and to hold* all that the aforesaid Tract of Land and Island before it containing in the whole Fifteen Hundred and Sixty Acres and all other the above Granted Premisses



with the hereditaments and appurtenances (Excepting only as before is Excepted and Reserved) unto the aforesaid *Joseph Budd, John Hoight and Daniel Purdy* their heirs and assigns for ever, but to and for the uses following and to and for no other use whatsoever (that is to say) as for and concerning such Tracts of Land and Hereditaments part or parts of the before recited Tract of Land and Island herein and hereby Granted whereof they the said *Joseph Budd, John Hoight, and Daniel Purdy* are and stand Lawfully and Rightfully seized and possessed in their own and severall and Respective Rights Interest and Estate to and for the sole and only proper use benefit and behoof of the said *Joseph Budd, John Hoight and Daniel Purdy* severally and respectively and their severall and respective Heirs and assigns for ever, And as for and concerning such other Tracts of Land and hereditaments part or parts of the before recited Tract of Land and Island herein and hereby Granted which are or shall be belonging and appertaining to severall other persons Freeholders and Inhabitants within the bounds of the same Tract of land and Island some more and some less according to their severall seperate and particular Estate and Interest in trust to and for the sole and only proper use benefit and behoof of each particular Freeholder and Inhabitant particularly and respectively and of each of their particular and respective heirs and assigns for ever in as full and ample manner as if their severall Names and their severall and respective Freeholds and Inheritances were particularly and severally Described and Exprest in these presents *To Bee Holden* of us our heirs and successors in free and common soccage as of our Manor of East Greenwich in the County of Kent within the Realm of Great Brittain Yeilding rendring and paying therefore unto us our heirs and successors unto our and their Receiver Generall for the Province of New York for the time being at our Custom House in the City of New York Yearly and every Year for ever on the Feast Day of the Annunciation of the Blessed Virgin Mary commonly called Lady Day the annual rent of *Two Shillings* and Six pence for every hundred acres of the said Tract of Land and Island and so proportionably for a smaller quantity (that is to say) the sum of One Pound Nineteen shillings for the whole Tract of Land and Island in Lieu and Stead of all other Rents services Dues Duties and Demands whatsoever for the same Tract of Land Island and Premises so Granted as aforesaid, Provided always and these presents are upon this Condition that the same *Joseph Budd, John Hoight and Daniel Purdy*, and the other Freeholders and Inhabitants of the same Tract of Land and Island so Granted as aforesaid and their heirs and assigns some or One of them have or shall within the Term and Space of three Years next ensuing the Date hereof settle clear and make improvement of three acres of Land at least for every Fifty Acres of the said Tract of Land and Island and so proportionably for a larger or smaller Tract or parcell thereof; and in Default thereof the said *Joseph Budd, John Hoight and Daniel Purdy*, and the other Inhabitants and Freeholders of any part or parts of the said Tract of Land and Island or their heirs or assigns or any of them or any other person or persons by their or any of their privy consent or procurement shall set on fire and burn the Woods on the same Tract of Land and Island or any part thereof to clear the same that then and in either of these cases this our present Grant and every article and clause thereof shall become *Void*, cease and Determine any thing in these presents to the contrary thereof in any ways Notwithstanding; and wee do hereby *Will and Grant* that these our *Letters* be made



*Patent* and that they and the Record of them in our Secretary's office of our Province of New York, shall be good and Effectual in the Law Notwithstanding the not true and well reciting of the premises or of the bounds thereof or of any former or other Lettels Patent or Grant for the same made or granted to any other person or persons Body Corporate or Politick whatsoever by us or any of our Royall ancestors or predecessors any Law or other restraint uncertainty or imperfection whatsoever to the contrary hereof in any ways Notwithstanding. *In Testimony* whereof wee have caused the great seal of our Province of New York aforesaid to be affixed to these presents and the same to be Entered of Record in one of the Books of Patents in our said Secretary's office remaining *Witness* our said Trusty and well-beloved Colonel *Peter Schuyler* President of our Council for our Province of New York in Council at Fort George in New York the twenty-eight Day of July in the sixth year of our Reign Annoq Domini 1720.

JS. BOLIN, *Depty Secry.a*

The Budd or Rye neck patent was subsequently divided among the following proprietors, viz. James Gedney, 102 acres; Daniel Purdy, drummer of Rye, 40 acres; John Carpenter, a portion joining Mamaroneck river; Mr. William Bowness, of Rye, 2 acres; that portion called the Gusset to Joseph Ogden; a second of 30 acres to Joseph Lyon; Daniel Purdy, 3 acres; Monmouth Hart, 15 acres; James Wood, 5 acres; Archibald Tilford, 18 acres; The residue to John Budd.

25 March, 1745. Peter Jay leased of John Budd 250 acres, and obtained a release for the same the succeeding day.<sup>b</sup>

The name of John Roome occurs as lessee for the whole patent, of 1560 acres, the same year.

4 September, 1746. Peter Jay purchased four acres of meadow on Hen Island of Monmouth Hart.<sup>c</sup>

The partition deed between Sir James Jay, Peter Jay, John Jay and Frederick Jay, sons of Peter deceased, recites "that Peter Jay deceased devised all his real estate to his four sons, and conveyed in severalty to Peter Jay the Rye farm, as conveyed by John Budd to Peter Jay deceased by lease and release of 25th and 26th of March, 1745."<sup>d</sup>

The Jays have since added to their original grant by other purchases from the families of the Harts, Gedneys, Guions, and Haines, &c.

Peter Jay by will bearing date, 1st September, 1797, devised all his real estate to his brother John Jay, who thereupon became seized of the whole premises in severalty. The Hon. John Jay by a deed, dated 16th

<sup>a</sup> Albany Book of Patents, Lib. viii, p. 375 and 387, 461.

<sup>b</sup> County Rec. Lib. R, 132, 133, 128.

<sup>c</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. R, 128.

<sup>d</sup> Extract from deduction of title, in possession of John C. Jay, Esq.

September, 1822, conveyed them in fee to the late Peter Augustus, Esq., father of the present proprietor, making the fourth generation that has occupied this spot.

The Guions are also owners of a large portion of the Budd or Rye neck patent.

The village of Rye is pleasantly situated upon the New York and Boston turnpike, one mile and a half north of Long Island Sound. The Mockquams or Blind Brook, a perennial stream, flows through the place, and adds much to the beauty of the surrounding scenery. It derives its source from the romantic hills north of the village. The principal spring is located on the lands of the late Edwin Keeler. In its progress south, this stream, fed by numerous tributaries, affords excellent mill seats.<sup>a</sup>

The first settlement in the town was made near the ford, at the southern end of Manussing Island, in 1660; while other habitations, which were subsequently erected on the bank, overlooking the beach, and on or near "Burying Hill," formed a kind of suburb to the island village. To the latter place the first proprietors gave the name of Hastings, after the famous seaport of that name in Sussex, England. Part of the main land received this appellation, together with the island. 'The bounds of Hastings' extended, as we have seen, about as far north, on Peningoe Neck, as the present village of Port Chester. But some time elapsed before any improvements were attempted in this direction. For two or three years, certainly, the planters confined themselves to their insular home.

The three purchasers of the island—Disbrow, Coe and Studwell—were soon joined by other adventurers, if, indeed, they were not accompanied by them at the outset. The following are the names of all the planters of whom we have any record, as belonging to the island settlement :—

---

<sup>a</sup> In the town records occurs the following entry :—"March 3d, 1696. Samuel Lane and Joseph Lyon are, or either of them, permitted to build a *fulling or grist mill upon Blind Brook, above the town*, provided they choose their location in three weeks, and build the *fulling mill* in three years. This mill is supposed to have occupied the site of the present grist and saw mill of Mr. James E. Beers, so that a mill has stood upon this stream for one hundred and forty years at least. The ancient *Budd mill*, the first building erected on the river land, was located on the west side of Blind Brook, south of the present stone bridge at the entrance of the village. The following extracts relate to the erection of other mills on the Mamaroneck and Byram rivers: In 1705, the town granted unto Samuel Hunt, of Rye, the stream of Mamaroneck river at the falls of the said river, off Humphery Underhills, to erect and build a grist mill or mills upon the said stream; and the said Samuel Hunt is to grind the town's corn for the fourteenth part.' In 1712, the town 'granted unto Richard Ogdin the privilege of the stream in Byram river, between the *lower going over* and the country road to erect and build a mill or mills, &c.

|                  |                      |                   |
|------------------|----------------------|-------------------|
| PETER DISBROW,   | RICHARD VOWLES,      | THOMAS APPLEBE,   |
| JOHN COE,        | SAMUEL ALLING,       | PHILIP GALPIN,    |
| THOMAS STUDWELL, | ROBERT HUDSON,       | GEORGE CLERE,     |
| JOHN BUDD,       | JOHN BRONDISH,       | JOHN JACKSON,     |
| WILLIAM ODELL,   | FREDERICK HARMINSON, | WALTER LANCASTER, |

JAYFREY LOKWOOD and ——— MOSIER.

“Making seventeen in all.”<sup>a</sup>

From the island village the early settlers issued their declaration of allegiance to their sovereign Lord, King Charles, the Second, dated—

“HASTINGS, July 26, 1662.

“Know all men whom this may concern that [we the] inhabitants of Minnusing Island whose n[ames are here] vnder writtne, do declare vnto all the true [th] we came not hither to live without government as pr[etended] and therefore doe proclayme Charles the Second ovr lawful lord and king: and doe voluntarily submit our selves and all ovr lands that we have bought of the English and Indians, under his gracious protection: and doe expect according to his gracious declaration; unto all his subjects which we are and desire to be subject to his holson laws that are jvst and Righteous according to God and our capableness to receive, where unto we doe subscribe.

Which aid yee.

JAYFREY LOKWOOD,

PETER DISBROW,

JOHN COE,

The mark of MOSIER,

The mark of THOMAS STUDWELL,

The mark of SAMUEL ALLING,

The mark of WILLIAM ODELLE,

The mark of ROBERT HUTSONE,

JOHN BRONDISH,

The mark of FEEDERICK HARMINSONE,

The mark of THOMAS APPLEBE.<sup>b</sup>

To this declaration is appended the following compact and orders, (showing the bounds of the future *Township of Hastings*.)

“We do agree that for our land bought on the mayn land, called in the Indian Poningoe, and in English the Biaram land, lying between the aforesaid Biaram river and the Blind Brook, bounded east and west with these two rivers, and on the north with Westchester path, and on the south with the sea, for a plantation, and the name of the town to be called Hastings.

And now, lastly, we have jointly agreed that he that will subscribe to these or-

<sup>a</sup> Baird's Hist. of Rye, p. 21.

<sup>b</sup> The original of this interesting document is unfortunately lost. The author of this work made a careful tracing, from the first volume of the town records of Rye, which has since disappeared. A lithographed *fac-simile* copy of this declaration will be found in Baird's History of Rye, pp. 22, 23.

ders, here is land for him, and he that doth refuse to subscribe hereunto, we have no land for him." Hastings, July 26, 1622. The planters hands to these orders,

BENJAMIN WAYPEN,

ROBERT HUTSON,

JOHN MAY,

JOHN BRONDISH,

SAMUEL ALLIN,

FREDERICK HARMINSON.

THOMAS APPLEBE.<sup>a</sup>

Aug. 11, 1662. These orders made by the purchasers of the land with our names.

PETER DISBROW,

JOHN COE,

THOMAS STUDWELL.

WILLIAM ODELL.<sup>b</sup>

Under the royal charter obtained by the celebrated John Winthrop, of King Charles, 2d May, 30th, 1662, Hastings was included in the limits of the colony of Connecticut, and its inhabitants were required therefore to send deputies to the next meeting of the General Court, to be held at Hartford; a meeting was called, and Richard Vowles was chosen by the inhabitants of Hastings 'to go to Fairfield, and there be qualified as constable for the plantation; shortly after, the settlers addressed the following letter to the General Court:'

FROM HASTING, the 1st mth. 26 : 1663.

MUCH HONORED SIRS:—Wee, the inhabitation of the towne of Hasting, whose names are heer underwritne: being seted upon a small tract of land lying betwixt Greenwich and Westchester: which land wee have bought with our mony: the which: wee understand doth lye within your patent: and where as you have allredy required our subjection: as his maiesties subjects, which we did willingly and redily embrace and according to your desiouer: we sent a man to Fairfield who have there taken the oathe of a Constable: we have now made choyse of our nayghbar John Bud for a deputi, and sent him up to your Corte to act for us, as hee shall see good: it is our desiouer: to have [some] settled way of Government amongst us: and therefore we do crave so much favor at the hands of the honorable Cort: that whether they do make us a constable oraney other offesere that they would give him povr to grant a warrant in case of need, because we be som what at remote from other places: thus leaving it to your wise and judicious consideration, we remayn yours to command:

PETER DISBROW,

WILLIAM ODELL,

RICHARD FFOWLS,

JOHN BRONDIG,

GEORGE CLERE,

JOHN JAGSON,

PHILIP GALPINE,

THOMAS STUDWELL, his mark,

JOHN COE,

WALTER LANCASTER his mark.<sup>d</sup>

This is ouer desier  
In the name of the  
Rest.

<sup>a</sup> Rye Rec. Lib. A, lost since 1848.

<sup>b</sup> Ditto.

<sup>c</sup> Baird's, Hist. of Rye.

<sup>d</sup> Hartford Rec. vol. I, No. 66, on towns and lands. See Baird's Hist. of Rye, p. 25.



"The modest request of the men of Hastings was granted after some delay. At the session of the General Court in Hartford, on the eighth of October, 1663."

'Lt. John Budd' makes his appearance, and 'is appoynted Commissioner for the town of Hastings, and is invested with Magistraticall power within the limits of that town' Moreover, 'Rich. Vowles is appoynted Constable for the Town of Hastings, and Mr. Bud is to give him oath.'<sup>a</sup>

On the twenty-eight of April, 1663, the four purchasers, Disbrow, Coe, Studwell and Budd, by a deed of sale conveyed the island, together with the land on the main, to the following planters: Samuel Allen, Richard Fowles, Philip Galpin, Thomas Applebe, William Odell, John Brondig, and John Coe. According to the terms of this transfer, the planters were to pay forty shillings a lot, in cattle or corn, between the above date and the month of January ensuing.<sup>b</sup>

The merging of the two villages of Hastings and Rye into one plantation was ordered by an act of the General Court of Assembly, holden at Hartford, May 11th, 1665: "That the villages of Hastings and Rye shall be for the future conjoined and made one plantation, and that it shall be called by the appellation of Rye; and Mr. Gold, Mr. Lawes and John Banks are appointed to go and settle the differences between the inhabitants of Hastings and Rye, and also see the line between Stamford and Greenwich run."<sup>c</sup>

At the following session of the General Court "Mr. Lowes and Lt. Richard Olmstead are desired and appointed to view the lands apperteineing to Hastings and Rye to see what there is that may be suitable for a plantation and to make returne to the Court the next session."<sup>d</sup>

"Within the next five or six years, the village on Manussing Island ceased to be. Most of the planters who had remained there till now, came over and united with their new associates in building upon the present site of the village."<sup>e</sup>

"A. D. 1666, John Budd, Sen., of Rye, for and in consideration of thirty-seven pounds, ten shillings, sells his lands, divided by agreement of the men of Hastings now called Rye, to George Kniffer of Stratford; the house being situated in the town formerly called Hastings.

In presence of us, FRANCIS BROWN  
and DANIEL SIMKINS."<sup>f</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Public Records, etc., 1678-1689, p. 5.

<sup>b</sup> Rye Records, vol. A., lost since 1848.

<sup>c</sup> Hartford Records, vol. ii., 208.

<sup>d</sup> Public Records of the Colony of Connecticut, 1665-1678. Edited by J. Hammond Trumbull, p. 15.

<sup>e</sup> Baird's Hist. of Rye, p. 30. Traces of several dwellings have been found on the Southern end of the island where they appear to have formed a cluster, a few rods apart. The summer house on the late Mr. Wm. P. Van Rensselaer's grounds, indicates about the spot where this little village stood.—Baird's Hist. of Rye. See note, p. 20.

<sup>f</sup> Probate Rec. of Fairfield Co., from 1665 to 1675.

"In 1668, John Coe sold to Stephen Sherwood his 'house and housing and home lot, upon the north end of Manussing Island. The Coes, Sherwoods and Vowles were the principal owners in 1707, when Jonathan Vowles conveyed his share of lands in this locality to his son-in-law, Roger Park.' 'As late as the year 1720, the island had a population sufficiently large to claim the right to erect a pound.' 'About the middle of the last century, the families of Fowler, Carpenter, Dusenberry and Haviland appear as the owners.' The island is now owned by Mrs. William P. Van Rensselaer, Charles T. Cromwell, Esq., and John Erving, Esq.

In the main street of the village of Rye there formerly stood an ancient stone tavern, known as Van Sicklen's. This building had been erected in the early days of the settlement, when it served the double purpose of a residence and a fortification. It was built of rough stone and clay; its walls were thirty inches in thickness, and one story high, with an old fashioned pitched roof. The dimensions being forty feet in width, and twenty-four in depth. It faced the south, with one of its gable ends fronting on the Turnpike road. In the upper portion of the westerly end of the wall there was an embrasure or port-hole, which, from having always been there had given the house the name of "The Old Stone Fort." The following order is presumed to relate to this edifice; which was torn down in May, 1868:

"March 5th, 1676, at a town meeting, Thomas Lyon and Thomas Brown are appointed to choose a house or a place to be fortified for the safety of the town. Also the young men who come into the fortification and remain during the troubles<sup>a</sup> are to have an equal proportion of the undivided lands, provided they be such as the town approve."<sup>b</sup>

Upon the 13th of July, 1681, "the town authorized John Ogden and George Kniffen to purchase a barrel of powder and three hundred weight of lead of Mr. Budd of Fairfield, or wherever it can be obtained the cheapest. These are to be kept for the use of the town."

At this early period, the Indians were very numerous, and the surrounding country was infested with wolves. On the 15th of December, 1689, a bounty of fifteen shillings was ordered to be raised by a town rate, for the killing of wolves.

<sup>a</sup> King Philip's war with New England. On the 13th of March, 1676, (eight days after the date of the above order,) the entire town of Groton, Conn., consisting of forty houses, was burned by the Indians. Mr. Baird thinks that for a time the old stone fort or tavern was the homestead of Peter Disbrow. "Mr. Isaac Denham, son of the first minister of Rye, lived here afterwards. The piece of ground upon which the house stood is perhaps the only one of the original 'town lots'; the size and shape of which can be distinctly traced. It measured two acres and a half when bought in 1668 by the Methodist Episcopal congregation."—Baird's Rye, p. 34.

<sup>b</sup> Town Rec. vol. i, p. 73.

By an act of Assembly of the Province of New York, passed in 1692, Rye was erected into a market town, and was entitled to the extraordinary privilege of holding and keeping a yearly fair, on the second Tuesday in October, to end on the Friday next, following, being in all four days, "for selling of all country produce and other effects whatsoever." It appears, however, that the inhabitants had not chosen to avail themselves of this great privilege until 1771, when they petitioned his Excellency, the Right Honorable John Ead, of Dunmore, Commander in Chief in and over the Province of New York, to "appoint Doctor EBENEZER HAVILAND, of said Rye, to be Governor, and to have full power, according to said Act of Assembly, to keep and hold a fair in said Rye, in the month of October next." This petition was signed by *fifty-seven* inhabitants, and was presented to Governor Dunmore in April, 1771. His Excellency graciously appointed Dr. Haviland to be Governor of such a fair, to be kept at Rye on the second Tuesday in October, yearly, and to end the Friday next following, being in all four days, and no longer.<sup>a</sup>

Courts of Special Sessions were also held in Rye during the Colonial dynasty.

"A great event for Rye," says Baird, "was the establishment of a *Ferry* in 1739, between this town and Oyster Bay, Long Island. The charter issued in that year for this purpose, sets forth that 'the principal freeholders and proprietors of the lands in the two patents called Budd's Neck and Penning's Neck, have made application for it.'<sup>b</sup> The inhabitants generally seem to have taken a deep interest in the enterprise. Messrs. John Budd, Hachaliah Brown and Jonathan Brown were at the head of it. The list of subscribers, towards the expense of obtaining the patent, embraces twenty-six names. Those who thus contributed were to 'enjoy a share of the privileges and emoluments of the ferry in proportion to the sums' subscribed."<sup>c</sup>

"This ferry continued in use till the latter part of the century. In 1786, Mr. Isaac Brown, of Rye, purchased the rights of the proprietors of Rye Ferry."<sup>d</sup>

Many handsome villas and country residences adorn the village of Rye. The Kingsland Place, now owned by Jasper E. Corning, Esq., is a beautiful specimen of the old English style. The gables are enriched with elaborately carved scroll work, and surmounted by finials. The

<sup>a</sup> See Baird's Hist. of Rye, p. 212.

<sup>b</sup> Baird's Hist. of Rye, p. 78.

<sup>c</sup> Ditto do do.

<sup>d</sup> Ditto do do.

riel windows present a light and airy effect. The whole structure is elegantly furnished, internally as well as externally. The residence of William H. Parsons is beautifully situated upon the margin of Blind brook. South of the former is the residence of the late Hachaliah Brown, whose family had, for five generations, occupied the estate. The Browns were descended from Thomas Brown, Esq., of Rye, County of Sussex, England, who emigrated to Concord, Mass., circ. 1632, from whence he removed to Cambridge, where he lived some time. His sons were Thomas, of Rye, who died 1694, and Hachaliah, of Rye."<sup>a</sup> who died about 1720. In 1756, Major Hachaliah, fourth son of Hachaliah Brown, of Rye, commanded the *Westchester Levies*, under General Lord Amherst in the French war, and was Justice of the Peace for many years.

Rye station, on the New Haven Railroad, is situated on Purchase street. The building is a light iron structure, containing telegraph office, passenger, and freight rooms. Distant twenty-four miles from New York; upwards of twenty-three trains running daily, and running time—fifty-one minutes.

The drives about Rye are proverbially beautiful. The Boston turnpike, or post-road, traverses the entire length of the town—a distance of six miles and a half, from Mamaroneck to Byram river. It is a wide avenue, lately graded and macadamized, and lined on either side, entire distance, by valuable country seats and stately mansions, with here and there a superb glimpse of the Sound and the Long Island shore.

The village contains, besides a post office, several stores and three churches. Among the private educational institutions may be mentioned a seminary for young ladies, and one for boys (Park Institute), while the facilities for public instruction are also excellent. For a number of years Mr. Samuel U. Berrian had charge of the well-known Chrestomathic Institute of Rye, and met with great success in his professional labors—both as a teacher and a disciplinarian.

North-east of the village, bordering on Purchase street, is the property of the late Josiah Purdy. The Purdy family were among the early settlers of Hartford and Fairfield, Connecticut. Francis Purdy,<sup>b</sup> the first of the family of whom we have any account, died in 1658, at Fairfield. His three sons—John, Joseph and Francis—came early to Rye; John in the year 1670, Joseph by 1677, and Francis by 1679. Their descendants are now quite numerous throughout the country.

<sup>a</sup> Baird's Hist. of Rye, p. 399.

<sup>b</sup> An inventory of the goods, chattels, &c., of Francis Purdy and his estate, 14 Oct., 1658 Prob. Rec. of Fairfield, 1648-1656, p. 39. Burke in his General Armory gives the coats of two families of the name of Purdy or Purdie: "Or, on a chev. az. betw. three mullets sa. pierced of the field. Crest, a peacock head erased gu.; another crest, a dexter head holding a roll of parchment, ppr. Motto, Fidelitas."



The first religious society of Rye was Congregational, at that time the established religion of the colony of Connecticut. By authority it had been enacted that "no person within the colony should embody themselves in church estate, without the consent of the General Court." The law also prohibited any ministry being attended by the inhabitants in any plantation district, and separate from that which was established in the place, except by the approbation of the General Court and the neighboring churches.

"One object of these laws was, doubtless, to prevent Baptists, Episcopalians and others from gaining a foothold."<sup>a</sup>

"As early as 1660," says the historian Trumbull, "Rye paid taxes for the support of religion, although no church was formed nor pastors ordained." "Greenwich and Rye," continues the same authority, "were but just come under the jurisdiction of Connecticut, and not in circumstances for the support of ministers; they had occasional preaching only for a considerable time."<sup>b</sup>

In October, 1669, the General Court are 'informed that the people of Rye are yet destitute of an orthodox minister.' It appears, too, that 'they do not take due care to procure such a one as might carry on the work of the Lord on the Sabbath.' This is not owing solely to the weakness of settlement. Rye now numbers some fifty families, and is considerably stronger than Greenwich, its neighbor.

In some of the new plantations, says Trumbull, thirty families supported a minister, and commonly there were not more than forty when they called and settled one.<sup>c</sup> What is the matter with the planters at Rye? They do not show an utter indifference to religion, but they are getting into loose and disorderly ways. 'John Coe and Marmaduke Smith,' persons who are 'represented to this Court as unsound and heterodox in their judgments, if not scandalous in their lines,' are undertaking to teach or to conduct religious services among them. Their labors, too, are acceptable, it would appear; for the people 'seem to rest satisfied without' a lawful pastor, 'in the approuement' of these teachers; who are thus 'put in a capacity more to prejudice than farther the edification of the people there.' The Court, therefore, 'upon these considerations, doe authorize and impower Mr. Nathan Gold, and any three of the Commissioners,' of Fairfield county, 'to require the afore-said persons, John Coe and Marmaduke Smith, or any others of that towne, to appeare before them, and if, upon examination, things doe

<sup>a</sup> Lambert's Hist. New Haven, p. 189.

<sup>b</sup> Trumbull's Hist. of Connecticut, p. 300.

<sup>c</sup> Trumbull's Hist. of Connecticut, vol. i, p. 287.

appeare to them as they are represented to this Court, they are desired to take effectuall course that the persons afoarsayd may have no opportunity affoorded them to sowe the seeds of error among the people there ; and aliso they are to informe the people of Rye that this Court are resolved, if the sayd people's prudent considerations do not moue them, to make such provisions of a suitable person, sownd and orthodox in his principles and apt to teach, (so approued by Mr. Bishop, Mr. Handford, Mr. Wakeman and Mr. Eliphalet Joanes.) the Court will, themselves, procure and settle a preaching minister amongst them, and take sufficient order that he may be mayntained by them, at their next session."<sup>a</sup>

Mr. Baird thinks it possible that the persons above mentioned, Coe and Smith, 'may have been of the Quaker persuasion ; and that for want of a settled pastor, the inhabitants may have listened with favor to their teachings.'

"Rye and Westchester," says Humphreys, "as soon as they had fixed the civil magistracy, they did establish a public worship of God ; and suitable to this prudent, as well as religious procedure, the colony throve apace, and hath now far outstripped all the others. But when the Independents found themselves fixed in power, they began to exact a rigid conformity to their manner of worship. Men of all persuasions, but their own, were styled opprobriously *sectaries* ; and though they had declared at first for moderation and a general liberty of conscience, they, notwithstanding, banished and drove out of the country the Quakers, the Antinomean and Familistical parties. However, there are many circumstances which alleviate and soften some particulars, which might seem rigorous in their administration. New England was, at the beginning, harrassed with various sectaries ; who, under the umbrage of liberty of conscience, took a great licentiousness in all religious and civil matters."<sup>b</sup> Among these he mentions the Antinomeans, Familist, Conformitants or Formalists, Seekers, Arians, Arminians, Quakers ; and the most impudent of all, the Gortonists—so named from their vile ring-leader, one Gorton—who set up to live in a more brutal manner than then the wild Indian savages, &c." "After these sectaries had rose and fallen, another sort of people appeared, professing themselves members of the Church of England. These, too, were looked upon as sectaries, with what degree of modesty or truth the reader must judge. It is true, indeed, at the settling of the country, as hath been before observed, Independents were the first planters, who removed from England, from what they thought persecution ; but since that time great numbers of

<sup>a</sup> Public Rec. of Conn., vol. ii, pp. 120, 121. Baird's Hist. of Rye, p. 273.

<sup>b</sup> Humphrey's Hist. of the Propagation Society, &c., p. 21.

people, members of the Church of England, have at different times settled there who thought themselves surely entitled, by the very New England Charter, to a liberty of conscience, in the worshipping of God after their own way. Yet the Independents (it seems) were not of this sentiment, but acted as an establishment. The members of the Church of England met with obstructions in setting up that form of worship; and therefore a great number of the inhabitants of Boston, got an humble petition to be laid before His Majesty, King Charles the Second, by Dr. Compton, the Bishop of London—praying that they might be allowed to build a church at Boston, and to perform divine worship according to the Church of England. This petition was granted, a church was soon after built, and frequented by a numerous congregation; upon this occasion, the members of the Church of England in many other towns in New England, declared their desire of the like advantage of worshipping God after that way; wrote very zealous letters to Bishop Compton for ministers, and now it appeared they were a very considerable body of people."<sup>a</sup>

The order of the General Court in October, 1669, appears to have produced but little effect in settling a minister at Rye; as it was followed by another "on the 13th of October, 1670, more stringent and definite. The matter of the religious destitution at Rye is referred to the County Court of Fairfield. The magistrates there are recommended 'to take an effectual course to settle an able and orthodox minister in the towne of Rye, and to order due and competent mayntenance for such minister in a proportionable way among all the inhabitants, with coercion of payment according to laws, upon complaynt and evidence against any that shall neglect, and the will affected of the sayd towne to a settlement of such a mercy among them, are appoynted to adres themselves to themselves to the sayd County Court at Fairfield to that end.'"<sup>b</sup>

This action on the part of the General Court appears to have produced the desired effect; for "at a town meeting held in Rye, November, 17th, 1670, the inhabitants made choice of Joseph Horton, Thomas Brown and John Brondig, who are to do their endeavour to procure a minister." It was also agreed for to allow "two pence in the pound for the maintenance of a minister amongst us; that is to say an *orthodox* minister."<sup>c</sup>

From the following document, however, it appears that the inhabitants had not yet succeeded in procuring a minister but were dependent on neighboring churches for occasional supplies:

<sup>a</sup> Humphrey's Hist. of the Propagation Society, &c., p. 22.

<sup>b</sup> Public Rec. of Conn., vol. ii, pp. 142, 143. Baird's Hist. of Rye, p. 274,

<sup>c</sup> Town Rec. of Rye, vol. A. (now lost.)

"May the 11th, 1671, at a Court of Assembly holden at Hartford, Captain Nathan Gold, Thomas Fitch, Mr. Holly, Lieut. Richard Olmstead, and Mr. John Burr, they, or three of them, are desired to repair to the said Rye, as soon as may be, and to endeavour a comfortable composition and issue of such differences as are among the people there, and to use their endeavours in procuring a minister, and comfortably settling of him in the plantation of Rye. Then the Court doth empower the aforesaid committee to agree with a suitable man for that work in that place, and to agree with him for maintenance to the value of £40 per annum, which the Treasurer, by warrant to the Consable of said Rye, shall order for the gathering and payment thereof with the county rates."<sup>a</sup>

"On the 14th of May, 1674, the General Court desires Mr. Eliphalet Joanes" (one of the ministers of Fairfield) "to take the paynes to dispence the word of God to the people of Rye once a fortnight on the Lord's Day, till the Court, October next, and then this Court will take further order concerning them and for Mr. Joanes' satisfaction."<sup>b</sup>

This gentleman was the first who is known to have officiated for any length of time in the ministry of the Gospel at Rye. And it so happens that we are able to glean further information concerning him than about any of his immediate successors. Eliphalet Jones was the son of the Rev. John Jones, a man of some note in the early history of the New England churches. He came to this country from England, in 1635, a clergyman of the Established Church; and was first settled at Concord, Massachusetts, and afterwards at Fairfield, Connecticut, where he became pastor of the church organized there by his efforts. Eliphalet was born at Concord in 1641. He received his education under the care of the learned and pious Peter Bulkley, who had been his father's colleague at Concord, and studied at Harvard College, but did not graduate. In 1669, we find him admitted to the privileges of a freeman of Connecticut.<sup>c</sup> He was at Greenwich in 1674, when the above order was given; not however as the settled pastor of that town, but as a missionary or evangelist. It would seem that he continued in this neighborhood for about three years, preaching at Rye, probably, from time to time, as occasion appeared.<sup>d</sup> In 1677, Mr. Jones accepted a call to Huntington, Long Island, where he remained and labored for more than fifty years; dying in 1731, at the good old age of ninety. He was never married. He is said to have been 'a man of great purity and simplicity of life and manners, and a faithful and successful preacher.'<sup>e</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Hartford Col. Rec. vol. iii., p. 12.

<sup>b</sup> Public Rec. of Conn., vol. ii. p. 232, Bairds Hist. of Rye, p. 276.

<sup>c</sup> Public Rec. of Conn., vol. ii. p. 106.

<sup>d</sup> Mr. Savage (*Gen. Hist. of the First Settlers of N. E.*) speaks of him as 'having preached at Rye some years,' (vol. ii. p. 561). I find no confirmation of this statement.

<sup>e</sup> Thompson's *History of Long Island*, vol. i. p. 481, Baird's Hist. of Rye, p. 276.



The General Court took further order on the 1st of October 1674, for the securing of a regular pastor, empowering Captain John Allyn, Mr. James Bishop, Mayor Robert Treat, with Mr. Gold, "to endeavour also the obliging and settling of a minister at Rye."<sup>a</sup>

This lead to the call of the Rev. Peter Prudden,<sup>b</sup> as the General Court strongly endorsed him:—"At a court, holden at Hartford, May 17th, 1675, Major Nathan Gold, Major Robert Treat, and Mr. John Burr, were nominated and appointed a committee to treat with the inhabitants of Rye and those concerned in lands there, and labour to accommodate matters, as that there may be suitable encouragement for Mr. Prudden to settle in the ministry, and such other suitable inhabitants with them as may promote the settlement of said town of Rye and the ministry therein; and if they shall find any averseness or difficulty with the inhabitants or proprietors, in so just and necessary publique good of the towne, they are empowered to do what they see meet for the end aforesaid, and make report to the court in October next, for approbation; and for the encouragement of the ministry at Rye, this Court, for this year, grants them a penny of the pound upon all the ratable estate of their town, to be pay'd out of their county rate, and shall be ready as need requires to continue such necessary encouragement as they shall judge suitable."<sup>c</sup>

Upon the 27th May, 1675, the town orders that the home lot of Peter Disbrow, adjoining Timothy Knapp, be taken by the town in exchange for the land by the Blind brook, south of Jacob Bridge's. The above lot to be for Mr. Peter Prudden for a parsonage lot; if not thus disposed of, this agreement to be void.

February 26, 1676. The town releases Peter Disbrow's lot, and cancels the above agreement.

February 26th, 1677. John Brundige and John Purdy are empowered to sell the frame intended for a parsonage house.

The same year the Rev. Thomas Denham appears to have been minister here; for, June 15, a house lot is ordered for Mr. Thomas Denham, and on November the 22d, we find the same individual admitted an inhabitant of the town of Rye. June 21, 1678, Mr. Thomas Denham is to have all the grass on the highway at the old town, besides an equal share with the proprietors of Poningoe Neck.

March 5th, 1679. Fifty poles of land lying before his door, toward the

<sup>a</sup> Hartford Col. Rec. vol. iii. p. 53.

<sup>b</sup> Ditto vol. iii. p. 59.

<sup>c</sup> It is Mr. Baird's impression that his name should be John, not Peter. That the Rev. John was pastor of the church in Jamaica, L. I., in 1670 to 74, he was called in 1681 to Bedford. It is probably the same person who was invited to the church in Bedford.

brook, are granted to Mr. Thomas Denham, and the ensuing year he is to have all the grass in the highway at the first of the old town lots ; also £30 allowed for his maintenance. The General Court of Connecticut, October 14th, 1680, ordered that thirty pounds per annum agreed by Rye to be paid to the minister, Mr. Denham, shall be gathered by the constable with the county rate, in the same specie and prices as the county rate, and by him to be paid to the said minister.<sup>a</sup> A.D. 1682, the town confirms the sum of £30 as salary to Mr. Denham, and orders the same to be paid in provisions.

The historian, Trumbull, informs us that about the year 1688 the Rev. John Bowers removed from Derby and settled at Rye.

April 22d, 1690, Captain Horton, Joseph Theall, and John Brondig are chosen by the town to procure a *minister*, and, if possible, a school-master.

27th June, 1693. Hachaliah Brown, George Lane and Timothy Knapp were added to the above committee to procure a *minister* as soon as possible.

February 26th, 1694, it is ordered that the townsman make a rate to defray the expense of repairing the *parsonage house*. 22d July, 1697, Captain Theal, Hachaliah Brown, George Lane and Thomas Merritt are chosen by a vote for the procuring of a *minister* for the town of Rye.

Colonel Caleb Heathcote, writing to the secretary of the Propagation Society in 1705, observes, "that there is no parish in the Government but what is able to pay twice as much as they do. For *Rye parish*, which is not by one-half so large as the least parish established by law in the Government here, since my living here, maintained two dissenting ministers, viz : one at *Rye* and *Mamaroneck*, and one at *Bedford* ; and gave the former £50, and the latter £40 a year."<sup>b</sup>

#### A LIST OF MINISTERS OF THE CONGREGATIONAL OR PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH, RYE.

| INST. OR CALL. | MINISTERS.             |
|----------------|------------------------|
| 1675,          | REV. PETER PRUDDEN,    |
| 1677,          | REV. THOMAS DENHAM,    |
| circ. 1684,    | REV. JOHN WOODBRIDGE,  |
| 1697,          | REV. NATHANIEL BOWERS. |

#### THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH.

On the 15th of May, 1729, they secured a building spot. The deed for which is entered upon the town records. This plot of ground was

<sup>a</sup> Hart. Col. Rec. vol. III, 59.

<sup>b</sup> See Scarsdale, for Heathcote's letter.

situated on Pulpit Plain, as it was called, at the north-west corner of the post road and the road to the Cedars, subsequently opened. Here the church was built, and here it stood until the Revolutionary war. Tradition states that it was a plain frame building, without belfry or spire but tolerably capacious.

The church at White Plains, which belonged to the same society, was built two or three years earlier.

The village of Rye now had two separate places of worship. The congregations were about equal in size, numbering about sixty families in each. As there was no bell in either church, the roll of the drum announced the hour of service probably to both.

The Rev. Edmund Ward who had ministered to them for over two years, left them in 1729; and they remained without any stated minister for nearly thirteen years.

On the 30th of December, 1742, a council of the Eastern Association of Fairfield County, Connecticut, met at Rye and ordained Mr. John Smith as minister of that place. He seems to have been a man of rare excellence, able, earnest, consistent and godly. He was a native of Newport, Pagnell Bucks, England; and born May 5th, 1702. His father settled in the city of New York. The celebrated Jonathan Edwards, when preaching in New York, made Mr. Smith's house his home. John Smith and Edwards were about of an age, Smith a little the oldest; and there sprang up between them a warm friendship, which lasted through life.

A few weeks after his settlement, Mr. Smith secured a house for his family in the village of Rye. On the 20th of February, 1743, he purchased of John Abrahamson a house and six acres of land for £180, afterwards he bought another house with eight acres and a quarter of land situated in the northern part of the village and in the neighborhood of his church. Some years after Mr. Smith removed his residence from Rye to White Plains, but continued to preach here alternate Sabbaths, riding to and fro on horseback. The house in which he lived, at White Plains, is still pointed out near the corner of the cross road leading to the Purchase. In his later years he owned a farm of about one hundred acres; in 1763 he added the church at Sing Sing to his charge, where he occasionally preached for the next five years, but he was growing old and not so active as he had been. Mr. Ichabod Lewis, a cousin of the Rev. Isaac Lewis of Greenwich, was therefore invited by the Presbytery to help him; and on the 11th of October, 1769, he was ordained at White Plains. Mr. Smith continued to do what he could up to the time of his death, which took place at White Plains February 26th, 1771. His

remains lie in the church yard, and on the tomb it says: "First ordained minister of the Presbyterian persuasion in Rye and the White Plains;" adding, that "worn out with various labors he fell asleep in Jesus."

In the Revolutionary war, which began shortly after the death of Mr. Smith, the Presbyterian church of Rye was destroyed by fire. The congregation, owing to the times, was very much scattered.

At the close of the Revolution, the Presbyterians of Rye were very few and feeble.

The efforts to resuscitate the congregation was due to the Rev. Dr. Lewis of Greenwich. The first step towards rebuilding the church was taken in 1792. On the 22d of November in that year, Jesse Park and Phœbe his wife, of the town of Harrison, conveyed to Joseph Theale, Ezekiel Halsted, Junior, and John Meritt, of Rye, as trustees of the Presbyterian society, a tract of land comprising half an acre. The church was built in the following spring. It was dedicated to the worship of God in 1793 by the Rev. Isaac Lewis, D.D., who preached here for some months every Sunday after service in his own church at Greenwich; his son, the Rev. Isaac Lewis, succeeded him for a short time. But after this they remained a long while without a stated minister, from 1793 to 1812.

It had been incorporated on the 5th of June, 1795, under the name of the Presbyterian church of Rye.

The old church, built in 1793, was a very plain and unpretending structure. There were two doors on the front. The interior remained unfinished for many years. The walls were not plastered; and instead of pews there were planks, the ends of which rested upon logs for seats. In or about 1811 the Methodists obtained possession of the church and occupied it for a period of sixteen years, from 1812 to 1828.

It was by the efforts of Mr. Ebenezer Clark, a merchant of New York who came to Rye in 1821, that the building was restored to its original use; he claimed the building, on behalf of the few Presbyterians of the place. This claim was not admitted without some discussion. The Methodist congregation had worshipped there unmolested for many years, and they conceived that so long a possession gave them a right to the property. Mr. Clark showed clearly that the land had been given for a Presbyterian church, and that a society of that denomination had been incorporated under the law of the State, and that the building had been appropriated from the first to their use.

A service was held by the Presbyterian congregation on the 7th of Dec., 1828, in the district school house of Rye, preparatory to the resumption of public worship in the church. Soon after the occupation of the







PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH, RYE.

building, the Rev. Noah C. Saxton began his ministry here as stated supply, and continued until May, 1829; meanwhile, on the 4th of March—the formal organization of a church took place by order of the Presbytery of New York.

In 1869, the congregation bought land adjoining the church lot, with a view to the erection of a new church, Sunday-school building, and parsonage. Upon this tract, which comprises 3 acres, the Sunday-school building has been erected at the sole expense of Wm. Matthews, Esq.

The corner stone of the new church was laid Nov. 29, 1870, Mr. R. M. Upjohn, Architect. The church is built of the native stone, with dressings of red and yellow stone. The style of architecture adopted for the building, is the 13th century gothic. Connected with the church, and arranged for convenience of both buildings, and also for external architectural effect, Mr. Wm. Matthews has erected a memorial chapel—to his infant daughter Bessie—which he gives to the church to be used for Sunday-school and other parochial purposes. It is upwards of fifty feet square. The main room will accommodate two hundred persons. In connection with this, there is a Bible and infant class room, and a room for the Sunday-school library.

The tower and spire of the church, stand at the west end of the south aisle. The tower is 25 feet square. The tower and spire together are 150 feet high, and entirely built of stone.<sup>a</sup>

| CALL. | LIST OF PASTORS.             | REMOVAL. |
|-------|------------------------------|----------|
| 1720, | REV. STEPHEN BUCKINGHAM,     | 1722.    |
| 1723, | REV. JOHN WALTON,            | 1723.    |
| 1728, | REV. EDMUND WARD,            | 1729.    |
| 1742, | REV. JOHN SMITH,             | 1769.    |
| 1769, | REV. ICHABOD LEWIS,          |          |
| 1829, | REV. WILLIAMS H. WHITEMORE,  | 1832.    |
| 1832, | REV. DAVID REMINGTON,        | 1834.    |
| 1834, | REV. THOS. PAYNE,            |          |
| 1836, | REV. JAS. R. DAVENPORT,      |          |
| 1838, | REV. EDWARD D. BRYAN,        | 1860.    |
| 1861, | REV. CHARLES W. BAIRD, D.D., | present. |

The Presbytery of Rye appear to have maintained their existence as a congregation for a number of years, without a stated ministry or house of worship. They were supplied with occasional preaching by the neighboring ministers of Connecticut.

Christ's church, Rye, is agreeably situated upon rising ground, overlooking the village and vale of Blind brook.

<sup>a</sup> Baird's History of Rye.

The old building was a plain edifice of wood, surmounted with an embattled tower, and a small vestry-room attached to the rear.

Its interior consisted of a nave, two aisles, gallery and chancel. On the north side of the latter there was a neat monumental tablet, erected

IN MEMORY OF  
WILLIAM THOMPSON,

Rector

of Christs church at Rye

A native of Enniskillen,

Ireland.

Ordained April, 1820.

Appointed to the charge of this Parish,

September, 1823,

Died August 26, 1830.

"Mark the perfect man, and behold the upright,  
for the end of that man is peace."—Psalm xxxvii: 27.

Erected by his affectionate Widow.



Christ's Church, Rye, Erected in 1783.

His remains are interred in the village cemetery. Beneath the floor of the church lie, pillowed in the darkness of the grave, several of the early rectors.

This building was erected at a cost of \$5,500, in the year 1783, upon the site of the old stone edifice called *Grace church*.

It was designed at first to have erected a steeple in place of the pres-



ent tower, as appears by an act of the vestry, dated September 17, 1791.

"Wherein it was ordered to remove the work projected for a steeple on the top of the roof, at the west end."



Belonging to this church is a silver paten and chalice presented by her Majesty, Queen Anne, A.D. 1706.

These articles have been used in the administration of the holy sacrament nearly one century and a half. The royal donation originally consisted (together with the above), of a large Church Bible, Common Prayer Book, Book of Homilies, cloth for the pulpit, and a communion table.

Upon two copper alms bowls are inscribed, "Presented to Christ church at Rye, by James Meadows, 1769."

Besides a fine toned bell, the church contains a neat organ.

The Queen's paten and chalice. The first notice of this parish occurs in two acts passed by the Assembly of New York, in 1693 and 1697.

The first entitled "An Act for settling a ministry and raising a maintenance for them in the city of New York, and counties of Richmond, *Westchester* and Queens."

The second ordered, "That there shall be called, inducted and established a good sufficient Protestant minister to officiate and have the cure of souls within one year next ensuing, and after the publication hereof. In the county of *Westchester*, two; one to have the cure of souls within *Westchester*, &c.; the other to have the cure of Rye, Mamaroneck and Bedford."<sup>a</sup>

Pursuant to these acts of Assembly a town meeting was held, February 28, 1695, by virtue of a warrant granted by Justice Theal, when George Lane and John Brondig were elected churchwardens; and Jonathan Hart, Joseph Horton, Joseph Purdy, Timothy Knapp, Hachaliah Brown, Thomas Merritt, Deliverance Brown and Isaac Denham, vestrymen; the two last, being chosen for Bedford.

The whole number of the appropriated precincts, belonging to the parish of Rye in 1725, were as follows; Bedford, Scarsdale, Mamaroneck and North Castle, to which were subsequently added White Plains and Harrison.

<sup>a</sup> Acts of Assembly; Pro. of N. Y. 1691 to 1725, p. 23.

For collecting the minister's maintenance, writs of mandamus were issued to the justices and vestries, empowering them to make a rate for raising the rector's tax.

The following are specimens of the original taxation rolls of this benefice, in 1725.

Bedford, £16 2 0. Mamaroneck, £18 0 0. Scarsdale, £5 3 0. North Castle, £2 9 0. Total with Rye, £67 18 0.

The first inducted rector of the parish was the Rev. Thomas Pritchard. In a summary account of the state of the Church in the Province of New York, as it was laid before the clergy, convened October 5th, 1704, at New York, &c., it was stated, that "at Rye, of which the Rev. Thomas Pritchard is rector, there is no church, but the minister preaches in the town house; the parish is divided into three districts, viz. Rye, Bedford and Mamaroneck.

"There is a salary of £50 per annum, established by act of Assembly; the number of communicants are considerably increased, since the first celebration of the sacraments, &c."<sup>a</sup>

In a letter addressed to the Propagation Society, dated Rye, November 1st, 1704, Mr. Pritchard proposes to that body the Rev. Mr. Stewart, then missionary at *Bedford*, as a most suitable person to fill the vacant parish of Hempstead, Long Island.

The Rev. Thomas Pritchard married Anna Stuyvesant, daughter of Nicholas William, and grand-daughter of the illustrious Peter Stuyvesant.<sup>b</sup> Mr. Pritchard appears to have been inducted in 1702. He died A. D. 1706.

His successor was the Rev. George Muirson. Of this gentlemen the Rev. Mr. Evans thus writes in a letter to the Bishop of London, under the date of October 17th, 1704. "This comes by the hands of the ingenious Mr. George Muirson to receive holy orders from your Lordship, by the approbation of his Excellency my Lord Cornbury. I find that he is very well beloved and esteemed by all sorts of people, a man of a very sober and blameless conversation. He seems to be indued with great humility of mind, and has the character of being very prudent in his conduct. I give him this recommendation, not to gratify himself, nor any body else—but because I sincerely believe he may be very instrumental of doing much good in the Church."<sup>c</sup>

Mr. Muirson having been ordained, was appointed to the mission of Rye. In his first report to the Society he states "that he had a very

<sup>a</sup> Church Rec. Vol. i. No. 16. Francis L. Hawks, D. D., editor,

<sup>b</sup> Rep. of Propagation Soc.

<sup>c</sup> N. Y. Hist. Collections, New Series, vol. I. 455.

great congregation every Sunday, and that those were his hearers who never were in a Church of England congregation before. Though the people were of almost all persuasions, he had admitted into the Church, by baptism, eighty persons, young and old; hundreds, however, in the parish remain unbaptized.<sup>a</sup>

He further remarks to the Society, "I have lately been in the Government of Connecticut, where I observe some people well affected to the Church, for those that are near come to my parish on Sabbath days; so that I am assured, an itinerant missionary might do great service in that province. Some of their ministers have privately told me that had we a Bishop among us, they would conform and receive holy orders; from which as well as on all the continent, the necessity of a Bishop will plainly appear."<sup>b</sup>

"In these visits and in every effort for the good of the Church, Mr. Muirson was heartily supported by Colonel Caleb Heathcote, who also wrote to the society on the subject, confirming the account of the opposition which the missionary had encountered; and stating that the justices had forbidden him to preach, and even threatened to put him and all his hearers in jail.

Of his own parish, Mr. Muirson reports, "I have baptized about two hundred, young and old, but most adult persons; and am in hopes of initiating many more into the Church, after I have examined, taught and find them qualified. This is a large parish; the towns are far distant; the people were some Quakers, some Anabaptists, but chiefly Presbyterians and Independents; they were violently set against our Church, but now (blessed be God!) they comply heartily; for I have now about forty communicants, and had only six when I first administered that holy sacrament. I find that catechising on the week days in the remote towns, and frequent visiting is of great service; and I am sure that I have made twice more proselytes by proceeding after that method, than by public preaching."<sup>c</sup>

Mr. Muirson, besides his salary of £50 from the society, was entitled to £50 currency, as settled by Act of Assembly on Rye parish; but, as his people were poor and for the most part recent converts, he considerably forbore to press his legal claim—and during the first two years of his ministry, had only received about ten or twelve pounds currency—thus plainly showing he sought not theirs, but them.

The following account of the Indians, written in the year 1708, will

<sup>a</sup> Hawkins' Hist. Not. of Col. Church, vol. ii. MS. letters, No. 34.

<sup>b</sup> Hawkins' Hist. Not. of Col. Church, p. 277.

<sup>c</sup> Hawkins' Hist. Not. of Col. Church, p. 279.

be thought interesting : " As to the Indians, the natives of the country, they are a decaying people. We have not now in all the parish twenty families, whereas not many years ago there were several hundreds. I have frequently conversed with some of them, and been at their great meetings of 'pawawing,' as they call it. I have taken some pains to teach some of them, but to no purpose ; for they seem regardless of instruction. And when I have told them of the evil consequences of their hard drinking, &c., they replied that Englishmen do the same ; and that it is not so great a sin in an Indian as in an Englishman, because the Englishman's religion forbids it, but an Indian's does not. They further say that they will not be Christians, nor do they see the necessity for so being, because we do not live according to the precepts of our holy religion. In such ways do most of the Indians that I have conversed with, either here or elsewhere, express themselves. I am heartily sorry that we should give them such a bad example, and fill their mouths with such objections to our blessed religion."

He mentions in this letter " that they had completed the house of God at Rye, by the subscription of the inhabitants ; a stately structure indeed."

" Mr. Muirson, after a short but a most useful service in the ministry of the church, died in October, 1708, much lamented by his friends, and missed by his parishioners."<sup>a</sup>

The last will of George Muirson, clerk, bears date September, 1708. By his wife, Gloriana, daughter of the Hon. Colonel William Smith,<sup>b</sup> he left one son, George Muirson, M.D.,<sup>c</sup> of Setaukett, L. I., the father of Heathcote Muirson. The latter was a graduate of Yale College in 1776, and died from wounds received in the attack upon Lloyd's Neck, Long Island, July, 1781.

Mr. Muirson was succeeded in January, 1709, by the Rev. Christopher Bridges.

" Upon the 9th of January, 1710, at a meeting of the parishioners, at the parish church in Rye, the following churchwardens and vestrymen were elected for the year ensuing :

*Church-wardens.*

CAPT. JOSEPH THEALE,

CAPT. JONATHAN HART,

CORNELIUS SEELY.

<sup>a</sup> Hist. Not. of the Ch. of England in the N. A. Colonist, 281.

<sup>b</sup> The Hon. William Smith was Chief Justice and President of the Council of the Province of New York.

<sup>c</sup> Anna, the eldest daughter of Dr. George Muirson, married Cyrus Punderson, D.D. Their descendants are still residing upon Long Island. Mary, the youngest, married William Wickham Wills.



*Vestrymen.*

ANDREW COE,  
JOHN MERRITT, SEN.,  
DANIEL PURDY,  
THOMAS PURDY,  
THOMAS MERRITT, JUN.,

GEORGE LANE, JUN.,  
JOSEPH LYON,  
GEORGE KNIFFEN,  
JOHN DISBROW, Mamaroneck,  
JOHN MILLER, Bedford.

At a meeting of the vestry, held on the 29th of July, 1712, the Rev. Mr. Bridges presented the following communication from his Excellency Robert Hunter:

"You are to give order forthwith, (if the same be not already done) that every orthodox minister within your government be one of the vestry in his respective parish; and that no vestry be held without him, except in case of sickness, or that after notice of vestry summoned he omit to come."

Rev. Sir, the above copy of Her Majesty's instructions to me, I have thought fit to direct to the several ministers within this Province, that their respective vestries may regulate themselves accordingly; and if there be any practice contrary thereunto, I desire you may duly inform me, that effectual care may be taken therein. I remain, Reverend Sir, Your assured Friend and Servant,

ROBERT HUNTER.<sup>a</sup>

In 1712, "one hundred and fifty prayer books and five pounds worth of tracts, were voted to Mr. Bridges of Rye. He was also allowed for the services of two school-masters in the parish, £5 per annum each, on a certificate, that they have taught thirty children the Bible, the catechism and the use of the liturgy."<sup>b</sup>

In 1715, "Mr. Bridges at Rye had reduce many who were brought up in a very dissolute way of living and total neglect of public worship, to a more sober conversation and a constant attendance on the worship of God, using his utmost endeavors to put a stop to many disorderly practices."<sup>c</sup>

The same year the Propagation Society "presented to Mr. Huddleston, school-master in Rye, £5 additional salary, and to Mr. Bridges some Common Prayer Books and devotional tracts, of which the people were very desirous before he wrote, and heartly thankful for them since. To these donations the Society added two dozen Prayer Books, with the old version of the singing, and as many of Lewis's Church Catechism for exercise in his school, or in mornings of the Lord's days, (when not only his own scholars, but several of the young people of the town of both sexes come willingly to be informed,) one dozen Bibles with the Com-

<sup>a</sup> Church Rec.

<sup>b</sup> Reports of Propagation Soc.

<sup>c</sup> Reports of Propagation Soc.

mon Prayer, and the new version of psalms, twenty-five psalters and fifty-one primers, all which he requested as contributing mightily to the spreading the good work he has in hand, having taught besides British children, six hundred Dutch and French to read and write English."<sup>a</sup>

The Rev. Christopher Bridges died on the 22d of May, 1719, having been ten years minister of this church.

A.D. 1720, "The Rev. Mr. Barclay formerly missionary to Albany was missionary of Rye with a salary of £50." The same year the Society "gave Mr. Barclay £10 in consideration of the hard circumstances he lies under."<sup>b</sup>

In 1721, the Rev. Thomas Poyer officiated here.<sup>c</sup>

Upon the 4th of June, 1722, the church-wardens and vestrymen addressed the following letter to the venerable Propagation Society:

"We the church-wardens and vestrymen of ye parish of Rye, in ye province of New York, in America, having taken ye liberty soon after ye death of our late incumbent, the Rev. Mr. Christopher Bridges, humbly to pray that your honours would continue your usual bounty to our poor church, and supply us in our destitute condition with a Church of England minister in ye room of our late incumbent, do take this opportunity to return your honours our hearty thanks, as well for the constant supply which by your honours' favorable recommendation we had from the clergy of this province, as for your resolution, appearing in print, to supply us with a minister to reside among us, as soon as one whom your honours can approve of shall offer. We have been, to our great detriment, destitute about three years; and now having the opportunity of one whom we are universally pleased with, ye Rev. Mr. Robert Jenney, chaplain of the forces of this province, who is willing to relinquish his place in the forces to settle amongst us and become our minister, provided he can have your honours' favor and bounty for his encouragement. We have taken ye liberty to give him a call, as ye act of assembly of this province empowers us, (which is enclosed to your honours,) humbly praying for your approbation, of what we have done, and that you will please to grant unto him as our minister, ye favour and bounty; being a person whose conversation, preaching, and diligence in his holy function we are well acquainted and satisfied with. We are confident that his residence amongst us will effectually reconcile all our differences, and heal all our breaches, occasioned by our being so long in want of a faithful and prudent pastor to guide and instruct us. That God Almighty will prosper your honours' pious and charitable endeavours for the service of His Church in this wilderness, and that He will grant unto every one of you the choicest blessings, temporal and eternal, is the hearty prayer of

"May it please your honours, your honours' most dutiful and most obedient humble servants. Signed by order, JOHN CARHART, *Clerk.*"<sup>d</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Reports of Propagation Soc.

<sup>b</sup> Reports of Propagation Soc.

<sup>c</sup> The Propagation Society voted £50 to the clergy of New York for supplying the church of Rye, vacant by the death of the Rev. Mr. Bridges.

<sup>d</sup> Church Rec.

The Rev. Robert Jenney, minister of Rye, writing to the Propagation Society in 1723, observes, "that he has several other townships under his charge, and that since his admission in 1722, he has baptized ten adults and fifty children; number of communicants twenty-six."<sup>a</sup> In 1724 Mr. Jenney reported "the baptism of two adults and several children; communicants twenty-eight."<sup>b</sup> A. D. 1725,<sup>c</sup> the quotas of the various districts stood thus:

Rye, £34 4 0; Bedford, £16 2 0; Mamaroneck, £18 0 0;  
Scarsdale, £5 3 0; North Castle, £2 9 0;

Mr. Jenney was removed by the Society to Hempstead, Long Island, in 1726. The vacancy created by the removal, the Society proceeded immediately to fill by appointing the Rev. Mr. Colgan. Upon which we find the vestry addressing the secretary of the Society as follows:

"REV. SIR:—We, the church-wardens and vestry of the parish of Rye, return our humble thanks to ye honorable Society for their pious and charitable care of this parish in providing so speedily to fill this vacancy by appointing ye Rev. Mr. Colgan for us. We conclude they have before this time been acquainted by our letters how far we had proceeded to obtain a minister, fearing the ill consequences of being left destitute; and we hope ye honorable Society will put a favorable construction upon our proceedings, though we have given our call to the Rev. Mr. Wetmore, and he received induction immediately upon it, yet he always declared that he should submit to ye resolutions of the honorable Society, and not in any degree interfere with their determination, and though we find ye inclinations of ye people very much to have Mr. Wetmore appointed for us; on which account we can't but desire that ye honorable Society would be pleased to favor it; yet we shall always pay ye greatest difference to their pleasure, and if they finally determine that Mr. Colgan shall be for us, against whom we have no exceptions, as, being a stranger to us, we shall give him the best welcome we are capable of; but inasmuch as ye Rev. Mr. Colgan is willing, by exchange with Mr. Wetmore, to continue at New York, and that vestry has signified their approbation, we heartily join with them in requesting of ye honorable Society that they would confirm that agreement, and give liberty for Mr. Wetmore to come to this parish, who, by being born in the county and acquainted with the dispositions and customs of ye people here, will be acceptable to us, and we hope do much service for religion. But all this with submission to that venerable body, whose pleasure we shall most cheerfully submit to; and we pray ye continuance of their favour and charity to us, and that God would prosper their pious designs. We are, reverend sir, the Hon'ble Society's and your most humble and obedient servants. Signed by order. <sup>a</sup> JOHN CARHART, *Clerk*.

To the REV. MR. DAVID HUMPHREYS,

Secretary to ye Hon'ble Society for Propagating ye Gospel, &c.,  
at ye Archbishop's Library at St. Martins in ye Fields, London."

<sup>a</sup> Rep. of Propagation Soc.

<sup>b</sup> *Ibid*.

<sup>c</sup> At a vestry meeting held in Rye, January 18th, 1725, "it was voted that money be raised to purchase a drum for the church.

<sup>a</sup> Church Rec.

In accordance with this request, the Society were pleased to confirm the appointment of Mr. Wetmore.

We take the subjoined extract from a letter sent to the secretary of the society, in 1726-7 :

"And now we are once more peaceably settled, we hope by the blessing of God to see religion revive among us, which by contentions and divisions is sunk to a very low ebb. As the Rev. Mr. Wetmore has been born in the county, and long known among us, who has had his conversation becoming his sacred character and profession, we doubt not but ye people of this parish will continue their affection to him, and hope to see this good fruit of it, viz : that they be brought to a proper sense of religion, and more general and constant attendance, in ye public worship and sacraments which for a long time have been very much neglected among us ; we earnestly pray for the blessing of almighty God upon that venerable society whose extensive charity (under God), finds food for so many souls famishing in ignorance and error, and shall always look upon ourselves strictly bound to pay it, the greatest honor and most cheerful obedience to all their commands and directions, and beg leave to subscribe with all dutiful respects,

Rev'd Sir, your and ye Honorable Society's most humble and obedient servants.

Signed by order of the Vestry,<sup>a</sup>

JOHN CARHART, *Clerk.*

The Rev. James Wetmore writes, A.D. 1728, that his congregation is considerably increased ; he has added nine new communicants, and baptized nineteen. In 1729 he acquaints the society "that he meets with good success in his mission, that his numbers increase, and that several of the Independents have quitted that persuasion and very regularly attend divine service at his church."<sup>b</sup> July 1st, 1738, he says, "I have baptized the last half year five adults besides several children. About fifty families in the adjoining parish have requested assistance. Mr. Purdy."<sup>c</sup> (schoolmaster at Rye) "teaches twenty-one children of Church parents and fourteen dissenters, as likewise two Dutch, two Jewish and one colored child, in all forty-one. Mr. Dwight, of White Plains, six miles from Rye, teaches twenty-seven children, in all forty-six."

"And adds, July 15, 1740, that besides his regular duty at Rye, he officiates once a month at Stamford and Greenwich. He had also spent some days last winter in visiting sundry families in the woods. Since the 3d day of May, 1739, he had baptized one hundred and eleven children, and twenty-seven adults ; his communicants number fifty."<sup>d</sup>

Under date of September 28th, 1741, he observes "that by God's help the Church maintains her ground, notwithstanding the efforts of the

<sup>a</sup> Church Rec.

<sup>b</sup> Propagation Soc. Rep.

<sup>c</sup> Mr. Purdy died in 1783, and was buried on Ash Wednesday. Rep. of Propagation Soc.

<sup>d</sup> Reports of Propagation Soc.



sectaries in new Methodism. He had baptized within a year sixty-nine children and six adults, &c."<sup>a</sup>

In 1745 Mr. Wetmore writes "that he is fully occupied in performing duty at Rye, Scarsdale and the White Plains, and begs for an assistant to officiate under him. At Bedford and North Castle there are four hundred families, &c."<sup>b</sup>

The same year Mr. Joseph Lamson was appointed assistant to Mr. Wetmore with a salary of £20; a gratuity of £20 was also made by the society, "out of compassion to Mr. Lamson's sufferings and necessities, who was taken prisoner, shipped and carried into France on his voyage towards England; and afterwards, on his way from Port Louis in France, to London, was detained seven months by a fever at Salisbury. Mr. Lamson undertook the voyage to England for the purpose of obtaining Episcopal ordination.<sup>c</sup> In his first reports dated May 12th, 1746, Mr. Lamson writes, "that he officiates by turns at Bedford and North Castle to full congregations, and had then baptized eleven children and three adults."<sup>d</sup> At a vestry meeting of this parish, held at Mr. Benjamin Brown's, Sen., in Rye, January 16th, 1749, the Rev. James Wetmore delivered the following letter, from the Rev. Philip Bearcroft, D.D., secretary to the Honorable Propagation Society:

LONDON, CHARTER HOUSE, June 27, 1749.

GENTS:—It is with much concern that the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts are informed that your *church* and the *parsonage house* are very much out of repair, and that even the possession of the *glebe* is disputed against your very worthy pastor Mr. Wetmore, whose great pains and abilities in the cause of God's church, cannot but recommend him to every worthy member of it. Therefore the Society hope and expect that upon due consideration you will give orders for the full repair of the church and the parsonage house, and defend Mr. Wetmore in the maintenance of all his just rights, as you desire his longer continuance among you.

I am, Gentlemen,

Your very humble servant,

PHILIP BEARCROFT, *Secretary*.

To the Churchwardens and Vestry of the  
Church of Rye, New York.

Mr. Wetmore, in his report of 1751, mentions "that the church had lately been repaired, and is made neat and beautiful."

<sup>a</sup> Reports of Propagation Soc.

<sup>b</sup> Reports of Propagation Soc.

<sup>c</sup> Some idea (says the Rev. M. H. Henderson) of the great disadvantages under which the Church labored during our colonial existence, may be formed from the fact that beside the great expense of the voyage (£100), an expense which candidates for holy orders could ill afford to bear, nearly one-fifth of all that went to England for ordination died, either from small-pox, or the dangers of the deep. "The number who had gone to England for ordination from the northern colonies up to 1767, was fifty-two; of these forty-two only returned safely.

—Henderson's Centennial Discourse.

<sup>d</sup> Rep. of Propagation Soc.

In a letter of April 7th, 1759, Mr. Wetmore acquaints the Society "that a very worthy person, a native of England,<sup>a</sup> but now being in New York, had put into his hands £600 currency, of which he reserves to himself the interest during life, and hath left by his will £400 more to be added after his death, to purchase a convenient glebe, and other liberal legacies."<sup>b</sup>

The Rev. James Wetmore died on the 15th of May, 1760,<sup>c</sup> having been nearly thirty-four years minister of this church. His remains repose in the old parish burial ground, on the northwest side of Blind brook. A plain monumental tablet marks the spot, and bears the following inscription :

SACRED TO THE MEMORY

of the

REV. JAMES WETMORE,

The late, worthy, learned and faithful

Minister of the Parish of Rye,

for about thirty years,

who having strenuously defended the Church

with his pen, and adorned it by his life

and doctrine, at length being seized

of the small pox, departed this

life, May 15, 1760. *Ætatis*, 65.

*Cujus memoriæ sit in  
Benedictione sempiterna.*

Mr. Wetmore left issue two sons—Timothy, afterwards Attorney-General of the Province of New Brunswick, and James, of Rye—descendants of the latter are still living in the town. Also four daughters—Alethea, wife of the Rev. Joseph Lamson ; Anna, wife of Gilbert Brundage ; Charity, wife of Josiah Purdy, from whom descend the Purdys, of Rye ; and Esther, who married first David Brown, and secondly Jesse Hunt, Esq., high sheriff of this county in 1780.

In a letter of May 6th, 1761, Mr. Timothy Wetmore complains to the Society, "that since the death of his father they had not been favored with a sermon, or either of the sacraments, for six or eight months."<sup>d</sup>

<sup>a</sup> St. George Talbot, Esq., see vol. i, 25.

<sup>b</sup> Reports of Propagation Soc.

<sup>c</sup> The last will of James Wetmore, clerk, bears date Nov., 1759. Surrogate's office, N. Y., Lib. xxii, 123.

<sup>d</sup> Reports of Propagation Soc.

After a vacancy of nearly two years the mission was again filled by the appointment of the Rev. Ebenezer Punderson.<sup>a</sup> In 1763, this gentleman informs the Society "that since writing his last letter, besides two-thirds of the Sundays at Rye, and the other third at White Plains, North Castle and Bedford, he had been twice to Crumpond and once to Croton; he had also baptized nineteen adults, and ninety-two children."

Mr. Punderson died in 1764. The following inscription is taken from his monument in the grave yard.

SACRED TO THE MEMORY  
of the  
REV. EBENEZER PUNDERSON,  
late Missionary to the Ven. Society for  
Propagating the Gospel in Foreign Parts,  
who died 22d Sept., A. D. 1764,  
being 60 years of age.  
" With pure religion was his spirit fraught,  
Practiced himself what he to others taught."

Upon the 19th day of December, 1764, Grace church Rye, received the following charter from King George the Third:

#### CHARTER OF GRACE CHURCH, RYE.

George the Third, by the grace of God, of Great Britain, France and Ireland King, Defender of the Faith, and so forth, To all to whom these presents shall come, greeting: Whereas our loving subjects, Peter Jay, Elisha Budd, Christopher Isinghart, Timothy Wetmore, Caleb Purdy, Joshua Purdy, John Guion, Joseph Purdy, Gilbert Willet, John Carhart, Thomas Sawyer, Gilbert Brundige, John Thomas, William Sutton, Anthony Miller and John Adce, inhabitants of the parish of Rye, in the County of Westchester, in our Province of New York, in communion of the Church of England as by law established, by their humble petition presented on the sixteenth day of November last past, to our trusty and well beloved Cadwallader Colden, Esquire, our Lieutenant Governor and Commander-in-Chief of our Province of New York and the territories depending thereon in America, in Council did set forth that the inhabitants of the said parish of Rye, in communion of the Church of England as by law established, have by voluntary contributions erected and finished a decent and convenient church in the town of Rye, in the said parish, for the celebration of divine service according to the rites and ceremonies of the Church of England; but that from a want of some persons legally authorized to superintend the same and manage the affairs and interests thereof, the said church is greatly decayed, and the peti-

<sup>a</sup> For the induction of Mr. Punderson, see Surrogate's office, N. Y. Book of Commissions, Fol. v.

tioners discouraged from contributing to the repair thereof, least the moneys given for that purpose may be misapplied; and that on that account also charitable and well disposed people are discouraged in their design of establishing proper funds for the future support of the said church and the better maintenance of the ministry, and therefore humbly prayed in behalf of themselves and the rest of the inhabitants of the said parish in communion of the Church of England as by law established, our letters patent incorporating them and the rector and inhabitants of the said parish in communion of the Church of England as by law established, for the time being a body corporate and politick, with such rights, privileges, and immunities, as should appear proper and expedient to answer the purposes aforesaid, Now We being willing to encourage the pious intentions of our said loving subjects and to grant this their reasonable request, *Know Ye* that of our special grace, certain knowledge and mere motion, we have ordained, given, granted and declared, and by these presents for us, our heirs, and successors, do ordain, give, grant and declare, that they the said petitioners and the rest of the inhabitants of the said parish of Rye in Communion of the Church of England as by law established, and their successors the inhabitants of the said parish of Rye in communion of the Church of England as by law established, with the rector of the said parish of Rye for the time being, for ever, shall for ever hereafter be one body corporate and politick in deed, fact and name, by the name, stile and title of the rector and inhabitants of the parish of Rye, in communion of the Church of England as by law established, and them and their successors by the same name, we do by these presents for us our heirs and successors really and fully make, erect, create and constitute one body politick and corporate in deed, fact and name for ever; and will, give, grant and ordain, that they and their successors the rector and inhabitants of the parish of Rye in communion of the Church of England as by law established, by the same name shall and may have perpetual succession, and shall and may be capable in law to sue and be sued, implead and be impleaded, answer and be answered unto, defend and be defended in all courts and elsewhere, in all manner of actions, suits, complaints, pleas, causes, matters and demands whatsoever, as fully and amply as any other our liege subjects of our said Province of New York may or can sue or be sued, implead or be impleaded, defend or be defended, by any lawful ways or means whatsoever; and that they and their successors by the same name shall be for ever hereafter capable and able in the law to purchase, take, hold, receive, and enjoy any messuages, tenements, houses, and real estate whatsoever, in fee simple for term of life or lives, or in any other manner howsoever, for the use of the said church, and also any goods, chattels, or personal estate whatsoever, *Provided* always that the clear yearly value of the said real estate (exclusive of the said church and the ground whereon the same is built and the cemetery belonging to the same) doth not at any time exceed the sum of five hundred pounds current money of our said province, and that they and their successors by the same name shall have full power and authority to give, grant, sell, lease and dispose of the same real estate for life or lives, or years, or for ever, under certain yearly rents; and all goods, chattels and personal estate whatsoever at their will and pleasure, and that it shall and may be lawful for them and their successors to have and use a common seal; and our will and pleasure further is, and we do hereby for us, our heirs and successors, ordain and appoint that there shall be



for ever hereafter belonging to the said church one rector of the Church of England as by law established, duly qualified for the cure of souls, two church-wardens, and eight vestrymen, who shall conduct and manage the affairs and business of the said church and corporation in manner as hereafter is declared and appointed. And for the more immediate carrying into execution our royal will and pleasure herein, we do hereby assign, constitute and appoint Peter Jay and Elisha Budd to be the present church wardens; and John Thomas, Joshua Purdy, Christopher Isinghart, William Sutton, John Adce, Caleb Purdy, Anthony Miller and Timothy Wetmore to be the present vestrymen of the said church, who shall hold, possess, and enjoy their said respective offices until Tuesday in Easter week, which shall come and be in the year of our Lord one thousand, seven hundred and sixty-six; and for the keeping up the succession in the said offices, our royal will and pleasure is, and we do hereby establish, direct and require that on the said Tuesday in Easter week in the said year of our Lord one thousand, seven hundred and sixty-six, and yearly and every year thereafter for ever, on Tuesday in Easter week in every year, the rector and inhabitants of the parish of Rye in communion of the Church of England as by law established, shall meet at the said church, and there by the majority of voices of such of them as shall so meet, elect and choose two of their members to be church-wardens and eight others of their members to be vestrymen of the said church for the ensuing year, which said church-wardens and vestrymen so elected and chosen shall immediately enter upon their respective offices, and hold, exercise and enjoy the same respectively from the time of such elections for and during the space of one year, and until other fit persons shall be elected and chosen in their respective places—and in case the church-wardens or vestrymen, or either of them, by these presents named and appointed or which shall be hereafter elected and chosen by virtue of these presents, shall die or remove from the said parish of Rye before the time of their respective appointed services shall be expired, or refuse or neglect to act in the office of which he or they is or are herein nominated and appointed, or whereunto he or they shall or may be so elected and chosen, then our royal will and pleasure is and we do hereby direct, ordain and require the rector and inhabitants of the parish of Rye in communion as aforesaid for the time being to meet at the said church, and choose other or others of their members in the place or stead of him or them so dying, removing or refusing to act within thirty days next after such contingency; and in this case for the more due and orderly conducting the said elections and to prevent any undue proceedings therein, we do hereby give full power and authority to, and ordain and require that the rector and the said church-wardens of the said church for the time being, or any two of them, shall appoint the time for such election and elections, and that the rector of the said church, or in his absence one of the said church-wardens for the time being, shall give public notice thereof by publishing the same at the said church, immediately after divine service on the Sunday next preceeding the day appointed for such election, hereby giving and granting that such person or persons as shall be so chosen from time to time by the rector and inhabitants of the said parish of Rye in communion as aforesaid, or the majority of such of them as shall in such case meet in manner hereby directed, shall have, hold, exercise and enjoy such the office or offices to which he or they shall be so elected and chosen from the time of such election until the Tuesday in Easter week thence next ensuing, and until

other or others be legally chosen in his or their place or stead, as fully and amply as the person or persons in whose place he or they shall be chosen might or could have done by virtue of these presents; and we do hereby will and direct that this method shall for ever hereafter be used for the filling up all vacancies that shall happen in either the said offices between the annual elections above directed; and our royal will and pleasure further is, and we do hereby for us, our heirs and successors, give and grant that as well the church-wardens and vestrymen in these presents nominated and appointed, as such as shall from time to time be hereafter elected and chosen as is herein directed, shall have and they are hereby invested with full power and authority to execute their several and respective offices in as full and ample manner as any church-wardens or vestrymen in that part of our kingdom of Great Britain called England, or in this our province of New York, can or lawfully may execute their said respective offices; and further our royal will and pleasure is, and we do by these presents, for us, our heirs and successors, give, grant, ordain and appoint that the rector and the said church-wardens of the said church for the time being, or any two of them, shall and may from time to time as occasion shall require, summon and call together, at such day and place as they shall think proper, the said rector, church-wardens and vestrymen for the time being, to meet in vestry, giving them at the least one day's notice thereof, and we hereby require them to meet accordingly; and we do hereby give, grant and ordain, that the said rector and one of the said church-wardens for the time being at least, together with the majority of the said vestrymen of the said church for the time being, being met in vestry as above directed, shall for ever hereafter have, and they are hereby invested with full power and authority by majority of their voices, to do and execute in the name of the rector and inhabitants of the parish of Rye in communion of the Church of England as by law established, all and singular the powers and authorities hereinbefore given and granted to the said rector and inhabitants of the parish of Rye in communion of the Church of England as by law established, any wise touching or relating to such lands, messuages and tenements, real and personal estate whatsoever, as they the said rector and inhabitants of the parish of Rye in communion as aforesaid, shall or may acquire for the use of the said church; and also in like manner to order, direct, manage and transact the general interest, business and affairs of our said corporation; and also shall have full power and authority in like manner to make and ordain such rules, orders and ordinances as they shall judge convenient for the good government and the discipline of the members of the said church—provided such rules, orders and ordinances be not repugnant to the laws of that part of our kingdom of Great Britain called England, or of this our province of New York, but as near as may be agreeable thereto, and that the same be fairly entered in a book or books to be kept for that purpose. And also in like manner to appoint the form of the common seal hereinbefore granted and the same to alter, break and new make at their discretion; and also, in like manner, to appoint such officer or officers as they shall stand in need of; always provided that the rector of the said church for the time being shall have the sole power of nominating and appointing the clerk to assist him in performing divine service, as also the sexton—any thing hereinbefore contained to the contrary in any wise notwithstanding—which clerk and sexton shall hold and enjoy their respective offices during the will and pleasure of the rector of said church for the time being. And

whereas by the death of the late minister of the said church the same is now in avoidance, our royal will and pleasure is that in this case, and also in case of every future avoidance of the said church, either by the death of the rector thereof or otherwise, that the powers and authorities hereby vested in the rector, church-wardens and vestrymen in vestry met as above mentioned, shall, until the said church be legally supplied with another incumbent, vest in and be executed by the said church-wardens of the said church for the time being; provided always they have the concurrence and consent of the major number of the whole vestrymen of the said church appointed by these presents, or chosen by virtue hereof, for the time being, in every thing they shall in such case do by virtue hereof. And further we do by these presents for us, our heirs and successors, give and grant unto the rector and inhabitants of the parish of Rye in communion of the Church of England as by law established, and their successors for ever, that this our present grant shall be deemed, adjudged and construed in all cases most favorably and for the best benefit and advantage of the said rector and inhabitants of the parish of Rye in communion of the Church of England as by law established; and that this our present grant being entered on record as is hereinafter particularly expressed, shall be good and effectual in the law to all intents, constructions and purposes whatsoever, against us, our heirs and successors, according to our true intent and meaning herein before declared, notwithstanding the not reciting or misreciting, not naming or misnaming of any of the aforesaid franchises, privileges, immunities, offices or other the premises, or any of them; and although no writ of *ad quod damnum*, or other writs, inquisitions or precepts hath or have been upon this account had, made, issued or prosecuted, to have and to hold all and singular the privileges, liberties, advantages and immunities hereby granted or meant, mentioned or intended so to be, unto them the said rector and inhabitants of the parish of Rye, in communion of the Church of England as by law established, and to their successors for ever. In testimony whereof we have caused these our letters to be made patent and the great seal of our said province to be hereunto affixed, and the same to be entered on record in our secretary's office in our city of New York, in one of the books of patents there remaining. Witness our trusty and well beloved Cadwallader Colden, Esquire, our Lieutenant Governor and Commander-in-Chief of our Province of New York, and territories thereon in America, at our Fort in our city of New York, by and with the advice and consent of our Council for our said province, the nineteenth day of December, in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and sixty-four, and of our reign the fifth. First skin, line the fortieth, the words *or with* and second skin, line the twenty-seventh, the word *is* are interlined.

CLARKE.

August 27, 1765. The Rev. Ephraim Avery was appointed to the mission of Rye.

In 1773, Mr. Avery's *notitia parochialis* stood thus: Baptized, ninety infants, adults, six; colored infants, five; marriages, five; burials, ten.

On the 5th of June, 1776, he informs the Society "that he has lost the use of his right hand, and therefore is incapable of writing and sending an account of his parish."



"The persecutions and privations to which the clergy were exposed (says Dr. Hawkins) in the war, whether from the Royalist or American armies, proved fatal to several of them. At Rye, Mr. Avery was a principal sufferer; his horses were seized, his cattle driven off, and his property plundered. His death, by some supposed to have been occasioned by these losses, happened soon afterwards."<sup>a</sup>

The Rev. Isaac Hunt succeeded Mr. Avery in the rectorship, having been appointed by the Propagation Society in 1777, with a salary of £40.

During the subsequent years the parish of Rye suffered considerably from the confusion that attended the Revolutionary war. The church was burned, the glebe lands hired out on terms which produced but a small income, and the parishoners scattered.

After the close of the war, the congregation received a letter from the Rev. Samuel Provoost, rector of Trinity church, New York, Abraham Beach and Benjamin Moore, dated April 17, 1786, inclosing the journals of the Convention of the Protestant Episcopal Church, held in Philadelphia, September, 1785.

Upon the reception of this letter, a meeting of the congregation was called, which assembled at the house of Mrs. Haviland, in Rye, on the 5th of May, 1786.

Mr. Joshua Purdy was unanimously elected president of the meeting. On motion, it was resolved to take the sense of the congregation, whether they would comply with the request of the letter, and send delegates to meet in convention at St. Paul's church, in New York, upon the third Tuesday in May next.

The sense being taken, it was unanimously agreed to send delegates. William Miller and Alexander Hunt, Esqs., were chosen delegates to the General Convention.

September, 1787. The Rev. Richard Channing Moore (afterwards Bishop of Virginia) was elected to the rectorship, the first since the close of the war.

At a vestry meeting held 5th of March, 1788, it was determined by that body to erect a new church on or near the place where the old ruins stood.

Upon the resignation of Mr. Moore, in 1788, the Rev. David Foote accepted an invitation to the rectorship. This individual was called away whilst in the morning of life from the field of his earthly labors to reap an eternal reward, A.D. 1793.

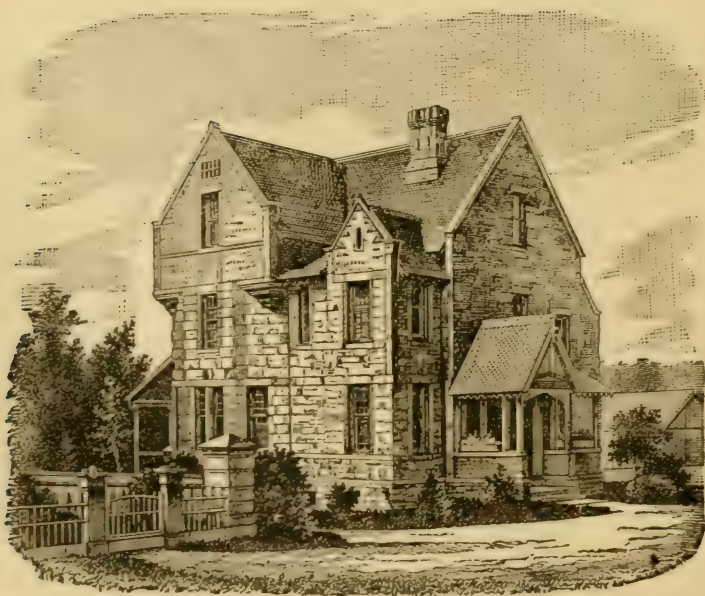
<sup>a</sup> Hawkins' Hist. Not. Col. Church, 281. Mr. Avery was a step-son of the celebrated General Putnam.—Editor.







EPISCOPAL CHURCH, RYE.



PARSONAGE OF EPISCOPAL CHURCH, RYE.

His tombstone bears the following simple inscription :

IN MEMORY  
of the  
REV. MR. DAVID FOOTE,  
late Pastor of Rye and White Plains,  
who departed this life the first of August,  
1793,  
aged 32 years.  
Blessed are the dead who  
die in the Lord.

The Rev. John J. Sands was called to, and accepted, the rectorship in 1793. For the successors of Mr. Sands, see the list of rectors.

Another important event occurred about this time, in the winter of 1794. The parsonage house, on the west side of Blind brook, was burnt. This house had been the residence of the rector since Mr. Wetmore's time. The vestry at first inclined to rebuild the parsonage on its former site, but afterwards concluded to purchase the house and land of Isaac Doughty, near the church ; and May 24, 1794, this purchase was made for £400. Thus they acquired the beautiful and spacious rectory grounds which they now possess.

In 1852, steps were taken to replace the old wooden church built in 1788 ; and in 1855, Bishop Wainwright consecrated the new church. In 1864, a neat and convenient Sunday-school room was erected near the church, and soon afterwards the church was enlarged and embellished. But on the evening of December 21, 1866, this beautiful church was destroyed by fire, and within two years a new and larger edifice arose on the same site. The present church was consecrated on the 19th of June, 1869, by Bishop Potter.

At a meeting of the rector, wardens and vestrymen, held in 1794, it was resolved to substitute the title Christ's instead of Grace, by which the church had heretofore been distinguished.

The principal benefactors to this parish have been the Hon. Caleb Heathcote, St. George Talbot, Esq., Ann Jay,<sup>a</sup> sister of the Hon. John Jay, and the wardens and vestry of Trinity church, New York.<sup>b</sup>

Christ's church, Rye, was incorporated on the 12th of March, 1796. Peter Jay and John Barker, church-wardens ; Joshua Purdy, Sen., Roger Purdy, John Haight, Thomas Carhart, Gilbert Hatfield, Roger Purdy, Jonathan Horton and Jonathan Purdy, vestrymen.<sup>c</sup> A second incorpo-

<sup>a</sup> This lady left a legacy of \$250 to the church.

<sup>b</sup> In 1800, Trinity church contributed \$750 for a parsonage at Rye ; to which was added in 1813, the sum of \$500.

<sup>c</sup> Co. Rec. Religious Soc. Lib. A.

ration occurs on the 18th of June following.

The present glebe was purchased by the vestry in 1794. Upon it a neat parsonage has been erected.

The first delegates from this parish to the Diocesan Convention in 1785, were Mr. William Miller and Mr. Alexander Hunt.

| INSTIT. OR CALL, | RECTORS,  | VACATED BY,        |
|------------------|---|--------------------|
| A.D. 1702,       | REV. THOMAS PRITCHARD, Clericus,                  | death.             |
| A.D. 1704,       | REV. GEORGE MUIRSON, Clericus,                    | "                  |
| January, 1709,   | REV. CHRISTOPHER BRIDGE, M.A., Cler. <sup>a</sup> | "                  |
| 1719,            | REV. MR. BARLAY, Clericus,                        | resig.             |
| 1720,            | REV. THOMAS POYER, Clericus,                      | "                  |
| 4 June 1722,     | REV. ROBERT JENNEY, Clericus, <sup>b</sup>        | "                  |
| 1726,            | REV. JAMES WETMORE, Clericus,                     | death.             |
| 1746,            | REV. JOSEPH LAMSON, Clericus,                     | resig.             |
| 1 July, 1763,    | REV. EBENEZER PUNDERSON, Clericus. <sup>c</sup>   | death.             |
| 27 Aug. 1765,    | REV. EPHRAIM AVERY, Clericus,                     | "                  |
| 1777,            | REV. ISAAC HUNT, Clericus,                        | resig.             |
| Sept. 1787,      | REV. RICHARD C. MOORE, Presb.,                    | "                  |
| Nov. 1790,       | REV. DAVID FOOTE, Presb.,                         | death.             |
| 1793,            | REV. JOHN J. SANDS, Presb.                        | resig.             |
| Nov. 1796,       | REV. GEORGE OGILVIE, Presb.,                      | death.             |
| Aug. 1797,       | REV. SAMUEL HASKELL, Presb.,                      | resig.             |
| April, 1801,     | REV. EVAN ROGERS, Presb.,                         | death.             |
| 1809,            | REV. SAMUEL HASKELL, Presb.,                      | resig.             |
| 1822,            | REV. WILLIAM THOMPSON, Presb.,                    | death.             |
| 1830,            | REV. JOHN M. FORBES, Presb.,                      | resig.             |
| 1832,            | REV. WILLIAM M. CARMICHAEL, Presb.,               | "                  |
| Aug., 1834,      | REV. PETER S. CHAUNCEY, Presb.,                   | "                  |
| May, 1849,       | REV. ED. C. BULL,                                 | "                  |
| May, 1859,       | REV. JOHN CAMPBELL WHITE,                         | "                  |
| Nov. 1864,       | REV. REESE F. ALSOP,                              | "                  |
| June 1873,       | REV. CHAUNCEY B. BREWSTER,                        | present incumbent. |

<sup>a</sup> The following obituary notice of Mr. Bridge, is from the Boston newspaper of June 1st to 8th, 1719: "We have an account from Rye, in the government of New York, of the death of the Rev. Mr. Bridge, M.A., a Presbyter of the Church of England, and minister of the gospel at that place, who died on Saturday, the 23d of May, last. He was formerly, for many years together, one of the ministers of the Church of England, in Boston, a religious and worthy man, a very good scholar, and a fine grave preacher. His performances in the pulpit were solid, judicious and profitable; his conversation was agreeable and improving, and though a strict Churchman in his principles, yet of great respect and charity to dissenters, and much esteemed by them. He was bred at the University of Cambridge, in England, and was about forty-eight years of age when he died, very much lamented." Extracted from Greenwood's History of King's Chapel.

<sup>b</sup> This gentleman was the son of Archdeacon Jenny, of Wanney town, in the north of Ireland. See Hist. of Narragansett church by Wilkins Uplike.

<sup>c</sup> Mr. Punderson graduated at Yale College in 1726, and was afterwards ordained a Congregational minister over the second church in Groton. In 1732 he came into the Episcopal church, and crossed the Atlantic to be ordained. On his return, he reorganized a church at the village of Poquetannuc, in North Groton, in 1738, which has ever since existed, &c. Mr. Punderson was for some years an itinerant missionary of the "Society for the Propagation of the Gospel," from 1740 to 1750. In 1753-4 he was settled missionary in the towns of Guilford, New Haven and Bradford." Ibid.



The old church was erected in 1788, and has since been sold; and now stands on the Milton road, and is used as a private residence.

A new parsonage was commenced in 1878, and finished in the Fall of the same year. It is built of stone, in Queen Anne's style, directly opposite, on the south side of the church.

There is Grace chapel at Milton, where services are held regularly by the rector of Christ's church, Rye.

#### METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH OF RYE.

According to report, Methodism was introduced into this part of Rye about 1802. The marriage of Esther, widow of John Griffen, of Mamaroneck, to Ezekiel Halsted, of Rye, in that year, was the occasion of it. Mrs. Griffen had united with the Methodist Episcopal church before her marriage to Mr. Halsted. Whilst Mr. E. Halstead was a member of the Congregational church in Greenwich, soon after his marriage he identified himself with the Methodist.

The Methodists for many years occupied the Presbyterian church in connection with that body; but differences springing up between them in 1832, they ceased to use the church; and the same year a lot, comprising half an acre, was bought and a church erected.

In 1853 a house and four acres of land, situated on the turnpike, about half a mile from the church, were bought for a parsonage. In 1855, the trustees bought eight acres of land for a cemetery; to this, nearly seven acres have been added.

In 1855, the trustees sold the parsonage; and in 1860 bought land directly opposite the church and built a parsonage. In March, 1864, the church was remodelled at an expense of \$4,000. Lately the property adjoining the church, consisting of two and a half acres, was bought for \$10,000. A Sunday-school room was built, a house on the premises was altered for a parsonage, and other improvements made at a cost of about \$5,000, and the old parsonage was sold.<sup>a</sup>

South of the village lies Peningoe Neck, commonly called Brown's Point, one mile and a half in extent. The extremity of the point in the neighborhood of the Scotch Caps, has been considerably undermined by the constant action of the waves. The eastern shore of the neck has also receded, before the same destructive element. The beach, on Rye flats, is a well-known and favorite bathing place. It also commands an extensive view of the Sound. The name of Parsonage Point has been conferred on the south-east projection. At present the principal propri-

---

<sup>a</sup> Baird's History of Rye.

etors are Gideon Reynolds and Hachaliah Brown, Esq. The latter individual holds 250 acres of the lower portion.

Upon the western shore of Peningoe neck, or Brown's Point, stands the small hamlet of Milton, overlooking the mouth of the Blind brook (Mockquams), the beautiful scenery of the Mill creek and the wooded shores of Budd's Neck. Here are several stores and a tide mill; the latter is situated at the head of the navigable waters of Mill creek. In the immediate vicinity of Milton, is the residence of Newberry Halstead, Esq., which, from its elevated position, commands splendid prospects of the river and surrounding country. The Halsteads have been long residents of Rye, and descend from a common ancestor of that name, who originally came from Huntington, Long Island. The adjoining proprietors are Underhill Halstead, Joseph Parker and Gideon Reynolds.

Near the entrance of the Neck proper, is located the ancient *village burying ground*. Here the frail memorials—

“With uncouth rhymes and shapeless sculpture decked,  
Implore the passing tribute of a sigh.”—*Gray's Elegy*.

The following inscription is taken from one of the oldest tombstones: Mary, daughter to Samuel and Mary Kniffen, deceased January ye 12, 1707. Upon another richly carved stone surmounted by a winged cherub, are these words: In memory of Mr. Joseph Lyon, who deceased February the 21st, A. D. 1761, in the 84th year of his age. Here are also interred the bodies of the Rev. William Thompson<sup>a</sup> and the Rev. Evan Rogers. The tombstone of the latter is inscribed as follows:

THE  
MASONIC SOCIETY IN THE TOWN OF RYE,  
have erected this monument sacred to the memory  
of their beloved brother, the  
REV. EVAN ROGERS,  
Pastor of Christ Church in this town,  
who departed this life January 25th, 1809,  
in the 42d year, of his life.

My flesh shall slumber in the ground,  
Till the last trumpet's joyful sound,  
Then burst these chains with sweet surprise,  
And in my Saviour's image rise.

Also memorials to Stephen Roe, M. D., and Dr. Charles McDonald, a soldier of the Revolution. The *Union Cemetery* is situated in North

<sup>a</sup> The inscription on the tombstone of Mr. Thompson, is an exact copy of that upon his tablet in the church.



## PEDIGREE OF JAY, OF RYE AND BEDFORD.

Arms:—Borne by the Huguenot. D'azur. au chevron d'or, en chef demi soleil splendant, entre deux étoiles de même en point, a roe propre surmonté paroisseaux. Crest:—Deux cœurs unis. Present crest:—A cross mounted upon three graces, or steps. Motto:—*Deo Duce Perseverandum.*

Pierre Jay, Ecuyer of the house of Le Jay, of Poitou—Judith Francoise, da. of Mons. Francoise, of La Rochelle

Francis Jay, died during the voyage from France to England

Isaac Jay, 1690, died of wounds received at the battle of Boyne

Augustus Jay, nat. at La Rochelle, 13 March, 1665, ob. 10 March, 1751; came to New York, 1697

Anna Maria Bayard, license of marriage dated 27th October, 1697

Frances, Hon. Mr. Poloquin, Mayor of Bristol, England ob. 1742

Peter Jay, of Rye, nat. 3d Nov., 1704, ob. 17th April, 1782; m. 20th Jan., 1728. Buried at Rye

Mary, da. of Jacobus Van Cortlandt, of the old Yonkers, ob. 17th April, 1777

Judith, nat. 29th August, 1698, ob. August, 1757

Cornelius Van Horne ob. May, 1752; mar. 6th April, 1735

Mary, nat. 31st Aug., 1700; ob. 5th June, 1762

Peter Vallette, ob. 9th Dec., 1752

Frances, nat. 26th Feb., 1701; mar. 19th Jan., 1724; ob. 2d August, 1780

Frederick Van Cortlandt, ob. 13th February, 1750

Ann, nat. 6th March, 1706; ob. 24th December, 1707

Augustus, nat. 15th April, 1730 ob. 23d Dec., 1801. s. p.

James, nat. 27th April, 1731; ob. 16th Oct., 1751; s. p.

Sir James, Knight, nat. 27th Oct., 1732; ob. 20th Oct., 1815. Buried at Rye

Peter, nat. 19th Oct., 1734; ob. 8th July, 1813

Mary Duyck-heck, mar. 1789

Frederick, nat. 10 May, 1744; ob. July 5th, 1741

Hon. John Jay, of Bedford, nat. 12th December, 1745; m. 28th April, 1774; ob. 17 May, 1829 Buried at Rye

Sarah, da. of Hon. Wm. Livingston, Gov. of N. J., nat. Aug., 1756; ob. at Bedford, 28th May, 1802

Frederick, 1. Margaret, da. of Andrew Barclay, m. 7th Sept., 1773; ob. 23 Oct., 1791. 2 Euphemia Dunscomb, ob. 26th Feb., 14 Dec., 1799 1817

Eva, nat. 9th Nov., 1828; ob. April 7, 1810

Rev. Harry Munro, M.A., Rector of St. John's Church, Philipsborough ob. 4th Sept., 1791

Anna Maria, nat. 20th Oct., 1737; ob. 4th Sept., 1791

Mary, nat. Nov. 10th, 1748; ob. 18th May, 1752

Hon. Peter Augustus Jay, of Rye Neck, nat. 24th Jan., 1777; mar. July 29th, 1807, at Liberty Hall, N. J.; ob. 20th Feb., 1843

Mary Rutherford, da. of Gen. Matthew Clarkson

Susan, nat. at Madrid, July 9th, 1780; ob. 1st August, 1780; Interred in the vault of the Flemish Chapel, at Madrid

Maria, mar. 22d April, 1801, nat. at Madrid, February 20th, 1783; ob. at N. Y., 21st November, 1855

Goldsborough Banyar, Esq., ob. June, 1806. Buried at Rye

Ann, nat. at Passy, near Paris, August 13th, 1783; ob. at N. Y., 13 Nov., 1856

Hon. Judge William Jay, of Bedford, nat. 16th June, 1789; ob. October 14, 1838. Buried with his wife in St. Matthew's Church-yard, Bedford

Augusta McKiever, da. of John McKiever, Esq., of Bloomingdale, N. Y.; nat. 11 Nov., 1790; ob. Apr. 26, 1857

Sarah Louisa, nat. New York, 20th Feb., 1792; ob. 22d April, 1818

John Clarkson, M.D., of Rye Neck; nat. Sept. 11th, 1807; mar. Nov. 8th, 1831

Laura Prime, da. of Nathaniel Prime, Esq., of New York

Mary Rutherford, nat. April 16th, 1810; mar. April 30th, 1829; ob. Sept. 9th, 1885

Frederick Prime, Esq., of N. Y.

Sarah, nat. Dec. 19th, 1811; mar. Feb. 11th, 1836; ob. 9th Jan., 1846

Wm. Dawson, Esq., of England

Catharine Helena, mar. Dec. 7th, 1835

Henry Aug. DuBois, LL.D., of New Haven

Anna Maria, m. Dec. 1st, 1841

Henry Evelyn Pierrepont, Esq., of Brooklyn

Peter Augustus, nat. Oct. 23d, 1821; mar. Jan. 13, 1848; ob. 1856

Josephine, da. of Jos. Pearson, Esq., of Washington, D. C.

Elizabeth Clarkson

Susan Matilda, mar. April 14, 1852

Mathew Clarkson

Mary Rutherford

Harriett, m. 1867, Thomas P. Gibbons, M. D.

Helen Jay, m. Francis T. Garretson, Esq.

Wm. Dawson, Esq., of England

Wm. Dawson, Esq., of England

Wm. Dawson, Esq., of England

Wm. Dawson, Esq., of England

Wm. Dawson, Esq., of England

Wm. Dawson, Esq., of England

Wm. Dawson, Esq., of England

Wm. Dawson, Esq., of England

Wm. Dawson, Esq., of England

Laura, nat. Feb. 8, 1854

Chas. Pemberton Wurtz

Augustus, nat. ob. 1839

John, nat. ob. 1841

Mary, m. 1861

Jonathan Edward, Esq., of the New York Bar

Cornelia

Rev. Peter Aug., nat. June, 1841; ob. 1875

Julia, da. of Alfred C. Post, M. D., of New York

Anna Maria, nat. 1843; ob. 1859

John Clarkson, nat. 1844

Harriett, da. of Gen Vinton

Alice

Sarah

Matilda, ob. young

Edith Van Cortlandt

Anna, nat. 17 Aug., 1813; ob. 5th of Jan., 1849

Rev. L. P. W. Balch, D.D., Rector of St. Bartholomew's Church, New York

Maria Banyer, nat. 28 April, 1815; ob. 17 Nov., 1881

John F. Buterworth, Esq., of N. Y.

Augusta

Elizabeth

Lewis, L. P. W., M.D. of Albany

Augusta Jay, = Wm. Leonard Smith

Eliza Jay

Eleanor Kingsland, da. of H. W. Field, of New York

Sarah Louisa, m. Aug. 1st, 1848

Alex. M. Bruen, M.D., of Bruen Place, Scarsdale

Eliza, nat. 23 May, 1823; ob. Dec., 1869

Henry E. Pellew, Esq., of England

William, nat. 26 June, 1828; ob. 16th March, 1829

Augusta, H. E. Pellew, Esq., mar. 1871, at Vienna

Wm. Henry Edwin Geo., nat. 10th June, 1859

Chas. Ernest, nat. Mar. 1863

Elise

Marian

Eleanor, m. June 23, 1859

Henry G. Chapman, Esq., of New York

William, Esq., of the N. Y. Bar, Lt. Col. U.S.A., nat. Feb. 12 1841; m. June, 12, 1878

Lucie, da. of Henry Oelrichs, Esq., of New York

John, nat. 23 Aug., 1842; ob. July 18th, 1843

Augusta, nat. Aug. 9th, 1844; m. Oct. 3, 1867, at Bedford House; ob. Mar. 20th, 1878

Edmund Randolph Robinson, Esq., of New York Bar

Mary, = William Henry Sheffield, Esq., of New York

Anna, m. 13 Oct., 1872

H. E. Lt. Gen. Lothar von Schweinitz, German Ambassador at Vienna, afterwards at St. Petersburg

Henry Grafton, nat. June 7th, 1860

John Jay, nat. Mar. 2d, 1862

Eleanor Jay

Beatrix

Julia

Eleanor Jay

Moncure, nat. Feb. 3, 1876

Augusta Frances Beverley

Eleanor Jay

William Jay, nat. 14th April, 1866

Samuel Bradhurst, nat. 9th Aug. 1870

John Jay, nat. 1st Sept., 1876

Hans Wilhelm, nat. 16 Nov. 1873

Emilia Eleonora

Maria

Hans Friedrich Hubert, nat. 30th Nov. 1877

Hans Lothar, nat. Aug. 17, 1880



street. It contains monuments to the families of Budd, Nelson, Kniffen, Osborne, Bulkley, Brooks, Merritt, Yeoman, Halstead, Barker, Brown, Prevost, Andrews, Berrian, Haviland, Russel, Mount, Fisher, and Ferguson, &c.

On the west shore of the Mill creek, extends the ancient territory of Apawquammis, afterwards named Budd's neck,<sup>a</sup> from John Budd, the first grantee of these lands under the Indians, A. D. 1661. In 1639, the name of John Budd occurs in the New Haven records, as one of the first planters of that place.<sup>b</sup> He subsequently removed to Southhold, Long Island, from whence he came to Rye in 1661. In 1663, John Budd was deputy from Rye to the general court of Connecticut.<sup>c</sup>

John Budd, proprietor of Budd's neck, by his last will dated the 13th of Oct., 1669, bequeathed to his son John, all his part of the Mill on Blind Brook, and to his son, Joseph, the Epawquammis lands. Joseph Budd was the first patentee of Budd's or Rye neck, under the crown, in 1720.<sup>d</sup> From the Budds, the neck went by purchase, into the families of the Purdys, Gedneys, Guions and Jays, &c. The property of the latter family, contains a large proportion of the old patent.

We have previously shown, that John Budd released this portion of his patrimonial estate, including *Pine Island, Marees neck* and *Hen Island*, to Peter Jay, A.D. 1745.

The Jay family who have been seated here for four generations, are of French origin, and descendants of Pierre Jay, Ecuyer, a wealthy merchant of La Rochelle, in 1684. Pierre Jay is presumed to have been of the house of Le Jay, of Poitou. There was also an ancient French family in Paris of the name of Le Jay, which formerly distinguished itself in the civil department of the State, many of whom bore the same Christian name, as many of the Jays have since done—amongst whom is found, a John le Jay, in the early part of the sixteenth century; a Nicolas le Jay, Baron de Tilley de la Maison Rouge, et de St. Fargeau, Seigneur de Villiers, was first President to the Parliament of Paris, in 1636. This individual was the son of Nicolas le Jay, styled "correcteur des Comptes a Paris."<sup>e</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Sometimes called Rye Neck.

<sup>b</sup> New Haven Col. Rec. vol. i. 7.

<sup>c</sup> New Haven Col. Rec. vol. i, 425.

<sup>d</sup> In the town records of Westchester, occurs the following entry: "Baptised by Mr. John Bartow, rector of Westchester parish, in the parish church in the town aforesaid, the eighth of August, 1703, Sarah Budd, the wife of Joseph Budd of Rye, in the County of Westchester, and their son Joseph Budd, aged eleven months, also.

<sup>e</sup> Hist. Genealogique et Chronologique par le P. Anselme, 1731, vol. ix. 304. The arms borne by Nicolas Jay, were: "D'azur au chevron d'or, accompagne en chef de deux étoiles de meme en point, d'un mouton passant d'argent. The arms of Pierre le Jay the Huguenot, closely resemble the former, viz.: "d'azur au chevron d'or, en chef demi soleil splendant, entre deux étoiles de meme en point, a roc propre surmonte par oiseaux. Crest. deux cœurs unis.

Of Pierre Jay, Mr. Renwick in his life of John Jay, remarks: "He was a native of France, and resided in the city of La Rochelle, his business was that of a merchant; and from collateral facts, we have reason to believe that he was both wealthy and enterprising. Like many of the most industrious and most respectable inhabitants in that part of the country, he was a Protestant; and doomed as we shall see, to undergo much trouble and persecution on account of his religion. He seems to have had a sort of presentiment—probably derived from the growing disfavor of the Protestants in the sight of the government—that it would at some time or other be necessary for him to sacrifice both country and property, on account of his religion. On this account, he determined to send one of his sons to England to acquire a knowledge of that language, and be educated there. His eldest son was the one chosen for this purpose, but he unfortunately died on the voyage. With great promptness, the father sent his second son, Augustus, who was then barely twelve years old, to take his place; this happened A. D. 1677. The troubles and persecutions which Mr. Jay seemed to have foreseen, and which preceded the revocation of the Edict of Nantes, now commenced; and in January, 1685, the Protestant Church at Rochelle was pulled down, pursuant to a decree passed at that time. Finding that the Protestants still continued the exercise of their religion, and were not to be forced to change it by any ordinary means, a regiment of dragoons was despatched to that portion of the country, and quartered upon the Protestant inhabitants. We have full evidence that these armed missionaries had free license to make their hosts as uncomfortable as possible, and were encouraged to practice upon them those insults so easily perpetrated by unrestrained and licentious soldiery."

We can easily imagine what must have been the situation of a pious family, and what the feelings of a husband and a father under such circumstances. Mr. Jay determined that those nearest and dearest to him should no longer be exposed to insult and contamination; and, finding a safe opportunity, he secretly sent his family, together with several articles of value, on board a vessel bound for England. This vessel arrived in safety. The departure of his family did not long remain undiscovered; and, causing suspicion of his own intentions, he was arrested and thrown into prison. From thence, by the intervention of some worthy Catholic friends, he was rescued; when, foreseeing that France was no longer a residence for him, he determined to leave it for ever. But first, it was necessary to raise funds for the support of himself and family in a strange land; this he dared not do by turning any of his French property into money lest his motives should be surmised,

and a second arrest should follow. At this time, several of his ships were expected to arrive. He gave secret orders to one of the pilots of the port, to bring the first of his ships that should arrive to anchor at some distance, and not come up to the town. The first of his vessels that made its appearance was from a Spanish port, laden chiefly with iron; and fortunately, both for his honor and his future means of living, both ship and cargo belonged entirely to himself. The pilot, faithful to his instructions, anchored the vessel in the place determined on. With his assistance, Mr. Jay embarked and sailed immediately for England. He arrived in safety, and happy must have been the meeting between him and his family. They were now out of danger, free from persecution, and in the enjoyment of their chosen religion; and, although their means were not so great as formerly, yet they still had a sufficiency.

On his escape from France being made public, all his property was confiscated, and never was returned—so as to be of any use either to him or to his children. But one thing marred their happiness; this was their uncertainty as what would be the fate of their second, now their eldest son, who was at that time probably in Africa, on commercial business of his father's. This son, Augustus, the grandfather of John Jay, returned (not knowing of his parent's escape) to Rochelle. Thence, facilitated by the kindness of his friends, he managed to procure a passage to Charleston, S. C.; for he also, like his parents, was resolute in sacrificing everything for his religion. From Charleston, driven by a climate unhealthy even to natives, and doubly so to foreigners, he travelled to Philadelphia; but, finding in that city, then an infant State, no field for the exercise of commerce, to which he had been brought up, he made his way to New York. Here he not only found occupation, but friends—driven like himself, by persecution, to carry the arts and industry of France to other shores. Here also he found churches built and attended by French refugees, and a service performed in his own language. Finding that his success in life must wholly depend upon his own exertions, he applied himself with diligence and skill to business, and followed for many years the calling of a supercargo. During this time, he both heard from his parents and made them acquainted with his welfare.<sup>a</sup>

Leaving his fortunes for a while, we turn to those of his younger brother, Isaac. At this time, the war between William of Orange and James II of England was in progress, and a regiment of French refu-

---

<sup>a</sup> On the 4th of March, 1686, letters of denization were granted to Augustus Jay. Upon the 29th of September, 1698, King William III, by his royal letters patent, granted to Augustus Jay, "all the rights and privileges of a native born English subject." Augustus Jay was admitted to the freedom of the city of New York, by the Mayor and Aldermen, on the 27th January, 1700. From the original documents in possession of the Hon. William Jay.



gees was enrolled by the former to assist in driving from Ireland his catholic competitor for the throne. Into this regiment Isaac entered, impelled by the ardor of youth, and no doubt not a little by the recollection of the many insults and injuries he and his family had received at the hands of those who professed the Romish religion. He sealed his conviction of the justice of his own cause with his blood, and died not long after the battle of the Boyne, from the effects of wounds received in that engagement.

In the year 1692, Augustus, while pursuing his commercial avocations, started on a voyage from New York to Hamburg; on the passage the vessel was captured by a French privateer, and carried into St. Maloes. He, with other prisoners, was confined, not very closely as it appears by subsequent events, in a fortress about fifteen miles from that place. While there, news arrived of the battle of La Hogue, and the prisoners were ordered into closer confinement. They, in some way, received news of this order; and determined, before it was put in force, to effect their escape. Accordingly, on the evening that was to precede their imprisonment, Augustus and some of his companions succeeded in scaling the wall and dropping into the ditch. Whether his friends were stunned by the fall, or re-captured, he had no means of ascertaining. He himself, however, got out of the ditch, took the road and arrived at Rochelle. Here he was secreted and protected by his aunt, until she found means to send him to the isle of Aux Rhé, whence he got passage to Denmark. On his way home he passed through Holland, performed his business there, and then crossed over to England, where he saw his father and sister for the first time since their separation so many years before. There was one drawback to their joy, one cause of grief; the mother who had gone through so many trials with them, was no more. The calls of business soon separated this happy party, and Augustus took a last farewell, and returned to his business in America.

A few years after his return he married Anna Maria, daughter of Mr. Balthazar Bayard. She, like himself, was descended from a family who had suffered from religious persecution. Her great grand-father was a Frenchman, a Protestant professor of theology in one of the colleges at Paris, who was forced either to give up his religion or leave his country, during the reign of Louis XIII. He chose the latter alternative, and fled to Holland, whence his grand-son emigrated to this country.

By this marriage, Augustus Jay found himself surrounded by a numerous and influential Dutch connection. In the colony of New York, the descendants of the Dutch were the most numerous class of the population; and they were remarkable for the liberal manner in which they



befriended and assisted their countrymen, or those connected with them.

Soon after his marriage, finding himself in comfortable and respectable circumstances, Mr. Jay sent out for his father and sister: but the father felt that his declining years would not permit such a voyage, and the sister would on no account leave him. Augustus Jay went on for many years increasing his wealth and influence; and, after having had three children, all of whom were daughters, he was at last made happy by the birth of a son in the year 1704. This son, the father of John Jay, he named Peter. No other children were born; and Peter, therefore, at his father's death, which did not take place until he had reached the age of eighty-four, found himself sole bearer of the name of Jay.

Peter Jay, like his father and grand-father, was a merchant and followed his business with such success, that at the age of forty he was able to retire and live on the proceeds of his industry. At the age of twenty-four, he married Mary van Cortlandt. This lady was the daughter of Jacobus van Cortlandt of the Lower Yonckers, by his wife Eva Philipse, daughter of the Hon. Frederick Philipse, lord of the manor of Philipsburgh. Through this lady, the Jays subsequently became possessed of the Bedford estates.

Peter Jay, Esq., by his wife Mary van Cortlandt, had ten children.

Their eighth child, John Jay, was born on the 12th of December, 1745, the same year that his father purchased the Rye estate.<sup>a</sup> At the age of eight years, John Jay was sent to a grammar school at New Rochelle; his instructor being the Rev. Pierre Stoupe, minister of the French Episcopal church. "Here he continued for three years, and was then placed by his father under the care of a private tutor, who prepared him for college. The one selected was King's, now Columbia College, an institution that boasts of many celebrated men among its alumni."

"In his fourth collegiate year he decided upon the law as his future profession.<sup>b</sup> At the commencement held at St. George's chapel, May, 1764, General Gage and his Majesty's council, &c., being present, Richard Harrison, seventeen years of age, delivered the salutatory oration; John Jay, a dissertation on the blessings of peace." Upon this occasion he received his degree of Bachelor of Arts.

The annexed sketch of Mr. Jay's subsequent life is from Blake's Biographical Dictionary.

"John Jay, LL. D., first Chief Justice of the United States under the constitution of 1789, graduated at King's (now Columbia) College,

<sup>a</sup> Here John Jay spent his boyhood.

<sup>b</sup> Compiled and abridged from the life of John Jay by Henry B. Renwick,

A.D. 1764; and in 1768 was admitted to the bar. He was appointed to the first American Congress, in 1774. Being on the committee with Lee and Livingston to draft and address the people of Great Britain, he was the writer of that eloquent production. In the Congress of 1775, he was on various important committees, performing more service perhaps than any other member except Franklin and John Adams. In May, 1776, he was recalled to assist in framing the government of New York, and in consequence his name is not attached to the Declaration of Independence; but July 9th, he reported resolutions in the Provincial Convention in favor of the declaration. After the fall of New York, and the removal of the Provincial Assembly to Poughkeepsie, Mr. Jay retained his resolute patriotism. The very eloquent address of the convention to the people of New York, dated Fishkill, December 23, 1776, and signed by A. Ten Broeck, as president, was written by him. March 12, 1777, he reported to the convention of New York the draft of a form of government, which was adopted; and many of the provisions of which, were introduced into the constitution of other States. From May 3, 1777, to August 18, 1779, he was Chief Justice of the State, but resigned that office in consequence of his duties as president of Congress. The glowing address of that body to their constituents, dated September 8, 1779, was prepared by him. On the 29th of September he was appointed minister plenipotentiary to the court of Spain. He was one of the commissioners to negotiate peace with Great Britain, and signed the definitive treaty of peace at Paris, September 3, 1783. He returned to America in 1784. Congress had previously appointed him Secretary of State for foreign affairs. In the difficult circumstances of the country, the secretary was in effect the head of the government. Mr. Jay's services were of great importance. He drew up, October 13, 1776, an elaborate report on the relations between the United States and Great Britain. Though not a member of the convention which formed the Constitution of the United States, he was present at Annapolis, and aided by his advice. He also assisted Madison and Hamilton, in writing the Federalist. In the convention of New York, he contributed to the adoption of the Constitution. He was appointed Chief Justice, by Washington, September 26, 1789. In 1794 he was appointed minister plenipotentiary to Great Britain, and succeeded in negotiating the treaty which still goes by his name. He was governor of the State of New York from 1795 to 1801. The remainder of his life he passed in retirement at Bedford, in this county. He died 17th May, 1829. His remains are deposited in the family burying ground.

By his wife, Sarah Vanburgh, daughter of the Hon. William Livings-

ton, Governor of New Jersey, he left issue two sons, viz.: the late Hon. Peter Augustus Jay, member of the State Assembly in 1813, recorder of New York in 1819, and delegate to the convention which framed the late constitution of the State of New York; and the Hon. William Jay of Bedford, for several years a Judge of the late Court of Common Pleas in this county; besides four daughters.

The family residence is situated near the post road leading to Rye at no great distance from the river. The building is a handsome structure of wood, presenting a lofty portico on the north. The south front commands a beautiful lawn, and charming views of the Sound and Long Island. Some highly interesting family portraits adorn the walls of the hall and dining-room; amongst them are the following: Hon. John Jay, first Chief Justice of the United States, and Governor of the State of New York. Head by Stewart, figure by Trumbull. The Hon. John Jay sat to Colonel Trumbull (his secretary) for this picture, whilst resident ambassador at the Court of St. James, London. The artist subsequently presented it to Mr. Jay.<sup>a</sup> Augustus Jay, who emigrated to this country in 1686, a copy from the original, by Waldo; Anna Maria Bayard, wife of Augustus Jay, by ditto; Peter Augustus Jay, as a boy, artist unknown; an old painting upon oak panel, supposed to represent Catharine, wife of the Hon. Stephen Van Cortlandt, South Holland. This lady appears habited in a plain black dress, wearing a high neck ruffle, and in her right hand holds a clasped book. In one corner of the picture is inscribed "*Ætat. 64, 1630.*"<sup>b</sup>

The library contains a large and valuable collection of shells amounting to between three or four thousand specimens. John C. Jay, M.D., has published several catalogues of the new and rare shells contained in his cabinet.<sup>c</sup>

Among other family relics, we noticed the gold snuff box presented by the corporation of New York, with the freedom of the city, to his Excellency John Jay, on the 4th of October, 1784. Also a French Bible,<sup>d</sup> containing the following memoranda: *Auguste Jay est né a la Rochelle dans le Royaume de France le <sup>23</sup>/<sub>13</sub> Mars, 1665. Laus Deo. N. York. July ye 10th, 1733, this day at 4 o'clock in ye morning dyed Eva Van*

<sup>a</sup> This picture has been engraved for Herring's National Portrait Gallery. In the possession of Henry Munro, Esq., is another portrait of the Hon. John Jay, by Stewart, in his robes as Chief Justice of the United States.

<sup>b</sup> This picture was found in one of the old city residences of the Van Cortlandts.

<sup>c</sup> See "Catalogue of recent shells in the cabinet of John C. Jay," 8vo. New York, 1835, pp. 56. "Description of new and rare shells with four plates," 8vo. N. Y. 1836, 2d ed. pp. 78. "A catalogue of the shells arranged according to the Lamarckian system, together with descriptions of new and rare species contained in the collection of John C. Jay, M. D." 3d ed. 4to. New York, pp. 125, with ten plates.

<sup>d</sup> The title runs thus, "*La Sainte Bible qui contient le Vieux et le Nouveau Testament. par David Martin, pasteur de l'Eglise Wallone d'Utrecht. Amsterdam, MDCCVII.*"

Cortlandt, was buried ye next day ye 12 en ye voute at Mr. Stuyvesant's about six and seven o'clock."

The situation of the Jay property is very fine, embracing some of the most graceful undulations of a hilly district, highly diversified with rocks, woods and river scenery. Contiguous to the southern portion of the estate, and bordering the Sound, is Maree's neck, and the neighboring islands of Pine and Hen-hawk, the latter consisting of seventy-seven acres. A curious phenomenon, called Mirage, is frequently seen from these shores, when the land on the opposite coast of Long Island appears to rise above the waters of the Sound, while the intermediate portions seem to be sunk beneath the waves. This illusion is caused by a certain state of the atmosphere, depending chiefly upon its humidity and warmth which changes considerably its ordinary refractive power. In days of ignorance and superstition, such appearances occasionally excited a strange interest.

In an opening of the woods on the south-east side of the mansion, is the family cemetery.

HERE  
are interred  
the remains of the  
JAY FAMILY,  
which were removed from  
the family vault  
New York,  
the 28th of October,  
1807.

IN MEMORY OF  
JOHN JAY,  
Eminent among those who asserted the liberty  
and established the Independence  
of his country,  
which he long served in the most  
important offices,  
Legislative, Executive, Judicial and Diplomatic,  
and distinguished in them all, by his  
ability, firmness, patriotism and integrity.  
He was in his life and in his death,  
an example of the virtues,  
the faith and the hopes  
of a Christian.  
Born Dec. 12th, 1745,  
Died May 17th, 1829.



IN MEMORY  
of  
SIR JAMES JAY, KN'T.  
born 27 October, 1732,  
died 20 October, 1815.

PETER JAY MUNRO,  
who died  
22 Sept., 1833,  
aged 66 years,  
8 months and 12 days.

IN MEMORY OF  
JUDITH,  
relict of JOHN W. WATKINS, ESQ.,  
and last surviving daughter of  
WILLIAM LIVINGSTON,  
Governor of New Jersey,  
who departed this life  
July 7th, 1843,  
in the 83d year of her age.

Anchored safe, the weary soul  
Shall find eternal rest,  
Nor storms shall beat nor billows roll  
Across my peaceful breast.

Besides other appropriate memorials to Peter Jay, Peter Augustus Jay, Esq., Mary Rutherford Jay, Margaret Munro, Goldsborough Banyar, Eva Munro, Harriet Van Cortlandt and Mary Jay, wife of Frederick Prime, Esq.

The adjoining territory upon the west, constitutes what was formerly called Guion's neck. From a branch of the Guion family descended from Isaac Guion of New Rochelle, the son of Louis Guion, who emigrated from England about 1687. The beautiful beaver stream<sup>a</sup> called by the Indians, Pockeotessen, rises north of Guion neck, and forms its western boundary.

The Purdy estate is situated upon the eastern shore of Rye neck bordering the Blind Brook, (Mockquams). A short distance from the house is the burial place of the Purdy family, Among other memorials is the following :

JOSHUA PURDY,  
ob. March 4, 1800,  
Ætat, 79.

On the west bank of the Byram River, which here forms the boundary between New York and Connecticut, is situated the village of *Port*

<sup>a</sup> Sometimes styled Stony Brook.

*Chester.*<sup>a</sup> This place has grown rapidly within a few years, and bids fair to rival any on the Sound; among other causes, its manufactories have contributed greatly to promote this prosperity. The Byram or Armonck river, which waters this beautiful section of Westchester County takes its rise from the Byram lake—an extensive sheet of water, fed by the springs of the Comonck or Armonck hills in Bedford. During its downward course, it winds between lofty hills, fringed with copse wood, and abounding with bold projections which here and there break the course of its rapid current. In other places it forms romantic glens, shaded with the wild hemlock and fir. The wooded shores of Byram point, rise directly opposite the village, forming a fine contrast to the western side of the river. The Byram is navigable nearly two miles from its mouth, affording an easy transit from this place for the marketable productions of the interior.

The site of the ancient *ferry* across the Sound to Matinecock, upon Long Island, was the *Horse Rock* in the vicinity of *Rye Port*.

Upon the 18th of July, 1739, King George the Second, by his royal letters patent, regulated and established a *ferry* at this place, to be kept and attended for the convenience of passing and repassing to and from the land in the *two patents called Budd's neck and Peningoe neck*, lying and being in Rye, to the island of Nassau, over against the township of Oyster Bay, in the said island.

Which ferry our loving subjects John Budd, Hachaliah Brown and Jonathan Brown, Esqs., propose to undertake and to provide and keep at their own charge and expense, a sufficient number of good and able boats and servants for the due attendance on such ferry, &c., &c., and have free liberty to ask, demand and take for ferriage at and for such ferry, &c., the several and respective fees hereinafter mentioned, &c., viz: for every person one shilling and sixpence, for every man and horse three shillings, for all horned cattle from two years old and upwards each two shillings, for all colts and horned cattle under two years old each one shilling, for every score of sheep, lambs, hogs and sows five shillings, and so in proportion for any greater or lesser number, for every full barrel one shilling, for every empty barrel four pence, for every full pipe or hogshead six shillings, for every empty pipe or hogshead two shillings, for every firkin or tub of butter four pence, for every bushel of wheat, salt, grain, seeds or any other thing fully measured and sold by the bushel one penny; for every waggon, cart or carriage seven shillings and sixpence, for every pair of wheels two shillings, for every cupboard, press for clothes or writing desk four shillings and sixpence, for every full trunk or chest two shillings and sixpence, for every empty trunk or chest one shilling, for every full half barrel sixpence, for every gammon, flitch of bacon or piece of smoked beef one penny, for every hundred weight of gunpowder, iron, steel, sheet pewter or lead and iron or iron, copper or brass kettles or pots one

<sup>a</sup> Formerly called Sawpits.

shilling and sixpence, and so in proportion for any greater or less quantity, for every such one penny, for every corn fan five pence, for every hundred of shingles one shilling, for every bed, bedstead and bedding together three shillings, for every chair two pence, for every table eight pence, for every saddle without horse three pence, for every gun two pence, for every case with bottles nine pence, for every frying pan or warming pan two pence, for every looking glass of one foot sixpence, and so in proportion for all other goods for which no provision is hereby made, and also all manner of privileges, &c., &c. For which the patentees and their heirs are to pay to the collector general of the town being, on the 25th day of March, commonly called Lady-day, the yearly rent of two shillings and sixpence, &c., &c.

FREDERICK MORRIS, *Secretary*.

The ancient ferry now exists only in name, the present rapid communications with the island having superseded this dangerous mode of navigation. The property is vested in the Provoost family. Directly opposite the port lies Minnewies or Manursing Island, separated from the main by a narrow creek on the southwest side. It consists of one hundred acres, divided between the three proprietors, Joseph Bartam, Mr. Beale and Thomas Theall. Upon the main is situated the tide mill of Mr. Kirby.

A dock appears to have been commenced at or near *Rye port* as early as 1679, for in this year we find a grant made by the town to "John Ogden of forty-eight or fifty acres of land by the water side at the *Fishing rock*, for the purpose of building a house and wharf. The inhabitants of *Peningoe Neck* to have wharfage free." From *Rye port* a steamboat runs daily to and from the city of New York. There is also a neat boarding house established here for the accommodation of summer visitors to this delightful spot.

The islands—called the *Great, Middle and Little Captains*—east of Manursing, belong to this town.

#### THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH.

It was the first place of worship built in the village of Portchester—commenced in 1830 and completed in 1833. The congregations of Rye and Portchester remained united for twenty-three years. In 1852 it became a distinct church.

| CALLED. | LIST OF PASTORS.         | RESIGNED.          |
|---------|--------------------------|--------------------|
| 1853,   | REV. HENRY BENEDICT,     | 1863.              |
| 1864,   | REV. VALENTINE A. LEWIS, | 1867.              |
| 1868,   | REV. EZRA F. MUNDY,      | 1878. <sup>a</sup> |
| 1877,   | REV. WILLIS W. DOWEL,    | present.           |

At the foot of King street stands the

<sup>a</sup> Baird's History of Rye.

## METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH.

It was built in 1831; it was dedicated by Bishop Janes in 1858, and cost about \$10,000. This church took the name of Summerfield church, from regard for the memory of the sainted John Summerfield, and two of whose surviving sisters were members—Mrs. James Blackstock and Miss Summerfield.

The King street Methodist Episcopal church was built about the same year.

## THE BAPTIST CHURCH

was dedicated on the 2d of February, 1865.

## PASTORS:

REV. E. S. RAYMOND,

REV. DR. BYRNE,

REV. LAWSON STEWART,

REV. JONATHAN BASTOW,

REV. A. C. FERGUSON.<sup>a</sup>

At the southern end of the village of Portchester stands the

## ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH.

About 1846, they purchased a small frame building on Main street, which they used as a church, until 1852, when the Rev. E. J. O'Reilly became its pastor. In 1852, the old church was sold, and the present, Our Lady of Mercy, was built on the same site. Connected with this church is a school for boys and girls, and a convent occupied by the Sisters of Charity, who have charge of the female department.

## APPOINTED.

## PASTORS.

## REMOVED.

1853,

REV. E. J. O'REILLY,

1853.

1854,

REV. THOMAS McLOUGHLIN,

1854.

REV. MATTHEW DOWLING,

present incumbent.<sup>b</sup>

Near the eastern end of the village stands the

## PROTESTANT EPISCOPAL CHURCH.

Rev. P. S. Chauncey, rector, of Rye, commenced services in 1836, in this village. They were often held in the old school house, at the foot of King street hill, and sometimes in the Methodist church, and again in Armonck hall, then known as Burger's chapel.

The corner stone of the present church was laid on the 25th of July, 1843, by Bishop Onderdonk. The land was given by the late William Adey, and completed at a cost of about \$6,000. It was consecrated on the 15th of July, 1844, and called St. Peter's chapel, in connection with

<sup>a</sup> Baird's History of Rye.

<sup>b</sup> Baird's History of Rye.



Christ church, Rye. Rev. Mr. Chauncey continued to discharge the duties of this part of his charge, until January 30, 1848, when he resigned the rectorship of Rye. During the ministry of Rev. Ed. C. Bull, steps were taken to form a distinct parish at Portchester; and on April 12, 1852, St. Peter's church was organized as a separate parish. The rectory of St. Peter's church was built in 1860; the ground, two acres and three-eighths, was given by Read Peck, Esq. The church was enlarged in 1855, and a fine Sunday-school and lecture-room was erected.<sup>a</sup>

| CALLED. | RECTORS.                      | REMOVED. |
|---------|-------------------------------|----------|
| 1852,   | REV. ISAAO PECK,              | 1858.    |
| 1858,   | REV. GEORGE PENNELL,          | 1859.    |
| 1860,   | REV. SAMUEL HOLLINGSWORTH,    |          |
| 1872,   | REV. BROOKHOLET MORGAN,       | 1879.    |
| 1880,   | REV. J. GARDENER ROSENORANTZ, |          |

On the same side of the main street is situated the Presbyterian church.

Near the western entrance of the village stands the residence of the Merritt family. Mr. Merritt, the present occupant, is a lineal descendant of John Merritt, one of the original proprietors of Rye. Of this family was "Thomas Merritt, a cornet of cavalry in the Queen's Rangers, A.D. 1780. This gentleman subsequently settled in Upper Canada, and held the offices of sheriff of the District of Niagara, and surveyor of the King's forests. He died at St. Catharine's, May, 1842, aged eighty-two."

*King street* extends nearly seven miles north of Portchester, and finally terminates in the north-west corner of Greenwich township, Connecticut. The surrounding country is a fine agricultural district, embracing some of the finest farms in the county.

#### BAPTIST CHURCH, KING STREET.

This congregation existed before the Revolution. The church was completed in 1773, with a membership of fifty-four. It was supplied for eleven years by the ministers of Tarrytown, Danbury, Long Island, and New York. After this the Rev. Nathaniel Finch was settled as Pastor, and continued in office until 1826; he died in 1829, in the eighty-fifth year of his age.

| CALL. | PASTORS.                       | REMOVED. |
|-------|--------------------------------|----------|
| 1826, | REV. NATHANIEL FINCH,          | 1826.    |
| 1836, | REV. E. S. RAYMOND,            | 1836.    |
| 1840, | REV. MR. BREWER,               | 1840.    |
| 1840, | REV. E. S. RAYMOND (returned), | 1862.    |
| 1862, | REV. O. C. KIRKHAM,            | 1862.    |

Since then, the congregation has had no settled pastor.<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Baird's History of Rye.

<sup>b</sup> Baird's Hist. of Rye.

During the Revolutionary war the Continental forces appear to have been frequently quartered in this town. On the 8th of January, General Parson's brigade were posted in *King street*. The same year, General Wooster's division retreated as far as *Rye Neck*. Lieutenant Colonel Van Rensselaer also received orders from Congress to maintain his station until obliged to retreat upon *Rye Neck*. Subsequently the enemy occupied this portion of Westchester County, where the soldiers did much wanton mischief and plundered most of the houses. Their principal encampment seems to have been on the high ground between the villages of Rye and Portchester.

The earliest record of *town officers* occurs on the 25th of April, 1671. Upon this occasion, "George Kniffen and Francis Purdy were appointed pounders."

"Upon the 3d of October, Joseph Horton, Thomas Brown and John Brondig were chosen *town* and *selectmen* for the year ensuing." "28th of September, George Lane was elected *constable*." "13th of June, 1691, Mr. Joseph Theall, *supervisor*." "June 26th, 1696, Deliverance Brown was chosen *constable* for the town of Rye, and Mr. John Hoit, *recorder*."

The *general surface* of the town is uneven and stoney.<sup>a</sup> The land, however, is under good cultivation. The soil consists of a clay loam. The natural growth of wood is oak, chestnut, walnut, hickory, &c., on the higher lands; and in the low lands, ash, birch, and maple. We have already shown that it is drained on the east by Byram River, and on the west by Blind Brook, both flowing into Long Island Sound. Upon these streams are numerous mill seats. Among the principal mineral productions of the town may be noticed Chlorite,<sup>b</sup> "a soft greenish substance, composed of minute scales, closely compacted together. It differs very little from soapstone," also Tourmaline, in long slender crystals.<sup>c</sup>

---

<sup>a</sup> Disturnell's Gazetteer of N. Y.

<sup>b</sup> Rocks containing it are said to be Chloritic.

<sup>c</sup> See geological survey of the State, 1840.

# THE TOWN OF SCARSDALE.

---

This town is bounded on the north by White Plains and Greenburgh, east by Mamaroneck, west by Greenburgh, and south by Eastchester and Rochelle. Under the Colonial Government it constituted a portion of the manor of Scarsdale, which also embraced the greater part of White Plains and the townships of North and New Castle.<sup>a</sup>

The place acquired its name from the Heathcote family, who originally came from Scarsdale, Derbyshire, England. "More onward," says the learned Camden (describing that part of Derbyshire), "we see Chesterfield in *Scarsdale*—that is, *in a dale enclos'd with rocks*. For crags were call'd *scarrs* by the Saxons." Under the Mohegan Indians Scarsdale is believed to have formed a portion of the Indian territory of *Quarappas*, which was ceded to John Richbell by the Indian proprietors in 1660.

A.D. 1696, Col. Caleb Heathcote obtained of Anne Richbell, relict of John Richbell deceased, a full patent right to purchase lands, "*which are already included in her husband's sale of 1660.*"<sup>b</sup>

Upon the 30th of March, 1701, occurs the following indenture "between Col. Caleb Heathcote on the one part, of Mamaroneck, gentleman, and the Indian proprietors, Patthunck, Beapo, Kohawney and Wapetuck, on the other part:

"Witnesseth that the said Patthunck, Beapo, Kohawney and Wapetuck, &c., for and in consideration of a certain sum of good and lawful money to them in hand paid, and secured to be paid, at or before the ensealing and delivery of

---

<sup>a</sup> The present township was organized on the 7th of March, 1788.

<sup>b</sup> See Mamaroneck, New Castle, &c.

these presents, by the said Caleb Heathcote, the receipt whereof the said Patthunck, Beauvo, Cohawney, Wapetuck, &c., doth hereby acknowledge themselves therewith to be fully satisfied and contented and paid and thereof and therefrom do acquit, exonerate and discharge the said Caleb Heathcote, his heirs, executors and administrators, have given, granted, sold, bargained, alienated, enfeoffed, and confirmed, and do by these presents give, grant, bargain, sell, alienate, enfeoff and confirm unto the said Caleb Heathcote, his heirs and assignees forever, all our rights, title, and interest in a certain tract of land lying and being in the county of Westchester, bounded as follows: To begin on the west side at the southernmost end of a ridge known by the name of Richbell's or Horse ridge, at a great rock, and so to run a north-north-west line to Broncks's river, and on the easternmost side with Mamaroneck river, and from the head thereof to Broncks's river, to have and to hold the said bargained premises, with every of the appurtenances thereunto belonging, to the said Caleb Heathcote, his heirs and assignees, forever: and that the said Caleb Heathcote, his heirs, executors, administrators, and assignees, shall and may at all times hereafter, and from time to time, peaceably and quietly have, hold, use, occupy, and enjoy, all and singular the herein before mentioned bargained premises, with their and every appurtenances, without the let, hindrance or molestation of them the said proprietors, their heirs or assignees. In witness whereof they have hereunto set their hands and seals, the day above written.<sup>a</sup>

Signed sealed and delivered in presence of us.

ANN MULLINGTON,

BENJ. COLLIER,

JOHN COOKE,

The mark of

KAOKQUERIN WOMATERA.

PATTHUNCK,  
BEAUVO,  
COHAWNEY,  
WAPETUCK.

Upon the 21st of March, 1701, the extensive purchases of Colonel Caleb Heathcote in Westchester county were erected into the lordship and manor of Scarsdale, to be holden of the king in free and common soccage, its lord yielding and rendering therefor annually, upon the festival of the Nativity, five pounds current money of New York, &c.

#### THE ROYAL PATENT.

William the Third, by the grace of God, of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, &c., to all to whom these presents shall come, sendeth greeting: Whereas our loving subject Caleb Heathcote, Esquire, hath petitioned the Honorable John Nanfan, our Lieutenant-Governor and Commander-in-chief of the Province of New York in America, and our Council of the said Province, for a confirmation of a tract of land in the county of Westchester, beginning at a marked tree by Mamaroneck river, which is the easternmost side of the northern bounds of Mamaroneck township, being about two miles from the country road, and to run along the said river to the head thereof, and thence in a north line until eighteen miles from said marked tree is completed, westerly at the marked tree or a great rock, being the westernmost part of the said north-

<sup>a</sup> From the original, in the possession of Edward F. DeLancey, Esq.



ern bounds of the aforesaid township being about two miles from the county road, and thence to run northerly eighteen miles as ye line on ye easternmost side of the said land runneth, including in ye said manor his eighth part of the two miles laid out for ye town of Mamaroneck, with ye lott he now liveth on, and ye lott bought of Alice Hatfield, with the lands and meadows below, westerly to a path to him belonging by virtue of his deeds and conveyances, part of which land within the bounds aforesaid was purchased by John Richbell from ye native Indian proprietors, which said John Richbell had a grant and confirmation for ye same from Francis Lovelace, late Governor of our said Province, and ye right of ye said John Richbell therein is legally vested in ye said Caleb Heathcote, and other parts have been purchased by ye said Caleb Heathcote of ye native Indian proprietors; and whereas the said Caleb Heathcote hath further petitioned our said Lieutenant Governor and Council that the said tract of land may be erected into a manor by ye name of ye manor of Scarsdale, whereupon our said Lieutenant Governor, by and with the advice of our Council, directed a writ to the high sheriff of the said county of Westchester to inquire to what damage such patent would be, which writ issued accordingly with a proviso that it should not give the said Caleb Heathcote any further title than which he already hath to the land called White Plains, which is in dispute between ye said Caleb Heathcote and some of ye inhabitants of ye town of Rye, whereupon ye said sheriff returned that ye jurors found that there is no damage to ye King or his subjects in erecting the manor aforesaid, except ye said White Plains which are in dispute and contest between ye said Caleb Heathcote and ye town of Rye, and excepting James Mott and ye rest of ye purchasers of Mamaroneck which have deed within ye patent of Richbell, *Know ye* that of our special grace, certain knowledge and mere motion, we have given, granted, ratified and confirmed, and by these presents do for us, our heirs and successors, give, grant, ratify and confirm unto ye said Caleb Heathcote, his heirs and assignees, all and every ye aforesaid tracts and parcels of land and meadow within ye respective limits and bounds before mentioned and expressed, together with all and every the messuages, tenements, buildings, barns, houses, out-houses, fences, orchards, gardens, pastures, meadows, marshes, swamps, pools, ponds, waters, water-courses, woods, under-woods, trees, timbers, quarries, runs, rivers, rivulets, brooks, lakes, streams, creeks, harbours, beeches, bays, islands, ferries, fishing, fowling, hunting and hawking, mines, minerals (royal mines only excepted), and all the rights, members, liberties, privileges, jurisdictions, royalties, hereditaments, profits, benefits, advantages and appurtenances whatsoever to aforesaid several and respective tracts and parcels of lands and meadow belonging or in any ways appertaining or accepted, reputed, taken, known or occupied as part, parcel, or member thereof to have and to hold all the aforesaid several and respective tracts, parcels of land and meadow and premises within the respective limits and bounds aforesaid, with all and every of the appurtenances unto him the said Caleb Heathcote, his heirs and assigns, to the only proper use and behoof of him the said Caleb Heathcote, his heirs and assigns for ever, provided that nothing herein contained shall be construed, deemed or taken to give the said Caleb Heathcote any further title than what he now by virtue of these our letters patent lawfully hath to ye said White Plains in dispute as aforesaid, nor any jurisdiction within the said White Plains until the same shall happen to belong to the said Caleb Heathcote; and moreover *Know ye*

that of further our special grace, certain knowledge and mere motion, we have thought fit to erect all the afore recited tracts and parcels of land and meadow within the limits and bounds aforesaid into a lordship and manor except as before excepted; and therefore by these presents we do for us, our heirs and successors, erect, make and constitute all the afore-recited tracts and parcels of land and meadow within the limits and bounds before mentioned (except as before excepted) together with all and every the above granted premises, with all and every of their appurtenances into one lordship or manor, to all intents and purposes, and it is our royal will and pleasure, that the said lordship and manor shall from henceforth be called the lordship and manor of Scarsdale; and *Know ye* that we reposing especial trust and confidence in the loyalty, wisdom, justice, prudence and circumspection of our said loving subject, do for us, our heirs and successors, give and grant unto the said Caleb Heathcote, his heirs and assigns, full power and authority at all times forever hereafter within the said lordship or manor one court leet and one court baron, to hold and keep at such time and times, and so often yearly as he or they shall think meet, and we do further give and grant to the said Caleb Heathcote, his heirs and assigns, all fines and issues and amercements at the said court leet and court baron to be holden within our said lordship or manor, to be sett, forfeited or imposed, or payable or happening at any time to be payable by any of the inhabitants of or within the said lordship or manor of Scarsdale, or the limits and bounds thereof, and also all and every power and powers, authority and authorities for holding and keeping the said court leet and court baron from time to time and to award to and issue out the accustomed writs to be issued and awarded out of courts leet and courts baron, and also that the said court leet and court baron be kept by the said Caleb Heathcote, his heirs and assigns for ever, his or their or any of their stewards and deputies, and appointed with full and ample power and authority to distrain for the rents, services and other sums of money payable by virtue of the premises, and all other lawful remedies and means for the having, possessing, levying and enjoying the premises and every part and parcel of the same, and all waifs and estrays, dead-ands and goods of felons happening or to be happening, being or to be forfeited within the said lordship or manor of Scarsdale; and we do further give and grant unto the said Caleb Heathcote, his heirs and assigns, that all and singular ye tenants of him ye said Caleb Heathcote within ye said manor shall and may at all times hereafter meet together and choose assessors within ye manor aforesaid, according to such rules, ways and methods as are prescribed for cities, towns and counties, within our said Province by ye acts of General Assembly for defraying the public charge of each respective city, town and county aforesaid, and all such sums of money so assessed and levied to collect and dispose of for such use as any act or acts as the said General Assembly shall establish and appoint, to have, hold, possess or enjoy all and singular the said lordship or manor of Scarsdale and premises, with all and every of their appurtenances unto the said Caleb Heathcote, his heirs and assigns for ever, and that the said lordship or manor aforesaid shall be and for ever continue free and exempt from the jurisdiction of every town, township or manor whatsoever, to be holden of us, our heirs and successors in free and common soccage according to the tenure of our manor of East Greenwich, in the county of Kent, within our kingdom of England, yielding, rendering and paying therefor yearly and every year for ever at our city

of New York unto us, our heirs and successors, or to such office or officers as shall from time to time be impowered to receive ye same, five pounds current money of New York, upon the Nativity of our Lord, in lieu and stead of all services, dues, duties or demands whatsoever. In testimony whereof we have caused the great seal of our province of New York to be hereunto affixed.

Witness John Nanfan, Esq., our Lieutenant Governor and Commander-in-chief of our Province of New York and territories depending thereon in America. Given at Fort William Henry in our city of New York, this twenty-first day of March, in the fourteenth year of our reign. Anno Domini 1701.<sup>a</sup>

JOHN NANFAN.

The Heathcote family, according to Lyson, “were originally of Heathcote in the parish of Hartington, County of Derby, England. The first mention we find of them is in the tenth reign of Edward IV, (1470-1471,) when they were engaged in mercantile pursuits at Chesterfield<sup>b</sup> in the same county. George Heathcote, who is said to have descended of an ancient and worthy family of that name in Derbyshire, possessed of a large estate,<sup>c</sup> was of Brampton near Chesterfield in that county, and Hundred of Scarsdale. He married Beatrice ———, and died in 1596, leaving issue George Heathcote of Lodes, and of “the Lodge,” also near Chesterfield. “He was very intimate with Gilbert ‘Talbot, Earl of Shrewsbury, Knight of the most noble order of the Garter, one of the chief noblemen in the reign of Queen Elizabeth. By means of this acquaintance he was drawn into great engagements for the aforesaid Earl which did diminish his estate. The Earl stood god-father to his son, and gave him the name of Gilbert.”<sup>d</sup> He died in 1601, leaving, by his wife, Agnes, who died in 1609, first—George Heathcote, ancestor of the Heathcotes of Culthrope Hall, Brampton, whose line became extinct in 1825; second, the before mentioned Gilbert Heathcote of Chesterfield. This individual “had large interests in the lead mines by which, together with other sources, he received an income of £5,000 per annum clear of all expenses; but venturing too deeply in other projects, he was forced to dispose of the greater part of his estate.”<sup>e</sup> He died in 1636, leaving—by his wife, Elizabeth Owtum—only one son, Gilbert Heathcote, Esq., of Chesterfield, who was born May 22d, 1625. “He was left with but a small estate, in consequence of the losses sustained by his grandfather and father.” On the breaking out of the civil wars, during the reign of

<sup>a</sup> Book of Patents, Albany Rec, No. vii., 226.

<sup>b</sup> Lyson's Mag. Brit. Derbyshire.

<sup>c</sup> Extract from a MSS. Book of Sir William Heathcote.

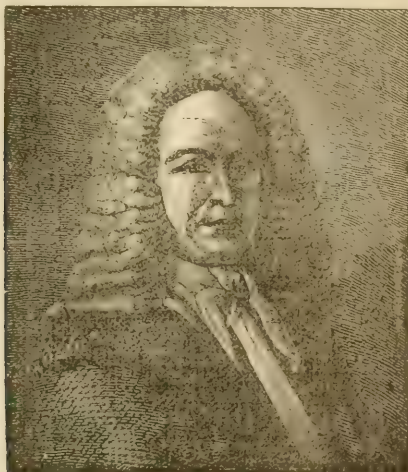
<sup>d</sup> Extract from a MSS. Book of Sir William Heathcote.

<sup>e</sup> Extract from Samuel Heathcote's MSS.; account of his family in possession of Sir Wm. Heathcote, Bart of Hursley.

<sup>f</sup> Ditto.



Charles the First, "he entered the Parliament army and there behaved himself with great courage and bravery in several engagements for the Rights and Liberty of his country."<sup>a</sup> At one time he was Mayor of the ancient city of Chesterfield. He died April 24th, 1690. By his wife, Anne, daughter of George Dickens, of Weststoke, County of Sussex, he had eight sons ("seven of whom he brought up as merchant adventurers whereby with God's blessing they obtained good estates,") and one daughter, viz.: First, Sir Gilbert Heathcote, Knight and Baronet, ancestor of the "Heathcotes Barons Aveland of Normanton Park, County Rutland; second, John Heathcote who died unmarried in 1710; third, Samuel Heathcote of Hackney, Middlesex, ancestor of the "Heathcotes, Baronets of Hursley Park, Hampshire; fourth, Josiah Heathcote, father of George Heathcote, Alderman and Lord Mayor of London in 1744,



Hon. Caleb Heathcote.

whose son was Josiah Eyles Heathcote of Southbroom House, who died August, 1811, aged sixty-two; fifth, William Heathcote, who died in 1719; and sixth, Caleb Heathcote,<sup>b</sup> first Lord of the Manor of Scarsdale, Westchester County, New York. This gentleman was born at Chesterfield, Derbyshire, England, 6th of March, 1665. He adopted the mercantile profession and soon acquired considerable wealth. "The cause of his emigration was very different from that which brought most Englishmen to America. He was engaged to a very beautiful lady, to whom

<sup>a</sup> Ditto.

<sup>b</sup> The two other sons of Gilbert were George, who died unmarried on his voyage home from Jamaica in 1690, and Thomas who died young. The daughter, Elizabeth, died young in 1658.



Motto — *Habere et Dispartiri.*

[illegible]



he introduced his eldest brother, Sir Gilbert Heathcote, (afterwards M. P. for London and Lord Mayor of that city in 1711, at the very time his brother was Mayor of New York, and one of the chief founders and the first Governor of the Bank of England); a circumstance most unfortunate for him—for the lady soon found she preferred the elder brother, and broke her engagement with the younger, who at once left England and came to New York, where he arrived in 1692.<sup>a</sup> As we have already seen, he was negotiating for the purchase of lands in Westchester County, at least as early as 1646; and on the 21st of March, 1701, the Royal Patent erected the whole into the Lordship and Manor of Scarsdale. From the time of his arrival “he became a leading man in the colony, was Judge of Westchester and Colonel of its militia all his life, first Mayor of the borough of Westchester, a Councillor and Surveyor General of the province, Mayor of New York for three years; for a time Commander of the colony’s forces, and from 1715 to his death, in 1721, Receiver General of the customs for all North America.”<sup>b</sup> He was also



*Caleb Heathcote*

a member of the Venerable Propagation Society as early as 1705, and a vestryman of Trinity church from 1697 to 1714; senior warden of Westchester parish from 1695 to 1702, and likewise senior warden of the parish of Rye from 1703 to 1710. He was, indeed, a sincere Churchman; and seconded from principle, the views which Governor Fletcher advocated from interest and in obedience to his orders. “In his military capacity he had command not only of Westchester County but also of the West Riding, on Long Island; and in one of his letters to the Venerable Propagation Society, gives this account of his method of converting military into religious exercises”:—

<sup>a</sup> Doc. Hist. N. Y., vol. ii., p. 1039.

<sup>b</sup> Doc. Hist. N. Y. Governor Fletcher, writing to the Lords of Trade in 1697, says: Mr. Caleb Heathcote is not to leave this province and hath given directions for the taking out of the warrant, he is a gentleman, hath been very useful, and has advanced his private fortune for His Majesties service, to answer an emergency when money was not in the Treasury, and zealously affected to His Majesties government and interest.” N. Y. Col. MSS. London Doc. X., vol. iv., p. 275.



"I shall begin the history of the church from the time I first came among them, which was about twelve years ago. I found it the most rude and heathenish country I ever saw in my whole life, which called themselves Christians—there not being so much as the least marks or footsteps of religion of any sort. Sundays were only the times set apart by them for all manner of vain sports and lewd diversion, and they were grown to such a degree of rudeness, that it was intolerable. I having then command of the militia, sent an order to all the captains, requiring them to call their men under arms, and to acquaint them, that in case they would not in every town agree among themselves to appoint readers, and to pass the Sabbath in the best manner they could, till such times as they should be better provided, that the captains should, every Sunday, call their companies under arms, and spend the day in exercise. Whereupon, it was unanimously agreed on throughout the country, to make choice of readers; which they accordingly did, and continued in those methods for some time."

The following letter is extracted from the MSS. of the Venerable Society for Propagating the Gospel in Foreign Parts.

#### COLONEL HEATHCOTE TO THE SECRETARY.

*Manor of Scarsdale, Nov. 9, 1705.*

SIR:—I am indebted to you for yours of the 11th Jan. and 9th of April, and am wonderfully surprised that the Society should make choice of me for one of their members. It was a very great satisfaction to me, that any thing I could offer was acceptable to them; and should very joyfully embrace any opportunity of doing service to the Church, and I bless God for it, I am not conscious to myself of ever having slipt one fair occasion therein, when government would give me leave. I beg of you, sir, to present my most humble duty to that honorable body, and thank them for the honor they have been pleased to do me; and may assure them that I shall not only endeavor to give them satisfaction as to any thing they shall desire of me, but if any new matter occurs, which I believe may be of service to the Church, I will not fail laying it before them for their consideration. If I mistake not, the several heads you desire satisfaction of in both your letters now before me, are, first, an exact and impartial account of all your Ministers. Secondly, what fruit may be expected from Mr. Moor's mission. Thirdly, what my thoughts are of sending Mr. Dellius into those parts again. Fourthly, my opinion of the Society's having appointed that good man, Mr. Elias Neau, as Catechist to the Negroes and Indians, and the cause of misunderstanding betwixt him and Mr. Vesey.

As to the first, I must do all the gentlemen which you have sent to this Province that justice as to declare that a better clergy were never in any place—there being not one amongst them that has the least stain or blemish as to his life or conversation; and though I am not an eye witness to the actions of any, save those in this county, yet I omit no opportunity of inquiring into their behavior, both of the friends and enemies of the Church, and they all agree as to the character of the gentlemen: and that they use their best endeavors to gain over the people. And as to their diligence in the faithful discharge of their trust, the Society, I



hope, will, in their instructions, have laid down such rules as they won't fail coming at it without being imposed on. Mr. Urquhart, minister of Jamaica, has the most difficult task of any missionary in this government ; for although he has not only the character of a very good man, but of being extraordinary industrious in the discharge of his duty, yet he having a Presbyterian meeting house on the one hand, and the Quakers on the other, and very little assistance in his Parish, except from those who have no interest with the people, that his work can't but go on very heavily, as I understand it does : but Mr. Thomas, of Hempstead, having better assistance, the leading men in his parish not being disgusted, are helpful in the work ; and having no other sectaries to oppose him by their meetings but the Quakers, makes very considerable progress, as I have been told by some of the most sensible of his parish. As for Mr. Mackenzie, he has a very good report from the people of Staten Island ; and I shall not fail making further inquiry concerning him, and let you know it in my next.

But when all is done, what I can tell you concerning any minister, except in this county, is only by information from others, which is often very uncertain ; for some gentlemen may many times, and very deservingly, have a fair and good character by the generality of their neighbors—and yet at the same time, by one misfortune or other, not perform much of the service of the Church, in which I will give you this plain instance.

There is not any gentleman whom the Society have sent over, that is clothed with a fairer character than Mr. Bartow, of Westchester, and truly he is a very good and sober man, and is extremely well liked and spoken of by his parishioners in general ; yet, although he has been three years in that parish, not many are added to the communion, nor baptized, and few catechised ; and if he is directed to send an account how he has advanced on each of these heads, annually since his coming there, it will be found accordingly. For this and many other reasons, I can't help still to be pressing that the Society should lay the gentlemen which are sent over under exact rules ; and methinks it is no difficult matter to have it ordered, so as to know almost as well what is done as if they were present in every parish.

The people of Westchester were very angry with me because I was for having this county divided into three parishes, and every minister to have 70*l*. instead of 50*l*. ; and I had brought the county, except that place, to a willingness to have it so, as I formerly acquainted you—and had they permitted that projection to have taken place, it would have been a great ease to the Society ; for first, what Mr. Bartow had more than the 50*l*. he now hath, might reasonably have been deducted at home. Secondly, Mr. Bondet would have been provided for. And thirdly, one Mr. Morgan, who was minister of Eastchester, promised me to conform ; that there would not have been occasion of another being sent to us, and by that means have saved 50*l*. a year more at home, and wholly out of all hopes of any dissenting minister getting footing amongst us, and it will never be well until we are in three parishes ; and I shall not fail, when I have a fair opportunity, to push for it again. And to satisfy you of the reasonableness in what I offer, I believe there has not six public taxes been laid out on this county by the Assembly this fifteen years past ; but I have been at the proportioning of, and when the places in Rye parish pay 50*l*. the towns in Westchester parish were allotted 120*l*. ; and there are two places more, which, both together, are one third part as big as Rye

parish, which are not in neither of them. And now I am on this subject, it comes in course to make out what I told you in my former letters, viz : that there is no parish in the government but what is able to pay twice as much as they do. For Rye parish which is not by one half so large as the least parish established by law in the government here, since my living here, maintained two dissenting ministers, viz : one at Rye and Mamaroneck, and one at Bedford—and gave the former 5*l*. and the latter 40*l*. a year—which I think makes it out very plain what I have offered on that head : and you may be assured, I shall omit no opportunity of serving the Society therein. But the work must be done, in a great measure by the minister's taking pains, and bringing the people into a good opinion of the Church ; for though the reason hereof is very plain, it must be a business of time to effect it. We have had it reported that the Queen would be at the charge of maintaining a Suffragan Bishop in these parts. If that was granted, I question not but a great many who have had their education in Boston College would conform, and would be content with the benefices as settled by Assembly, without being very burthensome to the Society.

I have been so long wandering from one subject to another, that I had almost forgot to give you my thoughts of Mr. Muirson whom my Lord of London has sent for this parish. He has been here about three months, in which time he hath by much outdone my expectation ; having very fully retrieved all that unfortunate gentlemen, Mr. Pritchard lost ; and if he continues so faithful in the discharge of his trust, of which I have not the least doubt he will, he'll be able to give as large account of his services as any that has been sent over to this Province. And I must do him the justice to own, that he is as deserving of the Society's favors. For, as some of his parishioners told me, and which I know in a great measure to be true, that although they have had a great many ministers amongst them since the settlement of their town ; yet Mr. Muirson did more good amongst them the first six weeks after his coming, than all they ever had before. And I question not but when you have the particulars of his proceedings transmitted, you will find what I have said of him to be true. As for Mr. Brooks, whom the Society have sent to the Jerseys he has an uncommon good character given him from those parts ; and it is reported of him that he makes wonderful advances for the service of the Church, and I question not but Col. Morris will be very particular concerning him—that being properly his watch. For though that Province is not above 50 miles from my house, and Staten Island about forty, yet by reason of the difficulty of water passages, I have never been at either of them above twice since my coming to America. And I am now more tied at home with a family, and my private affairs than formerly, for which I humbly crave an allowance. My principles and natural temper lead me to do the Church all the service I can every where, but I dare not promise for more than this county at present ; and my best endeavors in the westernmost towns in Connecticut colony, when the Church is well rooted here. And it has always been my opinion, and is so still, that there is no part of this Province, or even America, that would be of greater use or service to have the Church thoroughly settled in ; for it is not only large in extent, and the land very good, and near the city ; so, consequently, will in time be a great settlement. But bordering on Connecticut there is no part of the continent from whence the Church can have so fair an opportunity to make impressions upon the dissenters in that government, who are settled by their laws

from Rye parish to Boston colony, which is about 35 leagues, in which there are abundance of people and places. As for Boston colony, I never was in it, so can say little to it. But for Connecticut, I am and have been pretty conversant: and always was as much in all their good graces as any man. And now I am upon that subject, I will give you the best account I can of that colony. It contains, in length, about 140 miles, and has in it about 49 towns, in each of which there is a Presbyterian or Independent minister settled by their law; to whom the people are obliged to pay, notwithstanding many times they are not ordained; of which I have known several examples. The number of people there, are, I believe about 2,400 souls. They have abundance of odd kind of laws to prevent any dissenting from their church, and endeavor to keep the people in as much blindness and unacquaintedness with any other religion as possible; but in a more particular manner the Church, looking upon her as the most dangerous enemy they have to grapple withal. And abundance of pains is taken to make the ignorant think as bad as possible of her. And I really believe that more than half the people in that government, think our Church to be little better than the Papist. And they fail not to improve every little thing against us: but I bless God for it, the Society have robbed them of their best argument, which was the ill lives of our clergy that came into these parts. And the truth is, I have not seen many good men but of the Society's sending.

And no sooner was that honorable body settled, and those prudent measures taken for carrying on of that great work, but the people of Connecticut, doubting of maintaining their ground without some further support, they with great industry went through their colony for subscriptions to build a college at a place called Seabrook. And the ministers who are as absolute in their respective parishes, as the Pope of Rome, argued, prayed, and preached up the necessity of it; and the passive obedience of people, who dare not do otherwise than obey, gave even beyond their ability. A thing which they call a college was prepared accordingly, wherein, as I am informed, a commencement was made about three or four months ago. But notwithstanding their new college here, and an old one in Boston, and that every town in that colony has one, and some two ministers, and have not only heard them say, but seen it in their prints, that there was no place in the world where the gospel shone so brightly, nor that the people lived so religiously and well as they; yet I dare aver, that there is not a much greater necessity of having the Christian religion in its true light preached any where than amongst them. Many, if not the greatest number of them, being little better than in a state of heathenism; having never been baptized nor admitted to the communion. And that you may be satisfied what I tell you herein is not spoken at random, nor grounded on careless observation, Mr. Muirson's parish is more than three-fourths of it composed of two towns, viz: Rye and Bedford, which were first settled under the colony of Connecticut, and of people bred and born under that government; and sometime before my coming, had a minister, one Mr. Denham, and had afterwards two more, Woodbridge and Bowers, at Rye, and one Mr. Jones, at Bedford. And the people of Rye only had of this county the care to provide a parsonage house. And notwithstanding all those great shows of religion, and that at such times as they were destitute of a minister.

Greenwich and Stamford, the bounds of the former of which places join upon theirs, and the other is not above ten miles distant, where they were always sup-



plied. But they could not be said to want the opportunity of having the sacraments administered to them ; yet I believe 20 of them had never received the communion, nor half of them been baptized, as Mr. Muirson will more fully inform you. And now I have given you an account of the state of that colony, what will in the next place be naturally expected from me, is to know my opinion of the best and most probable way of doing good amongst them.

There is nothing more certain, than that it is the most difficult task the society have to wade through. For the people are not only not of the Church, but have been and are trained up with all the care imaginable to be its enemies. That to make an impression under all those disadvantages is very difficult, though I hope not impossible. And though, at first view, the prospect of doing any good upon them is very little, yet no doubt but the most proper measures ought to be taken, leaving the event to Almighty God.

Now, to give you my thoughts in what way this great work may best be endeavored at, so as it may be done with little expense. I believe, for the first step, the most proper way would be, that one of the ministers in this country were directed by my Lord of London to inform himself where there are any in that government who profess themselves to be of the Church, and to know if they or any of their neighbors have any children to baptize, or desire to partake of the sacrament : and that he will come to the towns where they live, and after having given them a sermon, will perform those holy rites. There need, I think, no more be done in this matter for the present. But the society may, if they please, leave the rest to me ; and I won't only give him the best advice and directions I can herein, but will, God willing, wait upon him in his progress, and persuade some useful friends along with me. And when this essay has been made, I shall be much better able to guess at the state of that government, and what is fitting to be done next. Now the person that I would advise them to pitch upon by all means for this expedition, is Mr. Muirson ; he being not only posted next those parts, and so will look less like design, but he has a very happy way of delivery, and makes little use of his notes in preaching, which is extremely taking amongst those people—and for argument, few of his years exceed him.

The chief end I have in this projection, is to have the people of that government undeceived in their notions concerning our Church ; there being, I believe, fifteen thousand in that colony who have never heard, nor scarce seen a Church of England minister. And I have the charity to believe, that after having heard one of our ministers preach, they will not look upon our Church to be such a monster as she is represented. And being convinced of some of the cheats, many of them may duly consider of the sin of schism. However, let the success be what it will, to me the duty seems plain. I have not only mentioned this to you, but in my letter to my Lord of London, and shall patiently wait for his and the society's commands therein.

I will now proceed in giving direct answers to the several queries mentioned in yours. Having as yet, only spoke to the first, so shall now take the rest in course. As for Mr. Moor's mission, you will undoubtedly have the account thereof very fully by Mr. Talbot, whose place he supplies, having not thought it worth the while to stay at Albany. As for my opinion in that matter, I think it is too heavy for the society to meddle with at present ; and would properly lie as a burthen upon the crown, to be defrayed out of the revenue here. For their being



brought over to our holy faith, will at the same time, secure them in their fidelity to the Government. And not only that, but the society will, I believe, find employment enough for their money in sending of missionaries amongst those who call themselves Christians, on the coast of America : which, I find to be their resolution. And it is certainly the greatest charity in the world, to have the best religion planted in these parts, which with time will, in all probability, be so vast a country and people. But whether the charge of missionaries for converting the Indians fall to the share of the crown or the society, to effect that matter well and thoroughly those sent over on that errand, must be such as can endure hardships, and are able and willing to live with the Indians in their own country, and according to their way and manner, which are the methods the French take. And I believe some of those gentlemen who have had their education in the colleges of the north parts of Scotland, being in orders from my Lord of London, may be the likeliest to undergo it. As for Mr. Delliuss. I don't think it worth while in being at any extraordinary charge in sending of him ; because, I believe no consideration would make him live in the Indian country. And if he did, he has not the language ; and one that goes on that mission must be a young man, who is able to grapple with fatigues, and will not only take pains, but is capable of learning the language ; and it is a general observation, that none are so apt to gain foreign tongues as the Scotch.

As for my thoughts of this society's having appointed that good man, Mr. Neau, as catechist to the negroes and Indians, it is undoubtedly a very good work ; and he is wonderfully industrious in the discharge of his duty, and the truth is, takes more pains than he needs, by going from house to house to perform that office. And I believe he would find it as effectual to gain the end, and not the fourth part of the trouble to himself, to appoint set times in having them together at the English church, or at least so many at once as may be proper, and catechise and instruct them. And Mr. Vesey assures me that he shall be very free and willing to let him have the use of the church for that purpose. And now I am on this subject, it will be very proper that the society direct Mr. Cleator, if he comes over, or any school-master whom they appoint in their respective places to catechise and instruct the negroes and Indians ; and that the ministers in their several parishes were desired to send a list of all the slaves or free negroes and Indians, the society would then see how that matter was further worth their consideration.

I did, in my former letters, make mention of one Mr. Bondet, a French Protestant minister, who is in orders from the Bishop of London. He is a good man, and preaches very intelligibly in English—which he does every third Sunday, in his French congregation, when he uses the liturgy of the Church. He has done a great deal of service since his first coming into this country, and is well worth the thoughts of the Society. The town he lives in is called New Rochelle, a place settled by French Protestants ; it is comprehended in Mr. Bartow's parish, and contributes toward his maintenance, which disables them, in a great measure, to pay toward Mr. Bondet's, who is in very great want. It is true, besides twenty pounds a year, which the people of New Rochelle promise him, and is very ill paid, he has thirty pounds a year settled on him out of the public revenue here, as the French minister in York hath ; but that is paid with so much uncertainty, that he starves under the prospect of it.

Now for a remedy for this poor gentleman, and that he may be made as useful

to the Church as possible ; if the society would use their interest that he might have an order from the court that he may not only forthwith be paid his arrears, but that he should afterwards have his money by quarterly payments : and that, at the same time, he be directed by the Bishop of London, to consult with and be helpful to Mr. Bartow and Mr. Muirson in taking care of the scattering towns of the parishes ; especially Mr. Bartow's, where it is impossible for any one to manage it. And whereas, he has been obliged for his bread, to use the French prayers in his French congregation, according to the orders of the Protestant churches of France, and had that liberty granted him (as he tells me) upon his receiving of orders, it is his earnest request, that he might have directions relating thereunto, wherein he might be required not to use otherwise than the liturgy of our Church in any congregations where he preacheth, whether English or French. And it would be well that some French Common Prayer Books and Catechisms were sent over for that purpose. The reason of desiring an order of that nature is, that it would put the matter out of dispute. Mr. Bondet and I have gone as far as we can in that affair, and it would spend too much time to tell you what tempests we waded through in attempting it ; but if directions came from England about it, none, I believe, would be found to oppose it. The chief cause of its being hindered with so much heat was, that the French congregation in York were apprehensive that it might be a precedent for them ; and for that reason fired the most ignorant of Mr. Bondet's people, and persuaded them to recant from what they had agreed to. But I must do the most sensible of them the justice, that they hold fast their integrity, and are willing to receive the Church.

If this matter goes forward, I expect that the greatest part of the people of New Rochelle will cease their contributions to Mr. Bondet ; so I must desire the Society to consider him with some allowance in England. And if effectual care could be taken that 30*l.* is paid him, 15*l.* sterling more, with the small helps he will have from those who will continue steady to the Church, will enable him to maintain himself and family.

If care is not already taken therein in the instructions which are preparing, it will be of absolute necessity, that the clergy of this county be directed to meet twice at least, annually, and taking to their assistance the best and most sensible of their parishes, to consult of the most effectual ways for settling the church, and to give you an impartial account how the parishes are settled in point of conveniency, and which way it may be better done, not only to make it easy for themselves, but so as the bread of life may be fairly and equally divided amongst their people, that proper measures might be taken, in having it regulated by act of assembly. For if something of this nature is not done, one-half the people of the county won't have much benefit by all the cost that is laid out upon them. In the conclusion of your last letter, you tell me that you had sent some Common Prayers and Catechisms, by Mr. Mackenzy, but do not understand he has brought any ; so beg of you to inquire into that mistake. And in case you send any other books to be disposed, pray let them only be Dr. Beveridge's (new Bishop of St. Asaph.) sermon concerning the common prayers, a little book entitled "A Christian's Way to Heaven," and one of the lawfulness of the common prayer. No books can be more serviceable than they ; and I would take care to have them scattered through Connecticut colo-

ny to both minister and people, and am apt to believe they would do service. As for the deputation the society now pleased to send me, I am exceedingly sorry I can do them no service therein. For the people of this county, having generally land of their own, although they don't want, few or none of them very much abound. There being besides, a settlement belonging to Col. Morris, and another to Mr. Phillips, and mine, not any that belong to particular men of any great value in the county; nor are there ten in the whole county but what have been brought over to the Church since I came into the province, that truly sir, if we can persuade them to build and finish their churches and schools, help to maintain their ministers and schoolmasters, and fit conveniences for them, it is the most that can be expected till things are better settled, and the Church a more firm footing among them. I have not had the happiness to be in company with Col. Morris since I received the deputation: but shall discourse with him concerning that matter when I see him next. I could offer some few things more to the consideration of the Society, but time won't permit me to enlarge, so I shall reserve it to the next opportunity. So with my humble duty to the Society, begging their pardon for the trouble I have given them therewith, I desire to remain, sir, &c., &c.

CALEB HEATHCOTE.<sup>a</sup>

No wonder that St. George Talbot, writing to the Venerable Society, should say: "I wish the report were true that he, Col. Caleb Heathcote, were appointed Governor; it would be the best news, next to that of the gospel, that ever came over."<sup>b</sup>

In 1693, Col. Heathcote received the following appointment as President Judge Advocate of a court martial, to be holden in Westchester county, for the trial of all offending officers and men under his command:—

"Whereas I am informed that several disorders and misdemeanors are daily committed by the regiment under your command, and no obedience paid to my several orders for prevention thereof; for the future, reposing special trust and confidence in your prudence and conduct by virtue of the power and authority to me given by virtue of their majesties' letters patent under their great seal of England. I have thought fit and do hereby erect, constitute and appoint a court martial in Westchester county aforesaid, and hereby I empower and authorize you, the said Caleb Heathcote, from henceforth and all times, when so often it shall it be found needful to call the said court martial, which shall consist of you, the said Caleb Heathcote, as president judge advocate, and six at least of the commissioned officers under your command, whereof four to be captains, with full power and authority to hear, judge and determine all crimes and offences committed by any officer or soldier under your command, and sentence to pronounce so far as fine or imprisonment or other corporal punishment, as the merits of the crime or offence shall deserve, according to an act of Assembly, made and provided against such offenders and criminals, and to cause each sentence to be put into execution according to the rules, articles, and laws of war and arms; provided always that

<sup>a</sup> Hawk's MSS. from N. Y. archives at Fullham.

<sup>b</sup> New York MSS. General Convention, vol. i, p. 176.



this condition shall continue in force during this war, or till my pleasure be further known, and no longer.

Given under my hand and seal at armes, at Fort William Henry, New York, the 12th day of September, 1693, in the fifth year of his majesty's reign, by his excellency's command.

BENJ FLETCHER.

Among other wealthy relations Col. Heathcote had, it appears, a "rich cousin, George Heathcote, who was born in Middlesex county, England, and who came to this country as captain of a merchant ship, about the year 1678. This individual acquired a large property, and being a bachelor, invited his nephew, Caleb, to take up his residence in this country; and upon his death, at his last residence, in Buck's county, Penn., in 1710, bequeathed his large property to his cousin, who became one of the most considerable men in this Province."<sup>a</sup>

In the will of George Heathcote, of Buck's county, Province of Pennsylvania, among other items occurs the following: "I give and bequeath unto my cousin, Caleb Heathcote, of the Province of New York, the residue of my estate, and nominate him executor of this, my last will and testament."<sup>b</sup>

Among the archives of the Wyllys family, in Boston, Mass., there is still preserved a Latin order from George I., to Col. Caleb Heathcote, dated London, August 4th, 1719. The manor house of Scarsdale was a fine brick mansion, that occupied the site of the present building, on Heathcote Hill, Mamaroneck. It was from this place that Col. Heathcote addressed all his letters to the Honorable Propagation Society, the Lords of Trade and the Provincial Government. This edifice, which was erected sometime prior to 1704, was destroyed by fire during the Revolutionary war.

Col. Caleb Heathcote married Martha, daughter of the Hon. Col. William Smith, Chief Justice and President of the Council of the Province of New York, and former Governor of Tangier. By his wife Martha, daughter of Henry Tunstall, Esq., of Surrey county, England. The monuments to the Hon. William Smith and wife are still to be seen at St. George's manor, Brookhaven, Suffolk county, L. I. :—

HERE LYES

Interred ye body of ye

HONL COLL. WILLIAM SMITH,

Chief Justice and President of ye Council of ye Province of New York.

Born in England, at Higham Ferrers,

in Northamptonshire, Feb. ye 2d, 1654-5,

<sup>a</sup> George must have at one time resided in Savannah, Ga., for there is a ward in that city named after him.

<sup>b</sup> Surrogate's office (N. Y.) of wills, vol. vii, p. 3.



and Died at ye Manour of St. George, Feb. ye 18th, 1704-5,  
in ye fifty-first year of his age,  
being grandson of MAX. CONSTAMMET, &c.<sup>a</sup>

HERE LYES  
interred ye body of  
MARTHA,  
daughter of HENRY TUNSTALL, Esq.,<sup>b</sup>  
born at Putney,  
in the county of Surrey, in England, 1659,  
and died at ye manour of St. George, Sept. 1st, 1709,  
aged fifty years.

Mrs. Heathcote bore her husband six children—namely, Gilbert, William, Anne, Mary, Martha and Elizabeth. Col. Heathcote died while in the performance of his duty as a Christian philanthropist, in the city of New York, on Tuesday, 28th day of February, 1721.

The following notice of his death appeared in the American weekly *Mercury*, of March 6th, 1714:

“On the 28th day of February last, died the Honorable Caleb Heathcote, Esq., Surveyor General of his Majesty's customs, for the Eastern District of North America, Judge of the Court of Admiralty for the Provinces of New York and New Jersey, and the Colony of Connecticut, one of his Majesty's Council for the Province of New York, and brother of Sir Gilbert Heathcote, of London.

“He was a gentleman of rare qualities, excellent temper and virtuous life and conversation, and his loss lamented by all that knew him, which, on the day of his death, went about doing good, in procuring a charitable subscription, in which he made a very great progress.”<sup>c</sup>

On the 29th of February, 1719, Col. Caleb Heathcote executed his last will and testament, as follows:

#### WILL OF COL. CALEB HEATHCOTE.

In the name of God, Amen. I, Caleb Heathcote of the Province of New York, in America, gentlemen, being at this present time in perfect health of body and of firm and sound mind and memory, thanks therefore be given to Almighty God; but well knowing that it is appointed for all men once to dye, and that the time of the approach of Death is uncertain, Do make this my last will and Testament in manner and form following; my Soul I Recommend to my Gracious God who

<sup>a</sup> The Smith family had been long seated in the counties of Leicester and Northampton; arms: Or, on a chev. betw. three crosses, pattee fitchee, gu, as many bezants.

<sup>b</sup> The Tunstalls were formerly seated at Agacombe, Surrey county. Arms: Sa. three combs in fesse ar.

<sup>c</sup> See American weekly *Mercury* from Wednesday, March 9th, to Thursday, March 16, 1721. “1721, Feb. 28, died at New York. Col. Caleb Heathcote, member of the Council and Judge of the Admiralty, Surveyor General of his Majesty's Customs for the North District of America.” Gleanings from the annual register of the fire office, London. Hist. Mag. vol. iv, 2d series, No. 3, p. 137.

gave it : my Body to the earth, from whence it came to be Decently interred at the discretion of my Executors hereinafter named in certain hopes of the Remission of all my sins through the sole Merits of my Blessed Saviour Jesus Christ and of a Joyful Resurrection and Reunion of my Body and Soul at his second coming to Judgement—and as for what worldly Estate it hath pleased God to Bestow upon me, and which shall any ways belong to me at the time of my decease, I Give, Devise and Dispose of and Bequeath the same in manner following—Imprimis my will and Desire and I do hereby order that my Dear and well beloved wife Martha Heathcote, shall have the sole care and keeping and management of all my children during their Minority and her widowhood, and for the Handsome Maintenance of herself and the Handsome Maintenance and good and liberal education of my children I do hereby order, that she my said well beloved wife, shall have and Receive all such Annuities and Interests of money due payable or to become due and payable and belonging to me in England and also that she shall have the sole possession, use and Management of all my Estate, both real and personall in America, and have and receive for the uses aforesaid all the Rents, Interests and Profits thereof during the Minority of my children and her widowhood as aforesaid, but no longer, and if there happens to be any overplus of the said proceeds in her hands after her having made use of the same as aforesaid, I hereby Impower my said wife to Dispose of and Distribute the same amongst my children either by her Last will and Testament or otherwise and in such proportion as she in her Discretion shall see fit, and I do hereby further Give, Devise and Bequeath unto my said well beloved wife Martha Heathcote, and her executors and assigns the sum of one hundred Pounds annually to be paid unto her yearly and every year during the term of her natural life, in New York money ; fifty pounds thereof to be paid yearly out of that part of my estate which I shall hereby give unto my son Gilbert Heathcote, and fifty pounds yearly out of that part of my estate which I shall hereby give unto the rest of my children respectively in a due proportion all which Bequests so as aforesaid ordered to my wife shall be in Lieu of her Dower and all other her Pretentions to my estate whatsoever. *Item*, I Give, Devise and Bequeath unto my Eldest son, Gilbert Heathcote, my Dwelling House at Mamaroneck within the County of West-Chester, within the Colony of New York, Together with the Home Lott of land there: my Barns and other edifices with the Neck of Land called Mamaroneck, East Neck, and my Mills, Mill Dams, Streams and Rights of Streams, and all my lands within the Limits of Mamaroneck Township, known by the name of the Two Mile Bounds, and also all my Lands lying on the East of Mamaroneck River, Contiguous thereto which I bought of David Jamison. *And whereas*, the lands which I bought from Anne Richbell, within the County of West Chester aforesaid, Runs eighteen miles in Length into the woods, I hereby give and Bequeath unto my said son Gilbert Heathcote, one thousand acres thereof to be taken up and laid out unto him conveniently by my wife, by such persons as she shall appoint (if it shall so happen that I do not settle and ascertain it myself in my life time) in this manner to witt, Two Hundred acres of the said Lands to lye next adjacent to the Township of Mamaroneck to the Northward thereof one hundred acres more to lye Two Miles from the place where the said Two Hundred acres shall end, and in like manner the Quantity of one hundred acres at the end of every two miles till the said one Thousand acres

be completed. *To Have and To Hold* the said Dwelling house, Mills, Lands, premises with every their appurtenances unto Him the said Gilbert Heathcote and his heirs; to his and their use and behoofe forever; to have the possession thereof when he arrives to the age of twenty-one years, he always observing to Pay unto his mother the moneys by this my will ordered to be paid out of his share unto her. *Item*, out of the Legacy lately left unto me by my Brother William Heathcote in England, I hereby give and Devise unto my said son Gilbert Heathcote Two thousand five hundred pounds sterling; to my son William Heathcote, the same sum of Two thousand five hundred pounds; and to my four daughters, Anne Heathcote, Mary Heathcote, Martha Heathcote and Elizabeth Heathcote four thousand pounds sterling; that is to say to each of them one thousand pounds to be paid to my children when they arrive at the age of twenty-one years respectively. And all such moneys as shall at that, the time of my decease, belong unto me in England besides what I have as aforesaid Disposed of I hereby give and Bequeath unto my said children to be Divided amongst them in the like proportion as aforesaid and all the rest of my Estate both Real and Personal of what Nature or kind so ever it be in America. I give, Devise and Bequeath the same as followeth, That is to say, one full equal sixth part thereof I give, Devise and Bequeath unto my Daughter Anne Heathcote—one other full Equall sixth part, to my daughter Mary Heathcote—one other sixth part to my daughter Martha Heathcote—Two full sixth parts thereof unto my son William Heathcote, and one sixth part thereof to my Daughter Elizabeth Heathcote. *To Have and To Hold* the same unto them their heirs and executors and assigns Respectively and separately forever to be Delivered to them and either of them Respectively as they come of age of twenty-one years and in case my son William Heathcote should happen to Dye before he arriving to the said age of twenty-one years and without lawful issue then I will and order that the one Moiety or Equall half part of that share of my estate hereby given to him, shall be given and remain to my son Gilbert Heathcote and the other moiety to be equally divided amongst my Daughters which shall then be alive. *To Have and To Hold* to them and their heirs and executors and assigns separately and respectively forever, and if any of my said daughters shall happen to Dye before they come to age of twenty-one years or have lawful issue then I will that the share of my said daughters so dying as aforesaid shall be equally divided and the one half or moiety shall be given to my son William and his heirs, executors and assigns; and the other half part to be equally divided amongst such of my daughters as shall then be alive, and to Remain to them and their respective Heirs, executors and assigns in severalty forever. *And* it is my desire and strict order that every one of my children as they shall arrive at the age of twenty-one years shall be immediately put into the possession of their respective parts and shares of my estate hereby given unto them, and this is to be done by my wife if she then be my widdow in whose Discretion and Justice I Intirely Confide; and therefore do order that my said children shall be content and rest satisfied with the Distribution she shall make to them pursuant to this my last will and Testament hereby Impowering her to be sole Judge of what is their true shares. But if it shall happen that my wife should Dye or Marry again during the nonage of any of my said children then I will, Devise and order that their well beloved Cousins, William Heathcote the son of my brother



Samuel Heathcote deceased and John Heathcote the son of my brother Sir Gilbert Heathcote do demand and take into their possession all such Moneys or other estate which shall belong to me in England, and Improve and Distribute the same according to the Direction of this my last will and Testament. And as to my estate Real and Personal in America I hereby will and order in case of my wife marrying again or Death as aforesaid that the same, Excepting such part thereof as before that time shall be in the possession of any of my children already come of age shall be taken into possession by my Two Beloved Brothers-in-Law Coll. Henry Smith and Major William Smith, and my two beloved friends Coll. William Willet and Mr. Samuel Clowes or the major part of them who shall then be alive and Residing in the Colony of New York to secure and improve the same according to their discretion for the bringing up, Education, Benefit and advantage of my children and be Delivered by them to my said children when they shall come to age or Marry Respectively according to their respective shares and proportions pursuant to this my last will and testament; and I will that my said children shall be content and satisfied with such Distribution of my said estate amongst them as by the said persons or major part of them as aforesaid shall be made, which persons as aforesaid shall be the sole judges and arbitrators of all differences arising amongst my said children concerning the division of my said estate. Lastly, I do hereby nominate Constitute and appoint my said well beloved wife, Martha Heathcote, *to be my sole and whole executrix of this my last will and testament to be executed* by her so long as she shall remain my widdow, but no longer. And I hereby Revoke Disannull and utterly make void all other wills Testaments and codicills by me at any time heretofore made by mee, and I do declare this only to be my last will and Testament. In witness whereoff I have hereunto put my hand and seal at Jamaica, in the Colony of New York, this twenty-ninth Day of February, in the year of our Lord seventeen hundred and nineteen.

CALEB HEATHCOTE, [L.S.]

Signed, sealed, declared and published by the within named Caleb Heathcote as his last will and Testament in presence of us.

DAVID JONES,  
S. CLOWES, JUN.,  
JOHN CLOWES.<sup>a</sup>

The last will of his wife, Martha Heathcote, bears date 13th of August, 1736, by which she bequeaths "to her daughter Anne, the wife of James De Lancey, the sum of £1,000, also a pair of silver candlesticks, silver snuffers and snuff dish, together with my silver teapot, silver tankard and my large coffer. To her daughter Martha, wife of Lewis Johnston, she bequeaths the like sum of £1,000, and to her daughters Anne and Martha all her wearing apparel, &c."

All the children of Col. Caleb Heathcote died in their minority, except his daughters Anne and Martha, upon which the manor of Scars-

<sup>a</sup> The above will was proved 19th of April, 1721, Rec. of Wills, Surrogate's office, No. ix, 1718 to 1725, pp. 234, 235, 236. 237.



dale, with other possessions, descended to Anne and Martha, then surviving sisters and heiresses. Anne Heathcote, the eldest, married the Honorable James De Lancey, Lieutenant-Governor of the province of New York; their children were, *first*, Captain James De Lancey, who greatly distinguished himself as the aide of General Abercombie at the celebrated siege of Fort Ticonderoga, father of the late Lieutenant-Colonel James De Lancey of Bath, Somerset County, England, the eldest heir male of the De Lancey family; *second*, Major John Peter De Lancey of Heathcote Hill, Mamaroneck, who married Elizabeth, daughter of Colonel Richard Floyd, of Floyd's Neck, Brookhaven, Suffolk County, Long Island. This individual alternately became possessor of the Scarsdale estates.

John Peter De Lancey by his last will and testament, bearing date 28th January, 1823, bequeathed his property amongst his surviving children, namely—William Heathcote De Lancey, Elizabeth Caroline, Martha Arabella, Ann Charlotte and Sussanah Augusta De Lancey.

*Third*, Stephen De Lancey, of North Salem, who died January 1st, 1795, leaving no issue.

Under the Heathcotes and De Lanceys the Anjevines held the large farm bearing their name (now owned by Alexander M. Bruen, M. D.,) for four generations. The Anjevin's or Anjevine's were among those of the French Protestant refugees who fled from France about the year 1694. They were spoken of in a history of French families as living in the ancient province of Poitou ("a province foremost in its opposition to the religious oppression exercised by the Government, led by the principal families therein. The royal government had more difficulty in opposing the religious uprising here than almost any other part of the kingdom,") in the Marches of Anjevin. In 1708, Zacharie Anjevin, who was born in France, A.D. 1664, appears as one of the freeholders of the town of New Rochelle. Sometime in September, 1710, among a list of the inhabitants of the latter place occur the names of Zachariah and Peter Anjevin, brothers, and a sister, Sussanna. Zachariah Anjevin and his wife, Mary, had four children, namely—Zachariah, Daniel, Margaret Mary and Mary, junior. Peter Anjevin, who was born in France, A.D. 1666, and Deborah, his wife, had three children—Louis or Lewis, Pierre or Peter and Mary. The eldest, Lewis, born in 1702, settled on the Anjevin farm and lies buried there; Jean, his son, became heir to the estate and left seven sons, viz: David, Peter, John, Louis, Elijah, William and Solomon; and four daughters, the youngest of whom, Mary, married Thomas Truslow, Esq., of New York City and Portchester.

The Secor family rented the Scarsdale manor farm called the Hic-

kories. The Secors, Sicards, or Sycars were among the French Protestant refugees who fled from France in 1681. The name occurs frequently on the records of the French church Du St. Esprit in New York between the years 1680 and 1770. In 1708 the name of Ambroise Sycar appears among the freeholders of New Rochelle. Two years later there was residing in that town James Sycar, Sen., born in France, A.D. 1635; Daniel Sycar, born in France, 1660; Sussannah Sycar, aged thirty; James Sycar, born in France, 1676, Mary, his wife and their children—John, Elizabeth, Mary and Sussanah; Daniel Sycar had Daniel, Jun., John, Peter, Andrew and Mary. The sons of Ambroise Sycar, the Refugee, were—Ambroise and James, the latter by his wife, Catharine, had first James, the owner of the late Richard Secor's property, upper Rochelle, secondly, Peter, owner of the property lately held by Philip Carpenter, and thirdly, Daniel, owner of the estate of Benjamin Secor; of this family was Israel Secor of Upper New Rochelle, who formerly owned the property held by the late Richard Secor; his sons were Richard, William, Abraham, Benjamin, Samuel and Peter. The fourth son, Benjamin, who married Jane, daughter of John Renaud, is the father of the present Darius Secor of New Rochelle.

By a survey and division of Heathcote's lands lying in Scarsdale manor on the 11th of August, A.D. 1774, in the county of Westchester, the property of Caleb Heathcote in his lifetime, and which remain unsold by his descendants since his death, &c. No. 1, in north division, contained twenty-one lots, and likewise two small lots in the possession of William Barker. Lots Nos. 16 and 17 were controverted lands in this division.

Upon the *west side* of the manor the proprietors appear to have been the Crawfords, Devauxs, Vailes, Gedneys, Anjevines, Tompkinses and Townsends. On the *east side*, the Griffens, Fishers, Vails, Underhills, Gedneys and Cromwells. On the *south west*, the Griffens and Barkers.

The surface of this town is undulating and hilly; soil, sandy and clay loam; drained, south by the Bronx river, which bounds it on the west. Two small streams called the Hutchinson and Sheldrake, rise in Scarsdale and flow southerly into the Sound. The latter is a tributary of the Mamaroneck river. They are well supplied with all kinds of fresh water fish.

The most prominent features of Scarsdale, however, are the extensive tract of woodland which completely cover its wild and romantic hills on the west, displaying themselves to great advantage from every part of the surrounding country. The *Saxton forest* which forms a large portion of this woody district, abounds with foxes, rabbits and other wild game, and retains much of its ancient grandeur.







At the *fox meadows*, Scarsdale, was born on the 21st of June, 1774, that distinguished individual Daniel D. Tompkins, Vice-President of the United States.<sup>a</sup> He was the seventh son of the Hon. Jonathan G. Tompkins, by his wife Sarah Hyatt ; and grandson of Stephen Tompkins, whose ancestors emigrated originally from the north of England, (during the time of the religious persecution in that country,) and landed at Plymouth, in the colony of Massachusetts ;<sup>b</sup> from Plymouth they removed to Concord. John Tompkins of that place, had John born there in 1642, and a daughter, Ruth, in 1640. The Tompkins family subsequently emigrated to Fairfield, in Connecticut.<sup>c</sup> In 1649, we find John Tompkins proprietor of lands in Fairfield.

From Fairfield, the family removed to Eastchester, Westchester Co. The name of Nathaniel Tompkins occurs among a list of the first proprietors of Eastchester, in 1665. Of this family was Micah Tompkins of Milford, Connecticut, who secreted King Charles' judges when they fled to Milford. "The regicides Whalley and Goffe, (says Mr. Lambert) lived in the town from the 20th of August, 1661, for more than two years, till they went to Hadley. Here they were secreted by Mr. Tompkins, in the basement story of a shop standing near his dwelling. It is related that Mr. Tompkins's daughters often spun in the shop, and sometimes would sing some poetry which was composed about that time, concerning the martyrdom of King Charles, (in which they are mentioned) which much amused the judges. The girls were, of course, acquainted with their concealment.<sup>d</sup> After remaining in Eastchester a short time, the sons of Nathaniel and John Tompkins removed to Scarsdale and Greenburgh, where they purchased lands and permanently settled.

The father of Daniel D. Tompkins<sup>e</sup> was a member of the State convention, which adopted the Declaration of Independence and the first constitution of the State. He was a member of the Legislature during the whole period of the Revolution, also for many years first judge of the Court of Common Pleas for this county ; and on the institution of the university, was appointed one of the Regents—which situation he held until his resignation of it, in 1808. He died after seeing his son elevated to the second office in the gift of his country.

Governor Tompkins was educated at Columbia college in the city of

<sup>a</sup> The fox meadow estate originally belonged to the Griffin family, and passed from Jonathan Griffin to his adopted son, Jonathan Griffin Tompkins.

<sup>b</sup> Herring's Nat. Portrait Gallery.

<sup>c</sup> Shattucks' Hist. of Concord.

<sup>d</sup> Lambert's Hist. of New Haven, 144.

<sup>e</sup> The D was added to his name merely to distinguish him from another Daniel Tompkins who attended the same school or college with him. From his grand-daughter, Helene T. Tompkins, Somers, Westchester Co.

New York, and received the first honors of his class in 1795. He was admitted to the bar of the Supreme Court in the capacity of attorney, 5th Aug., 1797.<sup>a</sup> In 1801, he was elected a representative of the city, in the convention to revise the constitution of the State; in 1802, was chosen to the State Legislature; and in 1804, was appointed a Judge of the Supreme Court of the State, to supply the vacancy occasioned by the election of Chief Justice Lewis to the Gubernatorial chair. In the same year he was elected a member of Congress for the city, as a colleague of the late Dr. Mitchell. Gov. Tompkins (continues his biographer) seemed to embody within himself—the peculiar characteristics of the citizens of his native State—activity, energy and perseverance; and his talents constantly and variously as they were tried, were always found equal to any emergency. At the bar in the city of New York, during the early part of his life, he sustained an honorable rank; on the bench of the Supreme Court of the State—amid the bright constellation of judicial talent, learning and eloquence which then adorned it—he was conspicuously distinguished while yet a comparative youth; and we venture to say, that no judge since the formation of our government, ever presided at *nisi prius*, or travelled the circuit with more popularity. Dignified in his person, peaceful and conciliating in his address, and thoroughly amiable in his character, he won the respect and confidence of the bar, and the admiration of the public. The distinction which he gained in his judicial capacity, soon elevated him to a different theatre of action, the gubernatorial chair of his native State. (In 1807, when not thirty-three years of age,) he was put forward as a candidate by the most influential of the Republicans of that day; and in the mode in which he administered the government, he did not disappoint their choice. Those were turbulent times in politics; but like a skillful pilot, he safely and triumphantly weathered the storm—not only that which was raging within our bounds and among ourselves, but a more painful one which was pouring in upon us from a foreign foe. By his unwearied efforts in repeatedly pressing the subject upon the attention of the Legislature, slavery was finally abolished in the State of New York.

The subject of public education and morals, was always near his heart. The benevolent feelings of Gov. Tompkins, prompted him to call the attention of the Legislature on repeated occasions, to the abolition of corporal punishment; and he at length happily effected that of the former,

<sup>a</sup> As attorney in the Court of Common Pleas in N. Y., and Westchester Co., 26 Sept. 1797; counsellor in Court of Common Pleas, 26th Sept. 1797; counsellor in Mayor's Court, Feb. 24, 1801; counsellor in Supreme Court, 2 May, 1801; solicitor in Court of Chancery, 5 June, 1801; elected representative of city to Convention on Revision of Constitution, 7 June, 1802; solicitor in Circuit Court of the U. S., 1804; Justice of Supreme Court, 2 July, 1804, Member of Congress for N. Y., 1804; Judge of District Court, March, 1805.—Editor.

but the latter still remains. So early as 1811, we find him raising his voice in favor of the encouragement of manufactures. In 1812, he prorogued the Senate and Assembly of the State. In this brief sketch, it is not to be expected that even all the most prominent measures of Gov. Tompkins' administration can be noticed."<sup>a</sup>

We come now (continues his biographer), to the part which he bore in our late war with Great Britain, which embraces a most interesting period of his life. Whenever the history of that war shall be written for posterity, his name will fill an ample space.

As Governor of the State of New York, he had the direction of all her energies, and many and arduous were the duties which he was ordered upon to perform; but those who were conversant with the scenes of that period, will recollect the universal confidence which he inspired in every lover of his country. The following letter, dated a few days after the declaration of war, will show the perilous situation of the State of New York at that time, the condition of the army, and the responsibility he assumed to meet the exigency:—

ALBANY, June 28, 1812.

*To Major General Dearborn:*

SIR:—Your letter of the 22 inst. has been received. I had anticipated your request by ordering the detachments from Washington, Essex, Clinton and Franklin counties into service, and have fixed the days and places of their rendezvous. Upon application to the Quartermaster General, I find there are but 139 tents and 60 camp kettles at this place; and even those I take by a kind of stealth, the Deputy Quartermaster General declines giving an order for their delivery, until he shall have a written order from the Quartermaster General; and the latter is willing I shall take them, but will not give the deputy a written order for that purpose, under such circumstances. I shall avail myself of the rule of possession; and by virtue of the eleven points of the law, send them off to-morrow morning without a written order from any one. You may remember, that when you were Secretary of the War Department, I invited you to forward and deposit in our frontier arsenals, arms, ammunition and camp equipage, for self-defence—to be ready for defence in case of war—and the same invitation to the War Department has been repeated four times since. The United States have now from five to six hundred regular troops at Plattsburgh, Rome, Canandaigua, &c. And yet those recruits are now and must be for weeks to come, unarmed, and in every respect unequipped, although within musket shot of arsenals. The recruits at Plattsburgh, are within fifty miles of two tribes of Canadian Indians. In case of an attack upon the frontiers, that portion of the United States army would be as inefficient and as unable to defend the inhabitants or themselves even, as so many women. As to cannon, muskets, and ammunition, I can find no one here who will exercise any authority over them, or deliver a single article

<sup>a</sup> Herring's Nat. Portrait Gallery, vol. II.

upon my requisition ; neither can I find any officer of the army who feels himself authorized to exercise any authority, or do any act which will aid me in the all important object of protecting the inhabitants of our extended frontier exposed to the cruelty of savages, and the depredations of the enemy. If I must rely upon the militia solely for such protection, I entreat you to give orders to your officers here, to furnish upon my order—for the use of militia detachments, all needful weapons and articles with which the United States are furnished, and of which we are destitute.

“ You may rely upon the assistance which my talents, influence and authority can furnish, in the active prosecution of the just and necessary war, which has been declared by the constituted authority of our beloved country.”

From the day of the declaration of war, the Governor entered heart and soul into the prosecution of it ; and so continued until its close. Most of the frontier troops, the first campaign, were militia ; and many of them were marched several hundred miles. The Quarter Master General of that day, refused to make any advances to them ; the Governor was, therefore, placed in the dilemma of providing as well as he could for them, and expenses of every kind—or of permitting them to return home for want of accommodation, disgusted both with the war and the Government ; he issued orders for raising a brigade of volunteers upon his own responsibility, which greatly distinguished itself on the Niagara frontier, and particularly at the memorable sortie from Fort Erie.

The officers were all selected by Gov. Tompkins, and their gallant conduct in the field showed his admirable discrimination in this respect. He had previously recommended to the Legislature to raise volunteer regiments for the defence of our frontiers and the city of New York ; but, by a perversity that seems strange to us at the present day, his patriotic recommendation was rejected. A man of less firmness than Governor Tompkins would have quailed beneath the storm which was raised against him in Albany, in the winter of 1813-14, and the consequence would probably have been that the State would have been over-run by the foe. Not only was the whole western frontier in danger of invasion, but Sacketts Harbor, Plattsburgh, and the city of New York. But regardless of censure or disapprobation he called into the field large bodies of militia, and organized a corps of new fencibles for the protection of the city of New York, consisting of one thousand men. In September, 1814, the militia in service for the defence of the city amounted to 17,500 men. He was even ready to dispatch a force, under the lamented Decatur, for the assistance of Baltimore, which was then menaced with an attack ; and had not the news of the enemy's retreat been received, the succor would have been upon the march to the relief of a sister State. In 1814, from information received and corroborated by the movements of the



enemy, there are sufficient grounds of belief that one great object of his campaign was to penetrate with his northern army by the waters of Lake Champlain and the Hudson; and by a simultaneous attack with his maritime forces on New York, to form a junction which would sever the communication of the States. The exigency of the time, while it subjected the Executive to great responsibility, admitted of no delay. To defeat his arrogant design, and save the State from inroad, it was necessary immediately to exercise full powers and more ample resources than had been placed in his hands by the Legislature. He proceeded, therefore, to make such dispositions as were deemed indispensable to secure the exposed points against menaced invasion. To effect these objects he found it necessary to transcend the authority and means vested in him by law, perfectly satisfied that the Legislature would approve and sanction what he had done.

In October of this year, Governor Tompkins was appointed by the President to the command of the third military district. He acquitted himself of the command with great ability, and on the disbanding of the troops he received from every quarter letters of compliment and gratitude—and this was the only recompense for his services, in this command, which he ever obtained.

During the Fall of this year the general government was desirous of fitting out an expedition to dislodge the enemy from Castine in the Province of Maine. They had applied to the Governor of Massachusetts to raise the necessary funds for this purpose, but without effect. In this dilemma the situation of the general government was hinted to Governor Tompkins, who, with his individual credit and upon his own responsibilities, immediately raised the money, \$300,000—which he placed at the orders of General Dearborn, then commanding in Massachusetts. This noble act of patriotism speaks for itself, and comment would be superfluous."<sup>a</sup>

"He contributed (remarks the Hon. G. Rathbun) more than any one man in the Union to the success of our arms in repelling the invaders of our soil. Mr. Tompkins disbursed for the United States very nearly two millions of dollars. This sum was charged to him. Further, he borrowed for the use of the general government more than one million, three hundred thousand dollars; some of it partly upon the credit of the Government, and some of it upon his own responsibility."<sup>b</sup>

"In looking over his military correspondence, it is surprising to see how watchful he was to foster a delicate and punctilious regard to the

<sup>a</sup> Herring's Nat. Portrait Gallery, vol. II.

<sup>b</sup> Extracts from speech of Hon. G. Rathbun of New York, in favor of an appropriation for the heirs of D. D. Tompkins, delivered in the House of Representatives, Feb. 4, 1847.

relative rank of the officers of the militia, so as preclude any cause of jealousy or complaint. The officers were appointed by the council of appointment, which in the winter of 1713-14, was, together with one branch of the Legislature, opposed to the administration of the general government, and to the prosecution of the war; and it is evident from his correspondence at this period that attempts were constantly made to create discontents, by the recommending of persons for promotion over the heads of those who were entitled to it by their previous military rank. And turning back to his private correspondence from 1808 to 1811, we are struck with the continual annoyance experienced by him from the intrigues and slanders of political opponents, and at the same time with the indefatigable industry and noble frankness with which he counteracted and exposed them. In the Fall of 1814, Mr. Monroe having just been appointed Secretary of War, President Madison requested permission to name Governor Tompkins to the Senate as his successor. This offer, of what is considered the highest office in the gift of the President of the United States, was declined. In the spring of 1815, after peace had been proclaimed, he resigned the command of the third military district; and the President addressed to him a letter of thanks, for his "patriotic action and able support given to the Government during the war."

"In February, 1817, having received official information of his election to the office of Vice President of the United States, he surrendered that of chief Magistrate of the State of New York." He was also Chancellor of the University; and in June, 1820, was elected grand master of masons in the State of New York. In 1821, he was chosen a delegate for the county of Richmond to the convention for framing a new constitution for the State; and he was afterwards appointed president of this body. This was the last public situation which he held."<sup>a</sup>

"Years having rolled away (remarks Mr. John W. Edmunds) since he played so prominent and active a part on the stage, and the party rancor with which he was sometimes beset having been long since buried in the grave of the past, ample justice may now without offence be done to him—who was, in every sense of the word,

"A statesman lofty and a patriot pure."

The task, however, of doing full justice to his memory belongs to an abler pen; but no one is too feeble to admire the elevated patriotism which induced him, at a most trying crisis, to forego the honor intended for him by the President—to sacrifice his own health and the comfort of his

---

<sup>a</sup> Herring's National Portrait Gallery, vol. II.

family to the paramount duty of serving his country in that sphere where he could be most useful, and to offer himself a victim for its safety if it should be necessary; and the indomitable energy which enabled him in less than forty days, without assistance in money from the national government, to bring into the field at various points of danger nearly 50,000 men, organized, armed and equipped, to endure the toil, expense and embarrassment of commanding 20,000 of them in person, and at the same time to administer the government of the State; and in less than sixty days when the national credit was at its lowest point of depression, when the payment of even the interest of its notes could not be provided for, to raise for the public service upwards of \$1,000,000.<sup>a</sup>

If it should be asked what was his reward, for his great services to his country, and where stands his monument? the veneration in which his memory is yet regarded by the whole nation, answers that it is erected in the hearts of his countrymen.

"Such honors Ilion to her here paid,  
And peaceful slept the mighty Hector's shade."<sup>b</sup>

The Hon. Daniel D. Tompkins died at his residence, Tompkinsville, Staten Island, June 11, 1825, aged fifty-one, and was buried in the vault of Mr. Minthorne, at St. Mark's church, New York. His wife was a daughter of Mangle Minthorne, Esq., of New York. His sons were Minthorne Ray, Daniel, Clinton and Griffin Tompkins. The youngest brother of the Governor was George Washington Tompkins, father of the late Joseph Warren Tompkins, of White Plains.

The Fox Meadow Estate in Scarsdale, passed to the Hon. Caleb Tompkins, the eldest brother of the Governor; and was afterwards occupied by his son, the late Jonathan G. Tompkins. The property is now owned by Charles Butler, Esq., whose taste and liberality has done so much to add to the natural beauties of this charming spot. The grounds are beautifully laid out and embellished with gardens, and extensive fruit houses.

The neighboring property on the south formerly belonged to Hon. Richard Morris, son of the Hon. Lewis Morris, of Morrisania, for many years Chief Justice of the Province of New York, from whom it passed to his son-in-law, the late Brigadier Major William Popham. The mansion erected in 1790, is a spacious wooden structure, and occupies a

<sup>a</sup> In consequence of the death of Governor Tompkins in 1825, and of Mrs. Tompkins a few years after, the claim of what was due him in 1824, slept until February 4, 1847, when Congress voted its appropriation to the heirs of Daniel D. Tompkins—Editor. See speech of the Hon. G. Rathburn.

<sup>b</sup> Some passages in the life of Governor Tompkins, by Mr. John W. Edmonds. See proceedings of N. Y. Hist. Soc., 1844.

very secluded position in a pasturage hollow, surrounded by groves of locust trees, bordering the old Boston turnpike, the Bronx enlivening the estate upon the west. Here is situated a valuable mill seat, once occupied by an extensive beaver dam. The calm solitude of this beautiful spot is increased by the overhanging woods and the low murmuring of the river in passing over its stony bed. The graceful hemlock, fitly entitled by Coleridge "The Lady of the Woods," appears to luxuriate in this romantic position of Scarsdale.

The Popham family were originally from Popham, in the county of Hampshire, England; and spring from Gilbert Popham, of Popham, who, in the year 1200, married Joan, daughter and heiress of Robert Clarke, a feoffee in trust for the manor of Popham. They were greatly distinguished by the favor of the Empress Maud, A.D. 1140, and held high and honorable stations in the reign of Henry the Third. To Hampshire county they gave several sheriffs—Robertus de Popham in 1227, and Stephanus de Popham, circ., 1428. Sixth in descent from Gilbert Popham was Sir John Popham, Knight of the Bath, Lord Chief Justice of the Queen's Bench, purchaser of the Littlecot estate, Wiltshire county, England. This individual died A.D. 1607, and his remains repose under a magnificent tomb in the church of Wellington, surrounded by a palisade of wood and iron. On a tablet are the effigies of himself and Lady Popham. His only son was Sir Francis Popham, Knt. of Littlecot, Wilts. This gentleman, together with his son, Alexander, became so obnoxious to King Charles the First that he excepted them both out of the general pardon.<sup>a</sup> John Popham, eldest son of Sir Francis, who married, it is said, a daughter of the celebrated President, John Bradshaw,<sup>b</sup> was, for many years, a gentleman of the household to King James the First. Upon the restoration of King Charles II. he removed to Ireland, and there purchased the Bandon estates, county of Cork. His only son he significantly named Icabod—"the glory is departed." Icabod left one son, named after his grandfather, John, who was the father of James, and grandfather of William Popham, of Bandon, whose son was the late Brigadier Major William Popham, of Scarsdale. This truly good man, who was one of the last of Washington's illustrious compatriots, "was born in the town of Bandon, Cork county, Ireland, on the 19th of September, 1752. He was brought to this country at the

<sup>a</sup> "Col. Edward Popham was made Admiral of the fleet, and Alexander Popham was summoned to Oliver Cromwell's House of Lords." "With them were joined some of the ancient nobility, together with some of the gentry who had considerable estates derived from their ancestors—such as Mr. Alexander Popham and others."—*Mem. of Edmund Ludlow*, pp. 112 and 227.

<sup>b</sup> "President Bradshaw was of the family of Bradshaw, of Marple county, Chester, England; his representatives now rests in the Isherwood."—*Burke's Extinct Baronetage*, Owne-roads, Cheshire.



## PEDIGREE OF POPHAM, OF SCARSDALE.

Gilbert Popham, of Popham Hants, 1200 = Joan, da. and heiress of Robert Clark, a feoffee in trust for the Manor of Popham.

Robert Popham, of Popham, Knt. = .....

John Popham, of Popham, = .....

This branch of the family ended in four daughters, heiresses in the 15th century

Sir Hugh Popham, Knt., = Joan, da. and sole heiress of Sir Stephen De Rentsbury, Knt., of Huntsworth, Somerset  
one of King Edward I.'s commissioners for fixing the boundaries of the Loyal Forests in Somersetshire

Sir Hugh Popham, Knt., = .....

John Popham, of Huntsworth, 6th in descent from Sir Hugh Isabella Knoyle, or being the son of William, who died, 1465, by his wife Agnes, da. of William Edmonds, son of Thomas of Huntsworth, ob. 1419, son of John, ob. 1375, son of Hugh, the son of John, son of the above Sir Hugh Knowl, da of Thomas

Alexander Popham = Jane, da. of Sir Edward Stradling, Knt., of St. Donats Castle, Glamorgan

Edward Popham = Jane da. of Richard of Huntsworth, 1575 Norton of Abbotts Lee

Sir John Popham, Knt., purchaser of the Littlecott estate, Wilts Lord Chief Justice of England, ob. 1607; his remains repose under a magnificent tomb in the church of Wellington, surrounded by a palisade of wood and iron; in a tablet are the effigies of himself and Lady Popham  
Ann, da. and heiress of Robert Gomes, Esq., of Castle Glamorgan

Elizabeth = Richard Mitchel of Cannington

Catharine = William Poole

Dorothy

Sir Francis Popham, Knt., of Littlecott, Co. Wilts, member of the last Parliament of Queen Elizabeth, and in all of those of James I. and Charles I., and excepted out of the general pardon of the latter Prince

Ann, da. and heiress of John Dudley, of Stoke Newington, Esq., grand-son of Thomas, son of Edward Lord Dudley

Elizabeth = Richard Champernoun

Eleanor = Roger Warre, Esq., of Hestercombe

Jane = Thomas Horner

Penelope = Thos. Hanham Sergeant at Law

Mary = Sir John Mallett, of Eymore

Katharine = Edward Rogers of Cannington Somerset County

John Popham, Gent. of the Privy Chamber to James I. who afterwards emigrated to Ireland and became proprietor of Bandon estates, County Cork

da. of Sir Sebastian Havey, Lord Mayor of London others say a da. of John Bradshaw, President of the Court for the trial of Charles I., ob. 1659

Alexander Popham, of Littlecott, M.P., for Somerset, one of the protectors upper house. and a Col. in the Parliament Service

Thomas, ob. s. p.

Hugh, ob. s. p. slain in the service of the Parliament at Shelborne

Col. Edward Popham, an officer in the Parliamentary service, ob. Aug. 1654, buried in Westminster Abbey, the Court of the Protector assisted at the funeral obsequies

Ichabod Popham, of Bandon, Co. Cork, Ireland = .....

John Popham = .....

James Popham = .....

William Popham, of Bandon, emigrated to America, 1716, ob. at Amboy, 1785-6 = Patience, da. of the Rev. William Willet, a minister at Bandon

Major Gen. William Popham, of Scarsdale, Aide-de-camp to Baron Stubens, President-General of the Cincinnati Society = Mary da. of the Hon. Richard Morris, Chief Justice of N. Y., ob. 1836, æt. 73

Richard Popham

William

John Popham = Mary Thompson

Charles Popham

Sarah = Leonard Bleecker

Mary

Elizabeth

Mary



early age of nine years, and his parents having settled in the town of Newark, State of Delaware, it was in that place that he spent his youth, and where he received a finished education. It was his intention to enter upon the holy office of the ministry; but on the breaking out of the Revolutionary war, he was fired with military zeal, and accepted a commission in the army, and immediately raised a company in defence of his country.

“His first engagement was at the battle of Long Island, where he greatly distinguished himself by taking prisoner the famous Capt. Ragg, with eighteen more of the enemy. He was then appointed a captain in the army, and having followed the American arms to White Plains, he there again distinguished himself as an accomplished soldier and a brave man. As a captain he took part in the battle of Brandywine, and also acted as aid to Gen. Clinton in the northern division of the army; and was also the aid of Gen. Sullivan, in the western expedition among the Indians.

“After the war he resided a few years in the city of Albany in this State, where he entered upon the study of the law, and practised his profession. Subsequently to that time he came to New York, and practised his profession for a few years. In the year 1787 he purchased a farm in Westchester county, upon which he resided for many years; during the whole of which time, he held the office of clerk of the Court of Exchequer. He held this office until it was abolished. In 1804, he again took up his abode in New York, where he remained until 1811, attending to his profession, and paying particular attention to the education of his children. He then returned to his farm, and lived there until the year 1836, when the death of his wife occurred; and he then returned to New York, and resided there until his own death.

“He was ever a remarkably religious man, and died September 1847, aged ninety-five, the peaceful and happy death of a firm Christian, and a member of the Episcopal Church. He was not, as has been stated, a man of property, though he was always blessed with an abundance. He was a friend to the poor and needy, and derived much of his happiness by doing good. He was the friend and companion of Washington, and claimed as his intimates many of the most remarkable men of his day. He belonged to the old school of American gentlemen, and in mind and body was distinguished for activity and sprightliness. He was an accomplished scholar, and, in every particular, a thoroughbred gentleman.<sup>a</sup> His remains now repose in peace in the Popham family vault near St.

---

<sup>a</sup> *New York Express*, Sept. 27th, 1847.

James church Scarsdale. "He lived the life of a noble man and died the death of a happy Christian."

The following general order was issued by the New York State Society of the Cincinnati, dated New York, Sept. 27th, 1847.

## NEW YORK STATE SOCIETY OF THE CINCINNATI.

### GENERAL ORDER.

New York, Sept. 27th, 1847. It has become the painful duty of the Vice President to announce to the society the death of their venerable President, Major William Popham, at the advanced age of 95 years. Major Popham was also President General of the General Society of the Cincinnati of the United States.

He was a native of Ireland, and came to this country previous to our Revolution, and was at its commencement, appointed a lieutenant in the army; and at the battle of Long Island, with a detachment of troops under his command, captured and brought to head quarters in this city, a British guard with its commanding officer, and was highly complimented by General Washington on the occasion; he was afterwards appointed an aide-de-camp to General James Clinton, and subsequently to Baron Steuben, by whom he was much beloved: he continued in the service till the termination of the war, was a brave and accomplished officer, and a gentleman of considerable legal and literary acquirements. He held for a long time an important civil office connected with our courts of justice. He always sustained the character of the most exemplary punctuality in the execution of his official duties. In private life he was respected and beloved by all who knew him; his mental faculties were retained with great vigor until the last moment of his life, and died as a Christian soldier—with the confident hope, that his piety and faithfulness would entitle him to the reward in the life to come, promised to those who continue faithful to the end.

"Sweet sleep the brave who sink to rest,  
With all their country's honor blest."

The members of the society are requested to wear the usual badge of mourning for thirty days. By order.

GEN. ANTHONY LAMB, *Vice Pres't.*

EDWARD P. MARCELLIN, *Sec'y.*

Major Popham was President of the New York State Society of Cincinnati, and as the oldest member, President General of the General Society of the United States—an office first held by General Washington, in 1783; secondly, by Alexander Hamilton; thirdly, by Charles Colesworth Pinckney; fourthly, by Thomas Pinckney; fifthly, by Aaron Ogden; sixthly, by Morgan Lewis, and seventhly, by Major Popham. As President General he had in his possession the golden eagle of the order, most splendidly set in diamonds. It bears the following inscription: "Presented in the name of the French sailors, to his Excellency, General



Washington." This precious relic of the Society, upon the death of Major Popham, went to Henry A. S. Dearborn, Esq., his successor in office.

By his wife, Mary, daughter of the Hon. Richard Morris, Chief Justice of New York, Major Popham had issue Richard —, William S., who now occupies the Popham mansion, John —, and Charles Popham, who resides in the old Morris homestead. The daughters were Sarah, who married Leonard Bleeker, Esq.; Mary and Elizabeth Popham.

Under the Provincial Government, Scarsdale constituted one of the seven districts of Rye parish. In 1763, Scarsdale contributed to the rector's tax and poor of the parish, the sum of £25 4s 6d. The parochial clergy appear to have officiated here at a very early period; as the Rev. Robert Jenney writing to the Bishop of London, 1724, says: "I officiate eight times per annum at Mamaroneck, for that place, and Scarsdale and Fox's Meadows." In 1727, there were thirty persons in Scarsdale upon whom the parochial tax was levied. Mr. Wetmore in writing to the Society in 1744 observes: "I have a considerable congregation at the White and Scarsdale, above seven miles west of the parish church, which I also attend once in two months."

Religious services were, for a long time, confined to White Plains. In August, 1849, the Rev. Henry J. Morton, D.D., of Philadelphia, first held services in the farm house (formerly the residence of Chief Justice Morris), after which the late Rev. H. L. Storr, of Yonkers, officiated with other clergy for nearly six months prior to the call of a permanent minister.

Through the zealous efforts of William S. Popham, Esq., a parish was finally organized, and the corner-stone of a church laid on Saturday, the 29th of June, 1850, by the Right Rev. W. R. Whittingham, D.D., Bishop of Maryland, being the first structure devoted to religious worship ever erected in the town of Scarsdale. The church was incorporated on the 3d day of September, 1849, by the name and style "of the Rector, Church-wardens and Vestrymen of the Church of St. James the Less, in the township of Scarsdale." William S. Popham and Mark Spencer, church-wardens; Charles W. Carmer, William H. Popham, Francis McFarlan, Joshua Underhill, Edmund Ludlow, Samuel E. Lyon, Augustus Bleeker, and Orrin Weed, vestrymen. Upon the 31st of January, 1850, the Rev. James F. Le Baron, was called as rector and resigned the next year. For his successor, see list of rectors.

In June, 1850, the grounds adjoining the church were conveyed to the vestry, in the form of a lease, by William H. Popham.

## LEASE FOR CHURCH LOT.

This indenture, made the 28th day of June, eighteen hundred and fifty-one, between William H. Popham in the town of Scarsdale, county of Westchester, State of New York, party of the first part, and the rector, church-wardens and vestrymen of the Church of St. James the Less, in the town of Scarsdale, in the county of Westchester, State of New York, of the second part, witnesseth: that the said party of the first part, for and in consideration of the rents, covenants, agreements and conditions hereinafter mentioned, reserved and contained on the part and behalf of the said parties of the second part and their successors, to be paid, kept and performed as granted, demised and to farm let, and by these presents doth grant, devise, and to farm-let unto the said parties of the second part and their successors, all that certain lot, piece or parcel of land, on which the church edifice of St. James the Less is now erected in the town aforesaid, bounded and containing as follows:—commencing at a bound mark on the south fence of the old Scarsdale farm road, being the northerly corner of a lot of land designed for a cemetery marked A on the annexed diagram, running thence south fifteen degrees, west six chains two links, along a line of pegs, and east of the church edifice as shown by a dotted line in diagram to a ground mark in the opposite fence at B, thence along the south fence north seventy-five degrees, thirty minutes, west five chains and sixty links to a point in diagram marked C, thence north seventeen degrees, thirteen minutes, east six chains and eighty links, fifty links east of and parallel to the western fence of said lot as shown by a dotted line to a point marked D in diagram, thence south sixty-seven degrees, forty minutes, east forty chains and ninety-two links along the south fence of the old Scarsdale farm road aforesaid, to the place of commencing at A. The lot is bounded on all sides by lands of the said William H. Popham, and contains three acres one rood and twenty-six perches, as designated in a diagram herunto annexed, surveyed by R. Henwood, October, eighteen hundred and fifty-one. To have and to hold the above mentioned and described premises with the appurtenances, unto the said parties of the second part and their successors in office from the day of the date hereof, for and during the full end and time of one thousand years next ensuing, and fully to be completed and ended, yielding and paying therefor unto the said party of the first part, and his heirs yearly and every year during the said term hereby granted the yearly rent or sum of one silver dime, lawful money of the United States of America, on the Festival of St. Philip and St. James in each and every year; and, also, the parties of the second part or their successors in office, shall not at any time during the continuance of the term hereby granted let, underlet, assign, sell or convey the whole or any part of said premises to any person or persons, sole or corporate whatever, except the right or privilege of burial in said ground; and upon the further condition that religious services in said church during said term shall be performed according to the form prescribed by the book of Common Prayer, or the administration of the Sacraments and other rites and ceremonies as prescribed in said book for the use of the Protestant Episcopal Church of the United States of America, and of the doctrine and discipline therein set forth, and the canons of said Church by a duly and regularly ordained minister of said Protestant Episcopal Church, or by one allowed by the canons of said Church so to officiate, or by a duly ordained minister of the Church of England, as now by law established, and

none other; provided always, nevertheless, that if the rent above reserved shall not be demanded by, or paid to the said party of the first part or his heirs on or before the Feast of St. Andrew in every year, after the same shall have been due, that then said parties of the second part shall forever thereafter be discharged from the payment of the same. And provided further, that in case any form or mode of worship shall be used or celebrated in said church, or in any other building that may hereafter be erected thereon, or upon any portion of said grounds in the open air, other than as above mentioned; or if said church or any portion of said land shall be used or converted to secular use, then and thenceforward it shall and may be lawful for said party of the first part, his heirs and assigns into and upon the said described premises, and every part thereof, wholly to re-enter and remove therefrom all persons found violating the aforesaid conditions, and the same shall remain vacant until a new incumbent be appointed by the Bishop of the said Church then administering the Diocese; anything herein before contained to the contrary thereof notwithstanding. And the said parties of the second part and their successors in office, do covenant and agree to and with the said party of the first part and his heirs, by these presents, that they the said parties of the second part and their successors in office shall, and will yearly and every year during the said term hereby granted, well and truly pay the said rent in manner aforesaid, reserved, if demanded, within the time aforesaid: and that they will not celebrate nor allow to be celebrated in said church or other buildings that may be hereafter erected on said land, or upon any open space thereof in the open air, any other form or mode of worship than that of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the United States of America aforesaid or by any other person not duly ordained according to the forms prescribed in the said Book of Common Prayer or allowed by the Canons of the said Church, or by a duly ordained minister of the Church of England, as now by law established in England, and in good standing therein. And the said parties of the second part further covenant and agree to and with the said party of the first part and his heirs, that they will not during said term hereby granted, let, underlet, assign, sell, convey or in any way or manner dispose of the whole or any part or portion of said premises above mentioned, except the right or privilege of burying therein as aforesaid; and that they will faithfully keep and perform all the covenants herein, on their part and behalf to be kept and performed. And the said party of the first part for himself, his heirs, executors, administrators and assigns, doth covenant and agree to and with the said parties of the second part and their successors in office, by these presents, that the said parties of the second part keeping and performing the conditions, covenants and agreements aforesaid on their part and behalf, the said parties of the second part and their successors in office shall and may at all times hereafter, during the said term hereby granted, peacefully and quietly have, hold and enjoy the said described premises without any manner of let, suit, trouble or hindrance of or from the said party of the first part, his heirs or assigns or any other person or persons whomsoever. In witness whereof the parties hereto have interchangeably set their hands and seals, the day and year first above written.

WILLIAM H. POPHAM, [L. s.]

By order of the Corporation of the church of St. James the Less, Scarsdale.<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> County Rec. Liber. 180 of Deeds, p. 400.



The parish church is well situated on an eminence commanding a fine view of the Greenburgh hills, under which flows the river Bronx, adding greatly to the beauty of the picture. It was built, as before stated, by William S. Popham, Esq., in conjunction with several members of his family and personal friends. The style of the building is early English or first pointed, according to Rickman's nomenclature. It is constructed of native stone, with dressings of the white dolomitic marble, and consists of a nave, chancel, with sacristy attached, and porch. The nave, which is 56 feet by 24 feet in the clear, with sittings for about 211, is divided into four bays, the flank walls of which are pierced with couplets, excepting the first bay from the west end on south side, which contains a door leading to the porch. The roof is open, with rafters diagonally braced. The pulpit is in the north-east corner of the nave. A font of the largest size (2 feet 6 inches across the bowl) stands in the south-east corner of the nave. It is circular, supported on a central octagonal stem, surrounded by four detached pillars of white marble, and was presented by the sisters of the first rector of the parish. The seats are open, and entirely free of any charge for rent or use—the church being supported by voluntary contributors at the offertory. The organ, presented by a member of the vestry, is situated at the west end of the nave. The chancel 20 ft. by 16 ft. in the clear, is separated from the nave by the chancel arch. The choir is raised two steps above the nave, and has two stalls on the south side. On the north it opens by a door into the sacristy. The sanctuary, elevated above the choir by two steps, is about eight feet in depth, containing an altar 6 feet by 3 feet, on a foot pace, a credence shelf on the south side, and Bishop's seat on the north. The chancel is lighted by a triplet of richly stained glass, the middle lancet of which contains a cross within the *vesica piscis*; the south, a dove and font; and the north, a paten and chalice. The rest of the glass, excepting the west end of the nave, which is rich grisailed, and the southern windows of the chancel, which have colored borders, is plain enameled. The whole of the stained glass was manufactured by Mr. John Bolton, of Pelham. Over the central lancet in the chancel, and in the middle of the west gable are triangular trifoliated lights, with colored glass.

The west end of the nave, supporting bell gable, has flank window couplets. Taken as a whole, we think that this simple church, in proportion and general arrangement, might well serve as a model for a country parish. The entire cost, including the glass and furnace chamber, was \$5,000. It was designed and carried out by Frank Wills, Esq., of New York.

This church was consecrated on the 28th of June, 1851, by Rt. Rev.



William Heathcote De Lancey (a great grandson of the first Lord of the manor, Col. Caleb Heathcote) who preached the sermon and administered the Holy Communion; he was assisted in the services by the Right Rev. Bishop Whittingham, of Maryland.

The communion service, presented on the day of consecration, consists of the following articles: a flagon inscribed:—"The blood of Jesus Christ cleanseth us from all sin." Two silver chalices, each having the following inscription:—"I will receive the cup of salvation." A paten with the legend:—"I will offer unto Thee the sacrifice of thanksgiving;" and a silver alms basin, which was presented by an aged female friend on the day of consecration. The altar cloth is of rich crimson velvet, presented by the rector's father, having the sacred monogram I. H. S., worked in gold and blue by a lady of the parish. The church linen is also richly embroidered, and bears numerous inscriptions, likewise the work of various ladies of the parish. The service books were presented by individuals interested in the church, and the Bishop's chair by the builder, Mr. Henry Cornell. The bell weighing — lbs., was cast by Meneely of West Troy, and was presented by ——. To St. James' is attached a parochial school and a rectory.

#### RECTORS OF SCARSDALE.

| TEMP. INST.    | RECTORS.                | VAC'T.     | PATRONS.        |
|----------------|-------------------------|------------|-----------------|
| 31 Jan., 1850, | REV. JAMES F. LE BARON, | per resig. | Ward. and Vest. |
| 1 April, 1851, | REV. WILLIAM W. OLSSEN, | " "        | " " "           |
| July, 1872,    | REV. HENRY WEBBE,       | " "        | " " "           |

Immediately north of the Popham residence is situated the former estate of the Varian family, now belonging to the late Col. Jonathan Varian who greatly distinguished himself in the last war with Great Britain; and who was the eldest son of Michael Varian, who occupied the homestead in 1775. Michael, as well as his brothers, Richard and Isaac, took an active part in their country's service during the Revolutionary war. Of this family was Isaac Varian, Esq., Mayor of the city of New York.

A little west of the church is the Scarsdale railroad station (on the Harlem R. R., twenty-two miles from New York) and Post-Office.

Directly opposite the former residence of the Hon. Richard Morris, a tragical event took place during the Revolution, the circumstances are thus related. An officer belonging to Col. Armand's, that is, Monsieur Le Marquis de la Rouerie's cavalry of the French legion, went down accompanied by a new party to the village of East Chester on a Sunday morning to have his horse shod. "It appears that Gilbert Vin-

cent Jr., was the only member of his family at home (his father Gilbert *having* gone below) when the party arrived at the Smithy ; and he positively declined to shoe the horse—not only as a matter of conscience, but on the ground that he was out of coal. This was considered, by his unreasonable foes, an insufficient excuse ; and some of the West Chester guides who accompanied the French officer, knowing that Gilbert's father and brother were strong Tories, determined that the want of coal was a mere pretext to avoid doing a service for the upper party (as the Americans and their allies were termed) and so they endeavored to compel the young man to do the work by force ; resistance was naturally offered, whereupon a scuffle ensued, and at length one of the dragoons drew a pistol and shot Vincent dead on the spot ; while others say that the officer himself becoming enraged at the reply, drew his sword and struck the unoffending blacksmith to the ground—when his brother Elijah Vincent, who belonged to De Lancey's Refugee corps, heard of the outrage, he vowed revenge on the murderer ; and the better to accomplish his purpose, determined to lay in wait and watch the French scouting parties as they passed to and fro from Scarsdale to their encampment on the Greenburgh hills. For several nights, he watched in vain ; but at length the opportune moment for revenge arrived. It so happened that a party of the Duke of Lauzune's patrols were passing the very spot where Vincent lay, concealed behind the bushes ; he immediately rose and fired upon the unsuspecting company, and a captain of the Hussars fell from his horse mortally wounded. Favored by the darkness of the night Vincent fled into the woods and made the rest of his way to West Farms, where he arrived early the following morning ; after the war, he removed to Canada and died there."<sup>a</sup>

It was along the high ridge of Scarsdale, north-west of the post road, that the British forces, led by Generals Clinton and De Heister, marched on the very day of the battle of White Plains, 28th of October, 1776. The late Francis Secor, of Scarsdale, was in the habit of telling, "how that he had often heard his father describe the march of the British army on the day of the Battle at White Plains. He stood, as they passed, under the great tree in front of their house ; marching along the ridge which runs north of the post road, he suspected them to be the right column of the British army. As they moved steadily forward, they drove before them a force which constituted the advanced guard of Washington's army. The enemy were preceded by a strong body of pioneers, who tore down

<sup>a</sup> Mac Donald MSS. in possession of Geo. H. Moore, Lib. N. Y., Hist. Soc. Conversation of William Barker of White Plains, Oct. 23-25, 1844-5; also John Williams of the County House, aged 93, Oct. 17, 1844-5.

the fences and made bridges therewith for crossing brooks and low swampy grounds. They crossed the road on the west side of where it forks, *i. e.*, at the Fox meadows"<sup>a</sup> junction of the Mamaroneck and Hartford post roads.

Near the centre of the town, upon what is still called the Angevine farm, once stood the residence of the world-renowned Fennimore Cooper, Esq., whose wife, Susan, was the daughter of John Peter de Lancey, of Heathcote Hill, Mamaroneck, the grandson of Colonel Caleb Heathcote. The old mansion, which has long since disappeared, was constructed in the French chateau style, and commanded splendid views of the surrounding country. The property, after Mr. Cooper's death, was sold by Mr. Cooper's children to Alexander McWhorter Bruen, M.D., who married Sarah Louisa Jay, third daughter of the Hon. William Jay, of Bedford. The Bruens descend from a family of that name, formerly seated at Bruen, Stapleford, Cheshire, England. Robert Le Bruen, of that place, in 1230, was the ancestor of the celebrated John Bruen, Esquire,<sup>b</sup> of Bruen, Stapleford, who was born in 1560, and died 1625. His son, Obadiah Bruen, was entered a freeman of Plymouth Colony, Massachusetts, in 1640. Before 1650, he was chosen seven times deputy to the General Court, from Gloucester. From the latter place he removed to New London. In the charter of Connecticut, granted by Charles II., his name appears as one of the patentees of the Colony. From New London he removed in 1667, with his son John to Milford (now the city of Newark, New Jersey). John, his son, left Eleazer the father of Eleazer the grandfather of Matthias Bruen, Esq., father of the present Alexander M. Bruen, M.D., of Scarsdale.

In this vicinity formerly resided Captain De Kay, the father of the late James E. De Kay, M.D., one of the Geological Commissioners of the State.

In the old church of Tarvin, near Stapleford, is recorded the following memorial of John Bruen:—

BURIALS 25 JAN'Y, 1625,

JOHN BRUEN,

of Stapleford, Esquire.

*Nulli pictate secundus*

---

"An Israelite in whom no guyle  
Or fraud was ever found;  
A Phoenix rare  
Whose virtues fair,  
Through all our coasts do sound."

<sup>a</sup> MacDonald's MSS. in possession of George H. Moore, Lib. of N. Y. Hist. Soc. Conversation of Francis Secor. Nov. 5, 1844-5.

<sup>b</sup> "The very singular life of John Bruen, Esq., of Bruen, Stapleford," Cheshire. Republished by A. M. Bruen, M.D., 1857.—Edward O. Jenkins, New York.

On the south-eastern side of Scarsdale is situated the Quaker meeting-house, which occupies the site of a much older structure, erected prior to the Revolution.

The first independent election for officers of the manor of Scarsdale, took place on the 22d of December, 1783. In pursuance of an act of the Legislature passed October 23d, 1779, entitled "an Act to provide for the temporal Government of the southern part of this State, whenever the enemy shall abandon or be dispossessed of the same, and until the Legislature can be convened," &c.

The town met on the aforesaid day, at the house of Jonathan Griffin, near the usual place of holding said meetings; then and there the inhabitants proceeded to choose town officers by a majority of votes.

JONATHAN TOMPKINS, Supervisor.

BENJAMIN CORNELL, Clerk.

STEPHEN CORNELL, }  
THOMAS CORNELL, } Assessors.

ISRAEL HERRIOTT, Constable and Collector.

FERRIS CORNELL, }  
SAMUEL FISHER, } Overseers of the Highway.

FERRIS CORNELL, Pounder.

JOHN CROMPTON, }  
THOMAS CORNELL, } Fence and Sewage Viewers.

At a town meeting held in the manor of Scarsdale, at the school-house, in said manor, near Captain Jonathan Griffin's, on the 6th of April, 1784, and in the eighth year of the independency of America, according to an Act of Assembly made in that case for each town, manor, province and district, to choose all necessary town officers for the benefit of the towns, for the ensuing year.

JONATHAN TOMPKINS, }  
JOHN BARKER, } Inspectors of said Meeting.  
ISRAEL HERRIOTT, }

JONATHAN G. TOMPKINS, Supervisor.

BENJAMIN CORNELL, Clerk.

ISRAEL HERRIOTT, Constable and Collector.

JOHN BARKER, }  
JOHN COMPTON, } Assessors.  
STEPHEN CORNELL, }

WILLIAM GRIFFIN, }  
SAMUEL HIGHER, } Overseers of Highways.

JOHN CROMPTON, }  
THOMAS CORNELL, } Fence and Damage Overseers.

SAMUEL HIGHER, Pounder.



# THE TOWN OF SOMERS.

---

Somers is situated twenty miles North of the village of White Plains, distant fifty miles from New York, and one hundred and twenty from Albany—bounded north by Dutchess County, east by North Salem and Lewisborough, south by Bedford and New Castle, and west by Yorktown.

Prior to the year 1788 Somers formed a part of the township of *Hanover*, within Cortlandt's manor. Upon the 7th of March, 1788, it was independently organized under the title of *Stephentown*, a name adopted out of compliment to Stephen Van Cortlandt, one of its principal proprietors. The present name was bestowed, A.D. 1808, in honor, it is said, of Captain Somers, one of the gallant heroes of the Tripolitan war. This individual terminated a short but brilliant career in the bay of Tripoli.

The name of Somers, (says Mr. Silliman,) the twin brother in arms of Decatur, shines brightly in the history of American warfare; and the last desperate action which terminated his short and brilliant career, with his life, is stamped in colors so indelible, that nothing but the destroying finger of time can efface it from its pages. After a severe and continued fighting before Tripoli, the Turkish flotilla withdrew within the mole, and could not be induced to venture themselves beyond the guns of the Tripolitan battery. The 'ketch Intrepid' was fitted out as a fire-ship, filled to the decks with barrels of gunpowder, shells, pitch, and other combustible materials; and Captain Somers, with a volunteer crew, undertook the hazardous, almost desperate, task of navigating her in the darkness of the night into the middle of the Turkish flotilla—when

the train was to be fired, and they were to make their escape as they best could in her boats. Lieutenants Wadsworth and Israel were the only officers allowed to join the expedition, which was composed of a small crew of picked men. The 'Intrepid' was escorted as far as prudent by three vessels of the squadron, who hove to, to avoid suspicion, and to be ready to pick up the boats upon their return; the 'Constitution,' under easy sail in the offing

Many a brave heart could almost hear its own pulsations in those vessels, as she became more and more indistinct and gradually disappeared in the distance. They watched for some time with intense anxiety, when a heavy cannonade was opened from the Turkish batteries, which, by its flashes, discovered the 'ketch' determinedly progressing on her deadly errand. She was slowly and surely making for the entrance of the mole, when the whole atmosphere suddenly blazed as if into open day. The masts with all its sails shot high up in the air; shells wizzed, rocket-like, exploding in every direction; a deafening roar followed, and all sunk again into the deepest pitchy darkness. The Americans waited—waited—in anxious—at last sickening suspense. Their companions came not—the hours rolled on—no boat hailed—no oar splashed in the surrounding darkness. The east grew gray with the dawn—the sun shone brightly above the horizon, nought but a few shattered vessels lying near the shore—the flotilla—the batteries—and the minarets of Tripoli gilded by the morning sunbeams, met their gaze. Those noble spirits had written their history. Whether consigned to eternity by a shot of the enemy, prematurely exploding the magazine, or from the firing of the train by their own hands, must always remain untold and unknown."<sup>a</sup>

The United States brig 'Somers,' lost in a gale off Vera Cruz, January, 1847, was also named after this young hero.

Under the Mohegan Indians, Somerstown formed an appendage to the great territory of *Amagh-pogh* or *Ammawalk*. In 1699, a deed for this tract was executed by Sachima Wicker, the chief of the Kightawonck tribe, (within whose limits Amagh-pogh was comprehended,) to Stephanus van Cortlandt.

The principal *Indian settlement* appears to have stood upon the summit of a rocky ridge bordering the Croton river, on the lands of Gerard Crane, Esq. *Indian lodges* also occupied the higher grounds and adorned the romantic banks of the numerous streams intersecting this town. In the woods of Ray Tompkins, Esq., situated upon the east side of Angle Fly brook, are yet visible the remains of Indian habitations. The *Indian burying ground* lies near Wood's bridge, at the junction of Plum

<sup>a</sup> Silliman's *Gallipoli among American Scenery*.

brook and Croton river. This beautiful portion of Westchester county, so highly diversified with hills and dales was once covered with extensive forests, abounding with every species of wild game. Deer were numerous here, as late as 1780; and wolves, though rare, were not extinct at that period. The Indians, for the better purpose of hunting the large herds of deer that roamed through these forests, annually burnt the higher grounds. "This practice (says Vanderdonck.) is named by us and the Indians, '*bush-burning*,' which is done for several reasons; first, to render hunting easier—as the bush and vegetable growth renders the walking difficult for the hunter, and the crackling of the dry substances betrays him and frightens away the game. Secondly, to thin out and clear the woods of all dead substances and grass, which grow better the ensuing spring. Thirdly, to circumscribe and enclose the game within the lines of the fire, when it is more easily taken, and also because the game is more easily tracked over the burned parts of the woods. The bush burning presents a grand and sublime appearance. On seeing it from without, we would imagine that not only the dry leaves, vegetables and limbs would be burnt, but that the whole woods would be consumed where the fire passes; for it frequently spreads and rages with such violence, that it is awful to behold," &c.<sup>a</sup> The last *burning*, remembered by the oldest inhabitant, took place on the high ridge east of Primrose street.

By the royal patent to Stephanus van Cortlandt in 1697, it will be seen that he enjoyed the sole right of hunting deer within the forests of Cortlandt, a privilege usually conceded to the Ranger of the county.<sup>b</sup>

The deep seclusion of the woods, bordering Plum brook, afforded an agreeable haunt to the beaver; and here these industrious animals had constructed an extensive dam, which long survived their existence.

Upon the partition of the manor of Cortlandt among the heirs of the Hon. Stephanus van Cortlandt, in the year 1734, the following allotments were made in this town: North lot, No. 5, Mrs. Margaret Bayard; ditto, No. 6, Philip van Cortlandt; ditto, No. 7, Andrew Johnston; part of north lot No. 8, Mr. Miller; south lot, No. 5, Stephen De Lancey; ditto, No. 6, Stephen van Cortlandt; ditto, half of lot No. 7, Stephen van Cortlandt; part of south lot No. 9, Mrs. Susannah Warren; ditto, No. 10, Stephen De Lancey—this lot has since been annexed to the town of New Castle, by an Act of the Legislature, passed 1846. Subsequent to the above division, we find the heirs of Stephanus van Cortlandt disposing of their respective rights in the same. On the 4th of

<sup>a</sup> N. Y. Hist. Collect. 2d series, vol. 1.

<sup>b</sup> See, Cortlandt town, vol. 1. 46.

June, 1760, Samuel Bayard granted to Hachaliah Brown, gentleman, of the town of Rye, "all that tract of land being in the northernmost part of the manor of Cortlandt, bounded north by the dividing line of Dutchess and Westchester, to the line of Philip's upper patent, west by lot of Andrew Johnston, south by bounds of Samuel Brown and east by Croton river."<sup>a</sup>

In the year 1762, Andrew Johnston conveyed to Hachaliah Brown, "all that lot of land, situate, lying and being in lot No. 6, east range, and being part of north lot No. 7, at Plum brook, consisting of two hundred and thirty acres."<sup>b</sup>

It appears that Andrew Johnston did also in his lifetime, by a certain indenture, bearing date 20th March, 1762, lease to John Hampstead a certain lot of land, lying and being at Plum brook, in the manor of Cortlandt, known by the name of farm No. 4, west range, and is part of great lot No. 7. The same was again leased to John Hampstead by the heirs of Andrew Johnston, 24th of June, 1772.

John Hampstead, the above lessee, was one of the first settlers of this town. From his tombstone, in the Union burying ground, we learn that he departed this life the 26th of April, 1801, at the advanced age of 107 years, 5 months and 21 days.

How few can reach those years of time,  
Which here are numbered to our view,  
Since death calls most while in their prime,  
And leaves behind so aged few.

Upon the 3d of December, 1772, the devisees of Andrew Johnston conveyed to Lewis Bailey, farm No. 9, in the west range of great north lot No. 7.<sup>c</sup> In the year 1775, the executors and heirs of Andrew Johnston deceased, conveyed to Abraham Theale, certain land situate on Plum brook.

A. D. 1793. John Johnston, executor of Andrew Johnston, conveyed to Benjamin Green, of Stephentown, a farm in the north-east corner of lot No. 4, west range, being part of Andrew Johnston's great north lot, No. 7.

These sales clearly show that the great lots were again sub-divided by the devisees of Stephanus van Cortlandt. Many of the descendants of the above-mentioned grantees still occupy the patrimonial estates in fee simple.

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. I, 66.

<sup>b</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. I, 61. Upon the 17th of June, 1760, Hachaliah Brown, of Rye, conveyed the same to his eldest son, Hachaliah Brown, Jr. The property is still vested in their descendants.

<sup>c</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. I, 179.



The oldest record relating to town officers occurs in a small manuscript volume, entitled as follows :

“Book of the records of the proceedings from the first town meeting of the people of Stephentown, being the year of our Lord, one thousand seven hundred and eighty-eight, whereof William Horton, Esq., was chosen town clerk.

“The first Tuesday in April, in the year above written, the people of Stephentown met at the house of Benjamin Green, for choosing town officers and other necessary business of the town for the year ensuing.

|  |                          |
|--|--------------------------|
| HACHALIAH BROWN, Supervisor,             |                          |
| WILLIAM HORTON, Esq., Town Clerk,        |                          |
| OBADIAH PURDY,                           | } Assessors,             |
| NATHANIEL WRIGHT,                        |                          |
| HERMAN HILLIKER,                         |                          |
| SAMUEL GREEN,                            |                          |
| JOHN STEDWELL,                           | } Overseers of the Poor, |
| JACOB LENT,                              |                          |
| BENJAMIN GREEN, Constable and Collector. |                          |

The *village* of Somers is pleasantly situated on a beautiful plain almost surrounded by romantic hills, the tops of which are clothed with a profusion of green verdure. The air of this delightful region is said to be uncommonly mild and salubrious. To the south of the village lies the delightful vale of *Plum Brook*, through which passes the road to Pine's Bridge. On the north-east, *Prospect Hill* rises in a grand picturesque manner. The village of *Somers Plain*, commonly so-called, “is the principal market of lean cattle and sheep, brought hither from various and distant parts of the country to supply the wants occasioned by the sales of fattened cattle and sheep to the butchers of New York. The farmers of this county carry on an extensive traffic in this way, and droves are annually and almost constantly arriving from the inland regions—some from 100, 220 and 300 miles—to replace the consumption.”<sup>a</sup> It is computed that over 5,000 head of horned stock are annually fatted in this district alone.

A bank has been for many years established in this village, under the name of “*The Farmers and Drovers Bank of Somers*.” This institution was first organized under the general banking law of 1839, with a capital of \$111,000. First president, Horace Bailey, Esq. It deserves notice that the money of the *Farmers and Drovers Bank* has always been redeemable at par. The present board of directors, consist of :

|                      |                  |                   |
|----------------------|------------------|-------------------|
| HORACE BAILEY, Esq., | LEWIS DOANE,     | LEONARD D. CLIFT, |
| EPENETUS HOWE,       | EDWIN CROSBY,    | STEPHEN BROWN,    |
| JOHN TITUS,          | CHARLES WRIGHT,  | GERARD CRANE,     |
| DANIEL KENT,         | THADDEUS CRANE,  | LEWIS BROWN,      |
|                      | <i>Officers,</i> | SOLOMON BAILEY.   |

HORACE BAILEY, Esq., President,      EGBERT HOWLAND, Cashier.

<sup>a</sup> New York Gazetteer.

Near the centre of the village, and directly opposite the junction of the Pines Bridge and Peekskill turnpike road, stands the *Elephant Hotel*, a very commodious and handsome brick edifice, under the superintendence of Horace Bailey, Esq.

The large zoological exhibitions which annually visit this State, originated in Somerstown, through the enterprise of Hachaliah Bailey ; who imported about 1815, the celebrated elephant "*Old Bet*," the first ever brought to the United States. Other importations of animals quickly followed, but subsequently the smaller companies became absorbed into one grand traveling menagerie. The present proprietors are Messrs. Thaddeus and Gerard Crane. These gentlemen are associated with the great lion-tamer, Van Amburgh ; and in the adjoining town of North Salem, with Lewis Titus and John June.



St. Luke's Church, Somers.

The Episcopal church of St. Luke, occupies a fine situation, on the *Plain*, at no great distance from the hotel. It is a very handsome edifice of wood, in the Grecian style, with a stone basement beneath. The front presents a lofty portico, supported by Ionic columns ; the roof is surmounted with a low tower.

Previous to the erection of this church in 1842, Episcopal services were occasionally performed in the town, by the neighboring clergy. They were held usually in an edifice erected by the liberality of persons belonging to the various religious societies, and others possessing no denominational connection, under the name of the Union Meeting House. Here the Churchmen of this section of country were favored with the

occasional ministrations of the Rev. R. C. Moore, the late pious and beloved Bishop of Virginia, and many other respectable and laborious clergymen. As early as 1808, we find the Rev. Evan Rogers officiating here. Before the 26th of January, in the year 1835, the present parish was organized under the rectorship of the Rev. Alexander Fraser; about this time, arrangements were made for disposing of the interest which the Episcopal party held in the Union Meeting House and parsonage, and building a church for themselves. This was quickly effected through the active and zealous exertions of the vestry, to whose liberality, together with that of several other individuals of the neighborhood, friendly to the undertaking, the parish is indebted for its present commodious and beautiful church.

This building was consecrated to the service of Almighty God, on the 19th of January, A.D. 1842, by the Right Rev. Benjamin Tredwell Onderdonk. It had been previously incorporated upon the 28th of February, 1835.

Isaac Purdy and Frederick J. Coffin, church-wardens; Thaddeus Barlow, Aaron Brown, William Marshall, Gerard Crane, Edwin Finch, Charles Wright, William Clock and Ray Tompkins, vestrymen.<sup>a</sup>

## LIST OF RECTORS:

| INSTITUTED OR CALL. | INCUMBENTS.                        | VACATED BY.        |
|---------------------|------------------------------------|--------------------|
| A.D. 1835,          | REV. ALEXANDER FRASER, Presb.      | resig,             |
| A.D. 1842,          | REV. DAVID H. SHORT, Presb.        | do.                |
| A.D. 1844,          | REV. SAMUEL CHALMERS DAVIS, Presb. | do.                |
| A.D. 1846,          | REV. ALFRED H. PARTRIDGE,          | do.                |
| A.D. 1851,          | REV. JOHN WILLS MOORE,             | do.                |
| A.D. 1856,          | REV. GEORGE S. GORDON,             | do.                |
| A.D. 1861,          | REV. CHARLES DOUGLASS,             | do.                |
| A.D. 1862.          | REV. WILLIAM MURPHY,               | do.                |
| A.D. 1864,          | REV. BENJAMIN WEBB,                | do.                |
| A.D. 1868,          | REV. JACOB MOORE,                  | do.                |
| A.D. 1869,          | REV. R. CONDIT RUSSELL,            | present incumbent. |

The Presbyterian church is very pleasantly situated on the north side of the main street, near the foot of Prospect Hill.

Its front presents a neat portico of the Doric order. The Presbyterian society was first incorporated on the 10th of January, 1811, under the name of the "Union Presbyterian Church, of Somerstown;" Darius Crosby, Lewis Brown, Amaziah Mead, Joseph Owens, Jr., James Bailey, and Ebenezer White, Jr, trustees.<sup>b</sup> In the year 1832, a mutual division

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Religious Soc., Lib. B, 33.

<sup>b</sup> Ibid. Lib, A, 45.

took place, which led to the erection of the Presbyterian church at Croton Falls, whose pastor is the Rev. Joseph Nimmo. The present church edifice was erected A.D. 1799.

## CATALOGUE OF PASTORS AND SUPPLIES.

| INSTAL OR CALL. | PASTOR OR SUPPLY.                | VACATED BY.  |
|-----------------|----------------------------------|--------------|
| A.D. 1801,      | REV. JOHN MCNIECE,               | resignation. |
| A.D. 1805,      | REV. MR. PERKINS,                | do.          |
| A.D. 1823,      | REV. SYLVANUS HAIGHT,            | do.          |
| A.D. 1824,      | REV. ABRAHAM PURDY,              | by death.    |
| A.D. 1825,      | MR. ABNER BRUNDIGE, }            | Licentiates. |
| A.D. 1826,      | MR. JAMES AUSTIN, }              |              |
| A.D. 1827,      | REV. EZRA DAY,                   | resignation. |
| A.D. 1831,      | REV. GRIFFITH R. GRIFFITH,       | do.          |
| A.D. 1834,      | REV. HENRY BENEDICT,             | do.          |
| A.D. 1835,      | REV. ALEXANDER LEADBITHER,       | do.          |
| A.D. 1845,      | REV. GEORGE MENELAUS,            |              |
| A.D. 1848,      | REV. D. D. TOMPKINS McLAUGHLIN.  |              |
| A.D. 1857,      | REV. W. R. PLATT.                |              |
| A.D. 1865,      | REV. P. H. BURGHARDT.            |              |
| A.D. 1869,      | REV. C. B. WHITCOMB, Licentiate. |              |
| A.D. 1872,      | REV. JOSEPH BEERS,               | resigned.    |

No minister at present.

The first Methodist Episcopal society in this town, was incorporated on the 10th of May, 1794. Joseph Hadden, Thomas Bailey, John Stedwell, Abraham Golding, Samuel Wilson, Jun., and Benjamin Huestis, trustees.<sup>a</sup> A second incorporation of the Methodist Episcopal church, occurs upon the 20th of December, 1808.<sup>b</sup> The incorporation of the Methodist brick church, took place on the 20th of Sept. 1836. This building is still standing on the Mahopack road, a little north-east of the village.

In the rear of the Presbyterian church is situated the *Union burying ground*. Here are memorials to the Browns, Owens, Wrights, Crosbys, Cranes, Finchs, Baileys, Turks and Whites, &c., &c. The oldest interment appears to be a member of the Roof family, 1770. A plain headstone bears the following inscription :

SACRED TO THE MEMORY

OF

JAMES BAILEY,

who died Nov. 13, 1826,

aged 79 years 1 mo. and 16 days.

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Religious Soc. Lib. A. 45.

<sup>b</sup> Ibid.



"O! death thy ensigns here display,  
 Another mortal snatched away.  
 From life, from friends, from every tie  
 That binds to earth, yet called to die,  
 Such is our lot, like him here laid,  
 We must be numbered with the dead,  
 And yield our life a transient day,  
 To mingle with our mother clay."

In this yard lie also the remains of Mary, wife of Luther Kinnicut,<sup>a</sup> who departed this life Nov. 13, 1811, aged 56 years.

In the immediate vicinity of the village, are situated the farms and residences of Gerard Crane, Edward Finch, Charles Wright,<sup>b</sup> Thaddeus Crane, Caleb Green, Robert Halleck, John Titus<sup>c</sup> and others.

A charming valley opens to the east of the plains through which flows the Croton. Rapidity seems to be the principal characteristic of this fine stream; its Indian name Kitchawan, denoting the general swiftness of its current. South of Dean's bridge, the banks are highly diversified with romantic and picturesque scenery; below Dean's bridge are Golding's, Woods' and the Muscoota bridges.

The village of Croton Falls, formerly Owenville, occupies the north-east corner of Somers, bordering on the south line of Putnam county. At this place, the Croton river "affords hydraulic power to a great extent, but little of which is as yet occupied for manufacturing purposes." The stream is said to average three hundred horse power. Here are located a Presbyterian church, a paper mill, a saw and grist mill, a clothier's works, a post-office, two stores and several dwellings, besides a railroad depot for the accommodation of travellers and for merchandise. There is also a convenient hotel, under the management of Messrs. Smith and Mead. Stages during the summer months, leave this place daily for Lake Mahopack,<sup>d</sup> a distance of five miles. Nearly opposite the depot, the two main branches of the Croton river unite.

The Presbyterian Society was first organized here, in 1833, under the pastoral charge of the Rev. Joseph Nimmo. A neat and commodious

---

<sup>a</sup> Luther Kinnicut served in the capacity of a spy to General Washington during the Revolution. See page 12.

<sup>b</sup> Mr. Wright occupies the estate formerly owned by James Bailey.

<sup>c</sup> This gentleman is the son of John Titus, and great grandson of Samuel Titus, whose father, Edmund, was born in England, in 1639, and came from Massachusetts to Long Island in 1650—See Thompson's Long Island, vol. ii. 54.

<sup>d</sup> "Lake Mahopack is a beautiful sheet of water, lying in the town of Carmel, Putnam Co.; it is about one mile in diameter, in which are embosomed two or three small islands. The waters abound with various kinds of fish of fine flavor, which are taken in great quantities." —Disturnell's *Gazetteer* of N. Y. Lake Mahopack is situated 150 feet above Croton falls—Editor.

church edifice has been recently erected, to which is attached a small parsonage and grave yard.<sup>a</sup>

Bordering the Croton River, are the estates and residences of Mr. Silas Finch, Mr. Edwin Crosby and Thomas R. Lee, Esq. The latter gentleman represented (in 1842) this county in Assembly.

Within a short distance of the village, is situated the property of the late Lewis Brown, Esq., whose grandfather, Hachaliah Brown, of Rye, purchased these lands under the heirs of Stephanus Van Cortlandt, in 1760. His son, Elbert, at present, resides on the estate.

*West Somers*, as its name imports, is situated to the west of Somers-town Plains. It is a scattered hamlet, containing a store, a post-office, and a commodious hotel belonging to the Messrs. Charles and William Teed.

The neighborhood of *West Somers* is exceedingly beautiful, commanding a rich view of the Plains and Plum Brook Valley.

To the west of this place lies the valley of the Muscoota, through which meanders the Muscoota River. The margins of this lovely stream are adorned in many places with thick woodland and bold hills, which constrain it into an endless variety of windings, at every turn presenting new features. South of Bedell's mill pond its waters form a succession of rapids, which enter the Croton a little below Woodsbridge, near the junction of Cross and Croton Rivers. The running supply of the Muscoota is said to be, at a fair calculation, 3,628,800 gallons per diem.

Upon this stream are placed the grist and saw mill of W. S. Tompkins; the cloth dressing establishment of Reuben C. Varnall; the grist, saw and fulling mill of Munson Perry; and the grist and saw mill of Isaac Bedle.

On the *Mill Brook*, a branch of the Muscoota, are situated the paper mills of William Wallace and Abraham H. Miller.

Angle Fly Brook, a celebrated trout stream, which rises on the lands of Mr. Tompkins, is a tributary of the Muscoota river.

On the east side of Primrose street are situated the residences of Samuel Teed, William Marshall and Ray Tompkins, Esqs. The latter individual is the second son of the Hon. Daniel D. Tompkins. In his possession is an excellent portrait of the Governor, by Waldo and Jewett.

Mount Zion Methodist Episcopal Church, in Primrose street, was erected, cir. 1794, and appears to have been incorporated on the 20th of May, 1823. Henry Clift, Aaron Brown, James Phillips, Samuel S. Ferguson and Samuel Pedwick trustees.

<sup>a</sup> This church is at present connected with the Bedford Presbytery.





*Enoch Crosby*

ENOCH CROSBY, THE SPY.



In the grave yard are interred the remains of

MARGARET,  
 wife of  
 ENOCH CROSBY, Esq.,  
 formerly the wife of  
 COLONEL BENJAMIN GREEN, deceased,  
 Died March 22, 1825,  
 Aged 64 years, 3 months,  
 and 20 days.

The above mentioned lady was the second wife of the well-known  
 “*Westchester Spy*.” By her side is a plain marble monument inscribed,

IN  
 Memory of  
 COL. BENJAMIN GREEN,  
 who died  
 October 6, 1812,  
 Aged fifty-six years and two months.

Upon Plum Brook are situated the saw mills of Messrs. Sylvanus Kniffen and Jacob Ruxer; also the saw and grist mill of Robert Halleck. This stream has its source in the northern part of the town, and running through the town passes into the Croton at Woodsbridge. There are few historical notes of importance in connection with Somers; except, that during the Revolution, General Washington lay encamped for some time on the high hills east of the village, in the vicinity of Mr. Reuben Wright's house.

“The *surface* of Somers is uneven in parts, with some extensive plains; *soil*, various—but mostly well adapted to grass and grain.”<sup>a</sup> “The

<sup>a</sup> See Disturnell's *Gazetteer* of New York.

*farms* are large, and the inhabitants industrious and wealthy. The growth of wood is similar to that in the neighboring towns.” The high land in the north-eastern part of the town are said to abound with iron ore of good quality.



# THE TOWN OF WESTCHESTER.

---

The township of Westchester<sup>a</sup> is situated sixteen miles south of the village of White Plains, distant twelve miles from New York, and one hundred and fifty from Albany; bounded on the north by Eastchester, east, by the Eastchester Bay or Long Island Sound, south by the East River and west by the Bronx. "Its form is defined by water on three sides, and of course irregular—but its medial extent North and South may be four miles, and East and West about two and a half; with an area of nearly ten square miles." Prior to 1846, this town embraced West Farms and the manors of Morrisania and Fordham; the three latter, have recently been attached to New York county.

Like the adjoining lands, Westchester was originally purchased by the Dutch West India Company, of the Mohegan sachems and other Indians, who claimed it in 1640.<sup>b</sup>

Upon the 14th of November, 1654, Thomas Pell of Fairfield, Connecticut, obtained a second grant from the aboriginal proprietors, which also embraced the present town. Thirty years later we find the sachems Maminepoe and Wampage conveying to the inhabitants of Westchester all that tract of land lying on the east side of Bronckses river."

---

<sup>a</sup> This name is probably derived from the city of the same title in Cheshire, England. "Not far from the mouth of the Dee in Cheshire, (says Camden,) stands the noble city, which Ptolemy calls *Deannana* and Antonius, *Deva*, from the river; the Britons *Caer-Legion*, &c., and by way of pre-eminence *Caer*; as our ancestors the Saxons called it *Legeacerca*, from the legion there, and we more contractly *Westchester* from its westerly situation, and simply *Chester* according to that verse,

*Cestria de Castris nomen quasi Castris sumpsit.*  
Chester from Caster (or the camp) was named.

A more appropriate name could not have been selected, as it was situated west of the New England settlements.

<sup>b</sup> Alb. Rec. vol. ii. 147.

The principal Indian settlements in this town, were located upon Castle Hill neck and about Bear swamp.<sup>a</sup> The former is said to have been the site of an Indian castle. On the south-east side of Spicer's neck is situated "*Burying Point*," their place of sepulture: Cornell's neck or Black Rock, they denominated "Snakapins." The extensive "*shell banks*," on the shores of the East river, afford evidence that the aboriginal population must at one time have been very considerable.

Westchester "was probably first settled in 1642, by a Mr. John Throckmorton and thirty-five associates, who came from New England, with the approbation of the Dutch authorities."<sup>b</sup> By the Dutch it was denominated "*Vredeland*," or the "*Land of Peace*," "a meet appellation (says the historian of the New Netherlands,) for the spot selected as a place of refuge by those who were bruised and broken down by religious persecution."<sup>c</sup>

In reply to John Throckmorton's petition, soliciting permission to settle down within the limits of the New Netherlands, is the following license, dated 2d October, 1642:—

"Whereas Mr. Throckmorton, with his associates, solicits to settle with thirty-five families within the limits of the jurisdiction of their High Mightinesses, to reside there in peace and enjoy the same privileges as our other subjects, and be favored with the free exercise of their religion; having seen the petition of the aforesaid Throckmorton, and consulted with the interests of the Company, as this request can by no means be injurious to the country—more so as the English are to settle at a distance of three miles from us—so it is granted. Mr. Throckmorton, with thirty-five English families, are permitted to settle within three miles of Amsterdam."<sup>d</sup>

Upon the 6th of July, 1643, the following "*land brief*" was granted to Jan Throckmorton, &c.

#### GROND BRIEF FOR THROCKMORTON'S NECK.

"We, William Kieft, director general, and the council, in behalf of their high mighty lords, the States General of the United Netherlands, his highness the Prince of Orange, and the noble lords, the managers of the General Incorporated West India Company in New Netherlands residing, by these presents, do pub-

<sup>a</sup> The aborigines maintained possession here as late as 1789. The site of their wigwams is now owned by Mr. Jesse Ryer. In this vicinity is a small excavation cut out of a granite rock, in the form of a mortar, used by the Indians in pounding their corn.

<sup>b</sup> Hist. Collections of N. Y. by John Barber and Henry Howe.

<sup>c</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N. 258. "In July 1661, the La Montagne family, who were heirs to a farm called Vredendal," granted to the councillor La Montagne on the flats, made application to the Director General and Council, in which they set forth that they were desirous of taking possession of their lands situated about a mile from New Harlem, and wished the privilege of establishing an hamlet or concentration of 8 or 10 families, near the place whereon the water-mill is about to be erected on the neck, for the benefit of the village of New Harlem, &c.: the application was refused." Valentine's Manual, 1863, p. 15.

<sup>d</sup> Alb. Rec. from 1638 to 1642.



lish and declare that we, on this day the date under written, have given and granted unto Jan Throckmorton a piece of land, (being a portion of Vredeland,) containing as follows, along the East river of New Netherlands, extending from the point half a mile, which piece of land aforesaid is surrounded on one side by a little river, and on the other side by a great kill, which river and kill on high water running, meet each other, surround the said land, as will more clearly appear by a map of the same which has been made and marked off by the surveyor, with the express conditions and terms that the said Jan Throckmorton, or they who by virtue of these presents shall succeed to his action, the noble lords, the managers aforesaid, shall acknowledge as their lords and patroons, under the sovereignty of the high and mighty lords, the States General, and unto their director and council here, shall in all things be confirmed as all good citizens are in duty bound; provided also that the said Jan Throckmorton and his company (associates) shall furthermore be subject to all such burdens and imposts, as already have been enacted by the noble lords, and hereafter may yet be enacted. It is furthermore made an express condition that the aforesaid Jan Throckmorton, according to promise, shall settle on the aforesaid lands as many families as may offer in the same manner, constituting over the said Throckmorton and his company, in our stead, in the real and actual possession of the aforesaid piece of land, lying on the East river aforesaid, giving them by these presents the full and irrevocable might, authority, and special permission the aforesaid parcel of land to enter, cultivate, inhabit, and occupy, in like manner as he may lawfully do with other his patrimonial lands and effects, without our, the grantors in quality aforesaid, thereunto any longer having. reserving or saving any part, action, or control whatever, but to the behoof as aforesaid, from all assisting from this time forth and forever, promising moreover this transport firmly, invariably, and irrevocably to maintain, fulfil, and execute, and to do all that in equity we are bound to do. Done in Fort Amsterdam in New Netherlands, this 6th day of July, 1643.

“WILLIAM KIEFT.

“By order of the noble lords, the directors and council of the New Netherlands.

“CORNELIS TIENHOVEN, Secretary.”<sup>a</sup>

This grant, subsequently called Throckmorton's Neck, embraced the eastern part of the present town. It was bounded on the north by Eastchester Neck, on the east by Eastchester Bay and Long Island Sound, on the south by the East River, and on the west by the Westchester Creek.

John Throckmorton, the patentee, originally emigrated from England to Nantaskett, Massachussetts, 5th February, 1631, in the ship *Lyon*; from this place he removed to Salem in 1639; he afterwards became a Baptist, and a resident of Rhode Island.<sup>b</sup> From Rhode Island he fled to Vredeland that he might enjoy here (among the Dutch) the free exercise of his religious principles.

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Rec. G. G. 98. Ibid. 173, 4.

<sup>b</sup> *Farmer's Register*.

The Throckmorton family derive their name from Throckemertona, (Throckmorton) or the Rockmoor town, which is situated in the vale of Evesham, Worcester county, England. John Throckmorton was Lord of the manor of Throckmorton, about sixty years after the Norman conquest. The etymology of the name is either British or Saxon, which shows that they held this property before that period. Eighth in descent from John Throckmorton, Lord of Throckmorton in 1130, was John Throckmorton, Lord of Throckmorton's Neck, Vredeland, who left issue John Throckmorton. The patentee is now represented by the Throckmortons, of Middletown, New Jersey.<sup>a</sup> Several members of the Throckmorton family appear to have fallen in the Indian massacre in and around Vredeland, which took place on the 6th of October, 1643.<sup>b</sup> Upon the 29th of April, 1652, John Throckmorton petitioned the Director General for leave to transport Throckmorton's Neck. In October following permission was granted, whereon he conveyed the same to Augustine Hermans.<sup>c</sup>

On the 5th of December, 1656, Governor Stuyvesant ordered that Throckmorton's and Cornell's Neck might come into their jurisdiction if they please.<sup>d</sup>

Augustine Hermans, soon after his purchase, conveyed fifty morgen of land situated on Throckmorton's Neck, to Thomas Hunt. In 1665 the town of Westchester asserted "that *she* had always enjoyed Throckmorton's Neck."<sup>e</sup>

March 23, 1677, I, John Wile, of Madman's Neck belonging to Hempstead on Long Island, doe sel, alinate and make over from myself and my heirs, executors, administrators and assigns forever unto Thomas Molener of Westchester in Yorkshire in New England, to him, his heirs, executors, administrators and assigns six acres of upland, lying and being upon Frogs Neck (so-called) in ye general field, belonging to ye aforesaid Westchester, upon ye place called Quinbe's Neck and adjoining to ye lott that was Thomas Baxter's.

Witnesses,

JOHN WELE, ✕ his mark.

JOHN PALMER,  
NICOLE BAYLE. J

The following abstract is taken from a cause in the Court of Assize, September, 1666, wherein Augustine Hermans was plaintiff, for usurpa-

<sup>a</sup> Joseph Throckmorton divides his lands, 2d Dec., 1689, to the heir male of his brother John Throckmorton, of East Jersey, viz.: Joseph Throckmorton, Rec. of Wills Surrogates Office, N. Y., No. 3, 1684, 1686, p. 189. Sir Nicholas Throckmorton was one of the Secretaries of State in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, 1558.

<sup>b</sup> See page 514. The war between the Dutch and the Indians of Westchester continued throughout 1644.—Alb. Rec. vol. xx. 56.

<sup>c</sup> Rec. of Assize, vol. II. 59.

<sup>d</sup> Alb. Rec. Court of Assize, vol. I. 60.

<sup>e</sup> Alb. Rec. Courts of Assize, vol. II. 60.

J Westchester Rec.

tion of rights; and the inhabitants of the town of Westchester, defendants:—

MR. RIDER, } *Attorneys for ye*  
— SHARPE, } *Plaintiff, &c.*

“They produce the patent to Throckmorton transported to Augustinus Hermans.

“A mappe of ye neck of land is viewed.

“Thomas Hunt, Sen., his disposition read, and his deed from Augustinus Hermans.

“A copy of an order is produced by the defendant, made by the Dutch Governor, bearing date July 9th, 1657, wherein its exprest that Westchester shall have four English, or one Dutch mile square of land for the towne, which must be taken of this neck. There is also mention made on ye said order of a reservation of one hundred or fifty morgen for Throckmorton's and Cornell's Neck, for a farme upon each.

Another order brought in by them, dated 1660, viz., that all persons shall remove from their out farmes, which were at a distance, and settle in townes.

Another writing, acknowledged before Mr. Van Ruyven, of ye plaintiff's making over his interest in ye land in question to Thomas Hunt, Sen.

The court adjudge in lieu of all ye plaintiff's pretences to Throckmorton's Neck, hee shall only have fifty morgen of land thereupon, with meadow proportionable: thirty-four morgen whereof, with a due proportion of meadow, being that which was heretofore sold by the plaintiff to Thomas Hunt, Sen., who is in possession thereof. The other fifteen morgen at the sale reserved by the plaintiff, and making up the complement of the fifty, is to be sett out upon the said neck, with its proportion of meadow, by the Governor's order, and not otherwise, saving the right which Mr. Spicer shall hereafter make appeare to have therein, and the remainder of Throckmorton's Neck is to bee at ye Governor's disposall. It appearing not to this Court that ye towne of Westchester hath any lawful pretence thereunto, the defendants are likewise to pay the charge of suite.”<sup>a</sup>

Upon the 12th of September, 1666, a warrant was granted unto Mr. Augustine Hermans against the inhabitants of Westchester, by Governor Richard Nicolls.<sup>b</sup>

On the 7th of January, 1667, Richard Nicolls granted to Roger Townsend “a certain parcel of land within the limits of Westchester, upon the maine, situate, lying, and being on ye back side of Throckmorton's Neck, at ye south-east end thereof, commonly called New Found Passage, containing fifteen acres; as also a small neck near thereto adjoining, commonly called Horseneck, being about the same quantity of land, which is not in occupation.”

In 1669, thirty acres of land on Throckmorton's neck were granted to Mrs. Micah Spicer.<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Assize Rec. vol. i. 129.

<sup>b</sup> Alb. Assize Rec. vol. i. 46.

<sup>c</sup> The Spicers and Brockets were doubtless some of the associates of John Throckmorton. At a Court of Assizes held November 5th, 1669, Mrs. Micah Spicer sued for thirty acres of land on Throckmorton's Neck.—Assize Rec. 225.

Upon the 12th of January, 1686, Spicer's and Brockett's Necks (commonly called the Grove Farm,) were confirmed by letters patent, under the great seal of the province, to Thomas Hunt, in the following manner:

#### GROVE FARM PATENT.

Thomas Dongan, Captain General, Governor-in-Chief and Vice Admiral in and over the Province of New York and territories depending thereon in America, under his Majesty James the Second, by the grace of God, King of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, &c., &c., &c., Defender of the Faith, &c., to all to whom these presents shall come, sendeth greeting: Whereas Thomas Hunt of the Westchester in the Co. of W. C. stands seized of an estate in fee simple, or one messuage or tenement, and a certain tract or parcel of land and meadow ground, lying, situate and being within the limits or bounds of the town of Westchester aforesaid, on two certain necks of land called by the name and names of Spicer's Neck and Brockett's Neck, wh<sup>h</sup> said messuage or tenements and parcel of land and premises is now called and distinguished and known by name of the Grove Farm of Westchester; being bounded on the east by a certain cove or bay which runs up to the north part of Spicer's Neck, on the south by the Sound, on the west by the harbour and river that runs up to the sd<sup>d</sup> town of Westchester, and on the north by a swamp and a certain creek wh<sup>h</sup> runs into the sd<sup>d</sup> river and divides the lands called Throgmorton's Neck from Spicer's Neck aforesaid; *Know yee*, That by virtue of the commission and authority from his most sacred Majesty and power in me being and residing, in consideration of the quit rent herein after reserved, and other good and lawful considerations me thereunto moving, I have given, granted, ratified and confirmed, and by these presents do give, grant, ratify and &c., &c., &c., confirmed unto the said Thomas Hunt, his heirs and assigns, for ever, all the before recited messuages or tenements and tract or parcel of land and premises with their and every of their appurtenances together with all and singular houses, out-houses, barns, stables, orchards, gardens, yards, lands, meadows, meadow grounds, marshes, pastures, fields, woods, wood lands, under-woods, waters, lakes, creeks, coves, hunting, hawking, fishing and fowling, and all other profits and commodity, easements, emoluments, hereditaments and appurtenances, to the above granted messuage, lands and premises belonging or in any wise, &c., &c., appertaining, as also liberty and the freedom of commonage for all sorts of cattle, cutting of timber and firewood in the commons and common wood lands of Westchester aforesaid, as other the inhabitants of the said town of Westchester do or may enjoy, *to have and to hold* the said messuage or tenement, tract or parcel of land and premises, with all and singular the hereditaments and appurtenances thereunto belonging or appertaining, and herein before granted and confirmed unto the said Thomas Hunt, his heirs and assigns forever, unto the sole and only proper use, benefit and behoof of him the said Thomas Hunt, his heirs and assigns for ever: and I the said Thomas Dongan do further will, declare and grant to the said Thomas Hunt, his heirs and assigns, that the messuage lands and premises herein above granted and confirmed, shall and may at all time and times, &c., &c., hereafter for ever hold, use, retain and keep the name of the Grove Farm of Westchester, and by that name, style, to be known, called and distinguished in all bargains, sales, escripts, deeds, records and



writings; the said messuage or tenements, lands and premises *to bee holden* of his most sacred Majesty, his heirs and successors, in free and common soccage, according to the tenure of East Greenwich, in the county of Kent, in his Majesty's kingdom of England, yielding, rendering and paying therefor yearly and every year unto his said most sacred Majesty, his heirs and successors, or to such officer or officers as shall from time to time be empowered to receive the same, viz. one bushell of good winter wheat as a quit rent, on or before the five and twentieth day of March, at the city of New York, in lieu and stead of all services, dues and demands whatsoever. *In testimony* of the premises I have caused these presents to be recorded in the secretary's office, and the seal of the Province to be hereunto affixed, the &c., &c., &c., twelfth day of January, in the second year of his Majesty's reign, in the year of our Lord one thousand six hundred eighty and six.<sup>a</sup>

THOMAS DONGAN.

By his Majesty's command.

G. S. SWINTON.

In 1688, William Barnes and Martha, his wife, conveyed lands on Throckmorton's Neck (situate near those of Robert Huestis), to Thomas Bedient.<sup>b</sup>

Thomas Hunt, Sr., by his will, bearing date 1694, "bequeathed to his grandson, Josiah Hunt, eldest son of my son, Josiah Hunt, the Grove farm, to him and his heirs male, *which was patented to me by Governor Nicolls, 4th December, 1667*, and further entails the same to the said Josiah and his heirs male, lawfully begotten, from generation to generation."

The Grove farm was sold at public vendue on the 6th of May, 1760, to Josiah Causten for £3,400, who subsequently disposed of it in October, 1775, to John Ferris; from whom it descended to his son, Elijah Ferris, a large portion of which estate has continued in the family to the present day,

At an early period James Rivington (the celebrated printer and bookseller of New York<sup>c</sup>), held considerable property on Throckmorton's Neck. The successors of the Rivingtons were the Bayards, a family of considerable opulence and distinction.

A portion of Col. Bayard's estate was subsequently purchased by his brother William Bayard. The whole property is now divided among numerous individuals.

The second grantee under the Dutch (in this town), was Thomas Cornell (some of whose family were killed by the Indians under the pretence

<sup>a</sup> From the original in the possession of the family of the late Mr. Charlton Ferri.

<sup>b</sup> No. Rec. Lib. A, 250.

<sup>c</sup> Rivington "was possessed of fine talents, polite manners, and was well informed. This is apparent from the correspondence of several of the leaders on the popular side, as well as from what has been here said, that his tact and ability in conducting a newspaper was much feared, and that his press had more influence over the public mind than any other in the royal interest in the country. Rivington died in 1792, at. 75."—See Sabine's American Loyalists.

that they had not paid for their lands, on the 6th of October, 1643), who obtained the following "grond brief," or grant, in 1646 :—

#### GROND BRIEF FOR CORNELL'S NECK.

"We William Kieft, Director General, and the Council on the behalf of the High and Mighty Lords, the States General of the United Netherlands, the Prince of Orange and the noble Lords, the Managers of the incorporated West India Company in New Netherlands residing, by these presents do publish and declare that we, on this day the date underwritten, have given and granted unto Thomas Cornell a certain piece of land lying on the East River, beginning from the kill of Bronck's land east south-east along the river, extending about half a Dutch mile from the river till to a little creek over the valley (marsh) which runs back around this land; with the express condition and terms that the said Thomas Cornell, or they who to his action hereafter may succeed, the noble Lords the Managers aforesaid, shall acknowledge as their Lords and Patroons under the sovereignty of the High and Mighty Lords the States General, and unto their Director and Council here shall in all things be confirmed as all good citizens are in duty bound, provided also that he shall be furthermore subject to all such burdens and imposts as by their noble Lords already have been enacted, or such as hereafter may yet be enacted, constituting over the same the aforesaid Thomas Cornell in our stead in the real and actual possession of the aforesaid piece of land, giving him by these presents the full might, authority and special license, the aforesaid piece to enter, cultivate, inhabit and occupy in like manner as he may lawfully do with other his patrimonial lands and effects, without our the grantors in the quality as aforesaid thereunto any longer having, reserving or saving any part, action or control whatever, but to the behoof as aforesaid for all destiny, for this time and for ever more, promising furthermore this their transport firmly, inviolably and irrevocably to maintain, fulfil and execute, and furthermore to do all that in equity we are bound to do without fraud or deceit, these presents only as undersigned and confirmed with our seal of red wax here underneath suspended.

Done in the Fort Amsterdam in New Netherlands, this 26th of July, 1646, undersigned.

WILLIAM KIEFT.

By order of the noble Lords, the Director General and the Council of New Netherlands.

CORNELIUS VAN TIENHOVEN., *Secretary.*<sup>a</sup>

Of this family was probably Richard Cornell, who emigrated from England to Long Island, during the early Dutch Colonial Government, and purchased the estate of Little Neck. He afterwards removed to Rockaway, where he became possessed, by patent from the British Colonial Government, dated 1686, of a tract of land, part of which he sold in 1691, to John Sands. He died circ. 1693, leaving five sons, viz: William, Thomas, Jacob, John and Richard, and two daughters—Mary and Sarah.

Upon the death of Thomas Cornell, the neck became vested in his

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Rec. G. G. 206 also 351.

widow, who conveyed the same to her eldest daughter, Sarah, the wife of Charles Bridges.

In the book of general entries, at Albany, occurs the following order, addressed to the schout, burgomeesters, and schepens of New York :

“Upon the complaint of Charles Bridges and Sarah his wife against William Newman and Thomas Senequam, an Indian, now in custody, you are hereby required to summon a court to meet to-morrow, to examine, hear and determine the matters in controversie between the said parties, and to proceed therein according to equity and good conscience. Given under my hand at Fort James, in New York, the 24th of March, 1664.”<sup>a</sup>

RICHARD NICOLLS.

The cause appears to have been decided in favor of Mr. Bridges and his wife ; for on the 27th day of March, 1665, the constable of Westchester was required (by the Governor) “to deliver unto Mr. Bridges and his wife, or their assignees, the goods that lye attached in your hands as of right belonging to them, for doing whereof this shall be your warrant. Given under my hand at Fort James, in New York, &c.”<sup>b</sup>

RICHARD NICOLLS.

In 1664, Thomas Pell, of Onkway, Connecticut, laid claim to Cornell's Neck.

Upon the 26th of October, 1664, “Charles Bridges and Sarah, his wife entered a protest before and against all bargains, deeds and sales of Thomas Pell, of Onkway, or any from or under him, of or concerning a parcel of land situated on the East River, beginning from the kill of Bronx land, east south-east, likewise amongst the river bounded almost half a Dutch mile, a copy of the original grant whereof unto Thomas Cornell, father of the said Sarah Bridges they have also registered, until such time as the cause can be tried.”

The following particulars are taken from the assize records, in relation to a trial between the two parties, held on the 29th of September, 1665 :

CHARLES BRIDGES  
and SARAH, his wife, } *Plaintiffs.*  
THOMAS PELL, *Defendant*

*Names of Jurors.*  
JOHN TUCKER Foreman,  
WILLIAM WILKINS, JOHN EMANS,  
CHARLES MORGAN, JOHN FORSTER,  
JOSEPH BAYLEY, ROBERT TERRY.

“The attorney for the plaintiffs produced a copy of the heads of the trial at the Court of Sessions held in June last, at Hampstead ; he likewise puts in a declaration alledging the defendant's unjust molestation of the plaintiffs in their posses-

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Book of Gen. Entries, from 1664 to 1665. p. 101.

<sup>b</sup> Alb. Book of Gen. Entries, p. 102.

<sup>c</sup> Alb. Rec. Gen. Entries, vol. i, p. 14.

sion of a certain parcel of land called Cornell's Neck, lying and being near Westchester, which of right belongs unto them, &c.

To prove their title, a grant and patent from the Dutch governor, Kieft, to Thomas Cornell, deceased, father of Sarah, one of the plaintiffs, is produced and read in court, that upon the said grant, Thomas Cornell was in lawful possession of the said lands, and that he was at considerable charges in building, manuring and planting ye same; that after some years the said Thomas Cornell was driven off his said lands by the barbarous violence of the Indians who burnt his house and goods, and destroyed his cattle, which was made appeare by sufficient testimony. That widow Cornell's conveyance of the said neck of land to Sarah Bridges, one of the plaintiffs, and her sister, was likewise given in, under which the plaintiffs claime.<sup>a</sup> That the said widow Cornell was left sole executrix of the last will and testament of her husband, Thomas Cornell, deceased, and so had power to convey the premises; this was allowed of (although neither the will nor a copy thereof was produced), there being no exceptions made against it. There was likewise an act from the late Dutch governor, Stuyvesant, produced, where he buyes the same lands of the Indians again (although alleged to be bought long before), and confirms it to Thomas Cornell, his heires and assigns.

Mr. Pell, the defendant, makes answer for himself, that he bought the land in question in the year 1654, of the natives, and paid them for it. He pleads his being a free denizen of England, and hath thereby liberty to purchase lands in any of his majesties dominions, within which compass this is. He alleges the fifth clause in the King's treaty, sent over hither to make for him, as declaring this land to be within his majesties dominions: he saith the governor and Council of Connecticut took notice of this land to be under their government,<sup>b</sup> and that they ordered magistratical power to be exercised at Westchester, and that he had license from them to purchase. He pleads that where there is no right there can be no dominion, so no patent could be granted by the Dutch, they having no right. Several testimonys were read to prove that ye Indians questioned Mr. Cornell's and other plantations there, *about not paying for those lands, which was the occasion of their cutting them off and driving away the inhabitants*, but the defendant hath paid a valuable consideration to the natives.

The attorney for the plaintiffs alledges ye articles of surrender, and the King's instructions, wherein any grant or conveyance from the Dutch is confirmed; and plead the antiquity of Mr. Cornell's grant and possession, together with his great losse. After a full hearing of the case it was referred to the jury, who brought in their verdict for the plaintiffs, the defendant to pay costs and charges of suite, and six pence damage."

Judgment was accordingly granted by the Court, and the following order issued:—

<sup>a</sup> Sarah Cornell, alias Bridges, conveyed her interest to William Willet, her eldest son, who obtains a patent therefore, as we shall see presently, on the 15th of April, 1667.—*Albany Book of Patents*, vol. ii, p. 65.

<sup>b</sup> The Legislature of Connecticut, (says the historian Trumbull,) determining to secure as far as possible the lands within the limits of their charter, authorized one Thomas Pell to purchase of the Indian proprietors all that tract between Westchester and Hudson's River, and the waters which made the Manhatoes an Island; and resolved that it should be added to Westchester, 1663.—*Trumbull's Hist. of Connecticut*, 273.



"The court having heard the case in difference between the plaintiffs and defendant debated at large concerning their title to a certaine parcell of land, commonly called Cornell's Neck, adjoining to Bronx land, near Westchester, and having also seen and perused their writings and evidences, it was committed to a jury, who brought in their verdict for the plaintiffs, viz: that the land in question doth of right belong to the plaintiffs, and that the defendant shall pay the costs and charges of suit, and sixpence damage. The court doth give their judgment accordingly, and do likewise order that the high sheriff or the under sheriff of ye north riding of Yorkshire, upon Long Island, do put the plaintiffs in possession of the said lands and premises, and all persons are required to forbear the giving the said plaintiffs, or their assigns, any molestation in their peaceable and quiet enjoyment thereof."<sup>a</sup>

The following Patent was issued by Governor Nicolls in 1667 to William Willett.

#### PATENT FOR CORNELL'S NECK OR BLACK ROCK.

RICHARD NICHOLLS, ESQR., Governor Generall under his Royal Highnesse James Duke of Yorke and Albany, &c., of all his territoyes in America: to all to whom these presents shall come sendeth greeting, whereas there is a certaine Parcell of Land contained within a neck, commonly called and knowne by the name of Cornell's Neck, lying and being on the Maine, towards the Sound or East River being bounded to the West by a certain Rivolett which runs to the Black Rock and so into Bronkse Creeke or Kill. Then the Neck stretching itselfe East, South East into the Sound it is bounded to the East with another Rivolett which divides it from the limits of West Chester and a line being run from the head of each Rivolett wherewith a narrow slip, the said Neck is joined to the Maine land, it closes up the Neck and makes the North Bounds thereof, and whereas there was heretofore a Patent or ground Kiefe granted by the Dutch governour William Kiefe unto Thomas Cornell for the said Neck wherein (among other things) its mentioned to bee Bounded amongst the River about half a Dutch mile which said Patent or ground Kiefe so granted as aforesaid bears date the 26th day of June 1646 now the Right Title and Interest in the premises, being devolved upon Sarah Bridges the daughter of the said Thomas Cornell deceased who having made proof of her Title at law hath by Deed of gift made over the same with all her Interest therein unto William Willett her eldest Sonne for a confirmation therefore unto him the said William Willett in his possession and enjoyment of the premises, *Know yee*, that by virtue of the Commission and authority unto me given by his Royalle Highnesse I have given, Ratified, Confirmed and granted and by these presents, do give, Ratify Confirme and grant unto the said William Willett his heirs and assignes all the afore mentioned Parcell and Neck of Land so Bounded as afore said, Together with all woods, Marshes, Meadows, Pastures, waters, lakes, creekes, Rivoletts, fishing, hunting and fflowling and all other Proffitts, Commodities and emoluments to the said Parcell and Neck of Land belonging and in any wise appurtenant with their and every of their appurtenances, and of every part and Par-

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Assize Rec. p. 15.

cell thereof, To have and to hold the said Parcell and neck of land and premises Paying such duties and acknowledgements as now are, or, hereafter shall bee unto the said William Willett his heirs and assignes unto the proper use and behaffe of the said William Willett his heirs and assignes for ever Rendering and constituted and establish by the laws of this government, under the obedience of his Royalle Highnesse, his heires and successors. Given under my hand and scale at Fort James in New Yorke on the Island of Manhattans the 15th day of April in the 19 yeare of his Majesties' Reigne annoq D'ni 1667.

RICHARD NICOLLS.

Recorded by order of the Govenor the day and yeare above written, endorsed a patent granted unto Mr. William Willett for Cornell's Neck.<sup>a</sup>

MATHIAS NICOLLS, Sec<sup>y</sup>.

In 1709 Colonel Thomas Willett, of Flushing, Long Island, son of the Hon. Thomas Willett of New York, conveyed to his eldest son, William Willett, "all that certaine parcell of land contained within a neck, commonly called and known by the name of *Cornell's Neck*, bounded on the west by a certain rivulet that runs to the "black rock," and so into Bronx's River.<sup>b</sup> In 1731 William Willett, by will, &c., conveyed the same to his heirs, &c. In 1745 Isaac Willett devised the whole neck to his nephew, Isaac Willett and Lewis Graham.<sup>c</sup> On the 1st of June, 1784, the two divisers made an equal partition of the same. Upon the 15th of October, 1793, Egbert Benson and Thomas Hunt executors of Lewis Graham conveyed the west half of Cornell's Neck to Dominick Lynch. On the 16th of April, 1830, the executors of Dominick Lynch conveyed the west half of the neck to the Ludlow family. The share of Isaac Willett to the east half of Cornell's Neck was conveyed to Isaac Clason, Cire, 1793.<sup>d</sup> Cornell's Neck is now owned by the families of Ludlow, and Beach, the Roman Catholic Fathers and others.

The Willets descend from the Rev. Thomas Willett, Subalmoner to King Edward VI., Rector of Barley, Herts and Prebend of Ely Cathedral who died in 1597. His son, the Rev. Andrew Willett was born at Ely in 1562, was Proctor of Cambridge University in 1558, Prebend of Ely Cathedral in 1597, Rector of Childerby, Grantesden, and Chaplain to Prince Henry. He died in 1621, leaving by his wife, Jane, eleven sons and seven daughters. His youngest son was the Hon. Thomas Willett, first Mayor of New York, who was born in 1611, went to Leyden, thence came to Plymouth, Mass., in 1630, where he succeeded

<sup>a</sup> Copied from the original, Doc. in possession of Robert H. Ludlow, Esq.

<sup>b</sup> County Rec. Lib. D. 38. From this family is obtained the name of Willett's Point.

<sup>c</sup> This individual married Isabella Morris, daughter of Lewis Morris of Morrisania.

<sup>d</sup> From MSS. in possession of R. H. Ludlow, Esq.

Myles Standish, as Commander of Plymouth Colony in 1647, Magistrate of that place 1651-1664, and Mayor of New York 1664 to 1673. He died at Rehoboth, Mass., August 4, 1674. By his first wife, Mary, daughter of John Brown of Plymouth, who he married July 6th, 1636, he had eight sons and five daughters. His second son was Colonel Thomas Willett, before mentioned, High Sheriff of Flushing in 1670, who married Sarah, heir at law of her father. Thomas Cornell, of Cornell's Neck, left two sons; William, who died without issue, and Hon. Thomas, Judge of Queens County from 1710 to 1730. The latter left a son, William Willett of Cornell's Neck, who died in 1733, father of four sons who all died without male issue, viz.: William, Hon. Isaac Willett, High Sheriff of Westchester County in 1738, Thomas, of Flushing, and Cornelius of Cornell's Neck. Of the daughters of William one married a Rodman, and the other a Jones. Samuel, the youngest son of Hon. Thomas Willett, first Mayor of New York, was born October 27th, 1658, settled on Long Island and became Sheriff of Queens County. His eldest son, Edward, of Queens County, was born in 1701 and died in 1794, leaving by his wife, Aleta Clowes, a son, Col. Marinus Willett, who was born July 31, 1740, Mayor of New York in 1807 and a member of the Cincinnati Society. His son was Marinus, the father of the Rev. Marinus Willet of Rye.

Prior to 1647 we have seen that "Vredeland," (Westchester) was settled under grants from the Dutch. But, about this period, a number of Puritans from Connecticut must have commenced a settlement; for, at a meeting of the New England commissioners, and Governor Stuyvesant, on the 19th of September, 1650, the latter complained of the *English encroachments upon Westchester*. And asserted that the "West India Company of Amsterdam, had bought and paid for the lands in question, of the right proprietors—the *native Americans*—before any other nation either bought or pretended right thereunto; he also affirmed he had proof of the *first* Dutch purchase."<sup>a</sup> Under the apprehension that the English settlements might be connected with the claim of jurisdiction, it was determined (by the Dutch) to remonstrate against it. In 1654, it was resolved at a meeting of the Director General and Council, "that whereas a few English are beginning a settlement at a great distance from our outposts, on lands long bought and paid for near *Vreedlant*, to send there an interdict, and the Attorney General, Cornelius van Tienhoven, and forbid them to proceed no futher, and to abandon that spot. Done at Fort Amstel, 5th November, 1654."<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Dunlap's Hist. N. Y. vol. 1. 95.

<sup>b</sup> Alb. Rec. vol. ix. 275.

We have already seen that the principal intruder was Thomas Pell,<sup>a</sup>

This individual on the 14th of November, 1654, purchased a tract of land called "*Westchester*," of the sachem Ann-hock, alias Wampage, and other Indians.

Upon the twenty-second of April, 1655, we find the following account of an interview between the Dutch officer Claes van Elslandt and the English intruders:—

"Claes Van Elslandt went to protest against those of *Vreedlant*. Four armed men came to meet them on the creek, asking what he willed? He answered, he wished to land near the house. They told him he should not land. He rejoined, allow me to go ashore, I am cold; whereupon he sprang ashore, where he and Albert the trumpeter were warned not to come a foot higher. The commander came up to us with a pistol in hand with eight or ten armed men, to whom he read the protest and handed it to him. He answered, I cannot understand Dutch: why did not the fiscal or sheriff send English? when he sends English, then I will answer. We expect the determination on the boundaries, the next vessel. Time will tell whether we shall be under Dutch government or the Parliament; until then we remain here under the state of England. Van Elslandt saw their houses and settlements, also the English arms hanging from a tree; they were carved on a board (plank.) Van Elslandt was left in a house on the shore, well guarded with men."<sup>c</sup>

The continued encroachments of the English upon "*Oostdorp*," (*East town*) "*which they called Westchester*,"<sup>d</sup> at last awakened the most vigorous opposition on the part of the Dutch authorities; for soon after Pell's purchase occurs the following resolution:—

"The Director General and Council are informed by creditable witnesses that the English in the village which they call *Westchester*, situated in *Vreedlant*, about two miles from this city, not only encourage and shelter the fugitives from this province, but as plainly appears by a copy from a certain letter, that the high sheriff Lieutenant Weyler kept—in and about the time of our late dismal engagements with the savages—a constant correspondence with these barbarians.<sup>e</sup> Wherefore to promote the welfare of the country, and defend the rights of the Lords Patrons, against such usurpations, it was unanimously resolved by the Director General and Council to arrest as secretly and easily as it can be performed, said Englishmen or at least their leaders, to compel the remaining to remove from there with their property, and the execution of this expedition to

<sup>a</sup> See trial between Thomas Pell and Charles Bridges, page 271.

<sup>b</sup> See Pellam, page 33. This grant embraced the present townships of New Rochelle, Pelham, Eastchester and Westchester.

<sup>c</sup> Adm. Rec. Hol. doc. ix. 261, 263, 4. See Document, relating to the Col. Hist. Holland, Doc. 1657, 1678, vol. ii. p. 163, 4.

<sup>d</sup> Which appears from the letters of the Burgomeesters, dated 23d Nov. 1654, 16th April and 2d of May, 1655.

<sup>e</sup> The Siamese Pennekek and Oratang were very troublesome to the Westchester settlements in 1655.—Editor.



be intrusted to the valiant Captain Frederick de Coninck, Captain Lieutenant Brian Naton, and with them the Attorney General, Cornelius Tienhoven, to execute his commission and apprehend the fugitives and thieves.

Done in Fort Amsterdam, 6th of March, 1656.

PETER STUYVESANT,  
NICASSIUS DE SILLE,  
LA MONTAGNE,  
CORNELIUS VAN TIENHOVEN,<sup>a</sup>

In accordance with the above order, the valiant Captain Frederick de Coninck embarked in the ship "*Weigh-scales*," and proceeded to *Westchester*: where he succeeded in arresting several of the *English thieves*. Upon their arrival in the city, the following order appears in Council:—

"With regard to the English prisoners, lately brought hither from *Vreedlandt*, from the village which they call *Westchester*, who remain yet in confinement in the ship the "*Weigh-scales*," it is unanimously concluded and resolved, that all those who before were on oath and allegiance of this government, and who therefore either for debts or other causes did run away, or against whom the Attorney General supposes to have a just cause for indictment, these the aforesaid Attorney General is authorized to secure in close confinement, and prosecute them agreeably to law. The remainder who either from New England or from other places have been lured and decoyed by Mr. Pell or any other person to settle within our limits, of which district this city had a grant, to keep them in a civil arrest, either in the court house or any proper and convenient place, till a further examination shall be instituted and our orders issued in conformity with these.

Done in Council, in our fort at New Amsterdam,

in New Netherland, 14 March, 1656.

PETER STUYVESANT,  
NICASSIUS DE SILLE,  
LA MONTAGNE.<sup>b</sup>

On the 15th of March, 1656, the Attorney General presented his demand to the Director General and Council as plaintiff in the case:—

RESPECTFUL LORDS:—It is not only known to your Honors, but every one residing in this country, that since many years the district called *Vreedlandt* was cultivated and inhabited in letters patent granted by your Honors, and their predecessors by the Dutch, under your government, till the period of the general war, in 1643. Now it has happened that one Mr. Pell, residing in Onkeneg, in New England, has dared, against the rights and usages of Christian countries, to pretend that he bought these lands of the natives (which long since were purchased of them and paid by your Honors as *evidently appears* from the *transfers in your records*), and actually made a beginning of settling and cultivating these lands, without your Honors previous knowledge or consent, directly contrary to the limits and decisions of 1650, concluded with the United Colonies of New Eng-

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Rec. vol. i., p. 315.

<sup>b</sup> Alb. Rec. vol. ii. 291.

land at Hartford,<sup>a</sup> against which usurpation your Attorney General, in his quality and in the name of the Lords his masters, had in due form entered his protest, which the Lieutenant Wheeler, who there commands, not at all respecting, continues to remain there with his associates in planting and building, luring and accommodating our run-away inhabitants, vagrants and thieves, and others who for their bad conduct find there a refuge. As it has pleased your Honors in conformity to the instructions and letters of the Lords majors, and in preservation of the convention made at Hartford, to keep it inviolated, to send thither a body of armed men to secure said Wheeler and his associates, who, as appears from their own declaration of the 14th of March *had met there the Director General there present on the spot with an armed force*, and declined to move from thence, saying that it was their land, on which said Englishmen were disarmed and twenty-three of them conducted as prisoners to the ship "*Weigh-scales*," leaving a few to protect their wives, children and property. All of which the Attorney General demands that your Honors would send one or two of the oldest to Vreedlandt to inform the remainder of the English that they must leave that spot, taking with them all that they brought thither, under the penalty that if they acted otherwise, that then other measures shall be adopted according to law; and further that the aforesaid Lieutenant Wheeler and his associates shall not be set at liberty before they have paid all the expenses which your Honors have been compelled to, through their conduct and disobedience, in that expedition in going thither with an armed force in boats. Besides this they shall sign an act, and promise under oath, that they never more will inhabit any of the lands of our Lords and principals situated in Vreedlandt, now lately by them called Westchester, or any other lands within the limits finally concluded at Hartford; neither settle, or build, or plant, or sow, or mow there, without a special order and consent of your Honors—under the penalty, that if they acted contrary to it, of corporal punishment as the case might require, &c."<sup>b</sup>

The Council sustained this demand of the Attorney General (as plaintiff), the same day.

Upon the 16th of March, 1656, Lieut. Thomas Wheeler and his English associate at Vreedlandt, voluntarily submitted themselves to the government of the New Netherlands. Their names were as follows:—

THOMAS N. NEWMAN,  
ROBERT BASSETT,  
JOHN CLOES,  
SHERROOD DAMIS,  
WILLIAM H. FENFALL,  
RICHARD C. MEARES,  
SAMUEL HARELT,

THOMAS WHEELER,  
ISAAC HOLBERT,  
ROBERT ROES,  
JAMES BILL,  
JOHN S. GENNER,  
RICHARD OSBOET,  
WILLIAM WARD.

The following prisoners were released on the 25th of March, 1656:—Captain R. Ponton, William Elet Black, merchant; John Gray and

<sup>a</sup> See negotiations between New England and Peter Stuyvesant concerning limits.—Hazard's Hist. Coll. vol. ii, 156, 173, 549.

<sup>b</sup> Alb. Rec. vol. ii. 301.

Roger Wheeler.<sup>a</sup> They were "commanded to depart the limits of the New Netherlands, except some of the inhabitants of Vreelandt would adopt them and become bail for their good behaviour." "In 1656, the inhabitants of Westchester dispatched five of their number, viz: Lieut. Thomas Wheeler, Thomas Newman, John Lord, Jonah Wilbert, William Ward and Nicolas Hurler, to the Governor and Council that they might confirm and establish them, and praying that they may in future appoint their civil officers."<sup>b</sup>

Having executed a settlement of the difficulties at "*Oost-dorp*," we find the Director and his Council ordering a supply of arms and ammunition for its protection.

"Being presented to the Hon'ble Director General and Council in New Netherland, a report of Brian Norton, captain lieut., Cornelius van Ruyven, secretary, and Carel van Brugge, commissary, appointed to go to *Oost-dorp*, the director general and council did approve it, upon which they resolved that they would send by the first opportunity to the magistrates of *Oost-dorp* the following ammunitions of war, to be preserved there for the use of the aforesaid village, and to be employed when necessity might require it, viz:

12 muskets,  
12 lb. of lead,

12 lb. of powder,  
2 bundles of matches.

And further, a writing book for the magistrates. Done in Fort Amsterdam, N. N., 3d June, 1657.

PETER STUYVESANT,  
NICASSIUS DE SILLE,  
PETER TONNEMAN."<sup>c</sup>

Upon the 28th of June, 1660, Governor Stuyvesant addressed the following letter to the inhabitants of *Oost-dorp*, (East town):—

LOVING FRIENDS:—Out of your nomination presented unto us we have made choice, as you may know by these presents, of

JOSIAH GILBERT,  
NICOLAS BAYLY,  
THOMAS WALL.

The which we, for the year following, do confirm and establish for magistrates of the towne called East town, requiring all and every one whom these may concerne, to esteem them as our elected and confirmed magistrates for the said town. So, after my respects, I rest

Your loving friend and Governor,

P. STUYVESANT.<sup>d</sup>

AMSTERDAM, N. N., 28th June, 1660.

<sup>a</sup> Arrested for taking up arms at Vreedlandt.

<sup>b</sup> Alb. Rec. p. 318.

<sup>c</sup> Alb. Rec. vol. xv. 8.

<sup>d</sup> Alb. Rec. vol. xxiv. 39.

In 1662, Governor Stuyvesant granted to the English towns the right to nominate their own magistrates, and to have their own courts, "*but in dark and dubious matters, especially in witchcraft, the party aggrieved might appeal to the Governor and council.*"<sup>a</sup>

Upon the nomination of town officers, the same year, the inhabitants addressed the Governor, as follows:—

Right Hon'ble Lord Governor of the New Netherlands, Lord Stevensone:—  
We, the inhabitants of the towne, do heare present our choice unto your honor, for the establishing of magistrates for the ensuing yeare: these may give your honor for to understand what the towne choyce is, as followeth, namely:

|                |                 |                |
|----------------|-----------------|----------------|
| WILLIAM BETTS, | ROBERT HUESTIS, | JOHN QUIMBY,   |
| EDWARD WATERS, | NICOLAS BAYLY,  | THOMAS VAILLE. |

EAST TOWNE, Feb. 11, 1662.<sup>b</sup>

About this period Connecticut claimed Westchester as lying within her jurisdiction;<sup>c</sup> in support of which she issued the following orders:—

At a court of general assembly, held at Hartford, October 9th, 1662. "This assembly doth hereby declare and inform the inhabitants of Westchester, that the plantation is included in ye bounds of our charter, granted to this colony of Connecticut."<sup>d</sup>

HARTFORD, this 13th of Oct., 1552.

*To the Inhabitants of Westchester:*

You are required in his majesties name to appear (or by your deputies), at Hartford, the second Thursday in May next, to attend your duty according to his majesties grants. By letters patent hereof. You may not fail at your peril.

JOHN MASON, *Deputy Governor.*

*To the Inhabitants of Westchester:*

[Connecticut seal.]

25TH OF OCT., 1662.

Mr. Gold, Mr. Clark, chairman, Mr. Campfield, and Jehu Burr are hereby appointed to keep a court at Fairfield, when they see cause for the issuing and determining such causes and cases as shall then be presented. Stamford, Greenwich and Westchester, have hereby liberty to take the benefit of the Court of Fairfield, as shall be in controversy amongst them for the future.

This is a true copy of the order of the Hon. Genl. Assembly held at Hartford the 9th of October last past, under the seal of the colony, and under the hand of

DANIEL CLARK, *Clerk.*

Transcribed for me, WILL HILL,  
Clerk of the courts to be held at Fairfield.

Copia scriptum per me,

RICHARD MILLS.

The absolute seal came not to the inhabitants of Westchester, only the sign as above, with the word seal above it. RICHARD MILLS.<sup>e</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Rec. vol. xxi. 233-8.

<sup>b</sup> Alb. Rec. vol. xx. 51.

<sup>c</sup> July 10, 1663. Connecticut now laid claim to Westchester (says Trumbull), and sent one of her magistrates to bend the inhabitants to the choice of their officers, and to administer the proper oaths to such as they might elect.—*Trumbull's Hist. of Conn.* 268.

<sup>d</sup> Hartford Rec. Boundary Letters, vol. ii. 168.

<sup>e</sup> Alb. Rec. vol. xxi. 99.



Another letter from Hartford, entitled an order of the General Assembly at Hartford about *Oost dorp*:

“This assembly doth hereby declare and inform the inhabitants of Westchester that that plantation is included within the bounds of the charter granted to the colony of Connecticut: and as it hath pleased his majesty, our gracious sovereign lord, Charles II., thus to dispose of them, we cannot but declare, that we conceive it most conducive to their tranquillity and future peace, that they do demean themselves in all things as may declare and manifest their readiness to subject to his royal will and pleasure herein.

The next Assembly is appointed and ordered to be held at Hartford on the second Thursday in May next.

Copia scriptum per me,  
RICHARD MILLS.

Extracted from the records of the Colony Court at Connecticut,  
and certified with the seal of the said court per DANIEL CLARK, *Secretary*.

The signal of the seal above is come to the inhabitants of Westchester, absolute made in red wax, the motto I suppose to be the arborated craggy wilderness and the flying cloudes.

RICHARD MILLS.

In this dilemma, we find the inhabitants of Westchester addressing Governor Stuyvesant in a letter which they sent by their two magistrates, William Betts and Edward Waters.

WESTCHESTER, the 30th of April, 1663.

HON. LORD STEVENSON:—We humbly beseech you to understand, that wee the inhabitants of this place, have not plotted nor conspired against your Honour. The original of the writing here enclosed, were not in any measure sought for by us, but were by the said court sent unto us when we expected them not. How to resist them we know not, they being as you see, in his majesties name of England. This was a reason why we choose not magistrates at present as formerly, and that wee hope that your honour will be herewith satisfied.

Your honour's loving friend,

RICHARD MILLS.

In the name, and by the appointment, of the inhabitants of Westchester.”

Governor Stuyvesant having ascertained, that the inhabitants of Westchester were about to send two delegates to Hartford, despatched Sheriff Waldron with this letter:

LOVING FRIENDS:—We were much wondered, that you according to order and your duty, have not presented unto us your nomination of your new magistrates for this present year, being now four months past that this thing should be done; the reason wherefore being unknown to us, we have purposely sent and ordered

the bearer, Resolve Waldron our substitute sheriff, (schout) for to inquire after the grounds and reasons thereof, which you are to give unto him in writing, and send either of your present Magistrates to give us more fully information. So after our love, I shall rest. Your loving friend and Governor, inscribed,

Done in Fort Amsterdam,

N. NETHERLAND, 9 May, 1663.

P. STUYVESANT.<sup>a</sup>

The same day Sheriff Waldron conducted the two Magistrates, William Betts and Edward Waters, to Governor Stuyvesant, "who were asked, why they neglected to present to the Director General and Council in conformity to custom and orders, a new nomination of magistrates? Their answer was, that they in due time, when the nomination ought to have been made, called the inhabitants together, and requested them to nominate new magistrates for the ensuing year, who declined to do so at two different times, because they had been summoned by those of Hartford in Connecticut colony, as clearly appears by the following English documents<sup>b</sup> conveyed to them for this purpose, by the aforesaid colony, with the declaration of the aforesaid village, in the form of a letter to the Director General. Being further questioned why they did not communicate the aforesaid orders and letters of Connecticut colony, so as they ought to have done, and as other English villages actually did at the past instance, now more than half a year past, and now above it, had actually, *de novo*, appointed two of their village to go and assist in the aforesaid order, on the stated day, at Hartford. They answer in the first, that they as magistrates, solicited an order to present to us the nomination, but that they could not obtain it while it was refused by us; Mr. Richard Mills who had it in his possession, or by an order of the people of that village, or in his own authority unknown to them. At last, they acknowledged and declared, that they through ignorance to maintain the peace and tranquility in said village, had committed a fault, and solicited with submission and prayed to be excused for the present time. The Director General and Council having heard the submission and confession of guilt of the aforesaid persons, together with the promises made by them, to dispose if possible, the inhabitants to make a new nomination of magistrates, and due obedience, resolved to let them return for the present time; and the following letter to the inhabitants was delivered to them.

Done at Fort Amsterdam in New Netherland, 12th of May, 1663.<sup>c</sup>

The letter delivered to the magistrates by Governor Stuyvesant:

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Rec. vol. xxi. 80.

<sup>b</sup> See preceding documents.

<sup>c</sup> Alb. Rec. vol. xxi. 93-4.

LOVING FRIENDS :—"Whereas, wee by the bearers, your present magistrates were informed, which in part your letters (subscribed by one Richard Mills) doe confirm, that the nomination for new magistrates at due time by them, were propounded at a town meeting, but hitherto differed through some unacceptable orders of Hartford's Assembly, this, therefore, are to require and to order you and every one that are inhabitants of your towne, that I shall not attend any of their orders, nor that you shall not send any deputies thither; but that you shall, according to oath and duty upon sight of this presents, make nomination of magistrates for this present year, and present them upon Monday sennit before us, and if any should be unwillingly so to doe, we have ordered the bearers, that the names of such disobedient and troublesome persons shall be sent unto us, that we may act, and proceed against them according to law and judgment; so, after my love, I shall rest, your loving friend and Governor,

Done in Fort Amsterdam,  
N. N., 12 May, 1663.

P. STUYVESANT,

On the 14th day of May, 1663, the General Assembly of Connecticut, choose "Mr. Willys, Mr. Gould, Capt. Tallcote and Capt. Young, as a committee to consider and give up their thoughts and apprehensions concerning the settlement of *Westchester* and Stamford, and to make return to the court."<sup>a</sup>

The same court also ordered, "that the letter drawne up by the committee to the *Manhaddoes*, be drawn out fair and sent to the Lord Stephenson, &c., as also the letter to Westchester."<sup>b</sup>

For the purpose of answering these pretensions and claims on Westchester, Governor Stuyvesant repaired in person to Boston, and entered his complaints. In his interview with the commissioners (of the New England colonies) on the 21st of September, 1663, he stated, "that he wished a friendly and neighborly settlement of differences concerning *Eastlorpe*, by the English called *Westchester*, and all other disputes, that the parties may live in peace in the wilderness where many barbarous Indians dwell." He requested of the commissioners a categorical answer, whether the treaty of Hartford made in 1650, remained "*firm and binding*," and whether the patent of Hartford, newly obtained, should extend westward. In conclusion, he expressed his willingness to abide by the treaty of Hartford."<sup>c</sup>

Governor Stuyvesant was unsuccessful in his negotiations with the commissioners, for he "found their demands in no way answerable to the rights of his superiors."<sup>d</sup>

While these negotiations were pending, Richard Mills (the leading

<sup>a</sup> Hartford Rec. Bound. Letters, vol. ii. 183.

<sup>b</sup> Hartford Rec. Bound Letters. vol. ii.

<sup>c</sup> Dunlap's Hist. N. Y. vol. i. 113.

<sup>d</sup> Dunlap's Hist. N. Y. vol. i. 113.

magistrate of Westchester) appears to have been languishing in the dungeons of Fort Amsterdam; for, on the 16th of May, 1663, occurs the following petition from the prisoner:—

“ Right Hon. Gov. Lord Peter Stevenson, thy dejected prisoner Richard Mills, doe humbly supplicate for your favor and commiseration towards me, in admitting of me unto your honor's presence, there to indicate my free and ready mind to satisfy your honor wherein I am able, for any indignity done unto your lordship by me in any way, and if possible to release me or confine me to some more wholesome place than where I am. I have been tenderly bred from my cradle, and now antient and weakly, and at this time, and ever since I came into this unwholesome place. I have been very ill, and lame with pains in my back, hips and joints, and I doubt not, in a few days, will perdit (endanger or destroy) my life, if not prevented by removal or release; will hope of your honor's gracious admittance and reception, and craving these my poor humble requests and prayers to God for your honor, I remain, your lordship, at your pleasure,

From the gaol in

RICHARD MILLS.

Fort Amsterdam, 16 May, 1663<sup>a</sup>

Alarmed at the summary manner in which the director had treated their leader, we find the inhabitants of Westchester hastening to nominate officers for the ensuing year.

LOVING FRIENDS:—Out of your nominations this day presented, we have made choice, as you may know by these presents, of

ROBERT HUESTIS,  
JOHN BARKER,  
NICHOLAS BAYLEY.

The which we for the year following, doe confirm for magistrates of the towne, called East-towne, requiring all and every one whom these may concerne, to esteem them as our elected and confirmed magistrates for the said town; so, after my love, I shall rest,

Your loving friend and Governor,

AMSTERDAM, N. N.,

P. STUYVESANT.<sup>a</sup>

24 May, 1663

The humble petition of Richard Mills, to the Hon. High Court of the Manhattas, held 9th of June, 1663, sheweth:—

That whereas, your honors have continued anger against me about some writings that were in my custody, I owne unto your honors that I did not well to embrace the receipt of, though thereunto importuned, my proper calling being to act in another sphere, and doe see cause to blame myself for undertaking to keep them; and as for Richard Ponton, his carrying them away, I assure your honors that I never gave order to him or any others, measure see to do; neither did I

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Rec. vol. xxi.

<sup>b</sup> Alb. Rec. vol. xxi. 115.



acquaint him directly or indirectly where I should hide them. I so doing, prepared that I might be sure to have them when forced to send for them, which I can freely take my oath unto when called hereunto, wherefore I humbly beseech your honor's wrath towards me may be purified, and freedom to me granted, soe as that I may proceed in my lawful calling, the short time I have to stay in these parts, being bound for Virginia in September next, humbly crave pardon for what I have done amiss. I remain your honor's petitioner and prisoner,

RICHARD MILLS.

The preceding submission and confession of guilt of the prisoner, Richard Mills, made by him verbally and in writing, being heard and read, so is he discharged upon his humble petition, under the express promise, sanctioned by his oath, that he never will undertake any thing either within or out of this government, to the injury of this province, either directly or indirectly. Done in Fort Amsterdam, N. N., 18th of June, 1663.

By a court of General Assembly, (held at Hartford, 8th of Oct., 1663), it was ordered, that, "this court doth accept of the town of *Westchester* as a member of this corporation, being received and accepted as such, by a council formerly.

This court moreover declares, that all the land between the Westchester and Stamford, doth also belong to the colony of Connecticut,"<sup>a</sup>

In 1664, the inhabitants of Westchester addressed the following petition to the honorable his majesty's commissioners for the affairs of New England, which,

"Humbly sheweth

1st. That the said tract of land called Westchester, was purchased for large summes, under the title of England, by Mr. Thomas Pell of the known ancient proprietors, in the year 1654.

2d. The pretended power of the Manhatoes, did therefore continue protesting against and threatening of the said plantation, keeping the inhabitants at continual watch and ward, until at length the persons of twenty-three inhabitants of Westchester aforesaid, were seized under commission from the said powers, and committed prisoners into the hold of a vessel, where they continued in restraint from all friends, for the space of thirteen days. fed with rotten provisions creeping with worms, whereby some of them remained diseased to this day, after which, they were carried away in chains and laid in their dungeon at Manhatoes.

3d. That the said inhabitants had perished with famine in the said imprisonment, but for the relief obtained at other hands.

4th. That all this suffering was inflicted on them, under noe other pretence, but that they were opposers to the Dutch title to the lands aforesaid

5th. That when the said pretended powers had freed the said prisoners, and

<sup>a</sup> Hartford Col. Rec. vol. 11. 158.

introduced their own government over the said plantation, they drove away such as would not submit to their pretended authority, to their great endangerment, and the enslaving of such as remained.

6th. That when in May, 1663, the said plantation was reduced to the king's authority, by virtue of his letters patent to Connecticut, the pretended powers aforesaid, sent in hostile manner for certain inhabitants of Westchester, whom they confined in Manhatoes, and the next day sent for one Mr. Richard Mills, whom they cast into their dungeon, and afterwards so used him for thirty dayes space, as there are yet strong and crying presumptions they caused his death, which followed soone after.

7th. That the unreasonable damage of the purchaser, and the low estate of the plantation occasioned by the premises, hath had no other recompense to this day, but new threatenings, and thereby an utter obstruction from the peopling and improving of a hopeful country, all which is an insuperable abuse to his royal majestie's, and our English nation, is humbly offered to the consideration of the hon. commissioners."<sup>a</sup>

The difficulties between Connecticut and the New Netherlands continued to increase, until the subjugation of the latter by the British forces under Governor Richard Nicolls, on the 27th of August, 1664.

"When Governor Nicolls visited Westchester, shortly after the surrender, the inhabitants complained to him, and, as a matter of course, were adjudged to belong to New York." Subsequently the towns of *Westchester*, *Hampstead* and *Oyster Bay* constituted the north riding of *Yorkshire*.<sup>b</sup>

Upon the 16th of June, 1664, we find the inhabitants of Westchester surrendering all their rights to Thomas Pell, in the following manner:—

"Know all men by these presents, that whereas there was an agreement made on the fourteenth of November, 1654, between Thomas Pell and divers persons, about a tract of land called *Westchester*,<sup>c</sup> which was and is Thomas Pell's, bounded as appears by an instrument bearing date as above expressed, wherein the undertakers engaged the payment of a certaine summe of money, present pay, for the said land expressed in the covenant, by reason of some troubles which hindered the underwriters possession, the agreement was not attended, the present inhabitants considering the justnesse and right of the above said title of Thomas Pell, doe surrender all their rights, titles, and claimes, to all the tract of land aforesaid, to bee at the disposal of the said Thomas Pell, as being the true and proper owner thereof.

Witness our hande, this 15th day of June in the yeere of Lord one thousand six hundred and sixty-four.

JOHN QUIMBIE,  
CONSIDER WOOD,  
NICKOLAS BALLE,

JOHN WINTER,  
RICHARD PONTON,  
his X mark.

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Rec. Gen. Entries, p. 11. Also Alb. Rec. vol. 1. 120, 121.

<sup>b</sup> Westchester continued to form a portion of the north riding until 1683, when the present county was erected.

<sup>c</sup> At this period Westchester embraced the present town of Eastchester. See vol. i. 122.

JOHN BARKER,  
ROBERT HESTIS,  
EDWARD JESSOP,  
WILL BEET,  
JOHN LARENS,  
SAMUEL BARRETT,  
his B mark  
THOMAS VAILLE,  
his X mark.<sup>b</sup>

WILLIAM JONES,  
his V mark.  
JOHN ACER,<sup>a</sup>  
JOHN WILLIAMS,  
his Y mark.  
SAMUEL PITCHER,  
his T mark.  
THOMAS MILLENER.

The same day Thomas Pell issued the following order to the inhabitants of Westchester:—

“The major part of the inhabitants of West Chester having surrendered up all their rights, titles and claimes, of ye land, wch they pr tended, to possesse, to Thomas Pell, the owner thereof (as appeareth by writing under their hande, in the foregoing page), That The inhabitants might enjoy the present improvements of Their labors, Their home Lotts, and planting groundes with what meadowes were in times past laid out to each man's particular to mow for this yeere I have desired Mr. Jessop, with the Townsmen and freemen, That it may bee orderly attended. And in case men want meadow to supply Their pr esent necessity, they make Their addresses to the aforesaid persons, for Their order, where to mow, to supply Their present occasions.

Witness my hande This sixteenth day of June, in the yeer of our Lord one thousand, six hundred, sixty-four. p. me, THOMAS PELL.<sup>c</sup>

On the 15th of February, 1667, occurs the following patent from Governor Nicolls:—

#### FIRST PATENT OF WESTCHESTER.

Richard Nicolls, Esq., Governor General under his Royal Highness James, Duke of York and Albany, &c., of all his territories in America, to all to whom these presents shall come, sendeth greeting: Whereas there is a certain town within this Government, situate, lying and being upon the main to the east of Harlem river, commonly called and known by the name of Westchester, which said town belongs to the north riding of Yorkshire, upon Long Island, and is now in the tenure and occupation of several freeholders and inhabitants who having heretofore been seated there by authority, have been at considerable charge in manuring and planting parts of the lands belonging thereunto, and have likewise settled a competent number of families thereupon for a township, now for a confirmation unto the said freeholders and inhabitants in their possession and enjoyment of the premises, as also for an encouragement to them in their further improvements of their said lands and premises, *Know yee*, that by virtue of ye commission and authority unto me given by his Royal Highness, I have given, ratified, confirmed and granted, and by these presents do give, ratify,

<sup>a</sup> Doubtless Jan or John Archer, first lord of the manor of Fordham.

<sup>b</sup> Westchester Town Court Rec. Conn., A.D. 1665, p. 17.

<sup>c</sup> Westchester Town Court Rec. Commg. A.D. 1665, p. 19.

confirm and grant unto John Quimby, John Ferris, Nicholas Bayley, William Betts and Edward Waters, as patentees for and on behalf of themselves and their associates, ye freeholders and inhabitants of ye said town, their heirs, successors and assignees, all that tract of land together with the several parcels not otherwise by patent disposed of, which already have or hereafter shall be purchased or procured for and on the behalf of ye said town whether from the native Indian proprietors or others, within the bounds and limits hereafter set forth and expressed (viz.), that is to say, ye western bounds of ye lands lying within ye limits of ye said town, beginning at the western part of the lands commonly called Bronks' land, near or adjoining unto Harlem river, from whence they extend eastward to the west part of a certain neck of land, commonly called Ann-hook's neck or Mr. Pell's purchase, southward they are bounded by ye Sound or East River, and so runne upon a parallel line from the east and west limits north into ye woods without limitation for range of cattle or other improvements, together with all ye lands, soyles, necks and lands, river, creeks, harbours, quarries, woods, meadows, pastures, marshes, waters, lakes, fishing, hawking, hunting and fowling, and all other profits, commodities, endowments, and hereditaments to ye said land and premises within ye said bounds and lymits, described and set forth belonging or in any ways appertaining, to have and to hold all and singular ye said tract and parcell of land, hereditaments and premises, with their and every of their appurtenances and of every part and parcel thereof to ye said patentees and their associates, their heirs and assignees, to the proper use and behoof of ye said patentees and their associates, their heirs and assignees for ever. Moreover, I do hereby give, ratify confirm and grant unto the said patentees and their associates, their heirs, successors and assignees, all ye rights and privileges belonging to a town within this government, and that ye place of their present habitation shall continue and retain the name of Westchester by which name and style it shall be distinguished and known in all bargains and sales, deeds, writings and records, they ye said patentees and their associates, their heirs, successors and assignees, rendering and paying such duties and acknowledgements as now are or hereafter shall be constituted and established by the laws of this government, under the obedience of his Royal Highness, his heirs and successors.

Given under my hand and seal, at Fort James, in New York, on the isle of Manhattan, 13 February, in the 19th year of his Majesty's reign, Anno Domini, 1667.

RICHARD NICOLLS.

In the Assize Records at Albany, appears the following entry:—

“Whereas Mr. Thomas Pell, of Ann-hookes Neck, (Pelham Neck) late deceased, upon pretence of purchase of several tracts of land of the Indian proprietors within the then government and jurisdiction of the Dutch, made claims unto the same as namely, the lands belonging to Westchester, Eastchester and Cornell's Neck, and that, after said land together with a larger tract formerly belonging to the said Dutch, were by his Majesty's Letters Patent granted unto his Royal Highness the Duke of York, and by the said Dutch surrendered by agreement unto his Royal Highness's Deputy Col. Richard Nicolls before whom said Pell did personally appear the first assizes held in New York, and then to make good his



claim to the lands aforesaid, and where it being sufficiently and lawfully proved that the aforesaid lands, together with a large tract as far as Greenwich, was before purchased by the late Dutch government, and whatsoever part thereof was not by him granted out, was of right property belonging unto his Royal Highness, some of which was granted to Thomas Richbell, &c., &c."

In 1673, the province of New York, surrendered to the Dutch. Upon this occasion we find the inhabitants of Oost-dorp tendering their submission:—

"The deputies of *Oost-dorp, alias Westchester*, and adjacent hamlet of Eastchester, delivering their credentials, offered to submit themselves to the government of their high mightinesses, and the Prince of Orange, and were commanded to nominate by their inhabitants a double number of magistrates for the aforesaid villages, by a majority of votes, and to present it to the Council by the first opportunity, from which we shall elect three for their magistrates, viz.: two for the village of Westchester, and one for Eastchester, who in his village may decide all differences to the value of thirty shillings; those of higher value shall be determined by the whole college, in the village of Westchester aforesaid."<sup>a</sup>

On the 28th of August, 1673, the lords commanders of the New Netherlands, made choice of Joseph Palmer and Edward Waters as Magistrates for Westchester.<sup>b</sup>

In 1686, Governor Dongan issued the following letters patent under the great seal of the province:

#### SECOND PATENT OF WESTCHESTER.

Thomas Dongan, Captain General, Governor-in-Chief and Vice-Admiral in all the province of New York, and territories depending thereon in America, under his majesty James Second, by the grace of God, king of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, &c., to all whom these presents shall come sendeth greeting: Whereas Richard Nicolls, Esq., Governor General under his then royal highness, James, Duke of York and Albany, &c., now his present majesty, of all his territories in America did, by a certain writing or patent, under his hand and seal, bearing date the fifteenth day of February, in the nineteenth year of the reign of our late sovereign lord, King Charles the Second of blessed memory, and in the year of our Lord God 1667, by virtue of the power and authority unto him given by him, the said royal highness, now his present majesty as aforesaid. Give, ratify, confirm and grant unto John Quimby, John Ferris, Nicholas Bailey, William Betts, and Edward Waters as patentees for and in the behalf of themselves and their associates, the freeholders and inhabitants of the town of Westchester, within this government, situate, lying, and being upon the main, to the east of Harlem River, which said town belongs to the North Riding of Yorkshire, upon Long Island, then in the tenure and occupation of several freeholders and inhabitants who had heretofore been seated on them

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Rec. vol. xxiii. 273.

<sup>b</sup> Eastchester Rec.

by authority, and at considerable charge in manuring and planting part of the land belonging thereunto, and likewise have settled a competent number of families thereupon for a township, all that tract of land together with the several parcels not otherwise by patent disposed of, which already had or thereafter should be purchased or procured, for and in the behalf of the said toyn, whether from the native Indian proprietors or others with the bounds and limits hereafter set forth and expressed, viz., the eastern bounds of the lands lying within the limits of the said town, beginning at the west part of the land commonly called Bronck's land, near or adjoining unto Harlem River, from whence they extend eastward to the west part of a certain neck of land, commonly called Ann-hooks neck, or Mr. Pell's purchase; southward they are bounded by the Sound or East River, and so run upon a parallel line, for the east and west limits, north into the woods without limitation, for range of cattle or other improvements, together with all the lands, soyles, neck, &c., &c. William Richardson, John Hunt, Edward Waters, Robert Huestis, Richard Ponton, William Barnes, John Bugbie, John Bailey, John Tudor, John Ferris, Joseph Palmer, Thomas Baxter, freeholders of the commonality of the town of Westchester.

6th January, 1686.

THOMAS DONGAN.

October, 1687, "it was voted, and agreed upon, by the major part of the trustees, that John Ferris, Sen., and Joseph Palmer, should go on Monday next, &c., and run the north-west line, from the head of Hutchinson's, to Bronck's River; it was also voted that Joseph Palmer and Edward Waters shall go with the Indians and show them the line as near as they can, that runs between Mr. Pell and our town, as also the line which runs betwixt this town and Eastchester."<sup>a</sup>

Upon the 27th of May, 1692, we find the Indian proprietors, Maminepoe and Wampage, conveying the following tract of land, to the trustees of Westchester.

### INDIAN DEED OF WESTCHESTER.

"To all Christian people to whom this deed of sale shall come, greeting: *Kneet ye*, that wee, Maminepoe and Wampage alias Ann-hook, Indian proprietors of a certain tract of land lying within the limits and bounds of the patent of the county town of Westchester, in the province of New York, for a valuable consideration, and other considerations us thereunto moving, and having taken the advice and approbation of several native Indians here underwritten, to us in hand paid by John Palmer, William Barnes, William Richardson, Joseph Palmer, Samuel Palmer, Robert Huestis, John Ferris, John Hunt, Joseph Hunt, Josiah Hunt, Thomas Baxter, and Edward Collier, trustees of the freehold and commonality of the town of Westchester aforesaid, the receipt whereof we do hereby acknowledge and therewith to be lawfully satisfied, contented, and paid, and thereof do admit, exonerate, and release, and discharge the said trustees, their heirs, successors, and assignees forever, have given, granted, bargained, sold, enfeoffed,

<sup>a</sup> Westchester Rec.

released, and confirmed, and by these presents do fully, clearly, absolutely, give, grant, bargain, sell, enfeof, release, and confirm unto the said trustees, their heirs, successors and assignees forever, all that tract of land lying on the east side of Brunxs's river, beginning at the pine trees and so compassing all the land which we the said Maminepoe and Wampage layes claim to, until they come to the head of Rattle Snake brook, and from thence north-east to Mr. Pell's land, so north by said Pell's marked trees by Brunxs's river, together with the woods, underwoods, timber, trees, waters, rivers, runs, brooks, and all and singular the emolluments, hereditaments, rights, privileges, and appurtenances, thereunto belonging or appertaining, (only reserving to ourselves the privelege of making use of white wood trees for our particular use,) to have and to hold the before recited premises, with all and every of its appurtenances, unto the said trustees, their heirs, successors, and assignees to the only proper use and benefit and behoof of them the said trustees, their heirs, successors and assignees forever; and it shall and may be lawful for the said trustees, their heirs, successors, and assignees, from henceforth and forever, to have and to hold, use, occupy, and enjoy the said tract of land, free from all incumbrances whatsoever, unto the said trustees, their successors and assignees for ever, without any manner of claime, challenge, or demand of us, our heirs, executors or administrators, or any other native Indians or Christian people, by, from, or under us, or any person or persons whatsoever; and we the said Maminepoe and Wampage, alias Ann-hook, shall and will forever warrant and defend the said tract of land unto the said freeholders of the corporation of Westchester, their heirs and assignees forever. In witness whereof we the said Maminepoe and Wampage, alias Ann-hook, have put to our hands and scales this 27th of May, the fourth year of their majesties reign, and A. D. 1692.

The mark of  $\Delta$  MAMINEPOE,

The mark of  $\nabla$  WAMPAGE,  
alias ANN-HOOK.

The mark of  $\times$  CROHAMANTHENSE,

The mark of  $\downarrow$  MAMERTEKOH.

Signed, sealed, and deliver in presence of us,

ABRAHAM HAWKER,

ISAAC LARENS,

The mark of  $\rightarrow$  JOHN GARRETSON,

Native Indians witnesses to the above deed.

The mark of  $\updownarrow$  WEENETONAH,

The mark of  $\Delta$  TANANOOT,

The mark of  $\times$  COSHEHOA,

The mark of  $\nabla$  RAUH COUWIND,

The mark of  $\circ$  TOM.

The following entry in the town books refers to this sale:—

“At a meeting of the inhabitants held the 27th of May, 1692, this day, the

land on the east side of Broncks's river, till we come to Mr. Pell's line, was purchased of Maminepoe and Ann-hook for:—

|            |          |                    |
|------------|----------|--------------------|
| 2 gunns,   | 2 coats, | 2 shirts,          |
| 2 kettles, | 2 adzes, | 1 barrel of cider, |
|            |          | 6 bitts of money.  |

#### DISBURSEMENTS UPON THE INDIAN PURCHASE.

|   |           |         |
|---|-----------|---------|
| WILLIAM BARNES, 1 kettle,                   | - - - - - | £2 2 0  |
| To expences to ye Indians,                  | - - - - - | 0 6 0   |
| JOHN HUNT, 1 coate,                         | - - - - - | 0 12 0  |
| For money,                                  | - - - - - | 0 1 6   |
| To Indian supper and other expences,        | - - - - - | 0 3 0   |
| WILLIAM RICHARDSON, 2 shirts,               | - - - - - | 0 12 0  |
| JOHN FERRIS, sen, 1 coate,                  | - - - - - | 0 12 0  |
| To one day with the Indians,                | - - - - - | 0 3 0   |
| JOSEPH HUNT, 2 adzes, and 3s. 8d. in money, | - - - - - | 0 15 0  |
| SAMUEL PALMER, 1 gun,                       | - - - - - | 1 0 0   |
| THOMAS BAXTER, 1 gun,                       | - - - - - | 1 2 0   |
| JOSEPH HUNT, 1 barrel of cider,             | - - - - - | 0 3 0   |
|   |           | <hr/>   |
|   |           | £ 8 4 6 |

ROBERT HUESTIS and THOMAS BAXTER, 1 gun,<sup>a</sup>

At a meeting held by the trustees of Westchester the 6th day of February, 1694,—Present, William Barnes, John Ferris, Joseph Palmer, Samuel Palmer, Thomas Baxter, John Bayley, John Hunt, Robert Huestis and Edward Collier. It was voted and agreed upon, that John Ferris, Sen., and Joseph Palmer should go to Mr. Pell's and proceed to have the line run between the town and him, &c., and report of their doings next Tuesday."

Fourth of September, 1694, it was agreed upon at a lawful town meeting that Richardson shall have free liberty to build or to erect a mill or mills upon the stream on the great creek of the town, for and in consideration of grinding of the inhabitants' corn, for the fourteenth part, also liberty of cutting timber for a saw mill. Done in behalf of the town, &c.

In 1700 it was resolved at a meeting of the inhabitants, "That the line between" "Thomas Pell's patent and the town of *Westchester*, (pursuant to the grants made by Governor Nicolls,) shall be run by the Surveyor General of the province of New York; and that the standard for running said line shall be pitched and placed and set in the middle of Hutchinson's river at the going over of the road as far up as the tide

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Rec. gen. entries. See also Town Rec. 27th of March, 1704. Joseph Hunt was directed to go to the clerk of the county and see the Indian deed recorded.



flows, and so to run upon a north line to Bronck's river, and northward down said river in the middle of the channel to the Sound, which said bounds or lines to continue forever between the said Thomas Pell's patent and the said town of Westchester."<sup>a</sup>

The same year a grant of land appears to have been made by the inhabitants to John Pell, Esq.<sup>b</sup>

At a meeting of the trustees held 23d day of January, A. D., 1720, present, Miles Oakley, *President*; John Oakley, Thomas Hadden, Thomas Baxter, Israel Honeywell, John Ferris, Peter Ferris, Joshua Hunt, Nathaniel Underhill, *Trustees*.

"Whereas several persons have come with boats, canoes, &c., a fishing, and have broke up our ground, and taken away ye oysters from within ye limits of our patent, in an unlawful manner, therefore, it is voted and agreed upon by the trustees aforesaid, that any person or persons who shall at any time hereafter trespass upon us by fishing, breaking our ground, and taking our oysters in ye manner aforesaid, shall be immediately prosecuted according to law for such trespass or trespasses; and it is also voted and agreed upon by ye trustees aforesaid, that John Ferris, Thomas Baxter, Joshua Hunt, of Westchester, Capt. Joseph Drake, Mathaniel Tompkins, and Moses Fowler, of Eastchester, do immediately put this into execution; and it is also agreed that if any freeholder of Westchester do take any oysters to transport out of our township to make sale thereof, such freeholder or freeholders shall be esteemed as trespassers, &c. Provided that the freeholders in general of Eastchester shall not be esteemed trespassers according to this act, excepting such of them as shall take oysters within ye limits of West and Eastchester to transport them out of ye said townships to make sale thereof," &c.<sup>c</sup>

In the reign of George the First, a charter was granted to the trustees of this town, entitled, "An act to prevent the fencing in or enclosing the *sheep pasture*, or any part thereof, in the borough town of Westchester, &c." Dated 28th of February, in the eighth year of his reign, and of our Lord God, 1721.

May the 6th, Anno Dom 1729, at a meeting of the Mayor, Aldermen, Common Council and Trustees, of the town of Westchester, it was resolved:—

"That they who have rights in the sheep pasture, may by themselves or assigns for every twenty-five pounds priviledge turn on twenty-five sheep, the lambs exclusive being to run with their dams, no more or in lieu of three sheep

<sup>a</sup> Town Rec.

<sup>b</sup> Town Rec.

<sup>c</sup> Town Rec. fol. ix. 120, 121.—At a Court of Common Conneell held 1740, it was ordained "that no person not belonging to this corporation do take and carry away our clams or oysters, but that all boats, canoes, or other craft belonging to persons who shall presume to take the same not inhabiting within this county, shall be seized; and further no person belonging to this corporation shall have power to give leave to any person not living in this corporation to get oysters or clams."

out of that number to each privileged; a cow in lieu of five sheep, a horse, mare or an ox; in lieu of a sheep a calf, in lieu of two sheep a yearling. If any person who have a right or rights shall turn on above the abovesaid regulation, or if any person not having a right shall turn on any sheep, cattle, or horse kind they shall be liable to such fines and forfeitures as this body or their successors shall from time to time according to their power by charter be established, &c."<sup>a</sup>

The "sheep pasture" embraced what was subsequently known as the "Commons" upon this extensive water, consisting of four hundred acres; the freeholders of the town enjoyed the free use of pasturage, under the before mentioned regulations. Attached to the "sheep pasture" was a small quantity of salt meadow opposite to Bridge Hill near the causeway leading from West Chester to Throckmorton's Neck which has been for some time fenced and closed up near the railroad station; at Tompson's was also a small gore of land attached to the "sheep pastures" consisting of one and a half acres lying on both sides of Stony Brook where the freeholders of the town were in the habit of folding and washing their sheep.

"The trustees gave land to the town of Westchester for their ministers. They also gave the landing place to said town that lays adjoining to the creek and crossway which goes from Westchester to Frog's Neck, and they also gave the town what is called Bridge Hill adjoining the said bridge for the support and keeping the bridge in good order. I suppose there is about three acres of land on said hill. All these above-mentioned lands and privileges was given to said town by the trustees, and those trustees gave to their proprietors, whose names are herein mentioned in a tract of land called the Sheep Pasture unto forty and five men; some purchased five, twenty-five pound Rights; the number of Rights is one hundred and six granted to the said proprietor; and they sold their Rights to others and bought Rights of other men who had a mind to sell. The trustees had no Right to sell any of their land at all, neither had they right to fence or to lease any of said land, &c."<sup>b</sup>

The "Commons" were purchased by Martin Wilkins, Esq., of the trustees in 1825, and after passing through other hands were again purchased by his grandson, the late Gouverneur M. Wilkins, Esq., of Castle Hill Neck for \$30,000, who sold them to an association called Union Port for the location of a village.

The village of Westchester is situated at the head of navigation on Westchester Creek, twelve miles from the city of New York, contains three taverns, a post office, several stores, and a depot embracing the new and

<sup>a</sup> Minutes of Mayor's Court, formerly in possession of the late William H. Leggett, Esq.

<sup>b</sup> Extract from original document, signed Benjamin Palmer New York, 29 July, 1802, in possession of New York Hist. Society.

grand air-line extension, or Harlem River branch of the New Haven Railroad—accommodated by the daily stoppage of twenty passenger trains, connecting at North New York with the spacious swift, and elegant boats of the Morrisania or Harlem Steamboat Companies, which, starting about every quarter of an hour in thirty minutes transport their passengers by the East River to their landing at Fulton Slip, the southern and business end of the great metropolis. At Westchester village is a convenient landing for three or four sloops to the New York market. The Westchester Creek, at high water, admits vessels of three hundred tons to the landing. The bridge connecting Throckmorton's Neck with the main, was erected at a very early period; and maintained, as the following document shows, by a rate levied on all taxable inhabitants of the town:—

“Att a town court held by the constable and overseers this, 9th of July, 1678.

Present,

|                                 |                     |
|---------------------------------|---------------------|
| JUSTICE PELL,                   |                     |
| JOHN PALMER, <i>Constable</i> , |                     |
| CAPT. PONTON,                   | } <i>Overseers.</i> |
| MR. MULINER,                    |                     |
| MR. WHITLOCK.                   |                     |

“It is ordered that ye bridge betwixt Froggs Necke and the Towne be maintained and upheld by a rate to be levied and assissed upon all persons and estates that are putt in the county rate belonging to the Township of Westchester, East Chester excepted.”<sup>a</sup>

There are, also, several manufacturies and formerly two grist-mills; one of which, a tide mill, was destroyed by fire some years ago. The latter was erected at a very early period, and was held by Col. Caleb Heathcote, one of the prominent officials under the Colonial Government, and the first Mayor of the Borough. There are three school districts in the town, namely: Westchester Village, Throckmorton's Neck, and Bear Swamp.

Westchester is by several years the oldest village in the county, its first settlement (by the Puritans) having commenced in 1650. At this early period, it formed a part of the Dutch district of *Vrede-land* (or land of peace) and was, therefore, within the limits and jurisdiction of the New Netherland. By the Dutch it was named *Oost-dorp*, (East town) from its situation east of the Mannhattans. So early as 1657, Gov. Stuyvesant ordered that Westchester should have four English or one Dutch mile square of land for the town.

During the Dutch dynasty, courts appear to have been holden regu-

<sup>a</sup> Westchester Town Rec.

larly at *Westburgh*; for, among the town records, is a small volume entitled "The Book of Court Acts, from 1657 to 1662," from which we extract the following memoranda:—

Feb. 1st, 1657, William Benfield for contempt of authority is bound over to answer at coorte."

"Febrary the 1, 1657.—Esttowne—the sentence of coorte upon William Benfield for contempt of authority is fine—twenty guilders, besides other charges that amounts to eleven guilders three stivers."

On the same occasion, "John Archer, plaintiff against Roger Wiles, in an action of debt for the value of seventy-four guilders, principal."

East town, the 13th of September, 1662, at a court held before Edward Walters, Robert Huestis and William Bett, by order and power of the Governor General, Peter Stuyvesant, Governor of the province of New Netherland, and the high council, etc.

Thomas Higgins, plaintiff, complains of Lawrence Turner, in an action of slander done by his wife, &c., ended by arbitration.

When Richard Nicolls, the Duke of York's Governor, convened an Assembly from the towns of Long Island and Westchester, to meet at Hempstead, March 1st, 1665, there appeared the following deputies from this place—Edward Jessup, John Quimby.<sup>a</sup>

AUGUST 6TH, 1665.—We whose names are underwritten, doe jointly agree to set to our hands to send the eight Townsmen to Governor Nicolls, to stand by them in what they doe in that particular, for the *settlement of the towne*.

WILLIAM QUIMBY,  
JOHN FERRIS,  
ROBERT PINCKNEY,  
EDWARD WATERS,  
RICHARD PONTON,  
SAMUEL BARRET,

THOMAS MILLER,  
JOHN SMITH,  
C. WOOD,  
EDWARD JESSUPE,  
THOMAS HUNT,  
THOMAS HUNT, JR.,

THOMAS VAILE.

At this early period, a portion of the judicial power appears to have been lodged in the hands of the *constable*; for in the town records, this entry occurs:—

WESTCHESTER, Sept. 3, 1665.

At a town court holden by the *constable* and the commissioners appointed, Thomas Hunt complained against an Indian called Pomoquee, that the said Indian took his canoe from the shore, where it was safe, and carried it quite away. Upon examination, the Indian confessed that he took the canoe from the shore, but said it was not secured.

<sup>a</sup> A15. Rec. Gen. Entries, 1664-5, page 96.—See Dunlap Hist., N. Y.



The inhabitants of Westchester (like their New England forefathers) appear to have been greatly troubled with the plague of witchcraft; for, in 1670, Katharine Harryson of England who had lived nineteen years at Weathersfield, in Connecticut, where she had been tried for witchcraft, *found guilty by the jury, acquitted by the bench*, and released out of prison. On consideration that she would remove, appeared before the council on the accusation of Thomas Hunt and Edward Waters, in behalf of the town of Westchester, they praying that she might be driven from the town. This affair was adjourned to the 4th of August, when being heard, it was referred to the General Court of assizes. The woman being ordered to give security for good behavior. The following sentence was recorded by the Court, Oct., 1670: "In the case of Catharine Harryson, widow, who was bound to her good behavior, upon complaint of some of the inhabitants of Westchester, whilst ye holding of this court: It is ordered, that in regard there is nothing appears against her deserving the continuance of that obligation, she is to be released from it, and hath liberty to remove from the town of Westchester where she now resides, or anywhere else in the Government during her pleasure."

The humane efforts, however, of the court to protect the poor widow, appear to have been ineffectual; for soon after, an order was given for Catharine Harryson, charged with witchcraft, to leave Westchester. "as the inhabitants are *uneasy* at her residing there, and she is ordered to go off."<sup>a</sup>

Catharine Harryson was returned to Weathersfield, as the people of Westchester were unwilling to keep a pauper belonging to the former place. The following receipt, in her name, is recorded in the town court records:—

"Know all men by these presents, that I Katharen Harryson, doe own that Joseph Pallmar, hath fully and absolutely satisfied the said Katharen Harryson, for a sarten bill of thirteen pounds and so used mony; and I the said Katharen Harryson doe acquit the said Joseph Pallmar of all bills, books, dues and demands from the beginning of the world to this present day. Given under my hand, the fifth of September in the yeare one thousand six hundred and seventy.

The O mark of

KATHAREN HARRYSON.

Witness, the R. P. marke of

RICHARD PONTON,

FRANCIS YEATS.

In 1679, wolves appear to have been very numerous and destructive

<sup>a</sup> Assize Rec. Albany.

in this portion of Westchester county, as appears in the following order of the town court records:—

“West Chester January ye 9th, 1679. Att a Towne Meeting at ye house of Thomas Wittlock being Constable: Itt is ordered that Wm. Barnes, John Hunt and Samuell Well are to make and maintaine two woulf pitts and to maintaine the same for the space of three whole yeares from the day of the date hereof, and in consideration hereof the Towne is to allow the said persons for the making said woulf pitts the sune of twenty shillings: and for each woulf that they shall catch, in said pitt, and presented to the Constable of the Town: They shall also have of every such woulf soe caute the sune of tenn shillings: it is conditioned that the said two woulfe pitts are to be finished and compleated at or before the 31st day of May next ensuing the date hereof and to be kept in repair the whole tearme of three yeares.”

The subjoined document, would appear to be the first tavern license granted in this county:—

“At a town meeting in Westchester, the 27th of June, 1681, Justice Pell present. The town made choice of John Hunt for an ordinary keeper, for one year ensuing, for the town of Westchester, and desired him the said John Hunt, may be licensed by the justices of the riding. The said Hunt is to sell his biere at two pence per quart, and rum at three pence per gill, which he shall not exceed; and to take his *corne* at price current, according to the current rate, and that none else to retaille againe in rum in the said towne of Westchester, during the said tearme of one year, without the approbation of the said Hunt.”

We have already shown that *Westchester* sent *representatives* to the Governor's assembly, in 1665. The following relates to the election of representatives, in 1683:—

WESTCHESTER, the 29th of Sept. 1683.

“At a town meeting held in obedience to a warrant from the high sheriff concerning the choice of four men out of the township to goe to Jamaica upon Long Island the first day of October next ensuing, there to joyne with a committee chosen out of each towne in the *north riding*, and this said committee to choose two out of the riding, able men as representatives for the *north riding*. The town hath made choice of William Richardson, Richard Ponton, Thomas Hunt, sen., and John Palmer, to be the four men to goe to Jamaica.

Recorded in town meeting,

per FRANCIS FRENCH, *Recorder*.”

Upon the division of the province into *shires* and *counties*, the following act was passed by the Colonial Assembly for the regulating and settling of Courts of Justices, entitled “an act for the more orderly hearing and determining of matters and cases of controversy, &c.” Two Courts of Sessions for the *County of Westchester*, the first Tuesday in June and the first Tuesday in December yearly and every year, the one to be held

at *Westchester*, and the other at *Eastchester*. Also a Court of Oyer and Terminer and general jail delivery in the same county on the first Wednesday in December. Passed 29th of October, 1683.<sup>a</sup>

Westchester formed the shire town of the county from 1683 to 1759. The following notice of the destruction of the Court-House occurs in the *New York Post Boy*, February 13th, 1758:—

“NEW YORK, FEB. 13TH.—We hear from Westchester that on Saturday night the 4th inst. the Court-house at that place was unfortunately burnt to the ground. We have not yet heard how it happened.”

This building occupied the site of the present parochial school-house of St. Peter's.

The last court held here was on the 6th of November, 1759.<sup>b</sup> A few extracts are selected from the early records, to show the manner in which the County Courts were conducted:—

“At a Court of Sessions held at *Westchester*, for the County of *Westchester*, by their Majesties authority, present John Pell, Justice and quorum, President of the court; John Palmer, Justice of the Peace and Quorum; Daniel Sharpe and William Barnes, Esquires, Justices of ye Peace. December ye 1st, 1691.

The Court opened.

The Grand Jury called and appeared, viz.:

|                    |                                 |
|--------------------|---------------------------------|
| ROBERT HUSTEAD,    | JOHN FURGESON,                  |
| JOHN FERRIS, SEN.. | ROBERT HUSTEAD, JUN.,           |
| JOHN MOLLINEX,     | JOHN HADDEN, SEN., <sup>c</sup> |
| JOSEPH HUNT,       | EDWARD HADDEN,                  |
| JOHN HUNT,         | JOHN WINTER,                    |
| JOHN QUIMBY, JUN., | THOMAS BEDIENT,                 |
| JOHN BALY,         | SAMUEL PALMER,                  |

WILLIAM CHADDERTON.

The court adjourned till Thursday morning.

CONSTABLES CALLED.

Westchester, Joseph Hunt. Eastchester, Henry Fowler. New Rochelle, Cornelius Seely. Mamaroneck, Richard Ward. Rye, Samuel Kniffen. Upper Yonckers, Matthias Brookes. Bedford, —.

BENJAMIN COLLIER,

*High-Sheriff of the County.*<sup>d</sup>

“At a court of sessions held at *Westchester* by his Majesty's authority, June 6th and 7th, 1693, before the Honorable Caleb Heathcote, Esq., Judge of the

<sup>a</sup> Acts of Assembly, passed A. D. 1683. Upon the 29th of October, 1684, the period was changed for holding the above courts from the first Tuesday in December to the third Tuesday in November. In 1691 the courts were held as first ordered.

<sup>b</sup> Rec. of Court of Common Pleas, Lib. B. The old Court House at Westchester was burnt at an early period of the Revolution.

<sup>c</sup> A. D. 1749.—Died, John Hadden and Abigail, his wife, within a few hours of each other, having lived lovingly together seventy years. He died aged 96, and his wife 90.

<sup>d</sup> First Rec. of Court of Sessions.

Court of Common Pleas, justice and quorum, &c., the following curious testimony was given in a suit between Richard Ponton, defendant, and Gabriel Leggett, plaintiff. Captain Thomas Williams,<sup>a</sup> aged 62 years, deposed, saith, the first reason of this difficulty was a big look violently from mee. Afterwards Captain Leisler<sup>b</sup> sent an order to Captain Ponton to send him some men to go to Albany for their assistance against the French, and also the said Williams to assist the said Ponton in taking and sending the said men up. When the townes company was called together and Captain Ponton asked them who was willing to go volunteers upon the said expedition, and Gabriel Leggett answered they was fooles if any them did go, and said who would give them a leg or an arm if they lost them. Upon which, Captain Ponton commanded him to hold his peace, but he still continued abusing the defendant and said here comes the father of rogues, and many other scurrileous words, upon which I got a warrant against him, &c."

At a general Court of Sessions, held in 1695:—

"The jury for our Sovereign Lord the King, upon their oaths do present Thomas Furguson of the county town of Westchester, laborer, for selling of a certain horse *without a tongue of a brown culler* at Westchester aforesaid, at or about the first day of May last, &c."

By an act of Assembly passed on the 11th of May, 1693, "*a public and open market* was appointed to be held on every Wednesday of the week at Westchester. "to which market it was lawful for all and every of the inhabitants and sojourners to go, frequent and resort, and thither to carry all sorts of cattle, grain, victuals, provisions and other neccesaries from eight in the morning to sunset."<sup>c</sup>

It was also enacted by General Assembly the same year, "that there shall likewise be held and kept twice yearly and every year, a *fair*, to which *fair* it shall and may be likewise lawful for all and every person to go and frequent, &c., two fairs yearly for the county of Westchester; the first to be kept at the town of Westchester in the said county on the second Tuesday of May and to and on the Friday following, being in all four days, exclusive and no longer; and the second fair to be kept at Rye in the said county, on the second Tuesday in October yearly, and to end the Friday following, &c., &c."<sup>d</sup> These privileges were subsequently confirmed and enlarged.<sup>e</sup>

The following charter, incorporating the ancient settlement of Westchester as a borough town, was granted on the 16th of April, 1696:—

<sup>a</sup> Dec. 11th, 1688. Thomas Williams, freeholder of Westchester, was elected member of the Governor's Council.

<sup>b</sup> Governor Jacob Leisler, who assumed the government of the Province in 1689.

<sup>c</sup> The above act was confirmed in 1697.—See Acts of Assembly, p. 17.

<sup>d</sup> Acts of Assembly, confirmed the 11th of May, 1697.

<sup>e</sup> See Charter.



## ROYAL CHARTER.

Gulielmus Tertius Dei Gratia, Angliæ Scotiæ, Galliæ et Hiberniæ, Rex fidei defensor, &c., &c.

“To all whome these presents shall come, sendeth greeting :

Whereas, Richard Nicolls, Esq., sometime Governor General of our province of New York, in America, by a certain writing or patent under his hand and seal, bearing date on or about ye 15th day of February, in the year of our Lord God, 1667, by virtue of the power and authority unto him given, did give, ratify, confirm and grant, unto John Quimby, John Ferris, Nicholas Bailey, William Betts, and Edward Walters, as pattentees for and on the behalf of themselves and their associates, the freeholds and inhabitants of the town of Westchester, within our s<sup>d</sup> province of New York, all that tract of land scituate, lying and being upon the main to the east of Harlem river then in the tenure and occupation of the above said patentees, and several other freeholders and inhabitants, of the said town, who, before that time by authority, had been settled there, and had been at considerable charges in manuring and planting part of the lands belonging thereunto, and likewise had settled a competent number of families thereupon for a township, the boundaries and limits whereof, were therein set forth and exprest as follows: (viz.) the western bounds of the s<sup>d</sup> land, then lying within the limits of the said town, did begin at the land commonly called Brunk's land, near or adjoining to Harlem river afores'd, from whence they extend eastward to the west part of a certain neck of land, commonly called Ann Hook's neck or Mr. Pell's purch<sup>e</sup>, southward they are bounded by the Sound or East river, and so to run up a parellel line from the east and west limits, north, into the woods without limitation, for range of cattle, and other improvements, together with all the lands, soiles, necks of land, rivers, creeks, harbours, quarry's, woods, meadows, pastures, marshes, waters, fishing, hawkings, huntings, and fowlings, and all other profits, commodities, emoluments and hereditaments, to the s<sup>d</sup> lands and premises, within the said bounds and limits described and set forth belonging or in any manner of wayes appertaining, *to have and to hold*, all and singular the said tracts and parcels of land, hereditaments and appurtenances, and every part and parcel thereof to the said patentees and their associates, their heirs, successors and assigns, forever.

*And moreover*, the said Richard Nicholls, Esq., as Govr. Genl. as afores'd did thereby ratify, confirm and grant unto the said patentees, their associates, their heirs, successors and assigns, all the rights and privileges belonging to a town within this government, and that the place of their then present habitation should continue and retain the name of Westchester, by which name and stile it was to be distinguished and known in all bargains, sales, deeds, writings and records, they the s<sup>d</sup> patentees and their associates, heirs, successors and assigns, rendering and paying such duties and acknowledgments, as then were or hereafter should be constituted or established by the laws of the said province, as by the said writing or patent now remaining upon the records of the secretaries office, relation being thereunto had, may more at large appear. *And whereas*, afterwards, on or about the sixth day of Janry., in the year of our Lord, 1686, upon the petition of several of the freeholders of the said town of Westchester, in behalf of themselves and the rest of the freeholders and inhabitants of the said town, directed to Coll. Thomas Dungan, then Cap<sup>n</sup>. Genl. and Gov. in Chief of

our sd province. The sd Coll. Thomas Dungan, by virtue of the power and authority to him derived, in and by a certain instrument in writing, under his hand and seal of our sd prov<sup>e</sup> of New York, whose date is the day and year last abovesd, for the consideration therein mentioned, did give, grant, ratify, release and confirm, unto twelve of the freeholders and inhabitants of the sd town of Westchester, and thereby made them one body corporate and politick, and willed and determined them to be known and called by the name of the Trustees of the Freeholders and Commonality of the Town of Westchester and their Successors, all the aforesd tracts and parcels of land, within the limits and bounds aforesd together with all and singular the houses, mesuages, tenements, building, mills, milldams, fences, inclosures, gardens, orchards, fields, pastures, woods, underwoods, common or pastures, meadows, marshes, swamps, creeks, harbors and all other profits and commodities and hereditaments whatsoever, to the sd tracts of land, and premises belonging, or in any manner of ways appertaining, *to have and to hold* unto them the sd trustees of the freeholders and commonality of the sd town of Westchester, and their successors forever, to and for the several and respective use therein mentioned, (viz.) as for and concerning all and singular the several and respective parcels of land and meadows, part of the abovesd granted premises, then in any wise taken up and appropriated, either by patent under the hand of any of his majesties governors in this province, and sealed with the seal thereof, or by particular divisions, settlements, allotments and grants, by town orders, either for the planting of land or erecting of saw mills, with all and every the privileges of cutting of timber, and pasture for cattle, before the day of the date thereof, unto the several and respective then present-freeholders and inhabitants of the said town of Westchester, by virtue of the before recited deeds or pattent, to the use, benefit and behoof of the sd freeholders and inhabitants respectively, and their several and respective heirs and assigns forever, and as for and concerning all and every such tracts and parcels of land, remainder of the granted premises not then taken up and appropriated to any particular person or persons, by virtue of the before recited deed or pattent, to the use, benefit and behoof of the then present freeholders and inhabitants, their heirs, successors and assigns for ever, in proportion to their several and respective settlements, divisions and allotments & tenements in common, without any lett, hindrance or molestation, to be had upon pretence of jointanacy or survivorship therein saving to his then majestic, his heirs and successors, the several rents and quit-rents reserved due, and payable from several persons, inhabiting within the limits and bounds aforesd by virtue of former grants to them made and given, always provided, that all and every such person and persons that hold any land within the limits and bounds aforesd, by virtue of the particular grants, patents, are forever to be excluded from having any rights or commonage or particular division of any of the lands within the limits and bounds aforesd that then remained unappropriated to be holden of us, our heirs and successors in free and common socage according to the manner of East Greenwich, in the county of Kent, within our realm of England, under a certain yearly quit-rent therein reserved, due and payable unto us, our heirs and successors; *and whereas*, the northerly bounds of the first recited pattent, extends into the woods without limitation, the said Coll. Thomas Dongan did, in and by the last above-mentioned pattent and confirmation, declare and determine, that the northerly

north-east and north-west bounds of the s<sup>d</sup> town of Westchester, should for ever hereafter be concluded and ascertain'd by ye southerly line of the pattent of Onsal and the south and west line of Thos. Pell, as by ye last above recited patent, relation being thereunto had, may more at large appear; *and fforasmuch* as the present trustees and other the freeholders and inhabitants of the s<sup>d</sup> town of Westchester, have lately, by their humble petition to our trusty and well beloved Benjan Fletcher, our Cap<sup>n</sup> Gen<sup>l</sup> and Govern<sup>r</sup>-in-chief of our said province of New York, in America, pray'd our charter or pattent of confirmation of all those several tracts and parcels of land, and other the premises to them granted as afores<sup>d</sup>, and that the said town of Westchester, and all and singular the lands and tenements thereunto belonging and appertaining, may forever hereafter, be a free borough and town corporate; now knowe ye, that we do by this our royal pattent or charter of confirmation, for us, our heirs and successors grant ratify and approve and confirm unto the s<sup>d</sup> trustees of the freeholders and inhabitants of our s<sup>d</sup> town of Westchester, and to their successors and assignes forever, all the several tracts and parcels of land hereinbefore recited, whose meets and bounds are forever hereafter to be taken, and esteemed to be and remain as follows: (viz.) the western bounds thereof are to begin at the west part of the land commonly call'd Brunks land, near or adjoining to Harlem river from whence they are to extend eastward to the west part of a neck of land, commonly call'd Ann-hook's neck, or the westernmost bounds of Mr. Pell's pattent, southard by the Sound and East river, and so to run up a parrallell line from the east and west limits, north into the woods, until it meet the southerly line of the pattent of Onsal and the south and west line of Thomas Pell's patent, together with all and singular the houses, mesuages, tenements, erections and buildings, mills, mill dams, fences, inclosures, gardens, orchards, fields, pastures, common of pastures, meadows, marshes, swamps, plains, woods, underwoods, timber, trees, rivers, rivulets, runs, streams, water, lakes, ponds, pools, pits, braches, quarries, mines, minerals, (half of gold and silver mines excepted) creeks, harbours, highways, easements, fishing, hunting and fowling, and all other franchises, profits, commodities, hereditaments and appurtenances whatsoever, to the same belonging, or in any manner of ways appertaining or therewithal us'd and enjoy'd, as part, parcel or member thereof, or accepted, requited or taken, to belong or in any wise to appertain thereunto, *to have and to hold* and enjoy ali and singular the above<sup>d</sup> tracts and parcels of land, hereditaments and premises, with their and every of their appurtenances unto the s<sup>d</sup> trustees of the freeholders and inhabitants of the said borough and town of Westchester, and their successors forever, to and for the several and respective uses following, and to no other use, intent or purpose whatsoever, (viz.) as for and concerning all and singular the several and respective parcels of upland and meadow ground, part of the above granted premises, in any wise taken up and appropriated, either by patt<sup>t</sup> under the hand of any of our former gover<sup>s</sup> of this our province, and sealed with the seal thereof, or by grant from the above mentioned trustees, or by particular divisions, settlements and grants, by town orders, either for planting of land, or erecting of saw mills, with all and every the privileges of cutting of timber, and pastures for cattle, before the date of these presents, and that by virtue of any the hereinbefore recited grants or pattents or any of them, shall be and remain to the use and behoof of such of the several and respective freeholders and inhabitants



respectively, and their several and respective heirs and assigns for ever, and particularly by one agreement made by the trustees of the sd town, bearing date the 24 day of December, 1694, with one Richard Ward, relating to the stream of the Great creek within the sd town, on which Coll. Caleb Heathcote and the sd Richard Ward, who are now equally concerned therein, are erecting of sundry mills, and is for and concerning all and every other the tracts and parcels of upland and meadow ground, remainder of the above granted premises not yet taken up or appropriated by any particular person or persons as aforesaid, to be and remain to the only proper use and behoof of the sd trustees and the freeholders and inhabitants of the sd borough and town of Westchester, and to their successors and assigns forever, and to no other use, intent, or purpose whatsoever. To be holden of us, our heirs, and successors, according to the manner of East Greenwich in the county of Kent, within our realm of England, in free and common socage, rendering and paying unto us, our heirs, and successors, or to the hands of our receiver genl of our sd province of New York for the time being or to such other officer or officers as shall be appointed to receive the same for and out of the sd tracts and parcels of land and other the premises the sum of thirty shillings current money of N. York, upon every 25th day of March forever hereafter. And we do farther give and grant unto the freeholders and inhabitants of the sd town of W. Chester, and to their heirs and assigns forever, full power and authority annually and once every year, and that upon the first Monday in the month of May, that they the said freeholders and inhabitants shall and may as formerly hath been accustomed in the sd town, to elect and choose twelve freeholders for their trustees, who shall have full power and authority, or the major part of them, to order and dispose of all or any part of the undivided land within sd town limits and precincts thereof, as fully and amply to all intents, constructions, and purposes as formerly they have used and been accustomed to do. And farther of our especial grace certain knowledge, and meer motion, we do, for us, our heirs, and successors grant, constitute, ordain, and appoint, by this our present charter, that all and singular the lands, tenements, and hereditaments herein before in this our sd royal charter and grant granted and confirmed, mentioned or intended to be granted and confirmed, shall from henceforth forever be a free borough and corporation, excepting and always reserving out of the sd borough or corporation all that tract of land situate and being upon the east side of Harlem river aforesd, and which did formerly belong to Coll. Lewis Morris, Esq., and which now is in the tenure and occupation of James Graham, Esq., and to be and remain out of the jurisdiction of the sd corporation. And farther of our especial grace, certain knowledge, and meer motion, do, for us, our heirs, and successors, grant, constitute, ordain, and appoint, by this our present charter, that the sd town of W. Chester and all and singular the lands and tenements therunto belonging and appertaining may forever hereafter be a free borough and town corporate, and shall be called the borough and town of W. Chester, and that in the sd town corporate there shall be a body politick consisting of a mayor, six aldermen, and six assistants, or common council of the sd borough and town of W. Chester, to continue in succession forever, and for the more full and perfect erection of the sd corporation and body politick to consist, continue, and be of a mayor, six aldermen, and six assistants, or common council of the sd borough or town to be called and known by the name of



the mayor, aldermen, and commonay of the borough and town of W. Chester.

We of our especial grace, certain knowledge and mere motion, do by these presents for us, our heirs and successors, create, make, ordain, constitute, nominate and appoint our trusty and well-beloved Coll. Caleb Heathcote, Esq., one of our Councillors of our s<sup>d</sup> province of N. York, to be the first and now Mayor of the s<sup>d</sup> town and borough of W. Chester, and to continue in the said office until the first Monday in the month of May, which shall be in the ninth year of our reign. And we do likewise create, make, ordain, constitute, nominate and appoint Wm. Barns, Jno. Stuert, William Willett, Thos. Baxter, Josiah Stuert and Jno. Baily, gents., to be first Aldermen of the s<sup>d</sup> borough and town of Westchester, and Israel Honeywell, Robert Hustis, Sam'l Hustis, Sam'l Ferris, Daniel Turner and Miles Oakley, gents., the First Assistants and Common Council of the s<sup>d</sup> borough and town, and that the s<sup>d</sup> Mayor, Ald<sup>n</sup> and Common Council and their successors, shall for ever hereafter be in name and in deed a body corporate and politick, and shall forever hereafter be called and known in all courts whatsoever, plead and be impleaded by the name of the Mayor, Ald<sup>n</sup> and Commonalty of the Borough and Town of W. Chester. And of our further grace, certain knowledge and meer motion, and to the intent that the s<sup>d</sup> corporation and body politick by these presents created and began afores<sup>d</sup>, may have perpetual succession and continue forever, we do by these presents for us, our heirs and successors, grant unto the s<sup>d</sup> Mayor, Ald<sup>n</sup> and Common Council and their successors for ever, that the s<sup>d</sup> Mayor and Ald<sup>n</sup> of the s<sup>d</sup> borough and Town of W. Chester, for the time being, shall and may from time to time, whensoever and as often as they shall think meet, admit and receive under the common seal of the s<sup>d</sup> corporation to be of the commonalty of the s<sup>d</sup> borough and town, such and so many persons as the said Mayor and Alder<sup>n</sup>, or the Mayor for the time being and the greatest part of the s<sup>d</sup> Alder<sup>n</sup> shall think meet, and every such person and persons and by them the s<sup>d</sup> Mayor and Alder<sup>n</sup> or the greater part of them as afores<sup>d</sup> to be admitted and received as afores<sup>d</sup>, shall immediately after such admission be free men of the s<sup>d</sup> borough and town and members of the s<sup>d</sup> body politick, and have and enjoy all such the same and so many priviledges, franchises and immunities, as if the said persons so to be admitted had been specially and particularly named in this our s<sup>d</sup> royal charter to be of the s<sup>d</sup> commonalty. And further we of our especial grace, certain knowledge, and meer motion, do by these presents, for us, our heirs, and successors, give and grant unto the s<sup>d</sup> Mayor, Alder<sup>n</sup> and Common Council of the s<sup>d</sup> borough and town of W. Chester, that they and their successors shall from henceforth for ever be a body politick and incorporate in deed and in name, and by these presents fully and absolutely make, create, constitute, establish and unite the s<sup>d</sup> Mayor, Alder<sup>n</sup> and Common Council into one body politick and incorporate to endure and continue for ever, and them and their successors do declare, accept and allow for a perfect corporation and body politick for ever, and that the s<sup>d</sup> body politick and corporate shall be called and known for ever by the name of the Mayor, Alder<sup>n</sup> and Commonalty of the Borough and Town of of W. Chester, and that by that name they and their successors shall be able persons in law to make all manner of contracts and grants, and to make, receive and take all manner of gifts, grants and purchases as any other natural person or body politick is able to make, receive and take by the laws of our realm of England and this our province, and that they and their suc-

cessors shall and may by that name implead any other person or persons, or be impleaded in any court or courts, in all and ail manners of causes and actions, real and personal or mixt of what kind or nature soever, and claim and demand their liberties and franchises before any judge or judges, ecclesiastical or secular, and otherwise do and execute all and every act and acts, thing and things whatsoever, which any other liege men which are enabled and made capable of the benefit of our laws within our realm of England or this our province of N. York, can or may lawfully do or execute. And farther of our especial grace, certain knowledge, and meer motion, we do by these presents for us, our heirs and successors, give and grant unto the s<sup>d</sup> mayor, alder<sup>n</sup> and common council, that the s<sup>d</sup> Col. Caleb Heathcott and his successors, mayors of the s<sup>d</sup> town and borough of W. Chester afores<sup>d</sup> for the time being, shall have the charge of free government of the s<sup>d</sup> borough and town of W. Chester during the time of his and their bearing the s<sup>d</sup> office, in as absolute and ample manner as is usual and customary with other mayors in the like corporations in our realm of England. And further because the s<sup>d</sup> mayor for the time being may many times have just occasion to be absent from the s<sup>d</sup> town, either of the public affairs thereof or for his own private respects, we do therefore for us, our heirs and successors, by these presents give and grant unto the s<sup>d</sup> mayor, ald<sup>n</sup> and common council and their successors, that the s<sup>d</sup> Coll. Caleb Heathcott and his successors, may<sup>rs</sup> of the s<sup>d</sup> borough and town of W. Chester, and every of them, shall have full power and authority from time to time during his year of government, with the consent of the said aldermen of the s<sup>d</sup> town for the time being or the greater part of them, to substitute in his absence some discreet and substantial person being one of the members of the s<sup>d</sup> aldermen inhabiting in the s<sup>d</sup> town or borough, to be his deputy mayor during the absence of the said mayor, and each deputy mayor for the time being, we do by these presents fully and absolutely authorize to do and execute all things whatsoever belonging to the s<sup>d</sup> office or place of mayor in as large and ample manner as if the s<sup>d</sup> mayor himself was personally present. And we do farther by these presents give and grant unto the s<sup>d</sup> mayor, aldermen and common council of the s<sup>d</sup> borough and town of Westchester and their successors forever, that the s<sup>d</sup> mayor for the time being or lawful deputy and any two or more of the s<sup>d</sup> ald<sup>n</sup> of the s<sup>d</sup> town shall and may lawfully hold and keep upon the first Tuesday in every month throughout the year a court within ye s<sup>d</sup> town of W. Chester, and therein shall have full power and authority to hold plea of all manner of debts, covenants, trespasses, accompt<sup>s</sup>, detinues, demands, and all other actions personal of what kind or nature soever the same be, arising and growing only within the s<sup>d</sup> borough or town of W. Chester and the limits thereof, so as ye same doth not exceed in debt or damages the sum of twenty pounds current money of this our province, who shall have power to hear and determine the same pleas and accompt<sup>s</sup> according to the rules of the common law of our realm of England and the acts of General Assembly of this our province of N. York. And farther of our like especial grace, certain knowledge and meer motion, we do by these presents for us, our heirs and successors, give and grant unto the said mayor, aldern and common council of the s<sup>d</sup> borough and town of W. Chester and their successors for ever, that they and their successors for ever shall have a common seal under which they shall pass all grants, warrants, deeds and specialties, and other the affairs and business of or concerning the s<sup>d</sup> corporation, which shall be

engraven with such form and inscription as shall be devised by the mayor, aldermen and common council of the s<sup>d</sup> borough and town; that the s<sup>d</sup> mayor, alder<sup>n</sup> and common council shall and may build, or cause to be built in some convenient place of the s<sup>d</sup> town a common hall or town house to be called by the name of the town hall of the borough and town of W. Chester, where the s<sup>d</sup> mayor, alder<sup>n</sup> and common council shall and may from henceforth for ever lawfully assemble themselves to deliberate and consult touching the publick welfare of the s<sup>d</sup> borough and town of Westchester, and that they their successors shall and may from henceforth be a free guild mercaturie, and that they or the greater part of them and their successors of which the mayor to be one, shall and may from time to time in their publick counceles freely and lawfully make and establish all such ordinances, statutes, orders or by-laws as may tend to the good and wholesome government of the said borough and town and to ye public benefit of the inhabitants of the same, not being repugnant to the common laws and statutes of our realm of England, and this our province of N. York, and such ordinances, by-laws, statutes, orders, and decrees as shall be made by them as aforesaid, we do by these presents, for us our heirs and successors, ratify, confirm and allow as good and effectual to bind all the inhabitants of the s<sup>d</sup> borough and town, and do expressly will and command by these presents that the same be duly put in execution, and that the s<sup>d</sup> mayor, alder<sup>n</sup> and common council shall at any time or times hereafter have full power to establish a ferry over the Sound, between the said corporation and the island of Nassau, in such convenient place or places as to the s<sup>d</sup> mayor and to the greater part of the said alder<sup>n</sup> shall seem meet and convenient, and to take such fees and perquisites for the same for the use of the s<sup>d</sup> corporation, as is now paid for the fferidge between N. York and the s<sup>d</sup> island.

And farther, for the more orderly government of the said borough and town, according to the form of the best governed towns and corporations of our realm of England, Wee do by these presents, for us, our heirs and successors, give and grant unto the s<sup>d</sup> mayor, alder<sup>n</sup>, and common council of the s<sup>d</sup> borough and town of Westchester, full power to elect and nominate one discreet and sufficient person, learned in ye law, to be recorder and town clerk of the s<sup>d</sup> borough and town of W. Chester, during the pleasure of the s<sup>d</sup> mayor, alder<sup>n</sup>, and common council, and such person or persons as they the s<sup>d</sup> mayor, alder<sup>n</sup>, and common council shall choose to be recorder and town clerk of the s<sup>d</sup> borough and town, Wee do, for us, our heirs and success<sup>rs</sup>, make, ordain, and constitute recorder and town clerk of the s<sup>d</sup> borough and town, and that the s<sup>d</sup> person or persons may execute their s<sup>d</sup> offices, by themselves or lawful deputy or deputies, so that the same be first approved of by the s<sup>d</sup> mayor and the major part of the said alder<sup>n</sup>, and wee do hereby authorize the said recorder and town clerk, his or their lawful deputy or deputies, to use and exercise such jurisdictions and authority as the recorder and town clerk doth or ought to do in the like corporations in our realm of England. And further, we do by these presents, for us, our heirs and successors, make ordain and constitute the s<sup>d</sup> mayor and aldermen of the s<sup>d</sup> borough and town of W. Chester to be justices of the peace within the s<sup>d</sup> bounds and limits of the s<sup>d</sup> town, and do hereby give them full power and authority to do and execute all and every act and acts, thing and things whatsoever, within the s<sup>d</sup> bounds and limits of the s<sup>d</sup> borough and town, in as absolute and ample manner as any justice of the peace within the s<sup>d</sup> county of W.



Chester may or ought to do, by the laws and statutes of our realm of England and this our province of N. York. And we do further, for us, our heirs, and successors, give and grant unto the s<sup>d</sup> mayor, aldermen, and common council of ye s<sup>d</sup> borough for the time being, and to their success<sup>rs</sup> forever, full power and authority to nominate and appoint, from time to time, one serjeant of the mace, and all other inferior officers and ministers which they shall think to be convenient and necessary, and which are customary in any of our corporations in our realm of England, for ye service of the s<sup>d</sup> borough and town; all which officers being from time to time appoin<sup>d</sup> by the s<sup>d</sup> mayor and alderman as afores<sup>d</sup>, we do, for us, our heirs and successors, by these presents, constitute and establish in their several offices, and do give them and every of them full power and authority to use and exercise ye same within s<sup>d</sup> borough and town, and within the limits and franchises thereof during ye will and pleasure of the s<sup>d</sup> mayor and alderman as fully and freely as any other the like officers in or of any of the like corporations in our realm of England lawfully may or ought to do, and the s<sup>d</sup> office of mayor shall from thenceforth forever be annual, and that the s<sup>d</sup> mayor, alder<sup>n</sup>, and common council shall from henceforth forever have frank and free election of the s<sup>d</sup> mayor, to be chosen yearly out of the number of the s<sup>d</sup> aldermen, and that by the votes of the greatest number of the said freeholders and inhabitants of the said corporation, and all other the said officers and ministers out of the rest of the number of the s<sup>d</sup> freeholders and inhabitants by ye greater number of the s<sup>d</sup> mayor, alderman, and common council, and when and so often as any of the aforesa<sup>d</sup>, alderman and common council who are hereby nominated and created for their lifetime, or until they or any of them shall be lawfully removed, or voluntarily remove themselves from the s<sup>d</sup> corporation; ye said aldermen to be elected and chosen out of the number of the s<sup>d</sup> common council, and the number of the common council to be chosen and made up out of the freemen of the s<sup>d</sup> corporation by the grater vote of the s<sup>d</sup> freeholders and inhabitants thereof, and that always within fourteen days after the death or removal of any of them as afores<sup>d</sup>. And farther our will and pleasure is that the first Monday in the month of May, yearly, shall be forever the day of election of the s<sup>d</sup> mayor and all other s<sup>d</sup> officers and ministers which shall yearly succeed in the s<sup>d</sup> borough, unless the s<sup>d</sup> mayor for the time being happen to die or be lawfully removed within the year, in which case our pleasure is that the afores<sup>d</sup> freeholders and inhabitants shall within fourteen days after the death or removal of any such mayor for the time being, as afores<sup>d</sup>, proceed to election to some other of the s<sup>d</sup> aldermen to supply the place of the s<sup>d</sup> mayor, being void as afores<sup>d</sup>; and that Coll. Caleb Heathcott, the present mayor, shall immediately, before he take upon him the said office and place, take the oaths lately appointed by act of Parliament instead of the oaths of allegiance and supremacy, and that the same be administered to him in the presence of our s<sup>d</sup> cap<sup>n</sup> and gener<sup>l</sup> and gover<sup>r</sup> in chief of our s<sup>d</sup> province of New York; and the s<sup>d</sup> Coll. Caleb Heathcott having taken ye said oaths, shall cause the same to be given in his presence as well to such persons as ye s<sup>d</sup> Coll. Caleb Heathcott, shall at any time during his mayoralty leave to be his deputy in his absence as afores<sup>d</sup>, as to the aldermen and common council created as afores<sup>d</sup>, and to the recorder and all such other officers and ministers as shall be chosen in the said borough for the better government of the same, and that before they or any of them shall



take upon them to execute any office or place by virtue of this our royal charter and patten, and after the end of the mayoralty of the s<sup>d</sup> Coll. Caleb Heathcote, our will and pleasure is that every mayor of the s<sup>d</sup> town that shall be hereafter elected in manner afores<sup>d</sup> shall immediately take the aboves<sup>d</sup> oaths before three at the least of the aldermen of the s<sup>d</sup> borough; and that upon election of any other alder<sup>n</sup> or common council, in case of death or removal as afores<sup>d</sup>, or such other officers as shall be annually chosen to take the aboves<sup>d</sup> oaths before the mayor for the time being, and any two of the s<sup>d</sup> aldermen, whom we do by these presents fully authorize to administer and give the s<sup>d</sup> several oaths. And farther, of our especial grace certain knowledge and meer motion, do by these presents, for us, our heirs and successors, give and grant unto the s<sup>d</sup> mayor, alder<sup>n</sup>, and common council of the borough and town of Westchester, and their successors forever, that they the s<sup>d</sup> mayor and aldermen shall and may from henceforth forever, have, hold and keep, one free market within the s<sup>d</sup> borough and town upon every Wednesday in every week, and two fairs within the s<sup>d</sup> borough and town at two several times in the year, (viz.) the one to begin and to be holden within the said borough and town upon the second Tuesday in May, yearly forever, and to continue for three days and no longer; and the other of the s<sup>d</sup> fairs to begin upon the last Tuesday in October yearly, forever, and to continue also for three days and no longer, with power to erect several courts of pipowder, and the office of clerk of entries, and all other things thereunto belonging, with all and singular the perquisites and profits, issues, customs, tolls, fees, amerciements, commodities, jurisdictions and emoluments, to the s<sup>d</sup> courts, fairs, and markets, in any wise belonging and appertaining; and that the mayor of the said borough and town of W. Chester for the time being, and no other, have power and authority to give and to grant license annually, under the public seal of the said corporation, to all tavern keepers, inn keepers, ordinary keepers, victuallers, and all publick sellers of wine, strong waters, rum, cyder, beer, or any other sort of strong liquors by retail, within the s<sup>d</sup> corporation or the liberties and precincts thereof; and it shall and may be lawful to and for the s<sup>d</sup> mayor of the s<sup>d</sup> borough for the time being, or his lawful deputy, to ask, demand, and receive for such license by him to be given and granted as afores<sup>d</sup>, such sum or sums of money as he and the person to whom such licence shall be given and granted shall agree for, not exceeding the sum of 20s. for such licence; all which money as by ye said mayor shall be so received, shall be us<sup>d</sup> and apply<sup>d</sup> to the public use of the mayor, aldermen and common council of the s<sup>d</sup> borough and their successors. And also we do, of our like especial grace, certain knowledg, and meer motion, by these presents, for us, our heirs and successors grant unto the said mayor, aldermen and common council of the s<sup>d</sup> borough and town of W. Chester and their successors forever, that the mayor with two or more of the aldermen for the time being, shall have full power to enquire, hear, and determine, of all frays and bloodsheds whatsoever, happening within the s<sup>d</sup> borough and town of W. Chester, and the offenders therein to correct and punish according to the laws or our realm of England and this our province of N. York. And we do farther by these presents, for us, our heirs, and successors, give and grant unto the s<sup>d</sup> mayor alder<sup>n</sup>, and common council of the s<sup>d</sup> borough and town of W. Chester, and to their success<sup>s</sup> forever that the mayor, or in his absence his deputy mayor of the s<sup>d</sup> borough and town for the

time being, shall be coroner and clerk of the market within ye s<sup>d</sup> borough and town and the liberties thereof, giving and hereby granting unto s<sup>d</sup> mayor and deputy mayor for the time being full power and authority to exercise and execute the said office and offices of coroner and clerk of the market in the s<sup>d</sup> borough and town and the liberties thereof in as large and ample manner as any other coroner or clerk of the market doth or may lawfully execute the like office or offices in any other town or liberties within this our province of N. York. And farther, of our especial grace, certain knowledg, and meer motion, wee do by these presents, for us, our heirs, and successors, give and grant unto the s<sup>d</sup> mayor, aldermen and common council of the s<sup>d</sup> borough and town of Westchester afores<sup>d</sup>, and their success<sup>rs</sup> forever, that they and their successors shall and may from time to time return and send one discreet burgess of the s<sup>d</sup> town and borough into every general assembly hereafter to be summoned or<sup>d</sup> holden within this our province of N. York, which burgess so return<sup>d</sup> and sent shall be receiv<sup>d</sup> into the house of deputies or members of the s<sup>d</sup> house and have and enjoy such priviledges as any other of the s<sup>d</sup> members have or ought to have. And lastly our express will and pleasure is, and we do by these presents for us, our heirs and successors, give and grant unto s<sup>d</sup> mayor, aldermen, and common council of the s<sup>d</sup> borough, and their successors forever, that these our letters patent or the inrolment thereof in our secretarie's office of our s<sup>d</sup> province, shall be good, available, and effectual in the law to all intents, constructions and purposes, against us, our heirs, and successors, without any other, licence, grant, or confirmation from us, our heirs, or successors hereafter, by the s<sup>d</sup> mayor, aldermen, and common council, or their successors, or any of them, to be had and obtained notwithstanding the not recitall or miss-recitall, not nameing or miss-nameing of the s<sup>d</sup> offices, ffranchises, lands, tenements, or hereditaments, and other the premises or any of them; and notwithstanding that no writ of *ad quod damnum* hath issued forth to enquire of the premises or any of them before the sealing of these presents, any statute, act, ordinance, or provision, or any matter or thing whatsoever to the contrary in any wise notwithstanding. In witness whereof we have caused these our Letters to be made pattennt. Witness our trusty and well beloved Benjamin Fletcher our cap<sup>n</sup> gen<sup>l</sup> and govenor in chief of our s<sup>d</sup> province of New York and the territories and tracts of land depending thereon in America, and vice admiral of the same, our lieutenant and commander-in-chief of the militia and of all the fforsses by sea and land within our Colony of Connecticut, and of all the fforts and places of strength within the same. At our ffort at New York, this sixteenth day of April, in the eighth year of our reign.<sup>a</sup>

VIVANT REX ET REGINA."

Another entry relates to the swearing in of the first *Aldermen and Common Council* of the borough.

"Be it remembered that upon the sixth day of June in the 8th year of his Majestie's reign, 1696, appeared before me Caleb Heathcote, Mayor of the borough town of Westchester: William Barnes, John Hunt and John Bayley, gentlemen, Aldermen of the said corporation; and Robert Huestis, Samuel Huestis,

<sup>a</sup> From a certified copy of the original, in the possession of the late Ogden Hammond, Esq.

Samuel Ferris, Miles Oakley and Daniel Turner, gentlemen, Common Council of said corporation, and did take the oaths appointed by act of Parliament, entitled "of the oaths of allegiance and supremacy." Recorded, coram me,

CALEB HEATHCOTE, *Mayor.*<sup>a</sup>

Upon the 11th of June, 1696, at a meeting of the Mayor, Aldermen and Common Council, "it was ordered, that a *seal* shall be devised and made for the use of the corporation, and that in the mean time the *seal*<sup>b</sup> formerly used by the trustees shall be made use of. It was further ordered, that Mr. James Emott shall be *Recorder*, and Edward Collier his deputy; also that Joseph Hunt, Jun., should be *Serjeant of the mace*, if he would accept of it, and if not John Williams should be *serjeant of the mace*.

"At a court held in the borough town of Westchester by the Mayor and Aldermen of said town on the 6th of October, 1696, Col. Heathcote brought the seal for the corporation, and did give it gratis to the town, and left it in the hands of the Recorder."

At a meeting of the trustees of this town, held on the 8th of June, 1700, it was resolved:—

"That whereas at a former meeting held by the inhabitants of the borough town and precincts, on the 3d day of May, 1697, it was voted and agreed upon that there should be a *town hall* built to hold courts in and for the public worship of God, &c.; but it being then neglected, the mayor, aldermen and justices at this meeting, did order with a joynt consent to build a house for the uses of a *court* and *prison*. The dimensions of the house is to be twenty-six feet square, sixteen feet joyns, a square roof, six window cases five feet square, &c. The trustees agreed with Richard Ward to build said house for £33, and with Erasmus Orton to build the prison for £5. It is to be twenty feet long, 16 feet wide, seven feet high, two feet thick with a good chimney. The town to find attendance. Which work is to be done by the 31st."<sup>c</sup>

The following certificate refers to the services of Lewis Morris as representative to the Provincial Assembly:—

*General Assembly for the Colony of New York:*

DIE SABBATI, 6 July, 1723.

These are to certifie that Lewis Morris, Esq., one of the persons duly elected for ye borough of Westchester to serve in General Assembly for ye Colony of New York, hath attended the service of this house in General Assembly, the full term of sixty-one days. By order of ye General Assembly,

R. LIVINGSTON, *Speaker.*

<sup>a</sup> Town Rec.

<sup>b</sup> Several impressions of this seal are attached to papers in the town clerk's office.

<sup>c</sup> Westchester Rec. On the 4th of September, 1700, Joseph Haviland and John Hunt were directed to agree for the timber work of the prison.



JULY 6th, 1723.

Received ye full payment of this certificate from ye borough of Westchester.  
I say received by me.

LEWIS MORRIS.<sup>a</sup>

Peter De Lancey, Esq., represented the borough in 1756, for which he received ten shillings per diem.<sup>b</sup>

One of the most important privileges conferred upon this town by the royal charter, was that of holding a *Mayor's court*, the first Tuesday in every month. This court had full power to hear and determine all causes "not exceeding in debt or damages the sum of twenty pounds." From the town records it appears, that "at a Mayor's Court holden in Westchester, 6th of July, 1697, the court did order that Capt. William Barnes shall see out for a workman to make *a pair of stocks* and the *prison* sufficient for the securing of prisoners, until such time as a way may be found for the building of a new one, &c."<sup>c</sup>

As a proof that liberty was not yet clearly understood by our ancient judges, we subjoin an extract from the records of the *Mayor's Court* in 1730:

"Present, Miles Oakley, *Mayor*; Thomas Hunt, Joshua Hunt, James Cromwell, Nathaniel Underhill and William Leggett, *Aldermen*.

The jury being called over said they could not agree, and James Dangly and Gabriel Leggett who dissented from the others gave their reasons to the court; which being judged insufficient, they were fined 40s. each, and to stand committed till paid. The jury were then discharged."<sup>d</sup>

"At a *Mayor's Court* held in Westchester, December, 1734, Present, William Leggett, Esq., *Mayor*; William Forster, *Recorder*; Nathaniel Underhill, Thomas Hunt, Joshua Hunt and Gabriel Leggett, *Aldermen*, &c. The Recorder presented the freedom of the town to the Hon. James De Lancey, Esq., and John Chambers, attorney-at-law, which was read and approved: and thereupon it was ordered that the Mayor, Recorder and Aldermen do forthwith wait on the said James De Lancey, Esq., and John Chambers, at the house of William Burnett, and deliver the same unto them, and desire their acceptance of the same. Accordingly the court adjourned."<sup>e</sup>

In 1746, the small pox prevailing in Greenwich, New York, the house of Assembly adjourned to *Westchester*.

The following letter of the Westchester sub-committee, dated borough and town of Westchester, August 24, 1775, to the Honorable Provincial Congress, is copied from the military returns:—

<sup>a</sup> Town Rec., Book 9, 155.

<sup>b</sup> Smith's Hist. of N. Y. The daily wages of the representatives, were regulated by sundry acts of Assembly.

<sup>c</sup> Town Rec.

<sup>d</sup> Town Rec.

<sup>e</sup> Town Rec. On the 24 of July, 1737, Lewis Morris, Jun., and Frederick Philipse were admitted freemen of the borough under the common seal of the corporation.



We the subscribers appointed a sub-committee to inspect the election of militia officers for the said town, do most humbly certify, that the following persons were chosen this 24th day of August, 1775, by a majority of voices duly qualified for that purpose, agreeable to the resolutions of the honorable Congress above-said, (viz. :)

JOHN OAKLEY, *Captain*,  
NICHOLAS BERRIAN, *1st Lieutenant*,  
ISAAC LEGGETT, *2d Lieutenant*,  
FREDERICK PHILIPSE STEVENSON, *Ensign*.

Committee, { THOMAS HUNT,  
                  { JAMES FERRIS,  
                  { LEWIS GRAHAM.

By an act of the State Legislature, passed 18th of April, 1785, entitled, "An act authorizing the freeholders and inhabitants of the township of West Chester, to choose Trustees for the purposes therein mentioned;" the name and style of the old borough and town of West Chester, was changed for that of the Township of West Chester. Time of meeting, first Tuesday in May, and on the first Tuesday in April, in every year thereafter to choose six freeholders, who shall be resident in the said Township for Trustees, etc.<sup>a</sup>

Second, "And be it further enacted by the authority aforesaid, that the district formerly called and known by the style of the Borough and Town of West Chester, shall henceforth be called and known by the name of the Township of West Chester."

At a meeting of the freeholders and inhabitants of the town of Westchester, held 1st day of April, 1788, being the first Tuesday in April, and the annual day of electing town officers, pursuant to an act of the Legislature, passed the 14th Feb., 1787. Present, Joseph Bowne, etc.

The following persons were chosen for the ensuing year:—

ISRAEL UNDERHILL, *Supervisor*.

JOHN BARTOW, JR., }  
MICHAEL RYER, } *Assessors*.  
AUGUSTUS DRAKE, }

JOHN BARTOW, JR., }  
ISRAEL UNDERHILL, }  
JOSIAH QUIMBY. } *Trustees*.  
EDWARD BRIGGS, }  
JOSEPH BOWNE, }  
SAMUEL BAYARD, }

CORNELIUS HUNT, *Constable*.

The following act was passed by the Legislature of this State, on the

<sup>a</sup> Laws of N. Y. 8th session. vol. i, p. 180. Greenleaf, N. Y., M.D.CC., xcil.

19th of March, 1813, entitled, "An act relative to the duties and privileges of towns."<sup>a</sup> The 28th section of which directs:—

"That the freeholders and inhabitants of the town of Westchester, in the county of Westchester, may, on the day of their annual town meeting, under the usual manner of electing town officers, choose six freeholders resident in this town for trustees; and the said trustees or a majority of them, shall and may order and dispose of all or any part of the undivided lands within the said town, as fully to every purpose, as trustees have been used to do, under any patent or *charter* to the said town, and may continue to lease out the right and privilege of setting and keeping a ferry across the East river from the said town of Westchester to the town of Flushing, in Queens county, in like manner, at the same rates of ferriage, under the same rules and regulations, and for the like purposes, as they have lawfully been accustomed to do, since the eighteenth day of April, one thousand seven hundred and eighty-five."<sup>b</sup>

The first settlers of this town, who were Puritan emigrants from New England, and chiefly from Connecticut, appear to have made early provision for the establishment of religion, according to the Independent or Congregational order. Mr. John Throckmorton and his thirty-five associates, were mostly the friends and associates of Roger Williams, or Anne Hutchinson; who, tired of the turmoils of Old England and New, obtained leave of the Dutch to settle here in 1642, on a tract of land they were pleased to call "Vrede-land; or, Land of Peace." In 1650, a body of Puritans settled near the same place, being favored by the Dutch, "with the free exercise of their religion," calling it "Oost dorp," (East Town). These, too, were Puritans or Independents; but, they had no minister until 1674, and then only for a short period; indeed, they seem to have been without a settled minister for most of the time to the end of the century, of their mode of worship. The Dutch Commissioners, who visited Oost-dorp in 1656, give in the journal of their expedition, the following account:—

"31 Dec. after dinner, Cornelius van Ruyven went to the house where they held their Sunday meeting, to see their mode of worship; as they had, as yet, no preacher. There I found a gathering of about fifteen men, and ten or twelve women. Mr. Baly said the prayer, after which, one Robert Basset read from a printed book a sermon, composed by an English clergyman, in England; after the reading, Mr. Baly gave out another prayer and sang a psalm, and they all separated."<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> The town property prior to its division, in 1846, amounted to sixteen or twenty thousand dollars, (arising from the sale of the common lands) the interest of which was appropriated to the common schools.

<sup>b</sup> Laws of New York, 1813. The above confirms a former Act of Legislature, passed 18th April, 1785, in which the freeholders of the town were authorized to choose six trustees, who should have the right to order and dispose of the undivided lands, etc.

<sup>c</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. of N. Neth., vol. II. 316.

The Rev. John Megapolensis, in a letter to the Classis of Amsterdam, dated New Netherland, 5th of August, 1657, says:—

“On the west side of the East River, about one mile through Hell-gate, (as we call it), opposite Flushing, on the main, another English village has been begun over two years. It was named Oost-dorp. The inhabitants of this place are also Puritans, alias Independents. They, also, have no preacher. They hold Sunday meetings, reading from an English book a sermon, and making a prayer.”<sup>a</sup>

As “all ecclesiastical business, at this time, was conducted by the town, assembled in town meeting; and as a meeting of the town was a meeting of the congregation, which, after having disposed of matters secular, could attend to the Church;” therefore, the early history of religion is to be found principally in the town records.

Under date of July 29th, 1674, twenty-four years after the settlement of the village, appears the name of the Rev. Ezekiel Fogge; probably the first Independent or Congregational minister that officiated here.

The following entries are taken from the town books:—

“On the 11th of February, 1680, there was sprinkled with water by Morgan Jones, (what they call baptizing,) William Hunt, son of John Hunt, of Westchester; witnesses present, Joseph Hunt and Bridget Waters.”

“WESTCHESTER, OCT. 7TH, 1680.—Morgan Jones married Isaac Dickerman, of this towne, to Bethia, the daughter of Henry Gardener.

Recorded per me, FRANCIS FRENCH, *Clerk.*”

At a town-meeting, held in Westchester, April 2nd, 1684, it was resolved:—

“That the Justices and Vestrymen of Westchester, Eastchester and Yonckers, do accept of Mr. Warham Mather, as our minister for one whole year; and that he shall have sixty pound, in country produce at money price, for his salary. and that he shall be paid every quarter. Done in behalf of the justices aforesaid.

Signed by us,

JOHN QUIMBY, JOHN BAYLEY,  
JOSEPH HUNT, JOHN BURKBEE.<sup>b</sup>

At a lawful town-meeting held in Westchester, by the freeholders and inhabitants, and residents of said place, the 2nd day of January, 1692, in order to consult, conclude, and agree, about procuring an orthodox minister in said town,—It is voted and agreed upon, “that there shall be

<sup>a</sup> Doc. Hist. of New York, vol. iii., 107.

<sup>b</sup> Westchester Town Rec., commencing A.D. 1665, p. 42.

an orthodox minister in the town aforesaid, as soon as possible may be; and to allow him forty or fifty pound per annum, equivalent to money, for his maintainance. It is also voted and agreed upon, that a man shall go to the Honorable Colonel Heathcote, and see if he can prevail with him for to procure us a minister, in his travels in New England, otherwise, that Captain William Barnes shall go and procure us a minister."<sup>a</sup>

Upon the 21st of September, 1693, the Act of Assembly for settling a Ministry, was passed. By this Act, Westchester County was divided into two parishes, viz., Westchester and Rye. The parish of Westchester included the town or precincts of *Westchester, Eastchester, Yonckers*, and the *Manor of Pelham*; and was required to raise £50 per annum for the support of the minister, and to elect on 2d Tuesday in January, ten vestrymen and two church-wardens. There was also to be called, inducted, and established, *a good sufficient Protestant minister*, to officiate and have the care of souls within one year next, and after the publication hereof. In Westchester two; one to have the care of Westchester, Eastchester, Yonckers and the Manor of Pelham, &c.<sup>b</sup>

But so few persons were properly qualified at this time, to accept the call of the vestry, that the act remained dormant in Westchester nearly two years. An attempt, however, was made by some of the vestry to have Warham Mather inducted, as appears by the following extract from the town records:

"At a meeting held in Westchester, the 7th of May, 1695, present, Justice Barnes and Justice Hunt. Capt. William Barnes, President of the trustees: "Whereas, the freeholders and inhabitants of this town of Westchester and precincts, att this meeting have exprest their desires for the settling of Mr. Warham Mather amongst us as our minister for one whole year or longer; its therefore voated and agreed upon, that Mr. Justice Barnes, and Mr. Justice Hunt, and Mr. Edward Waters, church-wardens, with as many of the vestrymen as conveniently can be gott together, should agree with the said Mr. Warham Mather, and settle him with all expedition. Endorsed,

EDWARD COLLIER, *Clerk*."<sup>c</sup>

The Rev. John Miller, describing the Province of New York, in 1695, says: "There is a meeting house at Westchester, and a young man coming to settle there without orders. There are two or three hundred English and Dissenters, a few Dutch."<sup>d</sup>

Mather's call appears to have been confirmed, with all due expedition by the Dissenters, probably in 1695; but, after Col. Caleb Heathcote

<sup>a</sup> Town Rec.

<sup>b</sup> Acts of Prov. Assembly, N. Y., from 1691 to 1725.

<sup>c</sup> Westchester Town Rec., Lib. vi. 56.

<sup>d</sup> Description of the Province of New York, by Rev. John Miller.



had been chosen as one of the church-wardens of the parish, he positively refused to use his influence with Gov. Fletcher to have Mather inducted to that living,<sup>a</sup> as we shall have occasion to show presently, which finally led to his removal in 1701.

Mr. Warham Mather, who was born at Northampton, Mass., in 1666, and graduated at Harvard College in 1685,<sup>b</sup> was the son of Eleazer, and grandson of Richard, who was the son of Thomas and Margaret Mather, and was born at Lowton, in the parish of Winwick, in Lancashire, in 1596; was sometime a student at Brazennose College, Oxford, ordained by Bishop Morton, of Chester, in 1618, afterwards was chosen minister and school-master at Toxtath park, near Liverpool, where he continued for fifteen years. He was suspended for non-conformity, and removed with his family to New England, in 1635; settled over the church of Dorchester, Mass., 23d of August, 1636, and died 22d of April, 1669. Wood denominates him "a pious man, and a zealous and laborious preacher;" and adds, "that he was much followed by the precise party; but that he was a severe Calvinist, and no friend to the Church of England."<sup>c</sup> He was twice married. His first wife was the pious daughter of Edward Holt, Esq., of Bury, in Lancashire; and his second wife, the widow of Mr. John Cotton. He had four sons employed in the ministry, all eminent in their day. Nathaniel, Samuel and Increase, were preachers in England, and all ejected by the fatal Act of Uniformity, in 1662.<sup>d</sup> His son, Eleazer Mather, was pastor of the Church at Northampton, in New England, and was born at Dorchester, 13th of May, 1637; graduated at Harvard College, 1656; ordained 23d of June, 1661, and died 24th of July, 1669, aged thirty-two; leaving by his wife, (who was a daughter of the Rev. John Warham), the before mentioned Warham Mather. "On the 29th of May, 1697, John Yeats, of the city of New York, sold several tracts of land in Westchester, to Warham Mather, of Northampton, in the county of Hampshire, in his Majesty's Province of Massachusetts Bay, in America, (student in Divinity), now residing in the town of Westchester."

"In 1703, Warham Mather, of New Haven, student in Divinity, sold his lands in Westchester to Daniel Clark."<sup>e</sup> He died in 1745.<sup>f</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Such was the law at this period that if any unqualified person was presented to a living he that presented him could not afterwards present another, on the ground that no person that has the presentation to a benefice can do it twice.

<sup>b</sup> Rev. Chas. W. Baird. There is a letter of his among the Mather papers. It is addressed from Boston, July 6, 1688, to his uncle Increase, who was then in England. Warham asked his advice about going to England himself.

<sup>c</sup> Lives of the Puritans, by Brook, vol. iii., pp. 440-445. Palmer's Noncon. Mem. vol. ii., pp. 245-355.—Mather's *Magnalia* *Farmers Register*

<sup>d</sup> Lives of the Puritans, by Brook, 445.

<sup>e</sup> Town Rec. of Westchester, Lib. v. 78. <sup>f</sup> Town Rec. of Westchester, Lib. vi. 30.

<sup>g</sup> The date of his death is given in the Catalogue of the Prince Library, in connection with the mention of a printed sermon attributed to Warham Mather—Rev. Chas. W. Baird.

The old meeting house having fallen to decay, the following resolution was passed at a town meeting, held the 5th day of May, 1696:—

“It is voated and agreed upon that the meeting house shall be repaired forthwith, and that two men shall be chosen to see it done—Gabriel Legat and Josiah Hunt, is chosen to agree with a carpenter to repair the said meeting house, and to bring an account to the town of the cost and expence thereof whereby a rate may be made to defraye the charge in so doing.”<sup>a</sup>

On the 3rd day of May, 1697, at a meeting of the freeholders and inhabitants of the town and precincts of Westchester:—“It was voted and agreed upon, that there should be a Town House built, to keep courts in, and for the *publick worship of God*.”<sup>b</sup>

Soon after this vote of the town, in the year 1699, an act of General Assembly was made to enable the respective towns within the whole province to build and repair their meeting houses, &c.<sup>c</sup> Whereupon the inhabitants of Westchester laid aside the prosecution of building the town house above, according to the said town vote, and took hold of the said act, by virtue whereof a new Parish church was erected in 1700, and a rate laid and levied on all the inhabitants, without any distinction, towards defraying the expenses.

The following resolutions were passed at a meeting of the trustees, held on the 8th of June, 1700:—

“It is voted and agreed upon by the trustees aforesaid, that the rate shall be made up forthwith, and delivered to the constable, who shall have for collecting the same, six pence per pound:

“Whereas att a general meeting held in the Borough town of Westchester, by the freeholders and inhabitants of said town and precincts, on the 3rd day of May, 1697, it was voted and agreed upon that there should be a town hall built to keep courts in, and for the publick worship of God &c.; but it being then neglected, the Mayor and Aldermen, and trustees at this meeting did order with a joynt consent, to build a house for the uses aforesaid and a prison. The dimensions of the house is to be twenty-six feet square, 16 feet joyns, a square roof, 6 window cases 5 feet square, &c. The trustees agreed with Richard Ward to build said house for £32, and with Erasmus Orton to build the prison for £5, which work is to be done by the 31st of October next.”<sup>d</sup>

The subjoined order relates to the cartage of timber and other material for the church &c.:—

<sup>a</sup> Westchester Town Rec. Liber. v. 59.

<sup>b</sup> Westchester Town Rec. Liber. v. 141. “It had been previously voted and agreed upon that there should be a prison built with a town house upon it, according to the dimensions made by Col. Heathcote, Lib. v. p. 77.

<sup>c</sup> Laws of N. Y. vol. I. chapter lxxxiii. 37.

<sup>d</sup> Westchester Town Rec. Lib. v. 141.

"At a meeting held by the trustees the 14th of of September, 1700, present, Josiah Hunt, President, Edward Waters, Joseph Haviland, John Hunt, Joseph Bayley, John Ferris, senr., and Richard Panton. 'Tis voted and agreed upon that all that shall cart timber and stuff for the meeting house, shall have six shillings per diem; and that Joseph Haviland and John Hunt shall agree with a carpenter for the timber work and the prison, as they shall see cause, &c. Done in behalf of the Freeholders and Commonality of the town."<sup>a</sup>



At a subsequent meeting of the trustees, held on the 26th day of October, A. D, 1700, "It was resolved that Richard Ward shall build the meeting house twenty-eight feet square, with a terret on the top, for forty pounds."<sup>b</sup>

In an address of the Venerable Propagation Society, the following account is given of the building of this church:—

"We whose names are subscribed do hereby certify that the church of Westchester was built by a rate laid and levied on the inhabitants of the said town in proportion to their estates, in the year of our Lord 1700; and that Mr. Morgan, a Presbyterian minister of Eastchester did sometimes come to preach in it, until such time as Mr. Bartow came and took possession of it in the year 1702, since which time it has been supplied by him, &c."<sup>c</sup>

This building stood on the site of the present church, upon what was then styled the Town Green,<sup>d</sup> adjoining the old County Court-house<sup>e</sup> and jail. It was built of wood, quadrangular in form,<sup>f</sup> with a pyrami-

<sup>a</sup> Westchester Town Rec. Lib. v. 145.

<sup>b</sup> Westchester Town Rec. Lib. v. 145.

<sup>c</sup> Hawks' New York MSS. from archives at Fulham. vol. i. 463.

<sup>d</sup> On the 5th of June, 1696, the trustees granted unto the Mayor and Alderman of the Borough, for the use of the Corporation, part of the *Green* in said town, to erect a market house and settle the market—Lib. v. 63.

<sup>e</sup> The following extract is copied from the *New York Post Boy*, for Feb. 13, 1758:—"We hear from Westchester that on Saturday night, the 4th instant, the court house at that place was unfortunately burnt to the ground. We have not heard yet how it happened."

<sup>f</sup> The Venerable Bede informs us, that in his time, the English churches were square. Speaking of the building of St. Peter's church, at York, in 627, by King Edwin, he says:—"Per quadratum cœpit edificare basilicam."—Vide Bede Hist Eccles, Lib. ii. chap. 14.

dal roof and bell turret in the centre ; and was used for the worship of Almighty God until the year 1788, when it was removed, and the present edifice erected. It now stands near the church yard, on the property of the late Capt. Elnathan Hawkins, having been sold to Mrs. Sarah Ferris, the grand-mother of the late Mrs. Eliza Hawkins, by order of the vestry, in 1788.

The following extracts relates to the election of church-wardens and vestrymen for this parish, in pursuance of the Act of 1693 :—

At a meeting held by the Parishioners of Westchester Division, in the borough and town of Westchester, pursuant to an act of General Assembly, entitled an “Act for the settling a ministry and raising of a maintenance for them,” this second Tuesday of January, 1701-2<sup>nd</sup> resented,

MR. JUSTICE BARNES,  
MR. JUSTICE BAXTER.



Pampsford Church.

*Church-wardens chosen at said time :*

COL. CALEB HEATHCOTE,  
ALD'N. JOSIAH HUNT.

*Vestrymen Chosen :*

MR. JOHN PELL, SENR., for the Manor of Pelham,  
MR. JOSEPH DRAKE, for Eastchester,  
MR. CHARLES VINCENT, for Youckers.  
MR. WILLIAM WILLETT,  
MR. THOMAS HUNT, JUNR., of the West Farms,  
MR. JOSEPH HAVILAND,  
ALD'M. JOHN BAYLEY,  
MR. RICHARD WARD,  
MR. JOHN BUCKBEE,  
EDWARD COLLIER,

For Westchester,

Entered by order, EDWARD COLLIER, *Recorder.*<sup>a</sup>



In the year 1702, came from England, the Rev. John Bartow, A. M., who was the first regularly inducted rector of this parish, elected by the vestry under the act of 1693. He was the son of Thomas Bartow, M. D., of Crediton, in Devonshire; by his wife, Grace ———, (who was buried in the church yard of the Holy Cross, Crediton, Jan. 25th, 1676.) Mr. Bartow at an early age was instructed by one Mr. Gregory, entered Christ College, Cambridge, January 31st, 1689, where he was admitted



CREDITON Church, DEVON.

a sizer under the tuition of Mr. Lovett, and graduated in 1692.<sup>a</sup> Soon after his ordination he was inducted to the vicarage of Pampsford, in Cambridgeshire, May the 28th, 1698, and removed to the Province of New York, by the leave of the Right Rev. Simon Patrick, the then Lord Bishop of Ely. The first known ancestor of John was General Bertaut, of Bretagne or Brittany, in France; a Huguenot, who fled after the Massacre of St. Bartholomew, A.D., 1572, into Holland and came thence to England, when the name was anglicised to Bartow. Of this family was John Bertaut Siegneur de Freaville and de Courcelles and Counseiller of the Parliament of Paris, who married Marie de la Garde, and had

<sup>a</sup> Matriculation Books of Christ College, Cambridge, MSS. of Rev. Evelyn Bartow.

<sup>b</sup> Pampsford is in the hundred of Childrod and Deanery of Camps, lies seven miles south of Cambridge.

issue Francis Bertaut Ecuyer Seigneur de Freaville et de Courcelles, whose daughter, Marie Frances married in 1696 Frank Toussant de Keakoeut; and Anne, who married Philippe de Delley Ecuyer, who was born in 1632.<sup>a</sup>

## THE BISHOP OF LONDON'S ADMISSION OF MR. BARTOW TO THE MINISTERIAL FUNCTION IN THE PROVINCE OF NEW YORK.

"Henry, by divine permission, Lord Bishop of London, to all whom these presents shall or may concern, health in our Lord God everlasting. Whereas by virtue of an act of Parliament, made in ye: first year of ye: Reign of our Sovereign Lord and Lady, *King William* and *Queen Mary*, entitled, an act for ye: abrogation of ye oaths of supremacy and allegiance, and appointing other oaths, it is provided and enacted, that every person, at his, or their respective admission to be incumbent in any ecclesiastical promotion or dignity in ye Church of England, shall subscribe and declare before his ordinary, in manner and form as in ye: said act as contained; now know ye, that on ye: day of ye: date hereof did personally appear before us, John Bartow, Clerk, to be admitted to ye: Ministerial Function in ye: Province of New York, in America, and subscribed as followeth, as by ye: said act is required, I, John Bartow, Clerk, do declare, that I will conforme to ye: Liturgy of the Church of England, as it is now by law established. In witness whereof, we have caused our seal manual to be affixed to these presents. Dated, the twenty-second day of the month of June, in ye year of our Lord, one thousand seven hundred and two, and in ye twenty-seaventh year of our translation."<sup>b</sup>

## MR. BARTOW'S LICENSE FROM THE BISHOP OF LONDON TO OFFICIATE IN THE PROVINCE OF NEW YORK.

"Henricus, permissione divina, Londonensis episcopus, dilecto nobis in Christo Johanni Bartow, clerico, salutem et gratiam, ad peragendum officium ministeriale intra provinciam de Novo Eboraco, in America, in precibus communibus aliisque ministeriis ecclesiasticis ad officium ministeriale pertinentibus juxta formam descriptam in libro publicarum precum, auctoritate parlamenti hujus inclyti regni angliae, in ea parte edita, et provisa, et canones, et constitutionis, in ea parte legitime stabilitas, et publicatas, et non aliter neque alio modo; tibi de cujusfidelitate morum integritate literarum scientia summa doctrina et diligentia plurimum confidemus, (præstituta penitus parte juramus totam de

<sup>a</sup> Another branch of this family was Frances Bertaut of Donnai, whose sons were John Bertaut, Bishop of Seez, 1606, born at Caen, 1559, died June 8th, 1611, and Francis Bertaut, gentleman of the King's bedchamber, whose daughter, Frances, born at Caen, 1614, was train bearer to Queen Anne of Austria, and died in 1689. She married, in 1639, Nicholas Langlois, Lord of Molteville, who died 1641. The arms of the Bertautes or Bertaudes, Du Hertray, Du Hamel, Du Pointpierre, de la Poissoniere, Du Freaville and Du Courcelles, were: d'or a bande de sable, chargée de trois berants d'argent accompagnée de six annelets de gueules, suis en orle.

<sup>b</sup> Surrogate's Office, N. Y. Rec. of Wills, vol. v, p. 79.

agnoscendo regiam supremam majestatem, juxta vim formam et effectum statuti parliamenti dicti regni anglie, in ea parte editi et provisi, quam de canonica obedientia nobis et successoribus nostris in omnibus recitis et honestis per te præstanda et exhibenda subscriptisque pertinentibus illis articulis mentionatis in tricesimo sexto capitulo libri constitutorum, sive canonum ecclesiasticorum, anno Domini, 1604, regia auctoritate editorum et propulgorum licentiam facultatum nostram concedimus et impertamur per precedentes, ad nostrum beneplacitum dum tanat duraturas, in cujus rei testimonium sigillam nostram, (quam in similibus plerumque utimur,) præsentibus apponi fecimus decimus dat vicesimo secundo die mensis Junii, anno Domini millesimo septingentesimo, secundo nostra translatione vicesimo septimo."<sup>a</sup>

The following documents relate to his induction :—

#### MANDATE FROM GOVERNOUR CORNBURY TO INDUCT MR. JOHN BARTOW INTO THE RECTORY OF WESTCHESTER.

"Edwardus illustrissim Vice comes Cornbury Provinciæ Novi Eboraciin America Strategus et Imperator et ejusdem ; Vice-Thalassiarcha, etc.

Universis et Singulis Rectorib Vicar : Capellânis : Curat : Clericis et Ministris quibuscumq in et per totam prædict provinciam ubilibet constitutis ac etiam Honorab Caleb Heathcote armig et Josia Hunt Eccsia Paroch'lis de Westchester, Eastchester, Yonkers et Man de Pellham, in dicta Provincia in pro hoc tempore Adilibus, Salutem.

Cum Dilectum in Christo Johnēm Bartow clericum ad Rectoriam sive Ecclam prædalem Prædict de Westchester, Eastchester, Yonkers et Man de Pelham in America jam vacantem præsentata Rectorem ejusdem Rectoriæ Sive Ecclæ prædalis in et de eadem insttutis vobis conjunctim et divisim comitto et firmiter injungendo mando, quatenus eundem Johñem Bartow clericum sive procurat suum legitim ejus nomine et pro se in realem actualem et corporalem possessionem ipsius Rectoriæ sive Ecclæ prædalis de Westchester, Eastchester, Yonkers et Man de Pellham prædict. Glebarum, Jureumq et pertinentiu suor universqr conferatis inductatis inducive faciatis : et defendatis inductum, et quid in premissis feceritis me aut alium Judicem in hac parte competentum quemcunq debite (cum ad id congrue fueritis requisiti!) certificetis seu sic certificet ille vestrum qui præsens hoc mandatum fuerit executus. Dat sub sigillo proгат dict Provinciæ decimo nono die Novembris anō salutis millesimo septingentesimo secundo."

CORNBUURY.

#### CERTIFICATE OF MR. BARTOW'S INDUCTION INTO THE PARISH CHURCH OF WESTCHESTER, &c.

"Virtute infra scripti mandati Præsentia Hugh Farquhar & Thomas Hunt, Joseph Haviland, Daniel Clark and Edward Collier nos Guilielmus Vesey Clericus & Josias Hunt adelis Parochial's De Westchester & Eastchester &c induximus Reverendu Johanem Bartow Clericū in Ecclesiam Parochialem De Eastchester & Westchester, Yonkers et Man de Pellham et in realem actualem et corporatam possessionem ipsius Rectorill sive Ecclesiæ Parochialis et prædict Glebarā juriū

<sup>a</sup> Surrogate's Office, N. Y., Lib. vl.

et pertinentiū suorā universonē ejusdum movilis et consue tri divibus solity anō Domini 1702 in ejus rei testimoniū presentibus subscripsimus Die 6to Decembris Anno supra dicto."

GULIELMUS VESEY, *neo Eboraci Rector.*

JOSIAH HUNT, *Churchwarden.*

HUGH FARQUHAR,  
JOSEPH HAVILAND,  
THOMAS HUNT,  
DANL. CLARK,  
EDWARD COLLIER.

"We whose names are underwritten doe certifie & declare That on Sunday the 6th day of December Anno Dom. 1702, John Bartow, Clerk, after his induction, did in the Parish Church of Westchester Read morning and evening service according to the exact form by act of Parliament prescribed & immediately after the reading of ye aforesaid service did declare his unfeigned assent and consent to all and every thing contained and prescribed in the book of common prayer as the Law in that case directs, before ye congregation on the said day assembled: and also did read ye book of ye 39 articles of the Church of England with the Ratification, & immediately after ye reading of ye aforesaid articles & Ratification before the Congregation; did declare at the abovesaid time and place, his unfeigned assent & consent to them and to all things therein contained. In testimony whereof we who were present have hereunto subscribed our names this 6th day of December. Anno Dom 1702:

|                  |                              |
|------------------|------------------------------|
| JOSEPH HAVILAND, | WILLIAM VESEY,               |
| H. COLLIER,      | THOMAS HUNT,                 |
| HUGH FARQUHAR,   | WILLIAM WILLETT,             |
| JOSIAH HUNT,     | JOHN WILLIAMS." <sup>a</sup> |

It appears that Mr. Bartow was at first appointed to the parish of Rye; for in a letter to him from the Secretary of the society, the latter says: "That the society were displeased for his settling at Westchester, being by my Lord of London sent for Rye."<sup>b</sup>

"I did, in October last," observes Colonel Heathcote, "give my Lord of London my reasons for the necessity of his being settled at Westchester, the people in that place having been the first in this county who desired a minister of the church, etc."<sup>c</sup> To this Mr. Bartow alludes in his first letter to the society:—

MR. BARTOW TO MR. WHITFIELD OR MR. SHUTE.

WESTCHESTER,  
IN NEW YORK PROVINCE,  
4th Nov. 1702.

*Sir*:—"My Lord Cornbury is pleased to fix my abode at Westchester, at the request of the vestry, and I suppose I shall enjoy the fifty pound per annum, which is

<sup>a</sup> Surrogate's office, N. Y. Rec. of Wills, vol. v. p. 79. 80.

<sup>b</sup> Hawks' New York MSS. from archives at Fulham.

<sup>c</sup> See Col. Heathcote's letter, April 10, 1704.



settled upon the ministry by act of assembly, though there has been great endeavors made this session to annul that act; but we are safe, as long as my Lord Cornbury is Governor. There is also fifty pounds settled upon the ministry at Rye, sixty pounds at Jamaica, sixty pounds at Hempstead, and forty pounds per annum at Richmond; all which places I hope the Reverend and Honorable Society will take some speedy care to supply with ministers of the Church of England. The hundred acres of glebe my Lord of London obtained of her Majesty for Westchester, is all a wilderness; there never was any house upon it, nor any part of it cultivated; the meanest laborer here has three shillings per deim wages, so that it will be a vast charge to make it habitable; what I can bestow upon it in my time I will, but I cannot expect the assistance of the Society, there being such pressing occasions for ministers. As I had not time to furnish myself with books in England, I hope the society will bestow some upon me; or I beg you would be so kind as to send me these following, and let the booksellers be paid out of my allowance; and you will ever oblige, *Worthy Sir,*

Your most humble and devoted servant,"

*John Bartow*

"P.S. I have been at great expenses, but I do not grudge it in the service of that God who I trust will bless me in my endeavours. We have a small house built here for public worship, of boards; but there is neither desk, pulpit, nor bell in it. The inhabitants indeed live all upon their own, but are generally poor; my best friend is the gentleman, my Lord of London recommended me unto, Col. Graham, who is a very worthy and ingenious Gentleman, and a great lover of the Church. I have neither Church Bible nor Common Prayer Book, which I hope the Society will send me, unto whom I desire you would give my humble duty.

"Mr. Keith, Mr. Ennis, Mr. Vesey, Mr. Mott, Mr. Talbot, and myself, met last week at York, to contrive the most proper methods of settling the church, at the request of the worthy Col. Nicholson, who gave £25 towards bearing our charges, an account of which you will have."<sup>a</sup>

The following letter from Mr. Bartow to the Secretary of the Venerable Society, was probably written in 1702, or the year after; although I have given the date as it is in the manuscript, from which it was copied:—

#### MR. BARTOW TO THE SECRETARY.

WESTCHESTER,

NEW YORK, 1st Dec., 1707.

*Sir*:—"After a voyage of eleven weeks, we arrived at New York, Sept. 29th, 1702, where we found a very mourful town—there dying near twenty persons.

<sup>a</sup> Hawks' New York MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. i. 10, 11.

daily for some months.<sup>a</sup> I lodged one night in the town, and next day went to Col. Graham's in Westchester, and lodged also one night; and the next day some of the town of Westchester came for me, and desired me to go along with them and give them a sermon the next Sabbath day<sup>b</sup> which I readily consented to do, it being in my way to Rye, to which I was designed. Col. Heathcote and some of the chief inhabitants being at church, the latter with his approbation, invited me to stay amongst them; in regard, it was the County Town, and reasonably ought to be supplied first, which I referred to the determination of my Lord Cornbury; my goods being on board still, (as I remember.) On Monday I returned to York, and Mr. Vesey engaged me to preach for him on an appointed fast, that week; after which I returned to Westchester, and preached either there or at York every Sunday, until my Lord Cornbury returned from Albany, when, with some of Westchester, who were very desirous I should stay with them, I went to Jamaica to wait on his Lordship, (who went there by reason of the sickness at New York,) to deliver him my credentials and receive his commands, which were to continue in Westchester, to which place I was soon after called by the vestry, and received instruments of induction from his Lordship; but the troubles that soon followed to separate Eastchester and New Rochelle from belonging to Westchester (of which I have given you an account) were not inconsiderable."

"Westchester was not wholly free from the mortal distemper at New York, and such as were sick I visited, and baptized one man, (aged forty years) a few hours before he died, who seemed thankful that he had at last such a blessed opportunity after so long neglect. The first half year being winter, I lodged at a public house, preaching once every Sunday, and upon occasion, visiting the sick. After Winter was over, I lived at Col. Graham's, six miles from the church, and all the summer preach't twice every Sunday—sometimes at Westchester and sometimes at Jamaica, on Long Island, about two miles distant from Mr. Graham's, at my own charge; nor have I had any board given me since I came, and once I met with great disturbance at Jamaica. Mr. Hobbart, their Presbyterian minister, having been for some time at Boston, returned to Jamaica the Saturday night as I came to it, and sent to me at my lodgings (being then in company with our Chief Justice, Mr. Mumpesson, and Mr. Carter, her Majesty's comptroller,) to know if I intended to preach on the morrow; I sent him answer I did intend it. The next morning the bell rung as usual, but before the last time ringing, Mr. Hobbart was got into the church, and had began his service, of which notice was given me, whereupon I went into the church, and walked straightway to the pew, expecting Mr. Hobbart would desist, being, he knew, I had orders from the Governor to officiate there—but he persisted, and I forbore to make any interruption. In the afternoon I prevented him, beginning the service of the Church of England before he came; who was so surprised, when after he came to the church door and saw me performing divine service, that he suddenly started back, and went aside to an orchard hard by, and sent in some to give the word that Mr. Hobbart would preach under a tree. Then I perceived a whispering through the church, and an uneasiness of many people—

<sup>a</sup> This is supposed to have been the yellow fever, although it was not so called in 1702. It was brought from St. Thomas's, and proved very fatal in New York.

<sup>b</sup> This was on the 3rd of Oct. 1702.

some going out, some seemed amazed, not yet determined to go or stay; in the meantime, some that were gone out returned again for their seats, and then we had a shameful disturbance, hawling and tugging of seats, shoving one the other off, carrying them out and returning again for more; so that I was fain to leave off till the disturbance was over, and a separation made, by which time I had lost about half of the congregation, the rest remaining devout and attentive the whole time of service; after which we lock't the church door, and committed the key into the hands of the sheriff. We were no sooner got into an adjoining house, but some persons came to demand the key of their meeting house, which being denied, they went and broke the glass window, and put a boy in to open the door, and so put in their seats and took away the pew cushion, saying they would keep that, however, for their own minister; the scolding and wrangling that ensued are by me ineffable. The next time I saw my Lord Cornbury, he thanked me, and said he would do the church and me justice: accordingly, he summoned Mr. Hobbart and the head of the faction before him, and forbade Mr. Hobbart evermore to preach in that church: for in regard, it was built by a publick tax, it did appertain to the established church, (which it has quietly remained ever since, and is now in possession of our Rev. Brother, Mr. Urquhart). My Lord Cornbury threatened them all with the penalty of the statute, for disturbing divine service; but upon their submission and promise of future quietness and peace, he pardoned the offence. Not long after this, my Lord requested me to go and preach at Eastchester; accordingly, I went, (though some there had given out threatening words should I dare to come), but though I was there very early, and the people had notice of my coming, their Presbyterian minister, Mr. Morgan, had begun service in the meeting-house, to which I went straight-way and continued the whole time of service without interruption, and in the afternoon I was permitted to perform the Church of England service; Mr. Morgan being present, and neither he nor the people seemed to be dissatisfied, and after some time of preaching there afterwards, they desired me to come oftener: and I concluded to minister there once a month, which now I have done for about three years, and Mr. Morgan is retired into New England. The winter drawing on, and finding it too hard for me to ride from Mr. Graham's to attend on my ministry on all occasions, I returned to Westchester; and there being no very suitable place for me to board at, I hired a house for a half a year, where I lived alone, and had my victuals dressed at a neighboring house; and at the end of half a year, being not permitted to renew my lease, I bought a house of my own, and five acres of land, at £100, where (I bless God) I have inhabited ever since in the conscientious discharge of my duty, hardly ever missing to officiate on the Lord's Day in my parish, and there have discharged that duty either in the Jerseys, at Rye, or at some other place, excepting thrice by reason of sickness, and twice for coldness and foulness of the weather, wanting a congregation: always preaching twice a day in the summer, and once in the winter. I have been always ready to visit the sick when sent for, and before frequently, if I know of it, not refusing in the time of very mortal diseases, which we have frequently had since I came here, few houses escaping either sickness or death, being by night and by day, frequently riding more than ten miles a day, I may say twenty. I have administered the sacrament of Baptism to a great number of people, young and old, and the sacrament of the Lord's Supper publickly, three times a year



at the three usual feasts, Christmas, Easter, and Whitsunday; to partake of which I must confess, I have a few generally about twelve communicants, but have administered it to many on their sick and dying beds, who never received it before. I take care to catechise the children in the church; and to make amends for an omission of that duty at any time, I allow a schoolmaster twenty shillings per annum to encourage him to instruct the children in the Church catechism. I can't repeat to you the many janglings and contentions I have had with Quakers and Dissenters; nay, I may say with Atheists and Deists, but beg you will believe the whole course of our ministry has been very onerous and difficult; and if I have failed in any part of my duty, (as it seems you are informed,) let me know it in your next, that I may amend. Perhaps there is more my duty than I know of, especially if a minister may not be allowed judgment of discretion in things that do not respect canonical obedience, but be obliged to please singular fancies and humors repugnant to general reason and usage.

I must also tell you that our church is wainscotted, and in a short time will be ceiled over head, and more decently seated, and the communion table enclosed with rails and bannisters; and am very sorry for that great loss we have had at sea of church ornament, not knowing how it may be repaired but by the same gracious donors.

Since my last I have received some old arrears, and hope to have my salary here better paid: when we are well settled, we may inform the remis that they must pay their dues. I have obtained of the town of Westchester (on a time when it lay in my way to do them service with the Governor) a grant of twenty acres of glebe, and three acres of meadow within half a mile of the church; which, in time, will be a convenient residence for a minister, and also a small share in some undivided land, which will be to the quantity of about thirty acres more, but about four miles distant. I shall only add humble thanks and duty to the society, and that I remain, &c., &c.

JOHN BARTOW.<sup>a</sup>

Colonel James Graham, to whom Mr. Bartow alludes in the above letter, was a native of Scotland, and a near relation of James Graham, Marquis of Montrose.<sup>b</sup> In 1691 he was returned as one of the four members of the Provincial Assembly for the City and County of New York, and in 1699 was chosen speaker of that body. He was the author of the law for the maintenance of the clergy, and settlement of the Church in 1693. He was also Recorder of the city of New York from 1693 to 1700, and subsequently received the appointment of Attorney General of the Province. He was elected Senior Warden of the parish in 1703,

<sup>a</sup> Hawk's New York MSS. from archives at Fulham vol. 1, 171 2, 175.

<sup>b</sup> "The ancient and powerful family of Graham," says Sir Walter Scott, in the *Lady of the Lake*, "held extensive possessions in the counties of Dumbarton and Stirling. Few families can boast of more historical renown, having claim to three of the most remarkable characters in the Scottish annals; Sir John Graham, the faithful and undaunted partaker of the labours and patriotic warfare of Wallace, fell in the unfortunate field of Falkirk, in 1298. The celebrated Marquess of Montrose, in whom De Ritz saw realized his abstract ideas of the heroes of antiquity, was the second of these worthies; and notwithstanding the severity of his temper, and the vigour with which he executed the oppressive mandates of the Puries, whom he served, I do not hesitate to name, as the third, John Graham, of Claverhouse, Viscount of Dundee, whose heroic death, in the arms of victory, may be allowed to cancel the memory of his cruelty to the non-conformists, during the reigns of Charles II. and James II."



and for a time was one of its principal supporters. His residence stood on the spot occupied by the farm house of the late William H. Leggett, Esq., of West Farms. He died in 1767, and left several children. Augustine was Surveyor General of the Province, and Isabella married the Hon. Lewis Morris, of Morrisania.<sup>a</sup>

In the vestry book of this parish occurs the following election for church officers, about three months after Mr. Bartow's arrival:—

“Att a meeting held in the Borrough town of Westchester, by the parishioners of said parish, pursuant to an Act of General Assembly, entitled an act for the settling a Ministry and raising a maintainance for them, and Mr. John Bartow being settled minister of said parish, and his maintainance ought to be taken care for, do voluntarily make choice of the Vestry and Church-wardens this 12th day of January, in the first year of the Queens Majesties Raigne 1702-3, as followeth:—

*Present.*

|                          |                        |
|--------------------------|------------------------|
| MR. JUSTICE PELL,        | MR. JUSTICE JOHN HUNT, |
| MR. JUSTICE WILLETT,     | MR. JUSTICE GRAHAM,    |
| MR. JUSTICE JOSIAH HUNT, | MR. JUSTICE BAYLEY.    |

*Church-wardens.*

|                         |                      |
|-------------------------|----------------------|
| LIEUTENANT COL. GRAHAM, | JUSTICE JOSIAH HUNT. |
|-------------------------|----------------------|

*Vestrymen*

|                                   |   |
|-----------------------------------|---|
| THOMAS BAXTER, SEN.,              | JOSEPH HAVILAND,                              |
| JOSEPH DEAKE,                     | THOMAS PELL,                                  |
| JOHN ARCHER,                      | MILES OAKLEY,                                 |
| JOHN BUCKBEE,                     | DANIEL CLARK,                                 |
| THOMAS HUNT, SEN., of West Farms, | PETER LE ROY,                                 |
| EDWARD COLLIER, <i>Clerk</i>      | ERASMUS ALLEN, <i>Messenger.</i> <sup>b</sup> |

At a meeting of the vestry, “held this 3rd day of June, 1703, by reason of the County Courte, this day its agreed upon by ye Justices and Vestry that they will meet at 12 o'clock on the 5th day of this instant month, in order to regulate matters concerning the parish and the main tenance of the minister.”<sup>c</sup>

“Att a meeting held by the Justices & Vestrymen of Westchester,

<sup>a</sup> Surrogates Office, New York, Lib. xxvi 13.

<sup>b</sup> Westchester Vestry Book.

<sup>c</sup> Westchester Vestry Book.

Eastchester, Yonckers & the Manor of Pelham, being in one parish or division this 5th of June, 1703:—

*Present*

|                      |                     |
|----------------------|---------------------|
| MR. JUSTICE PELL,    | MR. JUSTICE DRAKE,  |
| MR. JUSTICE PINKNEY, | MR. JUSTICE BAYLEY. |
| MR. JUSTICE HUNT.    |                     |

*Vestry.*

|                      |                      |
|----------------------|----------------------|
| MR. JOSEPH DRAKE,    | MR. JOSEPH HAVILAND, |
| MR. MILES OAKLEY,    | MR. JOHN ARCHER,     |
| MR. DANIEL CLARK,    | MR. JOHN BUCKBEE,    |
| MR. THOMAS HUNT, JR. |                      |

“ It is agreed upon by the said Justices & Vestrymen, that there shall be raised fifty-five pounds for the Ministers maintenance & poor of the parish. The Quotas for each place is as followeth:—

|              |          |
|--------------|----------|
| Westchester, | £27 18 0 |
| Morris Anna, | 3 7 0    |
| Eastchester, | 7 13 0   |
| Pelham,      | 1 13 0   |
| Rochelle,    | 7 3 0    |
| Yonckers,    | 7 6 0    |
|              | <hr/>    |
|              | £55 0 0  |

To be paid unto the Church-wardens att or before the 15th of December next ensuing.

EDWARD COLLIER, *Clerk.*<sup>a</sup>

The next letter from Br. Bartow, to the Secretary, bears date:—

WESTCHESTER,  
in the Province of New York in America,  
May 25th, 1703.

SIR:—“ My Lord Cornbury is very kind in countenancing the settlement of the Church of England, and to preserve that maintenance which has been provided by act of Assembly for orthodox ministers, altho’ there have been great endeavours to annul that act since they saw the Church pouring in upon them, which endeavours have been chiefly showed, in my parish of Westchester, as follows: The act of Assembly doth unite Westchester, Eastchester, Yonckers, and the Manor of Pelham, into one parish, who are obliged to contribute the sum of £50 per annum for the maintenance of an orthodox minister.

Now Eastchester, having an independent minister, endeavours at my coming, to make themselves a distinct parish, and used many means to prevent and disturb my settlement at Westchester; but all their attempts were frustrated by my Lord Cornbury; and now they begin to come into better temper, many of them having left their minister are joyned with us; nay, the minister himself talks of coming to England for Episcopal orders.

<sup>a</sup> Ibid.

Another obstruction has been in the manor of Pelham, the inhabitants of which are French Protestants, who have Mr. Bondett for their minister; a gent in Episcopal orders, (but not using the liturgy of the Church of England) and therefore they have the greater plea to sue for an exemption; but the *Quota*, Westchester, intends to lay annually upon them (viz., £5) is so inconsiderable, and the people many and wealthy, that my Lord Cornbury would not hear of any alteration; and my Lord has prevailed with Mr. Bondett to cease from any further endeavours.

That land which my Lord of London obtained of her Majestie for the church at Westchester, is now claimed by an heir; the case in short is thus:—

John Richardson, of the parish of Westchester, married his daughter Mary to Joseph Hadley; the said John Richardson some time after in his sickness whereof he died, makes a will and bequeaths to his said daughter Mary, one hundred acres of land. The said daughter dyes also soon after her father, but left issue by the said Joseph Hadley, her husband. After her death, she dying without a will, Joseph Hadley, the husband of the deceased, sells this land to Thomas Williams; and the said Thomas Williams dyes in the possession of the said land, intestate, and without heirs, and by that means the land by the judge and the jury, was determined to be escheated to the crown. But now George Hadley, the son and heir of the said Jos. Hadley, which he begot of the said Mary, the daughter of John Richardson, puts in his claim for this land as his mother's heir; alledging that his father could not dispose of his mother's inheritance, (altho' it was not settled upon her by deed of jointure, nor yet bequeathed to her and her heirs,) and the heir who was also his father's exect<sup>r</sup>. & adm<sup>r</sup>., has (as I am informed) received part of the said purchase money of the said Williams. I humbly beg you would lay this matter before the Society, that they may assist us with timely advice y<sup>t</sup> ye Church may not loose any of her rights. I have been at great charges since I left England, but doubt not God will provide things necessary for my subsistence; my earnest desire is to answer the glorious ends of my mission, and my greatest circumspection is to behave myself so as becometh one employed by so many great and good men, that I may never give a reason to reflect; I have been upon duty ever since I came out of England, but as for the proportion and commencement of my salary, I thankfully submit it to the pleasure of the Society, for whose health and prosperity I shall ever pray, who am worthy sir.<sup>a</sup>

Your most humble and obliged servant, JOHN BARTOW."

The subjoined letter, from Colonel Heathcote to the Secretary, will serve to throw additional light upon the early history of this parish:—

#### COLONEL HEATHCOTE TO THE SECRETARY.

MANOR OF SCARSDALE, NEW YORK, 10TH APRIL, 1704.

Sir:—"Mr. Bartow showed me the copy of a letter (the original, as he told me, being sent to my Lord Cornbury) wherein you acquaint him that the Society

<sup>a</sup> Hawks' New York MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. i. 18, 19, 20. In 1704 Mr. Bartow received from the Society £50 per annum, and a benevolence of £30—See first report of Venerable Propagation Society, issued in 1704.

were displeased for his settling at Westchester, being by my Lord of London, sent for Rye, and that he should get a line or two either from my Lord Cornbury, or, at least, from me, to satisfy him in that matter. I, did in October last, give my Lord of London my reasons for the necessity of his being settled at Westchester, the people in that place having been the first in this county who desired a minister of the Church; and, being disappointed, might have been of ill consequence; for no sooner was Mr. Bartow arrived, but ye vestry immediately came to me and gave me no rest until I consented to use my interest with my Lord Cornbury to have him inducted there; and the inhabitants of Rye, supposing Westchester was first to be supply'd, were easy in that matter; there being on one hand, no fear of disobliging the people of Rye, and on the other, great danger of hurting the interest of the Church at Westchester, I desired my Lord Cornbury to induct him there; and what I did therein, being intended for the best, I beg that the Society would not take amiss. Sir, being favor'd with this opportunity, I cannot omitt giving you the state of this county in relation to the Church, and shall begin the history thereof from the time I first came amongst them, which was about twelve years ago, when I found it the most rude and heathenish country I ever saw in my whole life, which called themselves Christians—there being not so much as the least marks or footsteps of religion of any sort. Sundays being the only time sett apart by them for all manner, of vain sports and lewd diversions, and they were grown to such a degree of rudeness, that it was intolerable; and, having then the command of the militia, I sent an order to all the captains, requiring them to call their men under arms, and to acquaint them that in case they would not, in every town, agree amongst themselves to appoint readers and pass the Sabbath in the best manner they could, till such times as they could be better provided: that they should every Sunday call their companies under arms, and spend the day in exercise, whereupon it was unanimously agreed on thro' the county, to make choice of readers; which they accordingly did, and continued in those methods some time. After which the people of Westchester, Eastchester, and a place called Lower Yonkers, agreed with one Warren Mather, and the people of Rye, with one Mr. Woodbridge, both of New England, there being at that time scarce six in the whole county who so much as inclined to ye Church. After Mr. Mather had been with them for some time, Westchester Parish made choice of me for one of their church-wardens, in hopes of using my interest with Colonel Fletcher to have Mather inducted to ye living. I told them it was altogether impossible for me to comply with their desire, it being wholly repugnant to the laws of England to compell the subject to pay for the maintenance of any minister who was not of the national Church, and that it lay not in any governor's power to help them; but since they were so zealous for having religion and good order settled amongst them, I would propose a medium in that matter; which was, that there being at Boston a French Protestant minister, one Mr. Bondett, a very good man, who was in orders by my Lord of London, and could preach both in English and French; and the people of New Rochelle being destitute of a minister, we would call Mr. Bondett to the living, and the parish being large enough to maintain two, we would likewise continue Mr. Mather, and support him by subscriptions. The vestry seemed to be extremely well pleased with this proposal, and desired me to send for Mr. Bondett, which



I immediately did, hoping by that means to bring them over to the Church; but Mather, apprehending what I aimed at, persuaded the vestry to alter their resolutions, and when he came, they refused to call him; so, that projection failing, and finding that it was impossible to make any progress towards settling the Church, so long as Mather continued amongst us, I made it my business, in the next place, to devise ways to get him out of the county, which I was not long in contriving, which being effected, and having gained some few proselytes in every town, and those who were of the best esteem amongst them, and being assisted by Mr. Vesey and Mr. Bondett, who very often preached in several parts of the country, baptizing their children. By these easy methods, the people were soon wrought into a good opinion of the Church, and indeed, much beyond my expectation; and the truth is, nothing is so agreeable to my natural temper, nor do I like any way in making converts so well, as by soft and easy means, in convincing men's minds, and satisfying them in all their foolish notions against the best of churches; for as those are not only most agreeable to religion, so they likewise do the work most effectually; for when anything of that nature is carried on with heat, loose and irreligious men immediately own the faith, and turn violent persecutors; being overjoyed of any opportunity to gratify their natural temper, and by the rigour of their proceedings, as well as their vicious lives, not only bring a scandal upon the Church, but prevent its growth; for all men who have any sense of virtue or honor, and might be a means of their conversion to bring over many more, abhor to be directed by such guides; and, indeed to do a work of this nature effectually, it ought to be managed with a more than ordinary care, and those on whom the conversion is to be wrought, in their infancy must be dealt with as much tenderness as children; for before they are well fixed and rooted, the denying them a rattle or some indifferent trifle, very often makes them start, but much more so when anything very material and reasonable in itself is withheld them. A mischief of this nature had like to have attended in this county for Westchester parish, which contains about sixteen miles in length, wherein there are three towns, in each of which there is a small church (viz.) Westchester, Eastchester and New Rochelle, besides a place called Lower Yonkers; and, it being impossible that my one minister could take due care of all those places, and then consequently very hard that any people should pay to a minister, it was morally impossible for them to have any benefit from; and Rye Parish being under the like misfortune, I brought the towns in both parishes, except Westchester, to this result: that they should petition the Governor's Council and Assembly, that instead of two ministers of the Church, there should be three appointed for the county, and that they should live at the most convenient places for the service of the whole county, dividing the bread of life so equally, that every town might have their fair and equal proportion; and when, with a great deal of pains, I had brought this matter to pass, and even whilst I was hugging myself with a satisfaction of having finished my task in this county, to my wonderful surprise, I met with a violent opposition from six or eight warm men of Westchester; this storm, by degrees, run to that height that we were obliged to decline the matter; however, with the blessing of God, nothing shall discourage me, for I neither have nor shall be wanting in my best endeavors to preserve this people in a temper to receive the Church among them; and, was I worthy to give my advice in these

matters, it should be that every minister sent over by the Society should be required to send a list of all the inhabitants of their parish, with the towns and places of their abodes, dividing the list of each town and place into three distinct parts; in the first, who are the communicants; in the second, those who come to hear them, but do not communicate; and in the third, which are Quakers and others who are Dissenters, and that they should be strictly directed constantly to visit ye Quakers and those who dissent from the Church, and use their best endeavors to persuade those who are reconciled to the Church and regular in their lives, and do not communicate to receive the sacrament, and to give the Society an exact account every six months, at least, what progress they make therein; and further, they should be ordered not to fail preaching in every town within their respective parishes, according to the proportion of the inhabitants; by this means the Society will have a true account of the growth of the Church, and what service is done by those they send over, and the bread of life will be equally dealt among the people; and in case the ministers find that their duty is too hard, that they jointly solicit the government that this country might be divided into three parishes, for one of which there cannot be a better man than Mr. Bondett, whom I mentioned in the former part of my letter, whose character I have already very often and fully given to my Lord of London, and will be altogether needless to insert here. We have in this county six small towns, viz. Westchester, Eastchester, New Rochelle, Mamoroneck, Rye and Bedford—besides a place called Lower Yonkers, containing about twenty families; and another, the Manor of Philipsburgh, about forty families. Now, were those three ministers appointed for the county, viz. one at Westchester, which is the westernmost part of the county; another at Rye, which is the easternmost; and another at New Rochelle, which is pretty near the centre; those dividing their duty fairly and equally, the whole county might be taken care of, and the ministers not over-burthened. Upon my word, sir, it gives me a great deal of concern, when I consider what pains and charge the Society have been and are at to propagate the Gospel in these parts of the world, and that a gent (I mean Mr. Bartow, who is a very good man,) should be sent over on that errand to this county, which consists of about four hundred families, of which not above forty or fifty have any benefit of him; and should the minister of Rye serve us in like manner, not above one-third of the county would be better for all the cost and labor bestowed upon us; and notwithstanding the arguments which are used by the men of heat—that the congregation ought to follow the minister, and not he the people—it will be time enough to preach up that doctrine twelve or fifteen years hence, when perhaps the county wou'd only be much more willing, but more able to maintain six ministers that they can three now; besides those who live some three or four, others seven to fourteen miles from Westchester and Rye, tho' once in a great while they might come, I mean the masters and mistresses of families, yet it will be morally impossible for them to move their children so far, of whom the greatest hopes are, and with whom, by catechising and other ways, the most pains ought to be taken. I had once formed a projection for fixing schools in this county for the benefit of all the youths therein, in order to their being trained up, not only in learning, but in their tender years to ingraft them in the Church; but the storm which was lately raised upon me concerning Church affairs, made me lay the thought of it aside for a while. How-

ever, if God is pleased to spare my life a little longer, I will, with His assistance, set it on foot, and hope it will be blessed with its desired effect. I am told it is with a great deal of difficulty that any gentlemen are prevailed upon from any of the colleges to come over to these parts, and it is no wonder to me that it is so; for those who are ingenious men and regular in their lives, and qualified for doing any service here, cannot want preferment at home—that for a remedy therein, if it could be so ordered that such of the New England ministers as should be willing to conform, could be ordained here; it would not be by much so great a charge, and one of them would do as much or more service in bringing home the people to the Church, as the best divine which could be sent from home. If I am not misinformed, the Society allows those gentlemen which come over £60 sterling per annum, and her Majesty is pleased to give every one of them £20 to buy necessaries for their voyage. Now, was there only £20 laid out in proper goods for these parts, it would make £50 this country money, and pay for the extraordinary charge of insurance to prevent any risque in permitting it that way, which, with the allowance of the parishes here, would amount to £100 per annum, and would be a handsome benefice; enough for any who has had their education in Boston College, by which means these ministers might be supported, with the charge of one as it is now; nor do I believe there can be a more effectual way to do the work than by that method.

“Since writing the above, and whilst it was waiting for a passage, Mr. Pritchard is arrived, whom my Lord of London has directed to officiate in Rye parish; he is a promising young gent, and I question not but will, with God’s assistance, do great service to the Church: he shall not want anything I can do for him to make his pilgrimage easy, nor any advice which I can give him to answer the end of his coming; and be pleased to present my most humble duty to the Society, and most hearty thanks for their favors, and may assure them that so long as it shall please God to spare my life, I won’t cease my best endeavours for the service of the Church, and should with the greatest satisfaction imaginable, receive any commands from them on that account. I fear I have been already too troublesome, so shall not enlarge further at present, but remain, Sir,

Your most obedient humble servant,

CALEB HEATHCOTE.”<sup>a</sup>

The following extracts from the town records relate to the twenty acres of land given by Westchester division for a glebe:—

“At a meeting held by the trustees, and the freeholders and commonality of the town of Westchester, the 3rd of August, 1703, &c.”

*Present,*

JOSIAH HUNT, SENR.,  
JOHN FERRIS,  
JOHN HUNT,  
THOMAS BAXTER, SENR.,  
JOSEPH HUNT, JUNR.,  
JOSEPH HAVILAND,

JOHN FERRIS, JUNR.,  
MILES OAKLEY,  
DANIEL TURNER,  
THOS. HADEN,  
JOHN OAKLEY,  
ROBT. HEUSTIS, JUNR.

<sup>a</sup> Hawk’s New York MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. i, 33 to 39.



"Whereas motion being made to the trustees, that it would be very necessary that some land near the town should be laid out for parsonage lands; and be for the use and behoof of such minister as from time to time should be settled amongst us: it is therefore voted and agreed upon, by the major part of the trustees aforesaid, that there shall be laid out for the use aforesaid, sixteen acres of land, that is to say, four acres where Edward Collier's old lott was, and that twelve acre division which was laid out to Samuel Palmer and exchanged with the town by Israel Honeywell, and that John Hunt, Miles Oakley and Joseph Hunt, Junr., shall lay it out."<sup>a</sup>

At a subsequent meeting of the trustees, etc., held the third day of November, 1703, the minutes are as follows:—

"Whereas at a meeting of the trustees, held the 3rd of August last past, it was voted, that four acres of Edward Collier's old lott should be laid out in part of the parsonage lands; and the trustees at this meeting, having considered the inconveniency at distance from the other part of the land intended for y<sup>t</sup> purpose: it is therefore voted and agreed upon by the major part of the trustees aforesaid, that the eight acre division of land in the lott fronting to the sheep pasture, formerly adjoining to that lott of twelve acres which was Sam P——, and did belong to Miles Oakley's orphans, and the aforesaid twenty acres of land shall be counted, deemed, and taken for Parsonage lands for ever; any vote, agreement, or record of the trustees to the contrary in any wise notwithstanding, &c."<sup>b</sup>

At a meeting held by the Trustees of the Freehold and Commonality of the Town of Westchester, the 3rd of May, Annoq Dom. 1704.

*Present:*

JOHN FERRIS, senr.,  
THOMAS BAXTER, senr.,  
ROBT. HUESTIS, Junr.,

JOHN BAYLY,  
JOHN OAKLEY,  
THOMAS HADEN,

MILES OAKLEY.

"It is voted and agreed upon by the trustees aforesaid, that for a further encouragement given to Mr. John Bartow, Rector of Westchester, and his successors, besides the 20 acres of land within the town, already laid out for a Parsonage land forever, yet, nevertheless, for the better establishing of the Church of England, and benefit of the said Mr. John Bartow and his successors, the trustees aforesaid do give and grant three acres of salt meadow, be it more or less, lying situate in the town aforesaid, and is butted and bounded as followeth:—that is to say, on the west side of the great creek between Robert Huestis' meadow and Edward Harden's meadow. Together with a twenty-five pound privilege of commonage on the east side of Brunks's River, of all the land which hereafter shall be laid out, which said land has been for many years past known by the name of the Long Reach.

Done in behalf of the rest of the trustees, and signed by us."

THOMAS BAXTER,  
JOHN BAYLY,  
MILES OAKLEY.<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Town Rec. of Westchester, Liber vi. 17.

<sup>b</sup> Ibid. Liber. vi. 18.

<sup>c</sup> Westchester Town Rec. Lib. vi. p. 44.



The following extract is taken from a "summary account of the state of the Church, in the Province, as it was laid before the clergy, Oct. 5th, 1704, at New York, &c.

WESTCHESTER, MR. BARTOW, RECTOR.

"Here is a church built, but not finished, being neither glazed nor ceiled. The parish of Westchester is divided into four several districts, viz., *Westchester*, *Eastchester*, *Yonkers*, and the *Manor of Pelham*.

There is £50 settled on the ministers by act of Assembly.

There is twenty acres of land given by Westchester division for a glebe.

There is one Independent Congregation at Eastchester, whose minister designs to leave there, whose congregation upon departure, are resolved to join with the Church."<sup>a</sup>

Mr. Bartow, writing to the Secretary upon the 24th of May, 1704, says:—

"The affairs of the Church in this province (thank God) are very prosperous, which are greatly owing to the influence of my Lord Cornbury. I have received yours, together with the opinion upon the case of the land escheated to the Crown, but can give no answer till I have directions from the Governor. Mr. Lockier is dead and much lamented. The town of Hempstead, upon Long Island, having long expected a missionary from the society, I hope they will soon be answered. I beg you would give my most bounden duty and thanks to that Revd. and Honorable body, and excuse my abrupt subscription of myself, Sir, Your most humble and obliged servant,

JOHN BARTOW.<sup>b</sup>

On the 4th of August, 1705, another act of General Assembly was passed, entitled:—

"An act for the better explaining and more effectual putting in execution. an act of General Assembly; entitled, an act for settling a ministry and raising a maintenance for them, in the city of New York, Counties of Richmond, Westchester and Queens' County."

This act, which was ratified by Queen Anne, on the 11th of April, 1706,<sup>c</sup> fully confirmed Mr. Bartow in all the rights appertaining to his own benefice.

The following extract, from a letter of Mr. Bartow to the Secretary, shows what kind of difficulties the former had to contend with, in the discharge of his duties:—

<sup>a</sup> Hawks' New York, MSS., from archives at Fulham.

<sup>b</sup> Hawks' MSS., from archives at Fulham, vol. i. 29. On the 19th of April, 1704, the trustees of Westchester voted Mr. John Bartow, as a free gift of the town, "a certain piece of land at the rear of his house lot, from the corner of his lot next to John Williams, his lot on the south-west, and straight upon a line until it comes to the west corner."—Lib. VI. TOWN. Rec. p. 22.

<sup>c</sup> Laws of N. Y., Ed. by Hugh Gaines, vol. i. 64.

WESTCHESTER,  
in *New York, in America*,  
Aug. 14, 1706.

SIR:—"My great business is to plant the Church of England amongst prejudiced poor and irreligious people, who are more apt to receive than to give, who think it a hardship to pay their dues; and we dare not use the law for fear of bringing an odium on the Church, and on all occasions expect to be civilly treated by the minister. My task is greater than I can bear; I will hold out as long as I can with submission to the divine will, who feedeth the fowls of the air: trusting He will still feed me, by your means, when you come to be sensible of our wants. Worthy Sir, Your most devoted and obliged servant,

JOHN BARTOW."<sup>a</sup>

The following items are taken from the vestry minutes:—

"At a meeting of the justices of the vestry, the 6th of March, 1704-5, John Williams, late constable for the year 1703, appeared with a receipt from Mr. John Bartow, bearing the date 5th of March, 1704, for the sum of £26.10, which is the full quota for the minister's rate in Westchester."

At a meeting of the justices, church-wardens, and vestry of the parish of Westchester, Eastchester, Yonkers, and the Manor of Pelham, this 12th of December, 1706, in obedience to his Excellency, the Governor's order, &c:—

"It is voted and agreed upon by the justices and vestry aforesaid, that the parish church in Westchester shall be finished—that is to say, to seal the sides up to the wall plates, and lay a board floor, and make two new door cases, with doors and window shuts for the windows in said church, the upper windows excepted: and whereas, Jeremiah Fowler and Isaac Underhill, presenting themselves to do said work; the justices and vestry have agreed with them to do said work for £17, in good current money of New York, provided that as soon as they have laid the under floor and made the doors, and door cases and window shuts, they shall be paid to the value of said work, and the remainder of said £17, at the finishing thereof: the justices and vestry to find boards, and nails and hinges.

EDWARD COLLIER, *Clerk*."

"At a subsequent meeting held by ye justices, church-wardens and vestry, &c., this 23d day of December, 1707, they found it necessary to raise ye sumes, which followeth, viz. :—

|                                       |   |   |   |           |
|---------------------------------------|---|---|---|-----------|
| To ye minister's rate and collecting, | - | - | - | £ 52 10 0 |
| To ye poor, etc.                      | - | - | - | 29 8 0    |
| To boards for Eastchester church,     | - | - | - | 5 0 0     |
| To ye clerk of ye vestry,             | - | - | - | 1 0 0     |

<sup>a</sup> Hawks' New York MSS., from Archives at Fulham, vol. I. 126.

|  |        |
|--|--------|
| To ye bell ringer, - - - - -                       | 1 0 0  |
| To ye collecting of, - - - - -                     | 11 0 0 |
| To ye belfry roof of Westchester church, - -       | 0 9 0  |
| To ye sacrament and collection, <sup>a</sup> - - - | 3 8 0  |

At this period of Mr. Bartow's labors, the Society appear to have withdrawn their annual salary of £50; whereupon, we find the clergy of the Province addressing the Secretary in his behalf:—

#### DIVERS MINISTERS OF NEW YORK TO THE SECRETARY.

SIR:—"We are informed that the Honorable Society have withdrawn their allowance from our Reverend brother, Mr. Bartow, at which we are heartily concerned, and think ourselves obliged to recommend him to your favor, as a person truly deserving the continuance of your bounty. He has, in short, behaved himself soberly and prudently to the satisfaction of all his people, diligent for the good of his Church, and pious and exemplary in his life and conversation: we hope his piety and goodness will merit your allowance, especially when you have considered the necessity; it being impossible to subsist in the discharge of his office, without an established salary from the Corporation. We shall not offer any further trouble at present, only pray you to look upon our worthy brother to be a sincere good man, and therein you shall oblige, Sir, yours, &c.,

EVAN EVANS, WILLIAM VESSEY,  
WM. URQUHART, ELIAS NEAU,  
JOHN THOMAS, GEORGE MURISON."

New York, 17 April, 1707.

The next annual report of Mr. Bartow to the Society, shows that he was still laboring with great diligence and success:—

#### MR. BARTOW TO THE SECRETARY.

[Extract.]

FROM WESTCHESTER,  
*in New York, in America,*  
10th June, 1709.

SIR:—"I have paid my visits in the Jerseys, and preached there three Sundays: 1st, at Topenamus; 2nd, at Shrewsbury; 3rd, at Amboy; and Mr. Sharp preached for me once at Westchester. Mr. Evans was at York one Sunday, in my absence, and designed to go up and preach for me, at Westchester; but the arrival of the *Kinsale* from cruising, obliged him to preach on board, so that my parish was two Sundays without any ecclesiastical ministration, which they never were, so near together, since I came. In my way home, I had the honour to be in the company of Col. Nicholson, and to receive of him a letter from his Grace the Archbishop of Canterbury; and the same had all the other missionaries, of which I shall always retain a grateful sense, as well for the subject matter therein contained as for his Grace's great condescension in casting so favorable an eye upon us. I have likewise to tell you that I have this day received yours, dated

<sup>a</sup> Westchester Vestry Book.

1st Feb., 1708-9, with some enclosed rules of the Society, for which I return you thanks.

I find there might be a great many congregations made in the Jerseys, if there were Episcopal ministers—but find no inclination to contribute towards their maintenance; however, I hope you will not leave them destitute of your assistance. I know when those who are of the Church can be most prevalent in their assemblies, (or if I may so say, Parliament,) they will make some legal provision for ministers: but at present the number of the Quakers, Anabaptists, Liberals, &c., is so great that it cannot be obtained; but good missionaries will increase the number of the one, and lessen the other.

Friday next we have an appointed fast, to supplicate God's blessing on the expedition to Canada, which with preparation for Sunday following, when I am to administer the sacrament, will not suffer me to add; but that I shall always pray for the success and prosperity of the Society, and remain,

Sir, your most devoted and obliged servant, JOHN BARTOW."<sup>a</sup>

At the end of two years, Mr. Bartow speaks with thankfulness, of having, "by the blessing of Almighty God, been instrumental in making many proselytes to our holy religion, who are very constant and devout in and at their attendance on divine service; and, those who were enemies at my first coming, are now zealous professors of the ordinances of our Church. The inhabitants of our parish live scattered and dispersed up and down in the woods, so that many cannot repair constantly to the church, by reason of their great distance from it." Mr. Bartow appears, by his letter, to have been in the habit of making collections in his church for any very urgent cases of distress. Thus, we have the following notices:—

"Sept. 5th, 1708, came a distressed woman, widow of Maynard, through Westchester, who had nine children murdered by the Indians. Collected for her in the church, eleven shillings and six pence. The following Sunday he made a similar collection for a poor man."

Upon the 30th of October, 1709, he thus writes:—

"We want very much a fixed school at Westchester; if Mr. Daniel Clark, my neighbour, now in England, should wait upon you, desirous of that employment, I recommend him as a person worthy of it; being of good report, a constant communicant, and being a clergyman's son, has had a pious and learned education. I pray you would accept my most bounded thanks for your constant favors to me and your other missionaries; we know you expect no returns but our constant labours in the Church, which that God would give us ability to perform, and you to support, shall be ever the prayer of, Sir, yours, &c.,

JOHN BARTOW"<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Hawks' New York MSS., from archives at Fulham, vol. i. pp. 193 to 195.

<sup>b</sup> Hawks' New York MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. i. p. 207. Edward Fitzgerald was school-master of Westchester in 1709; he was a soldier in one of the independent companies,



At a meeting of the church-wardens, vestrymen, freeholders and parishioners of the borough of Westchester, held the 10th day of January, A.D. 1709, present:—

*Justices.*

JOSEPH HUNT,  
THOMAS PINCKNEY,

MAJOR WILLIAM WILLETT,  
JOHN HUNT.

The church-wardens chosen and appointed were :

JOSEPH HUNT, JUNR., and JEREMIAH FOWLER.

*Vestrymen,*

For the borough of Westchester.

MILES OAKLEY,  
THOMAS BAXTER, SEN.  
THOMAS HUNT,

For Eastchester.

ISAAC TAYLOR,  
JOHN LANCASTER.  
NATHANIEL TOMPKINS.

For Yonckers Precinct.

JOHN ARCHER,

For the Manor of Pelham.

THOMAS PELL,

NOAH BARTON.

For New Rochelle.

ANTHONY LISPENARD.

Collected for the minister, £50 ; for the clerk of vestry, £5 ; for collecting, £2 13. The quotas for the different precincts were :

|              |         |               |         |
|--------------|---------|---------------|---------|
| Westchester, | £25 0 0 | New Rochelle, | £8 15 0 |
| Eastchester, | 9 0 0   | Pelham,       | 3 0 0   |
| Yonckers,    | 8 0 0   | Morrisania.   | 3 0 0   |

“Att a meeting held by ye justices, vestrymen and church-wardens on ye 18th of Jan<sup>y</sup>., 1708-9, it was ordered, y<sup>t</sup> the two church-wardens for this ensuing year, shall goe to Mr. Morris to know if y<sup>t</sup> he will pay his arrearidges, or other ways to knowe if y<sup>t</sup> he will joyne issue with ye parrish to try ye title whether his mannor be in ye parrish or not, and make return att ye next meeting.”<sup>a</sup>

Mr. Bartow writing to the Secretary on the 5th of July, 1710, says :

SIR:—“Our church at Westchester increases ; that at Eastchester continues constant ; we have sometimes Negroes and Indians come to our assembly, and behave themselves orderly ; but the slight and contempt of baptism by Quakers and many others, I am persuaded keeps them from it ; for when they see so many that call themselves Christians, allowed in the disuse of it, and the immorality of many that are baptized, they contentedly remaine unbaptized. I have baptized in the year 1709, 42 ; 14 of which were grown persons. I have received a parcel of books writ by the late Rev. Dr. Beveridge, on public prayer, and the communion, &c., and though there is no advice from whom, I suppose

<sup>a</sup> Westchester Vestry Book.

they come from that fountain of piety and charity, the renowned Society, for whose gracious assistance in the works of Christ's ministry I remain their debtor, and can only desire that God would abundantly reward their pious labours in His Church, who am, Sir, yours, &c.,

JOHN BARTOW.<sup>a</sup>

Westchester, New York, 5th July, 1710."

Mr. Elias Neau, a vestryman of Trinity church, N. Y., writing the same day to the Secretary, bears the following testimony to Mr. Bartow's services:—

"Most honored sir—Mr. Bartow has done a great deal of good here these six years, for he preaches about in places where there are no ministers, &c."<sup>b</sup>

The following is Mr. Bartow's second report for this year:—

#### MR. BARTOW TO THE SECRETARY.

WESTCHESTER, 30TH NOV., 1710.

SIR:—"The Rev. Mr. Bondett's conformity has been of good effect; a new church is built in New Rochelle for the service of the Church of England, by voluntary contributions: there is some of that place do yet dissent, but the major and better part do conform and are zealous.

I want very much some Common Prayer Books, and Church catechisms: if the society will be pleased to bestow any upon us, I pray they may be directed to me.

I have lately baptized a free Negro man and three children, ~~and~~ a Negro woman servant; but 'tis very rare that these people can be brought to have any true sense of the Christian religion.

We have many elderly people that will not be brought to have any concern about the necessity of public worship, and yet not withholding their children from coming to church: we hope they will not follow the example of their parents, many of which have been baptized, and in sobriety, piety, do promise zeal and constancy in the Church established.

I can say no more at present, but that I pray for the success and prosperity of the Society, And remain, Worthy Sir, Yours, &c.

JNO. BARTOW."<sup>c</sup>

In answer to this letter, the Honorable Society sent the next year, to the Rev. Mr. Bartow, fifty Common Prayer Books, and £5 worth more of small tracts, tending to promote piety and virtue amongst his people."<sup>d</sup>

Five months later, he thus communicates the state of his parish:—

<sup>a</sup> Hawks' New York MSS., from archives at Fulham, vol. I. 218, 219.

<sup>b</sup> Ibid. vol. I. 216, 217.

<sup>c</sup> Hawks' New York MSS., from archives at Fulham, vol. I. 229.

<sup>d</sup> Printed abstracts of Ven. Soc.

## MR. BARTOW TO THE SECRETARY.

[*Extract.*]

WESTCHESTER, 31st APRIL, 1711.

WORTHY SIR:—I hope you have had by this time an account of the state of the Church at Jamaica, and the troubles Mr. Poyer has met with—all since his coming to that place, from more certain information than I can give you. The vestry are dissenters from the Church, and refuse still to call him, as the act of Assembly directs; and on that pretence still withhold his salary, upon which I only presume to observe, that as long as the inhabitants of the parishes here have the power of choosing the vestry, the major part of which are Dissenters (by which the vestrymen are constituted Patrons to elect, call and present a minister) the settlement of our churches here is very precarious, and on every vacancy may occasion a disturbance; for should a dissenting minister appear, whom the people approved—as it has happened now in the case of Jamaica—I question whether any of our parishes, excepting York, would not call him and reject the clergyman. We cannot hope here for a better regulation of the act by our Assemblies, who are also generally Disseaters; but hope that you will think of some methods to establish the Church of England in this Province.

I thank God my own parish are very well affected to our Church at present, but we know not how soon the old leaven may work again; prejudice and education are mighty tyrants upon men's manners; we have very few but what have been educated Dissenters, and have imbibed prejudices therein, and we cannot be secure when they will be thoroughly worn out; therefore, should be extremely glad if my Lord Bishop of London, or the Society, were the patrons of our churches.

I have baptized, in the year 1710, 36 persons. Our church is pretty well finished, with seats and rails, and bannisters about the altar. Our congregation rather increases both in hearers and communicants, but our vestry are the major part Dissenters; they will part with no money but barely what the Assembly has allowed for the maintenance of the ministers and poor, so that we are unprovided of a clerk—none being willing to attend constantly without rare allowances; formerly the vestry would allow something, but now they wholly refuse it, being encouraged by the success of Jamaica. It would add to the regularity and decency of our worship, if the society would allow £40 or £50 per annum, to a church clerk, and leave it at the discretion of a minister to choose him, and to have power to turn one out and choose another, as he saw cause; and the society order the salary to be paid him by the minister, that no opposition may be made when a better may be gotten.<sup>a</sup> Sir, yours, &c.

JOHN BARTOW."

The Venerable Society's abstracts for 1713, say:—

"Mr. Charles Glover is appointed schoolmaster at Westchester, with a salary of £18 per annum, as he is recommended under the character of a person sober and diligent, well affected to the Church of England, and competently skilled in reading, writing, arithmetic, psalmody and

<sup>a</sup> Hawks' New-York MSS., from archives at Fulham, vol. i. p. 249, 250, 251.

the Latin tongue, provided he comply with the society's rules, in sending certificates of the number of his scholars."<sup>a</sup>

The next year, Mr. Bartow writes as follows:—

#### MR. BARTOW TO THE SECRETARY.

WESTCHESTER, APRIL 14, 1714.

Sir:—"I have sent you enclosed, an account of the building of our churches, and how they have been supplied, signed by those who were yesterday at our vestry meeting, and have not leisure to get more hands: the ship (as we hear) being ready to sail.

I have had some old arrears, £9 6 9, due to me, which I have been often trying to get, but could not; until our present governor, upon my complaint, was pleased to send a threatening letter to our vestry, which made those readily comply to annex it to the church rate for this year, which said sum I have given to the Church at Eastchester and Westchester, towards making and rectifying of pews and seats.

The present of books the Society has sent, was very gratefully received by me and by those to whom they are given.

The Common Prayer Books are the most acceptable to those who love the Church; and I could not avoid giving offence, having not enough for all.

The measles have been epidemical throughout the whole county this winter—and having not had them myself, nor one in the family, and the distemper proving very mortal, I declined visiting and baptizing a dying child; if complaint be made, I hope the society will not be offended. The parent said he would not defer baptizing a child so long again. He is one in the scheme, in number, of the half Quakers. Sir, in the last clause of the certificate of the vestrymen, you will find that Eastchester was made a distinct parish from Westchester, in 1700; the reason whereof, I understand, was this, (viz.) the people of Eastchester being generally Presbyterians, and wishing to have a minister of their own, petitioned the Assembly that they might be made a distinct parish from Westchester, (to which they were before annexed by act of Assembly,) and obtained an act of separation; but when I came among them, they were so well satisfied with the liturgy and doctrines of the Church, that they forsook their minister, and have ever since professed themselves members of the Church of England, (excepting a very few who are rigid Independents,) and they pay their proportion of the fifty pounds per annum, as was allotted them by the first act of Assembly.

If the Society would be pleased to send over one of the few youths of the Hospital, with an allowance of five pounds per annum, to teach the children, sometimes at Yonckers, and sometimes at Eastchester, I know the inhabitants would allow him £20 per annum more of this country money; and it would be of excellent use, if he proved sober and diligent and well affectioned to our Church.

I most gratefully acknowledge the piety, zeal, and generosity of the illustrious Society, for their repeated and continued instances of sincere love unto Christ Jesus, in spreading and supporting His religion with indefatigable care and immense charges. And remain, Sir, &c.,<sup>b</sup>

JOHN BARTOW."

<sup>a</sup> Printed abstracts of Ven. Soc.

<sup>b</sup> Hawks' New York MSS., from Archives at Fulham vol. i, pp. 473, 474.



From the society's abstracts we learn, that "in 1714, by the blessing of God on Mr. Bartow's ministry at Westchester, Eastchester, Yonckers and the Manor of Pelham, where there were formerly very few of the Church communion, there was visibly a very great reformation of manners."<sup>a</sup>

## MR. BARTOW TO THE SECRETARY.

[Extract.]

WESTCHESTER, FEB. 9th, 1716.

WORTHY SIR:—"I have preached several funeral sermons since I came here, and have not received anything, save once, a table for the communion was given me by a joiner, having preached a sermon at his child's funeral."<sup>b</sup>

In answer to certain enquiries, Mr. Bartow again addressed the Secretary:

## MR. BARTOW TO THE SECRETARY.

[Extract.]

WESTCHESTER, SEPT. 12th, 1717.

WORTHY SIR:—"The church at Eastchester was built about twenty-two years since, and supplied always by a Presbyterian minister till about one year after my coming here, when they embraced the Church of England, and accepted of me for their minister; and though they had obtained an Act of Assembly under the government of Lord Bellamont, to make them a distinct parish, yet they pay their quota of fifty pound per annum to me, according to the first establishment. This conformity I acknowledge, greatly owing the measures of my Lord Clarendon, then our Governour.

2. There is no parsonage house nor glebe. The church at Westchester was built about twenty years since, and supplied about two years with a Presbyterian minister, who had left them before I came. There is no parsonage house, but twenty-three acres of glebe given to me and my successors, of the Church of England, which is now well worth one hundred pounds, as improved by me; scarce worth thirty pound, when I had it first. I have likewise obtained for the church a twenty-five pound share of an undivided tract of land called Long Reach, the title of which has been long controverted between the towns of East and Westchester, which will be about thirty acres more if Westchester be possessed; but the dispute holds still, without signs of a determination.

3. Yonckers has no church; but we assemble for divine worship sometimes in a house of Joseph Betts, deceased, and sometimes in a barn, when empty—but the people begin to be in a disposition to build a church.

The other of your letters was dated 14th of May, 1716, wherein you say the Society have ordered you to acquaint me, and the rest of the brethren, the clergy, that at our next meeting we should inform them if any of our brethren are disaffected to the government of King George; and having had a meeting since, not long before, can only say, that I am well assured there is not one clergyman in this Province, but what is well affected to the government of his Majesty, King George, whom God bless."<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Printed abstracts of Ven. Prop. Soc.

<sup>b</sup> Hawks' New York MSS., from archives at Fulham, vol. i. 519.

<sup>c</sup> Hawks' New York MSS., from archives at Fulham, vol. i. p. 245, 525.

Mr. Bartow baptized (in the year 1718) "thirty-two persons; two of whom were grown persons, and one negro man."<sup>a</sup>

The Society's abstracts for 1719 say:—

"To Mr. William Forster, schoolmaster at Westchester, who has been recommended as a person very well qualified to instruct the youth in the principles of religion and virtue, ten pounds per annum is allowed; and a gratuity of £10 has been given him, in consideration of his past services and his present circumstances."<sup>b</sup>

From the Rev. Mr. Bartow, minister of Westchester, in the same Province, "that, in the year 1719, he had baptized twenty-two, one of which was an ancient woman."<sup>c</sup>

From Mr. Forster, schoolmaster at the same place, "that he has at present thirty-five scholars, whom he catechises every Saturday, and also every Sunday that Mr. Bartow goes to another part of the parish, together with all others who will attend, and has good success; which is also attested by the minister and chief inhabitants of Westchester."<sup>d</sup>

In 1720 the different quotas for the Church and poor of the Parish stood thus:—

|                  |    |     |                  |    |     |
|------------------|----|-----|------------------|----|-----|
| Westchester, £37 | 10 | 02  | Eastchester, £12 | 14 | 11½ |
| Yonckers, 11     | 12 | 10½ | New Rochelle, 12 | 14 | 1½  |
| Pelham, 4        | 4  | 1½  | Morrisania, 4    | 10 | 0   |

The Society's abstracts, for 1720, say:—

"That letters have been received from the Rev. Mr. Bartow, minister at Westchester, in the Province of New York, that the number of his Communicants increases, though some are dead or removed to other towns; and that he baptized in the year 1720, twenty-five—five whereof were grown persons."

Also, "from Mr. Forster, schoolmaster at Westchester, in the Province of New York, that he takes all the care he can of the children which are sent to him, and has upwards of thirty scholars, which he instructs in the Church Catechism."<sup>e</sup>

In 1721, Mr. Bartow informs the Society:—

"That, since the death of Mr. Bondett, he preaches at four towns: Eastchester, Westchester, Yonckers and New Rochelle, and does other occasional offices; and that the number of the baptized, in the year 1721, was twenty-eight—two whereof were grown persons."<sup>f</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Printed abstracts of Ven. P. Soc. for 1718.

<sup>b</sup> Ibid. 1719.

<sup>c</sup> Ibid.

<sup>d</sup> Printed abstracts of Ven. P. Soc.

<sup>e</sup> Printed abstracts of Ven Prop. Soc.

<sup>f</sup> Ibid.

The next year the Society allowed "Mr. Bartow, for his service at New Rochelle, ten pounds." In his report for 1722, Mr. Bartow says:—

"That they are repairing the church there (Westchester) with the voluntary contributions of the people, procured chiefly by the zeal and care of Mr. Forster, the schoolmaster there; that in the year 1722, he baptized twenty-one persons, four whereof were adults, one a Negro man."<sup>a</sup>

"In the year 1723, he baptized forty-five, four whereof were grown persons."<sup>b</sup>

Mr. Forster reports:—

"That the number of his scholars is as usual, and that he has very good success in his teaching, and that they are this summer building a new school-house; and that he is raising an annual subscription for repairing and finishing the church."<sup>c</sup>

#### REV. JOHN BARTOW'S ANSWERS TO THE QUERIES OF THE BISHOP OF LONDON.

[QUERIES TO BE ANSWERED BY EVERY MINISTER.]

WESTCHESTER,

*in the Province of New York, in America,*

July 13, 1724.

*Q.* How long is it since you went over to the plantations as a missionary?

*A.* Twenty-two years.

*Q.* Have you had any other church before you came to that which you now possess; and if you had, what church was it, and how long have you been removed?

*A.* No other here; but I was inducted to the vicarage of Pampford, in Cambridge, May 28th, 1697, and removed here by leave of Dr. Patrick, then Bishop of Ely.

*Q.* Have you been licensed by the Bishop of London to officiate as a missionary, in the government where you now are?

*A.* I was licensed by the Right Rev. Father in God, Henry, Lord Bishop of London, June 22d, 1702, to officiate as a missionary.

*Q.* How long have you been inducted into your living?

*A.* I was inducted to my living here, Nov. 19, 1702, Lord Cornbury being then Governor.

*Q.* Are you ordinarily resident in the parish to which you have been inducted?

*A.* I have been resident in Westchester ever since I came.

*Q.* Of what extent is your parish, and how many families in it?

*A.* My parish is in length about twelve miles, in breadth about seventy; about two hundred families.

<sup>a</sup> Printed abstracts of Venerable P. Soc.

<sup>b</sup> Ibid.

<sup>c</sup> Printed abstracts of Ven. P. Soc. for 1723.

*Q.* Are there any Infidels, bond or free, within your parish, and what means are used for their conversion?

*A.* We have Infidels, bond and free, who have liberty to come to the churches, and are not denied baptism when fit and desirous of it; some of which I have baptized.

*Q.* How oft is divine service performed in your church, and what proportion of the parishioners attend it?

*A.* Divine service is performed in one of our churches every Sunday, when I have about seventy auditors in the afternoon—there being not quite so many in the morning, by reason that those who live at a distance seldom come in the morning.

*Q.* How oft is the sacrament of the Lord's supper administered; and what is the usual number of communicants?

*A.* The Lord's supper is administered by me, in the church at Westchester, on Christmas day, Easter and Whitsunday, and at other times, occasionally in other places of the parish, and we have usually eighteen communicants, more or less.

*Q.* At what time do you catechize the youth of your parish?

*A.* I have been wont to catechize the youth on Sundays in the afternoon, before we had a settled school; but now I leave that office to Mr. Forster, the Society's schoolmaster, who not only catechizes in the school, but in the church, when I am absent, all that will come.

*Q.* Are all things duly disposed and provided in the church, for the decent and orderly performance of divine service?

*A.* We have all things decent, excepting the surplice.

*Q.* Of what value is your living in sterling money, and how does it arise?

*A.* The value of my living is £50 sterling of New York money; which is almost £32 10. sterling, paid not without some difficulty and loss.

*Q.* Have you a house and glebe; is your glebe in lease or let by the year, or is it occupied by yourself?

*A.* I have twenty-three acres of glebe in my occupation, but no parsonage house. I lived at my first coming in an hired house, in expectation of a parsonage house; though talk't of to be built, but finding it would not be effected two years ago I purchased one.

*Q.* Is due care taken to preserve your house in good repair, and at whose expense is it done?

*A.* I live in my own house adjoining the glebe, and have always repaired it at my own expense.

*Q.* Have you more cures than one; if you have, what are they, and in what manner are they served?

*A.* I have four towns under my cure—Westchester, Eastchester, Yonkers, and the Manor of Pelham, (of which New Rochelle is a part)—in whose churches I officiate on Sundays, according to their several quotas, on the payment of £50 per annum. I preach at Westchester every Lord's day, excepting every fourth Sunday at Eastchester, three times in the year at Yonkers, and so often as I can at New Rochelle.

*Q.* Have you in your parish any public school for the instruction of youth; if you have, is it endowed, and who is the master?

*A.* We have a public school in Westchester, of which Mr. Forster is the soci-



cty's schoolmaster, and we have private schools in other places; no endowment; some families of the Town of Pelham that are adjacent, come to Eastchester church.

*Q.* Have you a parochial library; if you have, are the books preserved and kept in good condition? Have you any particular rules and orders for the preserving of them? Are those rules and orders duly observed?

*A.* We have no parochial library.

*John Bartow*

*Rector, &c., of Westchester.<sup>a</sup>*

In his report to the Secretary, Mr. Bartow observes:—

“That the church is much in the same condition as when he wrote last; and that in the year 1724, he baptized thirty-nine, two whereof were grown persons.”<sup>b</sup>

The subjoined extract is from a letter of his to the Secretary. The Rev. Mr. Talbot mentioned in the beginning of it, was dismissed from the society's service for alledged Jacobitism:—

#### MR. BARTOW TO THE SECRETARY.

PROVINCE OF NEW YORK.

May 4th 1725.

SIR:—“I am creditably informed that the Society have discharged the Rev. Mr. Talbot from being any longer their missionary: whereby the fruits of the pious bequest of the late Archbishop of Canterbury do descend to me, as being the next oldest in their service, of that province, till by the providence of God we have bishops here lawfully established. Nothing is too great for God to give, even to the undeserving, and therefore I humbly and thankfully should accept it of His gracious providence; but be it at the disposal of the most Rev. and Honorable Society, as seems by an abstract of their proceedings, Anno 1714—I should not presume to ask it of them, nay, scarce desire it in my private thoughts being conscious of my unworthiness, and enjoined to be content in my condition, in which I remain, still praying to God for His blessings on their Christian labors.

Sir, Your most obedient. &c.,

JOHN BARTOW.”<sup>c</sup>

Probably the last communication the Society ever received from Mr. Bartow, is the following:—

<sup>a</sup> Hawks' New York MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. i. 635.

<sup>b</sup> Printed abstracts of Ven. Soc.

<sup>c</sup> Hawks' New York MSS., from archives at Fulham, vol i. p. 64.

## MR. BARTOW TO THE SECRETARY.

WESTCHESTER, OCTOBER 6TH, 1725.

WORTHY SIR:—"There being nothing happened extraordinary here, relating to the Church since I writ last; (saving the death of the late Rev. Mr. Thomas, of Hempstead, which church with that at Rye, are supplied by the zealous labours of the Rev. Mr. Jenny) I can only, as in duty bound, repeat my thankful acknowledgment for the Society's allowance, which is always duly paid by their treasurer, and informing you that the pulpit and wainscoat of the church at Eastchester, was since decently painted and a new gallery built, and the Presbyterian minister when he comes, not permitted to officiate therein. That God would bless the labours of the most Rev. and Honorable Society, is &c.

Sir, Your most obedient, &c.

JOHN BARTOW.<sup>a</sup>

This excellent minister died at Westchester, in 1726. Nothing now remains to mark the site of his tomb; but one thing is certain, "that he who was with him in his last hour, and made his bed in his sickness, will watch over the precious dust till He shall bid it rise."

"So pious, just, and even, as if he meant"

His name should be his marble monument."

"Mr. Bartow," says Dr. Hawkins, "continued in the discharge of his important duties for the long period of a quarter of a century. He was the instrument of bringing many separatists back to the Church, and admitting into it many hitherto careless adults. He likewise gave much of his time to the instruction of the poor negroes. By such long and faithful services, he secured the general esteem of his people."<sup>b</sup>

In 1705 he married Helena, second daughter of John Reid, Esq., of Middrew Castle, parish of Kirkleston, Scotland; by this lady he left issue six sons. Theophilus his second son, was the father of the Rev. Theodosius Bartow, of New Rochelle, whose grandsons, were the late Rev. Theodore B. Bartow, chaplain in the U. S. Navy, and the late Rev. Henry B. Bartow. John Bartow, the eldest son of Theophilus, and brother of Theodosius, was the grandfather of the late Robert Bartow of Pelham, and the late Edgar J. Bartow, the founder of Holy Trinity church, Brooklyn Heights, L. I., who died at Morristown, New Jersey, Sept. 6th. 1864, leaving by his wife, Henrietta C. Pierrepont, Henrietta Pierrepont, and the Rev. Evelyn Bartow, of Baltimore, Md., a grand-daughter of Theodosius. Fanny L., married the late Rev. George A. Shelton, of Newtown, L. I.

The Rev. John Bartow purchased, April 6th, 1722, of John Mash

<sup>a</sup> Ibid, vol. 1, pp. 664, 665.

<sup>b</sup> Hawkins' Hist. Notices of the Missions of the Church of England, p. 277.

## PEDIGREE OF BARTOW, OF WESTCHESTER.

Arms :—D'Or, a la bande de sable, chargée de trois bezants d'argent, accompagnée de six annelets de gules, saïs en orle.

Doctor Thomas Bartow, a physician of Crediton, Devonshire, England, 1672, of the Bertants of Biel'gus

Grace . . . . ., buried in the churchyard of the Holy Cross, Crediton, 1670

Rev. John Bartow, A.M., Vicar of Pampisford, England, founder and first rector of St. Peter's church, Westchester. Born at Crediton, 1673; died in Westchester, 1725

Helena, daughter of Hon. John Reid, of Niddey Castle, Scotland and one of the early settlers, of Freehold, N. J.

Anthony Bartow, bapt. in the church of the Holy Cross, Crediton, 1673; died young

Mary Bartow, bapt. in the church of the Holy Cross, 1675

Thomas Bartow, bapt. in the church of the Holy Cross, 1676

Thomas, of Amboy, a lawyer, b. 1709; d. 1782

Theophilus, of Westchester, b. Aug. 17, 1711, buried in the Bartow ground

Bathsheba Pell, of Pelham

Theodosius, of Shrewsbury, a lawyer, b. 1712; died 1746

Ann Stillwell, who married secondly, Pierre de Vismes

John, lawyer, of Westchester, born 1715; died unmarried, 1802

Anthony, of Westchester, farmer, b. 1717; d. 1790

Charity, da. of William Stevenson

Mary Basil, of Westchester, b. 1720

Clarina, da. of Rev. Ebenezer Funderson

Three sons, died in infancy

George, died young

Thomas, of Philadelphia, only child, born 1736

Sarah Benezet

Col. James Marcus Prevost, d. 1779

Theodosia, only child, born 1746

Col. Aaron Burr

Mary Ryder

John Bartow, of Pelham Manor, b. 1740; d. 1816

Ann Pell

Euphemia, mar. Daniel White, M. D.

Margaret, mar. Thos. Pell

Helena, mar. Hon. Ebenezer White

Rev. Theodosius, Rector of Trinity church, New Rochell 29 years

Jemima Abramse

Theophilus, served in the Revolution, d. unmar.

Anthony, of Westchester, d. unmar.

Anthony, of Westchester, d. unmar.

Anthony, of Westchester, d. unmar.

Anthony, of Westchester, d. unmar.

Anthony, of Westchester, d. unmar.

Anthony, of Westchester, d. unmar.

Anthony, of Westchester, d. unmar.

Anthony, of Westchester, d. unmar.

Anthony, of Westchester, d. unmar.

Anthony, of Westchester, d. unmar.

Anthony, of Westchester, d. unmar.

Anthony, of Westchester, d. unmar.

Anthony, of Westchester, d. unmar.

Augustus, of Fishkill, b. 1762; d. 1810

Clarina Bartow

Stephen

Mary Thomson of Cat-skill

Mary, mar. Funderson

John, mar. Mary Sands, of Sands, Point

Phoebe, unmar.

Bernben, d. unmar.

Katharine, mar. Isaac Hawes

James Amella, mar. Dr. Turk

Sarah, mar. Dr. Ha-lock

Andrew A., of Herkimer Co.

Elizabeth, d. young

Jacob, lawyer, of N. Rochelle

Anthony A., of Savannah

Magdalen, d. unmar.

Theophilus, lawyer, of New Rochelle, mar. Anne Abramse

Theodosius, M. D., of Savannah

Rev. John Van Meildens, Rector of Trinity ch.

Elizabeth, d. young

William, lawyer, of N. Rochelle

Anthony A., of Savannah

Magdalen, d. unmar.

Theophilus, lawyer, of New Rochelle, mar. Anne Abramse

Theodosius, M. D., of Savannah

Rev. John Van Meildens, Rector of Trinity ch.

Augustus, of Fishkill, b. 1762; d. 1810

Clarina Bartow

Stephen

Mary Thomson of Cat-skill

Mary, mar. Funderson

John, mar. Mary Sands, of Sands, Point

Phoebe, unmar.

Bernben, d. unmar.

Katharine, mar. Isaac Hawes

James Amella, mar. Dr. Turk

Sarah, mar. Dr. Ha-lock

Andrew A., of Herkimer Co.

Elizabeth, d. young

Jacob, lawyer, of N. Rochelle

Anthony A., of Savannah

Magdalen, d. unmar.

Theophilus, lawyer, of New Rochelle, mar. Anne Abramse

Theodosius, M. D., of Savannah

Rev. John Van Meildens, Rector of Trinity ch.

Elizabeth, d. young

William, lawyer, of N. Rochelle

Anthony A., of Savannah

Magdalen, d. unmar.

Theophilus, lawyer, of New Rochelle, mar. Anne Abramse

Theodosius, M. D., of Savannah

Rev. John Van Meildens, Rector of Trinity ch.

Augustus, of Fishkill, b. 1762; d. 1810

Clarina Bartow

Stephen

Mary Thomson of Cat-skill

Mary, mar. Funderson

John, mar. Mary Sands, of Sands, Point

Phoebe, unmar.

Bernben, d. unmar.

Katharine, mar. Isaac Hawes

James Amella, mar. Dr. Turk

Sarah, mar. Dr. Ha-lock

Andrew A., of Herkimer Co.

Elizabeth, d. young

Jacob, lawyer, of N. Rochelle

Anthony A., of Savannah

Magdalen, d. unmar.

Theophilus, lawyer, of New Rochelle, mar. Anne Abramse

Theodosius, M. D., of Savannah

Rev. John Van Meildens, Rector of Trinity ch.

Elizabeth, d. young

William, lawyer, of N. Rochelle

Anthony A., of Savannah

Magdalen, d. unmar.

Theophilus, lawyer, of New Rochelle, mar. Anne Abramse

Theodosius, M. D., of Savannah

Rev. John Van Meildens, Rector of Trinity ch.

Augustus, of Fishkill, b. 1762; d. 1810

Clarina Bartow

Stephen

Mary Thomson of Cat-skill

Mary, mar. Funderson

John, mar. Mary Sands, of Sands, Point

Phoebe, unmar.

Bernben, d. unmar.

Katharine, mar. Isaac Hawes

James Amella, mar. Dr. Turk

Sarah, mar. Dr. Ha-lock

Andrew A., of Herkimer Co.

Elizabeth, d. young

Jacob, lawyer, of N. Rochelle

Anthony A., of Savannah

Magdalen, d. unmar.

Theophilus, lawyer, of New Rochelle, mar. Anne Abramse

Theodosius, M. D., of Savannah

Rev. John Van Meildens, Rector of Trinity ch.

Elizabeth, d. young

William, lawyer, of N. Rochelle

Anthony A., of Savannah

Magdalen, d. unmar.

Theophilus, lawyer, of New Rochelle, mar. Anne Abramse

Theodosius, M. D., of Savannah

Rev. John Van Meildens, Rector of Trinity ch.

Augustus, of Fishkill, b. 1762; d. 1810

Clarina Bartow

Stephen

Mary Thomson of Cat-skill

Mary, mar. Funderson

John, mar. Mary Sands, of Sands, Point

Phoebe, unmar.

Bernben, d. unmar.

Katharine, mar. Isaac Hawes

James Amella, mar. Dr. Turk

Sarah, mar. Dr. Ha-lock

Andrew A., of Herkimer Co.

Elizabeth, d. young

Jacob, lawyer, of N. Rochelle

Anthony A., of Savannah

Magdalen, d. unmar.

Theophilus, lawyer, of New Rochelle, mar. Anne Abramse

Theodosius, M. D., of Savannah

Rev. John Van Meildens, Rector of Trinity ch.

Elizabeth, d. young

William, lawyer, of N. Rochelle

Anthony A., of Savannah

Magdalen, d. unmar.

Theophilus, lawyer, of New Rochelle, mar. Anne Abramse

Theodosius, M. D., of Savannah

Rev. John Van Meildens, Rector of Trinity ch.

Augustus, of Fishkill, b. 1762; d. 1810

Clarina Bartow

Stephen

Mary Thomson of Cat-skill

Mary, mar. Funderson

John, mar. Mary Sands, of Sands, Point

Phoebe, unmar.

Bernben, d. unmar.

Katharine, mar. Isaac Hawes

James Amella, mar. Dr. Turk

Sarah, mar. Dr. Ha-lock

Andrew A., of Herkimer Co.

Elizabeth, d. young

Jacob, lawyer, of N. Rochelle

Anthony A., of Savannah

Magdalen, d. unmar.

Theophilus, lawyer, of New Rochelle, mar. Anne Abramse

Theodosius, M. D., of Savannah

Rev. John Van Meildens, Rector of Trinity ch.

Elizabeth, d. young

William, lawyer, of N. Rochelle

Anthony A., of Savannah

Magdalen, d. unmar.

Theophilus, lawyer, of New Rochelle, mar. Anne Abramse

Theodosius, M. D., of Savannah

Rev. John Van Meildens, Rector of Trinity ch.

Augustus, of Fishkill, b. 1762; d. 1810

Clarina Bartow

Stephen

Mary Thomson of Cat-skill

Mary, mar. Funderson

John, mar. Mary Sands, of Sands, Point

Phoebe, unmar.

Bernben, d. unmar.

Katharine, mar. Isaac Hawes

James Amella, mar. Dr. Turk

Sarah, mar. Dr. Ha-lock

Andrew A., of Herkimer Co.

Elizabeth, d. young

Jacob, lawyer, of N. Rochelle

Anthony A., of Savannah

Magdalen, d. unmar.

Theophilus, lawyer, of New Rochelle, mar. Anne Abramse

Theodosius, M. D., of Savannah

Rev. John Van Meildens, Rector of Trinity ch.

Elizabeth, d. young

William, lawyer, of N. Rochelle

Anthony A., of Savannah

Magdalen, d. unmar.

Theophilus, lawyer, of New Rochelle, mar. Anne Abramse

Theodosius, M. D., of Savannah

Rev. John Van Meildens, Rector of Trinity ch.

Augustus, of Fishkill, b. 1762; d. 1810

Clarina Bartow

Stephen

Mary Thomson of Cat-skill

Mary, mar. Funderson

John, mar. Mary Sands, of Sands, Point

Phoebe, unmar.

Bernben, d. unmar.

Katharine, mar. Isaac Hawes

James Amella, mar. Dr. Turk

Sarah, mar. Dr. Ha-lock

Andrew A., of Herkimer Co.

Elizabeth, d. young

Jacob, lawyer, of N. Rochelle

Anthony A., of Savannah

Magdalen, d. unmar.

Theophilus, lawyer, of New Rochelle, mar. Anne Abramse

Theodosius, M. D., of Savannah

Rev. John Van Meildens, Rector of Trinity ch.

Elizabeth, d. young

William, lawyer, of N. Rochelle

Anthony A., of Savannah

Magdalen, d. unmar.

Theophilus, lawyer, of New Rochelle, mar. Anne Abramse

Theodosius, M. D., of Savannah

Rev. John Van Meildens, Rector of Trinity ch.





and Rosamond his wife, the farm now owned by the late Alderman Abraham Hatfield, where he resided until his death in 1726; a small spot was reserved by Mr. Bartow for the interment of his family.<sup>a</sup> Here rest the remains of his sons, Theophilus, George, John, Anthony, Basil, and four infants; other members of the family were interred here down to 1816, when the last interment was made viz.: John Bartow of Pelham. At the time the late proprietor purchased the farm, the cemetery was enclosed by a fence with several mounds and tombstones in it, this was disturbed, the land ploughed and the tombstones thrown aside.

The Society's abstracts for 1725, says:—"That among other sums granted, was a gratuity of fifty pounds which the Society have made to Mrs. Bartow, the widow of the late Rev. Mr. Bartow, a missionary of the Society at Westchester, in the province of New York, in consideration of her husband's good behaviour and diligence in the Society's mission, for twenty-three years and upwards, and having six sons and a wife unprovided for."<sup>b</sup>

Mr. Bartow's last will and testament was made on the 24th of January, 1725, but not proved until the 1st of April, 1727:—

#### THE WILL OF JOHN BARTOW, CLERK.

IN THE NAME OF GOD AMEN, the twenty-fourth of January, in ye twelvth year of the reign of our Sovereign Lord, King George, Annoq Dom, one thousand seven hundred and twenty-five. I, John Bartow, of the Burrough Town of Westchester, in the County of Westchester, and Province of New York, Clerk, being sick and weak in body, but of sound and perfect memory, praise be given to God therefore, and considering the uncertainty of this transitory life, do make this my last Will & Testament in manner and form following, that is to say: First, and principally, I commend my soul to Almighty God my creator, assuredly believing that my sins will be remitted, and that I shall be saved by the precious death and merits of my blessed Saviour and Redeemer, Christ Jesus; and my body to the earth, to be buried at the discretion of my ex'tors, hereafter named: and touching such worldly estate as God hath been pleased to bestow upon me, I do hereby give and dispose of the same in manner and form following, that is to say: First, I hereby give and bequeath unto my beloved wife, Helena, one

<sup>a</sup> In a warrantee deed bearing date May 8th, 1806, Basil J. Bartow and Eliza Ann, his wife, did convey to Levi Calb, all those certain pieces or parcels of land situated, &c., in the Town of Westchester containing 130 acres of land, more or less, excepting three English square rods of ground, which has heretofore been used as funeral ground; and reserving nevertheless to the said Basil J. Bartow and his representatives, and the family in general, of the Bartows, the free right to pass and repass, in, by, and through the premises hereby granted from the above mentioned highway, for the use and enjoyment of the same three rods of ground.—County Rec. Liber, N. J., p. 443.

<sup>b</sup> Printed abstracts of Venerable Propagation Society, from 18th Feb., 1725, to 17th Feb., 1726. "At a meeting of the Trustees for the Borough of Westchester &c., the 6th day of March, 1726-7, the committee appointed to make report of the persons who had made encroachments upon the sheep pastures, gave in the name of Mr. Bartow and others, whereupon, Mr. Forster appeared in behalf of ye orphans of Mr. John Bartow, yt what they have taken in upon ye sheep pasture, yt they will leave out when they rectify ye fences."—Westchester Town Rec. Lib. ix. 187-188.

equal third part of all my personal estate for the use of her, her heirs, and assigns for ever. *Item*, I hereby will and order that my funeral charges, and all my just debts be paid out of the remainder of my personal estate within convenient time after my decease, by my executors hereafter named. Only it is hereby provided, that whereas, John Mash, of Westchester abovesaid, boatman, for and in consideration of my becoming bound together with the said John Mash, at his special instance and request, and for the proper debt of the said John Mash, by a certain obligation in the penal sum of four score pounds, current money of New York, with condition for the payment of forty pounds of like current money, at a certain day in the said condition exprest, and for other considerations, did by a certain deed, indented under his hand and seal and the hand and seal of Rosamond, his wife, dated the sixth day of April, anno dom. one thousand seven hundred and twenty-two, convey unto me a certain Home Lot, scituate in said Westchester, with its appurtenances, and a twenty-five pounds priviledge of commonage in said town. If the said John Mash, his heirs, executors, or administrators, do not well and truly discharge and pay off the said obligation and all sums of money due thereon, within one year next after my decease, I hereby order my executors to sell the said lott and priviledge, and to apply the money arising by the said sale towards discharging of my debt. *Item*, I give unto my beloved wife, the use of all the remaining part of my personal estate, except what is herein afterwards expressly disposed of, during her widowhood. And if my said wife shall marry again, (if her husband shall immediately, upon their marriage, give good security to my children or their guardians, that all such part of my personal estate as shall remain in my wife's hands over and above her third part given unto her as aforesaid, immediately at and before her marrying again, shall not be wasted or embezzled, but that the same, or value thereof, shall be made good at her decease,) then I give unto her the use thereof during the term of her natural life; and at her decease, or if upon her marrying again, the aforesaid security shall be refused to be given, then at her re-marriage, I give the same equally between my six sons—Thomas, Theophilus, Theodosius, John, Anthony, and Basil Bartow, for the use of them and their several heirs and assigns. *Item*, in consideration that my beloved wife bring up my children I give unto her the sole use and benefit of my dwelling house and homestead, and all my land adjoining thereto, and of all my land at Scabby Indian, bounded southeasterly by the land of John Williams, westerly by the country road, northerly by the road that goes to Thomas Haddon's saw mill, and by Daniel Turner's land, also of about two acres of land lying within said Daniel Turners's land, and of my orchard land, salt and fresh meadow, at the place commonly called below, which was formerly Edward Collier's, David Huestiss and Horseman Mullinder, and also a twenty-five pounds privilege of commonage in said Westchester, for and during the term of her natural life; and I also give unto my wife, until my son John shall attain to the age of twenty-one years, the use of all such part of my land in said Westchester, which I lately purchased of David Heustis, Nathaniel Underhill, Daniel Clark, and Thomas Haddon, and John Huestis, as I have not already let out upon lease, and the rents of all such part thereof as I have leased. *Item*, I give unto my son, John Bartow, his heirs and assigns for ever, all those tracts of land I lately bought of David Heustis, Nathaniel Underhill, Daniel Clark, and Thomas Haddon, and John Heustis, a twenty-five pound

priviledge of commonage in said Westchester, together with all my right, title and interest in a tract of land called the Long Reach; also four acres of salt meadow in Westchester abovesaid, which I purchased of James Morris, by a deed passed under his hand and seal, dated the fifteenth day of January, Anno dom. 1723; also all my tract of land and meadow at Baranagat, in East New Jersey, being about sixty acres; also two-eighths of a moyety of a sixteenth part of a twenty-fourth part or propriety in East New Jersey, granted by Gowen Drummond to John Reid, Senr., and by said John Reid to me, and my least gold ring, and a new English Bible in Quarto. *Item*, I give unto my son, Theophilus Bartow, his heirs and assigns for ever, my saw mill, situate and being in Monmouth County, in East New Jersey, and all my tracts of land and purchase adjoining, containing about one thousand acres, be they more or less; also a twenty-fourth part of a tenth part of an undivided twenty-fourth, or a propriety in East New Jersey granted by Marion Cambell to John Reid, Senr., and by said John Reid to me, and my heaviest gold ring, and an English Bible in Quarto. *Item*, I give unto my son, Thomas Bartow, his heirs and assigns for ever, all my tract of land in Monmouth County, in East New Jersey, on Milstone Brook, joining to Coll. Anderson's land, containing about eleven hundred acres, granted to me and my wife Helena, by my father-in-law, John Reid, by deed bearing date the tenth day of November, Anno Domini one thousand seven hundred and five; also one half of a fortieth part of a propriety in East New Jersey, granted to me by said John Reid, by deed, dated the fourth day of April, Anno Dom., one thousand seven hundred and fourteen, and all my Greek and Latin books, my watch, and a new English Bible in Quarto. *Item*, I give unto my son, Theodosius Bartow, his heirs and assigns forever, all my tract of land situate in Monmouth County, in East New Jersey, on the east branch, containing five hundred acres, joyning to James Edwards, also all my meadow on the south side of said branch, from the lower end of the timber swamp down to the mouth of said branch; also all my tract of Indian purchase land to the northward of this tract; also two-eighths of a moyety of a sixteenth part of a twenty-fourth part of propriety of East New Jersey, granted to John Reid, Senr., by Gowen Drummond, and by John Reid to me, my other gold ring, and a new English Bible in Quarto. *Item*, I give unto my son Anthony Bartow, his heirs and assigns forever, all my tract of land on Monlapau River, beginning at the head of Mountbrook, and runs thence south-east fifty-two chains, thence north north-west half a point, westerly to the land late of Robert Barclay, thence south-west to the said River, where said Mount-brook falls into said River, thence up the stream of said brook to where it began; also that tract of my Indian purchase land joining on the south to my son Thomas's land hereinbefore given him; also two-eighths of a moyety of a sixteenth part of a twenty-fourth part or propriety of East New Jersey, granted by Gowen Drummond to John Reed, Senr., and by him to me, and a new English Bible in Quarto. *Item*, I give unto my son, Basil Bartow, his heirs and assigns forever, all my tract of land in the County of Middlesex, in East New Jersey, on South River, being four hundred and fifty acres, and sixty acres of salt meadow in the round-about meadow, also two-eighths of a moyety of a sixteenth part of a twenty-fourth part of a propriety in East New Jersey, granted by Gowen Drummond to John Read, Senr., and by him to me, also my tract of Indian purchase land, called Price Hill, and a new English Bible in



Quarto. *Item*, I give all my lands, buildings, and meadows, and the twenty-five pounds privileged hereby granted, to my wife during her natural life; from and after her decease, to my six sons—Thomas, Theophilus, Theodosius, John, Anthony, and Basil—to be divided equally between, for the use of them and their several heirs and assigns forever. *Item*, I give all my other English books equally between my wife and my six sons aforesaid, each of them to have an equal part. *Item*, I hereby will and order, that if one or more of my sons should depart this life and leave no lawful begotten issue, that the lands, the meadows, and all other the premises hereby given unto such son or sons, shall be equally divided between my other sons, and the issue of such of them as may be deceased; that is to say, I will that the lawful issue of any of my sons which may be de'd, shall inherit in the stead of their de'd Father one equal part among them, (if more than one) with my surviving son or sons of such estate or estates as I have hereby given unto such son or sons as may and shall dye under age, and without lawful begotten issue as aforesaid. *Item*, I hereby order, that whereas one James Miller, lays claim to some part of my lands and meadows in East New Jersey, and that the said Miller has proposed to convey unto me all his right and title whatsoever, of, in and to all and any part of my said lands and meadows, on consideration of my paying unto him one hundred pounds, Proclamation money; if the agreement be not compleated before my decease, my ex'tors shall, upon the said James Miller, or his heirs, or any others by him lawfully authorized, executing sufficient deeds in the law for all the right, title and demand of him the said James Miller, his heirs or assigns, of, in, or to all or any of my lands, meadows, and rights in the Province of East New Jersey, by which deeds the same shall be confirmed pursuant and agreeable to this my last will and testament; and for, and to the use and uses of such of my children to whom I have given the same, pay unto the said James Miller, his heirs, ex'tors, adm'rs, or assigns, one hundred pounds proclamation money, to be raised out of my personal estate. Lastly, I hereby nominate and appoint my beloved wife, and William Forster, of Westchester aforesaid, to be ex'tors of this my last will and testament.

In witness whereof, I have hereunto set my hand and seal, the day and year abovesaid.

JOHN BARTOW.

Signed, sealed, published, pronounced and declared by the said John Bartow to be his last will and testament, in the presence of

THO. HADDEN,  
WILL. THOMPSON, &  
DANIEL TURNER.

Mr. Bartow was succeeded in 1727 by the Rev. Thomas Standard, A.M., M.D., a native of Taunton, Somersetshire, England; and descended from an ancient family of that name, formerly seated at White-Hill, in Oxfordshire.<sup>a</sup> He appears to have been brought up as a physician, but changed his profession and entered the ministry. In 1725 he was appointed by order of the Venerable Society, their missionary at

<sup>a</sup> The arms of the family were: vert, an arrow, in pale, or, feathered and headed arg.—Crest, a cubit, arm, erect, vert, cuffed arg. holding in the hand ppr, a bow, strung. . . .



Brookhaven, upon Long Island. From his first letter to the Secretary of that body, we take the following extract:—

“October 5th, 1725.—It is with satisfaction on all sides, yt I can now tell you that I am safely arrived at New York, a country both pleasant and plentiful, where I landed the 10th of the last month, and where I believe I shall take up my abode for the poor remainder of my life; and let me add, that it is a pity that some clergymen who are starving at home, and who, to my knowledge, have sometimes been so hard put to it, as not to be able to tell where to get a Sunday's dinner for themselves and family, should show so much unwillingness to transplant themselves to our plantations, where their ministrations are so much wanted, and where there is a people speaking their own language, and who are ready to receive them with all marks of respect and affection, even here in York, which I take to have a serene and healthful air above any other of the plantations.

“P. S. October 19th.—I am now at the City of New York, where I am collecting, among the church friends, for the building of a church at Brookhaven, &c. Designing to set up catechising in my parish, I have borrowed a few catechisms of Mr. Wetmore, &c. I hope the next time you will put me into a condition to repay the same.”<sup>a</sup>

October, 1726, he writes to the Secretary thus:—

“Rev. Sir.—I humbly beg you would use your interest for me with the Honorable Society, for my remove to Westchester, and that the person assigned for Westchester (if any such there be), may be ordered hither. Such a remove would be a very great favor to me, in my present circumstances; in that Westchester is between four or five hours ride from York, where I may be abundantly supplied with any convenience of life.”<sup>b</sup>

The following mandate was issued by his Excellency, William Burnet, on the 8th of July, 1727:—

**MANDATE FROM GOVERNOR BURNET TO INDUCT THE REV. THOMAS STANDARD TO THE RECTORY OF WESTCHESTER.**

WILHELMUS BURNET Armiger Provinciæ Novi Eboraci, necnon Novæ Cæsariæ in America Strategus et Imperator ejusdemque Vice Admiralis, &c.

UNIVERSIS et Singulis Clericis et Ministris Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ quibuscumque in et per totam Provinciâ Novi Eboraci Ubilibet Constitutis Sive Ædilibus Ecclesiæ Parochialis de Estria Occidentalis in Comitatu Estriæ Occidentalis infra provinciâ predictâ prolix Tempore Salutem Cum dilectum in Christo Thomâ Standard Clericum ad rectoriam sive Ecclesiâ parochialem predictâ Essriæ Occidentalis in Comitatu in dictâ Provinciâ Novi Eboraci in America, Jam vacantem Ipsum que præsentatum Rectorem Ejusdem Rectoriæ Sive Ecclesiæ parochialis in et de Eadem Admissam Vobis Conjunctim et Divisim Comitto et

<sup>a</sup> Hawks' New York MSS., from archives at Fulham, vol. 1, 668, 671.

<sup>b</sup> Hawks' New York MSS., from archives at Fulham, vol. 1, 674.

firmiter injungendo mando, Quatenus Eundem Thoma Standard Clericum Sive procuratorem suum Legitimum Ejus Nomine et pro se in Realem Actuaalem Corporalem possessionem Ipsius Rectoriæ et Ecclesiæ parochialis de Estriæ Occidentali predict. Glebarium, Juriumque: et pertinentium Suorum Univer sorem. Conferatis Inductis Inducive faciatis et Inductum defendalis et quid in premissis feceritis me aut alium Judicem in hac parte Competentum quemcumque; debite (cum ad id congrue fueritis requisiti certificetis seu sic certificet ille vestrum qui) præsens hoc mandatum fuerit executus. Datum sub sigillo prerogativæ dictæ Provinciæ Novi Eboraci viii, die Junii Anno Salutis MDCCXXVII.

W. BURNET.

By His Excellency's Command,

Ja. BOBIN, D. Sec'ry.<sup>a</sup>

In his report for 1728, Mr. Standard says:

"That he preaches one Sunday at Eastchester and another at Westchester, twice a day, for the summer half year, and that he catechises the children publicly at Eastchester: and has baptized since he came to Westchester about fifty children, besides two grown persons: and that the number of his communicants are about thirty."<sup>b</sup>

"At a meeting of the trustees and freeholders of the borough town of Westchester, held the 14th of March, 1729, present, Miles Oakley, president, and Thomas Hadden, Nathaniel Underhill, Underhill Barnes, Thomas Baxter, John Palmer, Thomas Hunt, Joseph Hunt, and James Baxter, trustees:—ordered, that Nathaniel Underhill, treasurer, pay Ebenezer Haviland:

|  |         |
|--|---------|
| For a spindle for the church, . . . . .  | £3 7 6  |
| To JUSTICE HADDEN, for lath and service done, . . . . .  | 2 8 0   |
| To CAPTAIN OAKLEY for service done, . . . . .  | 0 6 0   |
| Allowed the treasurer for four white oak plank, carting ditto, and<br>for the weathercock, . . . . . | 1 1 0   |
| To WM. OAKLEY for bringing the weathercock from New York, . . . . .                                  | 0 3 0   |
| To ISRAEL HONEYWELL for 4500 shingles and carting, and paid for<br>mending the windows, . . . . .    | 12 1 0  |
| To MR. GILLAIM for work done above his articles, . . . . .   | 9 2 3   |
| To MR. GILLAIM for work as per articles, . . . . .   | 42 0 0  |
| To expenses at making the agreement, . . . . .   | 2 0 0   |
| To MR. BARNET, expenses at this meeting, . . . . .   | 0 9 0   |
| To JEREMIAH FOWLER's expenses, . . . . .   | 0 10 0  |
| Total," <sup>c</sup> . . . . .   | £73 7 9 |

"At a meeting of the trustees, &c., had on the 6th day of May, A. D. 1729, present, Miles Oakley, president, John Palmer, Thomas Baxter, Joseph Hunt, Thomas Hadden, Thomas Hunt, Nathaniel Underhill,

<sup>a</sup> Albany deed book, xii. p. 160.

<sup>b</sup> Printed abstracts of Ven. Prop. Soc.

<sup>c</sup> Westchester Town Rec. vol. ix, p. 212.

John Cromwell, Underhill Barnes, and Miles Oakley, jr., trustees; pursuant to an act of general assembly of this province, passed in the tenth year of the reign of our late sovereign lord, King William the Third, of glorious memory, entitled an act to enable the respective towns in this province to build and repair their meeting houses and other publick buildings:

“*Resolved, nemine contra dicente*, That the sum of £70 shall be raised, and also the collection for the same sum, for the repairing St. Peter's church in said Westchester, and for no other use; and that they will make a rate accordingly, agreeable to ye next assessments to be made and taken of the town sworn assessors, and that they will meet on ye 22d inst., to agree with workmen for that purpose.”<sup>a</sup>

At a subsequent meeting of the trustees, “£16 was ordered to be raised to finish the seats of the church, secure the frame, and to pay off the arrears—the seats to be made with backs—including the collector's fees; and Underhill Barnes and Thomas Hunt are appointed overseers of the work, and to employ workmen. It was further ordered that a warrant be issued for raising said money according to law, to be paid at ye same time with the county tax. Also ordered, that the overseers now chosen require Henry Gillaim to complete his work, especially the front of the gallery, and to make it secure and substantial.”<sup>b</sup>

#### MR. STANDARD TO THE SECRETARY.

WESTCHESTER, NOV. 5, 1729.

“REV. SIR:—The difficulty of the undertaking has hitherto discouraged me from attempting an answer to the letter of inquiries which was sent me long ago; but I am resolved to send you the best account I can, with relation to those heads of inquiry you were pleased to send me.

“As to the first, in my parish are three churches, the first of Westchester in the town so called, deemed the mother church, in that the presentation from the Governour runs thus:

“To the rectory of Westchester, the glebe thereof, and to all the rights and appurtenances of the same, in which is supposed to be included the church of Eastchester, which my predecessor died possessed of.”

“The church of Westchester is a square of twenty-eight foot of a side, about eighteen feet to the eaves, and near of the same dimensions and form as the church of Eastchester, save that the church of Westchester hath a sort of cupulo in which is hung a bell, so that the whole resembles much our pigeon houses in England.

“The churches both of East and Westchester, and indeed most of the buildings of this country, are made after the following manner, viz.: they make a frame of certain dimensions which they raise by piecemeal; first, placing the under post upon stones placed here and there to support it; when the whole

<sup>a</sup> Westchester Town Rec. vol. ix, p. 206.

<sup>b</sup> Ibid, vol. ix. p. 213.

frame is put together they fill up the vacancies under the said frame, which they call underpinning; then they raise the top part or roof in like manner as we do with rafters, applying upon them laths, and upon them they nail some split wood, commonly cedar, that being the most in esteem, of about half an inch thick, and half a foot wide, and sometimes two, sometimes three foot long, according to the intention of the builder, of being either more saving in charge, or more secure against the weather. The wall part is likewise covered with laths, and upon them are nailed, as on the roof, split wood which they call shingles, and they are placed perpendicularly, but then not so thickly placed one by the other as on the roof, where they resemble our tiles.

“The church of Westchester was built by the Quakers, (who were the first settlers in this place, and are still the most numerous party in and about it; and indeed the whole parish, as to their manners, are somewhat Quakerish) and by them was given to Colonel Heathcote, for the use and service of the Church of England.”

“The Church is endowed with thirty acres of land at £3 per annum; besides which the minister hath a salary of £50 of this currency, raised yearly by virtue of an act of Assembly, of and for this Province. The second church is that of Eastchester, built by the Independants, and by them delivered up to Mr. Bartow, who was formally inducted into the same, and kept quiet possession of it all his time, permitting the Independants sometimes to assemble in it.

“The third, is New Rochelle, where Mr. Stoup officiates, and where a certain number of the French nation have divine service according to the form and manner of the Church of England; but the greatest number of that nation, flock to a meeting house of their own erecting, who are particularly fond of the Mahometan doctrine of absolute decrees, as the Dutch likewise of this country are, who where they have no minister of their own, will establish a reader in order to hinder their people from assembling with the English.

“To the second enquiry, I answer, that the number of those well affected to the Church of England, were not above three or four families at the utmost; those that now frequent the church at West and Eastchester in the Summer-time, and especially at the afternoon service, are about one hundred; but in the winter, not half that number, though the number of inhabitants in my parish are computed to be about six thousand. Their employments is husbandry, even innkeepers, shopkeepers, smiths, and shoemakers not excepted; so that we pray, pay, and wait too, for everything done in this country.

As to their religion, those who first settled in Westchester town, some were Quakers, those in Eastchester were New England Independants, who were in love with extemporary prayers, and who remain so in some degree after they are reconciled to our Church; so that the chief hope of making proselytes, lies amongst the younger sort – and in order to this, I believe the reading of some of our defences to the objections of the Dissenters particularly, and especially the London cases abridged by Bennet, would be of singular use.

As the people of this country are all farmers, they are dispersed up and down the country: and even in towns every one has a plot of at least ten acres, which

a These statements are certainly incorrect: for we have shown, 1st, that the early inhabitants were Puritan Independants; 2d, the church was built by a public tax, levied on all the inhabitants; and 3d, all public property became vested in the Church established by law. Editor.



distances his neighbor from him ; but then they make up for the rareness of their buildings by enlarging the compass of their towns, in that they generally make townships many miles in length, it may be twenty or thirty.

"In my parish are two meeting houses, one of which is of Quakers, built within a stone throw of the church of Westchester, and is indeed a better building than that. The other is at New Rochelle. The church of Eastchester is about four miles east of that of Westchester, and the church of New Rochelle is about four miles east of Eastchester. In New Rochelle, besides the church there is a meeting house of French Protestant Dissenters ; no such meeting house being in Eastchester, they supply that want by an intrusion into the Church : to which they plead a right, as being the chief builders thereof. But I being legally presented and inducted, as was likewise my predecessor, I laid claim to it as my own proper right, exclusive of them ; and so kept them out of it for a time, but they but rarely meeting in it, and threatening a law suit, I permitted them to do as they had done in my predecessor's time : being somewhat at a loss how to behave in that affair, I should be glad to have the Society's direction therein.

"In the winter time we have severely cold weather, with very hard frosts and deep snows, which hold us at least four months, beginning generally about the middle of November, and ending about the middle of March ; but we have very cold winds sometime before and likewise sometime after the time aforesaid, so that we reckon, six months of cold and six months of hot weather, four of these being extremely cold, and four extremely hot. It is the business of the summer here, to provide for the winter, by which means few of our farmers rise, or are so much as beforehand with the world : but the far greatest number are involved in debts and difficulties by means of the intemperature of the climate, and the indolence and restiveness of the inhabitants, but few here improve in their fortunes ; so that for ought I could hitherto learn by any observation I could make in my parish, the number of those that die in it exceeds not the number of those that run out of it.

"To the third head of enquiry I answer, that there are three meeting houses in my parish—one of the Quakers of Westchester, one of the Dutch, from it three miles west, and one of the French at New Rochelle. The Dutch church has no settled teacher, but is supplied once a quarter from New York ; at other times it is supplied only by a reader. The Quakers preach against hireling priests, and pretend to give nothing to their teachers. The other Dissenters support their teachers by a free contribution raised amongst themselves.

"To the fourth head of enquiry, I say, there are three schools and three schoolmasters. The first school is at Westchester, William Forrester, master, who has a salary from the Venerable Society, whom we have the honor to serve. The second is at Eastchester, one Delpach master, who is very well adapted and fitted for that business, and is well spoken of as being diligent in it : the third is at New Rochelle, where both French and English are taught. The two last have no other encouragement than what the parents of the children taught, do give.

"To the fifth, there have been no donations that I know of, made either to the Church of West or Eastchester, nor any benefaction to the minister or schoolmaster of either place, nor is there any Library belonging to either church, save a few books Mrs. Bartow delivered to me.

"To the sixth and last head of enquiry, I answer, that in the Township of

Westchester, there are seventy-five; in that of Eastchester, twenty-six; but few of these negroes are in the service of those belonging to our Church; and then farther the state of the negroes being servitude and bondage, all the week they are held to hard work, but only Sundays excepted, when they fish or fowl or some other way provide for themselves. Their scattered positions up and down the country some distance from the church, but have all the prejudices of the masters conceiving the worse for being taught, and more apt to rebel, (an unhappy instance of which we had fourteen or fifteen years ago, in the City of New York, when and where there was an insurrection of the negroes in which several white people were destroyed, and it was observed, that the Catechumens of that kind or the most instructed of the negroes were the very leaders in that insurrection.<sup>a</sup>) are almost an invincible bar to their Christian instruction.

"But I had almost forgot one thing, which, however, is of great moment in this case—and it is, that few of them are capable of being instructed. I have now two negroes, since marriage—one of which is a girl about nine years old, whom I have had above twelve months, and have during that time several times attempted to teach her to read, but cannot yet make her know her alphabet; nor have any endeavours hitherto used with her, which have not been inconsiderable, been sufficient to make her number ten, tho' she was born in this country; nor can a fellow that is at least twenty, whom I have lately bought, tho' he has been seven years in this country, count up that number; but notwithstanding what hath been said, I hope so far to initiate them in the Christian religion as to fit them for baptism.

"I have, in obedience to our principals, publicly exhorted those that have negroes to instruct them in the principles of the Christian religion, and have offered my assistance therein, but hitherto with little success. I hope I shall succeed better in some future attempt.

"It is, I am sensible, expected that I should acquaint the Honorable Society with my labours and the success of them. I preach one Sunday at Westchester, another at Eastchester, and this I do twice a day for one half year; but then during the season, (*i. e.*) when the days are short and weather cold, and the people are obliged in the morning to attend their cattle, we have divine service but once, and that is about the middle of the day. I catechize the children in the public church at Eastchester, and have moved for it at Westchester; but have not yet succeeded, the master there not encouraging of it.

"Since I came here, I have baptized about fifty children, besides two grown persons. The number of our communicants are about thirty. You were pleased to tell me that the people of Setaucot, besides the allowance from the Society, would do something among and of themselves; but nothing being hitherto done, I desire if any subscription were by them sent to the Society—and such I am told was sent—that you would communicate them to me, and in so doing you will much oblige, Rev. Sir, your very humble servant,

THOMAS STANDARD."<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> The "negro plot" of April, 1712. "The useful course of Mr. Neau's labours, (says Dr. Hawkins) was temporarily interrupted in 1712, by an insurrection of the negroes in the city of New York. This, though soon put down, created a strong prejudice against the school, which the masters, who were for the most part averse to their being instructed, well knew how to turn to an account. There was no ground for it, however; as it appeared on the trial that but one of all Mr. Neau's scholars, and that one unpaptized, had any connexion in the plot." Note inserted by Editor.

<sup>b</sup> Hawks' MSS., from archives at Fulham, vol. ii. pp. 26 to 35.

In the spring of 1735 occurred an unhappy difference between the Rev. Thos. Standard and Mr. Forster, the Society's school-master. It appears, from a letter of Governor Cosby's to the Bishop of London, that when Mr. Vesey, the Commissary, "was last at Westchester, (30th of June, 1735,) to enquire into this affair, a complaint was exhibited in form against Mr. Standard, by the principal men of his congregation;"<sup>a</sup> to which Mr. Standard gave in his answer, on the 8th of October following, "together with certain testimonials and affidavits which he judged necessary to his vindication."<sup>b</sup> In transmitting copies of these proceedings, upon the 20th of October, 1735, to the Bishop of London, and through him to the Venerable Society, Mr. Vesey observes:

"I have not as yet served Mr. Standard's accusers with a copy of his answer to their charges against him, nor examined into the truth of the allegations; being determined to proceed no farther in a matter of this consequence, without my Lord's and the Honorable Society's express order and directions, as also hoping that they will be pleased favorably to accept his answer, seeing he has promised to reform himself and pursue the great end and design of his mission with more care and diligence for the time to come."

Here the matter seems, fortunately for both parties, to have ended; as no further proceedings were taken, and the Society still continued Mr. Standard's services at Westchester.

In 1743, Mr. Standard acquaints the Society, "that notwithstanding the country swarmed with vagrant preachers, called New Lights, he had a more numerous congregation than usual, the Lord's day preceding."<sup>c</sup>

"Upon the earnest petition of the church-wardens and vestrymen of St. Peter's church, Westchester, the Propagation Society appointed Mr. Basil Bartow, school-master of the parish in 1744." The King's Commissary transmitted the following account of this individual:—"That he is son to the Rev. John Bartow, late the Society's worthy missionary there. He is a person of good temper, sober, and pious, and well affected to the present government; conformable to the doctrine and discipline of the Church, and exceedingly well qualified for the instruction of children."<sup>d</sup>

The Society's abstracts for 1745, say:—

"Letters from New York bring an account that the churches of East and Westchester, under the care of Mr. Standard, are in a peaceable and growing state."<sup>e</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Ibid vol. ii. pp. 80, 81.

<sup>b</sup> Ibid vol. ii. pp. 76, 77.

<sup>c</sup> Printed abstracts of Ven. Prop. Soc. from 1743 to 1744.

<sup>d</sup> Ibid from 1744 to 1745.

<sup>e</sup> Ibid.



The following notice of Mr. Standard's death, and the appointment of his successor, appears in the abstracts for 1760:

"The Society being informed by a letter from the church-wardens of Westchester, dated August the first, 1760, that the Rev. Mr. Standard, their Missionary, was dead; and that for some time before his death he had been incapable, through his great age, of performing his office in the church of which he had been the incumbent, more than thirty-four years—and they earnestly praying for a worthy successor to him, that might collect the congregation, then scattered as sheep having no shepherd—the Society have granted their petition, by the appointment of the Rev. Mr. Milner, a native of that Province, and son of a gentleman of the City of New York, to the mission of Westchester; he coming over from thence recommended to the Society by the Rev. Dr. Johnson, President of the College, and by the Rev. Dr. Barclay, Rector of the church of New York; and being found worthy, was admitted into Deacon's and Priest's orders in our Church; and he now is on his voyage to Westchester, where the society have good hopes he will answer the good character transmitted to them of him, and both by doctrine and example promote the knowledge and practice of the true Christian religion."<sup>a</sup>

From the date of Probate of Mr. Standard's will, which generally points out the period of the deceased's death, it is probable that he died at Eastchester,<sup>b</sup> in the early part of January, 1760. His body lies under the communion table in St. Paul's church, where a monument has been erected to mark the spot where the ashes of this venerable missionary repose.

#### THE WILL OF THOMAS STANDARD, RECTOR OF THE PARISH OF WESTCHESTER.

"IN THE NAME OF GOD. AMEN.—I, Thomas Standard, Rector of the Parish of Westchester in the Province of New York, being far advanced in years, but of sound disposing mind and memory, (thanks be to God) do make my last will and testament in manner and form following: first and principally, I commit my precious and immortal soul into the merciful hands of God that gave it, and my body to the earth, to be decently buried at the discretion of my executors, hereinafter named, nothing doubting but I shall be raised again by the mighty power of God to a Glorious Resurrection thro' Jesus Christ my Blessed Saviour and Redeemer: and as touching my worldly estate, I do dispose thereof, as follows: my Will is, that all my just debts and funeral charges be duly paid and satisfied in some convenient time after my decease. I give and grant unto my executors hereinafter named, full power and authority to sell and dispose of all my real estate whatsoever and wheresoever, at vendue or otherwise, as they shall think

<sup>a</sup> Printed Abstracts of the Ven. Prop. Soc. from 15th Feb., 1760 to 20th Feb., 1761.

<sup>b</sup> The property opposite the present church, upon which Mr. Standard resided at the time of his death, was sold by Andrew Clements, one of his executors, and now belongs to John Alstyne, Esq.—Editor.



fitt, and to make and execute good and sufficient deeds and conveyances in the law to the purchaser or purchasers thereof ; I likewise give them power, and order them, my executors, to sell and dispose of all my moveable and personal estate whatsoever, and the monys arising from the sale of my said real and personal estate, together with all the monys I shall leave at my decease, either in my house, or that shall be due to me on bond or otherwise, I order to be disposed of as follows : and I do give and bequeath the same unto and amongst my nephews and neices, namely, Thomas Standard, of London, barber, son of my brother ———, and to George Standard and Mary Standard, children of my brother, James Standard, late of Taunton, in Somersetshire, in Old England, dec'd, and to William Burridge and Sarah Burridge, children of my sister, Sarah Burridge, the wife of William Burridge, of Taunton aforesaid, equally to be divided amongst them, share and share alike, each an equal part of all and singular my said estate, and in case either of my said nephews or neices should happen to die before the distribution of my said estate, leaving no lawful issue, then I order the share of him or her so dying, to be equally divided amongst the surviving legatees before named, but if those so dying shall leave lawfull issue, then I will that the issue of such legatee so dying, shall have the share of their dec'd father or mother. LASTLY, I NOMINATE, constitute, and appoint my trusty friends, James Bernard and Andrew Clements, both of Eastchester, in the Province of New York, gent's, executors of this my last will and testament, hereby making void all former wills by me made, declaring this only to be my last will and testament.

IN TESTIMONY whereof, I have hereunto set my hand and seal in Eastchester, the first day of February, in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and fifty-eight.

THOMAS STANDARD, [L. s.]

Signed, sealed, published and declared by the said Thomas Standard, as and for his last Will and Testament, in the presence of us, who subscribe our names as witnesses thereto, in the testator's presence.

THOMAS BUTLER,  
CHARLES VINCENT,  
LEWIS GUION,  
JNO. BARTOW."

“I, Thomas Standard, before named, do hereby further declare, that notwithstanding I have given all my estate unto my nephews and neices, to witt :— Thomas Standard, of London, barber, George Standard and Mary Standard, William Burridge and Sarah Burridge, by the foregoing will, yet it is my will, and I do order and direct my executors before named, to pay to the heirs of William Jesse, of Westhatch, near Taunton, the sum of forty pounds, sterling money of Great Britain, before they make a distribution of my said estate amongst my nephews and neices before named ; and I do order this codicil to be a part of my will, and to be of the same force and effect as if the same had been inserted in the body of the foregoing.

IN TESTIMONY whereof, I have hereto set my hand and seal, this fifth day of May, in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and fifty-eight.

Signed, sealed, published and declared by the said Thomas Standard, as and for a codicil, in the presence of us who subscribe our names as evidences thereof, in the testator's presence.

JNO BARTOW,  
CHARLES VINCENT,  
LEWIS GUION,  
THOMAS BUTLER."<sup>a</sup>

THOMAS STANDARD, [L. s.]

The state of the parish, about eleven months after Mr. Standard's death, is thus described by the Rev. Dr. Barclay, in a letter to the Secretary, from which we take the following:

#### MR. BARCLAY TO THE SECRETARY.

[*Extract.*]

NEW YORK, DEC. 10TH, 1760.

"*Westchester* and *Rye* continue still vacant. Religion is at the lowest ebb in y<sup>t</sup> country, and unless some zealous and discrete clergyman be appointed to those missions, the very term of it will soon disappear—as *Westchester* is a wide extended county, three missionaries can find more than sufficient employment, and I know of no place where they can be more serviceable; provided they have the interest of religion at heart."<sup>b</sup>

From the following passage, in the life of Samuel Johnson, D. D., by Dr. Chandler, it appears that as early as 1755, the Society had provided an assistant and successor to Mr. Standard, in the person of Mr. William Johnson, a younger son of the Doctor's; but unfortunately, their plans were frustrated by his early death." "Mr. William Johnson embarked for England, November the 8th, 1755, with a view of returning in Holy orders, to assist and succeed Mr. Standard, the superannuated missionary at *Westchester*. He was received by the Society, by Bishops Sherlock and Secker, and all the Doctor's friends, with great affection. They recommended him to the University of Oxford, for the degree of Master of Arts, which was readily conferred upon him, in the month of May, and soon after to the University of Cambridge, where he was admitted *aa eundem*. He had received holy orders in March, and had preached several times in and about London, with great reputation. But soon after his return from Cambridge, he was seized with the small-pox, which proved fatal to him on the 20th of June, 1756. He was buried in Mr.

<sup>a</sup> Transcribed from a true copy, examined with the original, by P. Banyar, D. Sec. Date of Probate, 26th Jan., 1760, Surrogates office, N. Y., vol. XXI., p. 496.

<sup>b</sup> New York MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. ii. 282.—(Hawks.)

Morley's vault, in St. Mildred's in the Poultry, where there is a handsome marble monument erected to his memory. Thus, to the inexpressible grief and disappointment of his friends, and to the great loss of the Church in America, was this amiable and promising youth cut off, in the bloom of life—making the *seventh* of those, who in their voyage to England, for Holy orders, from the northern colonies, had perished by sundry kinds of death.”<sup>a</sup>

Upon the 25th of February, 1761, the Rev. John Milner, A.M., was licensed as a Missionary, to the Province of New York, by the Bishop of London. He was the son of Nathaniel Milner, of New York, a descendant of the Myners, (or Milners) of Pugesey, in Yorkshire.<sup>b</sup> One of the early pioneers of the family in this country, was Michael Milner, of Lynn, Mass., who removed to Long Island in 1640.<sup>c</sup> Mr. Milner was born in this county circ. 1738,<sup>d</sup> and graduated at Princeton College, New Jersey, in 1755.<sup>e</sup> In 1760 he went to England for Holy orders, and the same year was ordained Deacon and Priest, by Bishop Sherlock. He embarked for his mission sometime in March, 1761, and arrived home, after a long and tedious passage, on the 13th of May, following. Upon the 12th of June, of that year, he was instituted and inducted Rector of the Parish, by Lieutenant-Governour Colden, in the following manner:—

#### LETTERS OF INSTITUTION BY LIEUT. GOVERNOUR COLDEN TO JOHN MILNER, CLERK.

I, Cadwallader Colden, Esq., President of his Majesty's Council, and Commander-in-Chief of the Province of New York, and the Territories depending thereon in America; do, in pursuance of the power devolved on me, collate, institute and establish you, John Milner, Clerk, Rector of the Parish Church at Westchester, commonly called St. Peter's church, including the several districts of Westchester, Eastchester, Yonkers, and the Manor of Pelham, in the County of Westchester, within this government, to have the care of the souls of the parishioners of the said church and district aforesaid, and to take your cure and mine.

Given under my hand and the prerogative seal of the Province of New York, at Fort George, in the City of New York, the thirteenth day of June, one thousand seven hundred and sixty-one.

CADWALLADER COLDEN.<sup>f</sup>

<sup>a</sup> *Life of Samuel Johnson*, D.D., by Thomas Bradbury Chandler, D.D., formerly Rector of St. John's church, Elizabethtown, N. J., p. 96.

<sup>b</sup> The arms of John Mynier, Lord of the Manor of Pugesey were: Sable, three bridle bits or, Crest, a bridle bit or.—See Berry's *Genealogies of Kent*.

<sup>c</sup> *Farmer's Register*.

<sup>d</sup> “Mr. Milner was a native of Westchester Colony, his father residing in N. Y.”—Fowler's MSS., B. iii., 573, B. v. p. 965.

<sup>e</sup> List of Princeton Graduates,

<sup>f</sup> Record of Commissions, Secretary of State's Office, Albany, vol. v., pp. 188-9,

MANDATE FROM LIEUT. GOVERNOR COLDEN TO INDUCT JOHN  
MILNER, CLERK, INTO THE RECTORSHIP OF THE  
PARISH CHURCH OF WESTCHESTER.

The Honorable Cadwallader Colden, Esquire, President of His Majesty's Council, and Commander-in-Chief of the Province of New York, and the Territories depending thereon in America: To all and singular, Rectors and Parish Ministers whatsoever, in the Province of New York, or to Samuel Saeden and John Hunt, the present church-wardens of St. Peter's church, at Westchester, in the County of Westchester, and to the vestrymen of the said church, and to each and every of you, GREETING: WHEREAS I have collected, instituted and established our beloved in Christ, John Milner, Clerk, to be Rector of the Parish church at Westchester, commonly called St. Peter's church, including the several districts of Westchester, Eastchester, Yonckers, and the Manor of Pelham, in the County of Westchester, within this government, vacant as is said by the natural death of Thomas Standard, the last incumbent there, on the — day of January, 1760, with all its rights and appurtenances, observing the laws and canons of right in that behalf required, and to be observed; To you therefore, jointly and severally, I do commit, and firmly enjoining, do command each and every of you that in due manner, him, the said John Milner, or his lawful proctor, in his name and for him, into the real, actual and corporal possession of the said Rectory and Parish church at Westchester, including the districts aforesaid, and of all its rights and appurtenances whatsoever, you induct, or have to be inducted, and him so inducted, you do defend; and of what you shall have done in the premises thereof, you do certify unto me, or other competent Judge, in that behalf, when thereunto you shall be duely required.

Given under my hand and the prerogative seal of the Province of New York, at Fort George, in the City of New York, the thirtieth day of June, in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and sixty-one.

CADWALLDER COLDEN.<sup>a</sup>

The Rev. Mr. Milner, the Society's Missionary at Westchester, in his letter of October 3d, 1761, acquaints the Society, "that after a long and dangerous passage, he arrived at his mission May 13th, and has ever since preached to crowded audiences. His mission, he says, is of large extent; and he is obliged to attend three churches, and till Mr. Houdin came to New Rochelle, officiated there once a month. One of his churches is a new edifice, raised by the generosity of Col. Frederick Phillips, who has given to its services a fine farm as a glebe, consisting of two hundred acres; upon which he purposes to build a good house for a minister. Mr. Milner has baptized forty-three white infants, and four adults, twelve black children and three adults. His communicants are sixteen. His catechumens, he says, have made a laudable proficiency, by which means he hopes his communicants will increase."<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Ibid.

<sup>b</sup> Printed Abstracts of Ven. Prop. Soc. for 1762-3-4-5-6-7-8, p. 51. The New York *West-Boy* of May 15th, 1761, says:—"The Rev. Mr. Milner has arrived from London in the ship Oliver."



Mr. Milner, in his letter dated June 29th, 1762, writes:—"yt since his arrival at his mission, which is fourteen months, he had baptized one hundred and fourteen, of whom forty were adults, viz: thirty whites and ten blacks, and had administered the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper four times, to thirty communicants, of which he hopes the number will increase. He constantly attends three churches in three different townships, preaching to crowded audiences of devout, well-behaved people. They have no dissenters among them, except a few Quakers. He adds, that the school is still vacant, and deprived of a teacher, but petitions the Society to continue their bounty to some worthy person who shall be chosen schoolmaster; as the school is a nursery for the Church, and of great service in these parts, which request is accordingly granted."<sup>a</sup>

In a letter dated June 4th, 1763, Mr. Milner "expresses his own and his people's sense of the favour done them, in giving them leave to choose a schoolmaster for this place, tho' they have not yet been able to find a person properly qualified for that office. He likewise informs the Society that he has procured a charter for St. Peter's church, which will greatly promote the interests of virtue and religion; and that his people have purchased a house, with a glebe of thirty acres, not far from the church. From June 29th, 1762, to the date of this letter, he has baptized eighty infants, among whom three were blacks, and seven adults; one of them a man near sixty years old, who is since admitted to full communion. The number of his communicants is increased to fifty-three, above forty have been added since his arrival at his mission, which was about two years at the time of his writing."<sup>b</sup>

The following petition was presented for the charter alluded to in the above letter:—

TO THE HONOURABLE CADWALLADER COLDEN, ESQ., HIS  
MAJESTY'S LIEUTENANT GOVERNOUR AND COMMANDER  
IN-CHIEF OF THE PROVINCE OF NEW YORK, AND THE  
TERRITORIES DEPENDING THEREON IN AMERICA.

The petition of the subscribers, inhabitants of the Borough Town of Westchester, in the County of Westchester, in behalf of themselves and the rest of the inhabitants of the said Town, in Communion of the Church of England, as by law established;

HUMBLY SHEWETH:

That for many years past there has been a church in the said town of Westchester for the administration of *Divine Service*, according to the use of the

<sup>a</sup> Printed Abstracts of Ven. Propagation Society, for 1762.

<sup>b</sup> Printed Abstracts of Ven. Propagation Society for 1763.

Church of England, as by law established; but that for want of proper persons to superintend the affairs and interests of the same with legal authority, the building is now considerably out of repair—and pious and well disposed persons are discouraged in their designs of contributing to, and establishing proper funds for the support of the said church and minister thereof; for remedying which,

Your petitioners humbly pray, that your honour will be favourably pleased to grant unto them his Majesty's Letters Patent, constituting your Petitioners, or such of them as shall be thought proper, a Body Politic and Corporate, for the purposes of conducting and managing the affairs and interests of the said church in such manner and form, and with such rights, priveledges and immunities, as were heretofore granted to the inhabitants of the town of Flushing, in Queen's County, in communion of the Church of England, or with such other rights, priveledges, and immunities, as shall be thought reasonable and proper; and your petitioners shall ever pray.

JOHN MILNER,  
JOHN BARTOW,  
J. WILLETT,  
LEWIS MOREIS, JR.,

PETER DE LANCEY,  
N. UNDERHILL,  
JAMES GRAHAM,  
JAMES V. CORTLANDT.<sup>a</sup>

On the 12th of May, 1762, the petition was read and granted in the following manner:—

#### ROYAL CHARTER OF ST. PETER'S CHURCH, IN THE BOROUGH TOWN OF WESTCHESTER.

“George the third, by the grace of God, of Great Britain, France and Ireland, king, defender of the faith, &c., to whom these presents shall come, greeting: whereas, our loving subject, the Rev. John Milner, Rector of St. Peter's church, in the Borough Town of Westchester, and the County of Westchester, in our Province of New York, and John Bartow, Isaac Willett, Lewis Morris, Jr., Peter De Lancey, Nathaniel Underhill, James Graham and James van Cortlandt, inhabitants of the said Borough Town of Westchester, in Communion of the Church of England, as by law established; in behalf of themselves and the rest of the inhabitants of the said town, in communion as aforesaid, by their humble petition, presented on the twelfth day of May last, to our trusty and well beloved Cadwallader Colden, Esq., then our Lieutenant Governour and Commander-in-chief of our Province of New York, and the territories depending thereon in America; in council did set forth, that for many years past there had been a church in the said Town of Westchester, for the regular administration of *Divine Service* according to the use of the Church of England, as by law established, but that for the want of proper persons to superintend the affairs and interests of the same with legal authority, the building was considerably out of repair, and pious and well disposed persons were discouraged in the designs of contributing to and establishing proper funds for the support of the said church and the minister thereof; for remedying whereof, the said petitioners did humbly pray a letter patent, constituting the said petitioners, or such of them as shall be thought proper, a body

<sup>a</sup> New York Col. MSS (Colden.) 1761-2, vol. xc. Sec. of State's Office.

politic and corporate, for the purpose of conducting and managing the affairs and interests of the said church, in such manner and form, and with such rights, privileges and immunities as were heretofore granted to the inhabitants of the town of Flushing, in Queen's County, in Communion of the Church of England, or with such other rights, privileges and immunities as should be thought reasonable and proper; now we being willing to encourage the pious intentions of our said loving subjects, and to grant this their reasonable request, know ye, that of our especial grace, certain knowledge and mere motion, we have ordained, given, granted and declared, and by these presents for us, our heirs, and successors, do ordain, give, grant and declare, that they the said petitioners, and the rest of the inhabitants of the said Borough Town of Westchester, in Communion of the Church of England, as by law established, and their successors, the Rector and inhabitants of the said Borough Town of Westchester, in Communion of the Church of England as by law established, hereafter shall be a body corporate and politic, in deed, fact and name, by the name, style and title of the Rector and inhabitants of the Borough Town of Westchester, in Communion of the Church of England, as by law established, and them and their successors by the same name. We do by these presents, for us, our heirs and successors, really and fully make, erect and constitute one body politic and corporate, in deed, fact and name forever, and we give, grant and ordain, that they and their successors, the Rector and inhabitants of the Borough Town of Westchester, in Communion of the Church of England, as by law established, by the same name shall and may have perpetual successions, and shall and may be capable in law to sue and be sued, implead and be impleaded, answer and be answered unto, defend and be defended in all courts and elsewhere, in all manner of actions, writs, complaints, pleas, causes, matters and demands whatsoever, as fully and amply as any other our liege subjects of our said province of New York may or can sue or be sued, implead or be impleaded, defend, or be defended, by any lawful way or means whatsoever; and that they and their successors by the same name shall be for ever hereafter capable and able in the law to purchase, take, hold, receive and enjoy any messuages, tenements, personal and real estate whatsoever in fee simple for the term of life or lives, or in any other manner howsoever for the use of the said church; and also any goods, chattels or personal estate whatsoever, provided always that the clear yearly value of the said real estate (exclusive of the said church and the ground whereon the same is built, and the cemetery belonging to the same,) doth not at any time exceed the sum of five hundred pounds current money of our said province, and that they and their successors by the same name shall have full power and authority to give, grant, sell, leave and dispose of the same real estate for life or lives, or year or for ever, under certain yearly rents, and all goods and chattels and personal estate whatsoever, at their will and pleasure, and that it shall and may be lawful for them and their successors to have and use a common seal; and our will and pleasure further is, and we do hereby for us, our heirs and successors, ordain and appoint, that there shall be for ever hereafter belonging to the said church, one Rector of the Church of England, as by law established, duly qualified for the care of souls, two church-wardens and eight vestrymen who shall conduct and manage the affairs and business of the said church, and confer in manner as hereafter is established and appointed; and for the more immediate carrying into execution our royal will and pleasure herein, we do



hereby assign, constitute and appoint Isaac Willett and Nathaniel Underhill, the elder, to be the present church-wardens, and Peter De Lancey, James Graham, James van Cortlandt, Lewis Morris, John Smith, Theophilus Bartow, Cornelius Willett and Thomas Hunt, to be the present vestrymen of the said church, who shall hold, possess and enjoy their respective offices until Tuesday in Easter week now next ensuing, and for the keeping of the succession in the said offices our royal will and pleasure is, and we do hereby establish, direct and require, that on the said Tuesday in Easter week now next ensuing, and yearly and every year thereafter, for ever on Tuesday in Easter week in every year, the Rector and inhabitants of the Borough Town of Westchester in Communion of the Church of England, as by law established, shall meet at the said church, and there by the majority of voices of such of them as shall so meet, elect and choose two of their members to be church-wardens. and eight others of their members to be vestrymen of the said church for the ensuing year, which said church-wardens and vestrymen so elected and chosen, shall immediately enter upon their respective offices, and hold, exercise and enjoy the same respectively, from the time of such elections for and during the space of one year, and until other fit persons shall be elected and chosen in their respective places; and in case the church-wardens or vestrymen, or either of them, by these presents named and appointed, or which shall hereafter be elected and chosen, shall die or remove from the said Borough Town of Westchester, before the time of their respective appointed services shall be expired, or refuse or neglect to act in the office for which he or they is or are herein nominated and appointed, or whereunto he or they shall or may be elected and chosen, then our royal will and pleasure is, and we do hereby direct and ordain and require the rector and inhabitants of the borough town of Westchester in communion as aforesaid, for the time being, to meet at the said church and choose other or others of their numbers in place and stead of him or them so dying, removing or refusing to act within thirty days next after such contingency; and in this case for the more due and orderly conducting the said elections, and to prevent any undue proceedings therein, we do hereby give full power and authority to, and ordain and require that the rector and the church-wardens of the said church for the time being, or any two of them, shall appoint the time for such election or elections, and that the rector of the said church, or in his absence one of the church-wardens for the time being, shall give public notice thereof by publishing the same at the said church immediately after divine service, on the Sunday preceding the day appointed for such elections, hereby giving and granting that such person or persons as shall be chosen from time to time by the rector and inhabitants of the said borough town of Westchester in communion as aforesaid, or the majority of such of them as shall in such case meet in manner hereby directed, shall have, hold, exercise and enjoy such the office or offices to which he or they shall be so elected and chosen from the time of such election until the Tuesday in Easter week thence next ensuing, and until other or others be legally chosen in his or their place instead, as fully and amply as the person or persons in whose place he or they shall be chosen might or could have done by virtue of these presents, and we do hereby will and direct that this method shall for ever hereafter be used for the filling up all vacancies that shall happen in either the said offices between the annual elections above directed; and our royal will and pleasure further is, and we do hereby for us, our heirs and suc-



cessors, give and grant that as well the church-wardens and vestry, or those present nominated and appointed as such, as shall from time to time be hereafter elected and chosen as is herein directed, shall have, and they are hereby invested with full power and authority to execute their several and respective offices in as full and ample manner as any church-wardens or vestrymen in that part of our kingdom of Great Britain called England, or in this our province of New York, can or lawfully may execute their said respective offices; and further our royal will and pleasure is, and we do by these presents for us, our heirs and successors, give, grant, ordain and appoint, that the rector and church-wardens of said church for the time being, or any two of them, shall and may from time to time as occasion shall require, summon and call together at such day and place as they shall think proper the said rector, church-wardens and vestrymen for the time being to meet in vestry, giving them at the least one day's notice thereof, and we hereby require them to meet accordingly; and we do hereby give, grant and ordain, that the said rector, and one of the said church-wardens for the time being at least, together with the majority of the said vestrymen of the said church, for the time being, being met in vestry as above directed, shall for ever hereafter, have, and they are hereby invested with full power and authority by a majority of their voices to do and execute in the name of the rector and inhabitants of the borough town of Westchester, in communion of the Church of England as by law established, all and singular powers and authorities herein before given and granted to the said rector and inhabitants of the borough town of Westchester in communion of the Church of England as by law established, any wise touching or relating to such lands; messages, tenements, real and personal estate whatsoever, as they the said rector and inhabitants of the borough town of Westchester, in communion as aforesaid, shall or may acquire for the use of the said church, and also in like manner to order, direct, manage, and transact the general interest, business and affairs of our said corporation, and also shall have full power and authority in like manner to make and ordain such rules, orders, and ordinances as they shall judge convenient for the good government and discipline of the members of said church, provided such rules, orders and ordinances be not repugnant to the laws of that part of our kingdom of Great Britain called England, or this our province of New York, but as near as may be agreeable thereto, and that the same be fairly entered in a book or books to be kept for that purpose, and also in like manner to appoint the form of the common seal herein before granted, and the same to alter, break, and remake at their direction; and also in like manner to appoint such officer or officers as they shall stand in need of, always provided that the rector of the said church for the time being shall have the sole power of nominating and appointing the clerk to assist him in performing divine service, as also the sexton—anything herein contained to the contrary in any wise notwithstanding—which clerk and sexton shall hold and enjoy their respective offices during the will and pleasure of the rector of the said church for the time being; and in case of any avoidance of the said church either by the death of the rector thereof or otherwise, then our royal will and pleasure is that the powers and authority hereby vested in the rector, church-wardens, and vestrymen, in vestry to meet as above mentioned, shall, until the said church be legally supplied with another incumbent, vest in and be executed by the church-wardens of the said church for the time being, provided al-

ways they have the concurrence and consent of the major number of the whole vestrymen of the said church for the time being, in any thing they shall in such case do by virtue hereof; and further we do by these presents for us, our heirs, and successors, give and grant unto the rector and inhabitants of the borough town of Westchester in communion of the Church of England as by law established, and their successors forever, that this our present grant shall be deemed, adjudged and construed in all cases most favourably, and for the best benefit and advantage of the rector and inhabitants of the borough town of Westchester in communion of the Church of England as by law established, and that this our present grant being entered on record as is hereinafter particularly expressed, shall be good and effectual in the law to all intents, constructions and purposes whatsoever, against us, our heirs and successors, according to our true interests and meaning herein before declared, notwithstanding the not reciting or mis-reciting, not naming or mis-naming of any of the aforesaid franchises, privileges, immunities, or officers, in either the premises or any of them, and although no writ of *ad quod damnum* or other writs, inquisitions in precept hath or have been upon this account, had, made, or prosecuted or issued, to have and to hold all and singular the privileges, liberties, advantages, and immunities hereby granted or meant, mentioned, or intended so to be, unto the said rector and inhabitants of the borough town of Westchester in communion of the Church of England as by law established, and to their successors forever. In testimony whereof we have caused these our letters to be made patent, and the great seal of our said province to be hereunto affixed, and the same to be entered on record in our Secretary's office, in our city of New York, in one of the books of patents there remaining. Witness, our trusty and well beloved Robt. Monckton, our Captain General and Governour-in-Chief of our province of New York and the territories depending thereon in America, Vice-Admiral of the same and Major General of our forces, at our fort in our city of New York, by and with the advice and consent of our Governour for our said province. Second day of December, in the year A. D. 1762, and of our reign the third.

[L. S.]

Signed,

CLARKE."<sup>a</sup>

The Society's abstracts for 1764, say:—

"The Rev. Mr. Milner, the Society's Missionary at Westchester, in his letters dated June 8th, and December 21st, 1764; acquaints the Society that he has, at his own expense, laid out a sum, amounting to two hundred pounds currency, repaired the parsonage house, built a new barn and out houses, (the vestry promising to reimburse him as soon as their circumstances will permit), and the people of Eastchester have laid the foundation of a new stone church, seventy-one feet by thirty-eight, in the room of a small decayed wooden building, erected in the infancy of their settlement. Mr. Milner has, in pursuance of the powers given him by the Society, appointed Mr. Nathaniel Seabury, a son of the late worthy missionary at Hempstead, to be school master at Westchester."

The church-wardens of Westchester in their letter, dated July 7, 1764,

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Rec. Book of Patents, No. xiii, p. 490-495. The original document or parchment is in possession of the clerk of the vestry.

acquaint the Society "that they have purchased a glebe of near thirty acres, with a house, which, when they have repaid Mr. Milner the expense he has been at, will cost them, in the whole, near seven hundred pounds, which they spend with great cheerfulness, as their minister's behaviour has very much endeared him to the people; and his diligence has been attended with such success, that whole families of Quakers—the only dissenters in this parish—have conformed to the Church. Mr. Milner has baptized, within the year, seventy-two whites, and nineteen black infants; and has fifty communicants."<sup>a</sup>

Mr. Milner continued his services in the parish, until the fall of 1765, as appears by the following extract from a letter of Mr. John Bartow, to the Bishop of London:—

BOROUGH OF WESTCHESTER, IN THE PROVINCE  
OF NEW YORK, OCT. 15TH, 1765.

"The Honourable Society's Missionary for our parish of Westchester has left us. I expect the vestry of this parish will soon address the Honourable Society for the continuance of their favours; and I beg your lordship's care and protection over us, and that you will assist in sending a faithful minister to reside here. I suppose our vestry may nominate, but still there may want inspection."<sup>b</sup>

For what reason Mr. Milner resigned his benefice, does not now very clearly appear. It is not improbable, however, that the large sum of money expended by him on the glebe, may have had some connection with his leaving. In 1766, he was settled rector of the Isle of Wight and Southampton, in Virginia. In 1768, he addressed the following letter to the Secretary:—

MR. MILNER TO THE SECRETARY.

[EXTRACT.]

NEWPORT PARISH, ISLE OF WIGHT, FEB. 3RD, 1768.

REV. SIR:—"I am very sorry to inform you that the people of Westchester pay very little regard, either to their promises, or the Society's expectations; for I am informed by my lawyer that they absolutely refuse to refund me one penny of all the money I have expended on their glebe, which, without the repairs and buildings I made, would have been entirely useless. I am now settled in Virginia, where the Church is established in reality, and some certain provision made for the clergy, etc."<sup>c</sup>

"In 1766," says Bishop Mead, "the Rev. Mr. Milner is the minister of the parishes in the Isle of Wight and Southampton, and resigns in

<sup>a</sup> Printed abstracts of Ven. Prop. Soc. from 17th Feb. 1764, to 15th Feb. 1765.

<sup>b</sup> New York MSS., from archives at Fulham, vol. ii., 330-332. (Hawk's).

<sup>c</sup> Ditto, vol. ii., 446.



1770."<sup>a</sup> He probably died in 1775, for his name appears among the deceased clergy, in "a list of persons licensed to the plantations," ending Dec. 28, 1777.<sup>b</sup>

A vacancy of nearly a year occurred before the Rev. Samuel Seabury, A.M., was appointed to the mission. "In 1776," says Dr. Hawkins, "Mr. Seabury intimated to the Society his wish to accept the offer of the mission of Westchester, which was made by him to the church-wardens and vestrymen; and the Society consenting to his proposal, he removed thither at the end of the year 1766."<sup>c</sup>

Mr. Seabury was the oldest son of the Rev. Samuel Seabury, a descendant of John Seaberry, of Boston, Mass., whose family were originally seated at Porlake, in Devonshire, England. Samuel, the son of John Seaberry, and Grace, his wife, was born 10th Dec. 1640. Samuel Seabury, M. D., was a noted surgeon at Duxbury, Mass., in the 17th century. His son, John Seabury, was born in 1673, and died at Hempstead, L. I., Dec., 17, 1759. His son, Samuel, was born in 1706, and was graduated at Harvard University, in 1724. He settled at Groton, Conn., as a Congregational minister, and is said to have married Abigail Mumford. From intercourse with Dr. McSparran, of Narragansett, Mr. Seabury became an Episcopal clergyman, and was appointed by the Society, in 1728, the first missionary of St. James's church, then at New London. His wife died in 1731. In 1733, he married Elizabeth Powell, (she died Feb. 6, 1799, aged 87), the daughter of Adam Powell, a merchant of Newport, R. I., and grand-daughter of Gabriel Bernon. In 1742 he removed to Hempstead, on L. I., where he died June 15, 1764. The following is the inscription on his tombstone:—

"Here lyeth interred the body of the

REV. SAMUEL SEABURY, A. M.,

Rector of the Parish of Hempstead,

who with the greatest diligence and most indefatigable labour, for 13 years

at New London, and 21 years in this Parish, having discharged

every duty of his sacred function,

Died the 15th of June, A.D. 1764, æt 58.

<sup>a</sup> "Old Churches and Families in Virginia," by the Rt. Rev. William Mead, Bishop of Virginia. The Rev. H. Walcoxon in a letter to the author, dated Smithfield, Isle of Wight County, Va., Jan'y. 7, 1852, says: "The oldest resident, of my acquaintance, in the county thinks, he has heard of Mr. Milner, but can give no certain or reliable information about him. The records of the parish, for many years back, have been destroyed or lost. St. Luke's church, Isle of Wight Co., Va., was built in 1632, and is undoubtedly the oldest building now standing in America erected by English settlers. The walls and tower are nearly perfect."—Circular by Rev. Jas. B. Crayhill, Suffolk, Va.

<sup>b</sup> Coll. of Prot. Epis. Hist. Society, 1851.

<sup>c</sup> Hist. Notices of the Miss. of the Church of Eng. in the North American Colonies, by Ernest Hawkins, B. D.



In gratitude to the memory of the best of husbands, his disconsolate widow, Elizabeth Seabury, hath placed this stone."

His brother, Capt. David Seabury, (remarkable for his great bodily strength,) died at the same place, Nov. 11th, 1750, aged fifty-two, unmarried.<sup>a</sup>

The ancient orthography of the surname was Sedborough, until changed, probably, by the early pioneers of the family in this country. Mr. Seabury was born in Groton, Connecticut, November 30th, 1729,<sup>b</sup> and graduated A.M., at Yale College in 1748. He also received the degree of A.M., from King's College, New York, in 1761. Soon after completing his collegiate education, he was appointed catechist by the Venerable Propagation Society, under the direction of his father, at Huntington a town about eighteen miles distant from Hempstead. In 1753, the Society received from Mr. James Wetmore, Missionary at Rye, a testimonial in favor of the Rev. Samuel Seabury, Jun., whom he represented as "a man of unblemished moral character, sound learning, and so prudent behaviour, that he would prove a worthy missionary. He accordingly recommended him for the vacant cure of New Brunswick, in the colony of New Jersey. The Society having now for some years had knowledge of him in the subordinate office of catechist, immediately gave its sanction to his coming to England for holy orders."

"The Society have appointed the Rev. Mr. Seabury, son of the Rev. Mr. Seabury, the Society's Missionary at Hempstead in Long Island, in the Province of New York, to be their Missionary to New Brunswick, out of regard to the request of the inhabitants, and to the united testimony of the Episcopal clergy of New York in his favor; as a youth of good genius, unblemished morals, sound principles in religion, and one that had made as good proficiency in literature, while in America, as the present state of learning there would admit of; and he has gone for his improvement to the University of Edinburgh, &c., &c."<sup>c</sup>

He entered on the duties of his mission at New Brunswick, in May, 1754, and in 1757 was promoted by the government to the living of Jamaica, L. I.<sup>d</sup>

He was admitted, instituted, and inducted rector of this parish by Sir Henry Moore, upon the 3d of Dec., 1766.

<sup>a</sup> The arms of the Seabury's, or Sedborough's, are:—ar. a fesse engr. betw. three Ibexes, passant sa.

<sup>b</sup> "Samuel, son of Samuel and Abigail Seabury, was born in Groton, Nov. 30th, 1729. Samuel, son of Samuel and Abigail Seabury, baptized 14th Dec., 1729, by Rev. John Owen, of Groton."—Extracts from Town Minutes, kindly furnished by Miss Calkins.

<sup>c</sup> Hawkins' Missions.—The Society's abstracts for 1753.

<sup>d</sup> Some of his letters, whilst stationed at Jamaica, may be found in the 3d vol. of the Doc. History of N. Y.

### GOVERNOUR MOORE'S ADMISSION OF MR. SEABURY TO BE RECTOR OF THE PARISH OF WESTCHESTER.

I, SIR HENRY MOORE, BARONET, Captain General, and Governour-in-chief, in and over the province of New York, and territories depending thereon, in America, Chancellor and Vice Admiral of the same; do admit you, Samuel Seabury, Clerk, to be Rector of the Parish Church of Westchester, commonly called St. Peter's church, including the several districts of Westchester, Eastchester, Yonkers, and the Manor of Pelham, in the County of Westchester, in the said province, with all their rights, members and appurtenances. Given under my hand and the prerogative seal of the province of New York, the third day of December, in the year of our Lord, One thousand seven hundred and sixty-six.

H. MOORE.

### LETTERS OF INSTITUTION BY GOVERNOUR MOORE TO MR. SEABURY.

I, SIR HENRY MOORE, BARONET, Captain General and Governour-in-chief, in and over the province of New York and the territories depending thereon, in America, Chancellor and Vice Admiral of the same; do institute you Samuel Seabury, Clerk, Rector of the Parish church at Westchester, commonly called St. Peter's church, including the several districts of Westchester, Eastchester, Yonkers, and the Manor of Pelham, in the County of Westchester in the said province, to have the care of souls of the parishioners of the said parish, and take your cure and mine. Given under my hand and the prerogative seal of the province of New York, this third day of December, in the year of our Lord, One thousand seven hundred and sixty-six.

H. MOORE.

### MANDATE FROM GOVERNOUR MOORE TO INDUCT MR. SEABURY INTO THE RECTORSHIP OF THE PARISH OF WESTCHESTER.

HIS EXCELLENCY, SIR HENRY MOORE, BARONET, Captain General, and Governour-in-chief, in and over the province of New York, and the territories depending thereon in America, Chancellor and Vice Admiral of the same, to all and singular, Rectors and Parish Ministers whatsoever in the province of New York, or to the Church-wardens and Vestrymen of St. Peter's church, at Westchester, in the county of Westchester, and to each of you greeting. Whereas, I have collated, instituted and established our beloved in Christ, Samuel Seabury, Clerk, to be Rector of the parish church at Westchester, commonly called St. Peter's church, including the several districts of Westchester, Eastchester, Yonkers, and the Manor of Pelham in the county of Westchester, within this Government, vacant, as is said, by the resignation of John Milner, Clerk, the last incumbent there, with all its rights and appurtenances, observing the laws and canons of right in that behalf, required and to be observed. To you, therefore, jointly and severally, I do commit, and firmly injoining do command each and every of you that in due manner him, the said Samuel Seabury, or his lawful proctor in his name and for him into the real, actual and corporal possession of the said Rectory

and Parish Church at Westchester, including the district aforesaid, and of all its rights and appurtenances. Whatsoever you induct, or cause to be inducted and him so inducted you do defend; and of what you shall have done in the premises thereof, you duly certify unto me, or other competent judge in that behalf, when thereunto you shall be duly required, Given under my hand and the prerogative seal of the province of New York, at Fort George, in the city of New York, the third day of December, in the year of our Lord, One thousand seven hundred and sixty-six.

H. MOORE.<sup>a</sup>

The state of the parish, about seven months after his induction, appears from the following report to the Society:—

#### MR. SEABURY TO THE SECRETARY.

[*Extract.*]

WESTCHESTER, JUNE 25TH, 1767.

REV. SIR:—"The congregation at Westchester is very unsteady in their attendance; sometimes there are more than the church, which is a small old wooden building, can contain; at other times very few, generally, near two hundred. The communicants are few, the most I have had has been twenty-two; two new ones have been added since I have been here. At Eastchester, which is four miles distant, the congregation is generally larger than at Westchester. The old church in which they meet, as yet, is very small and cold. They have erected, and just completed the roof of a large well-built stone church, in which they have expended, they say, seven hundred pounds currency; but their ability seems to be exhausted, and I fear I shall never see it finished. I applied last winter to his Excellency Sir Henry Moore, for a brief in their favour; but the petition was rejected. Since I came into this parish I have preached every other Sunday at Westchester, in the morning; and have after prayers in the afternoon, catechised the children and explained the catechism to them. I was the more inclined to do this, as they have never been used to any evening service at all; and as there seemed to be but little sober sense of religion amongst the lower sort of people, I was in hopes by this means to lay some foundation of religious knowledge in the younger part of the congregation. I cannot yet boast of the number of my catechumens which is but ten, but most of them repeat the catechism extremely well. There are also a considerable number of young people who attend to hear, and are very attentive. I should be very much obliged to the Society for a number of Lewis's catechisms, and some small Common Prayer books, and such other tracts as they think proper; these things presented to the children and younger people by their minister, I have found by my own experience, gives them impressions in his favour, and dispose them to come to church and to make their responses.

At Westchester I have baptised six white children, and one mulatto adult; at Eastchester, eight white, and at New Rochelle seven white and two negro children. Before I left Jamaica, I baptised there four adults and three infants. I have made two visits there since, and baptised one adult, two white children and three black ones; and I must do the people at Newtown the justice to inform the

<sup>a</sup> Albany Book of Commissions, vol. v. 243.

Society, that since my removal they sent me £20 currency. With regard to the income of this parish, the salary, by an act of Assembly is £50 currency. The exchange from N. Y. to London being generally from £70 to £80 for £100 sterling. Burial fees here, there are none; but the more wealthy families sometimes give the minister a linen scarf, on these occasions. Marriage fees from one to four Spanish dollars; but far the greater number go to an Independent teacher in the Parish of Rye, because his ceremony is short, and they have nothing to say. Possibly these fees may amount to £5 or £6 a year. The parsonage house is so much out of repair that it will cost £100 currency to make it comfortable, and the glebe has cost me near £20 to repair the fences; when it is put in good order, it would, I believe, rent for £25 per annum. Some of the principal people have been endeavoring to prevail on the congregation to make up the deduction from the Society's salary by subscription, but have not succeeded—owing to the great expense they have been and must be at here in buying and repairing their parsonage house, for which they are yet in debt £100, and to the necessity they will shortly be under of rebuilding their church; and the Eastchester people are exhausted by the church they have undertaken to build. I must defer writing concerning that part of the parish which is under Mr. Munroe's care, till my information is correct. The professed dissenters in this parish are not numerous; some Calvinistic or Presbyterian French at New Rochelle, a few Presbyterians at Eastchester, and some Quakers; at Westchester, a good many Quakers. But there are many families, especially among the lower classes, who do not pretend to be of any religion at all."<sup>a</sup>

"He states that one of the means which he adopted of communicating religious instruction to the people, was preaching at funerals in the more remote districts, whereby he had the opportunity of addressing those who could not be brought together at any other time."<sup>b</sup>

In 1768 Mr. George Youngs<sup>c</sup> was appointed schoolmaster at Westchester, in the room of Mr. Nathaniel Seabury, the rector's brother.

The Rev. Mr. Seabury, in his letter of October 10th, 1769, says:—"The people becomes gradually more devout, and read regular in the public worship. That he had taken pains with the negro slaves and had baptized five adults with them. The school advances. and the children make a due proficiency in learning."<sup>d</sup>

The following year he thus writes to the Secretary:—

#### MR. SEABURY TO THE SECRETARY.

[*Extract.*]

WESTCHESTER, MARCH 29TH, 1770.

REV. SIR:—"The violent party heats which prevail in this Colony as well as in the others, engross at present, the attention of the people. But I think yet even the disturbances will be attended with some advantage to the interests of the Church. The usefulness and truth of her doctrines with regard to civil govern-

<sup>a</sup> New York MSS., from Archives at Fulham, vol. li. 429 to 432. (Hawks).

<sup>b</sup> Hawkins' Notices of the Missions of the Church of England, etc.

<sup>c</sup> Mr. Youngs continued his services here until 1772.

<sup>d</sup> Society's Printed Abstracts.



ment, appear more evident from those disorders which other principles have led the people into. This is particularly remarked and publicly mentioned by the more candid and reasonable people, who seem heartily tired with the great clamours for liberty, &c., as it appears evident y<sup>t</sup> unbounded licentiousness in manners and insecurity to private property, must be the unavoidable consequence of some late measures, should they become prevalent. I hope the time is not far off when these matters will be settled upon a firm and permanent foundation; but, however, y<sup>t</sup> may be, I am confident the behaviour of the Church people, considered as a body, has been such as has done her honour, and will be remembered many years in this country with approbation."<sup>a</sup>

Nine months after the date of this communication, we find him again addressing the Secretary as follows:—

#### MR. SEABURY TO THE SECRETARY.

[*Extract.*]

WESTCHESTER, JANUARY 3D, 1771.

REV. SIR:—"The state of this mission being much the same as when I last wrote, makes it unnecessary for me to say much on y<sup>t</sup> head. In general, I must observe, y<sup>t</sup> though I think appearances are something mended since I have been in this mission, yet my success has not been equal to my first expectations. I find it very difficult to convince people y<sup>t</sup> religion is a matter of any importance. They seem to treat it as a thing unworthy of their attention, except on some particular occasions, when they are otherwise disengaged. Many come frequently to church and yet continue unbaptized, others come constantly and appear to behave devoutly, and yet cannot be prevailed upon to become communicants; while many others pay not the least regard to religion of any kind nor on any occasion. I shall, however, endeavor to do my duty; and I hope, by God's blessing, in due time, I shall see some good fruit from my labours."<sup>b</sup>

During the year 1774, he had baptized forty-nine, and admitted three new communicants.<sup>c</sup>

In April, 1775, he signed the protest at White Plains, in which he and others declared their "honest abhorrence of all unlawful Congresses and Committees," and determination, "at the hazard of our lives and properties, to support the King and Constitution; and that we acknowledge no Representatives but the General Assembly, to whose wisdom and integrity we submit the guardianship of our rights, liberties and privileges."

The following letter shows that some of the clergy had found it prudent to withdraw from the surrounding troubles and seek refuge in England:—

<sup>a</sup> New York MSS., from archives at Fulham, vol. ii. p. 505.—(Hawks.)

<sup>b</sup> New York MSS., from archives at Fulham, vol. ii. 542.—(Hawks.)

<sup>c</sup> Printed abstracts of the Ven. Society,

## MR. SEABURY TO THE SECRETARY.

[Extract.]

WESTCHESTER, MAY 30TH, 1775.

REV. SIR:—"We are here in a very alarming situation. Dr. Cooper and Dr. Chandler have been obliged to quit this community and sailed for England last week.<sup>a</sup> I have been obliged to retire a few days from the threatened vengeance of the New England people who lately broke into this Province. But I hope I shall be able to keep my station. The charge against the clergy here is a very extraordinary one—that they have, in conjunction with the Society and the British Ministry, laid a plan for enslaving America. I do not think that those people who raised this calumny, believe one syllable of it; but they intend it as an engine to turn the popular fury upon the Church, which, should the violent schemes of some of our Eastern neighbours succeed, will probably fall a sacrifice to the persecuting spirit of Independency. I am, &c.,

SAMUEL SEABURY."<sup>b</sup>

The calumny against the clergy, resembles the false charge brought against the Episcopacy itself at this period, viz., that it was "one of those causes which, as much as anything else, conduced to the horrors of the Revolution." It is almost needless to say that both were unfounded. The real cause of the American Revolution was, whether the Parliament of Great Britain had any power or authority to tax Americans without their consent. This was the foundation of the whole dispute. But surely the New England people had no right to complain, much less invade a neighbouring province by force, when they practiced upon all other denominations this *taxation without representation*.<sup>c</sup>

The following letter from Mr. Seabury to his friend Isaac Wilkins, Esq., (afterward rector of this parish,) dated May 30th, 1775, is preserved among the papers of the Wilkins family:—

MY EVER DEAR WILKINS:—"I hope you are safe in London; may every blessing attend you. Mrs. Wilkins was well last evening. Isabella has had a rash, but is better. Everything here quiet. Reported that two thousand men are ready in Connecticut for any operation for which they may be wanted in this province. The Asia is arrived—reported that she has demanded a supply of provisions for Boston, and that it is agreed that they shall be furnished. The association went on very heavily at W. C., very few signed. The Provincial

<sup>a</sup> In the old Wilkins mansion on Castle Hill Neck, Westchester, is still shown the place where Doctors Cooper, Chandler and Seabury managed to secrete themselves for some time, notwithstanding the most minute and persevering search was made for them; so ingeniously contrived was the place of their concealment in and about the old-fashioned chimney. Food was conveyed to them through a trap-door in the floor.

<sup>b</sup> New York MSS., from archives at Fulham, vol. ii, p. 571.—(Hawks.)

<sup>c</sup> This was precisely what the Puritans objected to in the English Parliament, at the very moment they were doing it themselves, and for which they revolted. (See Chapin's Puritanism, p. 128.) The Society's Abstracts, for 1775, say:—"Mr. Seabury, has been obliged to retire from his mission at Westchester, but has not been able to secure himself from the ill effects of the present distractions. Mr. Gott, the schoolmaster, a very attentive man in his office, has been obliged to quit the school on account of ill health."

Congress have agreed to raise money upon the province—as the representatives of the people. Mr. L. Morris has published his remarks upon the protest, &c., poor me—you are safe—I think I am too. If I knew anything worth writing, I would write it. I think the present scene will not last long. Drs. Cooper and Chandler sailed last week. Tell Dr. Cooper I received his letter, and I will write to him. When I can collect anything worthy your notice, you shall have it. God bless you, says your ever affectionate

SEABURY."

The Society's abstracts for 1776, say:—

"In the course of this year two letters have been received from the worthy Mr. Seabury. In the former, dated November 14th, 1775, he writes, that his two congregations; though less numerous, were then pretty steady in their attendance; and that between Christmas and midsummer he had baptized twenty-seven white, and four black infants."<sup>a</sup>

The latter gives the following account of his seizure and detention:—

#### MR. SEABURY TO THE SECRETARY.

[*Extract.*]

WESTCHESTER, JANUARY 13TH, 1776.

REV. SIR:—"Since my last letter I have been seized by a company of disaffected people in arms, from Connecticut, in number about one hundred, and carried to New Haven. This happened on the 22d of November, and I was kept under military guard till the 23d of December. The particulars of this affair I will send you when I find a safe opportunity. On the 2d day of this month I returned to my family. How long I shall be able to continue here is very uncertain; but I am determined to stay as long as I am permitted to discharge the duties of my mission, whatsoever personal inconvenience it may subject me to. My private affairs have suffered much on this occasion, I was compelled to bear my expenses, and that has not been less than ten pound sterling. My papers were all examined, and are thrown into such confusion that I can find none of my memoranda relating to my mission or correspondence with the Society. I am, Rev. Sir, &c.,

SAMUEL SEABURY.<sup>b</sup>

This invasion of the territory of New York, and violent removal of its citizens, called forth a strong remonstrance from the Provincial Con-

<sup>a</sup> Printed Abstracts of Ven. Society, 16 Feb, 1776, to 21st February, 1777.

<sup>b</sup> New York MSS., from Archives at Fulham, vol. ii: 515, 517. (Hawks.) "In 1776, says Dr. Hawkins, Mr. Seabury was seized by a party of the disaffected in arms, and carried off to New Haven; all his papers being examined for proof against him. After describing this outrage, he says: 'God's providence, will, I hope, protect His Church and clergy in this country, the disorder and confusion of which are beyond description'"—*Hawkins's Missions*.

gress<sup>a</sup> to Governor Trumbull, who demanded Mr. Seabury's 'immediate discharge.' The more especially as, considering his ecclesiastical character, which, perhaps is venerated by many friends to liberty.<sup>b</sup> The severity that has been used towards him may be subject to misconstructions, prejudicial to the common cause. Mr. Seabury was accordingly set at liberty and returned to his parish.<sup>c</sup>

The Venerable Society's abstracts for 1777, say:—

"Three letters have been received from the Rev. Dr. Seabury; the first of them, dated December 29th, 1776, gives an account of the great distresses he had encountered, greater than he can describe, greater, he believes, than he could well support again. In the preceding year, he had been carried away by force into Connecticut. After his return to his mission, he continued tolerably quiet for a few weeks; but after the King's troops had evacuated Boston, he was perpetually insulted by the rebels, on their way from thence to New York. This lasted about a month. After the Declaration of Independency, an edict was published at New York, making it death to support the King or any of his adherents. Upon this he shut up his church; fifty armed men being sent into his neighborhood. On the arrival of the British troops at Staten Island, and of two ships of war in the Sound, the coast was constantly guarded, and the friends of Government seized, so that his situation became critical, as he was particularly obnoxious to the rebels. After their defeat on Long Island, a body of them fixed themselves within two miles of his house, so that he thought it prudent to confine himself; for it appeared he would otherwise be seized, frequent enquiries being made for him, and his house being examined by the rebels.

On the 1st of September, it happened that they withdrew their guard from a neighboring point of land on the coast, and the guard that was to replace it, mistaking their route, gave him an opportunity of effecting his escape to Long Island. The rebels, finding they had missed him, vented their rage on his church and his property, converting the former into an hospital, tearing off the covering and burning the pews; and damaging the latter to the value of three hundred pounds currency.

He accompanied the army into Westchester, and returned for one week to his family; but, on the army quitting those parts, he thought it prudent to retire with his family to New York. He assures the Society that he did not leave his mission so long as it was practicable to stay."<sup>d</sup>

<sup>a</sup> The petition of the Rev. S. Seabury, presented to the Governor of Connecticut in 1775, for relief and protection, shows that he received anything but gentle treatment at the hands of his enemies. He defended himself against their charges, and pronounced his arrest "a high infringement of that liberty for which the sons of America were then so nobly struggling." Whatever might have been his private views and feelings, he seems to have been a conscientious and industrious man; more heedful of the welfare of his flock and family, than of his country's political relations. Among other things he stated in his petition, "that to discharge his debts, he had opened a grammar school, and had made £100, York money, the previous year, and was in a fair way of discharging his debts,—that he had five young men from the Island of Jamaica, one from Montreal, four children of a gentleman then in England, with others in his care from New York and the country,—that it might be impossible to recover his school, in which case he should be entirely at the mercy of his creditors."—Extract from an address delivered in St. Peter's church, Cheshire, Conn., October, 1844, by Rev. C. E. Beardsley, A. M. The site of Mr. Seabury's grammar school, is still called Seabury Hill.

<sup>b</sup> Journal of N. Y. Prov. Con. vol. i, 214, 492.

<sup>c</sup> Doc. History of N. Y., vol. iii. 1062.

<sup>d</sup> Printed Abstracts of Ven. Prop. Soc.



In his second letter, dated 29th of March, 1777, after alluding to the death of Mr. Babcock, he says:—

“With regard to my own mission, I can only say that it is utterly ruined; before the King's troops went into that part of the country, the people were robbed of their cattle and otherwise plundered by the Rebels; and, I am sorry to say, that they suffered greatly in that way from the Royal army. Little or no distinction was made; no redress could be obtained, and no stop was put to it. As soon as the King's troops withdrew, the Rebels returned in parties, and every party plundered the inhabitants. Many fled to this city, with what little they could carry—many were deprived by the Rebels of every thing but the clothes on their backs, and sent off with only six days provision, because they refused to swear allegiance to the *States of America*. Children and infants have been deprived of their clothes, and women in child-bed have had the coverings, even the sheets, torn from their beds, by these monsters, who seem to have nothing of humanity left but the shape of men only. Many families of my parishioners are now in this town, who used to live decently, suffering for common necessities. I daily meet them; and it is melancholy to observe the dejection strongly marked on their faces, which seem to implore that assistance which I am unable to give. To pity and pray for them is all I can do. I shall say nothing more of my own situation at present, than that I have hitherto supported myself and family with decency, and will not distrust the goodness of God which has hitherto preserved me, nor render myself unworthy of it by repining and discontent.”<sup>a</sup>

In his letter of November 12th, 1777, he observes:—

“That about a month before, he had visited Westchester, and thought of staying the winter there, but was obliged to drop such intentions on General Burgoyne's defeat; as the Rebels upon that event came to that town by night and carried off forty-two of the inhabitants.”

Dr. Seabury concludes with requesting that he may remove to Staten Island if he finds it safer than Westchester; and the Society, sensible of his great worth, have signified their ready compliance with his request, engaging to continue the salary of £50 per annum, during the present disturbances.<sup>b</sup>

The abstracts for 1778, state that two letters have been received in the course of the year, from the Rev. Dr. Seabury, Missionary at Staten Island. In the former he acquaints the Society, “that in December, 1777, he preached there to a very decent and attentive congregation, of near three hundred people, and baptized twelve infants, &c. That the wretched state of his late mission at Westchester, is beyond description; many of the inhabitants having removed to New York and Long Island, where they want many comforts of life; and some who have re-

<sup>a</sup> New York MSS., from Archives at Fulham, vol. ii. 617.—(Hawks.)

<sup>b</sup> Printed Abstracts of Ven. Prop. Soc. for 1777.

mained at home, are continually plundered by knots and bands of disorderly people; that all good principles and impressions of morality seem to be wearing out in that devoted country."<sup>a</sup>

In his second letter he thus writes:

#### MR. SEABURY TO THE SECRETARY.

[*Extract.*]

NEW YORK, NOVEMBER 22d, 1778.

REV. SIR:—"I am obliged still to continue at New York, it being impracticable for me to return to Westchester, or reside with safety on Staten Island; and though I am strong in hope that the commotions in this country will soon subside, yet I confess the present appearances seem to indicate a fixed resolution in the Congress to support their Independency, as long as they possibly can. I am, however, confident it could not be supported against the vigorous efforts of Great Britain for one campaign, as the resources of this country must be nearly exhausted.

I remain, Rev. Sir, &c.,

SAMUEL SEABURY."<sup>b</sup>

From this time he continued to reside in New York, until the peace, and served as Chaplain of the King's American regiment, commanded by Colonel Fanning.<sup>c</sup>

His last report to the Society is contained in the following communication:—

#### MR. SEABURY TO THE SECRETARY.

[*Extract.*]

NEW YORK, JUNE 24th, 1782.

REV. SIR:—"The situation of affairs in this country, has for the last year continued so much the same that I have nothing new of which to inform the Society. Both Westchester and Staten Island remain in the same ruined state, as much exposed to the incursions of the Rebels as ever. Though their incursions have not lately been so frequent as formerly."<sup>d</sup>

In 1784 he went to England to obtain consecration as a Bishop, but objections arising there, he was consecrated in Scotland, on the 14th of November of that year,<sup>e</sup> by Bishops Kilgour, Petrie and Skinner. Early in the summer of the ensuing year, he returned to Connecticut,

<sup>a</sup> Printed Abstracts of Ven. P. Soc. for 1778.

<sup>b</sup> New York MSS., from Archives at Fulham, vol. II, 625. (Hawks.)

<sup>c</sup> Sabine's Hist. of the American Loyalists.

<sup>d</sup> New York, MSS., from Archives at Fulham, vol. II, 657. (Hawks.) In 1783, the Society paid Mr. Seabury a salary of £50. He was then residing in England. See Abstracts for 1783.

<sup>e</sup> Udipe's Hist. of the Narragansett Church.

the first Bishop of our Church (for Talbot and Weldon left no traces behind them,) that had been seen in that part of the North American continent.

The following extract appears in a communication from the Rev. T. B. Chandler, D D., to Isaac Wilkins, Esq., dated London, February 25th, 1785. The bearer of which was the Rt. Rev. Dr. Seabury:—

MY DEAR SIR:—"I hope that you may happen to be at Halifax when this arrives there—both for your own sake and that of the bearer, who is no less a person than the *Bishop of Connecticut*. He goes by the way of Nova Scotia for several reasons, of which the principal is, that he may see the situation of that part of his family, which is in that quarter, and be able to form a judgment of the prospects before them. He will try hard to *see you*, but, as he will not have much time to spare, he fears that he shall not be able to go to Shelburne in quest of you.

You were acquainted with this Bishop and his adventures from the time of his leaving New York, in 1783. He came home with strong recommendations to the two Archbishops and the Bishop of London, from the clergy of Connecticut, and with their most earnest request that he might have Episcopal consecration for the Church in that State. Though no objections could arise from his character, the Bishops here thought such a measure would be considered as rash and premature—since no fund had been established for his support, and no consent to his admission had been made by the States; besides, no Bishop could be consecrated here for a *foreign* country, without an act of Parliament to *dispense* with the *oaths* required by the established office. These difficulties and objections continued to operate through the winter, and several candidates for Priest's orders, who had been waiting near a twelve month, were about going over to the Continent, to seek for ordination in some foreign Protestant Episcopal Church. At length a short *act* was obtained, authorizing the Bishop of London and his substitutes to dispense with the aforesaid oaths in the ordination of Priests and Deacons for the American States; but nothing was said in it about the consecration of *Bishops*. The Minister, it seems, was fearful that opening the door for the consecration of Bishops would give umbrage to the Americans, and, therefore, every prospect of success *here* was at an end.

Dr. Seabury, with his wonted spirit and resolution, *then* thought it his duty to apply elsewhere, and by the intervention of a friend, consulted the Bishops in Scotland, who were equally without the protection and the *restraint* of Government. They cordially met the proposal, and our friend was consecrated Bishop for Connecticut, at Aberdeen, on the 14th of November last. I have been thus particular, on the supposition that you may not have been acquainted with ~~so~~ much of this history."<sup>a</sup>

Bishop Seabury died February 25th, 1796, aged eighty-six years. Two volumes of his sermons were published before his decease, and one volume in 1798. A sermon founded on St. Peter's exhortation to fear

<sup>a</sup> From the original letter in the possession of Gouverneur M. Wilkins, Esq.

God and honor the King, delivered before the provincial or loyalist troops, was printed during the war by direction of Governor Tryon.<sup>a</sup> The following is inscribed on his tomb-stone, at New London :

HERE LIETH THE BODY OF  
SAMUEL SEABURY, D. D.,  
BISHOP OF CONNECTICUT AND RHODE ISLAND,  
Who departed this transitory scene,  
February 25th, 1796,  
In the 68th of his age, and the eleventh of his  
EPISCOPAL CONSECRATION.

Ingenious without Pride,  
Learned without Pedantry,  
Good without severity,  
He was duly qualified to discharge  
The duties of the Christian and the Bishop.  
In the pulpit he enforced religion,  
In his conduct he exemplified it.  
The poor he assisted with his charity,  
The ignorant he blessed with his instruction.  
The friend of men, he ever designed them good,  
The enemy of vice, he ever opposed it.  
Christian! do'st thou aspire to happiness?  
Seabury has shown the way that leads to it.<sup>b</sup>

Charles Seabury the youngest son of the Bishop, was born in Westchester, in May, 1770, and succeeded his father in the church at New London. In 1796, he preached awhile at Jamaica, and died rector of Caroline church, Setauket. His first wife was Anne, the daughter of Roswell Saltonstall, of New London, by whom he had issue. His son, the late Samuel Seabury, D.D., was the founder and first Rector of the Church of the Annunciation, in the city of New York,<sup>c</sup> and was succeeded by his son the Rev. William J. Seabury.

By an act of the Legislature, passed 18th of April, 1785, it was ordered:—"That the district formerly called and known by the style of the Borough and Town of Westchester, shall henceforth be called and known by the name of the Town of Westchester." Up to this date, the church appears to have been governed by the charter of 1762. On the 6th day of April, in the year 1784, the Legislature of the State of New York, passed an act entitled: "An act to enable all religious de-

<sup>a</sup> Sabine's History of the American Loyalists.

<sup>b</sup> The above inscription was written by Rev. John Bowden. S.T.D., formerly Professor of Moral Philosophy in Columbia College, N. Y.

<sup>c</sup> Updike's History of Narragansett church.



nominations in this State, to appoint Trustees, who should be a body corporate, for the purpose of taking care of the temporalities of their respective congregations, and for other purposes therein mentioned.”<sup>a</sup> Under the provisions of this act, St. Peter’s church, Westchester, was incorporated on the 19th of April, 1788, the following persons being chosen trustees: Lewis Graham, Josiah Browne, Thomas Hunt, Israel Underhill, John Bartow, Phillip I. Livingston, and Samuel Bayard.<sup>b</sup>

The earliest record of the proceedings of the trustees, is dated May 12th, 1788, when “it was resolved that the old church be sold to Mrs. Sarah Ferris, for the sum of ten pounds.” Their next business was to obtain the necessary funds for the erection of another edifice. Accordingly, at a meeting held September, 1788, Israel Underhill and John Bartow, Jr., were authorized “to draw up a subscription paper, and carry it round to the people, in order to raise a sum of money to build a church, on or near the same ground where the Church of St. Peter, late removed, stood.” At a subsequent meeting, held October 13th, 1788, Phillip I. Livingston laid before the corporation the following petition to the Venerable Society:—

“TO THE SOCIETY FOR THE PROPAGATION OF THE GOSPEL  
IN FOREIGN PARTS. THE PETITION OF JOSIAH BROWN,  
LEWIS GRAHAM, SAMUEL BAYARD, ISRAEL UNDERHILL,  
AND JOHN BARTOW, JR.,

*“Humbly sheweth:—*

“That your petitioners are by law Trustees of the Episcopal Church of St. Peter’s, in the Township, late Borough of Westchester, and State of New York, in North America. The Township in which your petitioners reside, from its vicinity to the Capital of this State, was, during the late war, subject to the incursions and depredations of both British and American armies, unprotected by either. That thus circumstanced, their church and parsonage house very early suffered the ravages of war, and have been so materially wasted as not to claim the expense of a reparation. That the greater part of their congregation have been, also by these means, greatly injured in their estates, and many reduced to abject poverty; and that under these calamitous events they have been since the commencement of the late war, and even unto this day, without a Gospel Minister established in their township—and therefore, as might be expected, vice and irreligion too much prevail amongst the people. And your petitioners further beg leave to show, that from a sense of duty, owing to themselves—as well as from a most unfeigned regard for the welfare of the souls of those with whom they are connected in society—they are most anxiously solicitous, as soon as may be, to erect another church upon their glebe, and establish a minister. But as the

<sup>a</sup> Laws of N. Y. from 1778 to 1787. Greenleaf, vol. i, chapter xviii, 71.

<sup>b</sup> County Rec. Religious Soc. Lib. A. p. 19.

greater part of the members of their church are unable to contribute any considerable sums towards these desirable purposes, your petitioners have the best reason to believe their good intentions will be entirely defeated, unless they are aided by charitable donations from abroad. And your petitioners beg leave to show, that they are informed your Honorable Society have some property in this State, bequeathed to your corporation for charitable purposes, by the will of St. George Talbot, formerly of New York: and that it is your intention to bestow whatever may arise from funds yet left in America, to American Episcopal churches. Encouraged by this hope, and confiding in the well known pious and liberal disposition of your honorable board, your petitioners humbly request, that to enable them to rebuild their church, they may be favored with the Society's bounty, and authorized to receive for this purpose, from any monies being the property of the Society, which now are, or may hereafter come into the hands of the exe-



St. Peter's Church, erected in 1790.

cutors of the late St. George Talbot, or any of them, or any person or persons acting for them, or action of them, the sum of £200 sterling, or such other sums, as to the piety and charity of your truly Christian corporation shall seem meet; and your petitioners as in duty bound, shall ever pray, &c."<sup>a</sup>

Upon the 26th of January, 1789, the trustees made an agreement with John Odell, of New York, carpenter, to build a church for the sum of £336.<sup>b</sup>

At a meeting, Nov. 16th, 1789, Messrs. Bayard, Livingston and Bartow, were appointed a committee to write a letter to the Rev. Dr. Chandler, returning the thanks of this Corporation, for his favorable recommendation of this congregation to the Reverend, the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts; and for his assistance

<sup>a</sup> Westchester Vestry Book, p. 39.

<sup>b</sup> Westchester Vestry Book, p. 40.

in procuring the benefaction which the Trustees are informed, the said Society have been pleased to grant to this Congregation.<sup>a</sup>

The Trustees now proceeded to restore the services in the parish, which had been suspended for nearly thirteen years. Accordingly, at a meeting held July 5th, 1790, it was resolved:—

“That an application be made to the Rev. Theodosius Bartow, for the purpose of engaging him as a minister to serve this church, for the term of two years, every other Sunday in the year, and that the members of this congregation be called upon, by the trustees, to subscribe such sums as they think proper on this occasion.”<sup>b</sup>

Upon the 2d of January 1792 the Trustees accepted the Rev. Theodosius Bartow, as minister of the church, for a term of two years, from the 1st of January, 1791. His ministrations were highly acceptable during this short period. He was the grandson of the Rev. John Bartow, the first minister of the church at Westchester.

The Rev. John Ireland, A.M., was elected his successor, on the 20th of August, 1794. He was the son of John Ireland, an officer in the British army during the revolution, who died in this country. He was born in England, A. D. 1755; but at what institution he graduated, is unknown. He came to this country some time prior to the adoption of the federal constitution; studied for holy orders; was ordained deacon and priest by the Rt. Rev. Samuel Provost, D.D., in 1792, and was called to this parish, as we have seen, in 1794.

The following release for the site of the church, and adjoining cemetery, was given by the trustees of the town, to those of the Church in 1795. But as the Rector of this parish had been inducted over all the rights and appurtenances of the Church for a period of nearly seventy-five years, and more especially as the charter of 1762 had confirmed the rector, wardens and vestrymen in possession, “of the church and the ground whereon the same was built, and the cemetery belonging to the same,” we cannot see by what right the former party could release property that did not belong to them. Such a conveyance amounts to nothing at all.

#### RELEASE FOR BURYING GROUND FROM THE TRUSTEES OF WESTCHESTER TO ST. PETER'S CHURCH.

“This indenture made the 20th day of January, in the year of our Lord 1795, between the Trustees of the Town of Westchester, of the one part, and the Trustees of the Episcopal Church of St. Peter's, in the Town of Westchester, of the

<sup>a</sup> Ditto, p. 44. In 1791, the Society were pleased to grant the sum of £200.

<sup>b</sup> Westchester Vestry Book. In 1791 it was ordered, “that a collection be made for the use of the church and the minister, on every day on which Divine service shall be performed.”

other part: Witnesseth, that the parties of the first part, for and in consideration of the sum of twenty shillings to them in hand paid, at or before the en sealing and delivery of these presents, the receipt whereof is hereby acknowledged; have granted, bargained, sold, aliened, released and confirmed, and by these presents do grant, bargain, sell, alien, release and confirm, unto the parties of the second part, the Trustees of the Church of St. Peter's, in said Town of Westchester, and their successors for ever, *all* that certain piece, parcel and lot of ground on which the Episcopal Church of St. Peter's, in the Town of Westchester, is erected, and also the Burying Ground adjoining the said church, as it is now enclosed and fenced, and which heretofore has been used for a Burial Place, by the inhabitants of said Township, containing about one acre, be the same more or less, and the reversion and reversions, remainder and remainders, rents, issues and profits of the said premises, and of every part and parcel thereof, particularly all benefits and profits arising from a lease of the said Burial Ground, heretofore granted to George Embree, and which will shortly be determined, and all Estate, Right, Title, Interest, Claim and Demand Whatsoever, of the Trustees of the Town of Westchester, of, in and to all and singular the said Premises, and of and to every part and parcel thereof, with their appurtenances. To have and to hold the said Lots and parcel of land on which the aforesaid Church is erected, and the aforesaid adjoining Burial Ground and Premises above mentioned, with the appurtenances unto the said Trustees of the Episcopal Church, in the Town of Westchester, and their successors, to the only proper use and behoof of the said Trustees of the Episcopal Church of St. Peter's, in the Town of Westchester, and their successors forever; Provided always, and upon condition that the said Trustees of the Episcopal Church of St. Peter's, in the Town of Westchester, and their successors do and shall at all times hereafter permit and suffer the inhabitants of the Town of Westchester, to Bury their Dead in the said Burial Ground, without any fee or compensation being exacted therefor, in such vacant parts of the said Burial Ground as shall be directed and ordered from time to time by the said Trustees, of the Episcopal Church of St. Peters, in the Town of Westchester, or their successors, or by any person legally authorized under them, to direct the same; and provided always, that anything herein, notwithstanding, the inhabitants of the said Town shall always be permitted to bury their dead near to and adjoining their families who have heretofore been buried in the said Burial Ground. Sealed with the seal of the Trustees, and signed by their order.

(Signed,)

ISAAC UNDERHILL, *President.*<sup>a</sup>

St. Peter's church continued under the act of 1784, providing for the incorporation of religious societies generally, until the 2d of August, 1795; when, in accordance with the act passed for the relief of the Protestant Episcopal Church, on the 7th of March preceding, it was again incorporated. Israel Underhill and Phillip I. Livingston, Churchwardens, John Bartow, Jr., Thos. Bartow, Oliver de Lancey, Warren de Lancey, Joseph Brown, Johnathan Fowler, Robert Heaton and Nicholas Bayard, vestrymen.<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Westchester Vestry Book, p. 22.

<sup>b</sup> County Rec. Religious Soc. Lib. A. 58.



By this act the vestry, or a major part of them, were vested with full power to call and induct<sup>a</sup> a minister. Accordingly, at a meeting, in August, 1795, Mr. Ireland was confirmed in his call to the rectorship of the church.

Mr. Ireland continued his ministrations till 1797;<sup>b</sup> during this period the present church edifice was consecrated, and the congregation considerably increased. In 1798 he was called to St. Ann's church, Brooklyn, where he remained until 1806, when he removed to Grace church, Jamaica, Long Island. In 1809, he ceased his parochial administrations, and entered the navy as a chaplain, in which capacity he served up to the time of his death. He died in the Navy Yard, Brooklyn, on the 25th of March, 1822. "He was (says one who knew him intimately) a very accomplished man, possessed of highly polished manners, and an excellent scholar, being gifted with a remarkably harmonious and pleasing voice: he excelled in the delivery of his sermons, whilst his style of composition would compare with the best models in our language." The following is the inscription from his tombstone:

REV. JOHN IRELAND,  
died the 25th day of March, 1822,  
aged 66 years.

"At a meeting of the wardens and vestrymen, with the congregations of Westchester and Eastchester, on the 7th day of June, 1798, it was resolved, that the said congregations do unite and associate, in order to procure a clergyman to officiate for them."<sup>c</sup> Accordingly on the 9th of March, 1789, the Rev. Isaac Wilkins, A.M., was elected minister of the two churches. As we have already seen, he was the son of Martin Wilkins, a rich planter of Jamaica, W. I., where he was born in 1741. His father dying when he was quite young, he was sent to New York to be educated. In 1756 he entered King's College, (now Columbia,) where he graduated A.B. in 1760; receiving his A. M. degree in 1763. He prepared himself for the ministry of the Church, but did not take holy orders until 1798. Having settled in this county, he was returned as a member of the House of Assembly, in which body he became a leader on the

<sup>a</sup> "Induction is the vesting of the minister with the temporalities of the Congregation, and in the Church of England, is performed by the patron of the living, who also appoints the minister; and in the Church in this country the vestry or congregation choose the minister, and fix his salary and other temporalities. The Bishop or some other minister appointed by him, *institutes* the minister thus chosen to the *spiritual charge* of the congregation. The General convention recognized the principal, and prescribed the office of Institution agreeably to the above; Induction is that act by which a minister is vested with the temporalities of a living; Institution is that by which he is vested with the cure of souls."

<sup>b</sup> Agreeably to the 4th Canon of 1796, Mr. Ireland gave in to the Bishop his parochial report the 4th of Oct., 1797.—See Journal of Diocesan Con. The parochial reports were not printed with the journals until 1804.

<sup>c</sup> Westchester Vestry Book.

ministerial side. His influence with his associates and with his party was very great.

Mr. Wilkins's zeal and extreme loyalty, rendered him very obnoxious to the Whigs. Besides his prominent position in the Assembly, he gave utterance to his thoughts, in essays. It is a singular circumstance, that the youthful Hamilton, who was also born in the West Indies, undertook the task of replying to two of his poetical effusions. One of them, the "Congress Canvassed," &c., which was signed, A. W. Farmer, was extensively circulated; and as well as that called, "A View of the Controversy between Great Britain and her Colonies," was summarily disposed of whenever they fell into the hands of those whose measures they criticised and condemned.

In 1775 he left the country, and went to England. At the moment of his departure, he issued the following address:—

NEW YORK, MAY 3D, 1775.

MY COUNTRYMEN:—"Before I leave America, the land I love, and in which is contained everything that is valuable and dear to me—my wife, my children, my friends and property—permit me to make a short and faithful declaration; which I am induced to do, neither through fear nor a consciousness of having acted wrong. An honest man and a Christian hath nothing to apprehend from this world. God is my judge, and God is my witness, and all I have done, written or said, in relation to the present unnatural dispute between Great Britain and her Colonies, proceeded from an honest intention of serving my country. Her welfare and prosperity were the objects towards which all my endeavors have been directed. They are still the sacred objects which I shall ever steadily and invariably keep in view. And, when in England, all the influence that so inconsiderable a man as I am can have, shall be exerted in her behalf. It has been my constant maxim through life, to do my duty conscientiously, and to trust the issue of my actions to the Almighty. May that God, in whose hands are all events, speedily restore peace and liberty to my unhappy country. May Great Britain and America be soon united in the bonds of everlasting unity; and when united, may they continue a free, a virtuous and happy nation to the end of time. I leave America, and every endearing connection, because I will not raise my hand against my Sovereign, nor draw my sword against my country; when I can conscientiously draw it in her favor, my life shall be cheerfully devoted to her service.

ISAAC WILKINS."

In 1776, he returned to Long Island, where he remained until the peace, when he returned to Shelburne, Nova Scotia. He remained in Nova Scotia several years, and lived a part of the time at Lunenburg. He was ordained deacon in 1798, and afterwards priest by the Rt. Rev. Samuel Provoost, D.D., of this diocese. In 1799 he was settled, as we have shown, over this parish.

At a vestry meeting on the 22nd of July, 1801, it was resolved:—

“That the Rev. Isaac Wilkins, being now in priest's orders, and having officiated for us for two years past, to our satisfaction, be now called to the Rectory of this Parish, agreeably to the resolution and intention of the Church-wardens and Vestrymen on the 9th of March, 1799.”<sup>a</sup>

In 1806 Mr. Wilkins makes a report to the Diocesan Convention of forty communicants, and eighteen baptisms, &c. ; the following year his communicants numbered nearly fifty.

The Rev. William Powell was elected his assistant on the 12th day of July, 1829. The Rev. Isaac Wilkins died February the 5th, 1830. His remains were interred on the south side of the chancel of St. Peter's church, under the following inscription:—

THIS

Monument

commemorates in filial piety of the

REVEREND ISAAC WILKINS, D.D.,

The honest and able representative of this Borough in 1775.

“I leave America and every endearing connection because I will not raise my hand against my Sovereign, nor will I draw my sword against my country; when I can conscientiously draw it in her favor, my life shall be devoted to her service.” A scholar, a gentleman, and a Christian, he lived for thirty-one years the diligent and faithful minister of this Parish. Placed here, as he believed, by his Redeemer, he was satisfied with his lot, nor ever wished nor ever went to seek a better living.

Died 5th February, 1830, Ætat 89.

His remains were deposited under the chancel of the old church beside those of his wife,

ISABELLA WILKINS,

daughter of HON. LEWIS MORRIS.

Sacred to her memory

a monument had been erected, and inscribed :

BY A GRATEFUL, FAITHFUL AND AFFECTIONATE HUSBAND.

Died 31st October, 1810.

“Watchman, what of the night! Watchman what of the night!

The Watchman said, the morning cometh and also the night.”—Isa. xxi.

<sup>a</sup> Westchester Vestry Book.

The following obituary notice appeared in the *Christian Journal* for March, 1830:—

“Died at Westchester, New York, on Friday, February 5th, in the eighty-ninth year of his age, the Rev. Isaac Wilkins, D.D., Rector of St. Peter's church, in that place.

“If the most stern and sterling integrity; a conscience which knew no compromise; and an habitual purpose, passing by all selfish considerations, and aiming, through good report and evil report, at *duty*, with all its sacrifices, responsibilities, and consequences, form the upright, virtuous and honorable man, Dr. Wilkins was among the most upright, the most virtuous and the most honorable. If deep and thorough conviction of the great truths of the Gospel; the entire submission of a more than ordinarily strong and enlightened understanding to the teachings of God's word; an abiding and humbling sense of a personal need of a Saviour and Sanctifier; a child-like reliance on the Saviour and Sanctifier; revealed in holy writ; devotion of the most intense character; and piety infusing its holy influences into all the heart, all the soul, and all the mind, are constituents of a true Christian, he has cause to thank God, who has grace to take pattern herein, by the character of the venerable man now noticed. If love for that Church which Christ loved even unto death; reverence for the appointments which He made for its perpetuity and good order, and for its subserving the great end of its establishment in the sanctification and salvation of His people; a due appreciation of that primitive evangelical piety, which led Christians to be of one heart and one mind, to continue steadfast in the apostle's doctrine and fellowship, and holding, as faithful members of the Church, the Head, which is Christ, *thus* to derive from Him grace to increase with the increase of God; if these enter essentially into the character of a good Churchman, never had the Church a truer son than in the subject of this notice. If talents and learning of a superior order; an intimate acquaintance with the whole range of Christian theology; an ardent love for the duties of the ministry; an abiding and practical application to himself, of the truths and precepts which he delivers to others; a rule and measure in delivering those truths and precepts, casting off all reference to popular liking, and governed solely by the *word* of God, and by a sense of responsibility to Him; a conscientious fulfilment of the vows of ordination; faithful allegiance to the authorities of that portion of the Catholic Church to which he belongs, and an enlightened and zealous devotion to its interests, mark the able minister of the New Testament; one of the best prayers we can offer for the Church, is, that God raise up for her many ministers as well qualified for their Master's work, as was this venerable man.

“A conscience so true as his; a sense of duty so far removed as was his, from any sacrifice to personal interest, personal ease, and the satisfaction of wearing the feather of popularity; and a mind of the more than ordinary clearness and elevation, which characterized his, may sometimes fail, in what may be thought due allowance for supposed errors of judgment, for the weakness of human nature, and for the strength with which the world allures, to some abatement of the rigid demands of duty in favor of what is easier and more gratifying to the natural man. However, this faithful servant of God (and his religious views, were of too evangelical a character, to be blind to the fact, that the very best have their



imperfections), may have sometimes exemplified the truth of this remark, it was only where he thought principle was concerned, and in honest compliance with what he deemed duty, and what he deemed real charity, or a sincere desire to be instrumental in leading others into the truth, and to avoid even the appearance of sanctioning or conniving at error.

In private and social life, the piety, kindness, benevolence, and cheerfulness of the true Christian, an affectionate interest in the welfare and happiness of all about him, the urbanity of an accomplished gentleman, the good sense and extensive information, of an intelligent and well read man, the fancy of a ready poet, and the sprightliness of true and chastened wit, rendered him one of the most profitable and pleasing of companions. And for all the sweet charities, the endearing sympathies, and the elevated affections of domestic life, he has left a monument that will perish only with the hearts in which it is erected.

Although from early life, of a religious turn of mind, much devoted to theological reading, attached to clerical society, and cherishing an affection and desire, equal to his fitness for the ministry, it was not until he had attained to nearly three-score years of age, that Dr. Wilkins found himself sufficiently released from civil and secular cares, to gratify his early and abiding preference of the ministry as his profession. He was then ordained deacon, and afterwards priest, by the Right Rev. Bishop Provoost, of this diocese. He soon settled in the parish, in the charge of which he continued until his death; having added to it, for a time, that of St. Paul's church, Eastchester. He continued in the exercise of his public duties until within a few months of his death. He was a graduate of Columbia College, in this city, and was for many years its oldest surviving alumnus, having received the degree of B. A. in 1760, and of A. M. in 1763. In 1811, he was honored by his Alma Mater with the degree of D. D. His performance of public services of the Church, was characterized by peculiar solemnity and dignity, and by a manner clearly indicative of the deep and engaged interest which his heart felt in the holy offices. In his preaching, he aimed at the faithful exhibition of the whole counsel of God; and explained and enforced the doctrines of the Gospel, the distinctive principles of our Church, and the whole range of Christian obligation and duty, with a clearness that manifested his own understanding of them, and an earnestness which proved how deeply his heart was engaged in the work. He was conscious of the existence of no error in faith or practice, against which he would hesitate boldly and fearlessly, to breast himself. He saw nothing to be his own duty, or that of his people, to which he would not, in the most uncompromising manner, devote himself, or which he would not most faithfully and earnestly urge and enforce upon them. It has been said of him, and it is here believed to have been most justly said, that had he lived in times of martyrdom, there is not that thing which he thought it his duty to say or do, which he would have left unsaid or undone, or the act or word which he deemed inconsistent with the most rigid demands of duty and of conscience, which he would have done or said to save his life. His was a piety and virtue which would have remained unmoved, when those more boasted might have found more plausible excuses for giving way. The unrivalled venerableness of his appearance, for many years past, added to the worth, dignity and sanctity, of his character, invested his public ministrations with a deep and peculiar interest.

“From the year 1801 until, in 1821, he was obliged, by the infirmities of age, to decline; Dr. Wilkins was uniformly returned as a clerical deputy from the diocese of New York, to the General Convention, and attended the greater number of the meetings of that body. There, as in the Diocesan Convention, he was the able and enlightened advocate of sound principles of ecclesiastical polity, and of such measures as in his conscience he believed to be the most agreeable to them. Indeed never had the Church a more disinterested friend. He everlooked all selfish considerations, tending either to personal ease, or to the gratification of receiving human commendation or applause, and went directly to the point, whither he thought himself drawn by duty and conscience. The strength of his faith, and the clearness of his religious views, were eminently conspicuous during the progress of a most painful and distressing disorder towards its fatal termination. His mind unclouded, and his heart strengthened and sanctified by the grace of God, he saw no fear in death; but anxiously, and yet meekly and resignedly, desired its more speedy approach. The thought of being soon translated to Paradise, not only soothed and supported him, but ministered to the constitutional and Christian cheerfulness which had characterized him through life. At length the kind and gracious summons came, and rarely has a soul departed stronger in the faith, richer in the hope, and more sincere and affectionate in the genuine charity of the Gospel, than that which then entered on the great salvation purchased by the blood of the everlasting covenant.”<sup>a</sup>

Dr. Wilkins had issue by his wife Isabella, daughter of the Hon. Lewis Morris, and sister of Lewis Morris, a signer of the Declaration of Independence, four sons and five daughters. The eldest son, Martin, was a distinguished member of the New York bar, and proprietor of Castle Hill neck. He was the father of the late Gouverneur M., Martin, Gilbert, Lewis and Catharine, who married the late Henry Phelps, whose son is the Henry D. Phelps of New Rochelle. The second son was Isaac, of Westchester, who married Charlotte Seabury, daughter of the Rt. Rev. Samuel Seabury. The third was the Hon. Lewis Wilkins, of Windsor, Nova Scotia, member of Assembly and Speaker of the House for that Province in 1806 to 1817, and Judge of the Supreme Court of the same. Fourth, Thomas, born 1771, and died May, 1816. The daughters were Sarah, married Archibald Burns, M. D.; Joannah, Isabella, Mary and Euphemia, who married Ichabod Brush on the 27th of April, 1830. The Rev. William Powell, B. A., having been assistant minister to Dr. Wilkins for nearly a year, was called to the rectorship. He was the son of John Powell, of Dublin, Ireland, whose family were originally seated in Wales. He was born in Dublin, A.D. 1788, where he received his education in Trinity College. In 1808 he came to this country, under the patronage and guardianship of a Mr. Adamson, his maternal uncle, then a respectable merchant of New York. He

<sup>a</sup> *Christian Journal* No III, March, 1830, p. 94.

studied divinity under the late Rev. Edmund Barry, D.D., and was ordained deacon by the Rt. Rev. Benjamin Moore, D.D., in 1810. He soon after removed to the charge of St. Andrew's church, Coldenham, Orange County, and St. George's church, Newburgh; and in the former, on Tuesday, June 29th, 1813, was admitted by the Rt. Rev. John H. Hobart, assistant Bishop of the diocese, to the holy order of priests. In May, 1816, he took pastoral charge of St. John's church, Yonkers, and on the 12th of July, 1829, settled as assistant minister in this parish, in the charge of which he afterwards remained as rector, until the day of his death. In connection with his pastoral duties, he maintained for many years, a flourishing school for the education of boys, from which many have gone forth, who can bear testimony to his excellence and worth. "Mr. Powell (says one who knew him for forty-one years) was a most sincere and devoted friend. He had all the traits of cordiality, kindness and benevolence, so usually belonging to the best of his countrymen." He departed this life on Sunday, the 29th day of April, 1849, at the residence of his brother-in-law, Stephen Cambreling, Esq., in New York city. He was the fourth minister that died rector of this parish, and the third buried in this town. His remains were brought to Westchester, and interred in the grave-yard, on the south side of St. Peter's church. The following is the inscription on his tombstone:—

Died

On the 29th of April, 1849,

the

REV. WILLIAM POWELL,

Rector of the St. Peter's Church,

Westchester,

In the 61st year of his age

---

"Blessed are the dead, who die in the Lord; (even so saith the spirit), for they rest from their labours."

The vacancy created by the death of Mr. Powell the vestry proceeded immediately to fill, by electing the Rev. Charles D. Jackson, A. M., at that time assistant minister, to the rectorship, June 28th, 1849. Soon after his entrance on his parish duties, measures were adopted for the building of a new parsonage on the glebe in the place of the old one which was effected, at a cost of six thousand dollars.

A new parish church was also erected in 1855 at a cost of sixty thousand dollars; this edifice, which was destroyed by fire on the 9th of

January, 1877, occupied a portion of the site of the old church structure erected in 1790,<sup>a</sup> and consecrated by the Rt. Rev. Samuel Provoost, D. D., first Bishop of the diocese, 9th of December, 1795. The latter contained the original bell, presented to the church by Col. Lewis Morris, proprietor of the manor of Morrisania, in 1706. Round the lip it bore in capital letters :

LEWIS MORRIS, 1677.<sup>b</sup>

Active measures have been taken for the rebuilding of the church, upon the old site. Indeed, the work is now fairly under contract.



Rectory of St. Peter's Church.

#### RECTORES DE WESCHTESTER.

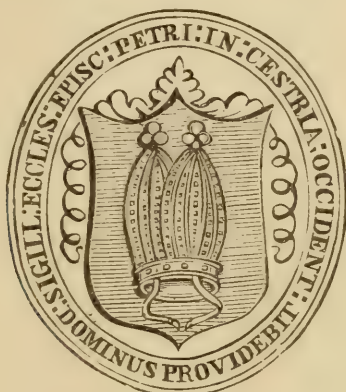
| TEMP.     | INST. | RECTORS.                         | VACANT.    | PATRONS.            |
|-----------|-------|----------------------------------|------------|---------------------|
| 19 Nov.,  | 1702. | REV. JOHN BARTOW, Cl. A.M.,      | pr. mort., | Wardens and Vestry. |
| 8 July,   | 1727. | REV. THOMAS STANDARD, Cl. A.M.,  | per mort., | " "                 |
| 12 June,  | 1761. | REV. JOHN MILNER, Cl. A.M.,      | per resig. | " "                 |
| 3 Dec.,   | 1766. | REV. SAMUEL SEABURY, Cl. A.M.,   |            | " "                 |
| 2 Jan.,   | 1792. | REV. THEODOSIUS BARTOW, A.M.,    | Presb.,    | " "                 |
| 20 Aug.,  | 1794. | REV. JOHN IRELAND, A.M.,         | Presb.,    | " "                 |
| 9 Mar.,   | 1799. | REV. ISAAC WILKINS, D.D.,        | Presb.,    | pr. mort.,          |
| 17 April, | 1830. | REV. WILLIAM POWELL, B.A.,       | Presb.,    | " " " "             |
| 28 June,  | 1849. | REV. CHARLES D. JACKSON, A.M.,   | Presb.,    | " "                 |
| 26 Oct.,  | 1871. | REV. CHRISTOPHER B. WYATT, D.D., | " "        | " "                 |

<sup>a</sup> At a vestry meeting, 15th of January, 1793, "it was resolved to build a desk and pulpit for the use of the church, corresponding, with the sounding board given to this church by the corporation of Trinity church, N. Y."

<sup>b</sup> This bell was destroyed by fire with the wooden church in 1854.



The baptismal register of this parish commences in 1702. March 4, 1702, then baptized by Mr. John Bartow, Rector of Westchester, John Haden, aged forty-one years; John Haden, son of said John Haden, aged seventeen years; Abigail Haden, aged sixteen years; Samuel Haden, aged thirteen years; Thomas Haden, aged eight years; Elizabeth Haden, aged eleven years; Joseph Haden, aged one year and seven months, &c.



Seal of St. Peter's Church.

### THE VENERABLE PROPAGATION SOCIETY'S SCHOOL-MASTERS AT WESTCHESTER.

| TIME OF APPT. | SCHOOL-MASTERS.    | SALARY.        |
|---------------|--------------------|----------------|
| 1709,         | EDWARD FITZGERALD, | £18 per annum. |
| 1710,         | DANIEL CLARKE,     | " "            |
| 1713,         | CHARLES GLOVER,    | " "            |
| 1719,         | WILLIAM FORSTER,   | £10 "          |
| 1743,         | BASIL BARTOW,      | " "            |
| 1764,         | NATHANIEL SEABURY, | " "            |
| 1768,         | GEORGE YOUNGS,     | " "            |
| 1774,         | MR. GOTT,          | " "            |

The communion plate consists of a chalice and paten, the gift of Queen Anne, A. D. 1706, inscribed, "ANNÆ REGINÆ." This royal lady, who for the Church's sake, once merited the name of the "Good Queen Anne," also presented a Church Bible,<sup>a</sup> Book of Homilies, cloth,

<sup>a</sup> The present Bible is an Oxford edition printed at the Clarendon Press by Wm. Jackson and A. Hamilton, M.D., CCLXXXI. The Book of Common Prayer and Administration of the Sacraments, etc., printed by Hugh Gaines, M.D., CCXCV.

for the pulpit, and communion table. The church just burnt contained, besides the monuments to Doctors Wilkins and Jackson, a beautiful sculptured slab in early English style of variegated marble containing a head of Christ, which is said, alone, to have cost \$1,500, adorned with the monogram of I.H.S., an ancient Labarum, and bearing the following inscription :—

IN MEMORY OF  
GOVERNEUR MORRIS WILKINS,

born November 4th, 1797,

Died February 7, 1871.

Erected by his widow.

“I am the resurrection and the life.”

The late chancel window, which was an exquisite production of fine art in stained glass, designed and executed in London expressly for this church in 1876, represented the reward of the righteous as given by our Blessed Saviour in His parable recorded by St. Matthew, xxv : 35, 36 :

“For I was an hungered, and ye ye gave me meat ;  
I was thirsty and ye gave me drink, &c.”

It consisted of six medallions containing figures, representing the six works of mercy with a scroll, in the centre, beneath which were the sentences in Latin placed upon olive branches interlacing or covering the entire window.<sup>a</sup> This beautiful memorial was erected by the relatives of the late Mrs. Catharine Wilkins, (widow of Governor M. Wilkins,) to commemorate with gratitude the constant deeds of love and charity which she maintained to the closing days of her life on earth.

The chime of three bells, but little damaged by the fire, contain the following inscription :

3 Keyed Bells,

D. B. G.

754, 908, 1222,

JOHNES & HITCHCOCK,

Foundry, Troy, New York.

3 Keyed Bells, D. B. G. Presented to the Ep. Church,

Westchester, A.D. 1857. George T. Adey, Gouverneur

Morris Wilkins, Denton Pearsall, William Watson,

Edward Haight, William K. Strong, John

M. Furman, Alfred Seaton, William

Whitehead, D. Lynch Lawrence,

William L. Youle, Daniel M.

Edgar.

(Parishioners.)

<sup>a</sup> By a happy coincident, altogether fortuitous, the above mentioned window was seen in its place by the congregation for the first time at morning service on the fourteenth Sunday after Trinity when the twenty-fifth chapter of St. Matthew was the appointed second lesson. Governor Wilkins, Esq., gave the white marble font.

On or near the site of the old Court House and Jail, adjoining the church-yard on the south, was erected in 18 , a beautiful parochial school-house, costing \$18,000. The building is well fitted up, and answers the double purpose of a chapel and school-room.

To St. Peter's church is attached a portion of the ancient glebe which was given by the town in 1703, sometimes called the "Parsonage Land," consisting of  $8\frac{12}{100}$  acres, bounded north by river road, or Westchesterturnpike; east, by Avenue B; south, by Thirteenth street; west, by Fourteenth street; and  $2\frac{6}{100}$  acres, bounded east, by Glebe avenue, and west by Lafayette street. The church holds also the grave-yard and the land on which the parochial school-house stands, containing  $2\frac{621}{1000}$  acres, also  $4\frac{83}{100}$  acres of salt meadow, bounded north, by Pugsley Farm; south, by Pugsley creek; east, by Pugsley meadow; and west, by a ditch.<sup>a</sup> The former parish house, or parsonage, which was purchased by the vestry in 1763, stood at no great distance from the present edifice.

#### PRINCIPAL BENEFACTORS OF ST. PETER'S CHURCH.

Queen Anne, Col. Benjamin Fletcher, Edward Viscount Cornbury, Col. James Graham, Col. Caleb Heathcote, Col. Lewis Morris, The Venerable Propagation Society of England, the Rev. John Bartow, the Borough Town of Westchester, Basil Bartow,<sup>a</sup> Abijah Hammond, George Love, Robert Watts,<sup>b</sup> the corporation of Trinity church, New York, &c. The latter have made the following liberal grants to this church, viz: In 1795, the sum of \$750; in 1796, \$500; and in 1809, five lots of ground in Reade, Chamber and Warren streets, New York. The church still owns four of these lots, the present value of which is \$55,000.<sup>c</sup> It deserves to be mentioned, however, that this parish contributed one-half of the original value of the lots.<sup>d</sup>

The first dalegate from this parish to the Diocesan Convention in 1790, was Joseph Brown, M.D.

<sup>a</sup> Copied from maps belonging to Vestry of St. Peter's church.

<sup>b</sup> Mr. Basil Bartow, by his will, dated 16th of Dec., 1780, bequeathed "unto the minister, church-wardens and vestrymen, for the time being, of the Incorporated Church of England, known by the name of St. Peter's church, in the Borough town of Westchester, the sum of £50 towards building a new church in said Borough town, or repairing or enlarging the present church, for the worship of Almighty God, to be paid to them when they shall actually engage in said work." This will was proved 11th day of March, 1784, in Surrogate's office, N. Y., Folio xxxv.

<sup>c</sup> Robert Watts and Mary his wife, released 35 acres to the vestry of St. Peter's church, 29th of May, 1797.—West. Co. Rec. Lib. M. of Deeds, pp. 116, 118.

<sup>d</sup> The rector and inhabitants of the city of New York, in communion of the Prot. Episcopal Church to St. Peter's church, Westchester, 17th Jan., 1811.—Rec. in the office of the Clerk of the city of New York, Lib. No. 95, of conveyances, p. 547, 8th June, 1811.

<sup>e</sup> In 1807 the sum of \$1,950 was raised by St. Peter's church, Westchester, tendered to, and accepted by Trinity church, New York, for the lots conveyed by their corporation to the vestry of St. Peter's. One of the above-mentioned lots was taken by the Corporation of New York, for widening Chapel street, and the award applied to the erection of gallery pews and the carriage shed. In the possession of the clerk of the vestry is a lease from James McDonald, of Bedford, a W. C. Co. farmer, to the Trustees of the Episcopal Church of St. Peter's, in the township of Westchester, for a farm in the township of Bedford, being the farm where Jno. Banks formerly lived, containing 204 acres, for one year at the sum of 6s. 26p, Sept. 1791; also a lot of four acres, commonly known by name of "Court House Lot," in that town, signed by James McDonald; witnesses, Alfred Livingston and James G. Fowler. The lease, however, is not signed, interchangeably, by the Trustees of the church.

## TOMB-STONES.

The church-yard, which is coeval with the settlement of the village, contains numerous interments; among the earliest are the following:—

“Here lyeth the body of

WILLIAM (BAILY) QUERY, ESQ.,

H. 1718.

aged 50 years,

B. P. O., 1727.

Deceased, March 27th, 1702.”

In memory of

PHILIP HONEYWELL, ESQ.,

He died of a lingering illness, at Greenburgh,  
on the 8th day of September, 1813,  
in the 53d year of his age.

He was an active character during the Revolutionary War.  
He lived respected, and died regretted.

Anne Eustace, his wife, died May 11, 1811, *Ætat* 50.

---

“Look on this stone and you will find,  
My journey’s o’er, and yours behind;  
Think then, before you turn away,  
That yours may end before this day.”

In memory of

OLIVER DE LANCEY, SEN.,

who departed this life April 4th, 1840,

Aged 70 years.

Sacred to the memory of

CAPTAIN STEPHEN BAYARD,

who was born Oct. 26th, 1785,  
and died July 11th, 1814:

---

“My blessed Saviour receive my spirit,” were his last words, and  
“Whosoever believeth in Him, tho’ he die, yet shall he live again.”

Ever will the sweet remembrance of your useful, generous,  
forgiving and affectionate virtues, best of husbands and  
fathers, be cherished in the hearts  
of your wife and family.



Sacra memoria of  
 PHILIP LIVINGSTON,  
 whose family were suddenly bereaved of a loving parent,  
 on the 27th Nov., 1808,  
 aged 74 years.

His afflictions were numerous and deep felt, yet was he comforted.

His heart, its confidence  
 Reposed in God, its strength and shield,  
 The paths of death in glory shine,  
 When saints the call obey,  
 A light from Heaven, an arm divine,  
 Are with them on the way.

Here lies  
 the mortal remains of  
 WRIGHT POST,  
 during many years eminent as  
 physician and surgeon  
 in the city of New York,  
 he was distinguished for sound judgment,  
 practical skill and unwearied diligence in  
 his profession, and for modest, dignified and  
 mild deportment in all the walks of life;  
 an enlightened and attached member of the  
 Protestant Episcopal Church,  
 he was for many years a vestryman  
 of Grace Church  
 in the city of New York,  
 and for several years its senior warden.  
 Overplied by professional labours,  
 his feeble frame gradually gave way  
 to the attacks of pulmonary consumption.  
 He retired from the city to his country seat  
 in this neighborhood, and after a residence  
 of a few weeks, he departed this life  
 in full possession of his mental faculties,  
 at peace with the world,  
 and a devout hope of acceptance  
 with God, through faith in the merits of  
 Jesus Christ.  
 He died June 14, 1828,  
 aged 62 years, 3 months  
 and 26 days.

There are also memorials in the yard, to members of the Hunt, Doty,  
 Eaxter, Bartow, Lewis, Arden, Findlay, Tucker, Reed, Burnett, Holsman

and Wright families, &c., besides vaults belonging to the families of Timpson, Adee and Ludlow, &c. Near the Episcopal grave-yard, is situated the Ferris burying-ground,<sup>a</sup> which contains the family vaults of Benjamin Ferris, and numerous head-stones to the Pell family.

#### PEW HOLDERS IN 1790.

The following names appear on the Minutes, of individuals who purchased pews in August, 1790, viz:—James Ferris, John Bartow, Jr., Philip Livingston, Stephen Bartow, Elizabeth Harrison, John Valentine, Jonathan Fowler, William Hunt, Marcus Baxter, Solomon Baxter, Isaac Valentine, Jr., Peter Bussing, Elizabeth Williams, Augustus Bartow, David Huestace, Ebenizer Leggett, Phineas Hunt, Anthony Bartow, Israel Underhill, Anthony L. Underhill, 2 seats, Israel Underhill, Israel Honeywell, John Doty, Robert Tucker, William Smith, Thomas Bartow, Benjamin Roe, Joseph Brown, Lewis Graham, Robert Watts, John Bartow, Benjamin Ferris, Samuel Bayard, Warren de Lancey, 2 seats, Thomas Hunt, John Cox.

The old Orthodox Friend's meeting-house now held by the Hicksite party, which stands south of the church, was erected in 1723.<sup>b</sup> The first meeting of this numerous and respectable society in America, is said to have been held at Westchester. "*Monthly meeting*" was appointed by the yearly meeting of Friends at Flushing, Long Island, to be held at Westchester, N. Y., on the ninth day of fourth month, (April,) 1725.<sup>c</sup> There is also a tradition, that George Fox, the dauntless founder of their sect, preached here in 1672. Nearly opposite stands the meeting-house of the Orthodox Friends, erected in 1828.

The Methodist Episcopal Society of Westchester was first organized in 1808, and incorporated 8th of March, 1809; William Johnston, Gilbert Lewis, Abraham Seacord, Benjamin Morgan, Moses Hunt, and Gilbert Hunt, trustees. The present church edifice was erected about 1818.

The Roman Catholic church, dedicated to St. Raymond, is situated on the road leading from Westchester to West Farms in close vicinity to the present depot of the Harlem River Railroad; and attached to the church is an extensive grave yard, rectory and parochial school house. Its clergy has been the Rev. A. Higgins.

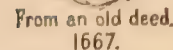
In the immediate vicinity of the Harlem River Railroad station is situated "The New York Catholic Protectory." This institution was incorporated on the 5th of May, 1863.

<sup>a</sup> John Ferris of the borough town of Westchester, in 1715, by his last will. "reserves the burying ground for the people to bury their dead, in the place where they formerly buried without any let or hindrance. Since known as the pasture hill burying ground."

<sup>b</sup> "In that year, mention is made of the Quakers meeting-house in Westchester village, 'entering of highways,' in Book of Records in the County Clerk's Office. White Plains, p. 3. —Baird's Hist. of Rye, p. 362.

<sup>c</sup> Ditto.

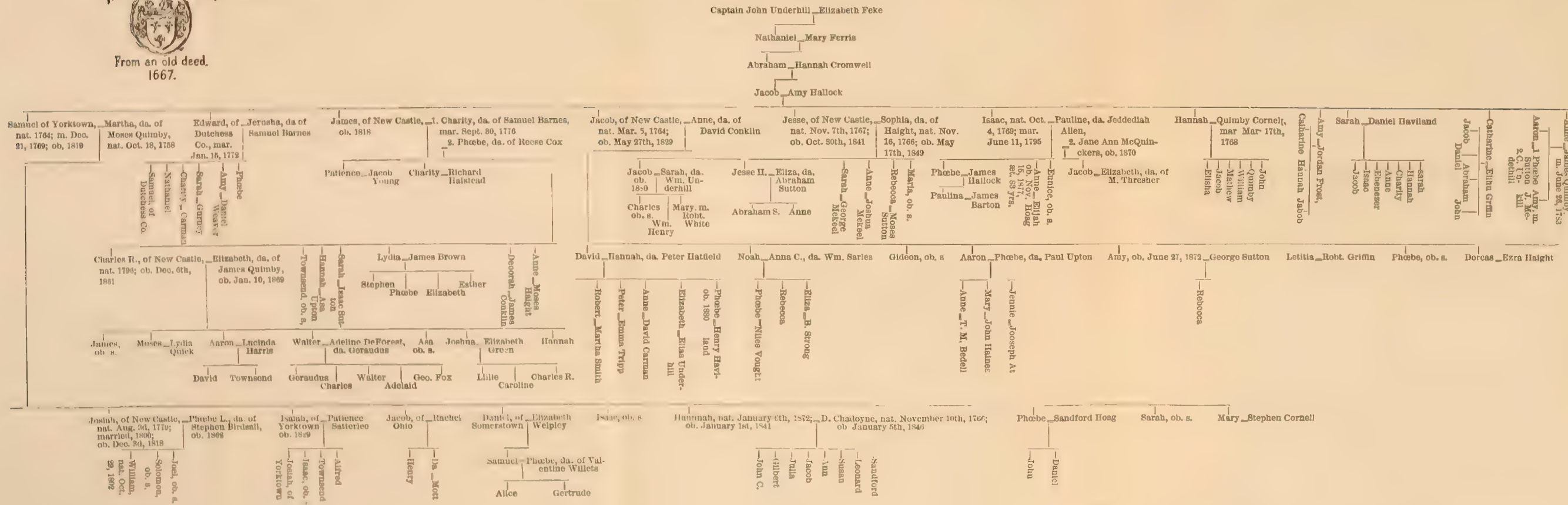




To face page 406, vol 1.

PEDIGREE OF THE UNDERHILLS, OF WESTCHESTER COUNTY.

No. 6.



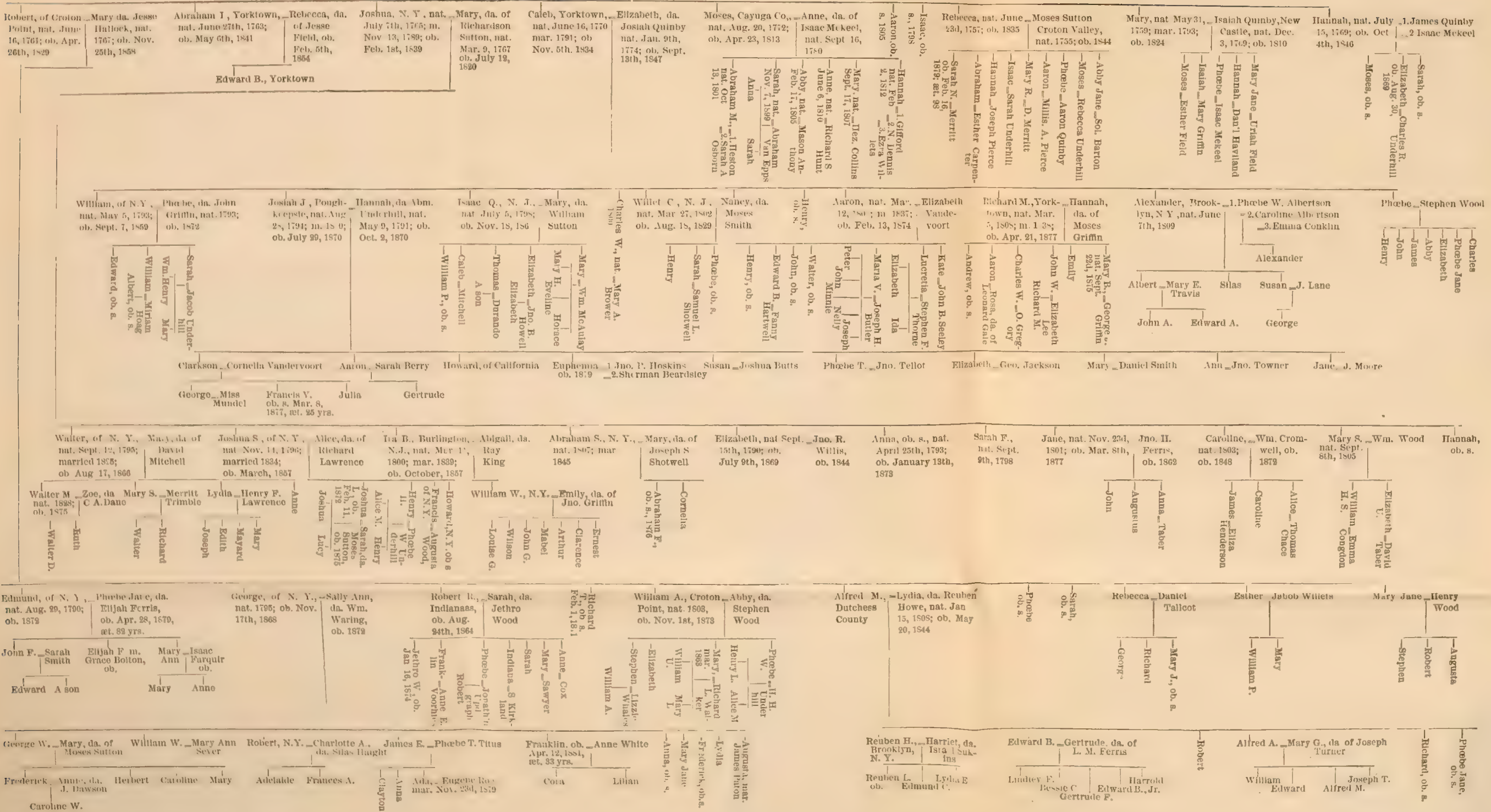
*Note:*—Any error of omission or commission, report to A. S. Underhill, New York.





No. 5.

No. 5.







Captain John Underhill, Elizabeth Feke

Nathaniel, Mary Ferris

Abraham, Hannah Cromwell

Abraham, of New Castle, or Philipsburg, n. 1746; ob. 1789  
1. Phoebe, da. of John Halleck  
2. Kaziah, of Farrington

Isaac, of Yorktown, nat. June 21, 1726; m. Aug. 18th, 1756; ob. December 8th, 1814  
Sarah, da. of Robert Field, nat. February 6th, 1734; ob. March 20th, 1812

See No. 5.

Jacob, of New Castle, nat. May 25th, 1730; m. Jan. 29th, 1747; ob. September 26th, 1807  
Amy, da. John Halleck, prt. June 3d, 1728; ob. June 30th, 1808

See No. 6.

Mary, Caleb Horton, of White Plains

Hannah

Martha, Jabez Lockwood

Abraham Isaac

Daniel, of New Castle, nat. Mar. 8th, 1765; ob. Jan. 17th, 1847  
Sarah, da. of Reese Cox, nat. Nov. 28th, 1764; ob. Nov. 25th, 1838

Israel, of New Castle, Sophia, da. Abijah Haight

Amos, of N. Y., Pamela Avery

Solomon, of Sing Sing, Phoebe, da. Jacob Conklin

Reuben, ob. s.

Joseph, ob. s.

Phoebe, Alex. Young

Martha, Walter Haight

Hannah, Jas. Birdsall

Sarah, Saml. Sutton

Anne, ob. s.

Amy, Isaac Pierce

Abijah, ob. s.

Sarah, Adonijah Underhill, son of Benjamin

Phoebe, Thomas Carpenter

Elizabeth, Livingston

Charlotte, Charles Carpenter

Amos, of N. Y., Pamela Avery

Isaac, of Illinois, Jane, da. of Adonijah Underhill

Townsend N., of N. Y., ob. 1847

David, Emily Brady

Elias, Jane C., da. of Thos. Carpenter

John, Sarah Young

Caroline, Aaron Quimby

Jane, Alfred Underhill

Lillie W., mar. Nov. 17, 1875, Arthur D. Weeks

Mary C.

Adonijah, of N. Y., nat. Feb. 17, 1788; ob. 1848

Deborah, da. Daniel Sutton; ob. 1874

Stephen, of N. Y., nat. Sept. 9th, 1789

Phoebe C., da. Benj. Cornell, nat. 1792; ob. June 22d, 1872

Levi, of New York, nat. Dec. 18, 1792; ob. Feb. 23, 1862

Elizabeth Martigney

Andrew, of Poughkeepsie, nat. 1791; ob. 1875

1. Hannah, da. Jas. Clapp  
2. Sarah Upton, da. Jorathan Haight

David, of N. Y., ob. July, 1870

Sarah, da. of Thos. Pierce

Abraham C., of N. Y., nat. Mar. 18, 1799

1. Elizabeth, da. Peter Buckley  
2. Almyra

Israel, N. Y., nat. July 7, 1804; ob. Mar. 2, 1869

Mary L., da. Jno. Williams

Ephraim, of New Orleans

Deborah, Stephen Archer, nat. 1802

Esther, Robert Haviland, nat. 1800

Caroline  
Sarah Jane, ob. s. May 13, 1876  
Maria, Charles Alcott  
Stephen, N. Y.  
Edward, Hall

Daniel, Anna of N. Y., C. Fox

William, of N. Y., ob. 1866

Fanny Jenkins

Elizabeth C., B. Anderson  
Sarah, Samuel B. Underhill

William A.

Lizzie

Phoebe J. Escher  
Deborah  
Elizabeth  
Sarah C.  
Rachel  
Mary A., T. Thorne

Phoebe, ob. s.

Amelia, ob. s.

John, Sarah C. Fleet  
W. Fleet  
Nattie Stanton  
Tracy Gardner

Andrew, Kate Grady  
Henry L.

Louisa  
Fannie  
Julia, B. C. Macy  
Frederick L.

John, ob. s.

Deborah, Stephen Archer, nat. 1802

Henry S., 1. Mary Doty  
2. Ann Doty  
Richard  
Mary Ann

Adonijah, ob. s.

Jane, Isaac Underhill

Anna E., Edgar Laing

Louisa, Henry Cox.

Harriet

Deborah, Frank Macy

John, of Amywalk, 1. Davenport  
2. Fowler  
Jacob, ob. s.

Sarah, ob.

Isaac, mar. 1804, Elinor Cove

James, of Yorktown, nat. Dec. 14, 1784; ob. Feb. 2d, 1855

1. Lydia, da. of Danl. Carpenter  
2. Tamer, da. of Daniel Carpenter

Isaac, mar. 1804, Elinor Cove

James E., Louis A. Moilheny, ob. Jan. 27, 1877

Louisa, Edmund Pillet

Edward P., ob. s.

Frederick

Clarence

Amy

Lydia, Judge Thompson

Fanny, Judge Thompson

Phoebe, Daniel Smith

Hannah, Josiah J. Underhill

Richardson, Jenkins, Son

Isaac, mar. 1804, Elinor Cove

James E., Louis A. Moilheny, ob. Jan. 27, 1877

Louisa, Edmund Pillet

Edward P., ob. s.

Frederick

Clarence

Amy

Lydia, Judge Thompson

Fanny, Judge Thompson

Phoebe, Daniel Smith

Hannah, Josiah J. Underhill

Phoebe, James Carpenter

William, ob. s.

Isaac, mar. 1804, Elinor Cove

James E., Louis A. Moilheny, ob. Jan. 27, 1877

Abraham, of N. Y., Eliza O'Strander, ob. Mar. 25, 1879

Billy, of N. Y., nat. 1809; ob. Feb. 15, 1878

Mary K. Griffin

William P., ob. s. 1878

Daniel C., ob. 1872

Mary B. Carpenter, nat. 1823; ob. Nov. 16th, 1870

Elias H., Elizabeth, da. of David Underhill

Phoebe, Job Carpenter

Maria, Job Carpenter

Jane, Thos. Carpenter

Amos, ob. s.

James, Johnson, ob. Aug. 1878, et. 40 yrs.

Abraham, ob. s.

Stephen M., ob. Feb. 1st, 1880, et. 37 y.

George

Edwin

Julia

Mary, mar. H. McWilliams

Cornelia, ob. s.

Catharine

Lydia, ob. s.

Carrie

Eugene, Susan Kirkham

Minna, David Ackerman

Augustus, Phoebe Knapp

George

John

Charlotte

Sarah

Robert

Charles

Lillie, ob. s.



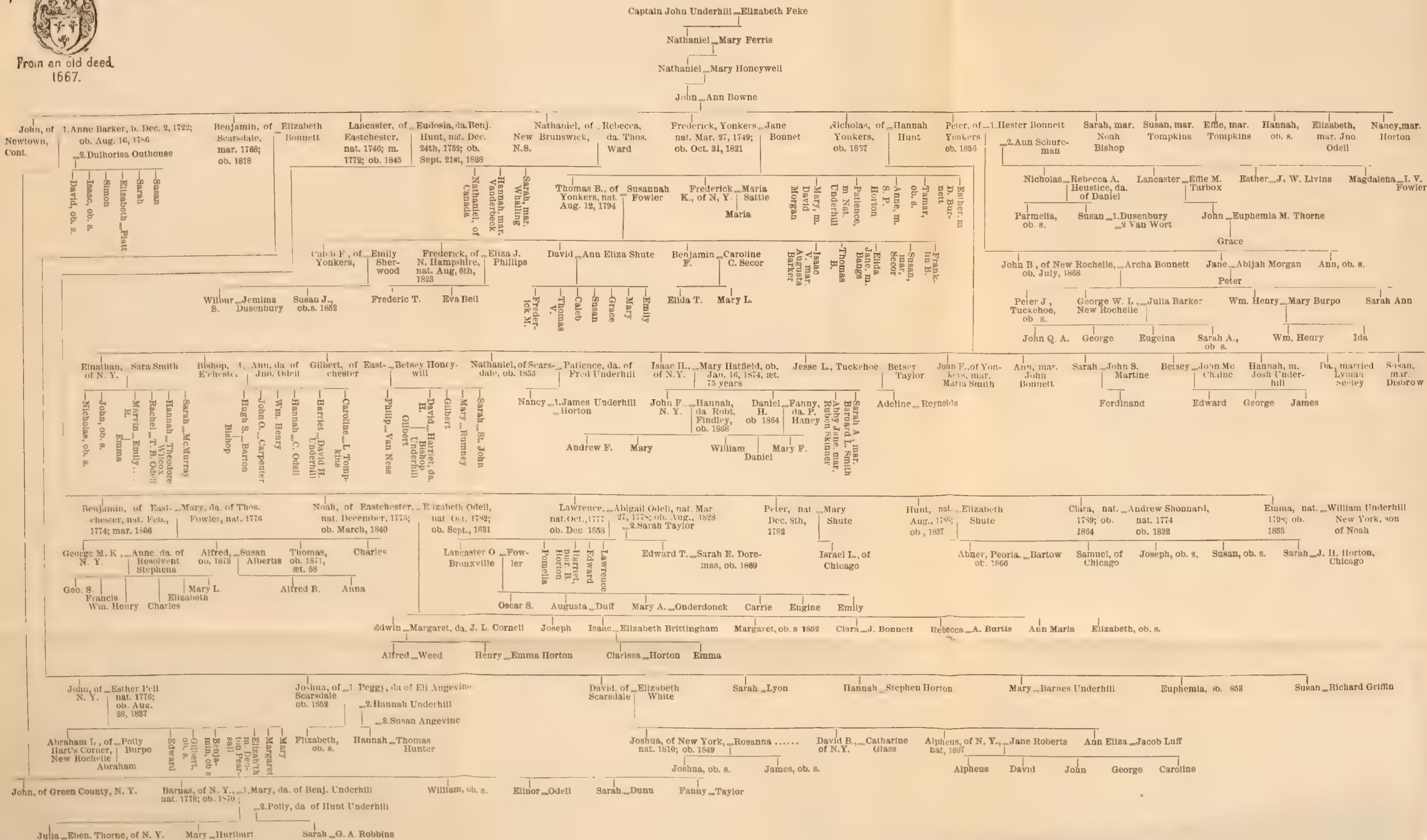




To face page 405, vol. II.

# PEDIGREE OF THE UNDERHILLS, OF WESTCHESTER COUNTY.

No. 3.













To face page 405, vol. II.

# PEDIGREE OF THE UNDERHILLS OF WESTCHESTER COUNTY.

No. 1

From an old deed.  
1667.

Captain John Underhill, nat. about 1600; Elizabeth Feke, 2d wife, da. Robert Feke, of Flushing, L. I. Nat. 1633; married, 1658; ob. July 21st, 1672 ob. 1674

Nathaniel, of Westchester, nat. February 22d, 1653; married, December, 1655; ob. about 1710 Mary, da. of John Ferris, of Westchester

David, of Oyster Bay, nat. Feb. 1st, 1672 Hannah ..... no issue

Deborah, nat. Sept. 29th, 1659; ob. January 30th, 1698 Henry Townsend of Oyster Bay

Hannah, nat. Feb. 10th, 1666; ob. 1757 Thomas Alsop, of Newtown

Elizabeth, nat. May 2d, 1669 Joshua Smith Jacob, nat. Oct. 8, 1690

Nathaniel, of Westchester, nat. Aug. 11th, 1690; ob. Nov. 27th, 1775 Mary Honeywell

See No. 2.

Thomas, of New Castle, Westchester Co., N. Y. Phoebe Davenport

Abraham, of White Plains, will proved 1750, ob. set. about 50 yrs. Hannah Cromwell

See No. 4.

Benjamin of New Castle

John

Son residing South-east

Mary Horton

Benjamin, no issue 1. Amy Weeks 2. Elizabeth Dean Samuel Phoebe Dodge William Mary Sutton Thomas

Thomas of Phillipsburg, nat. Sept. 25, 1739; ob. Oct. 23, 1825; mar. 1761; ob. Mar. 25, 1892 Sarah Weeks, nat. Sept. 25, 1739; ob. Oct. 23, 1825; da. Abel Weeks

Nathaniel, James, Mary Phoebe Weeks James, nat. 1791 James, nat. 1791

James, nat. 1791 James, nat. 1791

Charles, nat. 1791 Charles, nat. 1791

Samuel, nat. 1791 Samuel, nat. 1791

Phoebe, nat. 1791 Phoebe, nat. 1791

James, nat. 1791 James, nat. 1791

Mary, nat. 1791 Mary, nat. 1791

Samuel, nat. 1791 Samuel, nat. 1791

John, of Ulster Co., ob. set. 65 Sarah Thorn, ob. set. 84

Isaac, of Ulster Co., ob. set. 65 Daniel, of Ulster Co., ob. set. 65

Samuel, of Newburg, ob. set. 84 John Isaac

Benjamin, of Cayuga Co., N. Y. Daniel, of Ulster Co., ob. set. 65

Samuel, N. Y. ob. Oct. 2, 1870 Amy Phoebe Jerusha Carpenter Allen

Isaac, of Ulster Co., ob. set. 65 Elisha, Sophia, da. of Pierson Abner Heaton

Abner H. Mary, da. of Isaac Gedney Morris, no issue Josh, ob. s.p. Sarah J. Purham Rachel J. Lounsberry Emma Elijah Fowler Phoebe A. Baldwin Mary A. Martine

William J., of N. J., Louisa Prince Adna G. Mary E. J. Miller Sophia Philena A. E. Conover

Ellnor Minnie Nelly William Abraham, ob. July 26, 1795; set. 66 yrs. Mary Paddock, ob. Jan. 1st, 1820; set. 75 yrs. William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

Abel, nat. Feb. 26th, 1770 Phoebe, da. of Jesse Kipp

Benjamin, Salem, nat. May 10th, 1773; ob. 1846 Abby, da. Richardson Sutton, nat. Dec. 12, 1770 Sarah Robert Sutton Mary M. Frost Martha, ob. s.

Elizabeth, nat. Dec. 11, 1797, had 2 daughters Joseph Weeks

Martha, ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

Jesse, Pamela Purdy Anna, nat. July 2, 1791 William Smith

Thomas, Cella West Amalia Barker Cayuga Co. Alfred Mary Alfred Elma Phoebe

Sarah, nat. Nov. 25, 1795 Silas Weeks Esther Sarah Benjamin Silas

Elizabeth, nat. Dec. 11, 1797, had 2 daughters Joseph Weeks

Martha, ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

Thomas, Cella West Amalia Barker Cayuga Co. Alfred Mary Alfred Elma Phoebe

Sarah, nat. Nov. 25, 1795 Silas Weeks Esther Sarah Benjamin Silas

Elizabeth, nat. Dec. 11, 1797, had 2 daughters Joseph Weeks

Martha, ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

Thomas, Cella West Amalia Barker Cayuga Co. Alfred Mary Alfred Elma Phoebe

Sarah, nat. Nov. 25, 1795 Silas Weeks Esther Sarah Benjamin Silas

Elizabeth, nat. Dec. 11, 1797, had 2 daughters Joseph Weeks

Martha, ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

Thomas, Cella West Amalia Barker Cayuga Co. Alfred Mary Alfred Elma Phoebe

Sarah, nat. Nov. 25, 1795 Silas Weeks Esther Sarah Benjamin Silas

Elizabeth, nat. Dec. 11, 1797, had 2 daughters Joseph Weeks

Martha, ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

Thomas, Cella West Amalia Barker Cayuga Co. Alfred Mary Alfred Elma Phoebe

Sarah, nat. Nov. 25, 1795 Silas Weeks Esther Sarah Benjamin Silas

Elizabeth, nat. Dec. 11, 1797, had 2 daughters Joseph Weeks

Martha, ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

Thomas, Cella West Amalia Barker Cayuga Co. Alfred Mary Alfred Elma Phoebe

Sarah, nat. Nov. 25, 1795 Silas Weeks Esther Sarah Benjamin Silas

Elizabeth, nat. Dec. 11, 1797, had 2 daughters Joseph Weeks

Martha, ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

Thomas, Cella West Amalia Barker Cayuga Co. Alfred Mary Alfred Elma Phoebe

Sarah, nat. Nov. 25, 1795 Silas Weeks Esther Sarah Benjamin Silas

Elizabeth, nat. Dec. 11, 1797, had 2 daughters Joseph Weeks

Martha, ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

Thomas, Cella West Amalia Barker Cayuga Co. Alfred Mary Alfred Elma Phoebe

Sarah, nat. Nov. 25, 1795 Silas Weeks Esther Sarah Benjamin Silas

Elizabeth, nat. Dec. 11, 1797, had 2 daughters Joseph Weeks

Martha, ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

Thomas, Cella West Amalia Barker Cayuga Co. Alfred Mary Alfred Elma Phoebe

Sarah, nat. Nov. 25, 1795 Silas Weeks Esther Sarah Benjamin Silas

Elizabeth, nat. Dec. 11, 1797, had 2 daughters Joseph Weeks

Martha, ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

Thomas, Cella West Amalia Barker Cayuga Co. Alfred Mary Alfred Elma Phoebe

Sarah, nat. Nov. 25, 1795 Silas Weeks Esther Sarah Benjamin Silas

Elizabeth, nat. Dec. 11, 1797, had 2 daughters Joseph Weeks

Martha, ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

Thomas, Cella West Amalia Barker Cayuga Co. Alfred Mary Alfred Elma Phoebe

Sarah, nat. Nov. 25, 1795 Silas Weeks Esther Sarah Benjamin Silas

Elizabeth, nat. Dec. 11, 1797, had 2 daughters Joseph Weeks

Martha, ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

Thomas, Cella West Amalia Barker Cayuga Co. Alfred Mary Alfred Elma Phoebe

Sarah, nat. Nov. 25, 1795 Silas Weeks Esther Sarah Benjamin Silas

Elizabeth, nat. Dec. 11, 1797, had 2 daughters Joseph Weeks

Martha, ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

Thomas, Cella West Amalia Barker Cayuga Co. Alfred Mary Alfred Elma Phoebe

Sarah, nat. Nov. 25, 1795 Silas Weeks Esther Sarah Benjamin Silas

Elizabeth, nat. Dec. 11, 1797, had 2 daughters Joseph Weeks

Martha, ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

William, nat. July 24, 1741; ob. April 10, 1813, Dorset, Mass., 1770 Abigail, da. Wallace, nat. Dec. 21st, 1741; ob. July 2d, 1831 Augustin John C., ob. s.

About two miles north-west of the village of Westchester is the residence and estate of the late William A. Spencer, Esq., now owned by his son Lorillard Spencer.

This property originally belonged to the Underhill family, having been purchased by Nathaniel Underhill of John Turner in 1685. Nathaniel Underhill was the youngest son of the celebrated Captain John Underhill, commonly called Lord Underhill—descended, as we shall have occasion to show presently, of an ancient and honorable family in Warwickshire, England.

"The name of Underhill," says Lower, "is local, from residence at the foot of, or *under a hill*. This hill was situated in Nether-Eatendon,<sup>a</sup> a little below Halford on the eastern bank of the Stoure. The letters *ea*, in our English, signifying water and dune or don, an ascending ground; for at the foot of an hill just near the river doth it stand."<sup>b</sup>

There can be no doubt that Capt. John Underhill was descended of the Underhills of Huningham in Warwickshire, a town four miles east of Kenilworth on the river Learne; for their Christian names and arms are the same.

The arms of the Huningham Underhills were, "argent a chevron gules between three trefoils slipped vert," and the crest as usually given, "a hind lodged or on a mount vert;" but an old seal of the Underhills in the possession of Mr. Evelyn Ph. Shirley exhibits it as "a buck trippant."<sup>c</sup> The seal of Captain John Underhill attached to his name as a witness in a conveyance from the Indian proprietors of Matinecock, Long Island, to Matthew Prior, dated Killingworth, 22d of June, 1664, are "arg, three trefoils, slipped vert," while the crest resembles that on the old seal before mentioned, viz: "a buck trippant" which clearly proves that the bearer belonged to the old or parent stock carrying the original coat plain without a difference.<sup>d</sup>

"During the reign of Elizabeth, when the prosperity of the family was at its height, the Underhills acquired property in almost every parish within six miles of Easington. They became connected by marriage, also, with many of the best families of the county of Warwick, and attained the honors of Knighthood.<sup>e</sup> From the visitation of Warwick-

<sup>a</sup> *Patronymica Britannica*—Lower.

<sup>b</sup> Dugdale's *Warwickshire*, p 479.

<sup>c</sup> See *Miscellanea Gen. et Heraldica* by Jos. Jackson.

<sup>d</sup> In a catalogue of residents in the county of Warwick, taken by Henry Ferrers of Baddesley, Esq., in the twentieth year of Queen Elizabeth. A.D. 1577-8, are the following bearing the name of Underhill: Thomas Underhill, of Nether-Etington; Humfry Underhill, of Kineton, his brother; John Underhill, of Whitchurch, his brother; William Underhill, of Stratford-upon-Avon, son of Witham, brother of Thomas; Edward Underhill, of Barton on the Heath, brother of Thomas; Thomas Underhill, of Halford, second son of Thomas.—*Collectanea Topographica et Genealogica*, vol. viii., 308.

<sup>e</sup> *Collectanea Topog. et Genealogica*, vol. vi, 381-384.

shire in 1619, we learn that William Underhill of Wolverhampton, County of Stafford, "lyved in the yere of our Lord 1423," and by his wife \* \* \* \* daughter of Stanley of Bromwick, left Nathaniel Underhill, who married \* \* \* \* daughter of \* \* \* \* Butt, County of Warwick, their son John Underhill,<sup>a</sup> of Huningham, County of Warwick, had a lease for eighty years of the Manor of Eatington, &c., County of Warwick, from Sir Ralph Shirley, in 1509; he died November 29th, 1518. By his wife Agnes, daughter and heir of Thomas Porter, of Eatington, County of Warwick, he had two sons—Edward Underhill, his second son, who had a fresh lease for one hundred years of the Manor of Eatington, in 1541; Francis, son of Sir R. Shirley died Nov. 5th, 1546, and was the ancestor of the Underhills of Eatington,<sup>b</sup> Tallicote and New Place, Stratford, &c.

"In the body of the church be severall marble grave stones," says Dugdale, whereon are portraictures in brasse, viz: The first of a man in a gown with his wife, over whose heads are two coats of arms, I a cheveron betwixt 3 trefoils II party per cheveron arg and sable, 2 morecocks, of the second, in chief, and at their feet a plate with this epitaph:

Here lyeth buried under this stone  
 EDWARD UNDERHILL,  
 sometime gentleman of this town, with  
 MARGARET,  
 his wife, which Edward deceased this world  
 the fifth day of November, A.D. MDCLVI., on  
 whose follys Jhesu have mercy, amen."

On another is the following inscription:

"Here lyeth buried the bodyes of  
 THOMAS UNDERHILL,  
 of this town, Esquire, and  
 ELIZABETH,  
 his wife, who lived married together in perfect amitie  
 almost sixty-five years, and had issue between  
 them XX children, viz: XIII sons and  
 VII daughters.

<sup>a</sup> John Underhill was born in St. Martin's parish, Oxford, entered New College in that city, became an eminent preacher, chaplain to Queen Elizabeth, and made Bishop of Oxford in 1589, and died in 1592, and was probably of the Warwickshire family.—*Collectanea Topographica et Geneologica*, vol. iii, p. 361, p. 182.

<sup>b</sup> The church of Lower Ectendon, or Eatington, situated in the manor of that name which the crown gave to the earls of Kentworth, still contains some remains of the brass effigies inscriptions of the ancient family of the Underhills.



She dyed 24 June, An. D. +. 1603 ;  
and he the 6th day of Oct. next after

Their frugality in provision for their children, their charitable deposition to relieve the needy and great bounty in hospitality was a pleasing spectacle to their neighbours, and may be an alluring precedent to their posterity, as they lived to the liking, and with the love of mortal men, so they dyed in the true service and love of the immortal God +. The poore, their tenants, neighbours, will for a time bewaile the want of them ; but the angells of Heaven and Saints of God will perpetually rejoyce in the company of them ; for God they feared, God they served, God they loved, and to God they dyed. Their warfare in God's Church militant on earth hath been short, but their glory in His Church Triumphant in heaven will be eternal."—*Antiquities of Warwickshire*, illustration by William Dugdale, London, MDCLVI.

Thomas Underhill, the eldest son of John, of Huningham, married Anne, daughter of Robt. Winter,<sup>a</sup> of Hardington County, Worcester and of Willey County, Warwick ; their eldest son was Edward Underhill of Huningham, which he sold in 1545. He was distinguished by the title of the "Hot Gospeller," and exchanged the life of a country gentleman for that of a soldier and courtier. In 1543 he served as a man-at-arms under Sir Richard Crumwell, captain of the horsemen in the Contingent, sent to assist the Emperor at the siege of Landrevi in Hanault, and in the following year when King Henry went to Boulogne, Sir Richard procured for Underhill a nomination among the men-at-arms who were embodied to attend upon his Majesty's person being a band of two hundred attired in a uniform of red and yellow damask with the bards of their horses and their plumes and feathers of the same colors.

At the revival of the band of gentlemen pensioners in 1539 Edward Underhill was appointed one of its first members. "In the year 1549 he, a second time, went to France on military service accompanying the army of six thousand men sent under the command of the Earl of Huntingdon to check the French who were then aiming at the recapture of Boulogne. On this expedition, Underhill served as comptroller of the ordnance. His subsequent history, except as connected with the religious persecution of the times in which he lived, is merely that of domestic life."<sup>b</sup>

"In 1645 he married Joan, daughter of Thomas Perryns, the daugh-

<sup>a</sup> Robt. Winter upon partition of that inheritance had, it seems, the manor of Huningham, but conveyed the same to John Underhill.—*Dugdale's War.*

<sup>b</sup> *Narratives of the Reformation* printed by Camden Society, 1860, p. 132.

ter of a citizen of London, of an obscure and unknown family ;"<sup>a</sup> by her he had issue four sons and seven daughters. Guilford the eldest son, (godson to Queen Jane and named after her husband, the Lord Guilford Dudley, brother of Robert Dudley, Earl of Penestor,) was born 3d July, 1553, and died young. Edward, the second son and heir, was born the 10th of February, 1555 ; John, the third son is said to have died young in 1556,<sup>b</sup> while Henry, the fourth son, was born the 6th of September, 1561. The daughters were, first, Anne, born on St. John's day, on Christmas, 1548 ; second, Christian, born 16th September, 1548 ; third, Elinor, born 10th of November, 1549 ; fourth, Rachel, born the 4th February, 1551 ; fifth, Unyca, born on Palm Sunday, April 10th, 1552 ; sixth, Anne, born the 4th of January, 1554 ; and seventh, Prudence, born 6th of September, 1561.

"On the 13th of April, 1562, was buried at St. Botulphi without Aldgate, London, Mistress Underhill, a dozen of scucheons of arms, and there did preach for her one whose name is not recorded."<sup>c</sup>

"Edward Underhill is styled of Bathkington. This not improbably Bagginton near Coventry, to which neighborhood he removed, according to his own account in the "autobiographical anecdotes."<sup>d</sup> He must have died sometime between the years 1562 and 1577, as he was still living at the time of his wife's decease, and likewise when the anecdotes were written in 1561, and moreover his name does not occur among the list of residents in Warwickshire taken during the latter year. "It is a little remarkable that the once wide spreading branches of the Underhill family are no longer to be found among the gentry of Warwickshire."

Tradition seems to point to a son of Edward Underhill, the "Hot Gospeller," who was doubtless Edward, the second son, before mentioned as having, like his father, embraced the life of a soldier and a courtier. This individual, a youth of about twenty, who must have resided with his father, at Bagginton, (a town belonging to the Earl of Leicester and about three miles from Kenilworth), probably like many of the neighboring squires and their sons, helped to swell the pomp of Leicester, in the capacity of servant or page, during Queen Elizabeth's visit to the castle of Kenilworth, on the 19th of July, 1575 ; an event which his son, the famous Capt. John Underhill, was afterwards proud to commemorate in the naming of his first purchase from the Matinecock Indians of Long Island in 1667, Kenilworth, or "commonly Kill-

<sup>a</sup> Narratives of the Reformation printed by Camden Society, 1860, p. 132.

<sup>b</sup> How could John the third son have died the following year that his elder brother, Edward, is said to have been born ?

<sup>c</sup> Narratives of the Reformation, &c

<sup>d</sup> Narratives of the Reformation, &c., by the Camden Society, pp. 132-133.

ingworth."<sup>a</sup> Family tradition also associates him with the Earl of Leicester, as the bearer of dispatches from Queen Elizabeth to the Earl of Leicester, then commanding the English forces in the Low Countries. This is somewhat confirmed by the following extract taken from a letter of "Mr. Suntsey Walsyngham to the Earl of Leicester, December, 1585," "My verie, good lord, your letters, sent by Mr. Henrie Astell and your servante Underhill, I have received,&c.<sup>b</sup> Upon Leicesters recall and return to England, Underhill joined him; and upon the Earl's decease, in Sept., 1588, he attached himself to the fortunes of the Earl of Essex, the unfortunate successor to Leicester, in Queen Elizabeth's favor. He accompanied that gallant nobleman in his successful attack upon Cadiz, and shared his ill fortune in his fruitless expedition against Tyrme, the rebel chief of the revolted clans of Ireland; and, returning with the Earl into England, by his attachment to that imprudent nobleman, sallying into the streets of London in the petty insurrection, which cost Essex his head, he was obliged to seek safety in Holland until the accession of King James, in 1603, when he applied for pardon and leave to return to his native country; but no interest of friends, we are assured, could procure it. When the Rev. Mr. Robinson, with a number of other separatists, fled from England to Holland, in 1603, he dwelt and communed with them a number of years. The date of his death is unknown. His son, the redoubtable Capt. John Underhill was born circ., 1600, and had early imbibed an ardent love of liberty, civic and religious, by his service as a soldier under the illustrious Maurice of Nassau, Prince of Orange, in the Low Countries. "He was strongly solicited to go with Governor Carver, Elder William Brewster and other worthies, part of the Rev. John Robinson's church, to the settlement of Plymouth, and had partly engaged with them as their chief military officer; but, Capt. Miles Standish, his brave fellow-soldier in the Low Countries, undertaking the business, in 1620, he declined. How he joined Governor Winthrop, does not appear; but he came over to New England with him "as captain of any militia force that might be employed or instituted, as he had served under the great Dutch Prince in the war of the Netherlands," in 1630; and soon after we find him disciplining the Boston militia, where he was held in such high distinction that he was appointed one of the first deputies from Boston to the General Court,"<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Camden's *Brittania*.

<sup>b</sup> Leicester Correspondence, Camden Soc. Edited by John Bruce, F.S.A., MDCCCXLIV, letter xvi pp. 34, 35. The letter conveyed by Underhill was probably that of the Earl to Walsingham, dated 26th of Dec., 1585, p. 29, of above, setting forth the gratitude of the people of the Low Countries to Queen Elizabeth for her assistance &c.

<sup>c</sup> "Algerine Captive," by D. Udike Underhil, vol. i, 25, printed at Walpole, New Hampshire, in 1797.

and one of the earliest officers of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company." "He was sworn freeman, 18th of May, 1630. In 1637, his great friend Sir Harry Vane, sent him as commander of the colony troops, to Saybrook,<sup>a</sup> Connecticut." The same year he was "disfranchised, and eventually banished from the jurisdiction of Massachusetts—his ideas of religious toleration being more liberal than those around him." "In 1638, he returned to England, but was banished thence for certain religious and moral delinquences. While there he published a work entitled "*Nevves from America, or a New and Experimental Discoverie of New England*; containing a true relation of their warlike proceedings there, two years last past, with a figure of the Indian Fort, or Palizado. By Capt. John Underhill, a commander in the warres there." The book gives a very good account of the Pequot war, in which he was a conspicuous actor. "Myself," he writes, "received an arrow through my coat-sleeve, a second against my helmet, on the forehead; so, as if God, in His providence, had not moved the heart of my wife to persuade me to carry it along with me, (which I was unwilling to do), I had been slain. Give me leave to observe two things from hence—first, when the hour of death is not yet come, you see God useth weak means to keep His purpose inviolated; secondly, *let no man despise advice and counsel of his wife, though she be a woman.*" The book abounds in similar quaint passages. It is filled with religious cant, for he was an arrant hypocrite. He appears to be equally fond of sinning and repenting. It is amusing to read in these pages of Winthrop, how ingeniously he managed through several years, to delude the Puritans by his professions of sanctity, while he led in their midst the most dissolute of lives."<sup>b</sup>

"In 1638 he was chosen Governor of Dover, New Hampshire, in place of Burdett. The same infirmity rendered his removal unavoidable, and he went to the Dutch; with them he succeeded," for governor Kieft gave him a command of one hundred and twenty men in their wars with the natives. In February, 1644, the Dutch soldiers, under their valiant leader, encountered the Indians on what is now called Indian Hill, in the town of Bedford, leaving five hundred of their enemy dead on the field. He totally extinguished the Pequots. Besides this, Underhill is said to have killed one hundred and fifty Indians on Long Island. He was a representative from Stamford to the General Court of Connecticut, in 1633.<sup>c</sup> In 1644, he came with the Rev. Mr. Denton,

<sup>a</sup> Killingworth, near Saybrook, is said to have been named by Underhill.

<sup>b</sup> Manhattan Papers, No. 10. By Vanwargen.—*Sunday Times*.

<sup>c</sup> In 1653, Privateer's commission was given to Capt. John Underhill and others "to goe against the Dutch or any enemies of ye Commonwealth of New England."—New vol. vii. No. 1, p. 17.



and others of his church, to Long Island and soon after became a resident of Flushing, where he evinced the same restless temper as formerly, and was anxious for a military employment." "After wandering about in different places he settled at Oyster Bay, in or about the year 1655." In 1665 he was a delegate from that town to the meeting at Hempstead, by order of Governor Nicoll, and was by him made high sheriff of the North Riding on Long Island. In 1667, the Matinecock Indians conveyed to him a large tract of their land, a part of which, called Kenilworth or Killingworth, a portion of which still remains in the family.

Captain John Underhill died at an advanced age on the 21st of July, 1672, and was buried on his estate at Kenilworth, or Killingworth, Queens County, L. I. By his first wife, Helena, who came with him originally from Holland, he had issue, John Underhill, of Matinecock, who was born during his father's stay at Boston, 11th of April, 1642, and baptized 24th of the same month.<sup>a</sup> He became a member of the Religious Society of Friends and died on the 29th of October, 1692. This individual was the ancestor of the Long Island branch of the Underhill family, and left issue by his wife, Mary, daughter of Matthew Prior, (married Aug. 1st, 1668,) John Underhill, of Kenilworth, who had five sons and four daughters; the sons were, John, born 1st May, 1670; Daniel, Samuel, Abraham and Jacob; the latter left Peter Underhill of Westchester. Elizabeth, the daughter of Captain John Underhill by his first wife, was baptized at Boston, 14th February, 1636. By his second wife, Elizabeth, daughter of Robert Feke, (whose wife was the widow of Henry Winthrop, son of Gov. Winthrop,) he had issue, Nathaniel Underhill, before mentioned, who was born 22d of February, 1663, removed to Westchester in 1685, and bought lands of John Turner; a second son of the Captain was David, born 4th of February, 1672, who died young, leaving a natural son Peter. By his last will, bearing date the

"18TH OF SEPTEMBER, 1671.—Captain John Underhill bequeathes his whole estate in possession of his wife, Elizabeth Underhill, during ye time of her widowhood; but if she marry, then my brother John Bownes, Henry Townsend, Matthew Pryor, and my son, John Underhill, I empower hereby that they see to ye estate, that ye children be not wronged, nor turned off, without some proportionable allowance, as ye estate will afford; and that my son, Nathaniel remain with his mother until twenty-one years, &c."<sup>b</sup>

Letters of administration were granted unto John Underhill of ye

<sup>a</sup> Savage's Biog. Dict. The family Bible of Jno. Underhill says, born 4th mo. April 12th, 1631.

<sup>b</sup> Thompson's Hist. of Long Island, vol. li, 361.

estate of his father, of Killingworth, 4th of November, 1975. Upon<sup>a</sup> the 22d of March, 1686 7, Nathaniel Underhill and Mary, his wife, of the town and county of Westchester, conveyed all their land of every kind at Matinecock, Oyster Bay, "which is the land that my father, John Underhill, Senr., lived upon, with forty acres in the woods, which I bought of the Indians," to John Underhill of Matinecock.<sup>b</sup>

The sons of Nathaniel were Thomas, John, Nathaniel Underhill, Jr., from whom descended the late Anthony L. Underhill of New York, and Lancaster Underhill, of Eastchester, and Abraham, from whom came the Underhills of Yorktown and New York.

Nathaniel Underhill, Jr., grandson of Capt. John Underhill, died at Westchester, in 1775. The following epitaph is inscribed on his headstone in the family cemetery:—

"Here lies the body of  
NATHANIEL UNDERHILL,  
who was born August the 11th, 1690,  
and departed this life November 27th, 1775,  
aged 85 years, 3 months, and 16 days.

Nathaniel, the eldest son of this individual, filled various public offices. He was one of the Judges of the Court of Common Pleas, for the County of Westchester, in 1759; and in 1775, was elected Mayor of the Borough of Westchester.

Nathaniel Underhill, son of John Underhill, of Yonkers, (great grandson of Nathaniel and Mary Ferris), appears to have been a firm and devoted loyalist during the Revolutionary War. On one occasion he was captured by a party of Tories or Cowboys, led by Isaac Martlingh, who conveyed their prisoner to a neighboring barn, suspended him by his feet, compelled him to eat oats off the floor, and otherwise badly treated him. The sufferer on being released, vowed vengeance on his tormentors, declaring he would shoot every one of them if an opportunity should ever occur; and happening to encounter Martlingh soon afterwards, shot him dead on the spot.<sup>c</sup>

The house of James Quimby (who married Hannah, daughter of Isaac Underhill, of Yorktown, grandson of Nathaniel Underhill and Mary Ferris), near the Spencer place, now owned by Doctor Pearsall, "was often robbed during the Revolutionary War, and the family had a place of concealment to which they always fled whenever attacked on

<sup>a</sup> New York Surrogates Office, No. 1, 212.

<sup>b</sup> Queen's County Rec. Lib. B. 91.

<sup>c</sup> This story was related by the late Lancaster Underhill, of Eastchester who had often heard his father, a brother of Nathaniel, recount the adventure.

these occasions. One night Robert Underhill, (the brother of Mrs. Quimby), James Underhill and Isaac Mekell, were stopping here when Robert Underhill proposed defending the premises should the robbers make their appearance during their stay—provided James, his cousin, would only assist him. Singularly enough, the marauders came that very night, demanding entrance; but the heart of James failed him, and he fled with the rest. Robert, however, provided himself with a large club and arranged chairs along the entry, upon which he suddenly commenced a violent attack, striking furiously with his club, at the same time stamping furiously on the floor and making all the noise possible, as though there were others aiding him on the inside, then he would strike the door and dare the robbers to come on saying, “we are ready for you this time!” adding occasionally the hoarse blast of a conck-shell. The marauders somewhat bewildered, contented themselves with firing a volley into the house, which fortunately missed its brave defender, and retired. The defeated “Cowboys” afterwards reported that they thought “the Devil was in the house.”<sup>a</sup>

Upon “*Dorman's Island*,” (so called prior to 1704), in the north-east corner of the town, the Eastchester creek bridge communicates with the Westchester shore and Pelham neck.

The adjoining estate, Annie's Wood, is the property of John Hunter, Esq., son of the late Elias Desbrosses Hunter, by his wife Anne Maria, sixth daughter of Peter J. Munro, and grandson of the late John Hunter, Esq., former owner of Hunter's Island, who for many years represented this district in the State Senate; and, in 1846, was chosen a member of the convention for revising the State Constitution.

The Hunter family is originally from the County of Ayrshire, Scotland; two houses of that name having existed in that country, for many centuries. “The surname,” says Robertson, “is obviously derived from the chase, before the use of fixed family names, as at present. Thus Johne le Hunter, de la Forester de Paisley; the Hunter of Stragrife, appears in the Scottish rolls.” The great-grandfather of the present proprietor was Robert Hunter, of Armagh County, Ireland, whose ancestor emigrated thither from Scotland, circ., the beginning of the seventeenth century.

The estate of Rockfield, on the south, is the property of John M. Furman. The views of the water from this place are of a beautiful description. In the immediate vicinity are located the residences of Lawrence Waterbury and Lorillard Spencer. In close vicinity is Bay-side, the Harlem River Railroad depot for this section of Westchester.

<sup>a</sup> Memorandum of conversations with Abraham I. Underhill, of Yorktown,

This portion of Throckmorton's Neck, together with Dorman's Island formerly constituted the old Bayard estate, as noticed in the early part of this town.

One of the most ancient and noble families of the County of Dauphing in France, is that of Bayard ; and well have those who have sprung from it maintained the honor of their house. For at the battle of Poitiers, the great-great grand-father of Pierre Bayard, the good knight without fear and without reproach, fell by the side of the French King John. At the battle of Agincourt, was slain his great-grand-father ; his grand-father was left on the field of Montlerey with six mortal wounds, not to speak of lesser ones ; and at the battle of Guignegaste, his father was so severely wounded, that he was never afterwards able to leave his house, where he died at the age of eighty."

Pierre du Terrail Seigneur de Bayard was born in 1476, at the Chateau de Bourg in the valley of Graisivudun, a few leagues from Grenoble, the principal city of Dauphiny. For more than thirty years he served in the armies of France. For valor and skill as a leader he was unsurpassed, in an age when chivalry was still honored. He was killed by a gun-shot at Biagrassa on the 13th of April, 1524, at the age of forty-eight years and died unmarried, and without issue.

During the religious troubles which distracted the kingdom of France in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, some of the family descendants from a branch of the Chevalier Bayard's house, emigrated to Holland ; among these was Balthazar Bayard, a Huguenot clergyman and professor of languages in Paris, who early in the seventeenth century left France to escape persecution on account of his religion. There is a tradition in the family that he was shipped from Rochelle in a hogshead. He soon rallied around him a congregation of Huguenot refugees, whose pastor he continued until his death. He married, in Holland, Anna Stuyvesant, sister of Peter Stuyvesant, the last Dutch Governor of New York. Madame Anna Bayard, her husband being then dead, accompanied her brother, Peter Stuyvestant, to New York with her three children, all sons—Balshazar, Peter and Nicholas—where they landed on the fourteenth of May, 1647. From these three brothers are descended all who bear the name of Bayard in the United States. Peter purchased lands on the Bohemia Manor, in 1684—a portion of which were in Delaware, and a portion in Cecil County, Maryland ; he married Blandinas Corde, a lady of fine talents and great culture. From them the Delaware, the Philadelphia, and the Pittsburgh Bayards, came. Nicholas, the youngest of the three sons of the first Balshazar Bayard, was many years a member of the Council of State for the Colonial Government of New



York. He was eminent for his piety, as well as his political influence. In the turbulent period in which he lived, his integrity was esteemed by all parties. In the changes from Dutch to English, and from English to Dutch, and again to English supremacy, he maintained a high position. The demagogue Leisler, during his usurped authority, found in Bayard a formidable impediment, and caused him to be indicted for high treason. The judge—Atwood—like another Jeffries, compelled the jury to find him guilty and sentenced him to be hung. He appealed to Queen Arne, and was pardoned.<sup>a</sup> Leisler was subsequently tried and convicted of high treason, and hung.

Nicholas was several times mayor of New York, and when not mayor was generally an alderman. He died in 1711, leaving a son Samuel, Col. Samuel Vitch Bayard, (a descendant of Nicholas, (was owner of the Rivington property on Throgmorton's neck, lately owned by Daniel M. Edgar, Esq., and now held by Lawrence W. Waterbury. Col. Samuel Vetch Bayard, served under the Crown of England, and was a distinguished military officer. He died in Wilmot, Nova Scotia, A. D. 1832, aged seventy-five, and was the father of Capt. Stephen Bayard, born Oct. 26th, 1785, was basely murdered, July 11th, 1814; married Eliza, daughter of Oliver de Lancey, (son of Peter), an officer of the British Navy, and owner of the Mills on the Bronx, by his wife Rachel Hunt. Their son was the late William Bayard, M.D., of West Farms; the late Mr. Edward Cooper of Throg's neck, was another grandson of Col. Vetch Bayard.

Bordering the Westchester and Pelham road, in this vicinity, is situated "Stony Lonesome," a portion of the old Drake farm, lately held by John Benson who sold forty acres to the present proprietor, Edward Haight, Esq. On this property stands the celebrated "Spy Oak," so named from the fact that a spy found prowling around the American camp, swung for his crime, from one of its largest branches—tradition says it was the limb that once overhung the road, but has been cut short, upon which he died—much legendary lore is associated with this ancient denizen of the forest, which has reached the huge dimensions of feet in circumference. Many superstitious persons would rather go a mile out of their way than pass this dreaded tree, beneath which the dead soldier was buried; especially as the ghost has never been laid to their certain knowledge.

Further south lies the Ferris property, which has been held by the family of that name for five generations. The Ferris's were originally from Leicestershire, England, and decended from the house of Feriers,

<sup>a</sup> See Howell's State Trials, vol. xiv.

Ferrerr, Ferries or Ferris, the first member of which (in England) was Henry de Feriers, the son of Gualchelme de Feriers, master of the House of the Duke of Normandy, who obtained of the Conqueror, large grants of land in the counties of Staffordshire, Derbyshire and Leicestershire. From Gualchelme de Feriers,<sup>a</sup> descend, the Ferrers of Groby, who bore for their paternal coat of arms "gu. seven mascles or. a canton erm; while their Westchester decendants carried, gu. a fleur de lis or., a canton erm, with a crescent for difference. Jeffrey Ferriger or Ferris, of Watertown, Massachusetts, was admitted a freeman, A.D. 1635.<sup>b</sup> From thence he removed to Weathersfield, in 1658, and must have been residing at Fairfield, in Connecticut, according to the following extract taken from the Probate Records.—"Order of the Courts of Probate, Fairfield, on estate of Jeffrey Fferis, relative to marriage contract with his deceased wife Susanna, by which he agreed to pay certain legacies to children of Robert Lockwood, deceased," "according to the administration entered in Courte, 20th October, 1658, &c.<sup>c</sup> At an early period, John Ferris, removed hither from Fairfield, and became one of the ten proprietors of Throckmorton's neck. These lands he probably obtained by purchase from Thomas Pell, formerly of Fairfield. John Ferris was one of the first patentees of the town of Westchester, in 1667. He lived to an advanced age, and died in 1715. His will was proved 25th of Feb., 1715-16. He left five sons, viz: Samuel, one of the first assistants and common council of the borough of Westchester; James, proprietor of the homestead in 1746; Jonathan, John and Peter, of Westchester. His grandson, James Ferris, possessed this estate in 1776, when it was occupied by the British troops, under Gen. Lord Howe. The family happened to be at breakfast, in the present house, on the morning of the 12th of October, 1776, when a gun from the British flag-ship announced the disembarkation of the troops; this signal was instantly answered by the enemies' shipping, which lay at anchor between City Island and Throckmorton's neck. On the next day Gen. Lord Howe, supposing that he had been deceived by his guides and landed upon an island, summoned them before a board of officers; as they entered, he struck the table violently with his sword, and demanded in a threatening manner, how they could dare to deceive him?<sup>d</sup> After

<sup>a</sup> The arms of Gualchelme de Feriers, were ar. six horse shoes pierced sa. The ancient arms of Ferrers, sa. six horse shoes, arg. three, two and one. The arms of Ferrie Des Ferris, arms; Degueules, a trois annelets d. or. Couronne de Comte, supports Deux Lions. In 1265, Robert Ferré, Ecuyer, fil de Raoul ou, Rodolphe Ferré. Sec de Magny Nobiliare de Normandie, Tome 2.

<sup>b</sup> There was a Benjamin Ferris, of Salem, in 1640, who might have been a brother of Jeffrey,

<sup>c</sup> Fairfield Prob. Rec., 1648-1656, p. 67.

<sup>d</sup> 21st September, 1669. Nickolas Bayley, of Westchester, carpenter, sells his house lot, which lies over against Mr. Pell's house, and adjoining to that lot which was formerly mine, and now is, John Ferrisses, to John Winter, of Westchester, and the commonage thereunto belonging, &c.

a proper explanation had been made, he solemnly declared he would hang every one of them, unless, conducted safe from his present position. The retreat was ultimately effected by a bridge of boats.

James Ferris, the proprietor, was subsequently captured by the "Queen's Rangers," and removed to the New York Provoost. His descendants are very numerous in the town. Mr. John Van Antwerp is the present occupant of the homestead.

Throckmorton's Point, situated at the south east extremity of the neck proper, derives its name, as already stated, from John Throckmorton, who took a grant for it under the Dutch, A.D. 1643. The name has been abbreviated from Throgmorton's to Throg's, and finally corrupted to Frog's Neck.

From the Throckmorton's and others the point passed by purchase to the late Abijah Hammond, Esq., whose heirs sold to Mr. H. Le Roy Newbold, Mr. W. Whitehead, Mr. James Duck, and the late Mr. Chas. King. The mansion erected by Abijah Hammond is now owned by Frederick C. Havemeyer.

The house occupies a splendid situation near the entrance of the point, commanding on the right and left extensive prospects of the East River. Mr. Hammond was the son of Abijah Hammond and grandson of John Hammond, who emigrated to Massachusetts in 1680. His first wife was Catharine, a daughter of Abraham Ogden, by whom he had, with other issue, a son—the late Ogden Hammond—who resided for many years on the point.

Upon the extremity of Throckmorton's Point is situated Fort Schuyler which was begun in 1833; and in 1851 was estimated to have cost in construction and repairs \$873,013. It was built to accommodate one thousand two hundred and fifty men, and to mount three hundred and eighteen cannon. With the projected work upon Wilkin's Point, in Flushing, Queen's County, these fortresses would effectually protect New York against the approach of a hostile fleet from the Sound. The fort is built of granite from Greenwich, Connecticut; adjoining the fort is a light-house, for this portion of the Long Island Sound.

Throckmorton's Point is distinguished as being the scene of important military operations, and was for a short time in the possession of the enemy during the Revolutionary War. The following account is from General Heath's memoirs:—

"OCTOBER 3D, 1776.—The brigadier generals of our general's division,<sup>a</sup> were in council, and several new works were laid out; among others, a redoubt on the hill above William's Bridge. Our general, in reconnoitering his position, accom-

<sup>a</sup> General Heath.

pained by Col. Hand, below the camp of the rifle corps, being apprehensive that the British might land on Frog's Neck, took a view of the cause-way between Westchester and the Point. Upon the neck, which runs between these two, is a tide mill, and a plank bridge at the mill, at the west end of the causeway, (the side of the American army,) was at this time a range of cord wood, as advantageously situated to cover a party to defend the pass as if constructed for the very purpose. After taking a full view, our general directed Col. Hand, immediately on his return to his camp, to fix upon one of the best subaltern officers, and twenty-five picked men of his corps, and assign them to this pass, as their alarm-post at all times; and in case the enemy made a landing on Frog's Neck, to direct this officer immediately to take up the planks of the bridge; to have everything in readiness to set the mill on fire; but not to do it, unless the fire of the riflemen should appear insufficient to check the advance of the enemy on the causeway; to assign another party to the head of the creek; to reinforce both, in case the enemy landed; and that he should be supported. Col. Hand made his arrangements accordingly."

"OCTOBER 7TH.—General Lincoln came to camp. He had come from Massachusetts with a body of militia. This was the first of his joining the main army. The same day the British were putting over horses from Horn's Hook to Long Island, and fixing their pontoons."

"OCTOBER 9TH.—Our general's division was formed in line, with its advance, reserve flank-guards, and artillery, all in order of battle, when they were moved down over the different grounds, which it was supposed might be the scene of action. Some of this ground was very broken, and there were many fences. These afforded frequent opportunities for the troops to break off and form, for the pioneers to open avenues, &c., and for the whole to become acquainted with every part of the ground, and the best choice of it, if suddenly called to action."

"OCTOBER 12TH.—Early in the morning eighty or ninety British boats, full of men, stood up the Sound, from Montresor's Island, Long Island, &c. The troops landed at Frog's Neck, and their advance pushed towards the causeway and bridge at Westchester mill. Col. Hand's riflemen took up the planks of the bridge, as had been directed, and commenced a firing with their rifles. The British moved towards the head of the creek, but found here also the Americans in possession of the pass. Our general immediately, (as he had assured Col. Hand he would,) ordered Col. Prescott, the hero of Bunker Hill, with his regiment, and Capt. Lieut. Bryant, of the artillery, with a three pounder, to reinforce the riflemen at Westchester causeway, and Col. Graham of the New York line, with his regiment, and Lieut. Jackson of the artillery, with a six pounder, to reinforce at the head of the creek: all of which was promptly done, to the check and disappointment of the enemy. The British encamped on the neck. The riflemen and yagers kept up a scattering popping at each other across the marsh; and the Americans on their side, and the British on the other, threw up a work at the end of the causeway. Capt. Bryant, now and then, when there was an object, saluted the British with a field piece.

"In the afternoon forty or fifty sail of vessels passed up, and came to anchor



off Frog's Point. The same evening Gen. McDougal's brigade joined our general's division."

"OCTOBER 13TH.—The brigade formerly under the command of our general, when he was brigadier, joined his division. The division now became very strong. The general officers of the army were this day in council at our general's quarters."

"OCTOBER 14TH.—Our general, with the generals under his command, reconnoitred the enemy at Frog's Neck; afterwards the general officers of the army reconnoitred the various grounds. The same day Major Gen. Lee was ordered to the command of the troops above Kingsbridge, now become the largest part of the American army. But Gen. Washington had desired him not to exercise the command for a day or two, until he could make himself acquainted with the post, its circumstances, and arrangements of duty. A great number of sloops, boats, &c., were passing the Sound eastward, just at dusk, probably conveying ammunition, provisions, &c., to the troops at Frog's Point."

"OCTOBER 15TH.—Five sailors came off from the *La Brune*; they informed that there was a large body of the British on Frog's Point, and that an attack might be soon expected. The scattering fire across the marsh continued, and now and then a man was killed."

"OCTOBER 16TH.—Two works were discovered on Frog's Neck, nearly finished. The general officers of the army rode to reconnoitre the ground at Pell's Neck, &c., and it was determined that the position of the American army should be immediately changed; the left flank to be extended more northerly, to prevent its being turned by the British."

"OCTOBER 17TH.—Wadsworth's and Fellow's brigades came to Kingsbridge. The British shipping, &c., continued moving eastward."

"OCTOBER 18TH.—The regiment at Westchester causeway had been relieved by another. The officer on command there, this morning, sent up an express to our general, informing him that the British were opening an embrasure in their work at the end of the causeway, and that he apprehended they intended under a cannonade from this, to attempt to pass. Our general ordered one of his aids to gallop his horse to the officer commanding the brigade near Valentine's, the nearest to Westchester, and order him to form his brigade instantly. Arriving himself by the time the brigade was formed, he ordered the officer to march with the utmost expedition, to the head of the causeway, to reinforce the troops there; himself moving on with them. When the troops had advanced to about half the way between the head of the creek and the post at the head of the causeway, another express met him, informing him that the whole British army were in motion, and seemed to be moving towards the pass, at the head of the creek. Upon this, the brigade was ordered to halt, the whole to prime and load, and the rear regiment to file off by the left, and march briskly to reinforce the Americans at the pass, at the head of the creek. At this instant, Gen. Washington came up, and having inquired of our general the state of things, ordered him to return immediately and have his division formed ready for action, and to take such a position as might appear best calculated to oppose the enemy, should

they attempt to land another body of troops on Morrisania, which he thought not improbable. Our general immediately obeyed the order.

"The wind was now fresh at south-west. The British crossed to the other side of Frog's neck, embarked on board their boats, crossed over the cove, and landed on Pell's neck."<sup>a</sup>

Throckmorton's point is likewise remarkable as the place where the tides meet in the Sound. Directly opposite City Island, on the north-east side of the point, are the famous *stepping stones*, a number of rocks which project in a line from the Long Island shore, and show their bare tops at low water; upon the highest of which stands the light-house commonly called "Stepping Stone Light." "An Indian origin (says Hon. Egbert Benson) is asserted for this name, and tradition vouched as the authority." "It is said, that at a certain time, doubtless some years ago, the evil spirit set up a claim against the Indians, to Connecticut, as his peculiar domain; but they being in possession, determined, of course, *to try to hold it*. By Connecticut, the premises in question, is to be understood, the original Connecticut proper—the territory between the *oblong*, our eastern boundary in that quarter, and the Sound." The surfaces of Connecticut and Long Island, were then the reverse of what they are now. Long Island was covered with rocks, Connecticut was free from them. The Indians were fully sensible of what they had to dread from such an adversary, and accordingly betook themselves to a course not unusual on occasions of great difficulty and danger; they referred the case to the squaws, the mothers of the tribes, who, it is said, recommended an offer to quit, on being allowed their *betterments*—a Novanglican law term, devised to signify the dwelling and other erections, and comprehending girding the trees to disencumber the land of the wood, by a person entering without title, on land never before cultivated, known as *new* or wild land, &c. ' No answer, as was to be expected, was given to this offer; and the parties claiming to be entitled to the right of sovereign States, and there being no federal court to interpose between them, had recourse to the "alternate means, of discussion between princes—to arms." The parties foreseeing there would be war, were, as behooved them, prepared for it.

The renowned arch-leader, an host in himself, took the field alone; and being an over-match for the Indians in skill and spirit, he at first advanced on them; but, they having provided there should be constantly reinforcements on their march, thereby preserving their corps entire, and harrassing him incessantly, giving him no rest night or day,

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Mem. 67.

he was obliged finally to yield to vigilance and perseverance, and fall back. He retired collected, and, as usual, giving up the ground only inch by inch; and, though retiring, still presenting a front whenever an attack threatened; he kept close to the Sound to secure his flank on that side; and, having reached *Frog's point*, and the water becoming narrow, to be crossed by the Indians in bark canoes, easily to be made in the night, and the tide being out, and the rocks showing their heads, he availed himself of them, and *stepping* from one to another, effected his retreat to Long Island. He at first betook himself sullen and silent to Coram, in the middle of the island; but it being in his nature not to remain idle long, and "rage superadded, soon roused him and ministered to him the means of revenge. He collected all the rocks in the island in heaps at Cold Spring, and throwing them in different directions, to different distances across the Sound in Connecticut, covered the surface of it with them as we now see it; and it has been repeated from the whites, the first settlers of land at Cold Spring, that the Indians, to the last who remained, not only undertook to show the spot where he stood, but insisted they could still discern the print of his feet." "The fact of tradition (adds Benson) among the Indians of Long Island, of a war between those of Connecticut and the evil spirit, about the territory, and of his being worsted and retreating to the island, &c., I had from the late Mr. L'Homedieu, a native of the island."<sup>a</sup> A projecting point of land on the neck, still bears the name of "Satan's Toe."

Upon the north-east side of Throckmorton's point, lies Locust Island, the property of the late Capt. Wright. On the south, the shores of the East River are ornamented with numerous handsome residences, as the country seats of Frederick C. Havemeyer, Francis Morris and Peter C. Vansceck, formerly belonged to Philip I. Livingston, Esq., who expended large sums in procuring every novelty in the vegetable world to adorn this beautiful spot. The gardens at one time were very extensive.

The finest Cedar of Lebanon, in the United States, is growing here, being over forty feet high and spreading fifty feet. There is also a superb specimen of the copper colored beech, twelve feet in circumference. These trees were planted by Mr. Livingston one hundred years ago. The road from the point to Westchester village, passes many beautiful villas, among which may be noticed the late Mr. Jno. D. Wolf, the Overing estate, and that of Mr. S. M. Stillwell. On the Fort Schuyler and Hutchinson's Bay, is situated Pennyfield, the residence of Geo.

---

<sup>a</sup> Memoirs of the State of New York, by Egbert Benson, 1817.

I. Adee. Schuylerville is a small scattered village in this neighborhood, containing three or four hundred houses.

*Spicer's* and *Brockett's* Necks are situated at the south-west extremity of Throckmorton's neck proper, and constitute what was formerly known as the "*Grove Farm*." This property, we have seen, was patented by Governor Nicolls to Thomas Hunt in 1667, who bequeathed it in 1694 to his grandson Josiah Hunt. At Josiah's death, A.D. 1729, it went to his son Thomas Hunt upon the demise of the latter, in 1756; William L. Ferris and grand-children, are the present owners. The old grange, erected in 1687, is prettily located at the entrance of Spicer's Neck, on the margin of the Westchester Creek and the Oakland nurseries formerly the property of William Livingston Ferris. Mr. Ferris has sold land, but holds the nurseries, which are situated a little north of the house. They are very extensive, and contain every variety of fruit and ornamental trees. We believe this is one of the largest establishments of the kind in Westchester County. There was formerly a ferry between old "*Ferry Point*," the termination of Brockett's Neck, and the opposite shore of "*Powell's Point*," or White Stone, Long Island. The passage was performed in a peri-auger, during the provincial period of our history.

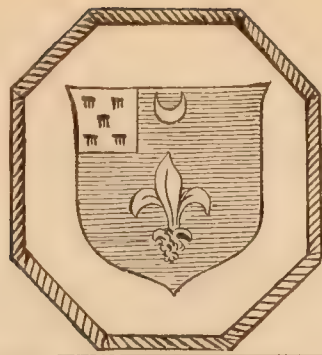
The Westchester Creek which is here nearly three quarters of a mile across, abounds with every kind and description of shell and salt water fish. Among the latter, may be enumerated, bass, weak fish, black fish, drum, eels, flounders, spice, tomicods, perch, porgies, horse mackerel, herrings, bequeals, garnet, &c. One of the most popular fishermen in this neighborhood is Natey Bergen, of Union Port, who has every supply on hand; besides being well acquainted with the best fishing ground both on the Creek and Sound.

On the eastern side of the Creek lies "*Castle-hill Neck*," (so-called from the Indian castle which formerly stood near the termination of the neck,) the property of the late Gouverneur M. Wilkins, Esq., but now owned by his son-in-law, John Screven, Esq. This estate was formerly held by the Cromwell family from whom it obtained, for a while, the name of "*Cromwell's Neck*." In 1685, John Cromwell, supposed nephew of the Lord Protector Oliver Cromwell, "and Elizabeth Cromwell, his wife, exchanged six acres of meadow with Thomas Hunt, for eight acres of upland, situated upon *Castle Neck*."<sup>a</sup> From the Cromwells it went to a younger branch of the Underhills<sup>b</sup> who conveyed it to the Rev. Isaac Wilkins. After being sold by Mr. Wilkins in 1784, it was succes-

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. K. 95. See Town of Harrison for full account of Cromwell family.

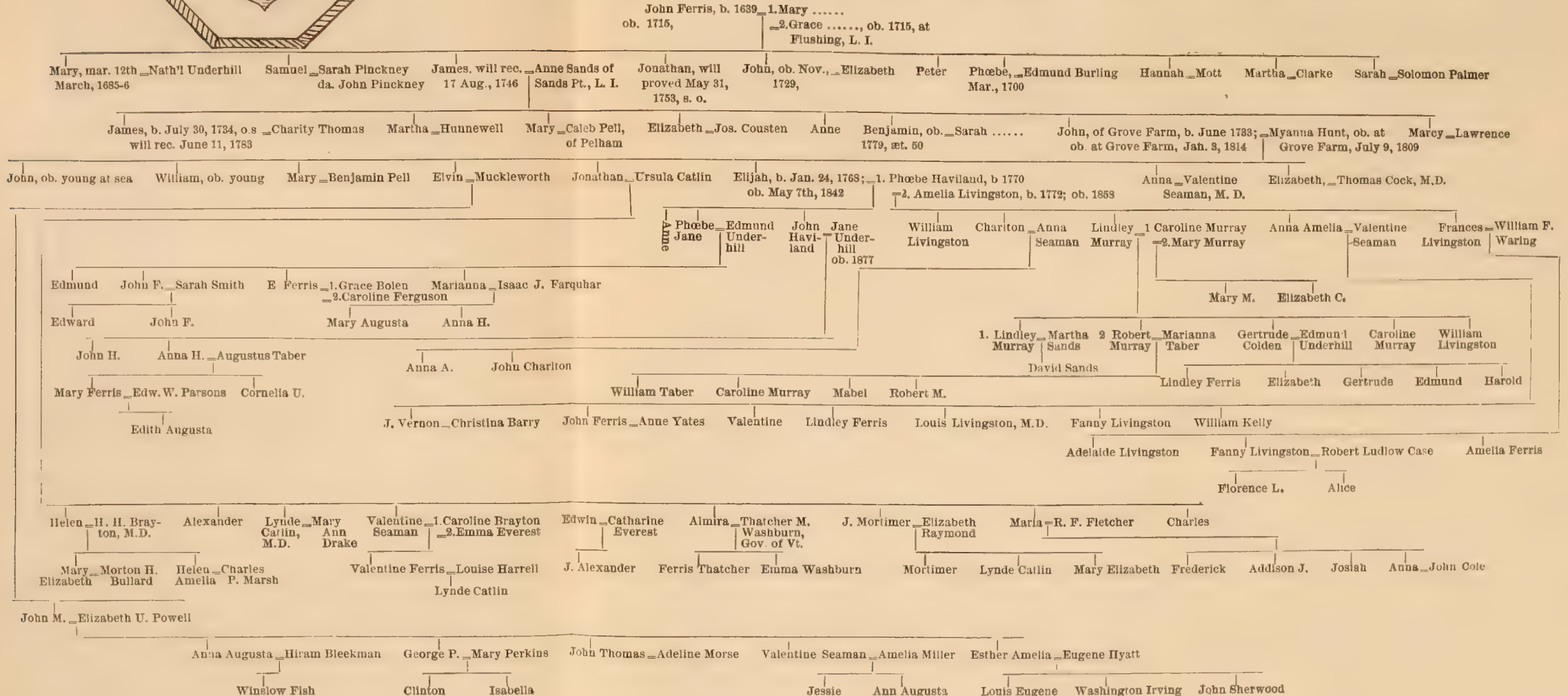
<sup>b</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. A, 214.





# PEDIGREE OF FERRIS, OF WESTCHESTER.

J. Ferris, one of the first Patentees of the town of Westchester, granted under Governor Nichols, the 15th day of February, 1667, from James, Duke of York ; confirmed under Governor Fletcher, from William III. King of England, this 16th day of April, in the Eighth year of his reign. (1689).





sively the property of the families of Pell, Russell, Gilchrist, Taylor and Aspen, from whom it passed to Martin Wilkins, Esq., father of the late Gouverneur M. Wilkins, Esq. The family of Wilkins<sup>a</sup> was originally seated in the County of Glamoyar, South Wales, and derives from "Robert de Wintona, or Wincestria, who came into that county with Robert Fitzhamon, who was lord of the manor of Languian, near Cowbridge, and built a castle there, the ruins of which are still extant. The valley underneath, is called Point Wilkyn (Welkyn's vale) to this day.<sup>b</sup> Members of the family yet reside at Brecon, Glamorganshire, and Maeslough, Radnorshire. About the year 1800, the Rev. Isaac Wilkins took up his residence in Westchester county, New York, and was settled over the Episcopal parish there. He continued in the ministry until his decease in 1830, at the age of eighty-nine. Doctor Wilkins married Isabella, sister of Lewis Morris, a signer of the Declaration of Independence, and of Gouverneur Morris, another distinguished whig. The mother espoused the royal side, and remained within the British lines. Their correspondence with her during hostilities, occasioned suspicion; and caused them difficulty, notwithstanding their sacrifices and services. At the moment when Lewis voted in Congress for independence, British ships of war were lying within cannon shot of his house; and soon after, his manor of Morrisania was desolated, his woodland of one thousand acres was destroyed, and his family driven into exile. Three of the sons of Lewis served in the whig army. Staats, brother of Lewis and Gouverneur, was an officer in the royal service, became a member of Parliament, and a lieutenant-general. Thus was the Morris family divided. Doctor Wilkins has a son in Nova Scotia who bears the name of his uncle Lewis Morris, and who has obtained distinction. He was elected a member of the House of Assembly, about the time of his father's return to the United States; and when, in 1806, William Cottam Longe, Esq., who was elected speaker, was disallowed by the governor, Lewis Morris Wilkins was chosen in his place; and approved of, and occupied the chair, by subsequent election, until 1817, when he was removed to be placed on the bench of the Supreme Court of the colony. Judge Wilkins resided at Windsor.<sup>c</sup>

The residence of the late Gouverneur M. Wilkins is seated on the brow of a hill, near the extremity of the neck and commands an almost uninterrupted view of the river with the adjacent shores. The interior con-

<sup>a</sup> The name is supposed to be derived from the *Whelk*, an imaginary animal, which tradition asserts inhabited the vale. The *Whelk* is still borne on the coat armor of the family, with the significant Welsh motto: *Sun ar dy Eyn*: *anglice*, beware of thyself.

<sup>b</sup> Burke's Hist. of the landed gentry of England, vol. iii, 393.

<sup>c</sup> Lorenzo Sabin's Biog. Sketches of American Loyalists.

tains some good paintings, particularly a view of the Arno, by Cole, and a portrait of Martin Wilkins, Esq., by Rogers, &c.; also a beautiful white marble bust of Washington, by Garacehi, and an Apollo, by Tantenoin.

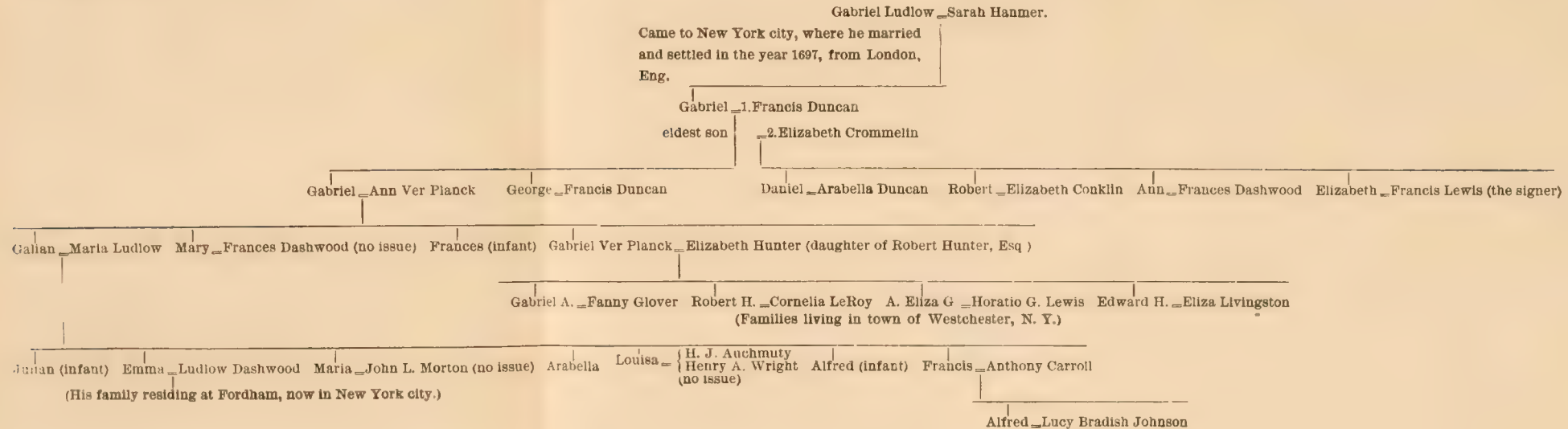
The old Wilkins mansion, which stands on the south side of the neck is now converted into a farm house. Here in 1776, three of the clergy, viz: Doctors Cooper, Chandler and Seabury, managed to secrete themselves for some time, notwithstanding the most minute and presevering search was made for them, so ingeniously contrived was the place of their concealment in and about the old-fashioned chimney. Food was conveyed to them through a trap-door in the floor. The front of the old house is shaded by some magnificent elms.

Cornell's Neck, which is pleasantly situated in the south-west corner of the town, contains about five hundred and fifty acres, having the Bronx River on the west and Pugsley's Creek on the east. We have seen that Thomas Cornell, from whom it was originally named, became possessed of the neck through the Dutch, who purchased of the Indians. From the Cornells, it passed to the Willetts and Grahams. The executors of Lewis Graham conveyed the western half to Dominick Lynch from whose executors the Ludlows purchased it. "Black Rock," (so named after the "great rock" mentioned in the patent of 1667, lying near the mouth of the Bronx) the estate of Robert H. Ludlow, Esq., is situated on the west side of the neck, not far from the Westchester Turnpike. The house is of stone, and commands beautiful views of the East River with adjacent shores and islands. The interior contains some valuable family paintings, viz: Gabriel Verplank Ludlow, (son of Col. Gabriel Ludlow, of Hempstead, Long Island,) aged fourteen, painted when at Oxford, by the celebrated Opie; Mrs. Samuel G. Verplanck, daughter of Charles Crommelin and Anne St. Clair,<sup>a</sup> with her grandson, Gulian McEvers, by Copley; Goldsborow Banyar, Deputy Secretary of the Province of New York, under Governor Monckton, and Alderman of the city of Albany, by Colonel Trumbull, one of his best portraits; also a family portrait of Robert H. Ludlow, Esq., Mrs. Ludlow and daughter, by Stewart Watson. The Hon. Robert H. Ludlow, of Black Rock, (member of the Legislature from New York city, 1845 and 1846, who married in 1831, Cornelia, daughter of Jacob Le Roy, of New York,) is the second son of the late Gabriel Ludlow, Esq., by Elizabeth Hunter. His grandfather was

<sup>a</sup> Anne St Clair was the daughter of Robert St Clair, or Sinclair, who emigrated to New York in 1677, by his wife, Mary Duykinck, 1683. Robert was the son of James Sinclair, a lineal descendant of the Sinclairs, Earls of Orkney and Caithness. A silver tankard of the St Clairs, in the possession of R. H. Ludlow, Esq., bears the following coat of arms: Quarterly, 1st azure a ship at anchor sails furled, oars erect in saltire, or, within a double tressure counter-flowered of the last for Orkney; 2d, a cross engrailed; 3d, azure, ship under sail, or for Caithness. 4th, or, a lion rampant gu. for spar.



# PEDIGREE OF LUDLOW, OF WESTCHESTER.





the Hon. Gabriel Ludlow, Colonel in Brigadier-General De Lancey's brigade during the Revolution, and afterwards first Mayor of the city of St. John's in the province of New Brunswick, President of his Majesty's Council, and also for a time Governor of the same and Commander-in-Chief of the forces. He died at Saint Johns, N. B., and was buried in the cemetery of the Episcopal church at Carleton,<sup>a</sup> N. B. His brother, George Duncan Ludlow, was Chief Justice of the Province. His father was Gabriel Ludlow, third son of Gabriel Ludlow, Esq., who was born in 1663 and came to this country in 1694. He married on Easter Monday, April 5th, 1697, Sarah, daughter of the Rev. Joseph Hanmer, D. D., Chaplain to His Majesty's forces in the Province of New York. He was one of the first vestrymen of Trinity church, New York, in 1697, and was the son of Gabriel and the grandson of Edmund Ludlow, second son of Sir Edmund Ludlow, Knt.; by his second wife, Margaret, widow of Viscount Bendon, second son of Thomas Howard, Duke of Norfolk. Sir Edmund Ludlow's eldest son, by his first wife, Bridget Coker, was Sir Henry Ludlow, Knight, M.P. for that shire, born 1587, who married Letitia, daughter of Thomas West, Lord Delaware, by whom he had issue, with three daughters; Edmund Ludlow, the celebrated republican general during the civil wars in England, who died at Vivay in Switzerland, in 1693, aged 73, where a monument is erected to his memory; and Henry Ludlow, Esq., who married Webster, grand-daughter of Margaret, second daughter of Sir Richard Bingham, the ancestor of the late George James Ludlow, third Earl Ludlow, Viscount Preston, and Baron Ludlow of Ardsalla in the peerage of Ireland, Baron Ludlow in that of the United Kingdom, born 12th Dec., 1758.

The family of Ludlow, (which derives its surname from the ancient town so denominated in the County of Salop,) settled at Hill Deverell in Wiltshire, in the reign of Edward III., 1350, at which time lived William Ludlow, Esq., of Wiltshire, who married Margaret, daughter of William Rymer, whose son John Ludlow, married Leonora, daughter of Thomas Ringwood; their son was John Ludlow, who married Phillipa, daughter of Nicholas Bulstrade, whose son William Ludlow married Jane, daughter of Nicholas Moore; leaving a son George Ludlow, Esq., who married Edith, daughter of Sir Andrew, Lord Windsor, whose son was the before mentioned Sir Edmund Ludlow, Knight.

The old Willett homestead stood on Clason's Point, the extremity of Cornell's neck, directly on the site of the late Mrs. Clason's mansion.<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Two silver cups bearing the crest of Ludlow, still preserved at Black Rock, are said to have been used in the administration of the Holy Communion at Carleton church.

<sup>b</sup> On the north side of this house is a beautiful specimen of the *Hycena Wisteria* which is said to be indigenous to the Neck.

Directly north of the Westchester turnpike is situated the old Pugsley estate from which the adjoining creek derives its name.

In close vicinity to the river Bronx is the estate and residence of William Watson, Esq.

About three miles from the mouth of the Bronx, and directly opposite the village of West Farms, is the mill seat and property of the late Philip M. Lydig, Esq., formerly called "De Lancey's Mill." Here it is probable that Jonas Bronck (from whom the river derives its name) erected a mill and laid out a plantation as early as 1639. "The tract between the Harlem river and the large stream next eastward, was Bronck's land," says Benson, and it was at the house of Bronck that the Indians concluded a treaty of peace with the Dutch secretary, Cornelis Van Tienhoven, in the spring of 1642.<sup>a</sup> Upon the 16th of August, 1680, the town of Westchester did give and grant unto William Richardson and his associates, the privilege of the stream of Bronck's river, to set up *two mills*, viz:—One saw and a corn mill, upon certain conditions specified in the conveyance.<sup>b</sup>

On the 2d of April, 1711, Tryntje Byvanck, widow of Evert Byvanck, granted to William Provost, *four mills*, to wit, three grist mills, and one saw mill, situate in the township of Westchester, and all rights and privileges appertaining thereto, &c.; also *a certain privilege granted by the freeholders of Westchester, of the stream of Bronck's river, &c., &c.* From the Provost's, this property was purchased by Stephen de Lancey, Esq., in whose will, made the 4th of March, 1735, occurs the following item:—

"I do hereby give, devise and bequeath unto my son Peter, and to his heirs, all my mills, mill-house, mill-boat, farm and land, and all and every the appurtenances thereunto belonging, situate and being in the county of Westchester, upon Bronck's river, lately known as *the mills of William Richardson*, to have and to hold unto my son Peter, and to his heirs and assignees forever."<sup>c</sup>

James de Lancey, the eldest son of the above testator, was Chief Justice and Lieutenant-Governor of the province of New York. He mar-

<sup>a</sup> Benson's Mem. 27. Hist. of N. Netherlands, O'Callahan, vol. 1250. Town Rec. Lib. 57. Rec. of Trustees, pp. 68, 69.

<sup>b</sup> See vol. 1, 295.

<sup>c</sup> Surrogate's Office, N. Y. lib. xiv, 91. It appears from the following, that there was an ancient burying-ground in the vicinity of De Lancey's mills, near the Bronx, approached by a narrow lane leading from the highway to Westchester road:—"John Ferris, of the borough town of Westchester, in his last will, dated 9th of May, 1715, directs: 'as also the land lying betwixt the highway that leads to Thomas Redden's mills and the way that leads from Bronck's to Henry Bank's, with a fifty pound privilege of commonage, and also all that my land at Bronck's, containing twenty-four acres, be it more or less. But, be it provided always, that there shall be a rod square, free for all friends and friendly people to bury their dead in the place where they formerly buried, without any let, hindrance or molestation whatsoever.'"—Surrogate's Office, N. Y., folio viii, p. 391.



ried Anne, eldest daughter of Col. Caleb Heathcote, and left James, Stephen, John Peter,<sup>a</sup> Maria, Anne and Susan. James, the first of these, was educated at Corpus Christi college, Cambridge, England, in which college his father had been educated before him. On quitting college, he entered the army, rising to the rank of captain. In the unfortunate campaign against Ticonderoga, he was an aid of Abercrombie's. When his father died, or shortly after, Captain de Lancey sold out, inheriting the principal estates of his family. He married Margaret, a daughter of Chief Justice Allen of Pennsylvania, whose other daughter, Anne, married John Penn, grandson of William Penn, the founder of Pennsylvania.

Early in the Revolution, Capt. James de Lancey went to England. Eventually he established himself at Bath. This gentleman, (and not his cousin, Lt. Col. James, as Mr. Sabine supposes), "at the close of the war, and at the formation of the loyalist agency for prosecuting claims for compensation, was appointed agent for New York, and became vice-president of the board. His own losses were large and difficult of adjustment, and occupied the attention of the commissioners for some days. Excepting Sir William Pepperell," Captain James de Lancey appears to have been the most active member of the agency."<sup>b</sup> Five of the children of Capt. James de Lancey and Margaret, grew up, viz: two sons and three daughters. Charles, the eldest son, was in the British navy, and died a bachelor. James, late Lt. Col. 1st Dragoon Guards, is living, also a bachelor. Two of the daughters, Anne and Susan, are single, and still living; While Margaret married the present Sir Juckes Granville Clifton, Bart., and died early, childless."

The second son of Stephen de Lancey, the Huguenot, was Brigadier General Oliver de Lancey. Sabine, in his sketches of American Loyalists, states that, "at the period of the French war, Oliver de Lancey occupied a commanding position," and perhaps he did not overrate his personal influence when he said, that if in the expedition against Crown Point, he "should accept the command of the New York regiment, he could, in ten days, raise the whole quota of troops allotted to that colony." This standing he maintained after his brother's death, and until the Revolution. "He opposed the dismemberment of the empire, and put his life and property at stake to prevent it. In 1776, he was appointed a brigadier-general in the royal service. Skinner, of New Jersey, Brown, a former Governor of Bahamas, Arnold, the apostate, and Cunningham, of South Carolina, were of the same grade; but their commissions were

<sup>a</sup> Ibid. 299.

<sup>b</sup> Sabine's Sketches of American Loyalists.

of a later date. Gen. de Lancey was, therefore, the senior loyalist officer in commission during the contest. His command consisted of three battallions, known as "*De Lancey's Battallions*."

"Previous to the Revolution, Gen. de Lancey was a member of the Council, and was considered to be in office in 1782, though a constitution was formed in New York in 1777, and a government organized under it. By this government he was attainted of treason, and his large property confiscated." "At the evacuation in 1783, he went to England, and died at Beverly, Yorkshire, in 1785, aged sixty-eight. His body is interred in the choir of the Minster, while a monument standing near the transept records his services." "His son, Oliver de Lancey, Jr., was educated in Europe; put early in the 17th Light Dragoons; was a captain at the commencement of the Revolution; became Major in 1778, a Lieutenant Colonel Oct. 1st, 1781, and succeeded André as Adjutant-General of the British army in America. On his return to Europe, he was made Deputy Adjutant-General of England; as a Major-General, he got the Colonelcy of the 17th Light Dragoons; was subsequently made Barrack Master General of the British empire; rose through the grade of Lieutenant-General to that of General, and died some six or eight and twenty years since, nearly at the head of the English Army list. This branch of the family is now extinct in the male line; its last man having been killed at Waterloo, in the person of Sir William Heathcote de Lancey, the Quarter-master-General of Wellington's army."

Peter de Lancey, youngest son of the Huguenot, to whom his father devised the mills, was a man of wealth and of considerable influence in the colony. His wife was Alice, daughter of Cadwallader Colden, lieutenant governor of the Province of New York, in 1761. His children were John, father of Mrs. Yates, Relict of Governor Yates, and Lt. Col. James de Lancey, a distinguished military officer. "James<sup>a</sup> was for a

<sup>a</sup> The command of the Loyalist Rangers afforded Colonel de Lancey facilities for communicating with his old associates in this section of the country, and was the means of inducing some of the landed gentry to take an active part in the contest. This was particularly the case with Samuel Kip, Esq., of a family, which, from the first settlement by the Dutch, had possessed a grant of land at Kip's Bay, and in other parts of New York island. Members of this family were named as officers under the Crown in the royal charter, granted when the British first took possession of the colony in 1664, and in that given thirty years later. Having been always associated with the government, and from their landed interest, wielding an influence in its affairs, they were naturally predisposed to espouse the royal cause. In addition to this, Mr. Kip's estate was near that of Col. de Lancey, and a close intimacy had always existed between them. He was, therefore, easily induced to accept a captain's commission from the royal government, and embark all his interests in this contest. He raised a company of cavalry, principally from his own tenants, joined the British army with the colonel, and from his intimate knowledge of the country, was enabled to gain the reputation of an active and daring partisan officer. For this reason he was for a time assigned to the command of the Loyalist Rangers. In one of the severe skirmishes which took place in Westchester county in 1781, Capt. Kip, while charging a body of American troops, had his horse killed under him, and received a severe bayonet wound. He survived, however, several years after the war—though, like his friend de Lancey, a heavy pecuniary sufferer from the cause he had espoused.

considerable time sheriff of Westchester county. He took a battalion in the brigade of his uncle Oliver de Lancey, called the Loyalist Rangers, or "*De Lancey's Horse*." In consequence of his familiarity with the county, Lt. Col. James de Lancey was stationed most of his time in Westchester, to keep open the means of procuring supplies. His corps made free with the cattle of that part of the country, and got the *soubriquet* of "Cow Boys," in revenge for their knowledge in the article of beef. The colonel finally fixed his residence in Nova Scotia, and in 1797, was sworn in as a member of the council of that colony. He died at Annapolis, N. S., about the year 1809. Martha Tippet, his widow, also died there in 1827, aged 73, and where his sons are still living. Oliver de Lancey, third son of Peter and Alice, threw up his



De Lancey Mills, Westchester, the head-quarters of Lt. Col. James de Lancey.  
From the original picture in the possession of Dr. Bayard of West Farms.

commission in the British service at the commencement of the Revolutionary war. His children are resident in the town. Peter, the fourth son, and Lt. Col. Warren de Lancey, besides four daughters.<sup>a</sup>

By an indenture bearing date the 29th of July, 1774, the trustees of Westchester, for divers considerations, sold to James and Oliver de Lancey, and their heirs and assignees, the ground under the water of Broncks's river, and all such lands as has been granted or appointed by the town, for the use of the mills, etc.<sup>b</sup> The present proprietor, Philip M. Lydig, Esq., holds by conveyance from under Oliver de Lancey, Esq. The dwelling-house which once served as the head-quarters of Washington, was destroyed by fire a few years since.

<sup>a</sup> For many of the above particulars we are indebted to Mr. Cooper's correspondence in the *Home Journal* in 1848.

<sup>b</sup> Rec. of Trustees, pp. 88, 89.

The grounds, which display all the elegance of modern gardening, rise in a succession of terraces from the water's edge. Near the old mansion stands a majestic pine tree—a noble relic of the past.

The following appropriate lines were written by a gentlemen, after a visit paid to this beautiful spot, the former residence of the de Lancey family:—

#### DE LANCEY'S ANCIENT PINE.

Where gentle Bronx clear winding flows,  
The shadowy banks between,  
Where blossomed bell or wilding rose  
Adorns the brightest green ;  
Memorial of the fallen great,  
The rich and honoured line,  
Stands high in solitary state,  
De Lancey's ancient pine.

There once at early dawn arrayed  
The rural sport to lead,  
The gallant master of the glade,  
Bedecked his eager steed.  
And once the lightfoot maiden came  
In loveliness divine,  
To sculpture with the dearest name,  
De Lancey's ancient pine.

But now the stranger's foot explore  
De Lancey's wide domain,  
And scarce one kindred heart restores,  
His memory to the plain ;  
And just like one in age alone,  
The last of all his line,  
Bends sadly where the waters moan,  
De Lancey's ancient pine.

Oh, victim of misguided zeal  
To tell thy former fame !  
Who bids the fretted stone reveal  
The numbers of thy name ?  
Ere brightening up the eastern sky,  
Another morn shall shine,  
In equalizing dust may lie  
De Lancey's ancient pine.

Wo ho ! the satiate traveler stays  
Where eve's calm glories shine,  
To weep as tells of other days,  
De Lancy's ancient pine.



At a short distance from Lydig's mills, on the property of Mr. Leonard Mapes, may be seen the ruins of an old chateau, since the residence of Lewis H. Guerlain. The following inscription upon a marble monument hard by, so touchingly records the history of its former inmates, that any further account would be needless.

A.D. 1798,

Sacred to the memory of virtue, merit and beauty; to

SARAH GUERLAIN,

the beloved consort of

LEWIS H. GUERLAIN.

—  
Alas! 'tis in vain! the spirit has fled!  
Sarah has sunk in the tomb,  
The beauty of nature lies mix'd with the dead  
Gods! how severe is the doom:  
As a delicate lily that blows in the vale,  
That springs to perfection and dies,  
So she bloomed, and then sickened; but, shall we bewail!  
The grave of the pure is the path to the skies.

· ETERNITY HOW LONG!

In 1798, 7th March, Sarah died in the West Indies, in the twentieth year of her age—in the passage from St. Croix to St. Christopher's—and was brought back by her disconsolate husband to his peaceful mansion, the place of their union, the 4th of October, 1795.

Immediately north of the village of West Farms lies "Bronx Dale," the wooded sides of which present a most romantic appearance. In this neighborhood is a small scattered hamlet containing two public houses, two stores and about twenty dwellings; also the extensive bleach factory of the late Mr. James Bolton. Mr. Bolton, was a native of Great Bolton in Lancashire, where he was born on the 8th May, 1780; he was the youngest son of John Bolton<sup>a</sup> and grandson of James Bolton by his wife Mary ———, and came to this country in 1818, where by dint of hard labor and industry he accumulated a considerable fortune.

On the Bronx are also situated the snuff mills of the late Peter Lorillard, Esq. The beautiful seat of the Lorillard's is rendered particularly attractive from the contiguity of overhanging woods and its close vicinage to the water. The late Peter Lorillard was a native of New York, where he was born in 1799, and was one of its oldest merchants. His

<sup>a</sup> The other children of John Bolton were Edmund, born Aug. 21, 1761; Robert, born Dec. 21, 1766; Elizabeth, born Dec. 4, 1772, and John Bolton, born July 4, 1776. The family were all baptized in the old parish church at Bolton.

father, Peter Lorillard, Senr., who died some years ago, was the oldest son of Pierre Lorillard, a native of France in 1763, by his wife, Hannah Moore. Peter, Senr., with his brothers, was one of the many men whose energy and hard labor resulted not only in gaining them wealth, but in promoting the prosperity which the metropolis of the United States now enjoys. Descended from an ancient Huguenot family, the three brothers—Jacob, Peter and George—commenced life in humble circumstances; but by dint of hard labor, amassed a competency which their heirs have greatly added to. The wife of Peter, Senr., was the daughter of Nathaniel Griswold, long since dead, but during his lifetime one of the most prominent merchants of New York. Peter Lorillard, Jr., soon after leaving college connected himself with his father and uncle—Peter and George—in the tobacco business. Possessed of uncommon business capacity, he soon materially aided his firm in its progress to prosperity; and upon the death of his uncle George, who was a bachelor, he found himself left the heir to a fortune valued at some \$200,000. Upon the death of his father, Mr. Lorillard succeeded to the business, which prospered so well that it brought to its proprietor millions of dollars, and made it what it now is, one of the largest tobacco houses in New York city. Mr. Lorillard died at Saratoga, October 6th, 1867, aged seventy-two.

The low ground east of the "Bronx Dale" is called "Bear Swamp," after the savage animal that about two centuries ago inhabited this wide domain of forest and morass.

The general surface of Westchester is rolling, and in some places hilly soil, clay loam, mostly susceptible of high cultivation. The lands produce all kinds of grain, but they are best adapted to grass and pasture. Almost every variety of fruit trees flourish here. The principal growth of wood is oak of all sorts, chestnut and hickory, &c. It is freely watered, in every part, by springs and rivulets.

# THE TOWN OF WEST FARMS.

---

## MANOR OF WEST FARMS.

This township, which is now annexed to New York County, was formerly a portion of the ancient borough town of Westchester. It is bounded on the north by Yonkers, east by the Bronx, south by the East River, and west by the Harlem River. Kings Bridge, across Harlem River, is just within the line at the north-west corner of this town. It derives its name from its situation being west of the New England settlements. In 1663 it was claimed by Shonearockite and other Indians, as appears from the following conveyance to Edward Jessup and John Richardson of Westchester:

## INDIAN DEED OF WEST FARMS.

WEST CHESTER, MARCH THE 12TH, 1663.

This may certify whom it may concerne that we Shonearockite, Wapomoe Tukorre Whawhapelucke, Capahase, Quanusco, Shaquiske, Passachahenue, Harrawooke, have aliened and sold unto Edward Jessup and John Richardson, both of the place above said, a certain Tract of land bounded on the east by the River Aquehung or Bronxkx to the midst of the River, on the northward by the Trees marked, &c., by a piece of a hassock meadow, westward by a little brooke called Sackwrahung, southward by the sea with a neck of land called Quinnahung, with all the meadows, &c., uplands, Trees, &c., whatever else besides bee upon ye said parcell of lands with all other commodities belonging to the same quietly to possesse and enjoy the same from us our heires or successors, to them their heires and successors for ever, and for their cattle to range in the woods so farre as they please without any Molestation or Infringement, &c., and that this is our

true Intent and Meaning wee have sett to our hands the day and Yeare above written.

- |                              |                              |
|------------------------------|------------------------------|
| 1. SHONEAROCKITE, his marke, | 2. WAPOME, his marke,        |
| 5. TUCKORRE, his marke,      | 3. WHAWHAPEHUCKE, his marke, |
| 4. CAPAHASE, his marke,      | 8. QUANUSCO, his marke,      |
| 7. SHAQUISKE, his marke,     | 6. PASSACHAHENNE, his marke, |
| 9. HARRAWOOKR, his marke.    |                              |

Signed in presence of

EDWARD WALTERS,  
RICHARD PONTON,  
NATHAN BAILEY.

March 12th, 1664, I Shawnarockett in the name and behalf of the rest doe acknowledge to have received of Edward Jessup and Mr. Richardson full satisfaction for the tract of land in this bill specified.

Witness,

SHAWNAROCKETT, his mark.

EDWARD WALTERS,  
RICHARD PONTON,  
NATHAN<sup>L</sup> BAILEY,<sup>a</sup>

Entered at Hampstead at ye r. of the general meeting there the 9th day of March, 1664.

Another deed from the above mentioned Indians to Edward Jessup and John Richardson bears date March 12th, 1664, which was recorded for Mr. Richardson, April 5th, 1667.<sup>b</sup>

The Indian purchases were patented in 1666, to Edward Jessup and John Richardson of Westchester:

#### THE ROYAL PATENT OF WEST FARMS.

“Richard Nicolls, Esq., governor general under his royal highness, James Duke of York and Albany, &c., &c., of all his territories in America, to all to whom these presents shall come, sendeth greeting: whereas, there is a certain tract or parcel of land within this government, situate, lying and being neare unto and within the limits of the towne of Westchester. Upon ye maine being bounded to the east by the river commonly called by the Indians *Aquehung*, otherwise Broncke river, extending to the midst of said river to the north, by the mark’t trees and by a piece of hassock meadow, westwardly a little brook called by the natives *Sackurahung*, and southward by the Sound or East River, including within a certain neck of land called *Quinnahung*, which said parcel or tract and neck of land with the appurtenances, together with commonage and liberty for range of horses and cattle, as free as they please into the woods, hath heretofore been jointly purchased of the Indyan proprietors by Edward Jessup and John Richardson of Westchester aforesaid, and due satisfaction hath ye then been given for the same, as by the deed remaining upon record, more at large

<sup>a</sup> Albany Deed Book, vol. II., 79-80.

<sup>b</sup> Albany Deed Book. vol. III, 58-59.



doth and may appear, now it being mutually agreed upon ye both the aforesaid purchasers, that an equal division shall be made of the said parcel or tract of land and appurtenances between them the said Edward Jessup and John Richardson, their heirs and assigns, and to the end that the said lands may be better manured and planted for a further confirmation unto each and either of them, in their possession and enjoyment of the premises. Know ye, that by virtue of the commission and authority unto me given by his royal highness, I have ratified, confirmed and granted, and by these presents do ratify, confirm and grant, unto John Richardson aforesaid, his heirs and assigns, the moiety or one-half of the aforesaid parcel or tract of land and premises, together with the moiety or one-half of all the woods, meadows, pastures, waters, commonage, marshes, rivers or lakes thereunto belonging, within their and every of them, appurtenances and every part and parcel thereof, to have and to hold their said moiety, or one-half of the said parcel or tract of land, commonage and premises, with all and singular the appurtenances to the said John Richardson, his heirs and assigns, unto the proper use and behoof of the said John Richardson, his heirs and assigns forever, he or they rendering and paying such duties and acknowledgements as now are or hereafter shall be constituted and established by the laws of the government, under the obedience of his royal highness, his heirs and successors. Given under my hand and seal at Fort James in New York, on the island of Manhattoes, 25th day of April, in the eighteenth year of his majesties reign, A.D. 1666.

RICHARD NICOLLS.

Edward Jessup one of the above patentees, like most of the original settlers of Westchester, emigrated from Fairfield, Connecticut. In 1653, occurs the name of Edward Jessope, owner of lands on Sascoe neck in that town. By his wife Elizabeth Bridges, he seft issue a son, Edward, and two daughters. Elizabeth married Thomas Hunt, of the Grove farm, Westchester, from whom the Hunts of Hunt's Point descend. Edward Jessup died in 1666; his will bears date the same year.

#### THE LAST WILL AND TESTAMENT OF EDWARD JESSUP.

"Being sicke and weake in body, yet in perfect memory, I bequeath my soule to ye Almighty God that gave it, and my body after my death to be decently buried, my funeral to be discharged and my debts to be paid. I will and bequeath to my daughter, Elizabeth Hunt, twenty shillings, besides which, I have already given her to be paid in a year and a day after my decease. I will and bequeath unto my daughter Hannah Jessup, the sum of five and thirty pounds with that she hath already, to be payed unto her at 18 years of age.

I will and bequeath unto my sonne, Edward Jessup, two mares with two colts by their sides; one is a gray mare, and the other is a mare marked on both ears with two half pence on each ear, to bee set out for him for his use a year and a day after my decease.

I will and bequeath unto my grand-child, Mary Hunt, twenty shillings, to bee payd in a year and a day after my decease. I will and bequeath unto my cousin

Johannah Burroughs, twenty shillings, to bee payd in a year and a day after my decease.

Furthermore, I institute and appoint my well-beloved wife, Elizabeth Jessup, to bee whole and sole executrix, and I do will and bequeath unto her, all my lands and houses, and goods and cattle, moveable and immoveable, of this my last will and testament, and to receive all debts, dues and demands whatsoever, to be at her disposing, and she to pay all debts, dues and legacies whatsoever, and she to bring up my two children in the feare of God. This I do owne to be my last will and testament.

Further, I do appoint my well beloved friends, Mr. Richard Cornhill, Justice of the Peace, Mrs. Sarah Bridges, my well beloved brother-in-law, John Burroughs, and Ralph Hunt, overseers of this my last will and testament, likewise to be assistants to my executrix in all cases and difficulties; and this I do owne as my owne act and deed, to all true intents and meanings, and due furthermore ratify and confirm it as my owne act and deed by ye setting to my hand and seal, the day and year underwritten.

EDWARD JESSUP.

August the 16th, 1666.

Signed, sealed and delivered in the presence  
of us, witnesses,

WILLIAM GOULDSTONE,

JOHN RICHARDSON,

Mark of ✕ RICHARD HORTON."<sup>a</sup>

Upon the 20th of June, 1668, Robert Beacham and Elizabeth, the wife formerly of *Edward Jessup*, of Westchester, in the North Riding of Yorkshire, on Long Island, did fully and absolutely sell and "make over unto Thomas Hunt, of Westchester, aforesaid, all those *hoeing lands* and accomodations that were formerly Edward Jessup's, within the bounds and limits of the aforesaid Westchester, that the said Edward Jessup and John Richardson purchased together, and procured patents for from the Hon. Col. Richard Nicolls," &c.

John Richardson, the surviving patentee, appears to have united with Thomas Hunt, the following year, in making an equal division of these lands; for, on the 12th of August, 1669, occurs the following report of the commissioners:—

"We whose names are underwritten being made choice of by John Richardson and Thomas Hunt, bothe inhabiting in Westchester, in the North Riding of Yorkshire, to make an equal division of a grant of land formerly purchased of the Indian proprietors by Edward Jessup and John Richardson, being butted and bounded by patent I say all those uplands and meadows within that purchase, save some upland and meadows, which was formerly divided by the forementioned persons, Edward Jessup and John Richardson, have been committed unto us, William Hayden, Samuel Drake, Thomas Lawrence and Jonathan Hazard, to make an equal division, &c., &c. As first we find it necessary

<sup>a</sup> Surrogates office, N. Y., wills administrations, No. 1, 1665 to 1683, p. 31.

that John Richardson, having twenty acres of upland and meadow, more or less, lying on the southermost poynt of the *corne field* neck, which tract of land is a district of itself by a divisional line running west and by north-east and by south, and all the rest of the upland, both in that neck and a little neck adjoining to it, is Thomas Hunt's, with highways laid out, and into the above said neck north to upland and meadows, with marks renewed between the meadows and the upland, beginning at a white oak, which is the divisional line between Thomas Hunt and John Richardson, which line runneth from the white oak to the water east and by north, and all the meadow lying along between the water and the marked trees is John Richardson's, until you meet another divisional line that bears west and by north and east and by south, which line runs at the old highway, and all the rest of the meadows within the neck to be Thomas Hunt's, for and in consideration John Richardson hath all the *Long Neck* lying upon the south end of the dwelling houses of John Richardson and Thomas Hunt, all the above said neck within fence, and further we have laid out unto Thomas Hunt a tract of upland lying near his house containing sixteen acres and forty-five rods, stretching from the creek north north-west and south south-west to a great burnt stump, from thence west south-west to a creek, and from the creek south south-east," &c., &c.

The three daughters and co-heiresses of John Richardson were: Bertha, wife of Joseph Ketcham, of Newtown, Long Island; Mary, wife of Joseph Hadley, of Yonkers; and Elizabeth, wife of Gabriel Leggett, from whom descend the Leggetts of West Farms. His last will bears date 16th November, 1679; in it he bequeaths—

"To his beloved wife, Martha, all his housing and orchard, and all movebles without and within, and all live stock, also all his land and meadow on the *planting neck*, and all the Long Neck that runs southward from Thomas Hunt's new dwelling house to the Sound, and this during her life to act and dispose as she shall see cause."

"To his son-in-law, Joseph Hadley, a pasture of three acres already laid out, &c. at or about the first spring, and all the meadow that is already divided, that is on this side the river above ye *planting neck*." "To his three daughters, two hundred acres of land each;" "and to his brother's son, in England, Joseph Richardson, one hundred acres, if he come within the space of one whole year to receive it; and if he come not within the time prefixed, it shall remain in Martha my wife's hands." "In conclusion, he constitutes and appoints his well-beloved friends, William Richardson and Richard Ponton, both of Westchester, and Jonathan Hayward, of Newtown, Long Island, overseers of his last will and testament, and that it is his whole will and testament after his decease, he witnesses it under his own hand the 16th day of November, 1679-1680."

Signed, JOHN RICHARDSON."<sup>a</sup>

Upon the 12th of January, 1686, Governor Thomas Dongan granted a *patent* to Thomas Hunt, Sen., for all his land bounded on the east by

<sup>a</sup> Surrogate's office, N. Y., Wills and Admr., 1665 to 1683. Vol. i., p. 431.



the river Aquelung, or Bronx, extending to the midst of the said river, on the north by certain marked trees and a piece of hammock, and on the west by a certain brook called Sackrahung, for the value of one bushel of good winter wheat."<sup>a</sup>

The following receipt appears to have been given for quit-rent due on the above patent:—

“Received of Thomas Hunt, Sen., twenty-five bushels and one-half wheat, in full for his quit-rent for his land in the county of Westchester, upon Bronck’s river, to the 25th of March last past. Witness my hand, in New York, this 9th day of April, A.D. 1717.

RICHARD NICOLLS,

*Deputy Receiver.”*

On the 17th of October, 1687, Joseph Hadley, of the Yonkers’ Patent, conveys to Thomas Williams, of the *West Farms*, eight acres formerly given him by John Richardson. In 1711, the heirs of the patentees united in a second division of the *West Farms*:—

“Whereas Thomas Hunt, sen., of ye *West Farms* in ye borough town and county of Westchester in ye colony of New York, yeoman, and Elizabeth Leggett of ye same place, widow, did on the 9th day of May last past, by an instrument under their hands and seals, formally agree and conclude that the *West Farms* lots containing twelve in number, should be surveyed and laid out by myself or some other person, and that according to a former survey made by me William Taylor, on or before the last day of June instant, with a further covenant, promise, and agreement, each to the other, for themselves, or each of their heirs, executors and administrators, as far as they or any of them are concerned in the said lots, that the survey made by M. W. E., or some other person, in manner as above, and the lines or bounds so run and settled should remain, continue, and not be removed for ever hereafter upon the penalty of five hundred pounds current money of said colony, to be paid by the party or persons breaking the said conclusion or agreement and covenant to the party or persons fulfilling and performing the same, &c., &c., as by the said instrument, relation being thereunto had, will fully and at large appear. Therefore upon this request and desire of the said Thomas Hunt, Elizabeth Leggett and others, the owners and proprietors of said land, I have surveyed the said twelve lots of land as followeth. That is to say, begin at a chestnut tree standing on the river side above *Byanck’s mill*, running thence north forty-three degrees, west two hundred and eighty-three, to a marked white wood, thence south thirty degrees, west about forty-five, eight rods to the north side and westernmost corner of the sixth lot, and then upon several courses until it meets with the north-west corner of the twelfth lot, then east twenty-one degrees and a half rod to ye meadow, and from thence along the meadow and river to the place first begun as appears in the scheme hereunto annexed, the whole tract containing 1096 acres, &c., &c. It is firmly agreed and concluded upon by the said Thomas Hunt,

<sup>a</sup> Col. Rec. Vol. ii. From the original in the possession of the late Mr. Daniel Winship, Hunt’s Point.



Elizabeth Leggett and others concerned in the matter, that what every or any lot wants or falls short of one hundred acres as above shall be allowed and made up to them or theirs out of the land not contained within this survey. Comprehended with a certain patent granted by Governor Richard Nicolls to Edward Jessup and John Richardson in the year of our Lord Christ 1666, except thirty acres which he, said Thomas Hunt, formerly sold to John Feryedon and Robert Manning; and also thirty acres belonging to the said Elizabeth Leggett, being in lieu of the aforesaid thirty acres on which Thomas Davenport now dwells, in witness whereof," etc., etc.

In presence of JOSEPH HUNT,  
Justice.

THOMAS HUNT,  
ELIZABETH LEGGETT,  
JOHN LAWRENCE,  
MATTHEW PUGSLEY.

"This survey was made and completed on the  
26th day of June, 1711, by me,  
PETER BERRIEN."

On the 30th of September, 1723, William Davenport of Perth Amboy, in East New Jersey, and Bridget, his wife, did convey all their right, title and interest in the *patent of West Farms* unto William Leggett, viz: "All and singular ye flats, coves, bays, fishing places, etc.; also, all their right, title, and property of fishing, hunting and fowling in this ye same patent," etc.<sup>a</sup>

In the south-west corner of the *patent of West Farms*, was situated a small tract of land, called the "*debatable ground*." This territory appears to have been in dispute between the heirs of the patentees of West Farms, and Lewis Morris, proprietor of the manor of Morrisiana, from 1666 to 1740. At an early period, Lewis Morris laid claim to most of the *undivided lands of the West Farms*' patent, as belonging to him."

Upon the 4th of February, 1712, "Elizabeth Leggett, widow of Gabriel Leggett and daughter of John Richardson, released her title and interest of all the *common and undivided lands*, that Mr. Lewis Morris makes any claim to within our *patent of West Farms*." In 1737, "William Leggett, assignee to the heirs of *John Richardson*, of one-half moiety of the *West Farms*, and Abraham Lent, of the heirs of *Edward Jessup*, jointly agreed to prosecute Lewis Morris, who is now in possession of almost all the *undivided lands*."

A complete settlement of the *undivided lands* was not made till 1740. In 1830, the debatable lands were purchased by the late William H. Leggett, Esq.

<sup>a</sup> The same rights had previously been conveyed by Thos. Davenport, father of the above grantor, to Abraham Leggett.

The *twelve lots* into which the West Farms was originally divided, have been long since distributed among numerous proprietors.

The *village of West Farms* is pleasantly situated at the head of the navigable waters of the Bronx, three miles from the East river, and twelve from New York. This place, from its close vicinity to the city, and its valuable water privileges, is rapidly increasing in importance. It contains an Episcopal, a Dutch Reformed, a Presbyterian, and a Methodist church; several taverns, stores of different kinds, and a post office; also, several extensive manufactories.

Near the centre of the village is situated the *Episcopal church*; a beautiful Gothic structure, of wood. The bell-tower is attached to the north-eastern corner. Over the principal entrance, is a neat porch. The corner-stone of this edifice was laid on Tuesday, November 10th, 1846, by the Rev. Hugh Smith, D.D., rector of St. Peter's church, New York; on which occasion, an address was delivered by the Rev. J. T. Cushing, minister in charge of the parish. Besides the officiating clergy, there were present, the Rev. William Powell, rector of St. Peter's church, Westchester, and the Rev. Robert Bolton, rector of Christ's church, Pelham.

On the 28th of June, 1847, it was consecrated and set apart to the worship and service of Almighty God, under the title of Grace church, by the Right Reverend William Heathcote de Lancey, Bishop of the Diocese of Western New York. The consecration sermon being preached by the Rev. Kingston Goddard, of Staten Island.

Grace church, West Farms, was incorporated upon the 13th of December, 1844. William A. Spencer and Philip M. Lydig, churchwardens; Peter Lorillard, Richard Crowther, Dr. William Bayard, Charles S. Valentine, Benjamin Lea, Jacob M. Van Winkle and William B. Hoffman, vestrymen.<sup>a</sup>

On June 3d, 1847, the Rev. Washington Rodman was unanimously called to be rector of the parish. The credit of first attempting the establishment of an Episcopal church in this village, is due, under God, to Miss Margaret Hunt,<sup>b</sup> a lady whose intelligent zeal, kindly sympathy and untiring benevolence, deserve especial mention. The work was undertaken by this lady; and, although the number of Episcopalians in the immediate neighborhood was then comparatively small, still a considerable interest was awakened by her endeavors. The amount of \$2,061.00 was collected, to which the sum of \$1,000.00 was added by the munificent donation of Mrs. C. L. Spencer.

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Religious Soc., Lib. B., p. 93.

<sup>b</sup> Daughter of Thomas Hunt, fourth in descent from Edward Jessup, one of the first patentees of the West Farms.

A bell weighing 535 pounds has been purchased by subscriptions received principally from the members of the church.

The *Presbyterian church* stands upon the highest ground in the village. It was incorporated, in 1814, by the name of the "First Presbyterian Church in the village of West Farms;" Robert Givan, Caleb Pell, Ebenezer Waterbury, James Bathgate, James Renwick and John B. Gillespie, first trustees.<sup>a</sup> Prior to the year 1836, it belonged to the Bedford Presbytery, but is now in connection with the second New York Presbytery. The present church edifice was erected in 1815.

LIST OF PASTORS AND SUPPLIES.<sup>b</sup>

| INSTALL OF CALL. |                            | SUPPLY.         |
|------------------|----------------------------|-----------------|
| 1815,            | REV. ISAAO LEWIS,          | "               |
| 1819,            | REV. TRUMAN OSBORNE,       | "               |
| 1821,            | REV. SAMUEL NOTT,          | "               |
| 1823,            | REV. JOSEPH B. FELT,       | "               |
| 1823,            | REV. THOMAS S. WICKES,     | "               |
| 1824,            | REV. ITHAMER HILLSBURY,    | "               |
| 1824,            | REV. E. D. WELLS,          | "               |
| 1825,            | REV. REV. J. D. WICKHAM,   | "               |
| 1828,            | REV. GEORGE STEBBINS,      | "               |
| 1835,            | REV. WILLIAM GRAY,         | "               |
| Jan. 22, 1836,   | REV. M. I. ADAM,           | pastor.         |
| Feb. 1841,       | REV. JAMES B. RAMSEY,      | "               |
| 1846,            | REV. CHARLES MOASE,        | "               |
| Oct. 28, 1847,   | REV. ISAAO WATTS PLATT,    | died.           |
| 1858,            | REV. GEORGE NIXON,         | resigned.       |
| May 2, 1876,     | REV. CARSON W. ADAMS, D D. | "               |
| Jan. 26, 1880,   | REV. WILLARD SCOTT,        | present pastor. |

The *Dutch Reformed church* of this village was first organized in 1839, under the pastoral charge of the late Rev. George Bourne, of New York, and incorporated on the 16th of March, 1840.<sup>c</sup> First elders, Thomas Butler, George Wilson, and Abijah Rogers; first deacons, James P. Fitch, J. G. Rowland, and Stephen Kelly.

## CALLED.

## LIST OF MINISTERS.

|       |                           |                   |
|-------|---------------------------|-------------------|
| 1839, | REV. GEORGE BOURNE,       | resigned 1842.    |
| 1842, | REV. BARNABAS V. COLLINS, | " 1845.           |
| 1845, | REV. JOHN SIMONSON,       | " 1852.           |
| 1852, | REV. PHILIP BURGHARDT,    | " 1855.           |
| 1856, | REV. POLHEMUS VAN WYKE,   | " 1867.           |
| 1867, | REV. EVERT VAN SLYKE,     | " 1871.           |
| 1871, | REV. JOHN SIMONSON,       | present minister. |

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. A. 154.

<sup>b</sup> For some years this church was associated, in the support of a minister, with the Presbyterian church of New Rochelle.

<sup>c</sup> Co. Rec. Religious Soc. Lib. B. The first church edifice was erected in 1839.

An Episcopal Methodist Society was incorporated upon the 24th of October, 1831; Andrew C. Wheeler, Joseph Smith, John F. Fay, Thomas T. Phillips, and Thomas Bolton, trustees<sup>a</sup>

In 1803 there appears to have been an academy existing here, the trustees of which were the Hon. Gouverneur Morris, Dominick Lynch, John Sloss Hobart, Abijah Hammond, James Morris, Daniel Ludlow, Isaac Clason, Israel Underhill, Philip I. Livingston, Robert Gilchrist, Joseph Given, Jonathan Randel, Andrew Barton, Israel Honeywell, Samuel Kelly, Robert Heaton, and William H. Morris.

During the Revolutionary war, West Farms was constantly exposed to the daily forays of both armies, as they alternately held possession of the adjoining country. "On the 25th of January, 1777, (observes General Heath,) early on the morning, the enemy made a sally towards *De Lancey's Mills*,<sup>b</sup> where they surprised and routed the guard, wounding several, but not killing or taking any of them; and a regiment near that place quitted their quarters."<sup>c</sup>

The *Military Blockhouse*, which occupied the site of Mr. Mapes's Temperance House, was destroyed by Colonel Burr, in the winter of 1779. The event is thus related by Samuel Young, in a letter to Commodore Valentine Morris:—

"Soon after Tryon's retreat, Colonel Delancey, who commanded the British refugees, in order to secure themselves against surprise, erected a block house on a rising ground below De Lancey's Bridge. This, Colonel Burr resolved to destroy. I was in that expedition, and recollect the circumstances.

"He procured a number of hand-grenades; also, rolls of port fire, and canteens filled with inflammable materials, with contrivances to attach them to the side of the blockhouse. He set out with his troops early in the evening, and arrived within a mile of the blockhouse by two o'clock in the morning. The Colonel gave Captain Black the command of about forty volunteers, who were first to approach; twenty of them were to carry the port fires, &c. Those who had hand-grenades, had short ladders to enable them to reach the port holes, the exact height of which Colonel Burr had ascertained. Colonel Burr gave Captain Black his instructions in the hearing of his company, assuring him of his protection if they were attacked by superior numbers; for it was expected that the enemy, who had several thousand men at and near Kings Bridge, would endeavor to cut us off, as we were several miles below them. Burr directed those who carried the combustibles to march in front as silently as possible; that on being hailed, they should light the hand-grenades, &c., with a slow match provided for the purpose, and throw them into the port holes. I was one of the party that advanced. The sentinel hailed and fired. We rushed on. The first hand-gren-

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Religious Soc. Lib. B. p. 6. An incorporation of the Methodist Episcopal church occurs in 1836, and again in 1843.—See Lib. B. 48, 76.

<sup>b</sup> Now known as Lydig's Mills.

<sup>c</sup> Heaths' Mem. p. 111.



ade that was thrown in drove the enemy from the upper story ; and before they could take any measure to defend it, the blockhouse was on fire in several places. Some few escaped, and the rest surrendered without our having lost a single man. Though many shots were fired at us, we did not fire a gun."<sup>a</sup>

Although the inhabitants appear to have suffered much during the Revolution, they generally continued firmly attached to the interests of their country. In 1775 occurs the following petition to the Hon. Provincial Congress, from the subscribers, inhabitants of the Manor of Fordham and *West Farms*, in the county of Westchester, which

"*Humbly Showeth* that we were summoned to appear at Westchester in order to choose officers, according to the resolution of the Congress, it having been represented, as we understand, that there was not a competent number of men in our district to form a company, we therefore beg leave to inform you that the Manor of Fordham and the West Farms, have, in the militia, always been considered as a district by themselves ; and that within their limits there are upwards of seventy men fit to bear arms, and that an attendance at Westchester upon the meeting of the company will be attended with great inconvenience to many of the inhabitants, and therefore injurious to the service intended to be advanced ; from which considerations your petitioners humbly pray the Honorable Congress will be pleased to order that the Manor of Fordham and the West Farms have a company with themselves, and that they elect their own officers under such inspection as the Honorable Congress, in their wisdom shall think best ; and your petitioners shall ever pray.

Nicholas Berrien,  
Isaac Valentine,  
Peter Valentine,  
John Stevens,  
Benjamin Curser,  
Abraham Dyckman,  
John Farmer,  
Benjamin Valentine,  
George Pilpet,  
Isaac Valentine, Jr.,  
Peter Bussing, Jr.,  
Abraham Wilson,  
Benjamin Curser, Jr.,  
Hendrick Ryer,  
John Lent,  
John Ryer,  
Isaac Curser, Jr.,  
Tunis Le Joye,  
Philip Hunt,  
Stephen Emboll,  
Nathan'l Lawrence,  
Peter Devoe,  
James Swain,  
Nazareth Brewer,  
Edward Harris,  
John Collard,  
Cornelius Jacobs,

Hezekiah Ward,  
Tunis Garrison,  
Isaac Cant,  
Gilbert Taylor,  
Robert Gilmer,  
Benjamin Archer, Jr.,  
Daniel Devoe, Jr.,  
John Embrie, Sen.  
Jacob Lent,  
Abraham Lent,  
Dennis Hyer,  
Jacob Valentine,  
Abraham Garrison,  
James G. Groot,  
Thomas Hunt,  
Abraham Leggett,  
William Leggett,  
John Leggett, Jr.,  
Robert Hunt, Jr.,  
Cornelius Leggett,  
Mr. Woods,  
John Hedger,  
Thomas Hedger,  
Stephen Edwards,  
James Rock,  
George Higby,  
Jacob Hunt,

Levi Hunt,  
Jeremiah Requa,  
James McKay,  
Robert Campbell,  
Eden Hunt,  
Isaac Hunt,  
James Archer,  
Samuel Embrie, Jr.,  
John Embrie, Jr.,  
Thomas Cromwell,  
G. Cromwell,  
Obediah Hide,  
John Curser,  
Simon Williams,  
John Ryer, Jr.,  
Jacob Chappel,  
John Garrison,  
John Jacobs,  
Thomas Dogherty,  
John Clark,  
John de Noo,  
John Blizard,  
John Walbin,  
John Warwick,  
Thomas Gemble,  
Peter Bussing,  
Isaac Curser.

Congress was pleased to grant the prayer of this petition.

<sup>a</sup> Davis's Mem. of Aaron Burr, vol. i, 164.

The road passing the village landing south leads to the *Great Planting neck*, called by the Indians *Quinnahung*, upon which are now many beautiful country seats. At the south-east extremity of the neck is situated *Hunt's Point*. This property was formerly occupied by the Hunt family, for nearly one hundred and sixty years, having passed into their hands by the marriage of Thomas Hunt with Elizabeth Jessup, daughter of Edward Jessup, one of the first patentees. In 1688, Thomas Hunt, of the Grove farm, granted to his son, Thomas Hunt, one hundred acres, lying on the south side of Gabriel Leggett's land, bounded eastwardly and southerly by Bronck's river. The old Grange erected in 1688, occupies a beautiful situation near the termination of the point, overlooking the East river and Flushing bay.

This place was for many years the residence of Rodman Drake the poet, and it was here that he wrote his well known lines on the Bronx, on the neighboring banks of which he often wandered :—

I sat me down upon a green bank side,  
 Skirting the smooth edge of a gentle river,  
 Whose waters seemed unwillingly to glide,  
 Like parting friends, who linger while they sever ;  
 Enforced to go, yet seeming still unready,  
 Backward they wind their way in many a wistful eddy.

Gray o'er my head the yellow-vested willow  
 Ruffled its hoary top in the fresh breezes,  
 Glancing in light, like spray on a green billow,  
 Or the fine frost work which young winter freezes,  
 When first his power in infant pastime trying,  
 Congeals sad autumn's tears on the dead branches lying.

From rocks around hung the loose ivy dangling,  
 And in the clefts sumach of liveliest green,  
 Bright rising-stars the little beach was spangling,  
 The gold-cap sorrel from his gauzy screen,  
 Shone like a fairy, enchased and beaded,  
 Left on some morn, when light flash'd in their eyes unheeded.

The hum-bird shook his sun-touched wings around,  
 The blue-finch carolled in the still retreat ;  
 The antic squirrel capered on the ground,  
 Where lichens made a carpet for his feet.  
 Through the transparent waves, the ruddy minkle  
 Shot up in glimmering sparks, his red fins tiny twinkle.

There were the dark cedars, with loose mossy tresses,  
 White-powder'd dog trees, and stiff hollies flaunting,  
 Gaudy as rustics in their May-day dresses,



MAP OF HUNT'S POINT.





Blue pellorets from purple leaves upslanting  
 A modest gaze, like eyes of a young maiden  
 Shining beneath dropp'd lids the evening of her wedding.

The breeze fresh springing from the lips of morn,  
 Kissing the leaves, and sighing so to loose 'em,  
 The winding of the merry locust's horn,  
 The glad spring gushing from the rock's bare bosom ;  
 Sweet sighs, sweet sounds, all sights, all sounds exceeding,  
 Oh! 'twas a ravishing spot, form'd for a poet's dwelling.

And I did leave thy loveliness, to stand  
 Again in the dull world of earthly blindness,  
 Pain'd with the pressure of unfriendly hands,  
 Sick of smooth looks, agued with icy kindness ;  
 Left I for this thy shades, where none intrude,  
 To prison wandering thought and mar sweet solitude.

Yet I will look upon thy face again  
 My own romantic *Bronx*, and it will be  
 A face more pleasant than the face of men.  
 Thy waves are old companions, I shall see  
 A well remembered form in each old tree,  
 And hear a voice long loved in thy wild minstrelsy.

The burial place of the Hunt family, is located near the entrance of the point. The following inscriptions are copied from two of the monuments in this yard:—

IN MEMORY OF  
 THOMAS HUNT,  
 who departed this life,  
 July 4th, 1808,  
 in the 80th year of his age.

He possessed the cardinal virtues in an eminent degree ;  
 he was temperate, brave, patient and just :

The solid rock shall sink beneath  
 The iron hand of time,  
 But virtue dwells with  
 Immortality.

The other is

SACRED  
 to the memory  
 of  
 JOSEPH RODMAN DRAKE, M.D.  
 who died September 21st, 1825,  
 aged 25 years.<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> The wife of R. W. Gilder, assistant editor of *Scribner's*, is the grand-daughter of Joseph R. Drake, author of the "Culprit" and the "American Flag," who died over fifty years ago, at the age of twenty-five, with the reputation of one of the most gifted of American poets. He had but one child, the mother of Mrs. Gilder.

Fitz Greene Halleck's pathetic lines on the death of his companion, will not be considered inappropriate here, especially as the last two of the first stanza are engraved upon this tombstone :—

Greene be the turf above thee,  
Friend of my better day !  
None knew thee but to love thee,  
Nor named thee but to praise.

Tears fell when thou wert dying,  
From eyes unused to weep ;  
And long, where thou art lying,  
Will tears the cold turf sleep.

When hearts whose truth was proven,  
Like thine, are laid in earth,  
Then should a wreath be woven  
To tell the world their worth.

And I, who wake each morrow  
To clasp thy hand in mine,  
Who shared thy joy and sorrow,  
Whose weal and wo were thine.—

It should be mine to braid it  
Around thy faded brow ;  
But I've in vain essayed it,  
And feel I cannot now.

While memory bids me weep thee,  
Nor thoughts nor words are free,  
The grief is fixed too deeply  
That mourns a man like thee.

Upon *Waddington Point*, the south-west projection of the *Planting Neck*, is situated Blythe place—formerly belonging to Francis Barretto, Esq. The house is a handsome edifice of stone. The grounds are richly wooded, and the views of the river extensive, and singularly beautiful. Mr. Barretto for many years represented this county in Assembly. In the immediate vicinity of Blythe place stood the residence<sup>a</sup> of the late Thomas Leggett, whose ancestors had been resident proprietors of the *great Planting Neck*, since the year 1690, if not before.

The Leggett family were formerly seated in Essex County, England, and probably descend from Helmingius Legat, high sheriff of that county, in 1404. As early as 1661, Gabriel Leggett emigrated to this country ; and in right of his wife, Elizabeth Richardson, daughter and

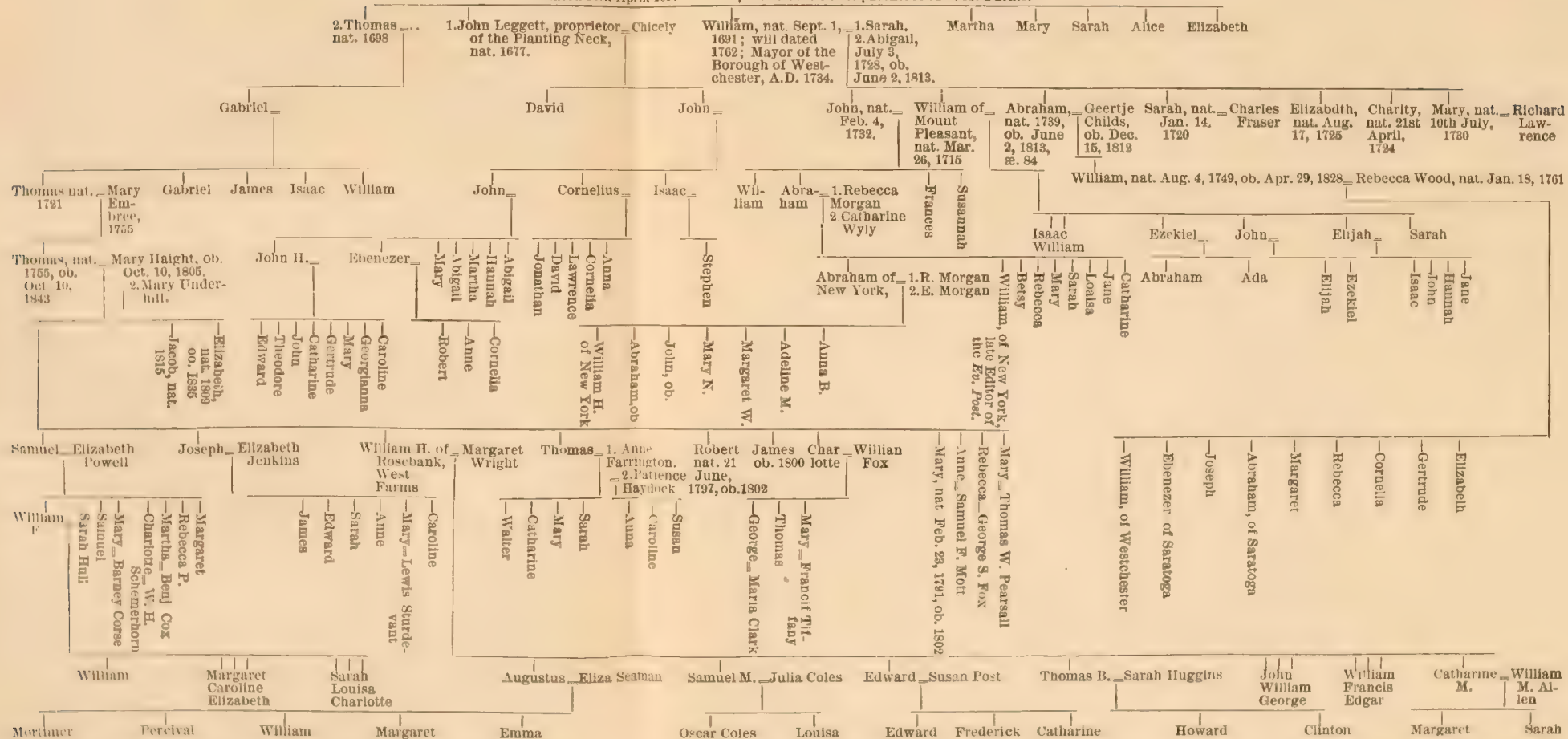
---

<sup>a</sup> This house occupied the site of the old Leggett homestead.

PEDIGREE OF LEGETT, OF WEST FARMS.

Arms:—Az. on a bend ar. three human hearts gu. on a chief of the second, as many martlets sa. Crest.—A mermaid. ppr.

Gabriel Leggett, mar. 1676; will Elizabeth Richardson, da. of John Richardson,  
dated 16th April, 1697      one of the first patentees of West Farms.







co-heiress of John Richardson, (one of the joint patentees,) became possessed of a large portion of the Neck. By his last will dated

"16th of April, 1676, Gabriel Leggett of the *West Farms*, bequeathed to his wife Elizabeth, all his household goods, &c., &c. To his son John, all his house and out-houses, orchard, land and the meadows in the *Planting Neck*, and the meadow, &c., also that messuage and tenement which Thomas Williams dwells upon, and was formerly my father-in-law's, John Richardson, his now dwelling house, and orchard and out houses with the land and meadow which I bought of John Ferguson, Sen., and Robert Manning, together with fifty acres of wood land, lying within the bounds of the patent of West Farms, &c. 'I say to my son Thomas,' to his son William one hundred acres of woodland, and five acres of meadow, lying behind the field, within the bounds of the patents of West Farms together with all the undivided meadow, as also my house and house lot, with an orchard thereon, lying in the town of Westchester. To his daughter Martha, he bequeathed his little colored boy; to his daughters Mary, Sarah, Alice and Elizabeth, twenty pounds each."<sup>a</sup>

John Leggett, the eldest son of the above testator, was the great grand-father of the late Thomas Leggett. The following incidents are related of Mr. Leggett, whose activity, energy and fearlessness of character are well known.

While a youth, at the commencement of the revolutionary war, he was living with his father on the farm adjoining Morrisania. All he possessed at this time was a very fine young mare, the gift of his parent. Prior to Colonel De Lancey's taking possession of his father's house, a party of British refugees took, with other property, his favorite animal, whilst he, being unarmed, could only bluster and threaten. He refused, however, to leave them, and actually accompanied the robbers two miles on their route to head-quarters. As the party were passing the spot which now makes the southern entrance to West Farms, two Continental soldiers rose up from behind a stone wall and fired. The man leading the mare was shot, and fell; the mare turned round and ran homewards, to the great delight of the owner, who immediately followed. Soon after this event the family, driven from home, were compelled to seek shelter elsewhere. Mr. Leggett and his two brothers went to Saratoga; here they cleared a small piece of land, erected a log house, and prepared to spend the winter. But on the approach of Burgoyne, they were taken prisoners by the Indian allies. His two brothers were carried to Fort Edward by the Indians, whilst he himself was conveyed to Burgoyne's camp. Here he fell in with a neighbor named Concklin, who, after a fortnight's detention, forged a pass for both. By this means

<sup>a</sup> Surrogate's office, N. Y. Lib. ii. 24.

the sentinels were deceived. Our heroes swam the north river, (it was the early part of October,) and ran all that night. The next day they concealed themselves in the woods, and the following night kept on their way, avoiding all habitations of note. Not knowing the state of parties in the country, they skulked from one place to another until they reached Dutchess county, where Concklin was known. Here, they rested themselves and obtained food. Soon after the treaty of peace, Mr. Leggett removed to New York. He died October 10th, 1843. His children were Samuel, Joseph, Willam H. and Thomas, besides several daughters.

Opposite the residence of the late Edward G. Faile, Esq., on this neck, a rural lane led south-west to Morrisania. It was called La-Fayette's Lane, to commemorate the journey of that General, who passed through it on his way to Boston.

On the west side of the *Planting Neck* lies the *debatable* territory already alluded to.

In 1740 Lewis Morris and Isabella, his wife, conveyed to James Graham, father of the latter, the following leasehold property:—

“All that certain tract of land being part of the manor of Morrisania, situate lying and being in the county of Westchester, in the Province of New York aforesaid, beginning at the mouth of a small brook or run of water commonly called or known by the name of *Wigwam Brook*, but by some falsely called *Sackarahung*: it being the first brook to the westward of an isthmus or neck of land known by the name *Jefferd's Neck*, and from the mouth of the said brook, where it falls into the salt water, running as the said brook runs to the head thereof, which being measured in a straight line north eight degrees thirty minutes more easterly, is forty and three chains running east, thirty-four degrees northerly to *Bound Brook*; thence down the said *Bound Brook*, as it runs to the mouth thereof, where it falls in a salt-water creek that runs by the house of Gabriel Leggett; then along the said creek as it runs into the Sound to the eastward of the said *Jefferd's Neck*; then along the Sound to the mouth of a salt creek that runs up to *Wigwam Brook*; thence along up the said salt creek as it runs to the mouth of *Wigwam Brook*, whence it first began, including the said *Jefferd's Neck*, with the hammock, meadows and marshes thereunto adjoining and belonging, being bounded to the westward by the said *Wigwam Brook* and the salt creek before mentioned that runs up to it to the northward, partly by the lands of *Morrisania* and the salt creek that runs by the house of the said Leggett to the eastward, partly by the said *Bound Creek*, and partly the salt creek aforesaid that runs by the house of Leggett, and to the southward by the Sound that divides Long Island, or the Island of Nassau, from Connecticut, etc.: the grantee paying therefore yearly, on the 25th of March, *six ears of Indian corn*, &c.”

James Graham was an alderman of New York in 1680 and 1681. In

1683 he was appointed Recorder, and was the first who held that office. He afterwards was appointed Attorney General of this province. His subsequent career in public life was of the most prominent character, having filled several high Legislative stations in this city and Province. He removed in the later years of his life to the estate of Mr. Morris at Morrisania which he took on lease and where he dispensed his hospitalities on a magnificent scale. He died in the year 1701, leaving six children, by his wife Elizabeth Windebane, of New York.<sup>a</sup>

From Austin Graham this property passed to the Leggetts, who have sold various portions to Mr. Dater, Mr. Dennison and others.

*Rose Bank*, the charming seat of Mr. William H. Leggett, is situated near the entrance of *Jefferd's Neck*, on the banks of the East River, the waters of which appear spread out into a vast lake.

The view in front of the house embraces Riker's Island, the Two Brothers, (called in the Dutch "*Gesellen*," ) the entrance of the Gate, and the distant shores of New York city, &c. In the Graham mansion, which formerly stood on the site of Mr. Leggett's farm house, Major Bearmore, a British officer, was surprised by Colonel Armand of the French cavalry. "November 7th, 1779, (says General Heath,) at night, Colonel Armand proceeded with his corps from near Tarrytown to the vicinity of Morrisania, to the house of Alderman Leggett, where he surprised and took Major Bearmore and five other prisoners. The secrecy, precaution, gallantry and discipline exhibited by the colonel and his corps on this occasion did them much honor. In the capture of Major Bearmore, the inhabitants of the adjacent country were relieved from the frequent excursions of a troublesome officer." The destruction of the old house took place under the following circumstances: Col. Fowler, of the British army, who had dispossessed the Graham family, and made it his own quarters, invited all the officers and gentry in the neighborhood to dine with him, preparatory to his change of quarters. The company were assembled, and all seemed gay and happy. The more youthful of both sexes were wandering about the lawn, enjoying the beauty of the prospect, when a servant, (one of Mr. Graham's slaves,) announced the important fact, "Dinner is on the table." All turned their faces to the banqueting room, but before any one entered the door, there was a cry of fire heard. Col. Fowler seemed to think the dinner was more important than the building; he ordered everything removed from the table, the gentlemen assisting, and in a few minutes the table and contents were removed to the shade of a large willow, where all seated them-

<sup>a</sup> On the 18th of July, 1884, a license of marriage was issued of the Prov. Sec. Office, N. Y. for James Graham and Elizabeth Windebank, N. Y. Col. MS S., xxxiii, part ii., p. 2, arms of Windebanks (Haine's Co. Wilts) az a chev betw. 3 falcons volant or.



selves, and appeared to enjoy the meal and the burning. The house was utterly consumed, with the contents, before the company separated. No effort was made to save an article not required for the better enjoyment of their meal. The same evening Col. Fowler conducted a marauding party into the vicinity of Eastchester, where he was attacked and fell mortally wounded. Being brought back to the house of Cornelius Van Ranc, overseer of Mr. Graham's farm, he expired that night.

James Graham was a native of Scotland, and is found a resident merchant of the city of New York, as early as July, 1678; and a few years later, proprietor of lands in Ulster County, Staten Island, and in New Jersey. He succeeded Mr. Budyard as Attorney General of the Province of New York on the 10th of December, 1685, and was sworn of the Council on the 8th of October, 1687. "When the government of New England and New York were consolidated by James II., Mr. Graham removed to Boston as Attorney-General to Andros, the odium of whose government he shared, and in whose down-fall he was committed to the Castle. He returned to New York in 1691, where his enemies assert that he insinuated himself into the confidence of Leisler and his friends, so as to procure their interest to be chosen member of the Assembly, of which he was afterwards elected speaker. He became, soon after, the mortal enemy of Leisler and Milborne, of whose murder he is charged, by his adversaries, with being the principal author. Thomas Newton, Houghten's Attorney-General, having left the Province in April, 1691, disapproving, probably, of the harsh measures of the government toward the State prisoners, George Farewell was appointed to act in his place; but this appointment not being satisfactory to the Assembly, Mr. Graham became again Attorney-General in the following May. He was about nine years speaker of the Assembly, *i.e.* from 1691-1694, 1695-1698, and a part of 1699, when the friends of Leisler being in a majority, the House voted a bill of Indictment, in the shape of a Remonstrance against their opponents, and had the cruelty to request their speaker to sign it. To enable him to avoid this unpleasant duty, Mr. Graham was called to the Council in, 1699. His public career may be said to have now closed. He appears to have attended the Council for the last time, on the 29th of July, 1700. He was superseded in October, of that year, as Recorder of the city of New York, after having filled that office from 1683, with an interruption of only two years, and was deprived of his office of Attorney-General on the 21st of January, 1701, but a few days before his death, which occurred at his residence at Morrisania. His will bears date 12th of January 1700, and is on record in the Surrogate's Office, New York, Lib. ii., 95. He left all his property,



share and share alike, to his children—Augustine, Surveyor-General of the Province, Isabella, wife of Lewis Morris, Esq.; Mary, Sarah, Margaret and John. The other members of the family consisted, in 1698, of one overseer, two white servants, and thirty-three slaves."<sup>a</sup>

### MANOR OF MORRISANIA.

This Manor, formerly annexed in 1791 to the ancient Borough town of Westchester was, by an act of the Legislature, in 1783, added to New York county. Its name is derived from the Morris family, the first mesne Lords and patentees under the crown; the termination "*ania*" being in general use in the latter part of the seventeenth century. At the period of the Dutch discovery, it was styled by the aborigines Ranachque, or Raraque, an appellation which doubtless refers to some object peculiar to its geographical locality. The Indians appear to have resided principally on the shores of the East and Harlem River. Of this, the extensive "shell beds," which are still to be seen, afforded conclusive evidence. Within a few years several Indian tumuli have been accidentally opened in the vicinity of Gouverneur Morris's residence, and found to contain large sized skeletons of the Aborigines. The first grantee under the Mohegan sachems of Ranachque, Shahash, Panazarah, Wana-capun, Kneed, Taquamarke and Awarazawis, was *Jonas Bronck*; who in 1639, purchased of them two hundred and fifty morgen of land—about five hundred acres, for which he subsequently obtained a "Grond Brief" from the Dutch authorities.<sup>b</sup>

In 1639 we find the patroon of *Bronck's land* leasing a portion of his territory in the following manner:—

"Appeared before me, Cornelius Van Tienhoven, Secretary in New Netherland, in presence of the undersigned witnesses—Mr. Jonas Bronck from one side, and Peter Andriessen and Lourent Dayts from the other, who agreed together amicably in the following manner: Said Mr. Bronck shall show to the persons aforesaid a certain lot of land, of which he is proprietor, and which is situated opposite the river and the plain of Manhattan; in which lot aforesaid they may cultivate tobacco and maize, upon the express condition that they shall clear and cultivate, every two years, a fresh spot for the raising their tobacco and maize,

<sup>a</sup> Documents relating to the Col. Hist. of the State of N. Y., vol. iv., p. 847, edited by E. B. O'Callaghan, M.D.

<sup>b</sup> See Col. Morris's confirmation of Bronck's purchase. "The land of Bronck was cleared under a kind of co-operative system which benefited the hardy woodsman as well as the enterprising proprietor. As his axes felled the trees and his clearings yielded maize, he made both of them utile for men by advancing still further into the wilderness and building mills on the Bronx. Its name now perpetuates his memory. In the Indian raids of 1643, his settlements were desolated"—New York in the Olden Times, by J. Barnitz Bacon, No. 8 Beyond the Harlem.—*Sunday Times*.

and then the spot which they cultivated before shall return again to Mr. Bronck aforesaid, to dispose of according to pleasure; they shall be further obliged to return the field that they again surrender, that it is in proper order to be ploughed, and sowed with grain; this lot of ground they shall have the use during three years, for which Mr. Bronck shall have no other claim than that the land shall have been cleared and brought into a proper manner of cultivation by the diligence of Peter Andriessen and Lourent Days, who from their side shall be holden to accomplish their task.

21st July, 1639.

MAUNT JANSSEN, witness."<sup>a</sup>

We find Jonas Bronck again leasing land on the 15th of August, 1639, to Cornelius Jacobsen Stoll and John Jacobsen.<sup>b</sup>

Jonas Bronck must have died sometime prior to the year 1643, for we find his widow, Antonia Slaghboom, at that date married to Arendt van Curler. His descendants are said to be still numerous in the vicinity of Coxsackie, Green County, and Coeymans, Albany County, New York.

"His widow, Antonia Slaghboom, married Arent Van Corlaer, whose name became with the Indians the representative of justice and goodwill; and their amity for 'Corlear' embraced all the Dutch, to whom they gave his name, 'Bronck's, his land.'"<sup>c</sup>

By the marriage of Antonia Slaghboom, *Bronck's land* passed into the Van Curler family. In a letter to the patroon Van Renssalaer, dated, "The Mannhattans, this 16th of June, 1643," Van Curler says:—

"I am at present betrothed to the widow of the late Mr. Jonas Bronck. May the good God vouchsafe to bless me in my undertaking, and pleased to grant that it might conduce to His honor and to our mutual salvation. Amen."<sup>d</sup>

On the 30th of October, 1644, Van Curler obtained a "grond brief" for Bronck's land from William Kieft, Director General. I cannot forbear quoting an interesting sketch of this distinguished individual by E. B. O'Callaghan, historian of the New Netherlands:—

"Arendt Van Curler was one of those characters who deserve to live in history. His influence among the Indians was unlimited, and in honor of his memory these tribes addressed all succeeding governors of New York by the name of 'Corlear.' He possessed feelings of the purest humanity, and actively exerted his influence in rescuing from the savages such Christians as had the misfortune to fall into their hands, of whose danger he might receive timely notice. On his marriage with Antonia Slaghboom, the widow of Jonas Bronck, he visited Holland, and on his return moved to the Flatts above Albany, where he had a farm. He was proprietor of a brewery in Beverwyck, in 1661. Being a cousin

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Rec.

<sup>b</sup> Alb. Rec.

<sup>c</sup> New York in the Olden Time, by J. Barnitz Bacon.—*Sunday Times*.

<sup>d</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. N. Y., 464.

of the Van Rensselaers, he had considerable influence in the colony, where he was a magistrate to the time of his decease. He was one of the leaders in the settlement of Schenectady, in 1661-62, and in the surrender of New Netherlands was especially sent for by Governor Nicoll to be consulted on Indian affairs and the interests of the country generally.

"He was highly respected by the governors of Canada, and the regard entertained for him by Monsieur de Tracy, viceroy of that country, will be best judged of by the following extract of a letter which that high personage addressed him, dated Quebec, 30th April, 1667:—

"If you find it agreeable to come hither this summer, as you have caused me to hope, you will be most welcome, and entertained to the utmost of my ability; as I have great esteem for you, though I have not a personal acquaintance with you. Believe this truth, and that I am, sir, your affectionate and assured servant,

‘TRACY.’

"Having accepted this invitation, Mr. Van Curler prepared for his journey. Gov. Nicoll furnished him with a letter to the viceroy. It bears date May 20th, 1667, and states that ‘Mons’r Curler hath been importuned by divers of his friends at Quebec to give them a visit; and being ambitious to kiss your hands, he hath entreated my pass and liberty to conduct a young gentleman, Mr. Fontaine, who unfortunately fell into the barbarous hands of his enemies, and by means of Mons’r Curler obtained his liberty.’ On the 4th July following, Jeremias Van Rensselaer writing to Holland, announces that ‘our cousin Arendt Van Curler proceeds overland to Canada, having obtained leave from our General, and been invited thither by the viceroy, M. de Tracy. In an evil hour he embarked on board a frail canoe to cross Lake Champlain, and having been overtaken by a storm was drowned, I believe, near Split Rock. In his death this country experienced a public loss, and the French of Canada a warm and efficient friend.’”<sup>a</sup>

Upon the 15th of January, A.D. 1676, the following letters of administration were granted unto Mr. William Beeckman of the estate of *Juffrouw<sup>b</sup> Slaghboom*.

“*Edmund Andross, Esq., &c.:*—

"Whereas Juffrou Antonia Slaghboom, the widow and relict of Monsieur Arendt van Curler, late of Schanectade near Albany, is lately dead, and in her last will and testament did nominate and appoint William Beeckman, Sen., of this city, to be her executor, and the said William Beeckman having made application unto me for letters of administration upon the estate of the deceased," &c., &c.<sup>c</sup>

On the 10th of July, 1651, sixteen years prior to his death, Arendt

<sup>a</sup> O’Callaghan’s Hist. N. N. 322-3.

<sup>b</sup> A title of distinction for a lady among the Dutch.

<sup>c</sup> Surrogate’s Office, N. Y., 261.

van Corlear, transported *Broncks' land* to Jacob van Stoll, from whom it passed through several proprietors to Herman Smeeman.

"22d of Oct., 1664.—Herman Smeeman of Comoonepan on the maine, sold to Samuel Edsall all that certain tract of land situated on the East river through Hell-gate, commonly called *Broncks' land*, containing 500 acres."

This sale was confirmed to Edsall by royal patent the same year.

#### NICOLLS' PATENT FOR BRONCK'S LAND.

Richard Nicolls, Esq., governor-general under his royal highness, James, Duke of York and Albany, of all his territories in America, To all to whom these presents shall come, sendeth greeting. Whereas there was a patent or *ground brief* heretofore granted by the Dutch Gov. Will'm Kieft, unto *Arent van Curler* for a certaine tract or parcel of land formerly in the tenure or occupation of *Jonas Broncks*, commonly called by the Indians by the name of *Ranachque*, and by the English *Broncks' land*, lying and being on the maine to the east and over against *Harlem town*, having a certain small creek or kill which runs between the north-west part of it and *Little Barnes Island*, near Hell-gate, and so goes into the East River and a greater creek or river which divides it from Manhattoes Islands, containing about 500 acres or 250 margon of land, and including all the push thereunto annexed or adjoining, which said patent or ground brief so granted as aforesaid, bearing date the 20th day of Oct. 1644, was by the said *Arent van Curler*, upon the 10th day of July, 1651, transported and made over unto *Jacob Jans Stoll*, and upon the 19th day of December, 1662, conveyed by *Matthews de Vos*, as attorney of *Geertruyt Andries*, the widow of the said *Jacob Jansen Stoll*, unto *Geertrieu Hendrick*, formerly the widow of *Andries Hoppen*, and by her upon the same day, (with the approbation and consent of *Dirck Girrits van Tright*, then her husband,) made over to *Harman Smeeman*, who, upon the 22d day of October, 1664, sold and conveyed the same for a valuable consideration unto *Samuel Edsall*, late of this city, beaver maker, now for a confirmation unto him, the said *Samuel Edsall*, in his possession and enjoyment of the premises, Know ye that by virtue of the commission and authority unto me given by his royal highness, I have ratified, confirmed, and granted unto the said *Samuel Edsall*, his heirs and assignees, all the aforesaid parcel of land and premises, with all the soil, woods, pastures, meadow ground, marshes, commonage, creeks, waters, lakes, fishing, hawking, hunting and fowling, within the limits before set forth, described, and all other profits, commodities and emoluments to the said parcel or part of land belonging or in anywise appertaining, to have and to hold the said parcel or part of land and premises unto the said *Samuel Edsall*, his heirs and assignees, unto the proper use and behoof of the said *Samuel Edsall*, his heirs and assigns, forever, rendering and paying such duties and acknowledgments as now are or hereafter shall be constituted and established by the laws of this government, under the obedience of his royal highness, his heirs and successors. Given under my hand and seal at Fort James in New York, on the island of Manhattoes, the      day of      in the 20th year of his majestie's reign, Anno Domini 166 .

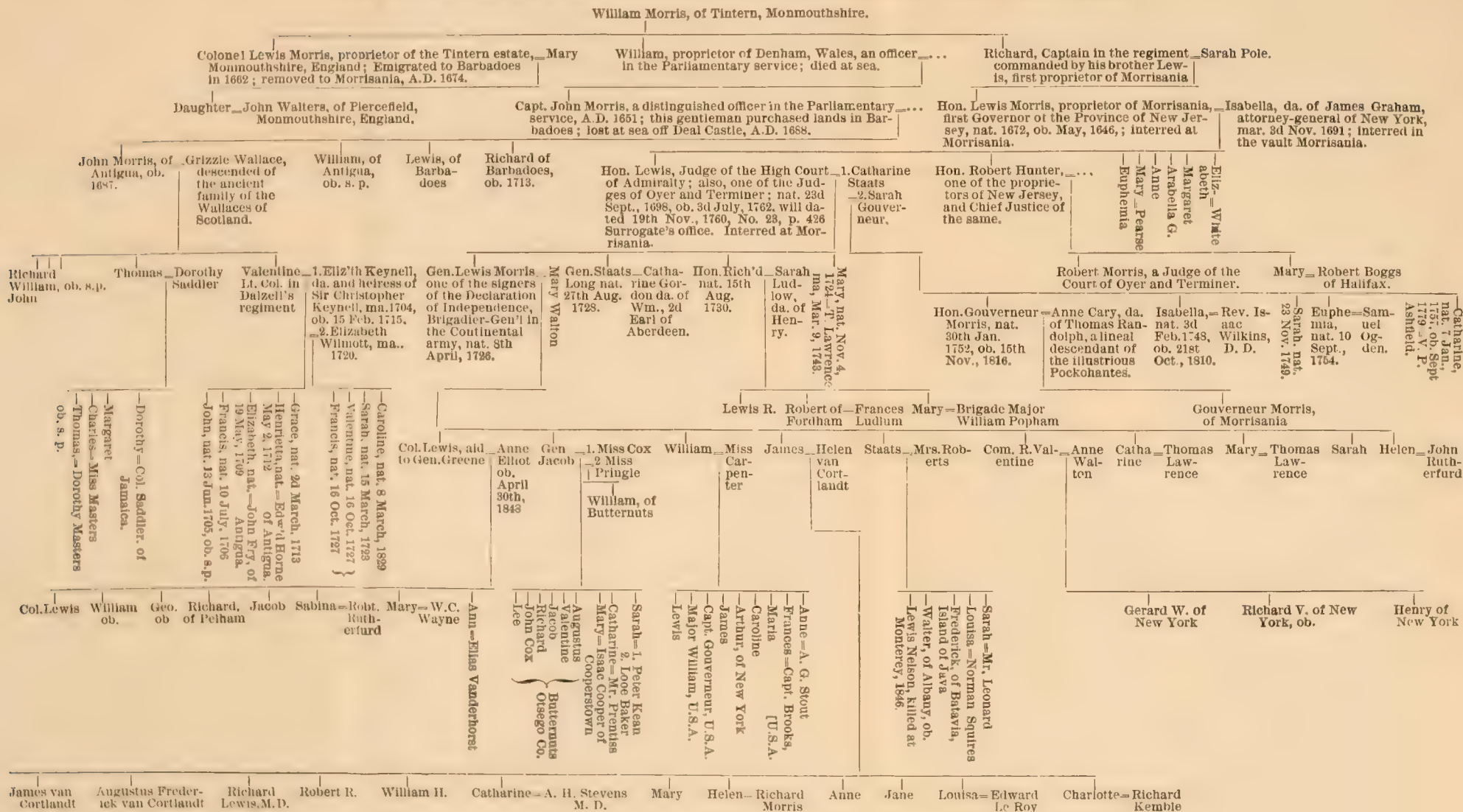
RICHARD NICOLLS.





## PEDIGREE OF MORRIS, OF MORRISANIA.

Arms, gu. a lion, rampant, regardant or, quarterly, with three torteauxes, arg. Crest, a castle in flames.



The next possessor of *Bronck's land* was Captain Richard Morris, who must have purchased of Edsall, cir. 1670. Mr. Sparks says that there was a contract dated the 10th of August, 1670, in which Richard is styled "a merchant in New York," and Lewis, his brother, "a merchant in Barbadoes."<sup>a</sup> "It follows," remarks Dunlap, "that Richard was in Barbadoes in 1670, and contracted to come on to New York to purchase this grant of *Morrisania* for himself and brother, Lewis, who was to follow and settle on it; but that he did not come until the peace of 1674, when he found the son of his brother an orphan, took him under his protection, and built at *Morrisania*."<sup>b</sup>

The Morris family are originally of Welch origin and of great antiquity, being lineally descended from "Rys, sometimes called Rice Fitzgerald, brother to Rhys Prince of Geventland, which Rys or Rice Fitzgerald was settled in Monmouthshire." "In 1171 Rice united with Strongbow, Earl of Striquil and Pembroke, his neighbor, and landed at Waterford in Ireland, with two hundred Knights and one thousand archers, having been thereto authorized and encouraged by Henry II., King of England and subdued the greatest part of that kingdom—which extensive conquests occasioned the king to interfere and call them back, and giving them some indemnification, appropriated their conquests to the English crown."

"For his warlike achievements Rys, the companion of Strongbow, was for pre-eminence called *Maur Rys*, or *Maur Rice*, *i e*, the great Rys or Rice. The word mawr or maur in Welch signifying great, and his descendants dropping the name of Fitzgerald for this, ever after thought it an honor to retain that addition; and thus the name became Mawr Rys, or Maurice, and finally Morris."

About the middle of the fifteenth century a younger brother of the family of this first Maurice, (still settled in Monmouthshire,) who was named William, bore a commission in the army, and married a lady of good fortune in Devonshire where he settled and had several sons.<sup>c</sup>

"One of the descendants in 1623—Sir William Morrice—as it was then corruptly spelt, settled in Cornwall. In the year 1635 the elder branch of the family, the lineal descendants of the first Morris, still re-

<sup>a</sup> Articles of agreement were entered into between the two brothers, that if either of them died without issue, the survivor, or issue of the survivor, if any, should take the estate.

<sup>b</sup> Dunlap's Hist. of N. Y., Vol. I., 272.

<sup>c</sup> Account of the family of Morris compiled by Valentine Morris in 1790, the original MSS. is in the possession of Harry M. Morris of New York. Among the unprovided brethren of St. David's College, Pembroke-shire, in 1553, was Lewis Morris, one of the ministers who received a pension of £6 13. —Hist. of St. David's Cathedral, by Broun Willy. The arms of Rhys—ap—Tewdwr Mawr, (Prince of Wales in 1077,) were gu. or lion, rampant within a bordure, indented, or.

maining in Monmouthshire, consisted of three brothers—Lewis, William and Richard,<sup>a</sup> sons of Col. Lewis Morris.

Lewis, the eldest son, who inherited the paternal estate of Tintern,<sup>b</sup> embarked for the West Indies as early as 1633, (according to the English State papers,) in the service of the New Providence Company. He also commanded a troop of horse in the Parliament army against Charles First for which the king afterwards confiscated his estates in Monmouthshire. In return for his losses Oliver Cromwell subsequently indemnified him. At the attack upon Chepstow Castle, which was defended by Sir Nicholas Kemys, "the king's general," Lewis Morris was the second in command. After an obstinate resistance the garrison was reduced by cutting off the supply of water which ran through the estate of Peircefield<sup>c</sup> then owned by Col. Morris's son-in-law, John Walters, and setting fire to the castle. From this circumstance the family assumed as their crest a castle in flames with the following motto: "*tandem vincitur*," at length he is conquered.

It is a little curious that in the memoirs of Edmund Ludlow, Esq., an incident of the same character, and relating to a Morris, is said to have taken place at Pomfret Castle:—

"This place was seized by some of the king's party, and was besieged by the country, assisted by some of the army, Sir Hugh Cholmely commanding at the siege; but the army, finding little progress made therein, ordered Col. Rainesboro with more forces thither, appointing him to command in the room of Sir Hugh Cholmely. Whilst he was preparing for that service, being at Doncaster, ten or twelve miles from Pomfret, with a considerable force in the town, a party of horse dismounting at his quarters and going up as friends to his chamber, under pretence of having business with him, seized him first, and upon his refusal to go silently with them, murdered him. After his death, another commander being appointed to carry on the siege, those in the castle were reduced to such extremities that some of the most desperate of them resolved, together with the governor, one Morris, who had been a page to the Earl of Stafford, to endeavor the breaking through our forces on horseback, which they attempted; and, though most of them were beaten back to the castle by the besiegers, yet this Morris made his way through, but was afterwards taken as he passed through the country, in the disguise of a beggar, and carried to York, where he was arraigned before Justice Thorpe, and, being found guilty of treason, was executed for the same."<sup>d</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Acc. of the family of Morris by Valentine Morris, 1790.

<sup>b</sup> This property now belongs to John Curte, Esq., who obtained it by a marriage with a Fielding, which family got it from the Dukes of Beaufort, descendants of the Marquis of Worcester, to whom Charles First gave it, having taken it from old Lewis Morris under forfeiture.

<sup>c</sup> Piercefield, two miles west of Chepstow, was long the property of the Walters family till the year 1739 when it was sold to Colonel Morris, father of Valentine Morris, Esq., who afterwards possessed it and to whose taste and liberality it is indebted for its chief artificial beauties and its long established celebrity.—"Beauties of England and Wales," by Rev. J. Evans and J. Briton, vol. ii., p. 134.

<sup>d</sup> Edmund Ludlow, Esq. London, printed for A. Millar (page 79) and D. Brown, both in Strand, and J. Ward in Cornhill, MDCCCI.



Timbs in his account of Ponteptraet (Pomfret) castle, says: "In this castle, Colonel Morris struck the first silver coin of Charles II., who was proclaimed here directly after the death of his father."<sup>a</sup>

While resident in the West Indies he purchased a lovely estate on the Island of Barbadoes and was member of the Council of that island. In 1654, an expedition having been fitted out against the Spanish possessions in those parts, a commission of colonel was sent to him by the Protector Cromwell; but when the fleet arrived at Barbadoes in 1656, "he prized himself at so high a rate" that he demanded a present of 100,000 weight of sugar to pay his debts, before he would consent to accompany the fleet. He finally, however, consented and was present at the reduction of Jamaica; after which he returned to Barbadoes, and is said to have been interested in the purchase of St. Lucia in 1663. He now openly professed the principles of the Quakers, and as one of their prominent members entertained the celebrated George Fox, at his seat near Bridgetown, when he visited Barbadoes in 1671, and signed the addresses to the Governor and Legislature complaining of the persecution to which the Friends were subjected. Mr. Morris, himself, having been mulcted in fines to the amount of 16,193 pounds of sugar for refusing to pay church dues and minister's money, and to furnish men and horses for the militia. On receiving intelligence of the death of his brother, Richard, he came to this country whilst it was in possession of the Dutch in the year 1673—and not after the peace of 1674 as erroneously stated by Dunlap and others. After visiting Barbadoes, for the purpose of winding up his affairs, he returned to New York in 1675 and settled here."<sup>b</sup>

William Morris, the second brother, who had for his portion an estate called Denham held jointly with one Blethioyn, considered at that time to be worth between four and five thousand pound sterling a year, also joined the Parliamentary service, and took an active part against the king, when, (through his favorite, the Marquis of Worcester,) he attempted to enclose Wendswood Chase, Monmouthshire. Upon the defeat of the popular party, William determined upon a sea-voyage till the storm should have blown over.<sup>c</sup> He was subsequently lost at sea. His son, John, received a captain's commission from the Parliament in 1651. Like his father, he also perished at sea off Deal Castle in 1688; his body was found under the walls of the Castle, and buried with military honors. His descendants are still numerous in the Island of Barbadoes.

<sup>a</sup> Timb's Abbeys, Castles and Ancient Halls of England and Wales.

<sup>b</sup> Doc. Col. Hist. of N. Y., Holland Doc. vol. ii. p. 619.—Editors notes.

<sup>c</sup> *Lippincott's Magazine*, January, 1868, pp. 33-34. "In the parish register of Barbadoes Parish, St. Michael's, 1678, Nov. 1st, John, ye son of William and Dorcas Morris.—History of Emigrants to America, 1700 to 1800, by Bouton, N. Y., p. 430.

The following was communicated by William Penn to Samuel Carpenter and three other friends assembled at the old slate-roofed house in Philadelphia, February, 1700:—

“Let me interrupt thee a moment, Samuel,” said Penn. “Thou wilt remember that Lewis Morris, the elder, served under my father the Admiral in the West Indies; he was somewhat blamed in the Hispaniola affair, but his conduct at the taking of Jamaica in 1655, was much applauded. His association with my father led to an intimacy with myself, although he was many years older, and had its influence in inducing him to become a Friend. We corresponded at intervals till the day of his death, when it appeared he had bequeathed to me, by will, a negro man named Yaff, provided I should come to dwell in America. As I am now fairly established here, I may readily obtain the servant by mentioning the affair to my young friend, Lewis Morris; although a concern hath laid upon my mind for some time regarding the negroes, and I almost determined to give my own blacks their freedom. For I feel that the poor captured Africans, like other human beings, have natural rights, which cannot be withheld from them without great injustice, &c.”<sup>a</sup>

Richard Morris, the youngest of the three brothers, held a captain's commission in his brother Lewis's regiment. Upon the Restoration he retired to the Island of Barbadoes, where he married a lady of fortune, named Sarah Pole.

In the Parish Registers of Barbadoes, among a list of owners of land, hired servants, and apprentices, together with bought servants and negroes, occurs the name of “Richard Morris, the owner of thirty-five acres of land, one hired servant, one bought servant and twelve negroes.”<sup>b</sup>

In a list of the Masters' and Mistresses' names, with what land, and servants and negroes they have, and also what christenings and burials, we find Mr. Richard Morris, owning a hundred and fifty acres of land, one man-servant, thirty-five negroes, and one man buried.<sup>c</sup>

Richard Morris was the first proprietor of Morrisania, in 1670; and both he and his wife Sarah, died in the Fall of 1672.<sup>d</sup> Their remains were at first interred under the old Fort James on the Battery, but were subsequently removed to Trinity church-yard, by Richard Morris, father of the late Robert Morris, of Fordham. The following letter, addressed

<sup>a</sup> *Lippincott's Magazine*, January, 1868, p. 34.

<sup>b</sup> List of emigrants to America 1700 to 1800, by Boynton of New York, page 467. In the same work occurs the following entries: “Twenty Maj. 1635, transported to Virginia, imbarqued in the speedwell, of London, Jo; Chappell, Mr., being examined by the minister of Gravesend, of infirmity, to the orders and discipline of the Church of England, and have taken the oath of Allegiance. RICHARD MORRIS, 19, &c.”

<sup>c</sup> Page 82. “A list of the names of the dead in Virginia near Aprill, last February, 1623. at ye plantacon auer against James Cittie. RICHARD MORRIS, dead,” page 192.

<sup>d</sup> Ditto, page 469.

<sup>e</sup> Lewis Morris tells us in the preamble to his will, that his mother died when he was about six months old, and his father not long after.

by the Secretary of the Colony of New York, to "Col. Morris, announces the death of Richard Morris and Sarah his wife:—

# COLONEL LEWIS MORRIS AT THE ISLAND OF BARBADOES.

NEW YORK, 29TH OCTOBER, 1672.

WORTHY SIR:—Since my reception of yours by William Shackerly, no opportunity of conveyance to you hath presented from hence till this present. Although by the way of Boston, I suppose you would sooner receive the sad tidings of your brother's decease—in whom as you have lost an only brother, so have I a dear friend; I shall not insist upon many particulars relating thereto; our general letters arriving to you herewith I hope sufficiently inform you; yet I cannot but reflect upon the transitory condition of poor mortals, when I frequently call to mind in how little time God hath been pleased to break a family, in taking away the heads thereof; first, a virtuous young woman in the prime of life, and then a man full of strength and vigor, inured to hardships, of whom there is remaining but one poor blossom, of whom yet there may be great hope with your kind friendship; for it is a lovely, healthy child, and was well at Harlem, where it is at nurse, and I went to see it yesterday. I was also at the plantation on the other side, when there was some public correction of two or three negroes, and breaking the necks of a mutiny among the white men by Mr. Gibbs, and through his vigilance it is now in good order. The crime of the negroes is reported to be so natural to them, which was both stealing and receiving stolen goods.

Wortay sir, Your most dutiful Humble servant,

The Governor presents you his  
kind respects and service.

MATTHIAS NICOLL.

"Letters of administration of the estate of Captain Richard Morris, brother of Colonel Lewis Morris, were granted to Mr. Matthew Nicolls, Mayor; Captain Thomas De Lavall, Mr. Cornelius Steenwyck, Captain John Berry, and Mr. Thomas Gibbs, trustees, in 1672."<sup>a</sup>

1ST OF SEPTEMBER, 1673.—"The Worship<sup>11</sup> Orphan Masters of this city of New Orange are requested and authorized to summon before them the Curators of the estate left by dec<sup>d</sup> Richard Morris and Walter Webley, and to require of them administration of that estate, and as soon as possible to make a report thereof."<sup>b</sup>

29TH SEPTEMBER, 1673.—"On the request made on behalf of Colonel Lewis Morris, pass and repass is granted him to come into this government, on condition that he attempt nothing to its prejudice during his sojourn."<sup>c</sup>

The following order was issued to Lewis Morris in 1673:—

"The Governor having read and considered the petition of Lewis Morris requesting in substance the guardianship of the minor child of his deceased brother

<sup>a</sup> Surrogates Office, N. Y. Wills and administration, 1665 to 1683, No. 1, p. 173,

<sup>b</sup> Doc. Col. Hist. N. Y. Holland Doc. 1657-1678, vol. II, p. 95.

<sup>c</sup> Doc. Col. Hist. N. Y., Holland Doc. 1657-1678, vol. II, p. 619.

Richard Morris, and of his estate, without any exception, to be managed and administered for the behoof of said orphan child, further to enjoy the same privileges as are granted and allowed to the neighboring colonies of New England and Virginia, &c.

It is ordered:

“The petitioner is allowed to have the guardianship of the surviving orphan child of his deceased brother, the late Richard Morris; and granted such power to take into his keeping all goods, effects, negroes and servants, as belonged, in lawful property to the said Richard Morris at his decease, on condition that he pay therefrom the deceased's funeral expenses. But he shall, first of all, deliver in here a correct inventory of the property left by the deceased, to be recorded in the Orphan Chamber; which being done, the necessary letters of administration shall then be issued to him. With regard to the petitioner's request to impart into this government, some necessities for advantages and maintenance of said orphan and estate, the petition is allowed; provided it be done with such ships as are already here or will be permitted, and on paying such customs and public duties as are paid by other inhabitants. Regarding the request that he may have such privileges as are granted in New England and Virginia, by the proclamation dated last, the petition is refused and denied; being an inhabitant of Barbadoes, which consequently cannot be considered with the neighboring colonies of New England and Virginia. Moreover, the petitioner shall be at liberty to show where any property belonging to the plantation is lying, and then order will be given for its restitution to the right owner. And finally the petitioner is allowed to employ such substitutes and servants as in case of his living or dying, shall from time to time, with advice of the Orphan Chamber here, be deemed necessary for the greatest advantage of the orphan; on condition that the petitioner and his agents shall remain bound at all times to afford said Orphan Chambers due account, proof and balance of their administration.

Dated Fort William Hendrick, this 11th October, 1673.<sup>a</sup>

On the petition of Lewis Morris, that he may have a grant of the plantation of his late brother Richard Morris, for the benefit of his orphan child, with the cattle and other dependencies thereof, together with the guardianship of said child, &c., this is ordered:—

That the petitioner be allowed the requested Bouwery, buildings and materials thereon, for the benefit of the Minor Orphan Child on a valuation made by impartial arbitrators; in like manner the petitioner shall be at liberty to appropriate without any order, all the chattels which he can attach that have been removed from the Bouwery, on condition that they may be brought to the Bouwery and inventory delivered in; and whereas, since the surrender of the place, divers articles have been removed hence by Walter Webby, it is herewith ordered that said goods be returned to the plantation for the benefit of the child, when the petitioner shall be granted letters of guardianship; the government will appropriate on account, the fat cattle—such as oxen, cows and hogs—on condition of being responsible for the payment of the orphan's share.

Dated Fort Willem Hendrick, this 17th October, 1673.<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Doc. Col. Hist. of N. Y., Holland Doc. 1657, 1678, vol. ii, p. 631-2.

<sup>b</sup> Doc. Col. Hist. N. Y., Holland Doc. 1657, 1678, vol. ii, p. 627.



Fourteen days afterwards we find the following order issued:—

“Whereas it has been found that the two-third parts of the estate left by the late Richard Morris belong in real propriety to his brother, Colonel Lewis Morris, a resident of the Island of Barbadoes in the Caribbees, whose estate, by the Proclamation dated the 20th of September last, is confiscated for the behoof of the government; and it being therefore necessary that in addition to the guardians and tutors of the aforementioned Richard Morris's surviving orphan child, someone be commissioned on the part of the government to regulate said estate. Therefore have I resolved to commission and qualify Balthazar Bayard to that end, as he is hereby commissioned and qualified to assume the said estate for the two-third parts thereof which belong to the government, with said guardians by name, Messrs. John Lawrence, Stephanus van Cortlandt and Walter Webly, for the one-third part thereof inherited by them; to adjust and settle the debts and credits; to sell the remaining personal property, and thereof to deliver into the Secretary's office pertinent account and balance when order shall be issued what further disposition shall be made therein.

Dated, FORT WILLEM HENDRICK, 1st of Nov., 1673.”<sup>a</sup>

Lewis Morris addressed the following to the Governor-General some time during the same month:—

TO THE HONORABLE ANTHONY COLOE, GOVERNOR-GENERAL OF  
NEW NETHERLAND.

RIGHT HON<sup>BLE</sup> SIR:—“Whereas departing on your pass from New Orange to Oyster Bay, and so to New Haven, I have recovered there some of the missing estate belonging to my nephew's plantation within your jurisdiction; I therefore humbly request you to be pleased to grant me a pass to enable me to bring said property which belongs to my nephew who is one of your subjects with the sloop belonging to my cousin's plantation known by the name of Brock's Land, or to New Orange, or to Oyster Bay, or to Sylvester's Island; my affairs being such, your compliance herewith will oblige me to be and remain,

Your Honour's faithful friend, in the name and at the request of

LEWIS MORRIS.

*Ordered:—*The Petitioner is allowed to come hither in person, and to bring all such goods as lawfully belong to the late Richard Morris's orphan child, also said orphan's boat.

This 30th Oct., 1673, by order of the Governor-General of New Netherland.

(Signed,) N. BAYARD, *Secretary*.”<sup>b</sup>

Upon the 28th of February, 1674, Anthony Coloe, the Governor, appointed two new guardians, or commissioners, for the surviving orphan child of Richard Morris, viz., Messrs. Dirck Van Clyff and Walter Webly with Balthazar Bayard, the already appointed commissioner, (in place of

<sup>a</sup> Doc. Col. Hist. N. Y. Holland Doc. 1657-1678, vol. ii. p. 650.

<sup>b</sup> Doc. Col. Hist. N. Y. Holland Doc. 1657-1678, vol. ii. p. 664.

John Lawrence and Stephanus Van Cortlandt, excused,) to aid in regulating in the speediest manner the estate of the above mentioned Richard Morris, and to report the result to the Governor.<sup>a</sup>

In 1676, Lewis Morris, second proprietor of Morrisania, and brother of Richard, obtained the following letters patent :

#### GOVERNOR ANDROS'S PATENT FOR BRONCK'S LAND.

Edmund Andros, Esq., seigneur of Sausmarez, Lieut. Gov<sup>r</sup> Gen<sup>l</sup>, under his royal highness, James, Duke of York, and of all his territories in America, to all to whom these presents shall come, with greeting : Whereas, Col. Lewis Morris of the Island of Barbadoes, hath long enjoyed, and by patent stands possess of a certain plantation and tract of land, lying and being upon the maine, over against the town of Haerlem, commonly called *Bronck's land*, the same containing about five hundred acres, or two hundred and fifty morgen of land, besides the meadow thereunto annexed or adjoining, cotted and bounded as in the original Dutch ground brief and patent of confirmation is set forth ; and the said Col. Morris having made good improvement upon the said land, and there lying lands adjacent to him not included in any patent or grants, which land the said Col. Morris doth desire for further improvement, this said land and addition being bounded from his own house over against Haerlem, running up Haerlem river to Daniel Turner's land, and so along his said land northward to John Archer's line, and from thence stretching east to the land of John Richardson and Thomas Hunt, and thence along the Sound about southwest, through Bronck's kill, to the said Col. Morris his house, the additional land containing (according to the survey thereof) the quantity of fourteen hundred, and the whole, one thousand nine hundred and twenty acres. Now know ye that by virtue of the commission and authority unto me given by his royal highness, I have confirmed, granted and given, and do hereby confirm, give and grant, unto the said Col. Morris, his heirs and assigns, the afore recited land possessed by him, and the additional land herein exprest, and bounded as aforesaid, together with the woods and meadows, both salt and fresh waters and creeks belonging to the said land and premises, in his royal highness's gift, with all and singular the appurtenances to have and to hold these said lands and premises unto the said Col. Lewis Morris, his heirs and assignees, unto the proper use and behoof of him the said Col. Lewis Morris, his heirs and assignees, forever. He continuing in obedience and conforming himself according to the laws of this government, and yielding and paying therefor yearly and every year, as a quit-rent to his royal highness, five bushels of good winter wheat.

Given under my hand and sealed with the seal of the Province of New York, this five and twentieth day of March, in the eighth and twentieth year of his majesty's reign, Anno Domini, 1676.

ANDROSS.

Recorded by order of the governor, the  
day and year above written.

MATTHIAS NICCOLLS, SEC.

<sup>a</sup> Doc. Col. Hist. N. Y. Holland Doc. vol. II. p. 691.

A confirmation from the Indians occurs on the 7th of February, 1684:—

### INDIAN DEED TO LEWIS MORRIS.

“To all to whom this present writing shall come, doth witness, that we Shahash, Panazarah, Wanacapeen, Kneed, Taquamarke and Awarazawis, having formerly sold unto Jonas Broncks, a large tract of land lying and being between ye river commonly called Bronck's river and Harlem kill, and more especially that tract of land that Colonel Morris stands now possess of, as his draught and ground brief bearing date in ye year 1675, excepting forty morgen<sup>a</sup> of land that we sold Daniel Turner ye elder, being bounded on the west side with Harlem river, the aforesaid Colonel Morris his land, being bounded on the north side with the land of John Archer, beginning at Crabb Island, and running east or thereabouts, until it comes to ye corner tree of Richardson and Hunt, and so down to ye southward according to ye marked line until it come to ye bound brook between ye said Colonel Morris and ye said Richardson and Hunt, and from thence along ye creek to ye Sound or East river, until you come to Daniel Turner's land, that's above mentioned, including the purchase of ye said Colonel Morris, that point of land called Nauasin, where formerly lived a Frenchman named Marcus Dossisway, all which parcel or tract of land we do for ourselves, our heirs, executors, administrators and assignees, fully and wholly acquit and discharge for ever, ye said Colonel Morris, his heyres, executors, and administrators, of all and every part and parcel of ye residue of ye money that should have been paid by ye aforesaid *Bronck's* for the purchase of said land, declaring to the world that we acknowledge for ourselves, our heyres, executors, and assignees, to be fully paid, satisfied and contented. In witness whereof we have hereunto sett our hands and affixed our seals this seventh day of February, 1684-5, in presence of us:

SAMUEL EDSALL,  
JOHN BASSETT,  
JOHN MANTON.

Ye mark ✕ TAQUAMARKE.  
Ye mark ○ WANACAPEEN.

Signed and sealed by AWANAWIS,  
SHAHASH, and KNEED.

In presence of us,

JOHN IBENNY,  
EDWARD HARRALL,  
JOHN EDSALL.

Witnessed by LONGE CLASSE,  
a lady WASTOWANCETT,  
Ye marke of ✕ AWANAWIS,  
Ye marke of — SHAHASH,  
Ye marke of ○ KNEED.

On the 25th of October, 1676, Colonel Morris purchased a large tract of land in East Jersey, consisting of 3,540 acres, which he named Tintern and Monmouth, after the paternal estate in Monmouthshire, Wales.

The last will and testament of Colonel Morris bears date 7th of February, 1690. Although twice married, he left no issue; his nephew, therefore, according to the agreement of 1670, succeeded to the estates. Upon the 15th of May, 1691, Henry Sloughter, Captain-General and

<sup>a</sup> A Dutch morgen measured a little less than two acres English.

Governor-in-Chief, "granted letters testamentary to Lewis Morris, nephew to Colonel Morris, the executrix being dead."

#### THE LAST WILL OF LEWIS MORRIS.

Whereas I formerly intended to have made my nephew, Lewis Morris, son of my deceased brother, Richard Morris, my sole executor; his many and great miscarryages and disobedience towards me and my wife, and his causeless absenting himself from my house, and adhering to and advizing with those of bad life and conversation, contrary to my directions and example unto him, and for other reasons best known to myselfe, I doe make and ordaine my dearly beloved wife, Mary Morris, sole executrix of this my last will and testament; and

To the meeting of Friends at Shrewsbury, in Monmouth Co., five pounds current money of New York per annum forever, to be paid out of his plantation at Tinton iron works, to be paid on 25th March yearly.

To Thomas Webley,<sup>a</sup> of Shrewsbury, 250 acres on the westernmost part of his 2,000 acres, lying between Swimming River and Hop River, Monmouth Co.,—he paying quit rent one half penny sterling per acre.

To Lewis Morris, of Shrewsbury, one of his best mares in the woods, and £20 N. York curr'y.

To his nephew, Lewis Morris, son of his brother, Richard Morris, as soon as he attains the age of 21, the rest, residue, and remainder of his e'te; *i. e.* his plantation and iron works at Tinton, with all lands, meadows, houses, barns, mills, runs and ponds, of water, water courses, rivers, woods, trees, orchards, gardens, all his negroes on that plantation, cattel, horse, kinde, swine, and all other creatures; all household goods, utensils, moveables, immo'bles, bills, bonds, patents, books, of ac., debts belong'g to ye place, all profits, priviledges and ap-pur'tees; also one flat handled spoon, one small tankard, one salt cellar, one small sugar box all of silver, one small cabinet sealed up;—wherein is four pearl necklaces, three or four jewels set in gold, and several other things of value; one negro woman named Bess,—which forementioned plate, cabinett, and negro woman, were his brother's—unto which he adds all the children of said woman Bess, except one that is otherwise disposed of; 1 doz. silver spoons, one large tankard, one large tumbler, one small tumbler, and one porringer, all of silver; all which last mentioned things he gives his nephew in lieu of some things that are lost and supposed to be embezzled by Walter Webley; also £20 in silver current at New York, and ten guineys, the whole given with this restriction and limitation, that he shall quietly and peaceably acquiesce and submit himself wholly and absolutely unto every thing mentioned or to be m'd in his will and t't, and shall make no opposition or objection against the same, nor any part thereof, but to his power shall perform and fulfill all things whatsoever that on his part I have hereby enjoyned unto him; otherwise, it is my final determination and result, that if my said nephew, Lewis Morris, his h'rs or as's, on any pretence or right from his father a'd, whether by partnerships with me or purchase, or any way else, shall at any time hereafter, either by himself or any other person or persons claiming from, for, by or under him or them, by any manner of way or means what's'r, make any demand or pretend any right, title or int't to any part

<sup>a</sup> This Thomas Webley was a nephew of Lewis Morris.



or p'l of estate that now doth or may hereafter belong unto me, more than I have by these presents entitled him unto, then, and in such case, I do hereby revoake, nullifie and make void, all and every part of what I have herein before given and beq. unto my said neph'w, L. M. And my will is, that in case of any disturbance by s'd n'w conc'g the premi's or any part or par of e'te, real or p'l, hereby, oth'se beq. and that my s'd dearly bel'd wife Mary M., her h'rs or as, shall thenceforth and then immediately enter into possession, have, occupie and enjoy all and co'n part and parcel of ye beforecited premises, beq'ts and legacys given or to b'g, to my s'd n'w L. M., if he or any, under pretence of him, shall at any time molest my s'd wife, her heirs or assigns, in her or their peac'bl enjoy't of whatsoever est'te, r' or p'l, that is or shall be herein or hereby given and beq'd unto her or them, any thing herein con'd to the contr'ry notw'hst'g, *only giving unto him*; and I doe hereby give and bequeath unto m s'd n L. M. the sum of ten pounds cur't money of N. Y., to be paid unto him by my s'd ex'x, h h's and as's in full of my bequests and legacys unto him in case of any such disturbance or molestation as aforesaid.

*Item.* I give and beq unto my hon'd friend, *William Penn*, my negro man Yaff, provided the said Penn shall come to dwell in America; otherwise the s'd Yaff is to serve my said wife equally with other negroes. *Item.* I give and beq unto William Bickley one negro girl named Maria. *Item.* . . . . to Wm. Richardson one negro boy named Jack. *Item.* . . . . to Sam'l Palmer one n. girl named Buckey. *Item.* I . . . . unto my negro man Toney, the cooper, the sum of 40 shillings a yeare during his life, besides his usual accommodation. *Item.* . . . . unto my negro w'n Nell her freedom and liberty to goe att large wheres'r she shall please after the dec'se of my s'd wife. These two last beq'ts are with this restriction and limitation, that they yield all duty, full submis'n and faithf'l obed'ce in all respect as becom'h dilig't serv'ts tow'ds my wife; otherwise, they are to enjoy no benefit hereby, but their beq'ts to be void, as if never written or ment. *Item.* I g and b unto John Adams, of Flushing, h h and as's, the sum of five pounds, which is due to me on his obligacon. *Item.* Moreover, I g and beq unto my said nep'w, L. M., all my land and m'ws att Mattiniccott, on Long Isl'd, together with all the profits and privil'es adv'g thereof, to him, his heirs and as's for ever, tog'r with one half of all my pewter and the one half of all my house linen for bedding and tabling that is on my plantation over against Harlem, and all my printed books, except such as my said wife shall please to reserve unto herselfe. Note, that these last bequests unto my s'd n'w L. M. are given and beq'd under ye same limitations and rest'ns with those legacys first above mentioned, and not otherwise. *Item.* I give and beq'th unto ye meeting of Friends, in the prov'ce of N. Y., the sum of six pounds per annum, to be paid out of my plant'n ag't Harlem af'd, in the s'd prov'ce, by whom's'er shall enjoy the same, *according* to my devise thereof, as hereafter appears, and on every 25th of the month called March, yearly and ev'y year forever, unto such p'n or per as shall be thereunto ap'd.

*Item.* All the rest, residue and remainder of my estate and my plantation, r'l and p's, where I now inhabitt, over against Harlem af'd, I give and beq'h unto my d'ly belov'd wife, Mary Morris, her heirs and as's forever, the lands thereof, cont'g about 2000 acres best m or l, tog'r with all houses, barns, mills, runns and ponds of water, water courses, rivers, orchards, gardens, trees, woods, negroes of all kinds, cattell, swine, sheep, horse, kinde, and all other creatures and im-

prov'ts whatsoever, as also all goods, household stuff and utensills, moneys, plate, and every thing else moveable and im'ble within doors and w't that can be named or expressed, that now is, or hereafter shall be, in my pos'n or any ways belon'g unto the s'd pl'n, except what is here otherwise disposed of and beq'd. *Item.* I give and beq'h unto my said d'y be'l'd wife all that my houses, land in N. Y. city, situate over against the bridge, unto all appurt'ces, profitts and advant'ges whatsoever thereunto belong's, with all deeds, pattents, writings, bills, bonds, oblg'ions, and all things else what's'r, named and unnamed, belonging: *Item.* . . . . to John Bowne, of Flushing, one negro girl n'd Abba; is att old Thomas Hunts. *Item.* . . . . to Miles Foster, one serv'ble negro boy, such as my s'd d'y be'l'd wife shall appoint. *Item.* . . . . to Ric'd Jones, M't, of N. Y., one negro boy or one negro girl, such as m b d wif shall appoint. *Item.* . . . . to William Bickley and to my n'w, L. M., all my right, t and int., in and to the ship Friends' Adventure, as also all of my part of her profits and ad'ges by freight or otherwise, to each of th eq'l alike part. *Item.* . . . . my s'd n'w, my gold seale and my negro man Yeabba; and whereas, I have beq'd unto m s'd n'w, L. M., all m E at the ironworks at T., with this expression, viz: (as soon as H s'l attaine to the age of 21 yeare), 49 as above written, I doe now revoke ye s'd expression as to time, giving unto him, my s'd n'w, full power and auth'y to enter into and possess the s'd e'te, and ev'y part and p'l thereof, imm'y after my decease, anything before above w'n to the contrary not'g, but under the same restrictions and limitations as before men'd, viz: by his conformity to the fulfilling of this my last will and testament; all the rest of my plate and money, silver and gold, I give and beq'h unto my dearly beloved wife. Lastly, I desire, author' and app't my trusty friends, Ric'd Jones and Miles Foster, of N. Y., John Bowne, of Flushing, Wm. Richardson, of W C'r, Richard Hartshorne, and John Hanes, of co of Monmouth, and Wm. Bickley of W'r co aforesaid, to be my executors in trust, and overseers to see this my will punctually perfd and fulfil'd; and in reg'd to the remoteness of their abodes from one another, I do order and appoint that any three of them may act as they shall find needfull, provided Wm. Rich'n. Wm. Bickley, or Rich'd Hartshorne be of that number; and for want of a 3d person in the co Monmouth, R'd Hartshorne and John Hanes may act there as they shall find cause, or may choose a 3d person to act, &c., &.

And now, having thus disposed of that outward estate and substance that it hath pleased God to possess me of, I commit my soul to God, &c.

In testimony whereof, I the s'd Lewis Morris, have hereunto to this my last will and t't subscrib'd, signed and fixed my seal, at my plant'n over against Harlem, in the p'e N. Y., this seventh day of this twelfth month called February, in the year 1690, in presence of Johannis Vermilje, Jan Tibout, Lamueert Zoches, David Lillies, marks of Susannah Roberts—Wm. Bickley.

The above will shows plainly that "Colonel Lewis Morris was by conviction a Quaker, and apparently remained a Friend to the day of his death; for he bequeathes five pounds to the meeting of Friends at Shrewsbury, and likewise gives his negro man, Yaff, to his honored friend William Penn, provided the said Penn shall come to reside in America.

It is probable that Penn eventually received Yaff, and that it is he of whom Penn says, (in his letter to Logan from London, April 1st, 1703,) "*I have resolved after four years faithful service he shall be free.*" Although Janney, in his excellent life of Penn, says there is evidence that Yaff was an African, he (Janney) being unaware of the preceding facts.

## BY THE COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF.

Whereas, Lewis Morris, gent., administrator of the goods, rights and credits of Lewis Morris, deceased, is obliged to make and exhibit a true and perfect inventory of all and singular the goods, rights and credits of the said dece'd, into the Surveyor's office of this province. These are to authorize and impower you, Stephanus V. Cortlandt, Nicholas Bayard, John Pell and William Richardson, to make a true and faithful appraisement of the goods, rights and credits aforesaid, according to the best of your knowledge and discretion; and for so doing, this shall be to you a sufficient warrant. Dated at Fort William Henry, the 23rd of October, 1691.

Richard Ingoldsby to Stephanus Van Cortlandt, Nich Bayard, John Pell and William Richardson, Lewis Morris, inventory. A true inventory of all and singular the goods, chattels and credits of Coll. Lewis Morris, deceased, appraised at the *plantation*, the       day of       1691, by Coll. Stephanus Van Cortlandt, Coll. Nicholas Bayard, John Pell and William Richardson, Esq., by virtue of a warrant to them directed, under the hand of the Commander-in-Chief and seal of the prerogative office, bearing date the       day of October, Anno 1691, and exhibited in the surveyor's office, being the prerogative registry of this province by Lewis Morris, administrator of all the goods, chattels and credits of the said Coll. Lewis Morris, deceased:

*Imprimus, 164.**Shop Goods.*

|  | £  | s. | d  |
|--|----|----|----|
| 36 Armes v. Alry, (vitriol) at 2s 6d,                            | 10 | 14 | 00 |
| 8 pieces and $\frac{1}{2}$ strouds,                              | 44 | 00 | 00 |
| 3 tunn of iron at 14lb. p. tunn,                                 | 42 | 00 | 00 |
| 30 yds. and $\frac{3}{4}$ of black silk prunella,                | 10 | 15 | 00 |
| 39 yds. lutestring,  | 12 | 00 | 00 |
| 3 pieces of 10 yds. bagg, Holland, 33 yds. in each piece, at 8d. | 43 | 12 | 00 |
| 7 pieces white calicoes, at 20s.                                 | 7  | 00 | 00 |
| 200lb. white sugar,  | 7  | 10 | 00 |
| 16 pr. of women's worsted hose, at,                              | 2  | 8  | 00 |
| 16 pd. yarne,  | 0  | 16 | 00 |
| 1 case black hefted knives,                                      | 0  | 6  | 00 |
| 10lb ginger,   | 0  | 2  | 00 |

a Arms, (aams) an old Dutch measure.

## GOLD.

|  |   |   |   |   |   |       |    |    |
|--|---|---|---|---|---|-------|----|----|
| (169) 180 guineys,   | . | . | . | . | . | 243   | 0  | 0  |
| 1 double guiney,   | . | . | . | . | . | 2     | 14 | 0  |
| 32 jacobuss,   | . | . | . | . | . | 34    | 10 | 0  |
| 6½ ditto,  | . | . | . | . | . | 4     | 10 | 0  |
| 4¼ ditto,  | . | . | . | . | . | 1     | 10 | 0  |
| 1 pistolle,  | . | . | . | . | . | 1     | 4  | 0  |
| 2 double doubloons,  | . | . | . | . | . | 9     | 12 | 0  |
| 5 pr small clasps,   | . | . | . | . | . |       |    |    |
| 1 bullet,  | . | . | . | . | . |       |    |    |
| 1 plain piece,   | . | . | . | . | . |       |    |    |
| 1 single tooth-pick,   | . | . | . | . | . |       |    |    |
| 1 double ditto,  | . | . | . | . | . |       |    |    |
| 1 case ditto with small bodkin,  | . | . | . | . | . |       |    |    |
| 2 bodkins,   | . | . | . | . | . |       |    |    |
| 1 mourning ring,   | . | . | . | . | . |       |    |    |
| 1 heart with lock of hair,   | . | . | . | . | . |       |    |    |
| 1 mash bead,   | . | . | . | . | . |       |    |    |
| cont. in all 4 oz. 5 pwts. and 5 grs. at 4 <i>l.</i> 13 <i>s</i> 9 <i>d.</i> per oz. | . | . | . | . | . | 19    | 19 | 0  |
| Debts good and bad,  | . | . | . | . | . | 2194  | 0  | 0  |
| <hr/>  |   |   |   |   |   |       |    |    |
|  |   |   |   |   |   | £3661 | 13 | 10 |
| 112 bottles, four of them with syrup, and other odd things,                          | . | . | . | . | . | 1     | 8  | 0  |

## WHEAT.

|                                   |   |   |   |   |   |    |   |   |
|-----------------------------------|---|---|---|---|---|----|---|---|
| 540 bushells at 3 <i>s.</i>       | . | . | . | . | . | 81 | 0 | 0 |
| 50 acres of wheat at 12 <i>s.</i> | . | . | . | . | . | 30 | 0 | 0 |

## STOCK, VIZ.

|                             |   |   |   |   |   |    |    |   |
|-----------------------------|---|---|---|---|---|----|----|---|
| 24 oxen,                    | . | . | . | . | . | 72 | 0  | 0 |
| 17 cows,                    | . | . | . | . | . | 34 | 0  | 0 |
| 4 bulls,                    | . | . | . | . | . | 8  | 0  | 0 |
| 8 year and vantage,         | . | . | . | . | . | 10 | 0  | 0 |
| 5 yearlings,                | . | . | . | . | . | 3  | 15 | 0 |
| 2 calves,                   | . | . | . | . | . | 0  | 12 | 0 |
| 30 horses, mares and colts, | . | . | . | . | . | 60 | 0  | 0 |
| 30 head of swine,           | . | . | . | . | . | 9  | 0  | 0 |
| 147 sheep,                  | . | . | . | . | . | 35 | 16 | 0 |

## (170) PLANTATION IMPL'TS.

|                                 |   |   |   |   |   |    |   |   |
|---------------------------------|---|---|---|---|---|----|---|---|
| 3 carts and 1 pr timber wheels, | . | . | . | . | . | 20 | 0 | 0 |
| 1 sloop and yall,               | . | . | . | . | . | 74 | 0 | 0 |
| 1 yall and pinnace,             | . | . | . | . | . | 10 | 0 | 0 |
| 12 lb deer suett at 6 <i>d.</i> | . | . | . | . | . | 0  | 6 | 0 |



|   |       |    |    |
|---|-------|----|----|
| Hangings of the lodging rooms, three old cabbinetts for al. tools |       |    |    |
| utensils for the farme and family, apparell not particularized, . | 20    | 0  | 0  |
| 24 galls. refined molasses at 18d. . . . .                        | 1     | 16 | 0  |
|   | <hr/> |    |    |
|   | £4134 | 5  | 10 |
| N. B. Miss addition in folio 4, . . . . .                         | 15    | 4  | 0  |
|   | <hr/> |    |    |
|   | £4149 | 9  | 10 |

## NEGROES.

|                                |       |   |   |
|--------------------------------|-------|---|---|
| 22 man negroes at 20l. . . . . | 440   | 0 | 0 |
| 11 women at 15l. . . . .       | 165   | 0 | 0 |
| 6 boys at 15l. . . . .         | 90    | 0 | 0 |
| 2 garles at 12l. . . . .       | 24    | 0 | 0 |
| 25 children at 5l. . . . .     | 125   | 0 | 0 |
|                                | <hr/> |   |   |
|                                | £844  | 0 | 0 |

3 box irons heaters,

1 little letter box,

Memorandum ; we finde in fol. the particulars by the appraise-

|  |       |    |   |
|--|-------|----|---|
| ment to amount in: the sum of, . . . . . | 195   | 14 | 5 |
| in fol. 2, . . . . .                     | 38    | 0  | 4 |
| in fol. 3, . . . . .                     | 107   | 18 | 3 |
| in fol. 4, . . . . .                     | 135   | 7  | 8 |
| in fol. 5, . . . . .                     | 98    | 12 | 5 |
| in fol. 6, . . . . .                     | 3023  | 11 | 0 |
| in fol. 7, . . . . .                     | 472   | 11 | 0 |
|  | <hr/> |    |   |
|  | £4071 | 16 | 3 |

Besides the negroes in fol. 7, more, . . . . . 844 0 0

Appraised by us underwritten,†

|                                      |       |    |   |                     |
|--------------------------------------|-------|----|---|---------------------|
| More 17 doz. scissors at 3s. . . . . | 2     | 11 | 0 | STEP. V. CORTLANDT, |
| 7 cwt. 1 qr. 9lb. old lead . . . . . |       |    |   | N. BAYARD,          |
| at 30s. per cwt. . . . .             | 11    | 0  | 0 | JOHN PELL,          |
|                                      | <hr/> |    |   | WM. RICHARDSON.     |
|                                      | £13   | 11 | 0 |                     |

S. V. CORTLANDT.

Exhibited the seventeenth day of February, 1691, by Lewis Morris, administrator, &c., for a true and perfect inventory, &c., but under protestation of adding, &c., &c.

L. MORRIS.

Lewis Morris, heir of his uncle, Lewis, was born at Morrisania in 1671, and appears to have been a man of extraordinary talents. Chief Justice William Smith informs us, that of all the members of the New York Assembly in 1710, "*Colonel Morris* had the gaeatest influence on our public affairs. He was a man of letters, and, though a little whim-

sical in his temper, was grave in his manners, and of penetrating parts. Being excessively fond of the society of men of sense and reading, he was never wearied at a sitting till the spirits of the whole company were dissipated. From his infancy he has lived in a manner best adapted to teach him the nature of man, and to fortify his mind for the vicissitudes of life. He very early lost both his father and mother, as we have seen, and fell under the patronage of his uncle. Being a boy of strong passions, the general indications of a fruitful genius, he gave frequent offence to his uncle; and, on one of these occasions, through fear of his resentment, strolled away into *Virginia*, and thence to *Jamaica* in the West Indies, where, to support himself, he set up for a scrivener."<sup>a</sup> "As a proof of his boyish propensities, (says Mr. Dunlap,) we are told that when a pupil to Luke Copperthwait, a Quaker, Lewis, hid himself in a tree by which his teacher was to pass; and in a feigned voice, with great solemnity called upon Luke, (from above, of course,) and ordered him to go and preach the gospel among the Mohawks. Luke considered the bidding miraculous, and prepared to obey; when, either by compunction of the boy, or other means, he was undeceived. After several years passed in the West Indies, the wanderer returned to *Morrisania*, and was received by his uncle with forgiveness and joy. To settle him for life, the uncle brought about a marriage between Lewis and Miss Graham,<sup>b</sup> a fine lady, (continues Mr. Smith,) with whom he lived above fifty years, in the possession of every enjoyment which good sense and polite manners in a woman could afford."<sup>c</sup>

Upon the 8th of May, 1697, Lewis Morris obtained royal letters patent from King William the Third, erecting *Morrisania* into a township and manor, to be holden of the king in free and common soccage; its lord yielding and rendering therefore annually, on the Feast Day of the Annunciation of our blessed Virgin Mary, the rent of six shillings.

#### THE ROYAL CHARTER.

William the Third, by the grace of God, of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, &c., to all to whom these presents shall come, sendeth greeting: Whereas, the Hon'ble Edmund Andross, Esq., Seigneur of Sausmarez, late Governor of province of New York, &c., by a certain deed or patent, sealed with the seal of our said province of New York, bearing date the 25th day of March, in the year of our Lord 1676, pursuant to the commission and authority then in him residing, did confirm unto Col. Lewis Morris, of the Island of Barbadoes, a certain plantation or tract of land laying or being

<sup>a</sup> Smith's History of N. Y.

<sup>b</sup> Dunlap's Hist. N. Y., vol. 1. 275.

<sup>c</sup> Smith's Hist. of N. Y.

upon the maine over against the town of Haerlem, commonly called Bronckse's land, containing 250 morgen or 800 acres of land, besides the meadow thereunto annexed or adjoining, butted and bounded as in the original Dutch ground brief and patent of confirmation is set forth; which said tract of land and meadow, having been by the said Col. Lewis Morris long possessed and enjoyed, and having likewise thereon made good improvement, he, the said Edmond Andross, late governor of our said province, did further, by the said deed or patent, sealed with the seal of our said province, and bearing date as aforesaid, we grant and confirm unto the said Col. Lewis Morris, for his further improvement, a certain quantity of land adjacent unto the said tract of land—which land, with the addition, being bounded from his own house over against Haerlem, running up Haerlem River to Daniel Turner's land, and so along this said land northward to John Archer's line, and from thence stretching east to the land of John Richardson and Thomas Hunt, and thence along their lands southward to the Sound, even so along the Sound about southwest through Bronck's hill to the said Col. Lewis Morris's house—the additional land containing (according to the survey thereof) the quantity of fourteen hundred and twenty acres, to have and to hold the afore-recited tract of land before possessed by him, and the additional land within the limits and bounds aforesaid, together with the woods and meadows, both salt, and fresh, waters and creeks, belonging to the said lands, unto the said Col. Lewis Morris, his heirs and assignees forever, under the yearly rent of four bushels of good winter wheat, as by the said deed or patent, registered in our secretary's office of our said province of New York, &c.,—relation being thereunto had—may more fully and at large appear. And whereas, our loving subject, Lewis Morris, (nephew unto the said Col. Morris, lately deceased, his sole and only heir,) who is now, by right of descent and inheritance, peaceably and quietly seized and possessed of all the aforesaid tracts of land and premises within the limits and bounds aforesaid, hath, by his petition, presented unto our trusty and well beloved Benj. Fletcher, our Captain General and Governor-in-Chief of our said province of New York and territories dependant thereon in America, &c., prayed our grant and confirmation of all the afore-recited tracts and parcels of land and premises within the limits and bounds aforesaid; and likewise that we would be graciously pleased to erect the said tracts and parcels of land, within the limits and bounds aforesaid, into a lordship or manor, by the name or title of the manor or lordship of Morrisania, in the county of Westchester; and whereas, it is publicly manifest that the said Col. Lewis Morris, deceased, in his lifetime, and our said loving subject, his nephew and sole and only heir since his decease, have been at great charge and expense in the purchasing, settling and improving of the said tracts and parcels of land, whereon considerable buildings have likewise been made; and our said loving subject, being willing still to make further improvements thereon—which reasonable request, for his further encouragement, we being willing to grant; and know ye, that we, of our special grace, certain knowledge, and mere motion, we have given, granted, ratified and confirmed, and by these presents do for us, our heirs and successors, give, grant, ratify and confirm unto the said Lewis Morris, his heirs and assignees, all the aforesaid tracts and parcels of land within the limits and bounds aforesaid, containing the quantity of one thousand, nine hundred and twenty acres of land, more or less, together with all and every the messuages, tenements, buildings, houses, out-

houses, barne, barracks, stables, mills, mill dams, mill howles, orchards, gardens, fences, pastures, fields, feedings, woods, underwoods, trees, timber, meadows, (fresh and salt.) marshes, swamps and pools, ponds, waters, water courses, brooks, rivulets, baths, inlets, outlets, islands, necks of land and meadow, peninsulas of land and meadow, ferries, passages, fishing, fowling, hunting, and hawking, quarries, mines, minerals, (silver and gold mines excepted,) and all the rights, liberties, privileges, jurisdictions, royalties, hereditaments, benefits, profits, advantages and appurtenances whatsoever to the afore-recited tracts, parcels and necks of land, and mill, within the limits and bounds aforesaid belonging, adjoining, or in any way appertaining, or accepted, reputed, taken, known or occupied, as part, parcel or member thereof, to have or to hold all the aforesaid recited tracts and parcels of land within the limits and bounds aforesaid, containing the quantity of one thousand nine hundred and twenty acres of land, more or less, together with all and every the messuages, tenements, buildings, houses, out-houses, barns, barracks, stables, mills, mill dams, mill houses, orchards, gardens, fences, pastures, fields, feedings, woods, underwoods, trees, timber, meadows, fresh and salt, marshes, swamps, pools, ponds, waters, water courses, brooks, rivers, rivulets, streams, creeks, coves, harbors, bridges, baths, strands, inlets, outlets, islands, necks of land and meadow, peninsulas, land and meadow, ferries, passages, fishing, fowling, hunting and hawking, quarries, mines and minerals, (silver and gold mines excepted,) and all the rights, liberties, privileges, jurisdictions, royalties, hereditaments, tolls, and benefits, profits, advantages, and appurtenances whatsoever, to the afore-recited tracts, parcels and necks of land and mill within the limits and bounds aforesaid, belonging, adjoining, or in any appertaining or accepted, reputed, taken, known unto him, the said Lewis Morris, his heirs and assignees, to the sole and only proper use benefit and behoof of him the said Lewis Morris, his heirs and assignees forever, and moreover; that if our further special grace, certain knowledge, and mear motion, we have brought it according to the reasonable request of our said loving subject to erect all the afore-recited tracts and parcels of land and premises within the limits and bounds aforesaid into a lordship and manor; and therefore, by these presents, we do, for us, our heirs and successors, erect, make and constitute all the afore-recited tracts and parcels of land within the limits and bounds afore-mentioned, together with all and every the above granted premises, with all and every their appurtenances, unto one lordship or manor, to all intents and purposes, and 'tis our royal will and pleasure, that the said lordship and manor shall from henceforth be called the lordship or manor of Morrisania; and know yee, that we reposing especial trust and confidence in the loyalty, wisdom, justice, prudence, and circumspection of our said loving subjects, do, for us, our heirs and successors, give and grant unto the said Lewis Morris, and to the heirs and assinees of him the said Lewis Morris, full power and authority at all times forever hereafter, in the said lordship or manor, one court-leet, and one court-barron, to hold and keep at such time and times, and so often yearly as he or they shall see meet, and all fines, issues and amerçiements, at the said court-leet and court-barron, to be holden within the said lordship or manor, to be set, forfeited or employed, or payable, or happening at any time to be payable by any of the inhabitants of or in the said lordship or manor of Morrisania, or the limits and bounds whereof, and also all and every of the power and authority therein-before mentioned, for the



holding and keeping the said court-leet and court-barron from time to time, and to award and issue out the said accustomed writs, to be issued and awarded out of the said court-leet and court-barron, to be kept by the heirs and assignees of the said Lewis Morris, forever, or their or any of their stewards deputed and appointed with full and ample power and authority to distraine for the rents, services, and other sums of money, payable by virtue of the premises and all other lawful remedies and means, for the having, possessing, recovering, levying and enjoying the premises, and every part and parcel of the same, and all waifes, estrages, meeks, deododans, goods or felons, happening and being forfeited within the said lordship or manor of Morrisania, and all and every sum and sums of money to be paid as a post fine, upon any fine or fines to be levyed, of any bounds, tenements or hereditaments within the said lordship or manor of Morrisania, together with the advowson and right of patronage, and all and every the church and churches erected or established, or thereafter to be erected or established within the said manor of Morrisania, and we do also give and grant unto the said Lewis Morris, his heirs and assignees, that all and each of the tenants of him the said Lewis Morris, within the said manor, may at all times hereafter, meet together and choose assessrs, within the manor aforesaid, according to such rules, ways and methods, as are prescribed for cities, towns and counties within our province aforesaid, by the acts of General Assembly, for the defraying the public charge of each respective city, town and county aforesaid; and all such sums of money assessed or levied, to dispose of and collect for such uses as the acts of the General Assembly shall establish and appoint, to have and to hold, possess and enjoy, all and singular the said lordship or manor of Morrisania and premises, with all their and every of their appurtenances, unto the said Lewis Morris, his heirs and assignees forever, to be holden of us, our heirs and successors, in free and common soccage, according to the tenure of our manor of East Greenwich, in our County of Kent, within our realm of England, yielding, rendering and paying therefor, yearly and every year, on the feast day of the Annunciation of our Blessed Virgin, unto us, our heirs and successors, at our city of New York, the annual rent of six shillings, in lieu and stead of all former rents, dues, services and demands whatsoever, for the said lordship and manor of Morrisania, and premises; *in testimony* whereof, we have caused the great seal of the said province to be affixed. Witnesse our trusty and well beloved Benjamin Fletcher, our capt. gen. and gov. in-chief of our province of New York, and the territories and tracts of land depending thereon, in America, and vice-admiral of the same, our lieutenant commander-in-chief of the militia and of all the forces by sea and land within our colony of Connecticut, and of all the forts and places of strength within the same, in council at our fort in New York, the 8th day of May, in the ninth year of our reign, Anno Domini, 1697.<sup>a</sup>

By command of his excellency,

BEN. FLETCHER.

DAVID JAMESON, *Sec'y.*

The greatest part of the life of Lewis Morris, before the arrival of

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Book of Pat. No. vii. 64 and 70.

Governor Hunter, was spent in New Jersey,<sup>a</sup> where he signalized himself in the service, both of the Proprietors and the Assembly. The latter employed him to draw up their complaint against my Lord Cornbury, and he was made the bearer of it to the Queen. "In 1732," says Dunlap), "a question was raised, whether Van Dam (who administered the government until the arrival of Cosby) should receive the whole salary allowed to a governor, and the opinion of the Assembly was asked; but they declined giving an opinion, leaving it to the council, who consented that the warrants should be drawn for the whole. Cosby on his arrival and friendly reception by the Assembly, waited until their adjournment, and then produced the King's instructions to take to himself one-half the salary and emoluments, during Van Dam's administration, leaving him one-half. Van Dam agrees, provided Cosby accounts for



*Lewis Morris*

Autograph and arms of Lewis Morris.

certain monies received by him, and shares with Van Dam such monies. Cosby refuses, and erects a court of exchequer to compel Van Dam to comply with his terms. Suits commence on their part, but Cosby appoints the judges. Van Dam denies the legality of the proceedings. *Chief Justice*

<sup>a</sup> "He was one of the Council in that Province, and a Judge of the Supreme Court there in 1692. Upon the surrender of the government to Queen Anne, in 1702, he was named to be governor of the colony; but the appointment was changed in favor of Lord Cornbury, the Queen's cousin." "Within the limits of shrewsbury, (says Mr. Whitehead), Col. Lewis Morris had extensive iron works, employing sixty or seventy negroes, in addition to white servants and dependants." "The land (3540 acres) was granted to him Oct. 25, 1676. Full liberty was given to him and his associates, 'to dig, delve, and carry away all such mines for iron, as they shall find or see fit to dig and carry away to the iron works, or that shall be found in that tract of land that lies inclosed between the southeast branch of the Raritan river and the whale pond on the sea-side, and is bounded from thence by the sea and branch of the river to the eastward, to the Raritan river, he or they paying all such just damages to the owners of the land where they shall dig mines as shall be judged is done by trespass of cattle or otherwise sustained by the carting and carrying of the said mine to the work.'"—*E. J. Records, B* page 155.

*Morris* declines to obey the Governor's orders in the case, as illegal: and is by him suspended, after serving twenty years unimpeachably. James de Lancey was appointed in his place."<sup>a</sup> The following particulars in relation to this affair, are taken from the *Carribeana*, a literary periodical purporting to be "written by several hands in the West Indies." The reader will see, that the Chief Justice performed his part with great boldness and independence:—

"SIR:—You will perceive, by the enclosed copy of a letter, that the Original was addressed to the present Governor of New York, on occasion of a new dispute that arose between his Excellency and the Chief Judge of the province concerning the establishment of a new Court of Equity. The Judge's argument upon the question is very long, and, for aught I know, very learned. I shall not take it upon me to say whether his opinion is right or not; but certainly he was right in giving his opinion upon a matter of law that came in judgment before him. The governor, however, was offended at what was spoken, and demanded a copy, which the judge sent him, *in print*, with the letter now mentioned.

I confess I had some curiosity to know the particular character of this extraordinary personage, who would seem to act and speak like an inhabitant of some other world. They tell me he is nothing but a man, and a plain man too; exactly like one of us—eats beef and mutton, drinks Madeira wine, and sometimes rum punch, as we do. His education was narrow, nor does he pretend to inspiration or any supernatural aid. His knowledge is derived merely from reading and observation, and his fortitude grounded on the Christian religion and the laws of his country, which he fancies are commonly on the side of honesty, and a good conscience.

I would not be thought to propose this northern magistrate to the imitation of his brethren between the tropics. I hope and believe they will never meet with such trials; and, if they should, I am persuaded they will be more polite than to copy after so coarse a pattern. I only meant to help out your next paper with a strange and wonderful occurrence, which may perhaps amuse your gentle readers as effectually as the accounts they have sometimes of *hard frosts and huge whales*, though they never see such things in these parts.

I am yours, &c.,

INDUS.

To his Excellency, William Cosby, Esq., Captain-General and Governor-in-Chief of the Province of New York, New Jerseys and territories thereon depending in America, Vice Admiral of the same, and Colonel in his Majesty's army, &c.

May it please your Excellency:—

In obedience to your commands by F. M., Esq., deputy secretary, to send you a copy of what I read in the Supreme Court concerning its having a jurisdiction to determine causes in a Court of Equity, and a second message from him to give it under my hand; I send you not only what I read, but what I said on that head, as far as I can charge my memory. What was said, was spoken before a numerous auditory, among which were the grand jury for the City and County

<sup>a</sup> Dunlap's Hist. N. Y., vol. i, 295.



of New York, and several other persons of distinction. I chose<sup>a</sup> this public method to prevent, as much as I could, any misapprehension; and what I said is as follows, viz:—

[Here follows the judge's argument against erecting a Court of Equity, and then he concludes with the remainder of his letter in these words, viz:]

This, sir, is a copy of the paper I read in the Court, and the substance of what I said besides on that head, as far as I can shape my memory. I have no reason to expect that either this, or anything else I can say, will be at all grateful, or have any weight with your Excellency, after the answer I received to a message I did myself the honor to send you concerning an ordinance you were about to make for establishing a Court of Equity in the Supreme Court; as being, in my opinion, contrary to law, and which I desired might be delayed till I could be heard on that head. I thought myself within the duty of my office, in sending this message; and hope I do not flatter myself in thinking I shall be justified in it by your superiors, as well as mine. The answer your Excellency was pleased to send by Mr. J. W. was, *that I need not give myself any trouble about that affair; that you would neither receive a visit or any message from me; that you could neither rely upon my integrity nor depend upon my judgment; that you thought me a person not at all fit to be trusted with any concerns relating to the King; that ever since your coming to the government, I had treated you—both as to your own person and as the King's representative—with slight, rudeness and impertinence; that you did not desire to see or hear any further of, or from me.* I am heartily sorry, sir, for your own sake, as well as that of the public, that the King's representative should be moved to so great a degree of warmth, as appears by this answer, which I think would proceed from no other reason but by giving my opinion, in a Court of which I was a Judge, upon a point of law that came before me, and in which I might be innocently enough mistaken; (though I think I am not); for judges are no more infallible, than their superiors are impeccable. But if judges are to be intimidated so as not to dare to give any opinion but what is pleasing to a governor, and agreeable to his private views, the people of this province—who are very much concerned both with respect to their lives and fortunes in the freedom and independency of those who are to judge them—may possibly not think themselves so secure in either of them, as the laws and his Majesty intend they should be.

I never had the honor to be above six times in your company in my life; one of those times was when I delivered the public seals of the province of New Jersey to you on your coming to that government; another, on one of the public days, to drink the King's health; a third, at your desire, to wait on my Lord Augustus Fitz Roy, with the body of the laws, to tell him we were glad to see him at New York; and except the first time, I never was above a quarter of an hour together in your company at any one time; and all the words I ever spoke to you, except at the first time, may be contained on a quarto side of paper. I might possibly have been impertinent, for old men are too often so; but as to treating you with rudeness and disrespect, either in your public or private capacity, it is what I cannot accuse myself of doing or intending to do, at any one of the times

<sup>a</sup> Printing his argument and letter.



I was with you. If a bow, awkwardly made, or anything of that kind, or some defect in the ceremonial of addressing you, has occasioned that remark, I beg it may be attributed to the want of a courtly and polite education, or to anything else, rather than the want of respect to his majesty's representative. As to my integrity, I have given you no occasion to call it in question. I have been in this office, almost twenty years. My hands were never soiled with a bribe; nor am I conscious to myself, that power or poverty hath been able to induce me to be partial in the favor of either of them; and as I have no reason to expect any favor from you, so I am neither afraid nor ashamed to stand the test of the strictest inquiry you can make concerning my conduct. I have served the public faithfully and honestly, according to the best of my knowledge; and, I dare, and do, appeal to it for my justification. I am, sir,

Your Excellency's Most humble servant,

LEWIS MORRIS.

And the Honorable Lewis Morris not only "resisted the tyranny of the English Governor Cosby; but he dared manfully to stand by Zenger in defending the liberty of the press; and became also the champion of the people against De Lancey, Philipse, and other supporters of royal prerogative; a mutual antagonism, which in their descendants ran even into the American Revolution."<sup>b</sup> In 1773, Lewis Morris was elected a representative for the County of Westchester, in opposition to the aristocratic candidate; and in 1738, appointed first Governor of New Jersey as a separate province from New York. He was chosen a member of the venerable propagation Society in 1700, and took a very active part in promoting its interest. As early as September 14th, 1700, at a meeting of that body, held in London, a memorial was received from him, in which he speaks of the several townships of East Jersey, "as distracted by almost every variety of dissent, but with little appearance of real religion among them." He also suggests some measures which may conduce to the bringing over to the Church the people in those countries:—

"*First.* That no man be sent a Governor in to any of these Plantations, but a firm Churchman, &c. If possible, none but Churchmen to be in his council and in the magistracy."

"*Secondly.* That Churchmen may have some peculiar privileges above others. This (if practicable) must be done by Act of Parliament."

"*Thirdly.* That there may be some measures fallen upon, to get ministers to preach gratis in America, for some time, 'til there be sufficient numbers of converts to bear the charge; and I presume that may be accomplished this way: let the King, the Archbishop, the Bishops

<sup>a</sup> See Lewis Morris's Letters to the Lords of Trade in 1733, N. Y., Col. MSS. London Doc. xxiv. pp. 951-955.

<sup>b</sup> N. Y. in the Olden Time, by Y. Barnitz Bacon, *Sunday Times*.

and great men, admit no man for so many years to any great benefice, but such as shall oblige themselves to preach three years gratis in America; with part of the living let him maintain a curate, and the other part let him apply to his own use. By this means we shall have the greatest and best men; and in all human probability, such men must in a short time, have made a wonderful progress in the conversion of these countries, especially when it is perceived the good of souls is the only motive to this undertaking.' <sup>a</sup>

About the same time he informs the Society that:—

“The want of a Bishop, and exorbitant power of the several Governors of the Plantations are great hindrances to the propagation of the Gospel.”

The following extract is taken from his next communication to the Secretary:—

“I have used some endeavors to persuade the Dutch in my neighborhood, into a good opinion of the Church of England; and have had that success, that they would, I believe, join, a great part of them, in the sacraments and worship, had they Dutch common prayer-books, and a minister that understood their language. I have taken some pains with one of their ministers, one Mr. Henricus Beyse, and have prevailed on him to accept of Episcopal ordination. I think him a man of the best learning we have in this part of the world, and I believe he may be ranked among the men of letters in the other, but I must acquaint you that he has had some falling out with his parishoners——For my part I do believe he is most falsely accused, I have observed his life, and have found nothing in it irregular or unbecoming his character. The Dutch of best figure have a value for him, and allow him to be the greatest master of the Dutch tongue they have among them; and those in my neighborhood esteem him very much. If the Society think fit to employ him, I shall add to what they give, £15 per annum, for three years; and I believe he will do great service, and I doubt not you will find him worth your acquaintance and favor. If the Society would send about fifty Dutch common prayer books, I believe they would sell; and the money might be returned or paid to their missionaries, as they thought proper. This would be doing a great good, at a cheap rate. This, sir, is what offers at present from

Sir, Your affectionate, humble servant,

LEWIS MORRIS.<sup>b</sup>

Colonel Morris was at this time one of the most influential freeholders in the parish of Westchester, and a liberal benefactor to its church. The small bell that formerly hung in the turret of the old parish church of St. Peters at Westchester was the gift of his bounty in 1706, and bore this inscription:—

“LEWIS MORRIS, 1677.”

<sup>a</sup> New York, MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. i. p. 106. (Hawks.)

<sup>b</sup> New York MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. i. pp. 159, 160. (Hawks.)

His manor embraced a large portion of the parish, and contributed annually a small rate for the support of the rector and poor. The following extracts are taken from the vestry book of St. Peter's:—

“At a meeting held by ye Justices, Vestrymen and Church-wardens on ye 17th of January, 1708-9, it was ordered, yt the two church-wardens for this ensuing year shall go to Mr. Morris to know if yt he will pay his arrearedges, or otherways to know if yt he will joyne issue with ye parish to try ye title whether his manor be in ye parish or not, and make return at ye next meeting.”

At a meeting of the same body held the 24th day of January, A.D. 1709-10, &c.:—

“It being discovered amongst ye vestrymen, &c., yt some time since Mr. Lewis Morris, a principal free holder of this parish made some motion and overtures of erecting or building at his own proper charge a convenient seat, place or pew, in some suitable part of ye church in this town, for ye accommodation of himself and family; which generous offer was by some (tho' a diminutive number) of the vestry rejected; yet notwithstanding did conclude them all by a tame acquiescency to ye bare negative voices of but two of them, who not well weighing ye consequences, nor seriously considering ye rationality of the offer, did refuse giving ye liberty to that worthy gentleman; which ye vestry now met, having took into consideration, and seriously reflecting upon ye miscarriage of ye vestry in yt particular, (which, indeed, did look a little better than black ingratitude,) have unanimously (*nemine contradicente*) agreed and concluded: That ye said Mr. Lewis Morris may, if he sees cause at his own proper cost and charge, build, erect, make or set up any convenient pew, seat, &c., capacious enough for ye accommodation of his worthy self and family, within any convenient place (as unto him shall seem best) of ye body of said church.”

Among the early benefactors to Trinity church, New York, occurs the name of Lewis Morris, who contributed the timber for its erection. In return for this act of munificence, the vestry of that church granted the family a square pew. He was also a vestryman from 1697 to 1700. He died at his seat at Kingsbury, near Trenton, on Wednesday the 21st of May, 1746, aged seventy-three.

In his will, (proved January 12th, 1746,) he directs his body to be buried at Morrisania, in a plain coffin, without covering or lining with cloth; he prohibited rings and scarfs from being giving at his funeral; he wished no man to be payed for preaching a funeral sermon upon him; though if any man, churchman, or dissenter, minister or not, was inclined to say anything on the occasion, he should not object. He prohibited any mourning dress to be worn on that account, as he should die when Divine Providence should call him away, and was unwilling

that his friends should be at the unnecessary expense, which was owing only to the common folly of mankind."<sup>a</sup>

The following notice of his death appeared in the *New York Weekly Post Boy* for May 26th, 1746:—

"New York, May 23d, Wednesday last departed this life, at *Trenton*, after a lingering illness, in an advanced age, his Excellency Lewis Morris, Esq., Captain General and Governor-in-Chief of the Province of New Jersey."

The following items are taken from the journal of his son, Lewis Morris:—

"May 26th, 1746, set out from Trenton with my father's corpse for Amboy ferry; got there that night about nine of the clock. His corpse was attended by numbers of people, and his pall was supported by Messrs Andrew Johnston, James Hide, Peter Kemble, Thomas Leonard, Philip French, Daniel Cox, Philip Kearney and Charles Read. The corpse was put on board of a large peri-auger,<sup>b</sup> which came from Morrisania, for that purpose, and arrived the next morning at Morrisania, the wind blowing at night at north-west extraordinary hard, and being cold lay that night at the ferry."

"May 29th. My father was buried at Morrisania in a vault built by directions in his will. The materials and workmanship came to £10 6s. 7½d. His bearers were the Chief Justice, Joseph Murray, Robert Walters, James Alexander, William Smith, David Clarkson, Abraham Depeyster and Lewis Johnston. Dr. Standard, the minister of the parish of Westchester, attended the burial and performed the service of the Church."<sup>c</sup>

By her last will and testament,<sup>d</sup> Isabella Morris, wife of Governor Morris, directs that "her body be decently interred in the vault at Morrisania, near the remains of her deceased husband." This lady was the daughter of James Graham, Attorney-General for the province of New York, and a near relation of the Marquis of Montrose.

The subjoined notice of her decease appeared in the *Pennsylvania Gazette* for April 9th, 1752:—

NEW YORK, April 6th.—"Last Monday, died in the eightieth year of her age, and on Thursday was decently interred in the family vault at Morrisania, Isabella Morris, widow and relict of his Excellency Lewis Morris, Esq., late Governor of

<sup>a</sup> See will in papers of Lewis Morris, New Jersey, Hist. Soc., p. 323.

<sup>b</sup> Peri-auger Peñil, (little,) and the Spanish augua, (water,) a flat-bottomed boat like a schooner without bowsprit or gib with centre board.

<sup>c</sup> He adds, "May 30th, sent back the chaises to Harlem that we borrowed for the burial. There was one quarter cask of wine expended at the funeral to about two dozen bottles, and about two gallons of rum, a barrel of cider and two barrels of beer, &c., &c. Nov. 6, 1746, waited on my mother with my wife, begged her blessing and returned back at dusk."—Copied from the journal of Hon. Lewis Morris in possession of the late Gouverneur M. Wilkins, Esq.

<sup>d</sup> Lib. xviii. of wills, Surrogates Office, N. Y., p. 94.



the Province of New Jersey. A lady endowed with every qualification requisite to render the sex agreeable and entertaining. Through all the various scenes of life, she was a pattern of conjugal affection, a tender parent, a sincere friend, and an excellent economist. She was

|                              |                           |
|------------------------------|---------------------------|
| Liberal without Prodigality, | In Person, Venerable.     |
| Frugal without Parsimony,    | In Conversation, Affable. |
| Cheerful without Levity,     | In Friendship, Faithful.  |
| Exalted without Pride,       | Of Envy, Void,            |

She passed through life, endowed with every grace ;  
 Her Virtues, Olient Destruction can't deface,  
 Or Cruel Envy e'er eclipse her fame,  
 Nor mouldering time obliterate her name."

The sons of the Hon. Lewis Morris and Isabella his wife, were:—1st, Lewis, to whom his father bequeathed all that part of Morrisania lying to the eastward of the Mile Brook ; and the remainder, westward of the same stream, called *Old Morrisania*, to his wife Isabella for life, and after her death to his said son Lewis Morris, for life, with power to dispose of the same by will to which ever of his sons he should see fit.<sup>a</sup> 2d, Robert Hunter Morris, Chief Jusrice of New Jersey, who had for his share the Jersey estates.

Lewis Morris, who by his father's will, now took the lordship and manor of Morrisania, was Judge of the High Court of Admiralty and one of the Judges of Oyer and Terminer, was born 23d of Sept., 1698, and died 3d July, 1762. By his last will, dated Nov. 19th, 1760, he devised "all that part of Morrisania situated west of the Mill Brook, to his eldest son Lewis Morris." To his wife, "the land whereon his house stands, west of the Mill Brook." "To his brother Robert Hunter Morris, he bequeathed the pictures of his father and mother," and "that of myself and wife to my daughter Isabella.<sup>b</sup>

His, son, Gouverneur, was to have the best education that was to be had in England or America.<sup>c</sup>

His three sons by his first wife, Catharine Staats, were Lewis Morris, fifth proprietor and third Lord of the Manor, General Staats Long Morris, who married Catharine, the celebrated Duchess of Gordon, and Richard Morris, Judge of the High Court of Admiralty in 1776.

Lewis Morris, the fifth proprietor and the last Lord of the Manor, was born at old Morrisania in 1726. Educated at Yale College, he received his B.A. degree in 1746, and his M.A. in 1790. Returning

<sup>a</sup> Prerogative Court, Trenton, New Jersey, Lib. E. of Wills, p. 11, &c.

<sup>b</sup> The above pictures are in possession of Lewis G. Morris, Esq., of Fordham.

<sup>c</sup> Surrogate's office, N. Y., Liber. 23, 426.

from his Academic pursuits in 1746 he became a farmer in his native town, he was opulent and desired no addition to his fortune ; but in the struggle against the mother country his sympathies were for his native land. He was a Brigader-General of the Continental army, and at one time received orders from Congress to take possession, (with his whole Brigade,) of such parts of the Sound and Hudson River as he might think most exposed to the enemy. In 1775 he was sent from New York to the Continental Congress where he distinguished himself—being appointed to confer with the Aborigines and to bring them over to the American side. He was in Congress in 1776, and his name is in the great cluster of patriots attached to the Declaration of Independence. In 1777 he issued an address, or appeal, to the citizens of New York on the constitution proposed by Convention of the United States for their future government in that year. In 1798 he died at his farm in old Morrisania, in the seventy-second year of his age.

Gen. Staats Long Morris was born on the 27th of August, 1728, and educated at Yale College. Having entered the army, he became Captain in the Thirty-sixth Regiment of Foot on the 31st of May, 1756, and attained the rank of Major in 1758. Government having resolved the following year to raise an additional regiment of Highlanders, by the influence of the Gordon family—at the solicitation of the Dowager Duchess of Gordon, Major Morris, to whom she had been lately married, was appointed to raise that regiment, in which the Duke entered as Captain ; Lord William, as Lieutenant ; and Lord George, as Ensign. In a few weeks seven hundred and sixty men were mustered and marched to Aberdeen, and Major Morris received a commission as Lieutenant-Colonel of the new corps, which was called the Eighty-ninth Highland Regiment, with it he embarked in December, 1760, for the East Indies ; arrived at Bombay in November following, and served at the siege of Pondicherry in 1761. On the 7th of July, 1763, he was appointed to the local rank of Brigadier-General, and on the return of the regiment to England it was reduced in 1765, and its Lieutenant-Colonel went on half pay, where he continued until 1778.” It is said that upon receiving an order from the British Government to repair to America he returned his commission, whereupon they appointed him Commander on Cock’s Heath during the remainder of the war. “He became Major-General in 1777, and was appointed Colonel of the Sixty-first, or South Gloucestershire, Regiment in 1778. He rose to the rank of General in the British army in 1796, received the sinecure appointment of Governor of Quebec in 1797, and died in the early part of the year 1800 in the seventy-second year of his age. General Morris was twice married ;

first to the Duchess of Gordon, as already mentioned, who died in 1770, secondly to Miss Urquhart who survived her husband about a year."<sup>a</sup>

Lewis married Mary Walton, who died the 11th of March, 1794. The following notice of her death occurred in the *Diary*, or *Evening Register* of that year:—

"Died at Morrisania, Westchester County, on Tuesday the 11th inst. in the sixty-seventh year of her age, Mrs. Mary Morris, wife of General Lewis Morris. To say that she was an affectionate wife, a tender parent, a firm friend and a good Christian might be thought to comprise an assemblage of virtues which it is not the lot of humanity to possess. But all who knew her will bear testimony to this truth, and declare that this eulogy far from being extravagant, is but a feeble tribute to her merit. As her life was dear to all who prized the qualities for which she was eminently distinguished, so her death produced the keenest sorrow in the breasts of all her acquaintances, which nothing can mitigate; but the reflection that the good she did will on earth raise a monument to her merit, and hereafter entitle her to that reward which will undoubtedly be bestowed upon the truly virtuous."<sup>b</sup>

General Lewis Morris and Mary his wife, left six sons and four daughters, whose descendants are quite numerous. His eldest son was Lieutenant-Colonel Lewis Morris, aid to Major-General Nathaniel Green, who died at Morrisania, 22d of November, 1824. In the Protestant Episcopal Church of St. Michaels, at Charleston, S. C., is the following inscription to the memory of himself and wife, and son William:—

### COLONEL LEWIS MORRIS,

who served in the War of '76.

—  
"The time that tried men's souls."

—  
He was aid to GENERAL GREENE, at the Battles of Entaw and Guilford. His good name is the best inheritance left to his family. He died at Morrisania, New York,  
November 22d, 1824.

His wife

ANN MORRIS,

Was a communicant of this church.

Her slaves and the poor can tell they have lost their best friend.

She died at Morrisania, New York.

April 29th, 1848, Æ. 86 years.

<sup>a</sup> Ed. London Doc. N. Y. Col. MSS. vol. viii., p. 187. General Morris was a representative of New York Province in 1759. There is a fine portrait of him in possession of William Morris of Morrisania.

<sup>b</sup> *Diary or Evening Register*, Saturday, March 15th, 1794, No. 652.

## CAPT. W. MORRIS,

(Aid to Gen. T. Pinckney,)

Died at Sullivan's Island, S. C.,  
September 7th, 1828, Æ. 40 years.

---

"Go my friend, with thy hundred virtues.  
to the home of thy Fathers', go with thy  
noble ——— to the bosom of thy God.  
Brave and generous spirit. Fare thee  
well."—A. H.

---

Erected by the daughters of Col. Morris.

Lieut. Col. Morris was the father of the late Col. Lewis Morris of Morrisania, who died at Adams Run, St. Paul's Parish, S. C., 30th Sept., 1863. The son of the latter, Henry M. Morris of New York, possesses the following portraits, formerly preserved at Old Morrisania:—

Hon. Lewis Morris, first proprietor of Morrisania, of that name, Governor of New Jersey; only son of Richard Morris, in yellow coat and flowing wig. Gen. Staats Long Morris, attired in the uniform of a Brigadier-General of the British Army, red coat, white satin vest trimmed with gold lace, black cocked hat trimmed in the same manner. Isaac Gouverneur, dressed in a blue coat and a red waistcoat; An unknown portrait in brown coat and scarlet waistcoat; General Lewis Morris, signer of the Declaration of Independence and Brigadier-General in the Continental army, dressed in olive-green coat; Mary Walton, wife of the signer, dressed in a light blue silk dress; Sophia Elliott, by Waldo; William Elliott, by the same; Colonel Lewis Morris, aid to General Greene, a miniature, by Fraser, of South Carolina; a marble bust by Launitz, of Ann B. Elliott, wife of the latter.<sup>a</sup>

The Honorable Richard Morris, third son of Lewis Morris, third proprietor and second Lord of the Manor, was born at Old Morrisania in 1730, and was Judge of the High Court of Admiralty in 1776; by Sarah, daughter of Henry Ludlow, he left three children—Lewis R.; Robert, of Mount Fordham; and Mary, who married Brigadier-Major William Popham. Robert, the second son, left the Honorable Robert H. Morris, Justice of the Supreme Court of New York. This individual died at the residence of his father-in-law Munson, at Astoria, Oct. 24th, 1857. The following notice of his death appeared in the papers of the day:—

---

<sup>a</sup> Among the books formerly preserved in the library at Old Morrisania may be mentioned Syrel's History of England, Dugdale's summons of Parliament, Guillim's Heraldry, Anderson's Roy. Gen. Del. Plus, Commons Hist. Angl. Scriptures Dea, Sall Moli, Platan Exercitatione, Matthew Paris Historia-Chaucer, &c., &c.



"The death of Hon. Robert H. Morris, one of the Justices of the Supreme Court of this district, took place suddenly on Wednesday last, at the residence of his father-in-law, Marcena Munson, Esq., of Astoria. There was no member of the bar more generally known or more universally admired, and the intelligence of his death was received yesterday with feelings of intense grief. It was but a few days since, on Tuesday last, that we saw Judge Morris sitting as a spectator in the Court of Oyer and Terminer, apparently in the enjoyment of good health; and on Wednesday he was seized with a sudden attack, and died from the bursting of one of the blood vessels of the heart. Judge Morris was fifty-two years of age. His public career is familiar to almost every New Yorker. He was born in this city in 1803, and when he was a mere lad his father moved to Hudson, where the subject of this notice received his education. He studied law in the office of Mr. A. Miller, of Hudson, and commenced practice at Johnston, Columbia County, and was made a Justice of the Peace about the same time. In 1827 Mr. Morris came to New York to act as Assistant District Attorney to his brother-in-law, James A. Hamilton.

Mr. Morris became a member of the Legislature in 1834 or 1835, and was re-elected twice—being three years in succession a member of that body. He was elected Recorder in 1838, but it will be recollected that in consequence of his seizing "the Glenworth papers," while holding that office, he was removed by a vote of the Senate, brought about by the influence of Governor W. H. Seward. A plan was set on foot by John B. Glentworth, before the Presidential election in 1840, to send on a number of voters from Pennsylvania—nominally to lay the croton water pipes through the city, but virtually to vote for General Harrison in opposition to Martin Van Buren. Mr. Morris ascertained that documentary evidence of this was in the house of a Mr. Pierce, of this city; and a few days before the election he proceeded to Mr. Pierce's, in company with Jonathan D. Stevenson, and seized the "Glentworth papers" and revealed their contents. For this, as we have said, he was removed; and Mr. F. A. Tallmadge was appointed Recorder in his place. But the people of New York viewed the act of the Recorder in a different light; and in 1841 he was elected Mayor of the city by a majority of 7,000, and was re-elected to the high position of Chief Magistrate of New York in 1842 and 1843—the only instance we remember of a man being elected Mayor three times in succession. At that period of our city's history the Mayor was elected every year. In 1844 Mr. Morris was appointed Postmaster of New York by President Polk, and he held that office for four years. While Postmaster, he was appointed, in 1846, a member of the Constitutional Convention of the State, which formed the State Constitution under which we now act. And last of all, he was elected, in 1853, a Justice of the Supreme Court of the First Judicial District, for eight years, more than five years of which are unexpired. Judge Morris's popularity is apparent from the number of important offices he has held, both by the gift of a President and by the choice of the people. As an advocate at the bar he was at times forcible, eloquent, sarcastic and jocose; he was a sound lawyer,

and in criminal jurisprudence he was considered a high authority. As a judge he was impartial, just and patient; the tyro and the black letter adept, alike received his attention and his courtesy; the young received from him encouragement, whilst the experienced lawyer received a becoming deference to his position and his standing in the profession. As a private friend he was affable and sincere, and well stored with a fund of anecdote and professional experience. Judge Morris was an excellent and entertaining companion. In his domestic relations he was exemplary, and leaves a fond wife to lament his loss; but to the members of the bar, who will meet in the Supreme Court on Saturday morning at ten o'clock, we leave the melancholy task of speaking in more extended terms of the character of the deceased Judge, as he was known to the profession and to the community."

The youngest son of Robert, of Fordham, is the present Lewis G. Morris, Esq., of the same place.

Hon. Lewis Morris, fourth proprietor and second lord of the Manor of Morrisania, by his second wife, Sarah Gouverneur, left one son—Gouverneur Morris—who was born at Morrisania, Jan. 31st, 1752, and graduated at King's College, now Columbia, in 1768. He was bred to the law, in which he gained a great reputation. In 1775, he was a delegate to the Provincial Congress in New York. The same year he was appointed a member of the committee for Public Safety for Westchester County. In December, 1776, he acted as one of the committee for draughting a Constitution for the State of New York, which was reported in March, 1777, and adopted in April of that year, after repeated and able debates. He resided at Paris, as American Minister, during the years in which the French Revolution broke out and consummated. He went to France in 1787, and remained until 1795; during that period it is stated that he kept, at the suggestion of General Washington, a minute record of the incidents of every day, and forwarded the whole to Washington.<sup>a</sup> He is said to have been the author of the memorable address of Louis XVI. to the French people, and resembled the King so closely that he was stopped at the barricades by the Revolutionary mob, in Paris, and only allowed to proceed after exhibiting his cork leg at the carriage window. In all his public capacities, he displayed great zeal and ability. After the Revolution, he retired from public life and passed a number of years in private pursuits—excepting that he was a very active member of the Convention which framed the Constitution of the United States. "He was chosen Senator of New York in 1800, and in 1808 appointed one of their Commissioners to lay out the city of New York into streets and avenues north of Bleecker street. In the summer of 1810, he examined

<sup>a</sup> N. Y. Evening Post.

the route for the Erie Canal, and took an active part in originating and promoting that noble work." "The activity of his mind, the richness of his fancy, and the copiousness of his eloquent conversation were the admiration of all his acquaintance, and he was universally admitted as one of the most accomplished and prominent men of our country."<sup>a</sup> He died at Morrisania, Nov. 5th, 1816, aged 64. His publications were numerous. A selection from his papers, with a sketch of his life, has been published by Jared Sparks, in three volumes.

He married Ann Cary Randolph, daughter of Thomas Randolph of Roanoke, Virginia, who was descended in the fifth generation from the celebrated Pockohantes, (literally a run between two hills),<sup>b</sup> the daughter of Wahunsonacock or Powhattan, Emperor of Attanoughkanonck, or Virginia. His son is the present Gouverneur Morris, Esq., of Morrisania.

The principal proprietors, at present, of the ancient manor bearing the name, are William H. Morris, Esq., who at one time held one-third part of old Morrisania; Henry Lewis Morris, grandson of Commodore Richard Morris, and the Rev. Arthur Morris, Protestant Episcopal missionary to Japan; also the present Gouverneur Morris, Esq., and his children, who hold a portion formerly belonging to General Staats Long Morris, and the other heirs of Gerard W. Morris. The manor is now divided among a vast number of proprietors too, numerous to mention. According to the survey of Adam Findlay, made in 1849, "the Long Neck Mansion House Farm of Old Morrisania, then belonging to the late Colonel Lewis Morris, embraced 313 <sup>25</sup>/<sub>1000</sub> acres, which then included everything, *i. e.* all the property unsold, excepting the lots on the Post road between Orange and Mott streets, and the lot where the small house stood in the rear of Parkers, and excepting the lands permanently leased."<sup>c</sup>

"Morrisania remained but sparsely settled for years. During the Revolution its forests formed secure hiding-places for the royalist refugees,"<sup>d</sup> and its thick coverts abounded in wolves." It remained in the family of its ancient owners until the first large advent of population to its fields in 1848. An association then purchased two hundred acres of the northern part, and began a village. At that time there were but three houses on the purchase. At first it was called "New Village," but as it grew it assumed the name of Morrisania, while Bronck's original

Barber's Hist. Coll. of N. Y.

<sup>b</sup> This name was given to her under the supposition that the English could not bewitch her with an assumed name.

<sup>c</sup> Copied from MSS. of H. M. Morris, Dec. 10th, 1857.

<sup>d</sup> New York in the Olden Times, by J. Barnitz Bacon.

property was known as Old Morrisania. Afterwards Melrose, Mott Haven, Woodstock, Eltona, and other places arose on the old domain, until now it is the thickly populated Twenty-third Ward of New York."<sup>a</sup>

Mott Haven was named after the late Jordan L. Mott, Esq., who did more than any other man to build up Morrisania. It is now very thickly settled; here is established the extensive iron foundry which has done so much to create a large business centre around it, still owned by a son of the former Jordan L. Mott, Esq. Adjoining the foundry is the celebrated Harlem bridge, which communicates with North New York and the Island. This bridge, which was nearly six years in building was opened about 1867 for the general transit of foot-passengers and vehicles. The act authorizing its construction was passed on the 17th of April, 1857, the words of which stipulated that it should be commenced "as soon as the Commissioners thought it necessary;" and about the latter end of November, 1860, the board in question thought it was nearly time to begin, and the work was taken in hand at that date.

From the water on the upper side, it looks remarkably well. The engineer in charge was Mr. Erastus Smith, who had the charge of the ram Dunderberg, and he was assisted in the work by Mr. Ethan Rogers.

Prior to the erection of the old wooden bridge, there appears to have been a *fording place* between the two shores; for, upon the 11th of October, 1666, Governor Nicolls granted "certain saw mills to Thomas Delaval, John Vervelen and Daniel Turner, &c., lying over against Verchers or Hogg Island, in the Sound, where a *passage hath been made to ford over from this island to the maine.*"<sup>b</sup>

Governor Dongan's patent for Haarlem, 1686, recites the following:

"And whereas the town lies very commodious for a *ferry* to and from the maine, which may redown tu the particular benefit of the inhabitants as well to general good. The freeholders and inhabitants of said town should, in consideration of the benefits and priveleges therein granted, as also for what advantage might accrue thereby, be enjoined and obliged, at their proper costs and charge, to build and provide one or more boats fit for the transportation of men, horse or cattle, for which, a certain allowance was to be given by each particular person," &c.<sup>c</sup>

Sometime in 1759, Benjamin Palmer of Great Minnieford or City

<sup>a</sup> New York in the Olden Times, by J. Barnitz Bacon.

<sup>b</sup> Harlem Conveyances. p. 6.

<sup>c</sup> Harlem Conveyances, p. 7. Opposite to Mott Haven, on the Harlem side of the River, was what was termed the "Middle Road," at the extremity of which was "Cole's Bridge" afterwards known as "Harlem Bridge;" while a little from the line of First Avenue, was the "Old Harlem Road," at the foot of which was the before mentioned Ferry.—*Editor*.



Island, built a free bridge over Haarlem River partly by subscription, for which he also advanced out of his own funds £608; but it does not appear that he was ever reimbursed.

In the vicinity of Harlem Bridge is the terminus of the New Haven and Harlem River Rail Road Route. Here is a large Depot and Dock for the convenience of passengers, by the steam boats of the Harlem and New York Navigation and Morrisania Companies—whose steamers leave Fulton Market Slip, connecting with New York and New Haven Rail for Hunts' Point, West Farms, Westchester, Bartow, (City Island,) Pellam Manor, New Rochelle, Portchester, Greenwich, Stamford, Norwalk, Bridgeport, New Haven and all points East and North.

Upon rising ground a little North-east of the Depot, stands the ancient manor house, of what was formerly known as "Old Morrisania." On or near this spot, Jona Bronck built his house in 1643. Here, also, Richard Morris resided in 1670-1, and erected a house which occupied the site of the present Mansion; at one period of the Revolutionary War, the officers of the American picket guard had their head-quarters in the Manor house, and subsequently it was occupied by Lieutenant-Colonel James de Lancey, of the British Refugee Corps; a little west of the house, covered with willow trees, was formerly situated the family vault of the Morris's. The following extract, from a letter dated Peekskill, January 19th, 1777, shows the savage nature which marked the British soldiery during their occupancy of Morrisania, in breaking open vaults and plundering the dead:—

"General Howe has discharged all the privates who were prisoners in New York. One-half he sent to the world of spirits for want of food—the other he hath sent to warn their countrymen of the danger of falling into his hands; and to convince them by ocular demonstration, that it is infinitely better to be slain in battle, than to be taken prisoners by British brutes whose tender mercies are cruelty. But it is not the prisoners alone who felt the effects of British humanity; every part of the country through which they have marched, has been plundered and ravaged. No discrimination has been made with respect to Whig or Tory, but all alike have been involved in one common fate. Their march thro' New Jersey has been marked with savage barbarity; but *Westchester* witnesseth more terrible things. The repositories of the dead have always been held sacred, by the most barbarous and savage nations. But here, not being able to accomplish their accursed purposes upon the living, they wreaked their vengeance upon the dead. In many places, the graves in the church-yards were opened; and the bodies of the dead exposed upon the ground for several days. *At Morrisania, the family vault was opened, the coffins broken, and the bones scattered abroad. At Delancey's farm, the body of a beautiful young lady, which had been buried for two years, was taken out of the ground and exposed for five days in a most indecent manner; many more instances could be mentioned, but*

my heart sickens at the recollection of such inhumanity. Some people try to believe that it is only the Hessians who perpetrate these things: but I have good authority to say that the British vie with, and even exceed, the auxiliary troops in licentiousness. After such treatment, can it be possible for any person seriously to wish for a reconciliation with Great Britain."<sup>a</sup>

What remained of the venerated dead, was some years ago removed to the new vault under St. Ann's church, Morrisania. While the old manor house and its surroundings have been turned into a tavern and lager beer garden.

On the east side of the Mill Brook is situated the well-known country residence of the late Hon Gouverneur Morris, which is highly spoken of by travellers, and other persons of taste. Its location is very fine, just on the south-west angle of what was formerly the township of Morrisania, nearly opposite to the beautiful scenery of Hellgate, and eight miles from New York. It commands extensive views of the surrounding country, and the adjacent waters. "Here he passed the latter years of his life, exercising an elegant and munificent hospitality, reviewing the studies of his early days, and carrying on a very interesting correspondence with statesmen and literati in Europe and America. Among his principal guests were Louis Phillipe Le Duc d'Orleans, (afterwards king of France), and John Victor Moreau, one of the most celebrated of modern French generals. Of the old mansion, which was constructed in the French chateau style, nothing remains but the central portion, and this has been greatly modernized by the present proprietor. The interior, however, retains much of its former consistence. The library possesses a very choice selection of books. It is chiefly remarkable for the valuable manuscripts belonging to it, which are so extensively connected with the history of its former owner. There are here, likewise, several choice pieces of French furniture, some gobelin tapestry, and a good portrait of the late Hon. Gouverneur Morris, also a fine marble bust of Mrs. Morris.

The grounds are enriched with many rare ornamental trees and shrubs; among the former deserve to be mentioned, two or three specimens of the deciduous American cypress, (*cupressus disticha*), said by Gordon to be the finest of the kind in the United States. Of the latter, there are hedges of the *gliditsia tricanthus*, and the *gliditsia horrida*.

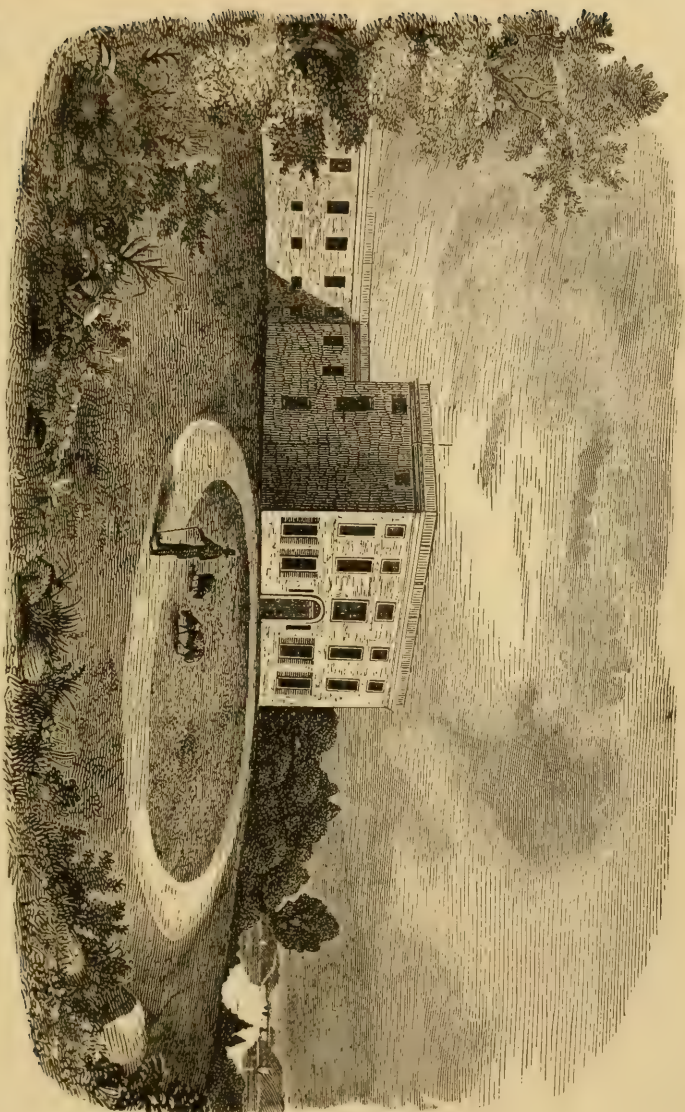
The Mill Brook<sup>b</sup> valley passes near the house, and joins the Harlem kills. It was through this historic valley that Harvey Birch, of Cowpens,

<sup>a</sup> Westchester Co. in 1777. From the *Freeman's Journal*, or *New Hampshire Gazette*, vol. 1. No. 39, Portsmouth, Tuesday, Feb. 1st, 1777. Copied from *Historical Magazine*, New Series, vol. viii, No. 6, Dec. 1870, page 370.

<sup>b</sup> This brook has now been converted into a sewer, and a main avenue is about being constructed over its surface, called Brook avenue.

11,400.

RESIDENCE OF THE LATE HON. GOUVERNEUR MORRIS, MORRISANIA.







the "spy," is represented as having passed and repassed so frequently in his daring forays. Near the banks of this stream, too, in the vicinity of Tremont, and about two miles from Harlem Bridge, "the celebrated Charlotte Temple lived. The sentimental tourist lingers long by the stones that formed the chimney of the cottage, and the trunks of the old apple trees which shaded her roof. The house in which her friend lived, still stands, but is much decayed; and the little garden which Charlotte planted with a gift of cucumbers, is in grass. A clear spring rivulet runs close by. Alas, poor Charlotte; the tears that have been shed over her tragic fate, would form another such rivulet."

The property of William H. Morris, is situated on the high ridge west of the mill brook vale. The house built by James Morris Esq., occupies the site of one much older, erected in 1795. It is handsome, and well placed; and the neighborhood is rendered extremely beautiful by the inequality of the ground, and the fine mixture of wood and pasture, which diversifies the appearance of the vales and eminences. Within are some good paintings, viz, James Morris, by Benjamin Peale; Hon Daniel Webster, by Frothingham; and General Staats Long Morris, artist unknown. A broad and fine carriage road, lined on either side with elms,<sup>a</sup> is terminated by a picturesque view of Melrose and its surroundings. At no great distance stands the residence of the late Commodore Valentine Morris.

Upon the east side of the Mill brook lay the old *race course*, which is said to have been established by General Staats Long Morris, one of the first importers of blooded horses at the north. The western portion of Morrisania is watered by Cromwell creek,<sup>b</sup> which discharges into the Harlem river.

East of the Mill Brook, and nearly opposite the North and South Brother Islands on the East River, "is situated Port Morris—unsurpassed for the anchorage of large vessels, by any port in the world." The *Great Eastern*, with her immense size and capacity, formerly landed safely at one of her docks; and just above Port Morris, and about opposite Riker's Island, fronting the property of the late B. M. Whitlock, is a bay, affording the best place for a navy-yard in any of the States; inasmuch as here, alongside of the East River salt water frontage, might be constructed a large fresh water basin—to be supplied by water, about a mile distant from the Bronx's River, in the village of West Farms—large enough to float all the iron-clads of the world; and the corroding of the

<sup>a</sup> One of these trees measure fourteen feet in circumference, while its branches afford a shade of 120 feet.

<sup>b</sup> On this stream a mill was erected by Lewis Morris in 1760, of which nothing remains but the mill dam.

iron of these vessels when not in active service, lying in salt water, requires their anchorage in such a fresh water basin. The concentration of the Hudson River, the Harlem, New Haven and Harlem River Railroads in their freighting and passenger business, at their proposed new grand depot, near Melrose and at Mott Haven, indicates that their immense freight and passenger traffic from the Pacific coasts, and from the West and the East, all must within a few years centre near the Harlem River, within the present town of Morrisania. These facilities will be greatly increased by the proposed canal connecting the Harlem River with the Hudson River, the removal of the obstructions at Hell Gate, and the erection of the Suspension Bridge at Anthony's Nose in the Highlands, connecting with the New York City and Northern Railroad. A branch of the old Harlem Rail Road terminates at Port Morris. During the Revolutionary war, the British Frigate Hussar was wrecked off Port Morris, laden with American prisoners and treasure; for many years divers have been at work upon the wreck, with but little success. It is claimed, however, that the divers are now meeting with better encouragement, "as they are making rapid progress in removing the debris that is supposed to cover many thousand pounds in English coin. Sidney Cook, the diver in charge, believes he has reached the ship's magazine. He daily brings to the surface large cakes of gunpowder, and the iron bands and wooden plates which once held together and fixed ammunition. A cartridge of wedge-shaped slugs, eight of which when joined form a circle, kept in position by wooden disks, was brought up a short time ago. These projectiles were used for cutting the rigging of an enemy's ship. But little remains of the frigate's iron work. Some of the wood work, after lying on the bottom of the river for ninety-six years, is in a fair state of preservation. A knee and two *lignum vitæ* sheaves of pulley blocks were well preserved. The copper rivets of manacles worn by the ill-fated American prisoners, chained to the gun deck when the frigate went down, are occasionally found. Mr. Cook brought to the surface not long since a massive block of oak, a part of the frigate's keel. Its shape shows that it was taken from near the ship's bow. In all former attempts to recover the treasure, no diver has succeeded in reaching the keel."

Adjoining Port Morris are many fine country seats; among which deserves to be noticed Rockwood, the residence of Samuel E. Lyon, Esq., a well-known member of the New York and Westchester bar.

Prior to the Revolution, Morrisania, as before stated, formed one of the precincts of Westchester parish; and in 1703 paid as her quota towards the rector's support and poor £3. 7s.; in 1720 her rate was £4

108. Under the Manorial charter, the Morris's were possessed of the impropriation and the patronage of all and every—the church and churches erected or established within the manor of Morrisania. Still Morrisania continued to be associated with Westchester in the support of a minister till the year 1840, when the present parochial church of St. Ann's was founded by Gouverneur Morris, Esq., being the first building devoted to worship and religious instruction ever commenced in Morrisania. The church with its surrounding grounds was munificently conveyed to the vestry, by its founder in 1841, under the following form:—

#### DEED OF GIFT.

“This indenture made this seventeenth day of July, in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and forty-one, between Gouverneur Morris, of Morrisania, in the County of Westchester, in the State of New York, Esquire, of the first part, and the Rector, Wardens and Vestrymen of St. Ann's church at Morrisania, of the second part; Whereas the said Gouverneur Morris with a view to the promotion of Religion and Piety, has at his own expense erected on his estate on Morrisania aforesaid, a church or edifice intended for the public worship of God according to the rites and ceremonies of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the United States of America; and whereas a religious society has lately been formed and incorporated according to law, by the name and style of The Rector, Wardens and Vestrymen of St. Ann's church at Morrisania; which corporation are the parties hereto of the second part, and the said Gouverneur Morris has promised to give to them the said edifice with the land hereafter described to be attached thereto, with the exceptions, and on the conditions hereinafter expressed. *Now this indenture witnesseth* that the said Gouverneur Morris, in the consideration of the premises and of one dollar lawful money of the United States of America, to him in hand paid by the said parties of the second part, the receipt whereof is hereby acknowledged, hath granted, bargained, sold and conveyed, and hereby doth grant, bargain, sell and convey unto the said parties of the second part, their successors and assigns, all that certain piece or parcel of land situate in Morrisania aforesaid, whereon the said church edifice hath been erected, and bounded as follows, to wit: *Beginning* at a stake situate south sixty-six degrees and forty-five minutes, east, sixty-eight and a half feet from an iron bolt in the south corner of a large rock, which stake is the south-west corner of the lot herein described, and running thence north twenty-three degrees and fifteen minutes; east, two hundred and eighty feet six inches, thence south sixty-four degrees and forty-five minutes; east, three hundred and ninety-five feet and two inches, thence south thirty degrees and thirty minutes; west, one hundred and twenty-six feet and eight inches, thence south forty-one degrees and thirty minutes; west, one hundred and forty-nine feet six inches, thence south forty degrees, west nine feet and two inches, thence north sixty-six degrees and forty-five minutes, west three hundred and twenty-six feet and six inches to the place of *beginning*, the last mentioned course being parallel with the front of the said church or edifice, and distant therefrom one hundred and sixty-two feet and eight



inches, together with the said church or edifice and the hereditaments and appurtenances thereunto belonging, but excepting and reserving thereout the two vaults hereafter mentioned. *To have and to hold* the said premises hereby intended to be conveyed to the said parties of the second part, their successors and assigns forever, but nevertheless on the conditions and subject to the stipulations and covenants herein contained; that is to say, first, that the said church or edifice shall be devoted to the worship of God according to the rites and ceremonies of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the United States of America, and shall not be used for any other purpose. Second, that such of the pews in the said church as are marked in the plan hereto annexed with the word Free, shall never be sold or rented, but shall remain free; so that all persons coming to the said church to worship therein may freely occupy and use the same. Third, that none of the pews within the said church or edifice shall ever be sold, but that all except those intended to be used free as aforesaid, may be rented for terms not exceeding three years; and that the rents arising therefrom shall be forever applied for the support of the rector or minister for the time being who shall officiate in the said church, and for no other purpose except for necessary repairs of the said church, and for fuel and other necessary expenses for the services of the same. And whereas a vault hath been constructed which is under the said church, and in which are interred the remains of the mother of the said Gouverneur Morris and whereas there is another vault within the boundaries above described, but not beneath the said church, in which are interred the remains of the father of the said Gouverneur Morris and of others of his family—now it is hereby declared that each of the said vaults, and the ground whereon they are built, is hereby reserved and excepted from the above grant and conveyance, (and it is one of the express conditions of this conveyance,) that the said Gouverneur Morris, his heirs and assigns, shall at all times have access to the said two vaults with the privilege of opening and using the same for the burial of their dead. And whereas the said Gouverneur Morris has also caused to be constructed under the said church other vaults, it is also a condition of this conveyance, that if the parties hereto of the second part shall sell or grant the right of using the same, they shall invest all money to arise from such sales or as compensation for such grants so that it may produce an annual interest or income, and shall apply such interest or income to the support of the rector or minister for the time being officiating in the said church, and for no other purpose whatever. And this conveyance is on this further condition, that the land hereby conveyed, and not covered by the said church, shall be used for the purposes following and none other; that is to say, a part not exceeding one half thereof may be used as a site for a parsonage or dwelling house for the use of the rector or minister for the time being officiating in the said church, and for a garden to be attached thereto, and for a site for sheds for the protection of horses and carriages of persons attending worship in the said church, and the residue of the said land shall be used as a cemetery or burial ground, and for no other purpose; and it is a further express condition of this conveyance, that no rector or minister shall be called or employed to officiate in the said church during the life of the said Gouverneur Morris without his previous consent in writing, and further, that neither the premises hereby conveyed or any part thereof, nor any of the said pews or vaults, or any of the rents or income to arise therefrom from any part of the said premi-



ses, shall ever on any pretence, be mortgaged, or in any way or manner be made liable for any debts or engagements of the parties of the second part, or of their successors. And the said parties of the second part, for themselves and their successors, hereby covenant with the said Gouverneur Morris, his heirs and assigns, that they the said parties of the second part and their successors, shall and will faithfully observe and perform all and every of the said conditions; and it is hereby expressly declared and agreed, that if default shall at any time be made in the performance or observance of any of the conditions above mentioned, or of the said covenants, it shall be lawful for the said Gouverneur Morris, his heirs and assigns to re-enter into, and upon the said premises, or any part thereof, in the name of the whole, and the same to have again re-possess and enjoy as in his first and former estate, anything herein contained to the contrary thereof notwithstanding. In witness whereof, the said Gouverneur Morris hath hereunto set his hand and seal, and the parties of the second part have caused their corporate seal to be hereunto affixed the day and year first above written.

*Sealed and delivered)* H. M. MORRIS.      GOUVERNEUR MORRIS,  
*in the presence of* }      of Morrisania.<sup>a</sup>

The church of St. Ann's is situated in a picturesque position, near Old Morrisania, on rising ground, overlooking a clear and rapid little stream, hastening to join the more expanded waters of the East River. It is a pleasing gothic structure of marble, and comprises a nave with two aisles, small recess chancel, and a spire over the southern end. "It was erected by the present Gouverneur Morris, Esq., in a field on his own estate, which had for some time been hallowed, as containing the sepulchre of his parents. A vault was constructed to receive his remains, and a tablet in the chancel contains the following inscription:—

THE RELICS OF THE  
HONORABLE GOUVERNEUR MORRIS,

A name illustrious in his country's annals,  
were laid by his faithful widow.

— — — — —

In the year of our Lord 1837, she joined him with the dead; and over her remains has arisen this beautiful Sanctuary, which, in remembrance of her, and with respectful regard to two other valued relations of the name, was called ST. ANN'S CHURCH, from the blessed St. Anne of the Gospel, and consecrated by that name, on the 28th day of June, 1841, by Bishop Onderdonk.

The act of incorporation of this church bears date July 20th, 1841; Robert Morris and Lewis Morris, wardens; Jacob Buckhout, Daniel

<sup>a</sup> Copied from the original in the possession of Gouverneur Morris, Esq., for a long time, Secretary and Treasurer of the vestry of St. Ann's church, Morrisania.

Deveau, Benjamin Rogers, Benjamin M. Brown, Edward Leggett, Lewis G. Morris and Henry W. Morris, vestrymen. The interior of the church contains a well-arranged chancel and the tablet afore-mentioned, inscribed as follows:—

Conjugal Affection  
 Consecrated this spot, where  
 THE BEST OF MEN  
 Was laid until a vault could be erected  
 To receive  
 His precious remains.

Prior to the Revolutionary War, the interments of the Morris family were made, as we have already seen, at Old Morrisania, near the manor



St. Ann's Church, Morrisania.

house still standing. On the 15th of February, 1866, what remained of the bodies were then transferred to the vault beneath this church. Among these was the Hon. Lewis Morris, Governor of New Jersey; Lewis Morris, signer of the Declaration of Independence, with their wives; to which may be added Mary Morris, sister of Lieutenant-Colonel Morris (Aide of General Greene), his wife, Anne B. Morris, and their grand-daughter, Emma Morris; Elizabeth Morris, youngest daughter of Colonel Lewis Morris, Anna Rutherford, grand-daughter of Lieutenant-Colonel Morris, and Sarah Morris, daughter of the signer.

A beautiful silver communion service—consisting of a flagon, two

chalices and paten—were presented by the ladies of the parish. There is also an additional paten bearing the following inscription:—

*"Stæ Annæ Altari Voverunt Tres. J. H. C. Fest.  
Pentecost, 1842."*

The donors were John Jay, Henry Hobart and Cleveland Cox. The bell is inscribed:—

"Presented to  
ST. ANN'S CHURCH  
BY  
GOUVERNEUR MORRIS.  
J. P. Allaire, New York, 1841."

On the west side of the church is a neat rectory.

#### RECTORS OF ST. ANN'S CHURCH, MORRISANIA.

| INST. OR CALL.  | INCUMBENTS.                      | VACAT. BY.      |
|-----------------|----------------------------------|-----------------|
| 1841,           | REV. ARTHUR C. COX, Deacon,      | resig.          |
| 1842,           | REV. CHARLES JONES, Presb.,      | "               |
| 1843,           | REV. CHARLES ALDIS, Presb.,      | "               |
| 1 Sept. 1847,   | REV. ABRAHAM B. CARTER, Presb.   | "               |
| 20 March, 1852, | REV. S. PINKNEY HAMMOND, Presb., | "               |
|                 | REV. WILLIAM HUCKEL, Presb.,     | present rector. |

St. Paul's church, which was formerly included in the parochial limits of St. Ann's, was on the 30th of May, 1853, erected into a separate parish.

Church work was begun at this point by the Rev. A. B. Carter, Rector of St. Ann's, Morrisania. The congregation was duly organized by Mr. Carter, as a Chapel of St. Ann's, July 8th, 1849. On Sept. 15th, of the same year, the corner-stone of the chapel was laid by the Rt. Rev. W. R. Whittingham, Bishop of Maryland. The chapel was opened for Divine Service on Easter Day, March 31st, 1850; and was consecrated by Bishop Whittingham, June 22d, 1850. The chapel stands on a plot of ground containing one acre, and bounded by two of the principal avenues, having a front on each of nearly 150 feet. The building itself was, and is still, a simple frame gothic structure, with open roof 80 x 30, including chancel and tower.

On the 31st day of May, 1853, the connection of St. Paul's chapel with the mother church, St. Ann's, was severed and a new parish organized under the title of St. Paul's, Morrisania Village. On the first day of September in the same year, the Rev. Benjamin Akerly was called as the first Rector. Up to this time the services had been maintained by

Rev. A. B. Carter and Rev. J. Pinckney Hammond, Rectors of St. Ann's. The Rev. Mr. Akerly continued Rector of the new parish, till some time in 1857 or 1858. During his Rectorship, a commodious Rectory was built on the church grounds.

In April, 1858, the Rev. Samuel G. Appleton was elected Rector. During his Rectorship, the church was enlarged by the addition of a transept. The parish was gaining fast in numbers and strength, when an unfortunate division of opinion took place and a new parish was organized. The Rev. Mr. Appleton resigned soon afterwards—early in 1868, and was succeeded on the first of Nov. of the same year, by Rev. Fredk. B. Van Kleeck. On May 1st, 1870, the Rev. Dr. Van Kleeck's resignation took effect, as he had accepted a call to Grace church, White Plains; and on the same day his successor, Rev. Thomas R. Harris, began his duties as Rector. In 1871 the church was raised and a large



St. Paul's Morrisania.

Basement Sunday-school room added. In 1879, large repairs were made to the church buildings and the interior of the church was decorated.

At the commencement of the Revolutionary struggle, Gen. Heath's division of the American army was stationed at Morrisania. From his memoirs we gather the following particulars: "A picket from our general's division, of four hundred and fifty men, constantly mounted, by relief, at *Morrisania*, from which a chain of sentinels, within half gunshot of each other, were planted, from the one side of the shore to the other, and near the water passage, between Morrisania and Montresor's island, which in some places is very narrow. The sentinels on the American side were ordered not to presume to fire at those of the British, unless the latter began; but the British were so fond of beginning,



that there was frequently a firing between them. This having been the case one day, and a British officer walking along the bank, on the Montresor's side, an American sentinel—who had been exchanging some shots with a British sentinel—seeing the officer, and concluding him to be the better game, gave him a shot, and wounded him. He was carried up to the house on the island. An officer with a flag soon came down to the creek and called for the American officer of the picket, and informed him that if the American sentinels fired any more, the commanding officer of the island would cannonade *Col. Morris's house, in which the officers of the picket quartered.* The American officer immediately sent up to our general, to know what answer should be returned. He was directed to inform the British officer that the American sentinels had always been instructed not to fire on sentinels unless they were first fired upon, and then to return the fire; that such would be their conduct; as to the cannonading of Col. Morris's house, they might act their pleasure. The firing ceased for some time; but a raw Scotch sentinel having been planted one day, he very soon after discharged his piece at an American sentinel nearest to him, which was immediately returned; upon which a British officer came down, and called to the American officers, observing that he thought there was to be no more firing between the sentinels. He was answered, that their own began; upon which he replied, 'he shall then pay for it.' The sentinel was directly after relieved, and there was no firing between the sentinels, in that place any more; and they were so civil to each other, on the posts, that one day, at a part of the creek where it was practicable, the British sentinel asked the American, who was nearly opposite, if he could give him a chew of tobacco; the latter, having in his pocket a piece of thick twisted roll, sent it across the creek to the British sentinel, who, after taking off his bite, sent the remainder back again."<sup>a</sup>

"On the 6th of October, 1776, (continues General Heath), orders were given for throwing up a new work on Harlem creek below the wood at Morrisania."<sup>b</sup>

After the retreat of the American army northwards and the settlement of their lines on the Croton, the British refugee corps were stationed at Morrisania, under the command of Col. James de Lancey, who held his headquarters at Col. Morris's house. Here the British appear to have been kept in a constant state of alarm by their vigilant enemies. Upon the 5th of August, 1779, (says Heath) about 100 horse of Sheldon's, Moyland's, and of the militia, and about forty infantry of Glover's brigade,

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Mem. p. 62.

<sup>b</sup> Ibid. 68

passed by de Lancey's mills to the neighborhood of Morrisania, where they took twelve or fourteen prisoners, some stock, &c. The enemy collected, a skirmish ensued, in which the enemy had a number of men killed and wounded; our loss, two killed and two wounded."<sup>a</sup> The frequency of these attacks compelled De Lancey to shift his quarters under the British guns of Fort No. 8, in Fordham. The dwellings at Morrisania were burnt on the same day with the Westchester court house.

In St. Anne's churchyard repose the remains of Brevet Brigadier-General W. W. Morris, U. S. A., a member of the Morris family, whom, it will be remembered, was the first military officer who, during the late Civil War, refused to obey a writ of *habeas corpus*, while in command of Fort McHenry, at Baltimore, Md. At first public indignation was aroused against him, and it was at one time proposed by the Government to deprive him of his commission. Upon sober second thought, the Government concluded that his act, though high-handed, was justified by the emergency. Following is the correspondence upon the subject:—

HEADQUARTERS, FORT MCHENRY, MD.,  
MAY 8TH, 1861.

COLONEL:—"I wish most respectfully to inform the Lieutenant-General Commanding, that during the past week a writ of Habeas Corpus was issued by the Hon. Judge Giles, of the United States District Court, for the District of Maryland, commanding me to produce the body of John G. Mullen, a recruit of the United States Army, on the alleged ground that said Mullen was a minor at the time of his enlistment.

I have the honor to enclose an article from the *Baltimore Sun* (No. 1); a copy of my letter to Judge Giles, (No. 2,) and a copy of the Judge's reply, (No. 3,) which will afford the Lieutenant-General all the knowledge of the subject which I possess.

I respectfully request that the Lieutenant-General will furnish me with the laws and orders now in force with reference to the discharge of soldiers enlisted as minors. Very respectfully your obedient servant,

(Signed,) W. W. MORRIS,

Asst. Adjt. Gen.,  
Hd. Qrs. of the Army,  
Washington City.

Major 4th Artillery,  
Commanding.

From the *Baltimore Sun* of Monday, May 6, 1861.

(LOCAL MATTERS.)

*The Habeas Corpus Refusal.*—On Saturday it was stated that a *Habeas Corpus*, issued by Judge Giles of the United States Court for the surrender of the body of John G. Mullen, has been refused by the commandant of Fort McHenry. On

<sup>a</sup> Heath's memoirs, p. 214.

Saturday Judge Giles issued the following order to be entered on the record of the Court. After quoting the title of the case he says: "In this case a petition was presented to me, in the usual form, stating that John G. Mullen was illegally detained at Fort McHenry in this city, by the officer commanding at that fort; that the said John G. Mullen was only twenty years of age, and had been enlisted without the consent of his father, George Mullen, who united in the petition, and made affidavit to the truth of the facts stated therein; and the petition closed with the prayer for the writ of *habeas corpus*. In the discharge of the duty required of me by the laws of the United States, upon the presentation of such a petition, I ordered the writ of *habeas corpus* to be issued, to be directed to the commanding officer at Fort McHenry, commanding him to produce before me, at ten o'clock this morning, in the District Court-room in this city, the body of said John G. Mullen, with the cause of his confinement, at the hour mentioned for the return of the said writ. The deputy marshal, who was sent down to serve the writ, filed in this court this morning an affidavit, stating that it had been served on an officer in command of said fort, and who refused to obey said writ.

This is the first time within my experience of thirty-three years at the bar and on the bench that the writ of *habeas corpus* has failed in this State to procure obedience to its mandate. It is a writ so dear to every freeman that the Constitution of the country has, with great care, provided 'that it shall not be suspended unless, when in case of rebellion or invasion, the public safety may require it.' With no suspension of this writ by competent authority, with no proclamation for its suspension by any one claiming to possess such power, with no state of affairs existing as would authorize its suspension, the court learns, with deep regret, that an officer of the United States Army has thought it his duty to refuse obedience to the writ. Unwilling to aggravate existing excitement by more immediate action, the court will at present only pass an order that the commanding officer at Fort McHenry show cause, on or before Wednesday next, the 8th inst. at ten o'clock, why an attachment should not issue against him for his refusal to obey the said writ; and the court sincerely hopes that, in a crisis like the present, wiser counsels may prevail at the post, and that no unnecessary conflict of authority may be brought in between those owing allegiance to the same government and bound by the same laws."

FORT McHENRY, MD., }  
Monday, 6th May, 1861. }

HON. WILLIAM FELL GILES, *Judge of the U. S. District Court for the District of Maryland.*

*Sir.*—My attention has been directed to an article in the local column of the *Baltimore Sun* of this date, headed, "The *Habeas Corpus* Refusal." Presuming that that article is authentic, I wish very respectfully to submit for your consideration the following remarks on this unhappy "conflict of authority between those owing allegiance to the same Government, and bound by the same laws."

To avoid implicating parties in no wise connected with this case, permit me



to observe at the threshold, that my action in the premises was taken entirely on my own responsibility, without instructions from, or consultation with any person whatever.

And now I wish most respectfully to inform your Honor, that I regard the writ of *Habeas Corpus* as the very basis of free government, and that under all ordinary circumstances I am very ready to acknowledge the supremacy of the civil authorities. But, as you admit, the Constitution of the United States has provided that this writ of *Habeas Corpus* may be suspended in case of rebellion, if the public safety require it. You, however, allege that there is "no such state of affairs existing as would authorize its suspension." On this point it is with regret that I am compelled to differ from so eminent an authority; and I am further constrained to add, that the question is one of fact, rather than opinion.

At the date of issuing your writ, and for two weeks previous, the city in which you live, and where your court has been held, was entirely under the control of revolutionary authorities; within that period U. S. Soldiers, while committing no offence, had been perfidiously attacked and inhumanly murdered in your streets; no punishment had been awarded, and I believe no arrests had been made for these atrocious crimes; supplies of provisions intended for this garrison had been stopped; the intention to capture this fort had been boldly proclaimed; your most public thoroughfares were daily patrolled by large numbers of troops, armed and clothed, at least in part, with articles stolen from the United States; and the Federal flag, while waving over the Federal offices, was cut down by some person wearing the uniform of a Maryland soldier. To add to the foregoing, an assemblage elected in defiance of law, but claiming to be the legislative body of your State, and so recognized by the Executive of Maryland, was debating the forms of abrogating the Federal compact. If all this be not rebellion, I know not what to call it. I certainly regard it, as sufficient legal cause for suspending the writ of *Habeas Corpus*.

Besides, there were certain grounds of expediency on which I declined obeying your mandate.

1st. The writ of *Habeas Corpus*, in the hands of an unfriendly power, might depopulate this fortification and place it at the mercy of a "Baltimore mob," in much less time than it could be done by all the appliances of modern warfare.

2d. The ferocious spirit exhibited by your community towards the United States army, would render me very averse from appearing publicly and unprotected in the City of Baltimore, to defend the interests of the body to which I belong. A few days since, a soldier of this command, while outside the walls, was attacked by a fiend or fiends in human shape, almost deprived of life, and left unprotected about half a mile from garrison. He was found in this situation, and brought in covered with blood. One of your evening prints was quite jocose over the laughable occurrence.

And now, sir, permit me to say in conclusion, that no one can regret more than I this conflict between the civil and military authorities. If, in an experience of thirty-three years you have never before known the writ of *Habeas Corpus* to be disobeyed, it is only because such a contingency in political affairs as the present has not before arisen. I claim to be a loyal citizen; and I hope my former conduct, both official and private, will justify this pretension. In any condition of affairs except that of civil war, I would cheerfully obey your order; and as soon



as the present excitement shall pass away I will hold myself ready not only to produce the soldier, but also to appear in person to answer for my own conduct; but in the existing state of sentiment in the city of Baltimore, I think it your duty to sustain the federal military, and to strengthen their hands instead of endeavoring to strike them down. I have the honor to be very respectfully,

Your Obedient Servant,

(Signed,) W. W. MORRIS,  
Major 4th U. S. Artillery,  
Comd'g the Post.

## MANOR OF FORDHAM.

The name of this town is of Saxon origin, compounded of **foord**<sup>a</sup> (ford) and **ham** (mansion,) and was derived from the parish of the same name in Norfolk, England. Fordham was originally included in the township of West Chester, but subsequently formed a portion of West Farms, and now belongs to Northern New York.

Its early Indian proprietors appear to have been the Sachems Fecquemeck, Rechgawac and Packanariens, who sold the lands of *Kekesheik*, bordering the Harlem River to the Dutch West India Company, Anno Domini, 1639. In 1646, we find the whole of Fordham as well as the Yoncker's land (then called Colen Donck,) in the possession of Adrian van der Donck, whose widow Mary conveyed them to her brother Elias Doughty. The following sales appear under the hands of the latter in 1666-67:—

"Know all men, by these presents, that I, Elias Doughty, of Flushing, do sell unto *Mr. John Archer, of Westchester*,<sup>b</sup> his heirs and assignees, fourscore acres of land and thirty acres of meadow, lying and being betwixt *Brothers River* and the watering place at the end of the Island of Manhatans; and if the land be not fit to cleare for the plow or hoe, this land is to lye together; and if there be not all such land together as there should, or if there should happen eight or ten acres of land that is not for such use, then the said Archer is to have it with the rest; and he shall have equal right privilege in the commons as any other man shall have within that Patent that hath no more arable land; and the meadow is

<sup>a</sup> Verstegan, in his "Restitution of Decayed Intelligence" says in foord, not only sundry of our ancient English surnames herein end, but some also so seem to do which are of French or Norman race—but this groweth by the not rightly distinguishing between foord and fort; the first being a mere English termination, denoteth as yet we retain in memory a foord or water passage. The other coming from the French, denoteth a place of strength by nature, as "*Rochfort*," the "*strong Rock*," &c.

<sup>b</sup> See Laws of N. Y. 1873, for annexation act since amended.

to be mowed all. As witness my hand this first of March, 1666. As witness, if there should lye any more land, that is to say, between thirty and forty acres, it is all in common, and I am to give the said *Archer* a firme bill of sale under my hand and seal."

ELIAS DOUGHTY.

"I Elias Doughty, do own to have received full satisfaction of the said *Archer* for the said lands and meadow; the house is yet to be: and he the said *Archer*, is to have his within the above said tract of land. September the 18th, 1667.

"It is to be understood that Mr. John Archer is to have the freshest meadow (boggy) that lyeth to the north side of Westchester path, between the Patent of Mr. O'Neale, within his second purchase, upon consideration that the said John Archer shall pay to the said Doughty, &c., &c.; as witness my hand."

ELIAS DOUGHTY.

Examined by JOHN WEST.

Upon the 4th of March, 1669, appears the following Indian confirmation to John Archer:—

#### INDIAN DEED OF FORDHAM.

"Be it known unto all men by these p'sents that upon ye 28th day of Sept. in the 21st year of ye Reigne of our Sovereigne Lord Charles the Second by ye Grace of God of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, King, Defend<sup>r</sup> of the faith, &c., Annoc Domini 1669, we Tacharetht, Mometaihatim Wackha, Pimekekeh, for and on ye behalfe of Ahwaroch, Achipor Miniquaes, Sachemacke, for & in ye behalfe of Annetic Pownocke, for & on ye behalfe of Lyssie, & we on ye behalfe of ye rest of ye owners, for the consideration hereafter expressed have graunted, bargained & sould, & by these p'sents due hereby grant, bargain and sell unto John Archer of Fordham, his heirs and assignss, a certaine Tract of upland and meadow ground upon ye maine, beginning Westward from a certaine place by ye Indians comonly called Muscota, so it goes to another place called by them Gowahasuasing & from thence round about ye kill called Papirininan & so to rune into Harlem Ryver at ye Hook called Saperewack, from thence it reacheth South East to ye place called Achqueehgenom, and from thence it reacheth alongst Broncks Ryver to Cowangough, so on Sachkerah and so to the first place Muscota, so that from Muscota to Sackerath it runs upon a straight east lyne to Broncks Ryver & from Saperewack to Acqueehgenom, South East by ye said ryver all w<sup>ch</sup> tract of land, as it is before described here, the aforesaid Indians on the behalfe of ourselves, those that have instructed us and our associates have sould unto ye said John Archer, his heirs & assignes for & in consid. of 13 coats of Duffells, one halfe anchor of Rume, 2 cans of Brandy, wine w<sup>th</sup> several other small matters to ye value of 60 guilders wampum. All which we acknowledge to have received of him the said John Archer before the ensealing & delivery of these pr'sents in full satisfaction for ye land afore men. Comed the w<sup>ch</sup> we doe hereby resigne & make over unto ye s<sup>d</sup> John Archer, his heirs & assignes w<sup>th</sup> all our right, title, and interest thereunto, as also those that have entrusted any of us o<sup>r</sup> & associates to HAVE & TO HOULD the s<sup>d</sup> tract of land & premises unto ye

s<sup>d</sup> John Archer, his heirs & assignes unto ye proper use & behoofe of him ye s<sup>p</sup> John Archer, his heirs & assignes forever, free, quit and cleare from all & any form of bargaine & sale, or any other incumbrances by us or by any from or under us & to ye utmost of o<sup>r</sup> powers shall keep and save him the s<sup>d</sup> John Archer, his heirs & assignes, harmlesse in his or their quiett possession & enjoyment of ye premises against any other Indian pr<sup>t</sup>enders whatsoever. In witness whereof we have hereunto put o<sup>r</sup> hand & seales, ye day & yeare first within wrytten

This bargain & sale was made by ye approbation & lycense of his Hon<sup>rs</sup> ye governors between ye parties mentoned, with this Proviso that his Royall Highness, his Rights & Priviledges as Lord Proprietor of theese his territoryes he hereby not any infringed,

MATTHIAS NICOLLS, Sec<sup>r</sup>

Entered by JOHN ARCHER, March 4th, 1669.<sup>a</sup>

By these and other purchases John Archer, Esq., eventually became seized in fee of 1,253 acres. Upon the 13th of November, 1671, Francis Lovelace, Esq., the Governor, issued the following letters patent erecting the whole into an infranchised township or manor of itself to be held by the feudal tenor of paying therefore yearly to the Duke of York and his successors upon the first day of March, (St. David's Day,) when demanded twenty bushels of good peas.<sup>b</sup>

#### THE ROYAL PATENT OF FORDHAM.

Francis Lovelace, Esq., one of the gentlemen of his Majestie's Hon<sup>ble</sup> Privy Chamber, and Governor-General under his Royal Highness, James Duke of York and Albany, and all his territories in America, to all to whom these presents shall come, sendeth greeting: Whereas, there is a certain parcel or tract of land within this government, upon the main continent, situate, lying and being to the Eastward of Harlem River, near unto ye passage commonly called *Spiting Devil*, upon which ye *New Dorp* or village is erected, known by the name of *Fordham*—ye utmost limits of the whole tract or parcel of land, beginning at the high wood land, that lyes do North-west over against the first point of the main land to the East of the Island *Pepirininan*—there where the hill *Moskuta* is—and soe goes alongst the said kill, the said land striking from the high wood land before mentioned East South-east, till it comes to Bronk's, his kill; soe Westward up alongst ye main land to the place where Harlem Kill and Hudson River meet, and then forth alongst Harlem Kill to the first spring or fountain, keeping to the

<sup>a</sup> Albany Deed Book, vol. iii. pp. 127, 128.

<sup>b</sup> In Lewin's report on the Government of New York, agent and servant to his Royal Highness in New York and Albany, &c., occurs the following: John Archer hath a patent granted to Col. Lovelace of a manor called Fordham for which he payeth £3 15s 1d p. ann.—N. Y. Col. Doc. vol. iii., 33. Gov. Andros's answer to Lewin's report, 24th Dec., 1681. "Mr. Archer's and all other quit rents have been from time to time accopted to his Royall Highness as p. sd. accots."—N. Y. Col. Doc. vol. iii., 309.



South of *Crabb Island*; see Eastward alongst Daniel Turner's land, the high wood land, and ye land belonging to Thomas Hunt; and then to Bronk's Kill afore mentioned, according to a survey lately made thereof by the surveyor-general—the which remains upon record; all which said parcel or tract of land before described being part of the land granted in the grand patent to Hugh O'Neal, and Mary his wife, purchase was made thereof by John Archer, from Elyas Doughty, who was invested in their interest as of the Indian proprietor, by my approbation, who all acknowledge to have received satisfaction for the same; and the said John Archer having, at his own charge, and with good success, begun a township in a convenient place for the relief of strangers, it being the road for passengers to go to and fro from the main, as well as for mutual intercourse with the neighboring colony, for all encouragement unto him, the said John Archer, in prosecution of the said design, and also for divers other good causes and considerations: know yee, that by virtue of ye commission and authority unto me given by his royal highness, upon whom, by lawful grant and patent from his majestie, the propriety and government of that part of the main land, as well as Long Island, and all the islands adjacent, amongst other things, is settled. I have given, granted, ratified and confirmed, and by these presents do give, grant, ratify and confirm to ye afore-mentioned John Archer, his heirs and assignees, all the said parcel or tract of land butted and bounded as aforesaid, together with all the lands, soyles, woods, meadows, pastures, marshes, lakes, waters, creeks, fishing, hawking, hunting and fowling, and all ye profits, commodities, emmoulments and hereditaments to the said parcel or tract of land or premises belonging or in anywise appertaining, and of every part and parcel thereof; and I doe likewise grant unto ye said John Archer, his heirs and assignees, that the house he shall erect, together with the said parcel or tract of land and premises, shall be forever hereafter held, claimed reputed, and be an entire and enfranchised township, manor and place of itself; and shall always, from time to time, and at all times hereafter, have, hold and enjoy like and equal privileges and immunities, with any town enfranchised or manor, within this government, and shall, in no manner of way, be subordinate or belonging unto, have any dependence upon, or in anywise be under the rule, order or direction of any riding, township, place or jurisdiction either upon the main or Long Island; but shall, in all cases, things and matters, be deemed, reputed, taken and held as an absolute, entire, enfranchised township, manor and place of itself in this government, as aforesaid, and shall be ruled ordered and directed in all matters as to government, by ye governor and his council, and ye General Court of Assizes, only, always provided that the inhabitants of the said town, or any part of the land granted as aforesaid, shall be obliged to send forward to ye next town or plantation, all public paequetts and letters, or hue and cryes, comming to this place or going from it towards, or to any of his majestie's colonies; and I do further grant unto the said John Archer, his heirs and assignees, that when there shall be a sufficient number of inhabitants in the town of Fordham, aforementioned, and the other parts of ye manor, capable of maintaining a minister, and to carry on other public affairs; that the neighboring inhabitants between the two kills of Harlem and Bronk's, be obliged to contribute towards the maintenance of their said minister and other necessary public charges that may happen to arise; and likewise that they belong to the said town, ac-



cording to the direction of the law, although their said farms and habitations be not included within this patent, to have and to hold ye said parcel and tracts of land, with all and singular the appurtenances and premises, together with the privileges, immunities, franchises and advantages herein given and granted unto the said John Archer, his heirs and assignees, unto the proper use and behoof of him, the said John Archer, and his heirs and assignees forever, fully, truly and clearly, in as large and ample manner, and from and with such full and absolute immunities and privileges as is before expressed, as if he held the same immediately from his majesty, the King of England, and his successors, as of the Manor of East Greenwich, in the county of Kent, in free and common soccage, and by fealty, only yielding, rendering and paying yearly and every year unto his royal highness, the Duke of York and his successors, or to such governor and governors as from time to time shall by him be constituted and appointed, as all acknowledgement and quit-rent, twenty bushels of good peas, upon the first day of March, when it shall be demanded. Given under my hand, and sealed with the seal of the province of Fort James, in New York, on the island of Manhattan, this thirteenth day of November, in the twenty-third year of the reign of our sovereign lord, Charles the Second, by the grace of God, of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, King Defender of the Faith, and Anno Domini, 1671.

FRANCIS LOVELACE.

"MICHAEL BASTYENSEN,

"VALENTYN CLAESSEN.<sup>a</sup>

- "Done at Fort William Hendricke, on the 18th Oct., 1673."

The following year, John Archer, Esq., laid claim to a neck of land called Humock Island, commonly named *Papiriniman*,<sup>b</sup> which he asserted he had by patent.

At a council held in the village of New Haerlem, this 4th of October, 1673.

PRESENT:—The Governor-General and Councillor, Cornelius Steenwyck.

The inhabitants of Fordham appear complaining in substance of the ill-government of their landlord, John Archer, requesting that they may be granted the nomination of their own Magistrates, as is allowed to all the other inhabitants of this government. Whereupon, the aforesaid John Archer being summoned to appear, the complaint is communicated to him, who voluntarily declares that he desists from the government, authority and patroonship of said town, reserving alone the property and ownership of the lands and houses there; according, therefore, to the said inhabitants the nomination of their own Magistrates, which is confirmed to them by the Governor and Council, whereupon the following minute is granted them:—

<sup>a</sup> Albany Rec. vol. xxiii. 26-52.

<sup>b</sup> See Yonkers.

The inhabitants of the town of Fordham are hereby authorized to nominate, by plurality of the votes of their town, six of the best qualified persons, exclusively of the Reformed Christian religion, as magistrates of said town, and to present said nomination by the first opportunity to the Governor-General, from which his Honor will then make the selection ; it is also recommended them to pay attention when nominating, that the half, at least of those nominated, be of the Dutch nation.

Dated New Harlem, 4th of October, 1673.<sup>a</sup>

“At a Council held in Fort William Hendrick, 15th June, 1674.

Present: GOVERNOR-GENERAL ANTHONY COLVE,  
COUNCILLOR CORNELIUS STEENWYCK,  
FISCAL WILLIAM KNYFF, and  
SECRETARY NICOLAES BAYARD, as assumed Councillors.”

John Archer requesting by petition, that Johannis Vervelen be ordered to hand over to him (the petitioner) the books concerning the town of Fordham. Ordered:—

“Sehout Vervelen is hereby directed to hand over to the Petitioner the books and protocols properly belonging to him.”<sup>b</sup>

Upon the 18th of September, 1669, John Archer mortgaged the Manor of Fordham to Cornelius Steenwyck, merchant of New York, for the sum of 2,200 guilders ; a second mortgage from John Archer to Steenwyck occurs on the 14th of November, 1671, for 7,000 guilders seawant or the the value payable in twelve years on November 14th, 1683, with yearly interest. The mortgage was in fee, with proviso that on payment of money mortgage was to be void, and Archer, his heirs and assigns to re-enter. It was expressed in the mortgage that Archer was to deliver the deeds unto Steenwyck, which the latter promised to return on payment of the money.<sup>c</sup> The above mentioned sums were increased by the additional mortgage of 24,000 guilders in 1676, payable seven years thereafter as appears from the following document:—

This indenture, made the twenty-fourth day of November, in the 2d year of the reign of our sovereign lord, Charles the Second, by the grace of God, of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the faith, and Anno Domini 1676, between John Archer, owner and proprietor of the manor of Fordham, upon the main, near Spiting Devil, on the one part, and Cornelius Steenwick, of

<sup>a</sup> N. Y. Col. MSS. vol. ii. p. 625.

<sup>b</sup> N. Y. Col. MSS. vol. ii., p. 721.

<sup>c</sup> It does not appear that the deeds were ever returned to Archer or his heirs. Indeed from that day to the present, the Archer family have always disclaimed the possession of any ancient deeds whatever. The Dutch Reformed Church of New York to whom Margaretta Steenwyck (the widow of Cornelius and wife of Henricus Selyns) conveyed the Manor in 1694, refuse any examination of their papers.

the city of New York, merchant, on the other part, witnesseth, that the said John Archer, for, and in consideration of the sum of twenty-four thousand guilders seawant, or the value to him paid, secured to be paid at or before the en sealing and delivering of these presents by the said Cornelius Steenwick, whereof and wherewith he, the said John Archer, doth acknowledge and confess himself to be fully satisfied, and thereof doth clearly acquit and discharge the said Cornelius Steenwick, his heirs, executors, and administrators, hath allowed, granted, bargained and sold, and by these presents doth fully, clearly and absolutely alien, grant, bargain and sell unto the said Cornelius Steenwick, his heirs and assigns forever, all his right, title and interest in the town and manor aforesaid, together with all the messuages, tenements, buildings and fences thereupon, and all the land improved or other ways now in the tenure or occupation of him, the said John Archer, and others, his tenants or assigns, and also all and all manner of rents, duties, and profits received or may be received, and payable for and in respect of every or any of the said bargained premises, and also all and singular deeds, patents, evidences and writings, touching and concerning the same, and the privileges therein contained, to have and to hold the said manor of Fordham, with the messuages and all and singular other the premises by these presents granted or intended to be granted, bargained and sold, with their and every of their appurtenances, unto the said Cornelius Steenwick, his heirs and assigns to the only proper use and behoof of him, the said Cornelius Steenwick, his heirs and assigns for ever, provided always, nevertheless, and upon the condition that if the said John Archer, his heirs, executors, administrators or assigns, or any of them at or in the new dwelling house of the said Cornelius Steenwick, situate and being in the city of New York, shall pay unto the said Cornelius Steenwick, his heirs, executors, or administrators or assigns, that value of twenty-four thousand guilders, or the value, within the time and term of seven years after the date hereof, that is to say, before the 24th day of November, which shall be in the year of our Lord, 1683, and also paying a yearly interest for the same until the principal be paid, at the rate of six per cent., as allowed by law, and that without fraud, or henceforth this present indenture or bargain and sale shall cease, determine, and be utterly void and of none effect to all intents, construction or purpose; and that then also it shall and may be lawful for the said John Archer, his heirs and assigns to enter into and upon the same bargained premises, wholly to re-enter, and the same to have again, and to possess as his and their former estates, anything contained in these presents to the contrary notwithstanding; and whereas the same John Archer, at or before the en sealing and delivery of these presents, hath delivered to the said Cornelius Steenwick certain deeds, patent evidences in writing, which he hath concerning the said bargained premises, he, the said Cornelius Steenwick, for himself, his heirs, executors and administrators, doth by these presents covenant and grant to and with the said John Archer, his heirs and assigns, and every of them, that if the said John Acher, &c. De— recorded 25th of November, 1678.

On the 20th of November, 1684, Cornelius Steenwyck, of New York, merchant, and Margaretta his wife, made their last will and testament in the Dutch language. After the usual preamble they express themselves to the following effect, viz:—



"We, the said testators, do declare that our earnest will and last desire is, that the general inheritance of us, the said testators, and between our heirs, shall be regulated after the form, manner, custom and practice of the Nether Dutch Nation, and according to the articles made upon the surrendering of this place. And I, the said testator, with the free consent of my wife, by form of a legacy, have given, grant and legacied as I, the said testator, by form and legacy, do give and grant by these presents, for and to the proper use and behoof of the Nether Dutch Reformed congregation within the city of New York, for the support and maintainance of their ministers, ordained according to the church orders of the Netherlands, now at present here in *being* or *hereafter to be called, ordained, or to come*, all the testators right, property, title, and hereditaments in and to the manor of Fordham, lying in the county of Westchester, together with all the lands, meadows, fields, woods, creeks, rivulets, and other waters, as also all the said testators jurisdiction, right, title, action and property, in and to the said Manor of Fordham, with all the patents, deeds, schedules, hypothets, mortgages, and other instruments of writing, to the said manor of Fordham, belonging or in any wise appertaining, in as full and ample as the said manor of Fordham now already in property is belonging, or hereafter more amply shall be confirmed unto the said testator by deed conveyance, transport, hypothet, mortgage, judgment or otherwise, from or by any manner of way or means, of John Archer, deceased, last owner and proprietor of the said Manor of Fordham.

And I, the said testator, doe further order and declare, as my last will and testament, the said manor of Fordham, together with all the benefits, profits, incomes, advantages, rents, and revenues, and all appurtenances thereof, shall be conveyed, transported and made over, in a fee, quiet, and full property and enjoyment by the testator's appointed executrix, within the space of six months after the testator's decease, or upon lawful demand, to the elders and overseers of the Nether Dutch congregation, for the *proper use and behoof* of the minister of the said congregation, as heretofore at large is expressed and set forth, to be held in full property, possession and enjoyment, inheritably and forever, by the said elders or overseers at the time of the testator's decease in being, and all others that from time to time shall succeed in their places, to the end and use as aforesaid, without any let or hindrance or contradiction of any person or persons whatsoever.<sup>a</sup>

Provided always that none of the lands of the said manor shall be made away, alienated, or contrary to the tenor of these presents, or otherwise disposed of, but from thenceforth forever be and remain as lands of inheritance towards the support and maintaining of the church ministry of the said congregation as before expressed and recited and not otherwise. And finally, I, the said testator, do hereby declare that I have nominated, appointed, and authorized my aforesaid dear and loving wife Margarite Riemers<sup>b</sup> to be my only and lawful executrix

<sup>a</sup> On the 14th of Nov., 1671, occurs an agreement by which John Archer was to pay ten per cent. upon the 7th of May, 1674. Thomas Gibs and John Curtis complained to the Governor that John Archer, at Fordham, is owing them some money, and that said Archer is disposing of his effects with intention to defraud his creditors of their just right; therefore the Schout and Magistrates of the aforesaid town of Fordham, are hereby ordered and commanded to arrest, on the complaint of said persons, the estate and effects of the above mentioned Archer, and to allow said persons, after due examination, and according to the state of the case, to receive good law and justice."—N. Y. Col. MSS. vol. ii, 708.

<sup>b</sup> Margaret De Reimer was the daughter of — De Reimer and Elizabeth Grevenrack. Margaret, after the death of Steenwyck, married Dominie Henricus Selyns.



of this my last will and testament, giving and granting by these presents unto her my said wife as full and ample power and authority as all other executors by law have and do enjoy, as in and by an English translated copy thereof and the said original Dutch will in the hands and custody of the said minister, elders and deacons doth fully and at large appear," &c., &c.<sup>a</sup>

Soon after the making of this will the said *Cornelius Steenwyck*, died so seized and possessed of the Manor as aforesaid.

Subsequently John Archer, the younger son and heir of John Archer, first grantor of the manor of Fordham, by an indenture bearing date the 16th of October, 1685, "for and in consideration therein mentioned, did grant, release and convey the said manor of Fordham, and his estate, right, and title of it and to the same, and the equity of redemption thereof, and all the deeds unto the aforesaid Margaretta Steenwyck, and make livery in seize thereof," &c. Upon the 10th of January, 1694, Dominie Henricus Selyns and Margaretta, his wife, formerly Margaretta Steenwyck, by their certain deed poll, under their hands and seals, did grant and convey to Colonel Nicholas Bayard, Captain Isaac Vermilyea, Jacob Bolen Rockloyzun, and John Harpendinck, then elders and overseers of the Nether Dutch Church within the city of New York, &c., and their lawful successors and heirs and posterity the said manor of Fordham, lying in the County of Westchester above mentioned:—

"With all the lands and meadows, fields, woods, rivulets, creeks and other rivers, together with all the rights, title, property, jurisdiction, and interest which either the aforesaid Cornelius Steenwyck or in quality as before in any other manner of way before that time had in the said manor of Fordham, and its appurtenances, whether it be by right from the said John Archer, or from his son, John Archer, Jr., to be held and forever enjoyed, used, and possessed, and held in full and absolute property, as an hereditary estate, by the said elders and overseers of the aforesaid congregation who were then in being, with all the profits, incomes, benefits, and revenues, for the *better support* and maintainance of the *said minister*, called pursuant to order of the Church of Netherlands then *present* or that *should thereafter be called and come*.

"Provided, and with the aforesaid condition and stipulant, that the Manor with all its appurtenances, should, *in no wise* be alienated nor estranged, contrary to the tenor of the aforementioned will and bequest, but should remain to the use and behoof aforesaid, and *not otherwise*, releasing therefor, the said deed to property, title and right that this said grantors as well for themselves or in quality as above heretofore had to the said Manor and its appurtenances, could

<sup>a</sup> The will bears date N. Y. 20. Nov. 1684 and was entered 8th of May 1685, surrogates office N. Y., Vol. xix p. 139—140, inventory and appraisment of estate of Mr. Cornelius Steenwyck decd. July 1686. In a list of debtors in the Book K among many others occurs the following names: 224 Lewis Morris, Jr., guilder, 603.5.0; 264 Thomas Hunt, guild., 222.8.0, Jan Archer at Fordham concerning land there included in the will guild. 38800.19; Philip Pinkne East Chester guild. 100.0.0; Jacobus Terneur guild. 709; Jacobus Van Cortlandt guild. 59.14.0; Mr. Wm. Penn £120 &c.; John Risbell guild. 10947. 1,—total am't £15852.14.5. Surr. office, vol. xix 289.

or ought to have in any manner of way whatsoever as by the said indenture in the hands and custody of the said Nicholas Bayard and the present elders of the said Dutch church became seized and possessed of the premises aforesaid in trust to the use and purpose aforesaid."

The manor of Fordham was subsequently confirmed to the Nether Dutch Church within the city of New York by the royal charter, ninth of William and Mary, May 11th, 1696.

On the 7th of Dec, 1724, a bill was filed in Chancery by the minister, elders and deacons, &c., of the Dutch church, against Lewis Morris which shows that the orators were seized for many years of a certain Manor of Fordham, situate, lying and being within the bounds of the county of Westchester, to the eastward of Harlem river, near unto the passage formerly called Spiten Divil, and now known by the name of Kings Bridge, beginning at the high woodland that lyes due north-west over against the first point of the main-land to the east of Paperimiman there where the kill Muskoota is, and so goes along the said kill; the said land stretching from the high woodland aforementioned, east, south-east, until it comes to Bronck's kill, so westward up along the main-land to the place where Harlem kill and Hudson's river meet, and then further alongst Harlem kill to the fresh spring or fountain lying to the south of Crabb Island, so eastward along Daniel Turneur's land the high woodland belonging to Thomas Hunt and then to Bronck's kill aforementioned; and also of and in a parcell of meadows number and situate, lying and being on the said Harlem river near the Manor of Fordham, beginning in the middle of a point to the north of Cregier's house, beyond of above the small cove that lyes above the said house and south-west on Harlem river, and extends further northward to the highway where the wooden bridge lyes." Orator's title derived by a patent given to John Archer by Governor Lovelace, Nov. 13th, 1671, strengthened and supported by a former purchase made of Elias Doughty of part thereof which he held by a former patent, of land in Westchester to one Hugh O'Neal, an old Indian purchase bearing date 20th of Sept., 1669, a warrant of survey and actual survey and return thereof made to Governor Lovelace prior to said purchase with sundry powers and privileges in said patten mentioned and expressed. Receipts mortgage, to Steenwyck, dated Nov. 24th, 1676, which came into the hands of Margareta, widow and executrix of Steenwyck, and that after death of Archer, Sr., Esq., of release became vested in John Archer, Jr., son and heir of John Archer the patentee. That by deed of said Archer, dated 16th of October, 1685, Archer conveyed to Margareta Steenwyck in fee all the said manor of Fordham. Margareta being so seized, did soon thence after intermarrying with Henrycus Selyns, the minister of the Dutch church in the city of New York; who afterwards on the 1st day of January, 1694, with said Margareta, by a certain deed pole gave and granted the manor of Fordham unto ye Elders of the Dutch church to and for the use of the Dutch church, and said manor was confirmed to said church by a charter dated May 11th 1696. That within

some few years or months, they and their tenants, who hold part of the said Manor, by, from and under them, have met with great disturbances from Lewis Morris, Esq., Chief Justice of the Province of New York, and the town or borough of Westchester, Daniel Turneur and Thomas Hunt, of Westchester, who pretend title to some part or parts of the same Manor, and more particularly the said Lewis Morris, Esq., hath not only caused their fences to be pulled down and removed, but some time within these two years, hath entered upon, &c., and taken possession of upwards of three hundred acres (of said manor of Fordham) of the best of their land adjoining to his Manor of Morrisania, and hath given out in speeches that unless they will release to him the said quantity of land and of their said Manor, he will lay claim to their whole Manor, either in his own right or in the rights of the borough of Westchester, and that if your orators will freely and peaceably release to him and let him keep and hold the quiet possession and enjoyment of said three hundred acres, he will release to ye orators all the rest of the said Manor, and also procure to them the like release to them from the town of Westchester. As orators witnesses cannot live long who can prove the running of the line—prays for examination “*in perpetuan rei memoriam*,” and asks for subpœna against Morris, Mayor, Aldermen and Commonality of Westchester, Daniel Turneur and Thomas Hunt.”

On the 5th of May, 1725, appears notice of taxation of costs for setting aside the subpœnas irregularly issued against the defendants in the above suit, also a draft of the foregoing bill in Chancery, likewise a copy of Mire *vs.* Trespass case without date. On the 27th of March, 1725, occurs the filing of a demurrer to above bill.

Besides the above documents, all of which are in the possession of Gouverneur Morris, Esq., are the following: 1. Copy of O’Neal’s Patent. 2. Dutch Church Charter. 3. John Archer’s Patent, 1671. 4. Letter of Lewis Morris, April 25th, 1717, protests against surveying the boundary line. 5. Elias Doughty to Betts and Tippets. 6. Petition of Dutch Church, filed Dec. 7th, 1724, praying for an examination of witnesses “*in perpetuam rei memoriam*,” for the proof of the title of the said Dutch Church to the manor of Fordham, a copy of original supposed to be filed in Court of Chauncery. 7. Copy of panel of jurors dated Rye, March 13th, 1759, Dutch Church *vs.* Lewis Gerardus Willets, *et al.* 8. A green paper endorsed, “Papers relating to dispute between Morrisania and the Manor of Fordham.” N. B.—Lewis Morris, under the Fordham title, possessed himself of the upper part of Morrisania—now owned under his will by his son William. 9. Draft of advertisement. 10. List of jurors balloted, 15th March. 1759. 11. July, 1756, Supreme Court, issue joined and Coroner directed to draw a jury. 12. Partial draft of foregoing advertisement. 13. A brief submitted by Lewis Morris; the same Lewis Morris, original defendant, died in May. 1746. 14.



Dec. 12th, 1684. Lewis Morris is furnished with a complaint in trespass brought by one Robert Huestis against William Walton, and is requested by Walton to appear and answer at the next Court of Sessions then to defend his title. 15. Memorandum of Testimony (no date). 16. The plea of Daniel and Woodhull Turneur in the Supreme Court against the complaint of the Minister, Elders and Deacons of the Dutch Church. They deny the trespass, except cutting trees ; and as to that, say they are not guilty—and of this throw themselves on the country ; they say the trees were not worth the value stated in the declaration, and that the Freeholders and inhabitants of Westchester long before the trespass, Aug. 16th, 1680, was seized of the lands ; and on said day, at town meeting, gave to one William Richardson and associates, the privilege of a certain stream called Brunck's river, to set up two mills, viz: one saw-mill and one corn-mill, to continue so long as said mills should be kept up and maintained, with privilege of cutting timber growing on the common lands. In pursuance of above, Richardson entered, &c., and built mills and kept and maintained the same and fulfilled his costs by means of which, grantee was seized in his desmessness long before Dec. 23d, 1692, when he, Richardson, made his will and empowered his executors to sell his estate, both houses, lands and mills ; and on July 23d, 1695, sold lands, &c., to Evart Bybank, and Johannes Hoghland, heirs and assigns, Hoghland (date not given) did release to Bybank. Bybank so seized Dec. 24th, 1709, willed property to Wyntie, his wife, heirs and assigns, forever. Soon after Evart Bybank died ; and Wyntie entered by virtue of Evarts will, and on 2d of April, 1711, granted lands and privileges to William Provost, heirs and assigns. June 26th, 1712, Provost sold land to Nicholas Brown ; 31st of March, 1719, Brown sold to Turneur, which Daniel Turneur is now seized of same ; and the said Daniel and Woodhull, servant of Daniel, did cut down said trees, "with as little spoile" as may be. 17. Other copies of advertisement forewarning persons not to purchase any part of the Manor of Fordham, if it lies south of the southerly line of Hugh O'Neal's patent. Then follow memorandum as to mortgages from Archer to Cornelius Steenwyck, as given in the preceding pages of the main text.

In December, 1753, the Lieutenant-Governor of his majesty's province of New York, with the Council and Assembly, passed an act entitled:—

"An act to enable the minister, elders, and deacons of the Reformed Protestant Dutch Church of the city of New York to sell and dispose of their lands, tenements, and hereditaments in the County of Westchester, commonly called and known by the name of the *Manor of Fordham*, &c.



And be it further enacted, by the authority aforesaid, that the moneys arising by such sale or sales shall not be disposed of to any secular use, but the same shall be expended and used in purchasing or improving lands and other real estate, in order to secure a better and more large revenue or income towards supporting and maintaining of the said Dutch minister, or ministers, of the said Dutch churches and congregations, as near as may be agreeable to the will and intentions of the said donor, Cornelius Steenwyck, &c."

On the 25th of February, 1755, the above act was confirmed by the king in Council.<sup>a</sup>

The principal grantees of the manor under the Dutch Reformed Church were Charles Doughty, who held 230 acres; John Vanholst, 138 acres; Daniel Sicard, 108 acres, (of whom Benjamin Archer purchased;) Joseph and Bishop, 155 acres, the Dyckmans, &c. The residue, consisting of forty acres, was sold to the Hon. Lewis Morris and William Kelly in 1760. Upon the 2d of May, 1774, Lewis Morris and William Kelly conveyed 110 acres to Peter Valentine, in whose descendants this portion of the Manor is still vested.

Through the liberality of Mrs. Steenwyck, three hundred acres are said to have been exempted from the sale to the Dutch Church, upon which was situated the old manorial residence. Be this as it may, however, we find Benjamin Archer, son of Samuel, and grand son of John Archer, first grantor of the manor of Fordham, in 1780, seized in fee of a portion of the manor. Upon the death of Benjamin it passed to his children—Benjamin Archer, John Archer, Sarah, the wife of Jacob Alord, and Rachel, the wife of James Crawford. In 1786 Sarah and Rachel conveyed their rights and interest unto Benjamin Archer, their brother; whose sons, the late William and Samuel Archer, conveyed to Gustav Schwab, James Punnett, H. W. T. Mali, Loring Andrews, and F. L. Johnson.

The family of Archer is of English origin—Fulbert L'Archer, (a surname signifying for distinction's sake the archer, or bowman,) the first of whom any thing is known, came into England with William the Conqueror.<sup>b</sup> The Archers for many centuries held large possessions in the County of Warwickshire. The representative of the senior branch in 1560 appears to have been Humphrey Archer of Warwickshire,<sup>b</sup> who was born in 1527 and died October 24th, 1562, eldest son and heir of Richard Archer, twelfth in descent from the above mentioned Fulbert. Hum-

<sup>a</sup> In the ancient catalogue, or Roll of Battle Abbey, Sussex, England, occurs the name of "Archere." Arms of Archer, of Umbusdale County, of Warwick: Azure, three broad arrows in pale or, Crest out of a mural coronet gu—a dragons head arg.

<sup>b</sup> Andrew Archer, armiger, of Tanwork, was High Sheriff of Warwickshire, 6th of Jan. 1608; arms as above.—Fuller's Worthies of England, vol. iii., p. 295.

phrey, married Elizabeth Townsend, and left among other sons—John whose son John was the father of John Archer, first Lord of this manor. The latter probably accompanied the early settlers from Fairfield, Conn., to Westchester, circ 1654-5; for in 1657 his name appears as plaintiff in an action of debt brought against one Roger Wiles of the latter town. His branch of the family might have removed out of Warwickshire into Norfolk, from whence they came to New England. Several of this name were early settlers of Massachusetts, viz., Henry, of Ipswich in 1641; and Samuel Archer, a carpenter, who requested freedom, lived in Salem, and died in 1667. Hubbard, in his "Indian Wars," mentions a Layton Archer, and his son of Rhode Island who were killed by the Indians, 25th of June, 1675.<sup>a</sup> John Archer, first Lord of this Manor, was Sheriff of New York city from 1679 to 1682. It is said that he suddenly expired in his coach while journeying from his manorial residence to New York city sometime in October, 1685, and was interred on Tetard Hill. His eldest son, John Archer, second Lord of the manor, married Sarah, daughter of William Odell, of Fordham, as appears by the following license issued by Governor Dongan in 1686:—

"By his Excellency the governor, whereas, I have received information of a mutual intent and agreement between John Archer of the one part, and Sarah Odell of the other part, to solemnize marriage together, for which they have requested my lycense, and there appearing no lawful impediment for the obstruction thereof, these are to authorize and empower you to join the said John and Sarah Odell in the bonds of matrimony, and them to pronounce man and wife, and to make record thereof, if convenient to the laws in that behalf provided, for which this shall be your warrant. Given under my hand and seal, at Fort James, in New York, the seventh day of October, 1686, under the second year of his majesties reign.

THOMAS DONGAN."

#### PROVINCE OF NEW YORK,

These may certify all persons to whom those presents shall come, that John Archer, of the manor of Fordham, in the County of Westchester, and Sarah Odell of the same place, by virtue of his Excellency the Governor's license, bearing date 7th day of October, 1686, were both joined together in matrimony the —day of December, in the year of our Lord God, 1686, and in the 2nd year of his majesty's reign.

ITA ROGATUS, *Attestator*.

JOHN PALMER, *Justice of Quorum*.

John Archer, although charged under the manorial patent as mesne lord, with the proper oversight for the maintainance of a minister in the town of Fordham. (the parishioners living between the two kills of Har-

<sup>a</sup> *Farmer's Register*.

lem and Bronck's,) yet appears to have attached himself to Westchester; for in 1703 he was elected a vestryman of the precinct of Yonkers, (which included Fordham, both towns being embraced in the extensive parish of Westchester,) an office which he held for nearly seven years, and died in 1783.<sup>a</sup>

The children of John Archer and Sarah Odell, were: John, Samuel, Richard, and others, who have left numerous descendants; Samuel, the second son, left one son, Benjamin Archer of Fordham, whose son Benjamin was for many years owner in fee of part the manor.

In 1671, Daniel Turneur, of New Harlem, purchased forty morgen of land from the Indian sachems Shataash, Panazarah and others, which said "tract of land is lying upon ye maine next to ye land of John Archer, beginning at ye bay on ye south side of Crabb Island and so running along ye creek parting ye maine and Manhattan's Island to Brunx land extending east and west so far as the land of the said John Archer," &c.<sup>b</sup> This sale is presumed to have embraced Devoe's point, called by the Aborigines "Nuasin."

On the 15th of June, 1668, Richard Nicoll, Governor of the Province, confirmed to the above grantee all that "certain piece or parcel of land upon the maine, lying and being to the north of Bronck's land, beginning at the mouth of Maenneppis kill (Cromwell's creek) and goes into the woods the depth of fifty rods, containing eighty acres, &c."

The following conveyance was made by the Indians in 1676, to the widow of Turneur and his son Daniel:—

#### INDIAN DEED OF MENTIPATHE.

NEW YORK, MAY 10TH, 1676.

This day appeared here, in the office of Recorder, Jackeline Turnier, widow, and Daniel Turnier, the sonne of Daniel Turnier, late of New Harlem, deceased, who brought with him some Indyan proprietors to attend the governor, and, to acknowledge before his Honor, the sale of a certain piece of land at Mentipathe Kill, beginning from the mark't white oake tree, so runs northerly to a creek called Saproughah, by Crabb Island, then running east and west to Bronckx river. But his Honor being absent and the said Indyans, having occasions abroad, so

<sup>a</sup> The will of John Archer, of Eastchester, bears date 4th of May, 1758, to his eldest son, Abraham, his house and all my farm of land, &c., lying in Eastchester at a place called Pond Field which I bought of Elsha Barton, &c.; to his son John, £5. he having received the rest of his portion already; to his grand-son, Jacob, son of Jacob Archer, the sum of £5; to his well beloved wife, Elizabeth, all my household goods, &c. Proved 12th of July, 1758, Surrogate's office N. Y., Rec. wills, No. 21, pp. 61-62. Will of Jonathan Archer, of Eastchester, 26th of Sept., 1764, sons, Ezekiel and John, daughter Sarah, wife of Stephen Fowler, daughter Abigail, wife of Joshua Pell, Jr., grand-son, Caleb. Proved 19th of August, 1766, Surrogate's office, Rec. Wills, No. 25, 1765, 1767, p. 279. Will of Ezekiel Archer, 1773, wife Phul-nar, son Ezekiel, daughters Martha and Abigail, wife and sister Jane Tippet, brother-in-law Joshua Pell. Surrogate's office N. Y., No. xxix p. 34.

<sup>b</sup> Vol. vii, Land Papers, Albany, 1643 to 1803, p. 42.

that they cannot attend his Honor's returne, do hereby acknowledge that they have sold the above named tract of land together with all manner of appurtenances, benefitts and priviledges thereunto appertaining, unto the afore-named Daniel Turnier, his heirs and assigns forever, and that they likewise have received full payment and due satisfaction for the same, and do also desire that this their acknowledgement of the aforesaid sale may bee authoritick, legall and effectuell, to all intent and purposes, whatsoever. In witness whereof, we the Indyan Proprietors, namely: Jackeline, Aughwaron, Schapemosse, Toocooran, Narrowes and Assinney, have hereunto sett our names, the day and year above written.

Acknowledged by the said Indyan  
in the presence of

WM. DARNALL,  
RD. MEYER,  
G. MINIWELL,  
RICH. CHARLSON.<sup>a</sup>

RAEHHOWWACON, ○ His mark,  
AUGHWAROSE, ○ His mark,  
SCHAPEMOON, ○ His mark,  
TOVCOVRAN, ○ His mark,  
NARROWNEKE, ○ His mark,  
ASSINNEY, ○ His mark.

Upon the restoration of the Dutch in 1673, we find the inhabitants of Fordham, petitioning at a meeting of the Governor-General, through counsellor Cornelius Steenwyck, in the village of New Harlem, 4th of October, 1673, "upon which occasion the inhabitants of *Fordham* appeared and complained, in substance, of the bad management of their lord, (land-heer), John Archer, soliciting that they might be permitted to make the nomination of their own magistrates, &c., as is granted to all the other inhabitants under this government; on which, the aforesaid John Archer, being summoned, this complaint was communicated to him, who voluntarily declared that he abdicated all authority and patronage over the villages, reserving only to himself the property of the lands and houses there, and permitting the said inhabitants the nomination of their own magistrates, which was confirmed by the Governor and Council. The following act was granted them:—

"The inhabitants of the *village of Fordham* are, by a majority of votes, to choose a number of six persons of the best qualified inhabitants, and only those of the *Reformed Christian religion*, as magistrates of the aforesaid village, and to present the aforesaid nomination, by the first opportunity to the Governor-General, from which he shall make the election. They are recommended to take care that at least the half of the nominated are of the Dutch nation. Done in this village of New Harlem, 4th of October, 1673.

"From the nomination of the inhabitants of Fordham, there are elected, by the Governor, as magistrates of said village for the ensuing year.

"JOHANNES VERVEELEN, as *Schepen* and *Secretary*.

<sup>a</sup> Albany Deed books. In 1668, letters of Adm. were granted to Martha Turner, widow of Laurens Turner, of Westchester, in North Riding of Yorkshire. Sur. office, N. Y., Wills and Adm. 1665 to 1683, No. 1, p. 71.



The ancient Dorp, or village of Fordham, according to the annexed survey, still preserved among the land papers at Albany, stood on or near that part of the Westchester shore of Harlem River now called Kings Bridge, or as the Royal Patent recites—"near unto ye passage commonly called Spiting Divil, upon which land ye New Dorp or village is erected, known by the name of *Fordham*." Here John Archer, the first mesne lord, "at his own charge, and with good success began a township in a convenient place for the relief of strangers, circ 1668, it being the road for passengers to go to and fro from the main, as well as for mutual intercourse with the neighboring colony." The old village has long since disappeared—not a vestige remains behind, save a few bricks and stones which serve to mark its site. The present village of Fordham is situated on the line of the Harlem and New Haven Railroad, where is a depot of the former road, twelve and a half miles north of the City Hall. Near the depot stands the civil and police courts for the Twenty-third and Twenty fourth Wards of the city of New York, also one of the largest and best arranged public schools of the city. Here are four churches, numerous stores and manufactories, &c. A short distance north of Fordham is a depot for Jerome Park which borders on the Croton Aqueduct. Here is located a large race course and club house belonging to the American Jockey Club.

Little is known concerning the early history of religion in the manor except, that as early as 1671 "the inhabitants residing between the two Kills of Harlem and the Broncks" were obliged to contribute towards the support of a minister when one should be settled or called in the Manor of Fordham.

In May 1696 a society was organized here by the Collegiate Dutch Reformed congregation of New York. The Rev. John Montaigne being minister; and Henricus Selyns, William Beekman, Johannes Kerbyle, Johannes Depyster, Jacobus Kipp, Isaac de Forrest, and Isaac de Reyner elders and deacons. The next minister seems to have been the Rev. Henricus Beyse, who about 1709 resigned his pastorate and joined the Church of England. For Colonel Lewis Morris writing to the venerable Propagation Society in 1709, says:—

"I have used some endeavours to persuade the Dutch in my neighborhood into a good opinion of the Church of England; and have had that success, that they would, I believe, join a great part of them in the sacraments and worship—had they Dutch Common Prayer Books and a minister who understood their language. I have taken some pains with one of their ministers, one Henricus Beyse, and have prevailed on him to accept of Episcopal ordination."

The Provincial clergy addressing Governor Hunter of New York May 14th, 1712, state among other things that:—

“The Reverend Mr. Beys has represented that he suffers hardships, having no salary from the people of New Harlem where he officiates; and his establishment from the Society being uncertain through some aspersions thrown upon him by his adversaries, we heartily recommend him to your Ex'cy to protect and encourage him according to his services.”

The last minister, prior to the revolution, was the Rev. Dom. John Tétard.<sup>a</sup> This individual was of French descent and succeeded the Rev. Jean Carle as pastor of the French church in New York. The name of Tétard frequently occurs among the records of the French church Du St. Esprit between the years 1680 and 1770.<sup>b</sup>

The following minutes are extracted from the record of the New York Classis:

“At a classis held in Flatbush on Tuesday, September 2d, 1800, &c. The church in the *Manor of Fordham*, being reduced during the war, and a prospect now opening of their being restored, *Resolved*, that this Classis encourage and countenance them, by assisting and supplying them. *Resolved* further, that Dr. Livingston visit and preach to them as soon as convenient.”

“In 1802 Mr. Livingston reported that he had fulfilled his appointment, whereupon it was resolved that Mr. Jackson take charge of the congregation and give them all the service in his power.”

“October 19th, 1809, the church of Fordham having called the Rev. John Jackson he was approved by the Classis, who also resolved that the Rev. Dr. Gerardus A. Kuypers, as *primarius*, and the Rev. Cornelius C. Vermilyea, as *secundus*, be a committee to install the Rev. John Jackson.”

#### LIST OF MINISTERS OF THE DUTCH REFORMED CHURCH, FORDHAM MANOR.

| INST. OR CALL. | PASTORS.                      | VACATED BY.  |
|----------------|-------------------------------|--------------|
| 1696,          | REV. JOHN MONTAGUE,           | resignation. |
| 1707,          | REV. HENRICUS BEYSE,          | “            |
| 1776,          | REV. DOM. JOHN PETER TETARD,  | “            |
| 1802,          | REV. JOHN JACKSON,            | “            |
| 1840,          | REV. PETER I. VAN PELT, D.D., | “            |
| 1846,          | REV. WILLIAM CAHOONE,         | “            |
| 1850,          | REV. ROBT. VAN AMBURGH,       | “            |
| 1853,          | REV. JOHN H. BEVIER,          | “            |

<sup>a</sup> Doc. Hist. of N. Y., vol. III, p. 130.

<sup>b</sup> See Vorrien's Hist. Discourse of the Church Du St. Esprit.

|            |                           |                 |
|------------|---------------------------|-----------------|
| 1855,      | REV. JAMES BEATTIE,       | "               |
| 1864,      | REV. JAMES BOLTON,        | "               |
| 1866,      | REV. JAMES B. HARENBURGH, | stated supply.  |
| 1869,      | REV. JOHN TRUMAN,         | resignation.    |
| 1874,      | REV. WM. BRUSH,           | "               |
| 1876,      | REV. D. JEWETT,           | stated supply.  |
| Oct. 1876, | REV. WM. ANDERSON,        | present pastor. |

The Dutch Reformed or Reformed church stands upon rising ground on the north side of the road leading from the village of Fordham to Kings Bridge near Jerome Park, close to the line of the Croton Aqueduct.

A still older stucture, however, was constructed in 1801, which was superceded by the present edifice. The first church, which was built in 1706, through the liberality of Margaretta Steenwyck or Selyns, William Dyckman and others was standing in 1724 (but has long since departed) on the farm of James Valentine,<sup>a</sup> now occupied by Moses Devoe. The residence of the latter is said to have been the old Dutch Parsonage.

The following inscription on the foundation stone of this edifice is still preserved in the new church:—

I. V. S.

1706.

Before the Revolutionary war the Manor of Fordham was considered as joined for all ecclesiastical purposes to Yonkers, which formed one of the three precincts of the parish of Westchester; and we have already seen that at least one of the Lords of the Manor, was a vestryman of that ancient parish. Still Fordham like Morrisania continued to be associated with Westchester, even after the Revolution, in the support of a minister, until the year 1853 when the present parish of St. James was organized under the following circumstances:—"Numerous residents of the Manor experiencing much inconvenience in attending Episcopal services on account of having no place of worship; and considering moreover in the great increase of population, that the cause of the Church might suffer by having no spiritual provision made for her members where the wants of other Denominations are so amply considered, called a meeting—which assembled at the house of William Alexander Smith, Esq., on the 5th of July, 1853—for the purpose of organizing a parish, and adopting such measures as would most effectually conduce to the

<sup>a</sup> The following inscription is taken from a stone in the Valentine house adjoining the site of the old church: "H. M. K., 1704." The initials stand for Henry and Mary Kier.

same. Oswald Cammann, Esq., in the Chair ; William Watson Waldron, acting as Secretary. It was then and there,

*Resolved:* "That the persons present do proceed to incorporate themselves as a religious Society in Communion with the Protestant Episcopal Church in the United States of America ; and that the said Church and Congregation be known in law, by the name and title of the Rector, Wardens and Vestrymen of St. James' Church in the Manor of Fordham, town of West Farms, County of Westchester. The meeting proceeded to choose two church-wardens and eight vestrymen for the said church, when the following persons were elected : Lewis G. Morris and William Alexander Smith, church-wardens ; Oswald Cammann, Francis McFarlan, William Watson Waldron, George Bement Butler, Samuel R. Trowbridge, Gulian Ludlow Dashwood, William Ogden Giles and Nathaniel Platt Bailey, vestrymen."

In 1864 the vestry purchased two acres of land, near the village of Fordham, adjoining to and fronting on the grand Central Avenue leading from New York to White Plains. Here the corner stone of the new Church of St. James was laid May 28th, 1864. The building so auspiciously begun was completed the following year, and consecrated on All Saints day (Nov. 1st) by the Rt. Rev. the Bishop of the Diocese ; the Rev. Morgan Dix, D. D., rector of the Trinity church, New York, preaching the sermon. The edifice which is constructed of native stone, with red sand-stone trimmings, is in the early English style, consisting of nave, southern transept and apsidal chancel ; to which it is proposed to add in the future a tower over the south-west entrance.

The four chancel windows, which are exceedingly rich both in tone and color, represent the Evangelists, between which is depicted the calling of the Apostle St. James the Great or the Elder (who was nearly related to our Saviour) an angel in the back ground bearing a sword emblematic of his martyrdom. The fourth in this beautiful group of windows is a memorial one erected by the parishioners to the memory of George P. Cammann, M. D., one of the founders of the church and the inventor of the world renowned "Cammann's Stethoscope"—a discovery which this noble and humane individual presented gratis to the medical profession—representing the healing of the lame man at the Beautiful Gate by St. Peter and St. John. On the east side of the transept and almost immediately over the font, is a memorial window, erected to Oswald Cammann, representing St. John baptizing our blessed Saviour in the river Jordan. All the before mentioned windows were manufactured at the royal stained glass manufactory at Munich, Bavaria. In the transept are also memorial windows to Miles Standish Davidson and Kate Miles Davidson (lineal descendants of the celebrated soldier Miles Standish



the first captain of the settlers at Plymouth, New England, who was born in England in 1584, and came to America with the pilgrim fathers in 1620, and died 1656), children of the late Colonel M. O. Davidson, a civil engineer of distinction, representing the infant Jesus bearing the orb of empire; and also St. Catharine leaning upon the wheel, an emblem of the tortures to which she was exposed. The wheel window in the gable end of the transept is a memorial to the late Mrs. Mary Bailey Woolsey, wife of Theodore B. Woolsey, and daughter of Nathaniel P. Bailey, Esq., representing cross, anchor and flowers, among the latter the simple Marguerites<sup>a</sup> or Daisies predominate, her chosen favorite. Another window on the west side of the transept is a memorial to Catharine and Eliza Howell, and represents one of Fra Angelico's winged seraphs or angels, and Jesus bearing the lamb. In the south aisle of the nave is a memorial window to Oswald Cammann, Sen., one of the benefactors of the church and founder of the well known Banking house of Cammann & Co., of New York city, depicting in one compartment the Chalice, or sacramental cup, signifying faith; in the other a crown of thorns, emblematic of suffering and victory. The north-west window in the nave is a memorial to Charles Drake, M.D., erected by his sister, Mrs. Seaman, of Kings Bridge, representing the Saviour's healing of the blind man. A richly ornamented Catharine wheel window occupies the west gable of the nave, containing emblems of the Holy Trinity in unity and the four evangelists. The altar and font are of caen stone, richly carved; the former is placed in the centre of the apsis or chancel on the plan of the ancient churches as described by Eusebius and other writers, the Bishops seat being placed directly behind it against the wall of the apsis. The font was presented to the church, by the young men of the parish. The furniture of the chancel, pulpit, lectern and seats are of white oak; a cross stands on the altar, a memorial of William and Maria Mali deceased parishioners. The bell was presented by the Rev. Charles C. Tiffany, a former rector of the parish. The communion service consists of two chalices, a flagon and paten inscribed as follows:

“Presented by the ladies of the parish,  
A. D. 1854.”

William W. Waldron, by the donation of two hundred volumes, has founded a parochial library for the benefit of all young persons resident in the parish.

---

<sup>a</sup> “*Sainte Marguerite* whose legend and name signify a pearl, and has been given to that little lowly flower we call the daisy, were both introduced from the East by the first crusaders, and now popular all over Europe. St. Margaret was the chosen type of female innocence and meekness.” “There are no less than 238 churches in England dedicated in her honor.”—*Mrs. Jameson's Sacred and Legendary Art, &c.*

The parochial chapel of St. James, a portion of which was formerly the Manor school house, has been greatly improved of late by the addition of a chancel and transepts, and now occupies a place in the north-east corner of the church property. The font and lectern were presented by the Rev. ———.

#### RECTORS OF ST. JAMES'S CHURCH, FORDHAM.

| TEMP. INST.    | RECTORS.                         | VACAT.     | PATRONS.           |
|----------------|----------------------------------|------------|--------------------|
| Nov. 1854,     | REV. JOSHUA WEAVER, A.M.,        | per resig, | Wardens and Vestry |
| Nov. 1, 1863,  | REV. THOMAS RICHEY, D.D.,        | Presb. "   | "                  |
| Dec. 25, 1867, | REV. CHARLES C. TIFFANY, Presb., | "          | "                  |
| July 10, 1871, | REV. MYTTON MAURY, Presb.,       | "          | "                  |
| Sept. 9, 1875, | REV. JOSEPH BLANCHARD, Presb.,   |            | present rector.    |

Immediately contiguous to the Dutch Reformed Church is the Croton Aqueduct, which at no great distance crosses the Harlem River on a magnificent bridge of stone 1450 feet long, with fifteen arches, eight of which are eighty feet span, and seven are fifty feet span; 114 feet above tide water, at the top. The estimate cost of the whole, exceeding \$900,000. On the New York side of the bridge is a stone tower, used for supplying the higher portions of Manhattan Island with water—about a half a mile north of the High Bridge, an iron suspension bridge is to be erected uniting Manhattan island with the West Chester shore.

In this vicinity is situated *Mount Fordham*, the seat of Lewis G. Morris, Esq., fifth in descent from the Hon. Lewis Morris third proprietor of the manor of Morrisania. This property was originally purchased about 1760 by Chief Justice Lewis Morris, Governor of New Jersey, and his grand-son Richard Morris, Judge of the Court of Admiralty under the crown and subsequently Chief Justice of the State of New York. The latter resided on this property at the breaking out of the Revolutionary war, and willingly resigned his office as Judge of the English Court of Admiralty rather than compromise his principles, which were decidedly in favor of the popular cause. Governor Tyron thereupon directed an officer of the British army to take possession of Judge Morris' house, and use it as long as required; but ordered him, at the same time, to burn it to the ground as soon as abandoned. This outrage was soon afterwards perpetrated; and Judge Morris, then advanced in years, was compelled to fly for better security to Claverack in Columbia County.

The present house which is constructed of stone, is finely situated on an eminence and commands a very extensive view of Harlem river and surrounding country in which New York Island forms a beautiful feature.

Here are portraits of the Hon. Lewis Morris, fourth proprietor of Morrisania, great grand-father of the present occupant; and his first wife, Catharine Staats; and his son the Hon. Richard Morris, Judge of the High Court of Admiralty in 1776; at the foot of this portrait is suspended the hilt of the official sword that used to be borne by the Provincial Judges of Admiralty. In one of the parlors of the mansion is to be seen an original portrait of the celebrated St. Ignatius Loyola, the founder of the Jesuits, who was born in his father's castle of Loyola in the year 1491, of a race so noble, that its head was always summoned to do homage to the throne of Spain by a special writ. He died first General of his order in 1556, and was canonized by Pope Gregory XV. in 1622. This picture was formerly in the possession of the late Jacob Lorillard, Esq., father-in-law of the present proprietor, and has been long pronounced an original by Peter Paul Rubens. The head, like the figure painted by Rubens for the Jesuits at Antwerp, now at Warwick castle in England, is wonderfully fine, and quite true to the Spanish type. Lewis G. Morris, Esq., has been one of the most successful importers and breeders of short-horn cattle in this country, and also very active in promoting the improvements in the neighborhood in which he resides. His brother, the late Hon. Robert Hunter Morris was Recorder, thrice in succession Mayor and Post Master of New York city, and at the time of his death a Judge of the Supreme Court of the State.

The ancient residence of the Archer family, now occupied as a farm house by F. L. Johnson, Esq., is distinguished in the history of the Revolution as the head quarters of Colonel James de Lancey of the Royal Refugee corps. The following incidents show that although situated directly under the guns of Fort No. 8, De Lancey's position was a very hazardous one, and required the utmost vigilance to guard against a surprise.

In May, 1780, Captain Cushing of the Massachusetts line, with a small detachment under his command, consisting of one hundred infantry, made an excursion to this place. The expedition seems to have been planned by his guide, Michael Dyckman, who had ascertained by close observation that the British sentinels were not in the habit of changing their countersign; the next step was to capture one of the refugees themselves, from whom he obtained the countersign. By this means, so sudden and complete was the surprisal of the enemy on the occasion, that over forty of them were either killed or made prisoners. It was the intention to capture De Lancey, but he was absent from his quarters. The cantonment had scarcely been turned, when a large party of Yaouger horse collected and pursued Captain Cushing; but he effected

his retreat with so much skill and gallantry, though charged repeatedly by the enemy, that no injury was sustained. The enemy were far advanced up the Saw Mill valley, ere they relinquished the pursuit. On this occasion Abraham Dyckman arrested Captain Ogden in Colonel Emmerick's quarter's (the house now standing at the foot of the steep hill, on the road leading from Fordham to Kings Bridge, close by what is known as Farmer's Bridge, was the scene of the exploit) at the moment when a British sentinel was pacing the bridge within musket shot.

"On the 19th of January, 1781, (says General Heath,) 150 men from the Connecticut line and 200 from the New Hampshire line were to move towards the lines; these, with those who marched from Hazen's the day before, were to form a covering party to the detachment under Lieutenant Colonel Hull, who was to make an attempt on De Lancey's corps."<sup>a</sup>

The result of the enterprise, (which took place upon the 28th of January, 1781,) is thus related by Thacher:—

"A detachment, under the command of Lieutenant Colonel Hull, has returned from a successful expedition, having attacked by surprise the Royal Refugee corps under the command of the noted Colonel De Lancey, posted at Morrisania. Colonel Hull has for several months past sustained the command of a detachment of our troops posted in advance of our army, a situation requiring the most active vigilance and precaution, to guard against surprise and stratagem. In this station, as in many others, this officer has evinced his military skill and judgment. He has executed an enterprize with such address and gallantry as to merit for himself and his detachment the highest honor. He bravely forced a narrow passage to the enemy, and besides a number being killed, he took upwards of fifty prisoners, cut away the bridge,<sup>b</sup> burnt their huts and a considerable quantity of forage, and brought off a number of horses and cattle. Colonel Hull possesses in a high degree the confidence of the commander-in-chief; and for his judicious arrangements in the plan, and intrepidity and valor in the execution of the enterprize, he received the thanks of his Excellency, and afterwards of Congress. The enemy pursued our troops, and fell in with a covering party, under command of Colonel Hazen; and in a skirmish which ensued, they suffered an additional loss of about thirty-five. Of Colonel Hull's detachment, one ensign, and twenty-five rank and file were killed and wounded. This successful exploit is calculated to raise the spirits of our troops, and to divest their minds from the unhappy occurrences, which has recently taken place in camp, and at the same time it may convince the enemy that the affairs of our army are not altogether desperate."<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Mem. 271.

<sup>b</sup> The pontoon bridge across the Haarlem river.

<sup>c</sup> Thacher's Journal, 245.



"4th of March, 1782, Captain Hunnewell with a body of volunteer horse, backed by the infantry under the command of Major Woodbridge made an excursion to Morrisania. The horse proceeded down between the British fort, No. 8, and the cantonment of De Lancey's corps,<sup>a</sup> and having turned the cantonments between day-break and sun-rise, they entered pell mell. The enemy was completely surprised, and fled in every direction; some were cut down on the spot, others so badly wounded as not to be able to be removed. Some of the enemy availed themselves of positions where the horse could not assail them, from whence they began to fire on the house. This occasioned the firing of the alarm guns at No. 8. The horse having nearly accomplished their design moved off, taking the Eastchester road, in which Major Woodbridge had posted the infantry in ambuscade. Captain Hunnewell had brought off one subaltern, and twenty men prisoners, and twenty horses. The enemy in the vicinity collected a number of horse, backed by light infantry, and pursued Captain Hunnewell until he came to Major Woodbridge. The enemy were drawn into the ambuscade, who made one or two discharges on them, on which they broke and retired, but soon returned to the charge; skirmishing ensued, and continued to a considerable distance. Of the Americans, two privates were killed; Mr. Abraham Dyckman,<sup>b</sup> one of the guides, a brave and active man, mortally wounded, and three privates slightly wounded."<sup>c</sup>

"On the 26th of March, (says General Heath,) Mr. Dyckman,<sup>d</sup> one of our guides on the lines, with thirteen volunteer horsemen made an excursion to Morrisania, took five prisoners of De Lancey's corps and five horses; on their return they were pursued by a party of the enemy's horse, who coming rather too near, the brave volunteers faced about, charged vigorously, took one man prisoner with his horse, and put the rest to flight. The enemy again appeared, on the Eastchester road near Jonathan Ward's house, in some force, at a distance, but dared not renew the attack."<sup>e</sup>

The following is General Heath's account of the burning of Colonel Hatfield's quarters, which stood directly opposite Archer's entrance:—

"About this time (January, 1780,) a detachment from Colonel Mead's regiment of levies at Horseneck, and a number of volunteers from Greenwich—the former under the command of Captain Keeler, the latter under the command of Captain Lockwood—the whole about eighty, marched to Morrisania; and about one o'clock in the morning made an attack on Colonel Hatfield. They first attacked the picket, killed three, and drove the rest into the colonel's quarters. The colonel and his men took to the chambers, and fired out at the windows, and down stairs, at

<sup>a</sup> From a map in the possession of Lewis G. Morris it appears that at that time the highway led past the Archer house mentioned above, and between it and Fort No. 8 which occupies the site of the present residence of Gustav Schwab.—Editor.

<sup>b</sup> Mr. Dyckman fell at Purdy's corner near the intersection of the Eastchester and New York roads.

<sup>c</sup> Heath's Mem. p. 330.

<sup>d</sup> Michael, brother of Abraham Dyckman.

<sup>e</sup> Heath's Mem., 329.

those who had entered the house ; it appeared difficult, if possible, to dislodge them ; the house was instantly set on fire, by putting a straw bed into a closet, which compelled the enemy to jump out at the chamber windows, to avoid the flames. Colonel Hatfield, one captain, one lieutenant, one quarter-master, and eleven privates were taken prisoners and brought off. This was a pretty affair, but was a little tarnished on the return by some of the militia, who were fatigued, loitering on the road, where they supposed there was no danger ; but a party of horse pursuing, overtook, killed and captured several of them.' <sup>a</sup>

Many other occurrences of the same kind might be related to show that this vicinity was constantly harassed by small parties of American volunteers, who made every effort to dislodge their wary antagonists.

Upon a lofty eminence to the north-west of the Archer house, stand the remains of *Fort No. 8*. "The enemy (observes Heath) had a redoubt called No. 8, on the east side of Haarlem creek, nearly opposite to the fort on Laurel Hill, and under the fire of its cannon, for the security, of their advanced troops on the Morrisania side."<sup>b</sup> When the British made the bold and successful attack upon Fort Washington in 1776, the guns of No. 8, which lay directly opposite, covered the advance of the Hessians and Lord Percy. "On the 20th of October, 1782, the enemy were demolishing their works at No. 8, Morrisania."<sup>c</sup>

*Fort Independence*, the ruins of which are still visible on *Tetard's hill*, was not dismantled until 1833. *Prince Charles' redoubt*, and the *Negro Fort*—both well known fortifications, in the annals of the Revolution—lie on the south side of *Valentine's hill*. From the former, which commands a splendid view of the surrounding country, the morning and evening gun of the British was fired.

On this high ridge formerly the scene of so many bloody conflicts, are located the country seats of H. B. Claflin, the late Charles L. Anthony, Nathaniel P. Bailey, and the estates of S. L. M. Barlow, Oswald Cammann, Loring Andrews, Albert N. Christie, Franklin Edson, F. L. Johnson, Emma Dashwood, "Fair Lawn" the residence of Hugh M. Camp, "High Cottage" the residence of Mrs. Montgomery, "Haslewood" the residence of Mrs. Lees, and "Villa Boscobel" the residence of William B. Ogden, and "Number Eight" the residence of Gustav Schwab.

*Williams' Bridge* in the north-east corner of West Farms, bordering on Fordham is situated on the Haarlem and New Haven railroad where is a depot, thirteen and a half miles north of the City Hall.

*Tremont*, the next station south of Fordham and in close contiguity

<sup>a</sup> Ibid, 228.

<sup>b</sup> Heath's Memoirs, p. 223.

Heath's Mem. p. 357.

to it, is a populous and flourishing settlement. A short distance from the Tremont Station is situate Mount Hope, the well known "House of Rest for Consumptives."

RT. REV. HORATIO POTTER, D.D., LL.D., D.C.L.,

PRESIDENT, *ex-officio*.

*President*.—Rev. T. M. Peters, D.D., Broadway cor 99th St.

*Vice-Presidents*.—Woodbury G. Langdon, Robert Watts, M.D., Lewis G. Morris.

*Secretary*.—Wm. Harold Brown.

*Treasurer*.—Peter C. Tieman, Manhattanville.

*Trustees*.—Wm. W. Mali, James Pott, Rev. A. B. Carter, D.D., Wm. Alex.

Smith, F. A. Schermerhorn, Samuel W. Bridgham, A. C. Zabriskie, Rev.

Joseph N. Blanchard, John H. Riker, J. Neilson Potter.

*Medical Board*.—L. A. Rodenstien, H. R. Pratt, J. E. Comfort.

*Consulting Physician*.—J. R. Leaming, M.D.

*Financial Agent*.—S. L. Douglas, 126 East 93d Street.

#### LADIES ASSOCIATION.

*President*.—Rev. T. M. Peters, D.D.

*Vice-Presidents*.—Mrs. Woodbury Langdon, Mrs. S. J. Zabriskie, Mrs. Henry Salisbury.

*Secretary*.—Miss M. E. Leavitt.

*Treasurer*.—Miss Alice R. Jones, 1 East 57th Street.

Mrs. J. E. Zimmerman, Mrs. G. K. Sheridan, Miss J. T. Montgomery, Mrs.

David M. Turnure, Miss M. G. Barnes, Mrs. L. A. Rodenstein, Miss H.

M. Schwab, Mrs. W. C. Wetmore, Miss E. O. Wheeler, Miss L. Morris,

Mrs. S. P. Nash, Mrs. Lewis C. Jones.

From the last report of the Executive Committee it appears that during 1876, an average of twenty-one patients had been constantly cared for in the institution; and during the month of November, this average had been maintained at twenty-five. Permits are given daily by the Committee on admissions, and a full capacity of forty inmates will soon be taxed to its utmost by the many applications for admission. Weekly services are held here every Wednesday at 3:30 P. M.

The Haarlem river (Muscoota,) which forms the western boundary of the town, is one of the sweetest streams that ever gave a charm to landscape. On the Westchester shore high woods cover the sides of undulating hills, while here and there rich meadows form a gradual and beautiful descent to the water's edge. The opposite banks are abruptly terminated with rocky declivities, and present by their greater boldness a fine contrast. These waters afford an agreeable haunt to the *king fisher*, "the most celebrated and besung of all other birds," says Aldrovand, likewise to the *heron* and *fish hawk*.

On the East site of the Harlem Railroad contiguous to the village of Fordham, on an eminence called Rose Hill, is situated St. John's College, a Roman Catholic institution. This place enjoys all the advantages peculiar to the country, a pure and vigorous air and retirement which is so favorable to the formation and growth of studious habits; while at the same time its proximity to the city, by means of the railroad, is a great convenience. This institution, the only one of its kind in the State, was first opened for the reception of students on the 24th of June, 1841." It was incorporated by an act of the Legislature passed April 10th, 1846. The following is an extract from their rules and regulations: "The system of government will be mild and paternal, yet firm in enforcing the observance of established discipline. The utmost attention will be paid not only to the intellectual, but also to the moral education of the pupils. As to their domestic comfort, every thing which parental affection can desire will be found and supplied in the assiduous attention and skilful management of the *Sisters of Charity*, to whom the charge of this important and highly responsible department is mainly confided." The college, which contains the rooms of the various professors, library, &c., is a large, elegant, and commodious edifice. The hall is adorned with some valuable engravings from Raphael's frescoes in the Vatican, presented by the late Pope Gregory XVI., to the Right Rev. Bishop Hughes. The oil pictures consist of a "Madonna de la pesce," a copy from the original by Raphael. This picture is from the collection of the late Joseph Bonaparte; the "Entombment of the Saviour," a copy by William Franquinet. The head of St. Joseph in this picture is finely painted. The wooden building attached to the gardens on the south was formerly the residence of Colonel John Watts and his wife, the celebrated Lady Mary Alexander, daughter of Major General Lord Stirling. The church is a very large and handsome structure of stone, in the Gothic style. It is intended to embattle the tower, and carry up the spire. The windows, which are filled with some excellent stained glass, give the interior a very pleasing appearance. The apostles, St. Peter and St. Paul, and the four evangelists are depicted in six windows—three on each side. These figures are executed in the best style of modern stained glass; they stand on floriated Gothic pedestals of gold, surmounted by a rich canopy of the same. At the foot of the pedestal a gold escutcheon, containing the name of each apostle and evangelist. The whole were made to order, expressly for this church, at St. Omers in France.

Adjoining the church on the west is the new divinity school of St. Joseph; the grounds are extensive, and in a state of high improvement.



The collegiate year commences on the first Monday of September. Average number of students about 130.

Rose Hill place has been successively the property of the families of Corsa Watts, and Brevoort, from whom it passed to Horatio Shephard Moat, who sold it in 1836 to the present proprietor.

The "Home of the Incurables" was first started by the Rev. Washington Rodman, then Rector of Grace church, West Farms, in that village, in the year 1866. Its officers were:—

*President:*

BENJ. H. FIELD.

*Vice-Presidents:*

MARTIN E. GREENE, WM. H. GUION.

*Treasurer:*

HENRY J. CAMMANN.

*Secretary:*

R. A. MCCURDY.

*Pastor and Superintendent:*

REV. WASHINGTON RODMAN.

## CERTIFICATE OF INCORPORATION OF THE "HOME FOR INCURABLES."

In conformity with the provisions of the act entitled, "An Act for the Incorporation of Benevolent, Charitable, Scientific and Missionary Societies," passed the 12th day of April, 1843, and the several acts amendatory thereof, and supplementary thereto, the subscribers of full age, citizens of the United States and of the State of New York, and residents within the city of New York, in said State, being desirous to associate themselves together for the purpose of establishing and managing a Hospital and Home for Incurables, and to be a body politic and corporate for that purpose, do hereby make and sign this certificate.

1st. The name or title by which said Society shall be known in law, shall be the "Home for Incurables."

2d. The particular business and objects of the said Society, shall be the establishing, founding, carrying on, and managing said Hospital and Home.

3d. The number of managers to manage the said Society shall be twenty-four.

4th. The names of the managers of the said Society for the first year of its existence, are John T. Hoffman, Edward Haight, Wm. H. Guion, Benjamin H. Field, Henry J. Cammann, Franklin F. Randolph, Geo. R. Jackson, Lloyd Aspinwall, John H. Pool, Frederic Goodridge, William E. Curtis, Stephen E. Cambreling, Benjamin B. Sherman, Richard A. McCurdy, Archibald Russell, Livingston Satterlee, Martin E. Green, George T. M. Davis, Henry M. McLaren,

E. A. Quintard, D. D. Ives, W. A. Muhlenburg, Washington Rodman, and J. Gallaudet.

In testimony whereof, we have hereunto subscribed our names, this 4th day of April, in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and sixty-six.

BENJ. H. FIELD,  
EDWARD HAIGHT,  
FRANKLIN F. RANDOLPH,  
S. CAMBRELING,  
WASHINGTON RODMAN.

Acknowledged before

THOS. P. OKIE, Jr.,  
*Notary Public.*

I hereby approve of the within certificate and consent that the same shall be filed.

J. W. GILBERT

Dated New York April 6, 1866.

In 1872, the Jacob Lorillard estate at Fordham, was bought, and the Home for Incurables removed, after the whole building had been repaired and enlarged. The last Report, of 1878, is full of encouragement, and most of the first officers still retain their positions. The Physician, Arch. M. Campbell, reports that "during the past year 89 patients have been under treatment."

Few institutions have been better managed. It is beautifully situated, in a very healthy locality, and easy of access.

Andrew Corsa, who was born at Rose Hill in 1762, afterwards removed to a farm situated nearly opposite, where he died in 1852. The following obituary notice occurs in the *Westchester Herald* for that year:—

#### THE LAST OF THE WESTCHESTER GUIDES.

On the evening of Sunday the 21st of November at his residence in Fordham, ANDREW CORSA departed this life at the age of nearly ninety-one. He was born on the 24th day of January, 1762, where the Roman Catholic College of St. John now stands, on the farm occupied by his paternal ancestor, a native of Germany, who settled on the Manor of Fordham about the year 1690. Both his father and grand-father were natives of the same spot with himself. The latter was born in 1692, about the time of Governor Fletcher's arrival in the colony, after whom he was named Benjamin Fletcher. When the revolutionary troubles commenced, Captain Isaac Corsa,<sup>a</sup> the father of the subject of this notice, held a commission under the crown, and like most persons similarly situated, espoused the royal side throughout the great controversy. But parental authority was not sufficient to keep the young Andrew, long within the limits of the ancient allegiance; and about the middle of the war, his strong inclinations in favor of American inde-

<sup>a</sup> Among the MSS. in the Secry's Dept. are the original Muster Rolls of the companies which served in the campaign of 1755 against the French; among others is Capt. Isaac Corsa's Comp., Westchester 95 rank.—Doc. Hist. of N. Y. vol. ii, 696.

pendence overcame every other consideration, and he commenced an independent career by rendering important services to the Guides and scouting parties that approached the British lines, whether for attack or observation. Minutely acquainted with all the passes about Kingsbridge, Fordham and Morrisania—and withal of a disposition sprightly, intelligent and communicative—his services were anxiously sought for; when in the summer of 1781, after the allied forces had been encamped upon the heights of Greenburgh about two weeks, Washington and Rochambeau made ready for a formidable movement, with a select portion of their army, towards the lines of the enemy. Preparatory to this operation, Count Mathieu Dumas, the two brothers Berthier, and several other young officers belonging to the French staff, who had, for some days, been zealously engaged in exploring the ground and roads and in sketching maps of the country between the allied camp and Kings Bridge, were ordered by the French commander to set out before daylight, and to push their examinations till they came within sight of the enemy's most advanced redoubts, at the northern extremity of New York island. To protect these youthful adventurers, a strong detachment of the lanciers of Lauzun was sent along under Lieutenant Kilmaine, a young Irishman in the French service, who some years afterwards became a General of Division and enjoyed the reputation of being one of the best cavalry officers in Europe. The command of the whole party was bestowed upon Dumas, while the celebrated Cornelius Oakley of White Plains was selected to act as principle Guide, accompanied by his cousin James Oakley and young Corsa. Below Mile-square the reconnoitering party formed a junction with a select body of American light infantry, who on the same morning had gone down to explore the ground on the right; and the two allied detachments then attacked and dispersed a strong patrol of Delancey's Refugees, and soon afterwards assaulted and drove across Kings Bridge the Chasseurs that occupied the Hessian outposts:—pursuing the fugitives till they came within musket shot of Prince Charles' redoubt. This reconnoissance established in favor of Kilmaine and of the elder Berthier,—the latter of whom was afterwards a Marshal of France under Napoleon, and Prince of Wagram and Neufchatel,—reputations for partisan skill and intrepidity that led to their subsequent preferment.

A few days later occurred the grand reconnoissance, which was made on the 22d and 23d of July by the American and French commanders and engineers supported by 5000 troops of the two nations, for the purpose of examining with precision the British posts on New York Island between Hudson River and the Sound,—and of cutting off, if possible, such of the enemy's corps as might be found upon the main. Young Andrew Corsa's intelligence and exact knowledge of the country about the British lines were such that his services were again earnestly sought for upon this occasion; and during both these days he was constantly on horseback, riding and conversing with Washington, Rochambeau, Lauzun, and the other Generals of the combined army, while they passed through the fields of Morrisania, Fordham and Yonkers, halting from time to time as they moved along for the purpose of enabling the engineers to examine the grounds along Haerlem river and Spuytenduyvil creek. He used to relate that when the allies, marching from the east near the Bronx and passing over the high grounds around Morrisania house came in sight of the enemy, the fire which the British artillery opened upon them from the fortifications at Randall's Island

and Snake-hill,—from the batteries at Harlem and from the ships of war at anchor in the river, was terrible and incessant ; and obeying the instinct of self-preservation, which became suddenly predominant—he urged his horse forward at full speed and rode for safety behind the old Morrisania mill. Here he pulled up, and looking back, saw Washington, Rochambeau, and the other officers riding along calmly under the fire as though nothing unusual had occurred. His self-possession now returned ; and, ashamed at having given way to an impulse of fear, he at once pricked back with all the rapidity to which he could urge his horse, and resumed his place in the order of march ; while the commanding officers, with good natured peals of laughter, welcomed him back and commended his courage.

Mr. Corsa knew personally every individual of that celebrated band of volunteers called the “Westchester Guides,” of whom he himself was the last and youngest ; and he was among the most confidential friends of the heroic Abraham Dyckman, who fell prematurely at the close of the revolutionary contest. Possessed of a memory unusually retentive, and residing constantly upon the borders of the “neutral ground,” he was acquainted with all the distinguished partisans both from above and below, and with nearly all the military operations whether great or small that occurred along this portion of the British lines ; and which, until within the last few days of his life, he continued to describe in minute detail.

Upon the conclusion of the revolutionary war, his father's lands, by a compulsory sale, passed out of the family ; and although without any means at the time, he did not hesitate to purchase, with money borrowed upon mortgage, a contiguous farm—which industry and good management enabled him, not many years after, to disencumber. Much engaged in the cultivation of fruit for the market, he was particularly successful with the apple and pear ; discovering and bringing into use a new variety of the latter which bears his name, being known distinctively as the *Corsian Vergaloo*.

For many years he was a member of the Reformed Dutch Church at Fordham. His death was preceded by none of the diseases to which humanity is heir, and he ceased to exist only because he was worn out by toil and time. The machine which had been set in motion by its divine constructor and which had gone on for more than four score years and ten, “at last stood still,” and the weary occupant sought a better habitation. His memory continued unimpaired until nearly the close of his existence. Among his survivors are eight children, and numerous other descendants. Simple and patriarchal in his manners, a zealous, generous, and useful friend, neighbor and citizen ;—estimable and upright in all the relations of life—Andrew Corsa deserves to be held in honorable remembrance.







COURT HOUSE, WHITE PLAINS.

# THE TOWN OF WHITE PLAINS.

---

White Plains is the shire town of the county, and is situated twenty-eight miles from the city of New York ; one hundred and thirty-one south of Albany, six miles east of the Hudson, and fourteen south of Bedford, (which used to be the other half shire town,) bounded northerly by North Castle, easterly by Harrison, southerly by Scarsdale, and westerly by Greenburgh. The river Bronx runs south along the west line, and the Mamaroneck river along the east—forming the boundary towards Harrison township. The whole area of this town may be eight and a half square miles.

White Plains originally formed a portion of the town of Rye, and derived its name from the White Balsam, (*Gnaphalium Polycephalum* of *Linnaeus*) *gnaphalium*, signifying soft down or wool.

It was called by the Indians Quaroppas, under whom these lands must have formed a portion of the ancient Domains of Weckquaskeck; as we find Shapham, or Thapham, one of the sachems of that place conjointly selling lands there to the inhabitants of the town of Rye in 1683.

“ It is so long since the Indians quitted these grounds, that their monuments are almost effaced. Once in a while a point of an arrow, or a stone axe is found which bears the mark of Indian labor and dexterity ; and there is still to be distinguished the spot on which they had their wigwams, and the cemetery where they buried their dead.” The former is situated on the land formerly of Mr. Gilbert Oakley, the latter on the property formerly of Mr. Elisha Crawford, now owned by Mr. Carhart. In the vicinity of the town is a small excavation, cut out of a granite rock ; this was a mortar, where they pounded their corn.

Upon the 22nd day of November, 1683, the inhabitants of Rye obtained the following grant from the aboriginal proprietors:—

“To all Christian peopell to hom these presence shall com greting: Know yee that we Shapham, Cockinseko, Orewapum, Kewetoahan, Koawanoh, Paatek, Shiphatlash, Korehwewous, Panawok, Memishott, Pesekanoh, Oromahgah Pathunk, hohoreis, sotonge, wonawaking, owhorawas, nosband, have for a valuabell sum of mony to us in hand paid by the towne of Rye that are inhabitants bargained, covinanted alinated and sould unto the Inhabitance of the above said towne of Rye a sartain tract of land lying within the towne bounds of Rye Bounded as followeth, on the north-east with Mamarineck River, and on the south-weast with a branch of the said River and marked trees till it coms to brunckes River, and then to Runn by brunckes River till it cums to the head of the whit plaines soe called and by marked trees from thence till it cums to the upper most branch of Marrineck River which tract of Land is commonly called by the English the whit plaines, and called by the Indians Quaroppas which said tract of land wee the above said Shapham, Cockinceeko, orwopum, Kewetoakon; Koawanoh. Moahaice and the rest of the above said endians, have sould as above said unto the Inhabitance of the said towne of Rye, them, theire heires, executors, administrators, or asignes for ever and Doe hereby bind ourselves, our heires, execetars, administratars and asignes unto the Inhabitants of the above said towne of Rye, them, theire heires, executors, administrators, or asignes, that they may att all times, from and after the date hereof, peasably and quietly poses, occupy and enjoy the above said tract of land free from all former bargaines, salles, morgages, or other incombrances whatsoever and all soe to warrant and make good the above said salle against any parson, or parsons whatsoever, that shall or will make, or lay any claime or claimes theare unto, and in testimony. There of wee have caused this bill of salle to be made and here unto have sett our hands and sealles this two and twentieth of November, one thousand six hundred and eighty-three.

Sealed, signed and delivered in the  
presence of us,

CORNEILASS,  
his mark,

JOSHUA KNAP,

The mark of  
MOTEPATCHON

JOHN ODELL,  
his mark.

The marke of

SHAPHAM,  
COKENSEKO,  
OROWAPAM,  
KEWETOHAM,  
KOAWANOH,  
MOAHPOATCH,  
PATTHUNK,  
HOHORNIS,  
SOTONGE,  
OWHORAWAS,  
ORAMAPUAH.

This bill of salle is acknowledged  
by the granters to be their ackt and  
deed before me in Rye, the day and  
yere above written,

JOSEPH HORTON, *Commissioner.*

The inhabitants of Rye were now met by an opposing claimant in the person of Mr. John Richbell of Mamaroneck. He was a native of



England, and claimed to have bought of the Indians in 1660 his right to these lands; was confirmed in 1662 by the authorities of New Netherland, and in 1668 by the government of New York. Mr. Richbell's patent gave him possession of the 'three necks' bounded on the east by Mamaroneck river, and on the west by Stony brook, together with the land lying north of these bounds 'twenty miles in the woods.' This conflicted with the foregoing deed. As Rye was the border town of Connecticut they conceived that their bounds extended westward as far as the western line of that colony. This was 'a line drawn from the east side of Mamaroneck river, north northwest to the line of Massachusetts.' Negotiations were now pending between Connecticut and New York for a more satisfactory settlement of that boundary. And on the twenty-eighth of November, 1683, the two governments agreed upon a line to begin at the mouth of Byram river. Meanwhile, doubtless anticipating this decision, the inhabitants of Rye on the twenty-second day of November, only six days before the date of that agreement, concluded a treaty with the Indian proprietors of the White Plains for the purchase of that tract. They described it as 'lying within the town bounds of Rye.'

Mr. Richbell was not inclined to yield his claim, which he had now held for twenty-three years. On the twelfth of March, 1684, he petitioned the Governor, Colonel Dongan, on the subject: 'Having a desire to dispose of some quantity of said land which is called the White Plains' and which was comprehended in his patent 'to severall persons to settle thereon with themselves and families' he is 'wholly obstructed and hindered by Rye men,' who have 'made a great disturbance amongst them and pretends a right to the same.' He cannot therefore dispose of any part of these lands until the Governor 'will be pleased to grant an order to clear the same.'<sup>a</sup> This complaint came before the council at Fort James on the seventeenth of March, 1684, and the inhabitants of Rye or some to be deputed by them for that purpose, were summoned to show cause at the next Court of Assizes in Westchester County, why the said lands do not of right belong and appertain to John Richbell.

The dispute appears to have remained unsettled; for Richbell died soon after this, July 26th, 1684,<sup>b</sup> and the greater part of his lands—including all the northern portion—came into the possession of the Hon. Caleb Heathcote. In 1701 Col. Heathcote obtained a confirmation of his rights to the Richbell estate by purchasing again from the Indians the 'necks' formally known as East and Great Neck, now called Orienta

<sup>a</sup> Land papers, Albany. Vol. ii., 30. Quoted by Mr. Baird's History of Rye.

<sup>b</sup> See Westchester Co. Records Lib. A, page 34.

and Larchmont, with the lands lying north of them along Mamaroneck river to its source and across to the Bronx.

This tract included the whole of the present town of Scarsdale, for which Col. Heathcote immediately obtained letters patent from the British Crown, securing him that territory and constituting the lordship or Manor of Scarsdale. But his Indian grants included, also, the whole of White Plains which the inhabitants of Rye had purchased from the Indians in 1683, and where some of them were already settled, though, no division of the lands had yet been made. This new encroachment on their limits occurred just at the close of their unsuccessful attempt to return to the colony of Connecticut. Having failed to recover the lands appropriated by Harrison, the people of Rye probably had little hope of resisting these claims. Col. Heathcote, however, seems to have been disposed to treat them with great fairness. In the Charter which he obtained for his lands exception was made of 'ye land called White Plains which is in dispute between ye said Caleb Heathcote and some of ye inhabitation of ye town of Rye,' to that land the patent gives him no further title than he already possesses. The following action of the inhabitants refers to this matter:—

"At a meeting held by the Proprietors of the White Plains purchase, February the 24, 1701-2, Hacialiah Browne and Deliverance Browne and Humphery Underhill, Thomas Meritseuer, Isaac Deham, John Stokam, and Benjamin Horton, are chosen a committee in the behalf of the above said Proprietors to agree with Coll. Hathcote concerning the running of a line between said Coll. Hethcote's patent and said White Plains purchase as They shall see good; and what line shall be mutually agreed upon betweene the said commity and Coll. Hethcote the said proprietors do ingage for Themselves and Their heirs and successors to stand and abide forever; and what else the said commitie mutually agrees upon shall be held good by them and their associates for ever." <sup>a</sup>

The controversy was still pending in 1702, when the Rev. Mr. Christopher Bridge, Mr. Hacialiah Browne, Ensign John Horton, Capt. Joseph Bude, and Mr. John Hoytt "are chosen to treat with the Honorable Conl. Caleb Hathcut, about the White Plains purchase and to make returne to the Proprietors of their treat upon what termes the Hon. Coll. Hathcut will agree with them to acquit all his claime to the above said White Plains purchase." <sup>b</sup>

At the time of Col. Heathcote's death, which occurred four years later, this question was still unsettled; but it does not appear that any claim upon these lands was made by the heirs to his estate.

<sup>a</sup> Town and Proprietors Book, No. C, p. 20.—Baird's History of Rye, p. 153.

<sup>b</sup> Rye Rec. Lib. A.

Owing to these uncertainties and differences, the White Plains Purchase remained undivided for many years. Occasionally from 1683 to 1715 we find in the town records entries like the following, which show that the inhabitants had their eyes upon this precious inheritance and meant to keep it for future distribution<sup>a</sup>:—

*April 12, 1694.*—"Hacaliah Brown and Thomas Merrill are appointed to go with the Indians and renew the marks of the White Plains purchase, agreeing with the Indians as reasonably as they can."<sup>b</sup> "The same year Thomas Merrit and Joseph Galpin were chosen to lay out the land at the White Plains granted to Jonathan Horton by the Town."<sup>c</sup>

*April 1, 1699.*—"John Lyon and Isaac Denham are chosen to lay out a road to the White Playnes, beginning at the head of Capt. Theall's land, and so to run to the caseaway (causeway brook)."

*April 17, 1699.*—"The Town hath past an act that the Rode shall continue . . . up to the White Playnes, where John Lyon and Isaac Denham have marked it out, and the said road to be 3 Rods in breadth."

*February 14, 1699-1700.*—Lieutenant Horton and others "are to survey and lay out the 3 purchases of land. That is to saye, the White Plains purchase, and Lame Will's two purchases."

*April 27, 1708.*—"The town chose Ensign Budd in the room of Captain Horton (deceased) to lay out lands in the White Plains purchase and Will's two purchases according to the Towns acts."<sup>d</sup>

Finally "at a meeting held in Rye by the Proprietors of the White Plaines purchase, Feb. 11, 1714-15," Capt. Joseph Budd, Ensign John Horton, Mr. John Hoyt, Samuel Purdy, Caleb Hiatt and George Lane Junior, "are chosen to rectify all mistakes that has been formerly made by the former layers out of the White Plaines purchase and also has power to add or diminish the just and true proportion of all the lotments of lands which is in dispute to be above or under the true proportion and to lay out proportionable all the remaining part of the aforesaid purchase and when so done to make return to the said proprietors."<sup>e</sup>

The next notice of this town occurs on the 9th of February, 1720:—

"At a meeting held by the proprietors it is agreed that "Capt. Joseph Budd, John Hoyt, Sen., John Horton, Caleb Hiatt, Samuel Purdy, and George Lane, Jr., layers out of the said purchase chosen by the said proprietors for laying out all the above said lands, as may appear by record bearing date February 11, 1714-15. That the said iayers out shall have for their trouble and industry for laying out the whole purchase and returning the bounds at or between the thirteenth day of April, which will be in the year one thousand seven hundred and twenty,

<sup>a</sup> Baird's History of Rye, p. 156.

<sup>b</sup> Rye Rec. Lib. A.

<sup>c</sup> Ibid.

<sup>d</sup> Town Meeting Books, C and G.

<sup>e</sup> Records of Town Meeting, p. 9, and Baird's History of Rye, p. 156.

one hundred and ten acres of land lying between the lower end, the ridges and Mamaroneck river, at the above said meeting 'tis voted and agreed that David Ogden and Hacialiah Brown are to survey and lay out the above said one hundred acres and ten of land as above mentioned." <sup>a</sup>

The following is a list of the proprietors and the number of acres held by them under the survey<sup>b</sup> :—

|                            |                             |
|----------------------------|-----------------------------|
| JOSEPH HORTON, . . . 18,   | JOSEPH BUDD, . . . 26,      |
| ISAAO DENHAM, . . . 1,     | PHILIP GALPIN, . . . 9,     |
| FRANCIS PURDY, . . . 2,    | RICHARD LOWNSBEERY, . . 33, |
| DELIVERANCE BROWN, . . 30, | JOHN GALPIN, . . . 5,       |
| GEORGE LANE, . . . 23,     | JOHN HORTON, . . . 15,      |
| THOMAS BROWN, . . . 3,     | JOSEPH HORTON, . . . 17,    |
| JOHN FROST, . . . 20,      | HENRY DISBROW, . . . 8,     |
| PETER BROWN . . . 52,      | GARRETT TRAVIS, . . . 13,   |
| PETER DISBROW, . . . 22,   | JOHN STOCKHAM, . . . 7,     |
| JOHN MERITT, . . . 39,     | JONATHAN FOWLER, . . . 19,  |
| CALEB HIATT, . . . 11,     | RICHARD WALTER, . . . 35,   |
| SAMUEL HOYT, . . . 42,     | ANDREW COE, . . . 43,       |
| TIMOTHY KNAP, . . . 16,    | THOMAS JEFFREY . . . 21,    |
| JACOB PEASE, . . . 37,     | ISAAC SHERWOOD, . . . 38,   |
| GEORGE KNIFFEN. . . 12,    | JOSEPH SHERWOOD, . . . 34,  |
| JOSEPH PURDY, . . . 25,    | FRANCIS BROWN, . . . 40,    |
| BENJAMIN HORTON, . . 29,   | WILLIAM ODELL, . . . 6,     |
| ISAAC ODELL, . . . 31,     | JONAS SHERWOOD, . . . 28,   |
| JOSEPH GALPIN, . . . 10,   | THOMAS LYON, . . . 14,      |
| JOHN HOYT, . . . 36,       | JOHN BRONDIG, . . . 4,      |
| HACALIAH BROWN, . . . 27.  |                             |

"In 1721, William Burnett, Governor of New York, set out, in order for patent, to Samuel Hunt, a certain tract or parcel of land lying and being in the County of Westchester, being part of a large tract commonly known by the name of 'The White Plains,' beginning at three large White Oak trees standing near together on the west side of Mamaroneck river, and runs thence, south thirty-nine degrees; west, thirty-one chains, &c., &c., containing two hundred and sixty acres, after five acres deducted for every hundred acres for highways." <sup>c</sup>

"Upon the 13th of March, 1721, his Excellency, William Burnett, granted letters patent to Daniel Brundage, all that tract of land in White Plains, beginning at a small white ash stake standing on the east side of the long meadow brook and runs thence, south fifty-three degrees, west forty-three chains, and a heap of stones near the street, containing one hundred and ninety-five acres. The patentee yielding therefor, on

<sup>a</sup> Nye Rec. Lib. A.

<sup>b</sup> Sometimes called the second draught.

<sup>c</sup> Albany Book of Patents, No. viii, 442.



the Festival of the Annunciation, the annual rent of twenty shillings and six pence for every hundred acres."

King George the Second, the same year, issued the following royal letters patent to Joseph Budd, John Hoit, and others :—

#### ROYAL PATENT FOR THE WHITE PLAINS.

George by the Grace of God of Great Britain France and Ireland King Defender of the faith etc. To all to whom these presents shall come, Greeting whereas our Loving Subjects Joseph Budd John Hoit Caleb Hoit Humphrey Underhill Joseph Purdy George Lane Daniel Lane Moses Knap John Horton David Horton Johnathan Lynch Peter Hatfield James Traviss Isaac Covert Benjamin Brown John Turner David Ogden and William Yeomans by their Humble Petition presented to our Trusty and well beloved William Burnet Esq. Captain General and Governour in Chief of our Province of New York in Council the Twenty-first Day of December last did humbly pray that his said Excellency would be favourably pleased to grant to them their heirs and assigns his Majesty's Letters patent for their Claims and purchase lying within this province or the County of Westchester known by the Name of the White Plains in such manner and under such Quit Rent provisions and Restrictions as is and Directed in our Royall Commission and Instructions to our said Governour, which Petition was then and there Read and Considered of by our Council of our said Province untill the first day of this Instant they did Humbly advise our said Governour and Consent that the prayer of the said Petition be granted. In order to the granting whereof in Pursuance of and in Obedience to our Royall Instructions to his said Excellency given at St. James's the third Day of June one Thousand seven Hundred and Twenty in the sixth year of our Reign our said Governour together with George Clarke Esq. secretary and Cadwallader Colden Esq. surveyor Generall of the said Province three of the Commissioners appointed by our said Instructions for setting out all Lands to be granted within our said Province of New York did sett out for the said Joseph Budd John Hoit Caleb Hoit Humphrey Underhill Joseph Purdy George Lane Daniell Lane Moses Knap John Horton David Horton Jonathan Lynch Peter Hatfield James Travise Isaac Covert Benjamin Brown John Turner David Ogden and William Yeomans, a Certain Tract or Parcell of Land Situate lying and being in the County of Westchester and is Commonly known by the Name of the White Plains Beginning at a large White Oak Tree Marked with Severall Letters where Two Brooks fall into the West Branch of the Momaroneck River and Runs thence by marked Trees to Brunxes River near the Place where a small Brook falls into the said River by a Bush of alders some of which are Marked thence up the Stream of Brunxe River to an Ash Tree about Seventeen Chains above Anthony Millers fulling Mill, thence by Marked Trees to White Oak Tree Marked near long Meadow Brook, then Down the Stream of the said Brook to the Land laid out for Daniel Brondige Then along his Lands to the said Long Meadow Brook then down the Stream of the said Brook to the Place where it Falls into Momaroneck River and down the Stream of the said River to the land granted to Christopher Bridge then along his Line and the Lines of the Land laid out for Samuel Hunt to Momaroneck

River then down the Stream of the said River to the Place where the West Branch Falls into the said River and then up the Stream of the said West Branch to the Place where it begun Containing Four Thousand Four hundred and Thirty five Acres with Allowance for Highways, and in the Setting out of the said Tract of Land had Regard to the Profitable and unprofitable Acres and had taken care that the Length of the said Tract do not Extend along the Banks of any River Conformable to our said Royall Instructions as by a Certificate under their hands bearing Date the Tenth Day of March last Entered of Record in our Secretarys Office more fully and at large Appears Which Tract of Land set out as aforesaid according to our said Royall Instructions Wee being willing to grant to the said Joseph Budd John Hoit Caleb Hoit Humphrey Underhill Joseph Purdy George Lane Daniel Lane Moses Knap John Horton David Horton Jonathan Lynch Peter Hatfield James Traviss Isaac Covert Benjamin Brown John Turner David Ogden and William Yeomans their Heirs and Assigns according to the Prayer of their Petition Know Yee that of our Especial grace certain Knowledge and meer Motion We have given granted Ratified and Confirmed and do by these presents for us our heirs and Successors give grant Ratifie and Confirm unto the said Joseph Budd John Hoit Caleb Hoit Humphry Underhill Joseph Purdy George Lane Daniel Lane Moses Knap John Horton David Horton Jonathan Lynch Peter Hatfield James Traviss Isaac Covert Benjamin Brown John Turner David Ogden and William Yeomans their Heirs and Assigns all that the said Tract or Parcel of Land Scituate lying and being in the County of Westchester which is Commonly known by the Name of the White Plains Beginning at a large White Oak Tree Marked with Severall Letters where Two Brooks fall into the West Branch of Momaroneek River, and Runs thence by Markt Trees to Brunxes River near to the place where a small Brook falls into the said River by a Bush of Alders some of which are Markt thence up the Stream of Brunxes River to an Ash Tree about Seventeen Chains above Anthony Millers fulling Mill thence by Markt Trees to a White Oak Marked near long Meadow Brook then down the Stream of the said Brook to the Land laid out for Daniel Brondige then along his Line to the said Long Meadow Brook then down the Stream of the said Brook to the place where it falls into Momaroneek River and down the Stream of the said River to the Land granted to Christopher Bridge then along his Line and the Lines of the Land laid out for Samuel Hunt to Momaroneek River then down the Stream of the said River to the Place where the West Branch falls into the said River and then up the Stream of the said West Branch to the place where it begun Containing Four Thousand Four Hundred and Thirty five Acres with Allowance for Highways Together with all and Singular Woods underwoods Trees Timber Feedings pastures Meadows Marshes Swamps Ponds Pools Waters Water Courses Rivers Rivolets Runs and Streams of Water Fishing Fowling Hunting and Hawking Mines Minerals Standing being Growing lying or to be had used and Enjoyed within the Limits and Bounds aforesaid, And all other Profits Benefits Liberties Priviledges Hereditaments and Appurtenances to the same belonging or in any wise Appertaining and all that our Estate Right Title Interest Benefit Claim and Demand whatsoever of in or to the same and the Reversion and Reversions Remainder and Remainders and the Yearly Rents and Profits of the same (Excepting and always Reserving out of this our present Grant unto us our Heirs and Successors forever all Trees of the Diameter of Twenty four Inches

and upwards at Twelve Inches from the Ground for Masts of our Royall Navy. and also all such other Trees as may be fit to make Planks Knees and other things Necessary for the use of our said Navy which now are Standing Growing or being in and upon any of the said Lands with free Liberty and Lyeence for any person or persons whatsoever by us our Heirs and Successors or any of them to be thereunto Appointed under our or their Sign Manual with Workman Horses Waggon Carts and Carriages and without to Enter and come into and upon the said Lands and every part thereof, and there to Fell Cut Down Root up Hew Saw and Rive have take Cart and Carry away the same for the uses aforesaid (Excepting also and Reserving all Silver and Gold Mines) To Have and to hold all and Singular the same certain Tract of Land and Premisses with its Hereditaments and Appurtenances (Excepting as before is Excepted and Reserved) unto the said Joseph Budd John Hoit Caleb Hoit Humphry Underhill Joseph Purdy George Lane Daniel Lane Moses Knap John Horton David Horton Jonathan Lynch Peter Hatfield James Travis Isaac Covert Benjamin Brown John Turner David Ogden and William Yeomans their Heirs and Assigns forever To be Holden of us our Heirs and Successors in free and common Soccage as of our Mannor of East Greenwich in the County of Kent within our Kingdon of Great Britain Yeilding Rendring and paying therefore Yearly and every Year forever unto us our Heirs and Successors at our Custom House in the City of New York unto our or their Collector or Receiver General for the time being on the Feast Day of the Annunciation of the Blessed Virgin Mary commonly called Lady Day the annual Rent of two Shillings and Sixpence for every hundred acres thereof in Lieu and stead of all other Rents Services dues Dutys and Demands whatsoever for the same four Thousand four Hundred and Thirty-five Acres of Land so granted as aforesaid Provided always and these presents are upon this Condition that the same Joseph Budd John Hoit Caleb Hoit Humphrey Underhill Joseph Purdy George Lane Daniel Lane Moses Knap John Horton David Horton Jonathan Lynch Peter Hatfield James Travis Isaac Covert Benjamin Brown John Turner David Ogden and William Yeomans their Heirs and Assigns some or one of them shall and do within the Term and Space of three Years now next ensuing the Date hereof plant Settle and Effectually Cultivate at least three Acres of Land granted as aforesaid and in Default thereof or if the said Joseph Budd John Hoit Caleb Hoit Humphrey Underhill Joseph Purdy George Lane Daniel Lane Moses Knap John Horton David Horton Jonathan Lynch Peter Hatfield James Travis Isaac Covert Benjamin Brown John Turner David Ogden and William Yeomans their Heirs and Assigns or any other person or Persons by their privy consent or procurement Shall Set on Fire or Burn the Woods on the Said Lands or any part thereof to Clear the Same so as Destroy Impair or hinder the Growth of any of the Trees that are or may be fit for Masts Planks Knees or other Timber for our Royall Navy hereby Reserved unto us our Heirs and Successors that then and in either of these cases this our present Grant and every Article and Clause therein or thereof Shall Cease Determine and be Void anything herein Contained to the Contrary thereof in any wise Notwithstanding And We do further of our Especial grace Certain knowledge and meer motion Consent and Agree that these presents being Entered upon Record as is hereafter Appointed shall be good and effectual in Law to all intents and purposes against us our Heirs and Successors Notwithstanding the not well Reciting or Misrecit-



ing of the premisses or any part thereof In Testimony whereof Wee have Caused these our Letters to be made Patent and the Great Seal of our said Province to be hereunto affixed and the same to be Entred of Record in our Secretarys Office in one of the Books of Patents there Remaining Witness our Trusty and well beloved William Burnet Esq Captain General and Governour in Chief of our Province of New Jersey and of all the Territories and Tracts of Land thereon Depending in America and Vice Admirall of the same &c at Fort George in New York the Thirteenth day of March in the Eight year of our Reign Anno Domini 1721<sup>a</sup>

W. ROBIN, *D. Secr'y.*

At this date, 1721, the occupants of the land on what is now called Broadway, were George Lane, living on the Squires place, and included Mr. Brown's; Daniel Brundage in the old house next to Mr. Brown's, the only house of that date now standing. The next north of Brundage, was James Travis. On the west side of Broadway was Moses Knapp's house, about where Mr. Fiero now resides. John Hyatt lived a little north of Knapp, and Daniel Lane's house stood near the present residence of Elisha Horton. Anthony Miller owned the farm where the Miss Tompkins reside above the old Methodist church; he had a fulling mill on the brook, near the Bronx river. The north west corner of the patent was seventeen chains north of this fulling mill. Christopher Tremain's house was near the Bronx not far from where Mr. Champanies lives on the road leading west from the old Methodist meeting-house. Samuel Horton built and lived in the house now standing known as the Jacob Purdy place at the foot of Frank Carpenter's hill. The other dwellings were on the road to Rye. The first was Joseph Purdy's which stood near the present house of Mr. Onderdonk. Next to Joseph Purdy's was Caleb Hyatt's, and a short distance south-east of it John Hoyt lived in the old house on the other corner of North street and the road leading past Bartholomew Gidneys. Samuel Hoyt lived a quarter of a mile further on, on the same side of the road. Samuel Hunt's house was where Mr. Nelson Seymour lives. The next house which is still standing was Samuel Merri't's, and further east and at some distance from, and north of the road, was the house of Humphrey Underhill. These were all the houses then standing in White Plains.

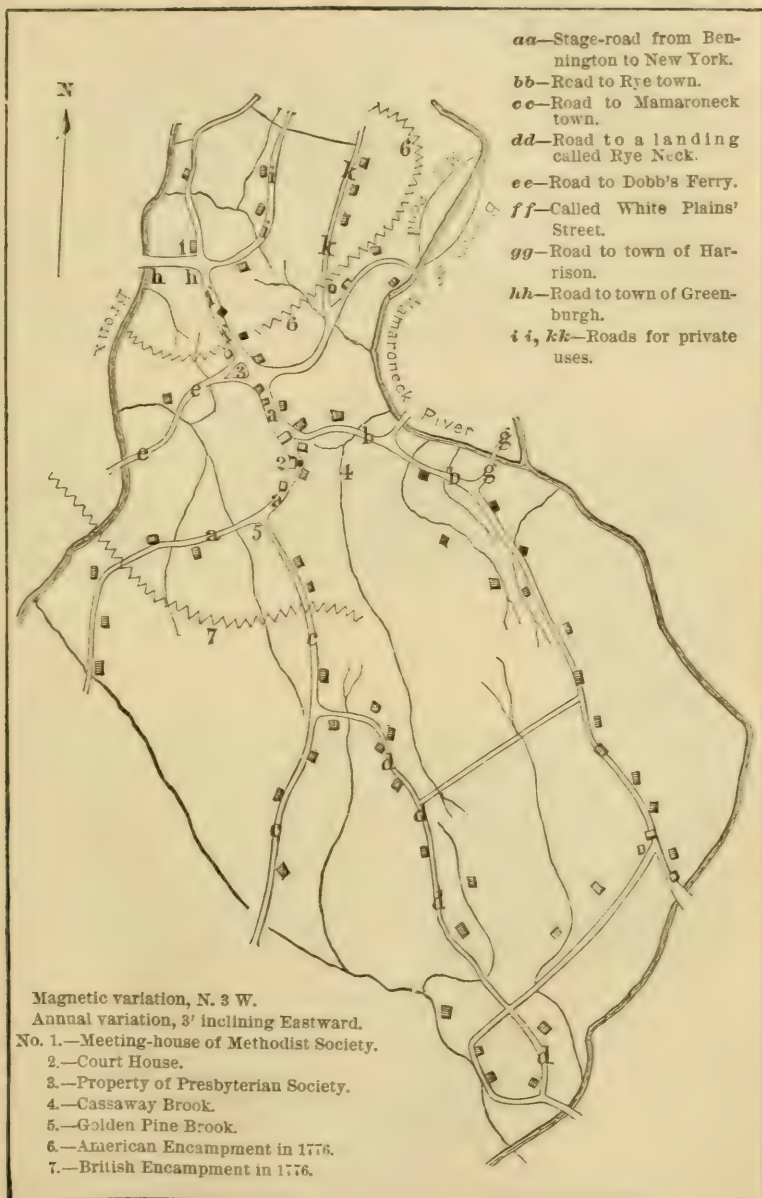
#### THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH.

The Presbyterian church—a stone edifice erected in 1854—is the third church built on that spot, and presents a pretty appearance upon entering White Plains.

The first church was erected, but not finished, and services held in it

<sup>a</sup> Albany Book of Patents, Lib. viii. pp. 450-454, (new paging) pp. 492-496, (old paging)







prior to May 12th, 1727.<sup>a</sup> It was built mainly through the exertions of the minister, the Rev. John Walton, who gave for that purpose three quarters of an acre of land in the north-east corner of his farm, and appears from his deed conveying the farm in 1729 to his successor, the Rev. Edward Ward. Moses Owne subsequently became the owner of the farm; and in June 15, 1751, conveyed "one certain tract of land with the meeting-house standing thereon, containing one acre more or less," to Caleb Hyatt, John Turner and Peter Hatfield. The road which originally ran near the church was changed<sup>b</sup> in 1764 to its present location, leaving between it and the said church a piece of undivided land. This piece of undivided land was soon after date conveyed by the proprietors of the White Plains purchase to the Presbyterian church, as follows:—

"The undersigned, being such as have proprietors rights in the White Plains in the township of Rye, &c.,

"Whereas there is a small piece of undivided land lying on the north side of burying ground, near the Presbyterian meeting-house, being willing that the said piece of undivided land, &c., we are willing that the same should be fenced in to with the burying yard, to be appropriated for the use of a burying yard, to be under the entire government and management of the said congregation.

Before JONATHAN G. TOMPKINS.

JONATHAN PURDY,  
DAVID HORTON,  
GABRIEL LYNCH,  
CALEB HYATT,  
SAMUEL HUNT."

From these documents it would appear that there was a Presbyterian church standing here in 1727. The first ordained minister was the Rev. John Smith, D.D., who served the Presbyterian churches of Rye and *White Plains*, and died in the year 1771, leaving flourishing congregations and commodious houses of worship in both places. His remains repose in the burying ground, near those of his wife and daughter, in the rear of the church. A plain head-stone marks the spot, and bears the following inscription under a rudely carved similitude of a cherub:—

Here lie the remains of the

REV. JOHN SMITH,

the first ordained minister of the Presbyterian  
persuasion in Rye and the White Plains,  
who was born in England,  
May 5, 1702,

<sup>a</sup> Memorial of Presbyterian church, White Plains, in the archives at Hartford.

<sup>b</sup> Rye Records D. p. 188.

<sup>c</sup> Mr. Smith's name appears in the record of the Synod in 1753 as minister of Rye.

wore out with various labors,  
and fell asleep in Jesus.  
Deceased February 26th, 1771,  
aged sixty-eight years, 9 months, and 22 days.

By faith he lived, in faith he died,  
and faith foresees a rising day when Jesus comes,  
while hope assumes and boasts his joy among the tombs.

Oh death! Oh grave! where is thy victory.

"Thanks be to God that giveth us the  
victory through our Lord Jesus Christ."

His brother was the Hon. William Smith. Lorenzo Sabine, Esq., in his very valuable work on American loyalists, says of this individual:—"That he was Chief Justice and a member of the council of the colony, and considered to be in office in 1782. His father, the Honorable William Smith, an eminent lawyer and Judge of the Supreme Court, died in 1769. William Smith, the subject of this notice, graduated in Yale College in 1745. It appears, that he was at a loss as to the side which he should espouse in the controversy which preceded the Revolution, and that he made no choice until late in the war. It seems, also, that a number of other gentlemen of wealth and influence, who had wavered like himself, joined the royal cause about the same time, in 1778. It is believed that, at first, he opposed the claims of the ministry. However this may be, his final decision excited the remark of both the Whigs and Loyalists. The former indulging their wit in verse, and calling him the 'weathercock,' that 'could hardly tell which way to turn;' and the latter noticing his adhesion in their correspondence. He settled in Canada after the war, and was Chief Justice of that colony. He published a history of New York, which was continued by his son William."

---

a "This eloquent man," alluding to Judge Smith, "having been an adherent to the royal cause in the Revolution, left the city of New York in 1783, with the British troops, and was afterwards rewarded by his sovereign with a high judiciary office at Quebec. Judge Smith, although thus removed from the place of his origin, always contemplated the politics of his native country with peculiar solicitude. One evening, in the year 1789, when Dr. Mitchell was in Quebec, and passing the evening at the chief justice's house, the leading subject of conversation was the new Federal constitution, then under the consideration of the States, on the recommendation of the Convention which sat at Philadelphia in 1787. Mr. Smith, who had been somewhat indisposed for several days, retired to his chamber with Mr. Grant, one of the members of the Legislative council, at an early hour. In a short time Mr. Grant invited Dr. Mitchell, in Mr. Smith's name, to walk from the parlor into Mr. Smith's study, and sit with them. Mr. Mitchell was conducted to a sofa, and seated beside the Chief Justice, before whom on a table was a large bundle of papers. Mr. Smith resumed the subject of American politics, and noticed his papers. After searching among them a while, he unfolded a certain one, which he said was written about the time the colonial commotions grew violent, in 1775; and contained a plan or system of government, sketched out by himself then, and which nearly resembled the constitution afterwards proposed by the Federal Convention of the United States. He then read the contents. The piece was long and elaborate, and written with much beauty and spirit. 'This, sir,' said he, after finishing it, 'is a copy of a letter, which I sent to a member of congress in 1775, who was an intimate friend of General Washington. You may trace to this source the sentiments in favor of a more energetic government for your country, contained in the commander-in-chief's circular letters; and from this, there can be no doubt, that the citizens of all the States derive their leading traits for your new form of government.'"—*Lorenzo Sabine's Biographical Sketches of American Loyalists.*



In 1776 the Rev. Ichabod Lewis, twin brother of the venerable Isaac Lewis of Horseneck, was ordained pastor of the united churches of *White Plains* and New Rochelle by the Presbytery of Dutchess county. About 12 o'clock at night on the 5th of November, 1776, the Presbyterian church, together with a quantity of timber designed for its enlargement, besides a number of other buildings, were set on fire by Major Osborne of the Massachusetts line (under General Glover), for the purpose of preventing them from being used by the British troops, then in the neighborhood during the ensuing winter. These facts are fully proved, by affidavits of witnesses now in possession of the trustees. After the burning of the church, the congregation gradually declined; for the members, being mostly staunch Whigs, were obliged to retire north to avoid the depredations and assaults of British troops from New York. The Rev. Ichabod Lewis removed to Bedford, but similar circumstances constrained him to leave that place also for Salem; where he spent the remainder of his days, and lies interred. He left a legacy to the church at South Salem of one thousand dollars, the interest of which at present assists in supporting the pastor of that church.<sup>a</sup> From 1784 to 1821 the congregation enjoyed the privilege of occasional preaching. Upon the 13th of February, 1788, the church was incorporated under the title of the "Presbyterian Church in the White Plains," Jonathan G. Tompkins, Richard Hatfield, Daniel Horton, Jacob Purdy, Nicholas Fisher and Robert Hart, trustees.<sup>b</sup>

During the years 1821 and 1822, the church was regularly supplied by the Rev. Thomas G. Smith, of the Reformed Dutch congregations of Tarrytown and Unionville, every second or third Sunday, for which he received a small pecuniary compensation. In the spring of 1823, the Rev. Marcus Harrison performed services for a short period as a Domestic Missionary, and was succeeded by the Rev. Mr. Ely, who officiated here and at Lower Greenburgh (Dobb's Ferry) about four months under the direction of the Domestic Missionary Society of the city of New York. For the successors of Mr. Ely, see the subjoined list of pastors.

The second church was destroyed by fire in 1854. It took fire on a Sabbath, when it was burnt to the ground; it originated this time in a defect in the chimney from which sparks communicated to the belfry during the morning service, and when discovered had made such progress as to render all efforts to save the building unavailing; only the books,

<sup>a</sup> Communicated to the author by the Rev. S. Schenck, since the completion of Lewisborough or South Salem.—See vol. i. 268.

<sup>b</sup> Co. Rec. Religious Soc. Lib. A. 15.

cushions and other moveable articles were saved. The loss was estimated at \$3,000.

# A LIST OF PASTORS AND SUPPLIES OF THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH OF WHITE PLAINS.

| INSTALLED OR CALLED. | PASTORS.                       | VACATED BY.     |
|----------------------|--------------------------------|-----------------|
| A.D., 1753,          | REV. JOHN SMITH, D.D.,         | death.          |
| 1770,                | REV. ICHABOD LEWIS,            | resigned.       |
| 1821,                | REV. THOMAS G. SMITH, supply,  | "               |
| 1823,                | REV. MARCUS HARRISON,          | "               |
| 1823,                | REV. MR. ELY.                  | "               |
| Oct. 1823,           | REV. SAMUEL ROBERTSON, pastor, | "               |
| A.D., 1825,          | REV. CHESTER LONG,             | "               |
| 1834,                | REV. JOHN WHITE,               | "               |
| 1835,                | REV. EDWARD WRIGHT,            | "               |
| 1844,                | REV. ELIAS S. SCHENOK,         | "               |
| 1849,                | REV. BRONSON B. BEARDSLEY,     | "               |
| 1850,                | REV. JOSEPH FORSYTHE,          | "               |
| 1853,                | REV. DAVID TEESSE,             | "               |
| 1871,                | REV. THOMAS C. STIELE,         | "               |
| Jan. 19, 1874,       | REV. EDGAR L. HERMANCE,        | present pastor. |

This church is in connection with the Bedford Presbytery. The following inscriptions are taken from monuments in the grave yard:—

Here lie the remains of  
 CALEB HORTON,  
 who died August 24th, 1770,  
 aged 72 years.

MARY,  
 wife of  
 MICHAEL CHADDERTON,  
 born June 25, 1706, married 1727,  
 and lived in that State forty-five years, ob. 1772.'

There are also numerous memorials to the families of Miller, Fisher, Varian, Purdy, and Tompkins, and the vault of William and Isabella Pirnie. The remains of a British officer who fell at the battle of White Plains, were interred in the south-west corner of this yard.

## METHODIST CHURCH, WHITE PLAINS.

Methodism was introduced in White Plains in the year 1775, by the Rev. Cornelius Cook. The first Methodist Episcopal church was built in 1795, when Revs. Thomas Woolsey, Albert Van Nostrand and Jason Perkins were the preachers on the circuit which embraced White Plains. This church was forty four feet square ; and when completed, ready for dedication, it was burned. At a meeting, called on the evening of the same day, it was resolved to rebuild at once, and six hundred dollars was subscribed on the spot for that purpose ; and it is said that some of the members were in the roads felling trees and preparing timber before the smoking embers were extinguished.

The first Methodist Episcopal church now standing on Broadway, larger than its predecessor—sprang Phoenix-like from the ashes of the old—and when dedicated was the second Methodist Episcopal church north of the city of New York.

In the year 1836 the third Methodist church was built next door to the parsonage of the Memorial church—a little less than one mile south of the old church.

In 1863 the village was constituted a separate charge, and the Rev. Gideon Draper appointed pastor, who remained two years. In the years 1865 and 1866, Rev. W. M. Chipp was pastor ; Rev. J. P. Hermance, 1867 ; in 1868 and 1869, Rev. J. W. Beach ; in 1870, the Rev. E. B. Otherman ; in 1871 the Rev. Richard Wheatley became pastor. During his pastorate, which continued until the Conference, 1873, the Memorial M. E. church was built. Great credit is due to the Rev. Dr. Wheatley for his untiring efforts, good taste and sound judgment in this really greatest enterprise of the M. E. Church of White Plains. It contains the memorial tablets of many of the great and good men who were, indeed, giants in their day. The Memorial Church was dedicated on Sabbath, May 18, 1873 ; on the previous Saturday able and appropriate sermons were preached by Rev. C. D. Foss, D.D., and Rev. Bishop Janes. On Sabbath morning Bishop Simpson preached a very able sermon from 2d Peter i: 19. Rev. Dr. Eddy preached in the afternoon. In the evening the Rev. Bishop Hasen preached an able and appropriate sermon from Psalm 1: 2. On Sabbath morning, July 13, 1874, memorial services, appropriate to the unveiling of the tablets (placed at the base of the church windows) were held. Rev. Daniel Curry, D.D., Rev. J. B. Wakeley, D.D., and Elijah Miller, Esq., were the speakers.

The Rev. W. F. Hatfield was the pastor of this church at the time it was dedicated, and of the unveiling of the tablets. He remained three

years; and in the spring of 1876 Rev. P. R. Hauxhurst was appointed. At the Conference of 1877, the Rev. J. Y. Bates was appointed.

The present membership of the church, is 315. It has a large and interesting Sabbath-school—of which Samuel Scott, Esq., is the superintendent. The President of the board of Trustees, Samuel R. Pullen; Secretary, J. Malcom Smith; Treasurer, J. R. Tompkins.

The old Episcopal church stood a little east of the old court house. It was built of wood, with a tower and vestry room in the rear; the tower contained a bell, weighing 1135 pounds. This parish was first organized by the exertions of the Rev. Lewis P. Bayard in 1824, who occasionally performed services there. Upon the 22nd of March, 1824, the church was incorporated by the title of Grace (Protestant Episcopal) church, White Plains, in remembrance of Grace church, Rye, whose



Grace Church, White Plains.

minister had officiated here at intervals from 1762 to 1816. As early as 1760, White Plains constituted one of the precincts of Rye parish, and paid a small sum annually towards the support of the rector and the poor; her connection with Rye was dissolved in 1816. Richard Jarvis and Alan McDonald were the first wardens. William Purdy, John Horton, Gilbert Hatfield, James Dick, Alexander Fowler, Joshua Horton, William Buckley and James Merritt, vestrymen.

The church edifice was consecrated on the 2nd of June, 1826, by the Right Rev. J. H. Hobart. In 1833 Trinity church, New York, appropriated to this parish the sum of \$750. In 1861 Mr. Pruden gave the present site of ground to the rector, wardens and vestry on Rail Road Avenue; and in 1864, the corner stone was laid. In 1865 the present



church was consecrated. It cost about \$39,000; tower not completed. In 1863 a handsome rectory was built on the same ground, south of the new church, costing \$3,000. In 1873 a Sunday-school room was commenced, 75x35 feet, to cost about \$9,000; but it has not yet been completed.

The church still owns the old site on the old post road, which is kept merely as a burying ground.

## LIST OF RECTORS AND MINISTERS.

| INST. OR CALL. | INCUMBENTS.                             | VACATED BY.     |
|----------------|---|-----------------|
| 1824,          | REV. W. C. MEAD, Presb.,                | resigned.       |
| 1826,          | REV. ALEXANDER H. CROSBY, A.M., Presb., | "               |
| 1829,          | REV. JOHN W. CURTIS, Presb.,            | "               |
| 1831,          | REV. ROBERT W. HARRIS, A.M.,            | "               |
| 1855,          | REV. THEODORE S. RUMNEY,                | "               |
| 1870,          | REV. F. B. VAN KLEECK,                  | present rector. |

On the 19th of March, 1874, a large number of literary gentlemen of the county met in the village of White Plains at the following call:—

DEAR SIR:—We, the undersigned, have long felt the want in common with others of a County Historical Society. Upon consultation with prominent men we have been asked to call a meeting to organize such a Society for Westchester county. And beg to name Thursday, March 19th, at 2 p.m., at the Orawaupunn Hotel, White Plains; and hope you will take an interest, and if possible attend the meeting.

Signed,

REV. ROBT. BOLTON,  
REV. C. W. BOLTON,  
WM. COVENTRY H. WADDELL,

JAS. E. MALLORY,  
JAS. B. CUNNINGHAM,  
ED. J. CARPENTER,  
EFFINGHAM COCK.

The Society was organized under the following Act:—

## AN ACT TO INCORPORATE THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF WEST-CHESTER COUNTY, IN THE STATE OF NEW YORK.

*The People of the State of New York, represented in the Senate and Assembly do enact as follows:*

§ 1. Rev. Robert Bolton, Wm. Coventry H. Waddell, James B. Cunningham, Effingham Cock, Rev. C. W. Bolton, James E. Mallory, Edward J. Carpenter, Wm. H. Robertson, Clarkson N. Potter, James W. Husted, Robert Rutherford Morris, John Jay, Walter White Evans, Edward F. Delancy, O. R. Willis, Wm. B. Tibbits, Henry Wood, John Jay Wood, Joseph Barrett, James Wood, Rev. Charles Baird, David Rowe, Edward Wells, John Dewitt, Robert P. Getty, I. T. Williams, Wm. Cauldwell, Amherst Wight, Robert S. Haviland, and their associates who are now or may be hereafter associated for the purposes of this Act,

are hereby constituted a body corporate by the name of the "Historical Society of Westchester County," for the purpose of collecting and preserving historical information specially within the original limits of said county, and relative to historical matters generally.

§ 2. For the purposes aforesaid the said society shall possess the general powers and privileges and be subject to the general liabilities contained in the third title of the eighteenth chapter of the first part of the Revised Statutes, as far as the same may be applicable, and may not have been modified or repealed; but the real and personal estate which the said society shall be authorized to take, and hold, and convey, over and above its library, charts, maps, instruments and collections, shall not at any time exceed in value that which does produce the clear yearly income of ten thousand dollars.

§ 3. The officers of said society shall be a President and as many Vice-Presidents, Secretaries and other officers as may from time to time be provided by the by-laws of the society.

§ 4. The said society for fixing the terms of admission of its members, for the government of the same, for changing the officers thereof and for the regulation and management of its transactions and affairs shall have power to form a code of by-laws, not inconsistent with the laws of the State of New York or of the United States: which code when formed and adopted at a regular meeting shall, until modified or rescinded, be equally binding as the Act upon its officers and members.

§ 5. The Legislature may at any time alter or repeal this Act.

§ 6. This Act shall take effect immediately.

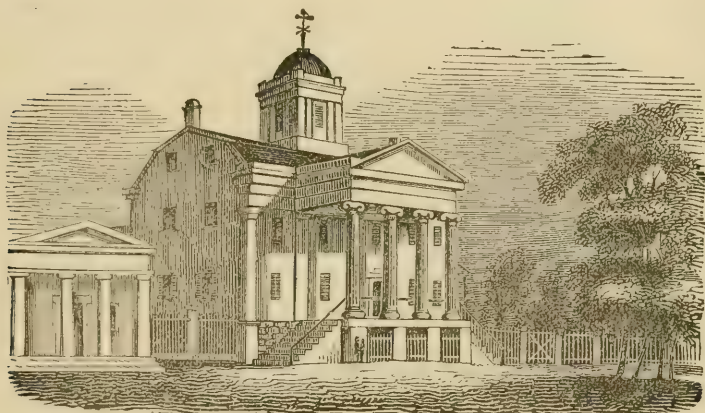
The first officers were: *President*, Ed. F. Delancy; *Vice-Presidents*, Rev. Robt. Bolton, Isaiah Williams, Rev. Chas. E. Lindsley, Robt. P. Getty, Ed. Willis; *Rec. Secretary*, Isaac Wright; *Corresponding Sec.*, Rev. Robt. Bolton; *Foreign Corresp. Sec.*, W. Coventry H. Waddie; *Treas.*, Ed. J. Carpenter; *Librarian and Curator*, Wm. B. Tibbits.

The village of White Plains is very pleasantly situated, and contains a fine stone court-house and jail, Clerk's office, Surrogate's office, Treasurer's office, Record office, Grand Jury's room, Supervisor's room, and Sheriff's office; a Bank and Savings Bank, an Episcopal church, two Methodist churches, a Presbyterian church, Roman Catholic church and Baptist church, a young ladies' seminary and a boys military school, several factories, a large number of lawyer's offices, two newspaper offices, two large and fine hotels—the Orawampum and the Standard House. Also several large livery stables, a large public school house, three carriage manufactories, steam, saw and turning mill, gas house, engine house, and a large number of beautiful stores. It has recently erected a very beautiful soldier's monument. The whole town is richly wooded, and well watered by the Bronx, Sheldrake and Mamaroneck rivers. These streams form romantic valleys, and supply numerous mill seats. Since

the first settlement of this place, which commenced soon after its purchase from the Indians in 1683, it has continued steadily to progress.

White Plains being a shire town the courts are all held here. The court-house, a handsome stone building, stands near the centre of the town on Railroad Avenue. The first court-house was erected in 1759, upon the removal of the courts from Westchester. The first court of Common Pleas assembled here on the 27th of May, 1760. The first court-house was burnt soon after the battle of White Plains, and the second built on the same site, about 1784 or 1785. The third, or new court-house and jail, were erected in 1854.

There are events connected with this spot, which will long live in the pages of American history. It was here that the Whigs of Westchester



Second Court House, White Plains.

County appointed to meet the committees of the several towns to elect deputies to the Continental Congress, who were to assemble at Philadelphia, on the first day of September, 1774. The proceedings of the various meetings held here would afford matter for a good size volume, we shall therefore present our readers with a small part only of the important productions of those eventful times. The following resolutions were adopted by the freeholders and inhabitants of Rye and Westchester:—

“On the 10th day of August, 1774, the freeholders and inhabitants of the township of *Rye*, made choice of John Thomas, Jr. Esquire, Robert Bloomer, Zeno Carpenter and Ebenezer Haviland, for a committee to consult and determine with the committees of the other towns and dis-

tricts in the County of Westchester, upon the expediency of sending one or more delegates to Congress to be held in Philadelphia, on the first day of September, next. The committee, after making choice of Ebenezer Haviland, as chairman, expressed their sentiments and resolutions in the following manner, which was unanimously approved :—

“This meeting being greatly alarmed at the late proceedings of the British Parliament, in order to raise a revenue in America, and considering their late most cruel, unjust and unwarrantable act for blocking up the port of Boston, having a direct tendency to deprive a free people of their most valuable rights and privileges, an introduction to subjugate the inhabitants of the English colonies, and render them vassals to the British House of Commons, *Resolved*,

1st, that they think it their greatest happiness to live under the illustrious house of Hanover, and that they will steadfastly and uniformly bear true and faithful allegiance to his majesty King George the Third, under the enjoyment of those constitutional rights and privileges, as fellow subjects, with those in England.

“2nd, But we conceive it a fundamental part of the British constitution, that no man shall be taxed, but by his own consent, or that of his Representatives in Parliament.” And as we are by no means represented, we consider all acts of Parliament imposing taxes on the Colonies an undue exertion of power, and subversive of one of the most valuable privileges of the English constitution.

“3d, That it is the opinion of this meeting, that the act of Parliament for shutting up the port of Boston, and divesting some of the inhabitants of private property, is a most unparalled, rigorous and unjust piece of cruelty and despotism.

“4th, That unanimity and firmness of measures in the Colonies, are the most effectual means to secure the invaded rights and privileges of America, and to avoid the impending ruin which now threatens this once happy country.

“5th, That the most effectual mode of redressing our grievances, will be by a General Congress, of delegates from the different colonies, and that we are willing to abide by such measures as they in their wisdom shall consider necessary to be adopted on that important occasion.

By order of the committee,

EBENEZER HAVILAND, *Chairman.*”

The committee for the town of Rye will meet the committees of the other towns and districts in the County of Westchester, on Monday the 22d day of this instant, at the *Court-house in the White Plains*, to return an answer to a letter from Mr. Isaac Low, chairman of the committee of correspondence in New York.”<sup>a</sup>

The Westchester resolutions were as follows :—

“At a meeting of the freeholders and inhabitants of the Borough town of Westchester, in New York, the 20th of August, 1774, James Ferris, Esq., Col. Lewis Morris, and Capt. Thomas Hunt, were chosen a committee to meet a committee of the different towns and precincts within this county, at the *White Plains* on Monday the 22d inst., to consult on the expediency of appointing one or more delegates to represent this county at the General Congress, &c., and James

<sup>a</sup> American Archives, fourth series, vol. 1.



Ferris, Esq., being unanimously chosen chairman; the committee, after considering the very alarming situation of their suffering brethren in Boston, occasioned by the late unconstitutional, arbitrary and oppressive act of the British Parliament, for blocking up their port, as well as the several acts imposing taxes on the Colonies in order to raise a revenue in America, thought proper to adopt the following resolutions, which were unanimously agreed to:—

“*Resolved*, 1st., That we do and will bear true allegiance to his majesty George the Third, King of Great Britain, and according to the British constitution.

“2ndly, That we coincide in opinion with our friends in New York and every other Colony, that all acts of the British Parliament imposing taxes on the Colonies without their consent or by their representatives, are arbitrary and oppressive, and should meet the abhorrence and detestation of all good men; that they are replete with the purpose of creating animosities and dissensions between the mother country and the colonies, or thereby tend to destroy that harmony and mutual agreement which is so much the interest of both to cherish and maintain.

“3rd. That we esteem it our duty, and think it incumbent on all the colonies in America, to contribute towards the relief of the poor and distressed people of Boston; and that a person of this Borough be appointed to collect such charitable donations, within the same, as may be offered for their support.

“4th. That as a division in the colonies would be a sure means to counteract the the present intention of the Americans, in their endeavors to preserve their rights and liberties from the invasion that is threatened, we do most heartily recommend a steadiness and a unanimity in their measures, as they will have the happy effects of averting the calamity that the late tyrannical act of the British Parliament would otherwise most assuredly involve us in.

“5th. That to obtain a redress of our grievances, it has been thought most adviseable in the Colonies to appoint a General Congress: we will take shelter under the wisdom of those gentlemen who may be chosen to represent us, and cheerfully acquiesce in any measures they may judge shall be proper in this very alarming and critical occasion.”

JAMES FERRIS, *Chairman.*”

Upon the 6th of April, 1775, appeared the following public notice, addressed to the freeholders and inhabitants of the county of Westchester:—

“You are earnestly desired to attend a general meeting of the county to be held at *White Plains*, on Tuesday next, the 11th inst., to give your votes upon the question:—Whether you are inclined to choose deputies to meet at the city of New York, in the Provincial Convention? or, whether you are determined to abide by the loyal and judicious measures already taken by your own worthy Representatives in the General Assembly of this Province, for a redress of American grievances? The consequences that may arise from neglecting to attend at *White Plains* on Tuesday next, to declare your sentiments relative to the appointment of deputies to meet in Provincial Congress, may be very fatal to this country. The friends of government and our happy constitution are therefore earnestly invited in person, to oppose a measure so replete with ruin and misery. Remember the extravagant price we are now obliged to pay for goods purchased from merchants in consequence of the new importation agreement; and when

<sup>a</sup> American Archives, fourth series, vol. i., 726.

the new exportation agreement takes place, we shall be in the situation of those who are obliged to make bricks without straw."<sup>a</sup>

WHITE PLAINS, IN THE CO. OF W. C., APRIL 11TH, 1775.

On the 28th of March last, the following gentlemen, having received letters from the chairman of the committee of the city and county of New York, relative to the appointment of Deputies for this county, met at this place for the purpose of devising means for taking the sense of the county upon the subject, viz: Theodosius Bartow, Esq., William Sutton, Esq., Captain Joseph Drake, James Willis, Benjamin Drake, Moses Drake, Colonel Lewis Morris, Thomas Hunt, Abraham Leggett, James Horton, Jr., Esq., Stephen Ward and Abraham Guion, Esq., who, having taken the same into consideration, agreed to send the following notification to the principal freeholders in the different towns and districts in the county, viz:—

MARCH 28TH, 1775.

SIR:—A number of persons from different districts in the county of Westchester, having this day met at the White Plains, to consider of the most proper method of taking the sense of the freeholders of the said county, upon the expediency of choosing deputies to meet the deputies of other counties, for the purpose of electing delegates to represent this colony in the General Congress to be held in Philadelphia, on the 10th day of May next, are of opinion that the best way of proceeding for that purpose, will be to have a general meeting of the freeholders of said county. As this county is very extensive, we take the liberty of recommending the meeting to be held at the White Plains, on Tuesday, the 11th day of April next, at 10 o'clock in the forenoon, at the *Court House*, and therefore do desire you to give notice of the same to all the freeholders in your district, without exception, as those who do not appear to vote on that day will be presumed to acquiesce in the sentiments of the majority of those who vote. We are, &c., &c.

The above notice having been generally given and distributed, a very numerous body of freeholders of the county, assembled at the Court House, White Plains, on the day appointed, and chose Colonel Lewis Morris for their chairman. An inconsiderable number of persons, (among whom were many tenants not entitled to vote), with Isaac Wilkins and Colonel Philips at their head, then appeared; and Mr. Wilkins, in their behalf, (as he said), declared that they would not join in the business of the day, or have anything to do with the Deputies or Congresses; but that they came there for the sole purpose of protesting against such illegal and unconstitutional proceedings, after which they departed. The following question was then put to the people by the chairman, viz:—whether they would appoint Deputies for this County to meet the Deputies of the other Counties at the city of New York, on the 20th of April inst., for the purpose of electing delegates to represent this Colony in the General Congress, to be held at Philadelphia, on the 10th day of May next? To which question they unanimously answered that they would. They then appointed the following eight persons, or a majority of them, to be the Deputies of this County, for the purpose aforesaid, viz., Colonel Lewis Morris, Stephen Ward, Daniel Drake, Esq.,

<sup>a</sup> American Archives, fourth series, vol. II, 282.

Colonel James Holmes, John Thomas, Jr., Esq., Jonathan Platt, Esq., Robert Graham and Major Philip van Cortlandt. The two following resolves were then unanimously entered into, viz.:—

*Resolved*, That the thanks of this body is given to the virtuous minority of the General Assembly of this Province, and particularly to John Thomas and Pierre Van Cortlandt, Esq., two of our Representatives, for their attachment to, and zeal on a late occasion, for the preservation of the union of the Colonies, and rights and liberties of America; and that this resolve be communicated by the chairman to every gentleman of whom that minority consisted.

*Resolved*, That the thanks of this county are due to the Delegates who composed the late Congress, for the essential services they have rendered to America in general; and that this resolve be forthwith published.

After the business of the day was thus concluded, the people gave three huzzas for our gracious sovereign, and dispersed quietly without the least disorder.<sup>a</sup>

LEWIS MORRIS, *Chairman.*"

## PROTEST OF THE INHABITANTS AND FREEHOLDERS OF WESTCHESTER COUNTY, NEW YORK.

COUNTY OF WESTCHESTER, APRIL 13TH, 1775.

MR. RIVINGTON:—Be pleased to insert the following, and you will oblige a number of your friends and subscribers:—

"On Thursday the 11th inst., a very respectable number of freeholders and inhabitants of the County of Westchester assembled at the *White Plains* in the said county, agreeable to the notice given, that their sentiments might be known concerning the choice of a committee to meet other committees in the city of New York, for the purpose of choosing delegates to represent this Colony in the next Continental Congress. The friends of order and government met at the house of Captain Hatfield; more who were for a committee put up at another public house in the town. About 12 o'clock, word was brought to the gentlemen at Captain Hatfield's that the opposite party had already entered upon the business of the day; upon which they immediately walked down to the *court-house*, although not half of their friends, who were expected had yet appeared, where they found the other company collected in a body. The numbers on each side seemed to be nearly equal, and both together might amount to two hundred; or, at most, two hundred and fifty. The friends to the government then declared, that as they had been unlawfully called together, and for an unlawful purpose, they did not intend to contest the matter with them by a poll, which would be tacitly acknowledging the authority that had summoned them thither; but that they came only with a design to protest against all such disorderly proceedings, and to show their detestation of all unlawful Committees and Congresses; they then declared their determination and resolution to continue steadfast in their allegiance to their gracious and merciful sovereign, King George the Third, to submit to lawful authority, and to abide by and support the only true representatives of the people of this Colony, the General Assembly; then giving three

<sup>a</sup> American Archives, fourth series, vol. ii, 314.



huzzas, they returned to Captain Hatfields, singing, as they went, with loyal enthusiasm, the good and animating song of "God save great George our King," "Long live our noble King," &c., &c. At their return, finding that many of their friends had arrived during their absence, and that many still kept coming in, they proceeded to draw up and sign the following declaration, which they seemed to do with as much patriotic zeal as ever warmed the hearts of true and faithful subjects, and afterwards dispersed to their different habitations.

"We the subscribers, freeholders and inhabitants of the county of Westchester, having assembled at the White Plains in consequence of certain advertisements, do now declare, that we met here to declare our honest abhorrence of all unlawful Congresses and Committees, and that we are determined at the hazard of our lives and properties, to support the king and constitution, and that we acknowledge no Representatives but the General Assembly, to whose wisdom and integrity we submit the guardianship of our rights and privileges.

Frederick Philips,  
Isaac Wilkins,  
Samuel Seabury,  
Luke Babcock,  
Isaac Fowler Judge,  
Caleb Fowler Judge,  
J. P. Horton, Esq.,  
William Sutton, Esq.,  
Daniel Oakley, Esq.,  
Benjamin Fowler, Esq.,  
William Davis, Esq.,  
Wm. Anderson, Esq.,  
Capt. Abra'm Hatfield,  
Nath'l Underhill, May'r,  
George Cromwell, Esq.,  
Philip Pell, Esq.,  
Joshua Pell,  
James Pell,  
Edward Pell,  
John Hunt,  
Gilbert Horton,  
Adrian Leforge,  
Joshua Gidney,  
Joseph Bude,  
James Wetmore,  
Moses Williams,  
John Haight,  
Isaac Brown,  
Philip Kelly,  
James Haines,  
Joseph Haines, Jr.,  
James Haines, Jr.,  
Matthew Haines,

Roger Purdy,  
Gilbert Pugsley,  
Abraham Leader,  
Benjamin Brown,  
Isaac Reed,  
Aaron Buis,  
Moses Weyman,  
Israel Underhill,  
John Baisly,  
David Oakley, Jr.,  
Isaac Smith,  
John Hyatt,  
Hezekiah Cudney  
Abraham Odell,  
Thos. Lawrence,  
John Seysion,  
Jeremiah Travis,  
Griffen Carey,  
Isaac Foshee,  
Gabriel Requeau,  
Samuel Webb,  
Benjamin Downing,  
Gabriel Archer,  
Elias Secord,  
Thomas Veal,  
James Pierce  
Edward Higbee,  
David Haight,  
Sylvanius Lyon,  
Daniel Haight,  
John Williams,  
Joseph Purdy,  
Ezekiel Halsted,

Jonathan Budd,  
John Wetmore,  
William Underhill,  
Thomas Brown,  
Lieut. Isaac Gedney,  
Nehemiah Tompkins,  
Henry Leforge,  
Robert Brown,  
Benj. Beyea,  
Bartholomew Gidney,  
John Loce,  
Einathan Appleby,  
John Baker,  
Jonathan Underhill,  
James McChain,  
Benjamin Seacord,  
Joshua Hunt,  
Betts Chatterdon,  
William Landrine  
Enoch Hunt,  
Peter Corne,  
Dennis Kennedy,  
James Hains,  
Andrew Bainton,  
Hezekiah Simmons,  
Nathaniel Tompkins,  
Caleb Archer,  
Benj. Bugbee,  
Francis Purdy,  
William Odell,  
Israel Hunt,  
Thomas Tompkins,  
Frederick Underhill,



|                         |                       |                               |
|-------------------------|-----------------------|-------------------------------|
| Bartholomew Haines,     | John Hunt, Jr.,       | Peter Post,                   |
| Gilbert Haines,         | Isaac Purdy,          | Benj. McCord,                 |
| John Haines,            | Elijah Purdy,         | John Williams,                |
| Elijah Haines,          | Abraham Loosee,       | John Ackerman,                |
| Lieut. Solomon Fowler,  | Isaac Tompkins,       | Peter Husting,                |
| Isaac Williams,         | William Gray,         | Thos Barker,                  |
| John McCollum,          | Nathaniel Merrit,     | Jeremiah Hunter, <sup>a</sup> |
| Joseph Clark,           | Joseph Paulding,      | Abraham Storm,                |
| Joseph Oakley,          | Hendricus Storm,      | Peter Jansing,                |
| Caleb Ferris,           | Francis Secord,       | Isaac Merritt,                |
| Capt. Benj. Griffin,    | John Parker,          | Edward Merritt,               |
| Capt. Joshua Purdy,     | Gilbert Hatfield,     | John Gale,                    |
| James Mott,             | Gabriel Purdy,        | John Smith,                   |
| Lieut. Will Lounsberry, | Alexander Hains,      | Roger Purdy,                  |
| Lieut. Samuel Purdy,    | Benj. Ogden,          | James Hart, Jr.,              |
| John Ruster,            | Thos. Merritt,        | Jonah Purdy, Jr.,             |
| Nathan Osborn,          | Gilbert Bates,        | Monmouth Hart, Jr.,           |
| Philemon Halstead,      | John Gidney,          | Christopher Purdy,            |
| Daniel Purdy,           | Stephen Arnode,       | Gilbert Purdy,                |
| John Crab,              | Israel Secord,        | Edward Merritt, Jr.,          |
| Izrahiah Wetmore,       | John Arnode,          | Elijah Miller,                |
| Capt. Absalom Gidney,   | David Purdy,          | Henry Disborough,             |
| David Haight,           | David Belcher,        | Benj. Hunt,                   |
| John Brown,             | Jordon Downing,       | Elnathan Hunt,                |
| Jasper Stivers,         | Levi Devoe,           | William van Wart,             |
| Peter McFarthing,       | Abraham Acker,        | Abraham Storm,                |
| Joshua Purdy, Jr.,      | Cornelius van Tassel, | Thomas Berry,                 |
| Hachaliah Purdy, Jr.,   | Elisha Merritt,       | Lancaster Underhill,          |
| James Tompkins,         | Jacob Schurman,       | Charles Merritt,              |
| Michael Chatterton,     | Joseph Appleby,       | Benjamin Underhill,           |
| Elnathan Taylor,        | John Tompkins, Jr.,   | Benjamin Griffin, Jr.,        |
| Gilbert Theal,          | Job Hadden Jr.,       | Jeremiah Coone,               |
| William Sexton,         | Patrick Carey,        | John Hall,                    |
| Thomas Champoneers,     | James Hart,           | James Angevine,               |
| John Champoneers,       | Gilbert Ward,         | Jacob Coone,                  |
| William Griffin,        | Joseph Hart,          | Jeremiah Anderson, Jr.,       |
| Isaac Gidney,           | Monmouth Hart,        | Gilbert Williams,             |
| John Bates,             | William Dunlap,       | William Barker, Jr.,          |
| Joseph Haviland,        | Joshua Ferris,        | Gideon Arden,                 |
| Eleazer Hart,           | Timothy Purdy,        | William Field,                |
| Timothy Wetmore,        | James Macguire,       | Joseph Purdy,                 |
| James Hunt,             | James Requea,         | George Storm,                 |
| Joseph Parker,          | Daniel Shadin,        | Jacob Vermilea,               |

<sup>a</sup> "NORTH CASTLE, MAY 8TH, 1775. MR. RIVINGTON:—In your paper lately I saw my name to a protest. I never signed it, but went to Capt. Hatfield's house and was asked whether I was a Whig or a Tory? I made answer, that I did not understand the meaning of those words; but was for liberty and peace. Upon which I immediately put down my name. Now, sir, I desire you will print this to show the world that I have not deserved to be held up in the light of a protestor.—JEREMIAH HUNTER.

|                             |                        |                            |
|-----------------------------|------------------------|----------------------------|
| Joshua Barn,                | Samuel Purdy,          | Samuel Heusted,            |
| Joseph Purdy,               | Sylvanus Purdy,        | Bartholomew Underhill,     |
| John Park,                  | William Dalton,        | Lieut. John Warner,        |
| Samuel Purdy,               | David Davids,          | Nath'l Purdy,              |
| Gilbert Purdy,              | Elijah Purdy, Jr.,     | Isaac Bennett,             |
| James Chatterton,           | Elijah Tompkins,       | Samuel Baker, <sup>a</sup> |
| John Dewsenburgh,           | Daniel Jerow,          | John Cromwell,             |
| Thomas Cromwell,            | Charles Lawrence,      | John Storm,                |
| Solomon Horton,             | Joseph Purdy, Jr.,     | Andrew Fowler,             |
| Peter Bussing, <sup>b</sup> | James Sniffin, Jr.,    | Joshua Seacord,            |
| Thomas Valentine,           | Gilbert Valentine,     | Abraham Rich,              |
| Peter Bussing, Jr.,         | Andrew Guion,          | George French,             |
| James Kniffen,              | Gilbert Hunter,        | John Underhill,            |
| Nathan'l Underhill, Jr.,    | Lt. Peter Bonnett,     | Caleb Gidney,              |
| Phillip Fowler,             | Samuel Sneed,          | William Underhill, Jr.,    |
| John McFarthing,            | Peter Fashee,          | James Hill,                |
| John Tompkins,              | Jesse Lawrence,        | William Watkins,           |
| Joseph Hart,                | William Sneed,         | John Rustin,               |
| Jacob Post,                 | Dr. Daniel Knap,       | Richard Baker,             |
| Joseph Gidney,              | Solomon Dean,          | Will Ascough,              |
| James Baxter,               | Charles Vincent, Sen., | Bishop Huestice,           |
| John Hunt,                  | Lieut. Thomas Hyatt,   | James Miller,              |
| Cornelius Loosee,           | James Gidney,          | Phineas Hunt,              |
| Jesse Park,                 | William Woodward,      |                            |

The following persons, not being able to attend at the Plains, requested by their friends that their names might be added to the list of protestors, viz.:—

|                     |                      |                 |
|---------------------|----------------------|-----------------|
| John Hunt, Esq.,    | Philip Palmer, Esq., | John Hitchcock, |
| Jeremiah Hitchcock, | William Bond,        | Joseph Bond.    |

The foregoing account is strictly true, as can be proven by the testimony (or, if necessary, by the affidavits), of a number of persons of the most unquestionable character in this county. What, then, must we think of such persons as have propagated a report that the friends of government were, upon this occasion, outnumbered five to one; and that many of the persons whose names were subscribed to the foregoing declaration, were not on that day present at the White Plains? They must be conscious to themselves that they have spread abroad a falsehood, and they are hereby called upon, if they dare, to set their names to those assertions. In what manner those gentlemen who chose the committee at the Plains proceeded, we cannot positively say; but this we can declare with truth, that we do not believe they can produce to the public the names of a hundred and fifty persons who voted for a committee that day, and we are surely persuaded that they did their utmost to make their party as numerous as possible,

<sup>a</sup> MR. RIVINGTON:—I did sign a protest which was printed in your paper, but I did so because I was told that the intent of signing it was to show that I was for the liberty of the country. SAMUEL BAKER.

<sup>b</sup> That our names were not subscribed to the protest of Westchester, either by ourselves, or our orders or permission, directly or indirectly, is certified by us, each for himself.

May 4th, 1775.

PETER BUSSING. JOHN BUSSING.

How then can they justify their choice of a committee? or how can they presume to impose upon the world, and to insult the *Loyal County of Westchester* in so barefaced a manner? It is well known here that two-thirds, at least, of the inhabitants of this county are friends to order and government, and opposed to committees and all unlawful combinations; and it will be made apparent to the world that they are so, as soon as certain resolves, now signing freely by the people, shall be ready for publication. And one principal reason why the friends to government did not assemble in greater numbers than they did, on Tuesday last, was that many of them had already, by signing those resolves, testified their loyalty to the king, their attachment to the constitution, their enmity to the committees, and their acquiescence in the prudent measures taken by the Assembly in the late session, for accommodating the unhappy differences between the mother country and the colonies; and consequently thought they had done their duty. The committee that was chosen, may, with some kind of propriety, be said to represent those particular persons who chose them; but how they can be denominated the Representatives of the County of Westchester, who, in general abhor committees and committee men, and are determined to take no steps that may lead them into rebellion, we cannot conceive; certainly the friends to government who were collected at Captain Hatfield's, had a better right from their number to determine that there should be no committee than the opposite party had to appoint one, and might with much greater propriety be said to show the sense of the County than the few who acted without authority and in direct opposition to government, and to the determinations of our worthy Assembly; and we doubt not but the impartial public will consider the matter in this light, and not esteem the act of a few individuals, unlawfully assembled, as the act (which most assuredly is not), of the very respectable, populous, and Loyal County of Westchester.<sup>a</sup>

In answer to the above protest, occurs the following letter from Lewis Morris, addressed "to the public:"—

MORRISANIA, MAY 7TH, 1775.

"A very extraordinary paper called a protest against the proceedings of the freeholders of the County of Westchester, relative to the election of Deputies for the late Convention, and said to have been subscribed by the several persons whose names are printed with it, was published in Mr. Rivington's and Gann's *Gazette*, a few weeks ago.

By whom this performance was given to the public is uncertain; and, being as little distinguished by decency as by truth, there is reason to suspect the author's name will remain a secret. The falsities contained in this representation, are too flagrant to impose upon any person in this colony; and, nothing but the apprehension of its gaining credit in other parts of the world, would have induced me to have made it the subject of animadversion.

I shall pass over the many little embellishments with which the author's fancy has endeavored to decorate his narrative; nor, is it necessary to call in question, the reality of that loyal enthusiasm, by which it was said these good people were

<sup>a</sup> American Archives, fourth series, vol. II, 321.

influenced: and I really wish that had been the fact, because when inconsistencies and fooleries result from inebriety or enthusiasm, they merit no pity, and escape indignation and resentment.

Much pains, I confess, were on that day taken to make temporary enthusiasts, and with other more exhilarating spirit of loyalty.

To give the appearance of dignity to these curious and very orderly protestors, the author has been very mindful to annex every man's addition to his name; upon the presumption, perhaps, that it would derive weight from the title of mayor, esquire, captain, lieutenant, judge, &c.

But it is not easy to conceive why the public should be less civil to the clergy than to the gentry and commonalty. Samuel Seabury and Luke Babcock, certainly ought not to have been sent into the world floating on a newspaper in that plain way; the one is the "Reverend Mr. Samuel Seabury, Rector of the united Parishes of East and Westchester, and one of the missionaries for the propagation of the Gospel, (and not politics), in foreign parts," &c., &c., the other is "the Rev. Mr. Luke Babcock, who preaches and prays for Mr. Philipse and his tenants at Philipsburgh."

In this formidable catalogue of 312 sober and loyal protestors, there are not less than one hundred and seventy, who, after a most diligent inquiry, I cannot find have the least pretensions to vote, and indeed many of them are also under age. Their names are as follows.—

|                        |                    |                           |
|------------------------|--------------------|---------------------------|
| Samuel Seabury,        | Elias Seacord,     | John Williams,            |
| Luke Babcock,          | James Pierce,      | John Ackemar,             |
| Benjamin Fowler, Esq., | Edward Bugbe,      | Peter Bussing,            |
| Joshua Pell,           | Daniel Haight,     | Jeremiah Hunter,          |
| Edward Pell,           | John Hunt, jr.,    | Abraham Storm,            |
| John Hunt,             | Abraham Losee,     | Peter Jennings,           |
| Gilbert Horton,        | Isaac Tompkins,    | John Gale,                |
| Adrian Leforge,        | Joseph Paulding,   | John Smith,               |
| Moses Williams,        | Henricus Storm,    | James Hart, jr.,          |
| Philip Kelley,         | Francis Secord,    | Jonathan Purdy, jr.,      |
| James Haines,          | John Parker,       | Monmouth Hart., jr.,      |
| Bartholomew Haines,    | Gilbert Bates,     | Christopher Purdy,        |
| John Haines,           | David Purdy,       | Gabriel Purdy,            |
| Elijah Haines,         | David Bleeker,     | Edward Merrit, jr.,       |
| Joseph Clark,          | Jordan Downing,    | Henry Desborough,         |
| Joseph Oakley,         | Corn. Van Tassell, | William Van Wart          |
| James Mott,            | Joseph Appleby,    | Abraham Storm,            |
| Daniel Purdy,          | Patrick Cary,      | Thomas Berry,             |
| John Crab,             | Gilbert Ward,      | Charles Merritt,          |
| Izrahiah Whetmore,     | William Dunlap     | Benjamin Griffn,          |
| Absalom Gidney,        | Joshua Ferris,     | Samuel Purdy,             |
| John Brown,            | Timothy Purdy,     | Gilbert Purdy,            |
| Jasper Stevens,        | James McGuire,     | James Chatterton,         |
| Peter McFarthing,      | James Requeau,     | Thomas Cromwell,          |
| Joshua Purdy, Jr.,     | Samuel Purdy,      | Solomon Horton,           |
| Hachaliah Purdy, jr.,  | Sylvanus Purdy,    | Nathaniel Underhill, jr., |



|                     |                         |                         |
|---------------------|-------------------------|-------------------------|
| James Tompkins,     | William Dalton,         | Philip Fowler,          |
| Gilbert Theal,      | Elijah Tompkins,        | John McFarthing,        |
| William Sexon,      | Joshua Hunt,            | Jacob Post,             |
| Thomas Champoncers, | Bates Chatterton,       | James Baxter,           |
| John Champoncers,   | William Landrin,        | John Hart,              |
| Eleazer Hart,       | Dennis Kenndy,          | Cornelius Loosce,       |
| James Hunt,         | James Haines,           | Jesse Park,             |
| Joseph Parker,      | Andrew Banton,          | Roger Purdy, jr.,       |
| Joshua Barns,       | Nathaniel Tompkins,     | Gilbert Pugsly,         |
| John Park,          | Caleb Archer,           | Abraham Leaden,         |
| Isaac Smith,        | Benjamin Bugbe,         | Benjamin Brown,         |
| John Hyatt,         | Francis Purdy.          | Aaron Buis,             |
| Abraham Odell,      | William Odell,          | John Burzley,           |
| Thomas Lawrence,    | Israel Hunt,            | David Oakley, jr.,      |
| John Seyson,        | Thomas Tompkins,        | Charles Lawrence,       |
| Isaac Forshea,      | Fred. Underhill,        | Joseph Purdy, jr.,      |
| Gabriel Requeau.    | Peter Post,             | James Sniffen, jr.,     |
| Gabriel Archer,     | Benj. McCord,           | Peter Bonnett,          |
| Peter Fashee,       | John Loce,              | Samuel Husted,          |
| Isaac Lawrence,     | Elnathan Appleby,       | John Warner,            |
| Will. Snider,       | John Baker,             | John Storm,             |
| Solomon Dean,       | Jonathan Underhill,     | Joshua Secord,          |
| Thomas Hyatt,       | James McChain,          | John Underhill,         |
| William Woodward,   | James Angevine,         | William Underhill, jr., |
| John Whitmore,      | Jeremiah Anderson, jr., | James Hill,             |
| Will. Underhill,    | Will. Barker, jr.,      | William Watkins,        |
| Nehemiah Tompkins,  | Gideon Arden, jr.,      | Richard Baker,          |
| Henry le Forge,     | Joseph Purdy,           | Bishop Huestice,        |
| Evert Brown,        | George Storm,           | Jeremiah Hitchcock,     |
| Benj. Beyea,        | Jacob Vermiller,        | William Bond,           |
| Charles Merritt.    | Samuel Snider,          |                         |

Of the others who are freeholders, many also hold land at will of Col. Philipse, so that the truth really is, that very few independent freeholders objected to the appointment of deputies."<sup>a</sup>

LEWIS MORRIS.

Upon the 29th of April, 1775, appeared the following document addressed to the public:—

“We the subscribers do hereby make this public declaration, that whereas, we and several others in Westchester county, having signed a certain number of Resolves, which at the time of our said signing were deemed constitutional, and as having a tendency to promote the interest of our country; but, since upon mature deliberation and more full knowledge of the matter find not only injurious to our present cause, but likewise offensive to our fellow colonists, we do therefore thus publicly testify our abhorrence of the same, and declare ourselves

<sup>a</sup> American archives, fourth series, vol. ii.

true friends to the colonies, and ever ready cheerfully to exert ourselves in the defence and preservation of the same."<sup>a</sup>

JONATHAN FOWLER, Esq.,  
GEORGE CROMWELL, Esq.

"At a meeting of freeholders of Westchester county, New York, at the *White Plains*, on Monday, the 8th day of May, 1775, Gouverneur Morris, Lewis Graham, James Van Cortlandt, Stephen Ward, Joseph Drake, Philip Van Cortlandt, James Holmes, David Dayton, John Holmes, Jr., Robert Graham, and William Paulding, were chosen to be the deputies from this County to the Provincial Convention of the Province of New York."<sup>b</sup>

"On the 30th of June, 1776, the Provincial Congress of this State adjourned from the city of New York, to the *Court House, in White Plains*, where they met on the 9th of July following, and there continued in session until the 29th of that month."<sup>c</sup>

In Provincial Congress, New York, 30th June, 1776, Sunday afternoon, it was

*Resolved.* "That the treasurer and secretary of this Congress be and they hereby are directed forthwith to repair, with all and singular, the public papers and money, now in their custody or possession, unto the *White Plains*, in the county of Westchester, and that this Congress be, and it hereby is, adjourned unto the *Court House in the White Plains* aforesaid, there to meet on Tuesday, the 2d of July next, and proceed upon business; and that the next Congress of this county do meet at the same place on Monday, the 8th day of July aforesaid, unless otherwise ordered by the Congress."

It was carried in the affirmative; for the question, 20, against ditto, 5.

And it was further ordered "that all the lead, powder and other military stores belonging to this State, be forthwith removed to the *White Plains*."<sup>d</sup>

The journey between New York and the Plains was performed by the members on horseback, Pierre van Cortlandt, the president, riding at their head. As expresses overtook them from General Washington, the house was called to order on horseback, and several resolutions passed.

"It was at *White Plains*, on the 9th day of July, the Provincial Congress received the Declaration of Independence; there it was read, in front of the Court House,<sup>e</sup> and there they solemnly in convention prom-

<sup>a</sup> Ibid. 446.

<sup>b</sup> American Archives, fourth series. vol. ii., 529.

<sup>c</sup> Extract from address of J. W. Tompkins, Esq., 1845.

<sup>d</sup> Journal of N. Y. Provincial Congress, vol. i, 512.

<sup>e</sup> The declaration was read by John Thomas, Esq., and seconded by Michael Varian and Samuel Crawford, two prominent Whigs of Scarsdale. The latter met a sad and early fate by the hands of British refugees.

ised *at the risk of their lives and fortunes* to join with the other colonies in supporting it. The letter of John Hancock, enclosing to them that declaration, after acknowledging their dependence for success upon the Ruler of the Universe, with almost a prophet's vision announced the important consequences which would flow from that declaration."<sup>a</sup> The old Court House, honored by this fearless step in the cause of independence, and so intimately associated with the wisdom and virtue of such men as *Jay, Morris, Clinton, Woodhull, Hobart, Van Cortlandt, Livingston* and *Rutgers*, was burnt on the night of the 5th of November, by a New England major, without orders, together with every dwelling at White Plains."<sup>b</sup>

"About 12 o'clock, this night, (Nov. 5th, 1776, says General Heath) a party of Americans wantonly set fire to the Court House, and several other private houses, which stood between the two armies. This gave great disgust to the whole American army, and drew from the commander-in-chief, the following paragraph, in his orders of the 6th: 'It is with the utmost astonishment and abhorrence, the general is informed, that some base and cowardly wretches have, last night, set fire to the Court House and other buildings which the enemy left. The army may rely upon it, that they shall be brought to justice, and meet with the punishment they deserve.'"<sup>c</sup>

Pierre van Cortlandt, vice-president of the committee of public safety, under date of 28th November, thus feelingly alludes to the event:—

"Unhappy am I to add that amidst all our sufferings, the army employed for the protection of America, have not refrained from embittering the calamities of war, at a time when the utmost resources of this State were laid open to their wants, and the members of Convention personally submitted to the labour and fatigue which were necessary on a sudden emergency, and after frequent losses of provisions and barracks, to supply two numerous armies, augmented by the militia, with every article which they required, the Court-house and the remains of the village at the White Plains, which had been spared on the retreat of our forces, were, even after the enemy had in their turn retired, wantonly destroyed, without the orders and to the infinite regret of our worthy general, besides, in spite of all his Excellency's efforts, wherever our troops have marched, or been stationed, they have done infinite damage to the property of the people.

"I am directed, sir, to submit it to the Hon'ble Congress, whether some effectual remedy ought not to be provided against such disorderly and disgraceful proceedings. The soldier, who plunders the country he is employed to protect, is no better than a robber, and ought to be treated accordingly; and a severe example, in the opinion of the committee, ought to be made of the officer who, without any necessity, or his general's permission, set fire to the Court House and other

<sup>a</sup> Extract from address of J. W. Tompkins, Esq.

<sup>b</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>c</sup> Heath's Mem, 83.

buildings at the White Plains. He is guilty of the crime of arson, and if he cannot be punished by the articles of war, ought to be given up to the laws of the land. If so glaring a violation of every sentiment of humanity should be passed over in silence, if the army is not reasonably restrained from such acts of barbarity, the consequence must be fatal to the cause of a people whose exalted glory it is to be advocates for the rights of mankind, against the tyranny and oppression of lawless power. The resolutions which the committee of safety have passed upon the subject are herewith transmitted.

"I have the honor to be, with great respect, sir, your most obedient and very humble servant,

"By order

"PIERRE VAN CORTLANDT,  
*Vice President."*

"To the HONORABLE JOHN HANCOCK,

President of the Congress of the United States."<sup>a</sup>

At a meeting of the committee of safety held Monday morning, 2d December, 1776. It was resolved, "That the laws of the country are not superseded by the military code in the presence of the army;" and "That a letter be written to General Washington, requesting that the officer directing the burning of the Court-house and dwelling-houses at the White Plains, be delivered to this committee or the Convention of this State, in order to his being tried by the laws of the States, and, if guilty, punished thereby."<sup>b</sup>

The following account of the military quarters in this town and its vicinity, in October, 1776, is from the address of J. W. Tompkins, Esq., delivered at White Plains on the 28th of October, 1845 :—

"The County of Westchester, at the commencement of the Revolution, contained a multitude of hardy yeomen inured to toil, whose ancestry had fled from oppression abroad, and in the enjoyment of greater freedom in the colony, had imbibed an ardent love of liberty. When the star of Independence arose in the east, they were ready to follow its lead; and when New York, in 1776, was threatened with invasion, they flocked with alacrity to its defence. When the battle of Long Island turned the tide of war against us, they still adhered to the American army, contending every inch of ground to Harlem, thence to King's Bridge, and through the southern part of Westchester to White Plains, where Gen. Washington again determined to entrench himself and make another stand against an overwhelming force of the choicest British troops, flushed with victory and confident of success. A brief account of the movements of the two armies to this place, and of their operations here, it is my purpose to give.

"The city of New York was selected by the English as the centre of their military operations, with the view of commanding the North river and acting in conjunction with a force from Canada, descending through Lake Champlain, thus securing the Colonies. Their march into Westchester County was designed

<sup>a</sup> Journal of N. Y. Prov. Congress, vol. i. 723.

<sup>b</sup> Journal of N. Y. Prov. Congress, vol. i. 729.



to obtain command of the two principal routes leading to New England, one through Rye and the other by the way of Bedford, and thereby cut off the American army from its supplies, principally derived from the East, and obtain the rear of General Washington's army, and force him to a general battle, or to a precipitate retreat. But Washington penetrated their intentions, and conducted his forces northward from King's Bridge with great skill, moving in a line parallel with the British, a little in advance of them, facing them constantly, with the Bronx in his front, which was fortified at every assailable point.

"On the 12th of October, '76, a portion of the British army, consisting of the Guard, Light Infantry reserve, and Colonel Dunop's Corps landed at Throg's Neck; and the night of that day, Colonel William Smith, (then a Lieutenant,) with a Corporal's guard, broke down the bridge connecting the Neck with Westchester town, and left Sir William Howe upon an island. On the 16th and 17th of October, the English forces at Throg's Neck were augmented by the 1st, 2nd and 6th Brigades crossing from Long Island, and by the 3d Hessian battalion from New York. On the 18th, the whole British army crossed to Pelham Point, and marching northerly, encamped the same night on the high ground between Hutchinson's River and New Rochelle village, where it remained till the 21st. On the 21st, the British removed and encamped on New Rochelle heights, north of the village, and on both sides of the road leading to Scarsdale. This camp was broken up on the 25th, and the army moved forward to a position upon the high grounds in Scarsdale, in the vicinity of the late John Bennett's farm, and there remained till the morning of the 28th of October.

General Washington during that time had not remained inactive—as early as the 11th of October, a part of his army crossed from Harlem heights, reached White Plains on the 12th, and commenced erecting fortifications; and on the 22d General Washington, leaving his head-quarters at Fort Washington, established them at Valentine's hill, whence they were removed to White Plains on the 23d.

"The entrenchments at White Plains were erected under the directions of a French engineer, and consisted of a square fort of sods in the main street with breast works on each side running westerly over the south side of Purdy's hill to the Bronx, and easterly across the hills to Horton's pond. When the English attacked Chatterton's hill on the 28th, they were unfinished; but during the night of the 28th and 29th of October they were raised and strengthened, being only intended for temporary use until the position above Abraham Miller's in North Castle could be fortified, which was done, and to which the American army afterwards retired.

"General Howe committed a great mistake in not attacking General Washington's fortifications in White Plains on the 28th instead of Chatterton's hill. He gained nothing in taking that hill. After the works at White Plains were completed, great loss to Howe's army must have attended their capture, and Washington's new position, (above Mr. Miller's,) appears to have been regarded as impregnable. Washington's policy at this time was, as he expressed it 'to entrench and fight with the *spade and mattock*.' The experience at Bunker's Hill had made the English cautious in attacking Americans behind entrenchments.<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> "General George Clinton, in a postscript to a friend, writing from Washington's entrenchment on the night of the 29th October, says: 'Love to Mrs. Clinton—tell her I write from an entrenchment. The British forces are in sight, and we shall probably have battle to-morrow—tell her to entertain no fears for my safety,'"—*Mr. Tompkin's Address.*

"During the march of the two armies to White Plains frequent skirmishes occurred. On the 18th, the vanguard of the British army were attacked by a detachment under General Sullivan, and the fight which ensued, (near the road reaching from New Rochelle,) has been always represented as very creditable to the Americans."

"On the 21st, Colonel Rogers, a celebrated partisan officer in the French war, had accepted a command in the English service, and lay at Mamaroneck. An attack upon him was planned by Lord Sterling, and executed by a force under the command of Col. Haslet, of the Delaware regiment. Rogers was completely surprised; seventy or eighty of his men were killed or made prisoners, and a considerable quantity of arms, ammunition and clothing taken by the Americans. On the 23d of October, a spirited skirmish took place between Hand's Pennsylvania riflemen and a detachment of Hessian chasseurs, about 240 strong, in which the Hessians were routed. These harassing encounters of the Americans, (attended invariably with success,) tended to delay the advance of the British and to make them cautious, while it cheered the desponding courage of the American soldiers, and above all, gave General Washington time to remove his stores and entrench himself where no army dare assail him.

"On the morning of the 28th of October, the British army marched from their camp in two columns—the right commanded by *General Clinton*, the left by *De Heister*, and came in sight of the American forces about 10 o'clock. On the 27th of October, two militia regiments had been sent over to throw up entrenchments on Chatterton hill; and on the morning of the 28th, General Washington ordered Col. Haslet to take command of the hill—having under his command his own (the Delaware) Regiment, the Militia, and part of the Maryland troops. General McDougal soon followed him and took command. Col. Haslet says, the enemy in the first place moved towards the fortifications in the village—they then halted—the general officers had a council of war on horseback in the wheat-fields, and the result was that their forces inclined towards the Bronx. Fifteen or twenty pieces of artillery were placed upon the high ground opposite the hill, and commenced a furious cannonade upon McDougal's forces, under cover of which fire the British built a bridge over the Bronx, and prepared to cross.

"Gen. McDougal placed two field pieces upon a ledge of table rock, which did great execution among the British artificers and soldiers. So soon as the bridge would admit their crossing, they rushed forward and attempted to take the two pieces by a charge up the hill—these two cannon were in charge of the late Alexander Hamilton, (then a captain of artillery), and never did officers or men do better execution. When upon the spot in after years, describing it to a youthful friend, he was heard to say, 'For three successive discharges the advancing column of British troops was swept from hill-top to river' The British finding this table rock inaccessible, inclined to the left down the river, and joined the troops under *General Rahl*, which had crossed about a quarter of a mile below.

"They now attacked McDougal, and attempted to turn his right flank. He retreated, but contested the ground all the way up to the summit of the hill, making a stand at every favorable point. At length the British cavalry gained the crest of the hill, and charging, cut to pieces the militia on McDougal's right.

The last stand was made by the Americans behind a fence at the top of the hill, where the Delaware regiment and part of McDougal's brigade, twice repulsed the British Light Infantry and Cavalry. At length compelled to retreat, it was done in good order over the bridge at the foot of the hill, under cover of some regiments detached by Washington from his main army. The militia and a few of the regulars were dispersed among the hills of Greenburgh, but soon returned to Head Quarters. The British forces engaged in that attack, were the flower of the army, consisting of the second brigade of British, the 5th, 28th and 49th regiments, Rahl's battalion, the Hessian Grenadiers, under Dunop, and a party of Light Dragoons, all commanded by General Leslie.

"That General Washington did make a successful stand at this place, has ever excited the wonder of military men. His troops were greatly inferior in numbers and discipline, and composed in part of militia and raw recruits. After the battle, the enemy for several days attempted to gain Washington's rear, tried to alarm him and induce him to retreat or fight by threatening his flanks. At several times they formed a semi-circle about him. On the night of the 31st of October, Washington evacuated his camp at White Plains<sup>a</sup> and established his new position in the hills of Northcastle, about one mile in the rear of his former encampment, when the British appear to have relinquished all further offensive operations. At the advance of the British army to White Plains, the Whig families were seen hurrying, unprotected before them, with thin clothing and a scanty supply of provisions, to seek shelter for the coming winter, they knew not where. Desolation and famine marked the fair region over which the two armies passed. The English army finding all attempts to circumvent General Washington hopeless, broke up their camp at White Plains, on the 5th of November, and retired to Dobb's Ferry, and from thence to King's Bridge, where they encamped on the 13th of that month.

"Thus ended in Westchester, for the year '76, the movements of the British army; but soon the inhabitants of the North were overrun by loyalists from Morrisania, and for a long time without protection, were exposed to every danger and suffering. In short, till the peace of 1782, Westchester was the battleground of the disaffected, and the prey of both friend and foe. Scenes of cruelty and bloodshed unknown in civilized warfare, marked their partizan engagements, and in the defence of their homes, her valiant sons exhibited frequent instances of personal bravery unexcelled in ancient or modern times. Among the most daring were the guides—such men as *Abraham Dyckman*, *Cornelius Oakley* and *John Odell*. In the darkness of night they have often surprised and carried off captains, officers and men, under the guns of the British forts at Morrisania, or in small parties amused themselves by beating up De Lancey's quarters. Frequent alarms had made them watchful of surprise, and success rendered them reckless of danger, till they became the chosen leaders of each dangerous enterprise against the enemy.

Why Gen. Howe so suddenly left the battle-field at White Plains has been a mystery to many, but the following may explain it: "When he

<sup>a</sup> At the east end of the village is still to be seen the remains of Washington's encampment. Of this nothing is left but a small portion of the embankment that runs partly across the street, on the surface of which rests a mutilated howitzer. This relic of the past was disinterred near the spot it occupies.



landed with his forces on Throg's Neck, Gen. Washington withdrew all his army—except a garrison at Fort Washington, a very strongly fortified position, and considered impregnable. But treason can do what valor and skill cannot.

Gen. Howe, as we shall see, had good reason to change his whole plan; and that cause was, the treason of a commissioned officer of the American army. Four years before, the traitor Arnold attempted to betray West Point. A similar, but more successful traitor, betrayed Mount Washington. On the 2d of November, 1776, Adjutant Magaw, passed undiscovered, out of Fort Washington into the British camp, conveying the plans of the fort and full information as to all its works and garrison, and placed them in the hands of Lord Percy.

On the 15th of November, the grand army of Howe, that was seen in such splendor in White Plains but a short time before, now gathered around the doomed fortress of Mt. Washington, and it soon fell by the treachery of a traitor whose infamy ought to be known, and his name branded with that contempt that traitors only deserve.

The following additional particulars respecting the engagement on Chatterton's hill are contained in Gen. Heath's Memoirs:—

27th of October, "In the forenoon, a heavy cannonade was heard towards Fort Washington. Thirteen Hessians and two or three British soldiers were sent in on this day. From the American camp to the west, south-west, there appeared to be a very commanding height, worthy of attention. The Commander-in-Chief ordered the general officers who were off duty, to attend him to reconnoiter this ground, on this morning. When arrived at the ground, although very commanding, it did not appear so much so, as other grounds to the north, and almost parallel with the left of the army, as it was then formed. "Yonder," says Major Gen. Lee, pointing to the grounds just mentioned, "is the ground we ought to occupy." "Let us then go and view it," replied the Commander-in-Chief. When on the way, a light horseman came up on full gallop, his horse almost out of breath, and addressed General Washington—"The British are in the camp, sir." The General observed, "Gentlemen, we have now other business than reconnoitring," putting his horse in full gallop for the camp, and followed by the other officers. When arrived at head-quarters, the Adjutant-General, (Read,) who had remained at camp, informed the Commander-in-Chief, that the guards had been all beat in, and the whole American army were now at their respective posts, in order of battle. The Commander-in-Chief turned round to the officers, and only said, "Gentlemen, you will repair to your respective post, and do the best you can." "Our General, (Heath,) on arriving at his own division, found them all in the lines; and, from the height of his posts, found that the first attack was directed against the Americans on Chatterton's hill. The little river Bronx, which ran between the American right and this hill, after running round its north side, turned and ran down on the east and south-east. The British advanced in two columns. At



this instant, the cannonade was brisk on both sides; directed by the British across the hollow and Bronx, against the Americans on the hill, and by them returned. Almost at the same instant, the right column, composed of British troops, preceded by about twenty light horse in full gallop, and brandishing their swords, appeared on the road leading to the court-house, and now directly in the front of our General's division. The light-horse leaped the fence of a wheat field, at the foot of the hill, on which Col. Malcolm's regiment was posted, of which the light-horse were not aware until a shot from Lieutenant Fenn's field-piece gave them notice by striking in the midst of them, and a horseman pitching from his horse. They then wheeled short about, galloped out of the field as fast as they came in, rode behind a little hill on the road, and faced about; the tops of their caps only being visible to our General, where he stood. The column came no further up the road, but wheeled to the left by platoons, as they came up; and, passing through a bar, or gateway, directed their head towards the troops on Chatterton's hill, now engaged. When the head of the column had got nearly across the lot, their front got out of sight; nor could the extent of their rear be now discovered. The sun shone bright, their arms glittered, and perhaps troops never were shown to more advantage, than those now appeared. The whole now halted; and for a few minutes, the men all sat down in the same order in which they stood, no one appearing to move out of his place. The cannonade continued brisk across the Bronx. A part of the left column, composed of British and Hessians, forded the river, and marched along under the cover of the hill, until they had gained sufficient ground to the left of the Americans; when, by facing to the left, their column became a line, parallel with the Americans. When they briskly ascended the hill,<sup>a</sup> the first column resumed a quick march. As the troops, which were advancing to the attack, ascended the hill, the cannonade on the side of the British ceased; as their own men became exposed to their fire, if continued. The fire of the small arms was now very heavy, and without any distinction of sounds. This led some American officers, who were looking on, to observe that the British were worsted, as their cannon had ceased firing; but a few minutes evinced that the Americans were giving way. They moved off the hill in a great body, neither running, nor observing the best order. The British ascended the hill very slowly, and when arrived at its summit, formed and dressed their line, without the least attempt to pursue the Americans. The loss on the side of the Americans was inconsiderable. That of the British was not then known. The British army having got possession of this hill, it gave them a vast advantage of the American lines, almost down to the centre."<sup>b</sup>

Botta, in his history of the American Revolution, says: "The loss of men in this action was great on the one part as well as on the other."<sup>c</sup>

Among the principal actors in this scene, upon the American side,

<sup>a</sup> While the British were thus advancing up the hill, a shot struck one of the standard bearers dead. Warren de Lancey, (then a boy fifteen years of age,) instantly seized the colors, and rushing forward, was one of the first to gain the summit, where he planted them in the ground. For this act of bravery he afterwards received a cornet's commission from General Howe.—*Author*.

<sup>b</sup> Heath's Mem. 76.

<sup>c</sup> The remains of those slain in the conflict, were interred in a hollow on the south-west side of Chatterton hill, near a hickory tree.

may be enumerated, Generals Washington, Clinton, McDougal, Lee, Heath, Sterling, and Read, Colonels Haslet, Smallwood, Malcolm and Glover; Majors Hand, Lee and Lieut. Fenno. On the British side, Brigadier Generals Leslie, Knyphausen, Rahl, De Heister, and Matthews; Lord Percy, Count Dunop, Colonel Ralle, Colonel Ritzema, and Major Rogers, &c., &c.

The following letter of General George Clinton, dated Camp, at the old Place near White Plains, Nov. 2d, 1776, to a friend, is copied from the journal of the Provincial Congress:—

MY DEAR SIR:—"Your favors of the 30th and 31st ultimo, were left at my tent a few minutes since. Since my last to you, dated the day before yesterday, the centre and right wing of our army having possessed themselves of the heights in their rear, north-east of the road leading to Young's, yesterday morning evacuated that part of our lines which passed through the town, and south-east of N——, and fell back on those heights—firing all the barns, hay and corn stacks in front. This induced the enemy to believe we had again retreated; and determined to take the advantage of our apparent flight, their army instantly moved forward into the part of our lines which were evacuated. This brought on a pretty brisk cannonade, though at too great a distance to do much execution. I lost one man, and had two wounded. I have heard of no other injury done us. We are by the late movements now far advanced—in front, of course, most exposed. The enemy retired to their former encampment in the evening, leaving strong advanced pickets, and working parties who are busily employed in erecting banks on the heights in and near the town. Deserters, (especially from the Queen's light dragoons,) come daily over to us; and now and then our Rangers send in a straggling prisoner. Captain Van Wick of my brigade, who, at his earnest desire, was appointed to a company of rangers, was day before yesterday unfortunately killed. He went out in the morning with about thirty men, and fell in with about one hundred of the enemy in a house not far distant from their lines—charged them with spirit, gave them a brisk fire, but unfortunately, when loading his piece the second time, was shot in the head, and fell dead. His lieutenant shot down the man who killed his captain. The enemy fled; our party brought off their captain, and yesterday evening I had him interred with the honors of war. He was a good man, and a valiant officer. Pray communicate this sad news to his widow, (to whom I would write, had I leisure,) in a manner that will least affect her.

I know of no other news worth communicating you. Though in the camp, I am not acquainted with the disposition of our army. Some brigades to the north-east of us, in my humble opinion, are where they can do no good; perhaps I am mistaken. I am not well acquainted with the country. I must beg an answer to my letter, wherein I desired you to ask a favor of the Convention.

I am, with the utmost esteem,

Yours affectionately,

GEORGE CLINTON.

P.S.—I need not ask you to forward the enclosed. I know you will do it. Though I determined never to meddle with the disposition of officers, I cannot

help recommending Colonal Duboys and his officers, who served in our army to the northward last year, to the Convention. Should they quit the army by any neglect, it will be a public loss. They are brave men and good officers; at least, such of them as have joined our brigade."<sup>a</sup>

The head-quarters of Washington, while stationed here, were at a small farm-house to the north of the village, situated amid a deep solitude of woods, surrounded by hills and wild romantic scenery. The following account of a visit paid to this spot, is taken from a newspaper printed in New York, in 1845.

"When we entered the little room of Mr. Miller's<sup>b</sup> farm-house, where that great and good man had resided, and where he resolved to try the hazard of a battle, with a flushed and successful foe, we could not repress the enthusiasm, which the place and the moment and the memory inspired. We looked around with eagerness at each portion of the room on which his eye must have rested, we gazed through the small window panes, through which he must have so often and so anxiously looked towards the enemy, and at the old-fashioned buffets, where his table service was deposited for his accomodation. But little change has taken place in the building; and its amiable and patriotic inmates have shown their respect for the hero, by placing on the walls, his portrait and several representations of his last moments at Mount Vernon."

In the north-east angle of the town, lies St. Mary's Lake—a large and beautiful sheet of water, which falls into the Mamaroneck river. Its banks on the north-west side are very steep, and the views from the summits of the surrounding hills are extremely fine.

The general surface of White Plains, "is somewhat hilly, but mostly arable; soil, principally loam, well adapted to grass, and much of it highly cultivated."<sup>c</sup> The higher lands abound with good timber, which consists chiefly of oak, chestnut and hickory. There is perhaps no town in the county better watered by rivers, brooks, and springs.

---

<sup>a</sup> Journal of N. Y. Prov. Congress, vol. ii, 317.

<sup>b</sup> Mr. Elijah Miller (who is since deceased) was a soldier of the Revolution.

<sup>c</sup> Disturnell's *Gazetteer*, N. Y.





# THE TOWN OF YONKERS.

---

Yonkers is situated on the east bank of the Hudson, immediately above New York Island, seventeen miles north of New York, one hundred and thirty south of Albany, and ten south-west of *White Plains*; bounded north by Greenburgh, east by Eastchester and a small angle of Westchester, or by Bronx's River, south by West Farms and New York county, and west by the Hudson River. It extends near eight miles along the Hudson, and has a medial width of near three miles.

The name of this town—at different periods written, Younkers, Younckers, Jonkers and Yonkers—is derived from the Dutch “Jonker,” or “Jonkheer,” meaning in that language the “*young gentleman*,” a common appellation for the heir of a Dutch family.<sup>a</sup>

Yonkers and the Mile Square constituted a township within the great manor of Philipsburgh, until the year 1779, when the manor was confiscated and conveyed to the people of this State, A.D. 1788, the present township was independently organized.<sup>b</sup> Thirty years after the Dutch discovery of the New Netherlands, A.D. 1639, we find the Dutch West India Company purchasing lands in this town of the native Indian sachems:—

“Appeared before me, Cornelis Van Tienhoven, Secretary of the New Netherlands, Frequemeck, Rechgawac, Packanniens, owners of *Kekeshick*, which they did freely convey, cede, &c., &c., to the behoof of the General Incorporated West India Company, which lies over against the flats of the Island of Manhates, mostly east and west, beginning at the source of said kill till over against the

<sup>a</sup> Benson's Mem. of N. Y.

<sup>b</sup> Act passed 7th March, 1788. Rev. Stat, vol. iii. 286.

high hill of the flat lands—to wit, by the great kill, together with all the rights, estate and title to them, the grantees, &c., &c. In testimony of the truth of which, this is subscribed by witnesses. Done 3d of August, 1639, at Fort Amsterdam, in New Netherland,<sup>a</sup>

CORNELIUS VAN DER HOYKEN, }  
DAVID PIETTERSEN DE VRIES, } as witnesses,

In presence of me,

CORNELIS VAN TIENHOVEN, *Secretary.*"

How long the Dutch West India Company held the lands of *Kekes-hick*, does not appear; but about the year A.D. 1646, we find the Indian sachem, *Tacharew*, granting lands in this town to Adrian Van der Donck.<sup>b</sup> In this sale the town is called *Nepperhaem*,<sup>c</sup> an Indian name frequently applied to the village. Eighty years later we find it varied to *Nepperah*,<sup>d</sup> the proper Indian orthography of which is evidently *Nap-pecha-mack*, rendered literally the *rapid water settlement*, thus graphically expressing the situation of the Mohegan village, at the mouth of the *Neperah*, or rapid waters.<sup>e</sup> In the deep seclusion of the ancient forests that once bordered this beautiful stream, were located other Indian villages, some of the sites of which tradition has preserved to us; one of these occupied the eastern edge of Boar Hill. A Mohegan castle ornamented the steep side of Berrian's Neck, styled in the Indian tongue *Nipnichsen*. It was carefully protected by a strong stockade, from the attacks of the war-like Sank-hi-can-ni, (fire workers,) inhabiting the Jersey shores, and commanded the romantic scenery of the Spuyten Duyvel Creek and Hudson River. The junction of the two streams was called, in the Indian, Shorackappock. The last settlement of the Nappeckamak Indians remembered in this town stood near the present residence of Abraham Fowler, on a rising bank of the Neperah, (saw mill.) The crystal waters of this sweet stream, (which runs principally north and south,) arise from two perennial springs in the bosom of the Chappequa hills. To this nymph of the valley the Indians (as their custom was) offered sacrifice, the perpetuity of her motion tipifying to them the eternity of God.

In the north-west corner of this town, west of the saw mill, (Neperah) is situated the rock *Meghkeckassin*, *Amackassin*, or the *great stone*, sometimes called *Meghkeckassin*, and *Macakassin*, a name probably derived from two Delaware words, "*Machaak*," signifying "*great*," "*achsin*,"

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Rec. c. c. 62.

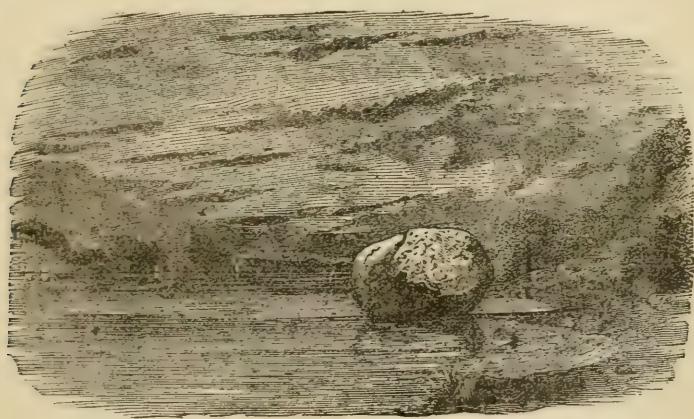
<sup>b</sup> Sometimes called the Younger Van Dunke. Assize, Rec. Alb. 47.

<sup>c</sup> Alb. Rec. viii. 79, 80. Hol. Doc. vi. 118. Book of Pat. I., 56.—O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N., 382.

<sup>d</sup> Valentine's Receipts for rent.

<sup>e</sup> Nipi, in the old algonkin, signifies water; Niess, in the Mowtauks.—Trans. Amer. Antiq Soc. II.

stone; or as rendered by some "*Mekhhakhsin*," meaning *copper*, "*akhsin*," *stone*.<sup>a</sup> The latter word appears to denote not a common stone, but the "colored copper stone" bound under some spell of Indian necromancy. On the east side of this enchanted rock are several Indian marks almost effaced by age. "To these stones they paid all outward signs of worship and devotion, not as to God, but as they are hieroglyphics of the permanency and immutability of the Diety; because these, both for figure and substance, are, of all sublunary bodies, the least subject to decay or change."<sup>b</sup> This stone lies in an obscure nook on the eastern shore of the Hudson, at the foot of a steep bank whose sides are shaded with masses of wild cedar and laurel, the beautiful lake like ap-



Indian Rock, Meghkeekassin, or Amackassin.

pearance of the river giving additional interest and magical illusion to the scene. At ebb tide the huge boulder must have reminded them of a monstrous Neebanawbaig, (or water spirit,) afloat on the waves. To the superstitious Indian its peculiar position must have been a subject of deep interest. The name of this stone is sometimes applied to a brook that flows in the vicinity. The term *Sigghes*, which also occurs in some of the deeds, doubtless belongs to the Indian rock, situated still higher up, west of the post road on the land of J. O. Dyckman. The two rocks or stones and rivulet here referred to, still form a portion of the northern boundary of Yonkers, running east to Bronx's river. In this town are also two *Indian burying grounds*. The principal one lies two miles north

<sup>a</sup> Trans. Amero. Antiq. Soc. vol. ii. 336.

<sup>b</sup> Beverly's Hist. Virginia.

of the village on Blackwell's hill. Within the recollection of many persons still living, the graves were distinctly indicated by rude mounds of earth; but alas! the plough has long since removed these memorials of the ancient dead, and perhaps the mouldering relics themselves.

That remnant of a martial brow,  
Those ribs that held the mighty heart,  
That strong arm—ah! 'tis strengthless now.—*Bryant.*

And well might the poet add:—

Spare them! each mouldering fragment spare,  
Of God's own image—let them rest,  
Till not a trace shall speak of where  
The awful likeness was impressed!<sup>a</sup>

The second and last place of sepulture used by the Indians in this town, is now nearly covered by the barn and out buildings of Benjamin Fowler, Esq. The site was well chosen, on rising ground, at the entrance of the Sprain valley.

Besides the Tawasenthas, (or places of many dead,) numerous skeletons have been discovered in different parts of the town, showing it to have been once numerous populated by the Indian tribes. One of these was recently disinterred in making some improvements on the Kings-Bridge road, nearly opposite the Van Cortlandt residence; it proved to be on examination the full sized skeleton of an Indian, in a sitting posture, holding the remains of a small child between its knees. Others have been discovered lying near the surface of the ground on Berrian's Neck; the back part of the skull of one of these was found perforated by a musket ball, which still remains in the cavity of the brain.<sup>b</sup> Of course this Indian perished by fire arms. It may not be inappropriate to mention that Hendrick Hudson had an engagement with the Indians in 1609, at the mouth of the Spuyten Dyvil creek.

The descendants of the last named chief, *Tuckarew*, continued to reside in Yonkers for more than half a century after the sale to Van der Donck, A.D. 1646, as we find Claas de Wilt, Neamerau, and a squaw, Karocapacomont, confirming the Hon. Jacobus van Cortlandt, in possession of the old Yonckers, A. D. 1701.<sup>c</sup> 1692, we find an Indian chief at Bedford, called Wappowham.<sup>d</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Harper's Indian Traits, introd. i. 19.

<sup>b</sup> In possession of H. S. Gates, M.D., of Yonkers village.

<sup>c</sup> See Van Cortlandt's confirmation.

<sup>d</sup> See Bedford.



The last remnant of his tribe in this place was a noble Indian by the name of Shucktaman, who occasionally visited the village, but was oftener to be seen in his canoe cruising along the various fishing grounds of the Hudson.

We have shown that the next grantee in Yonkers, under the Indians, was the renowned Dutch De Heer Adriaen van der Donck.<sup>a</sup> "This illustrious personage was the son of a free citizen of Breda in Dutch Brabant, and a lineal descendant of Adriaen van Bergen, part owner of the famous turf boat, in which a party of Dutch troops were clandestinely introduced, in the year 1599, into the castle commanding that city, then in the hands of the Spanish, by which stratagem that stronghold fell into the hands of their high mightinesses the States General."<sup>b</sup> "Van der Donck enjoys the distinction of having been the first lawyer in the colony of New Netherlands. He received his education at the University of Leyden, in Holland, where he attained the degree of *Juris utriusque* Doctor; he subsequently obtained permission to practice as an advocate in the Supreme Court of Holland. In the autumn of 1641, he embarked on board a vessel belonging to the Patroon Killian van Rensselaer, for the New Netherlands. On his arrival he was created sheriff of Rensselaerwyck."<sup>c</sup>

After remaining here for two or three years, and finding himself disappointed in his efforts to plant a colony in that neighborhood, "he obtained, in consideration of the assistance he afforded in negotiating the treaty between the Director General and the Mohawks, and in return for the advances he then made to enable the government to purchase presents for the Indians, the tract of land called "*Nepperhaem*." This valuable property, for which he received a patent from the Dutch authorities in 1646, was situated on the east side of Hudson's river, about sixteen miles above New Amsterdam. It was bounded on the north by a stream which the Indians called "*Maccakassin*," and ran south to *Nepperhaem*; thence to the *Shorakaphock kill*, and to *Papir-inimen creek*, called by the Dutch "*Spuyten Duyvel*," whence it stretched eastward to the river Bronx. The title of this colony was "*Colen Donck*," Donck's colony, and the proprietor thereof, was invested with all the rights and privileges contained in the charter of 1629."<sup>d</sup>

He also obtained a deed of confirmation for the same from the ancient lords of the soil. This fact is proved by the testimony taken be-

<sup>a</sup> Donck is a village in South Holland, three and a half leagues from Gorcum.

<sup>b</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N., 327.

<sup>c</sup> N. Y. Hist. Soc. Coll. II., Sec I. 27.

<sup>d</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. of the Netherlands, vol. I. 382.

fore his Excellency, Richard Nicoll, the first English governor of New York, A.D. 1666, when it was distinctly declared,—“That the Indian proprietor’s name, who was chief of them, was *Tackarew*, living at the Navisans, (the highlands of the Nevisink, N. J.), who acknowledged ye purchase as before described, and that he had received satisfaction for it. Claes, ye Indian, having interest in a part, acknowledged to have sold and received satisfaction of Van der Donck. All the rest of ye Indians, being seven or eight, acknowledged to have received full satisfaction<sup>a</sup> likewise.”

The *Jonge Heer* being now a member of the privileged order of Patroons,<sup>b</sup> enjoyed all the feudal appendages attached thereto, such as power to erect a church or churches; to administer jurisdiction, to decide civil suits, to impose fines, to pronounce the first sentence, finally to exercise all rights belonging to the jurisdiction, of Colen Donck together with the right of hunting, fowling, fishing and trading according to immunities granted in the same. Soon after the settlement of our Patroon at Colen Donck, there arose a controversy between the government of the Colony of New Netherlands and several of the colonists; among the most forward of the latter was Adriaen Van der Donck, who with others united in a strong remonstrance to the States General of Holland, complaining of the power exercised by the Dutch West India Company especially during the administrations of Kieft and Stuyvesant. This remonstrance was afterwards printed at the Hague, A.D. 1650, and formed a small vol. (quarto) of fifty pages entitled “*Vertoogh<sup>c</sup> Van Nieuw Nederlandt, weghens de Ghelegenhetyd, Vruchtbaerheydt, en soberen Staet desselfs.* In s’ Graven Hage, 1650. (An Exposition of the New Netherlands, in respect to the situation, fertility, and wretched condition of the country. At the Hague, 1650.) This attempt to shake the authority of the Dutch West India Company, proved abortive, and only served to re-act unfavorably upon the disaffected; 19 March, 1650, occurs a contract between the Dutch West India Company, Van der Donck and others, for the transportation of two hundred persons to New Netherlands.<sup>d</sup> November 29, 1650, Cornelis Van Tienhoven, Secretary of the New Netherlands, delivered to the States General a short statement or answer upon certain points contained in the memorial of Van der Donck and others to their High Mightnesses.<sup>e</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Albany Rec., Court of Assize Deeds, vol. iii. p. 42.

<sup>b</sup> A title derived from the Latin Patronus like the French Seigneur.

<sup>c</sup> *Vertoogh* sometimes means remonstrance.

<sup>d</sup> Hol. Doc. xvi, 191.

<sup>e</sup> Hol. Doc. No. lviii 360.

Van der Donck, also appears to have been one of the commissioners who repaired to Holland for a redress of grievances. For in May 13, 1652, occurs the memorial of Adriaen Van der Donck to the committee of the States General, stating his intended return to the New Netherlands.<sup>a</sup>

Again May 30, 1652, a second memorial from Adriaen Van der Donck to the same body, "respecting various matters connected with his visit to Holland on behalf of Gemeente at New Netherlands."<sup>b</sup>

During the Patroon's stay in Holland, he had shipped for Colen Donck seven persons, four of whom had cruelly deserted and betrayed him. Upon this we find him again petitioning the Directors of the Dutch West India Company's department, Amsterdam:—

"Remonstrates reverently, Adriaen Van der Donck, residing in New Netherlands that to the supplicant was granted by the Director General and Council in New Netherlands, the accommodations the Saw Kill with the adjacent lands to erect there saw and grist mills, and plantations and boweries according to his means and ability, which grant was chiefly obtained because the supplicant had contributed a vast deal by his services as mediator, to negotiate and conclude a peace between the director Kieft from the one side and the Indians from the other side, not without great sacrifice from his side, as it was the first part of the year when his presence was wanted at home, and all this at his own expense so that he might assert without boasting that he contributed at least as much to its consolidation than any other person whatever, so that at length peace was concluded when the supplicant advanced the principal part of the money, as the Director General was at that period not well provided with it to procure seawant,<sup>c</sup> which was wanted for presents in confirmation of the peace which God be praised, remains yet uninterrupted. After I attained this grant in the year 1646, I resolved to reside here, erected a saw mill and laid out a farm and plantation, and was actually resolved to continue on this spot, when I further with consent of the Director General, purchased a part of said land from the Indians the original proprietors, who reclaimed it as belonging to them, but the suppliant observing that near the saw kill were valleys used as commons which by enclosure might be properly adapted for hay lands, so was he permitted by the Director General to purchase these valleys from the Indians, on the best possible terms. This induced the the supplicant to follow his plan, having obtained as I already mentioned the consent and approbation of the Director General and Council, and included said valleys in his purchase, as he did not possess other low lands. This valley contained about 30 or 40 morgen,<sup>a</sup> with another handsome vale bordering on said, on the back part of the Island of Manhattans, and stretching as far as Paprinemin called by our people, "In Spite of the Dyvel," where the supplicant was determined to fix his residence as soon as he should have finished all his concerns at the saw kill; and which yet remains his firm determination as soon as he shall have returned

<sup>a</sup> Holl. Doc. xxxii. 130. iv.

<sup>b</sup> Holl. Doc. xxxvii., 141.

<sup>c</sup> Indian name for shell money.

<sup>a</sup> A Dutch morgen contained a little over 2 acres English; 7 morgen containing 15 acres.

in safety to that country, as he made every preparation to execute his purpose, by commencing to build on that spot and cultivate the soil; so because he is delighted with that situation, as because it shall enable him to reap all the advantages of the aforesaid valleys, without which all his great expenses which he made at the saw kill, would be in vain and his prospects in future profits would be obscured, while all his toils and labors would have been rendered useless with respect at least to himself, and whereas the supplicant is informed that some greedy land speculators arrived in 1652, to obtain a grant of these lands in a clandestine manner; so it is that the supplicant now addresses himself to your honors, with great respect that it may please them to resolve that the supplicant shall not be dispossessed of these lands and valleys, by any individual under any pretext whatsoever, by which doing, &c., &c.”<sup>a</sup>

On the 26 May, 1652, occurs an octroy, granting to Adriaen Van der Donck, Patroon of the Colony of Colendonck, power to bequeath his said fief of Colendonck:—

“The States General of the United Netherlands, to all who shall see or hear these presents, send health. Be it known, that we, at the humble request of Adriaen Van der Donck, of Breda, Patroon of the Colony of Nepperhaem, called by him Colendonck, situated in New Netherlands, within the limits of the privileged West India Company, and having taken into consideration the 5th article of the freedom granted by the assembly of the nineteen of the said company, to all those who shall plant in New Netherlands, aforesaid, have granted, consented and privileged, grant, consent and privilege, out of our sovereign will by these our letters, that he may dispose, bequeath and order the aforesaid, his fief named Colendonck, either by codicil by form of testament, or last will, before a notary and witnesses, superintendence within the property situated in the same, as or otherwise as it shall please him, to the profit of his children, if he have any, or other strangers,” &c., &c.<sup>b</sup>

About this period, the Patroon commenced the compilation of his celebrated book, entitled “Beschyvinge van Nieuw Nederland,” or a description of New Netherland, the copyright of which, bears date, this 17th May, 1653.<sup>c</sup>

This work is dedicated “To the Illustrious, Most Wise and Prudent Lords, the Honorable Ruling Burgomasters of the far-famed commercial city of Amsterdam.

Why mourn about Brazil, full of base Portuguese?  
 When Van der Donck shows so far much better fare;  
 Where wheat fills golden ears, and grapes abound in trees;  
 Where fruit and kine are good with little care;  
 Men may mourn a loss, when vain would be their voice.  
 But when their loss brings gain, they also may rejoice.

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Rec. vol. viii. 79.

<sup>b</sup> Holland Doc. No. xxv. 118.

<sup>c</sup> Holl. Doc. No. xii. 4; No. xiii. 42; No. xiv. 43; No. xv. p. 44; No. xvi. 45; No. xvii. 47. This book has been recently translated from the original Dutch, by the Hon. Jeremiah Johnson. See I vol. new series N. Y. Hist. Soc.



Then, reader, if you will, go freely there to live,  
 We name it *Netherland*, though this excels it far;  
 If you dislike the voyage, pray due attention give,  
 To *Van der Donck*, his book, which, as a leading star,  
 Directs toward the land where many people are,  
 Where lowland, Love and Laws, all may freely share.

[*Evert Nieuwenhof.*"]

On the 24th July of the same year, we find him petitioning the Directors of the West India Company, for permission to search the records of the colony, and also for leave to pursue the practice of his profession. The following appears in answer to it:—

"As Mr. Adriaen van der Donck has petitioned our college, (stating) first, that he has received his degree at law in the university of Leyden, and been admitted to practice it before the Supreme Court of Holland, he may be permitted to follow his profession as advocate in New Netherlands. Secondly, That he may examine all the records and documents in the secretary's office to accomplish his, history of New Netherlands, which he did undertake to write, so is our resolution upon these points, we consent and permit him, that, in conformity with the rules and customs of this country, he may follow his profession as advocate in New Netherlands, to give his advice to all who may desire to obtain it; but, as regards his pleading before the courts, we cannot see that it can be admitted yet, with any advantage to the Director and Council in New Netherlands; be sides that, we are ignorant of there being any of that stamp in your city, (who nevertheless, before they can be admitted, must apply to your honor, or directly to our department), who can act and plead against Van der Donck, in behalf of the other side. We trust, that in this, you will consult the interests of your government and the welfare of the inhabitants.

24th July, 1653.<sup>a</sup>

"Adriaen Van der Donck died in this country in the year 1655, leaving to his wife Mary, (whom he married in 1645, daughter of the Rev. Francis Doughty, Patentee of Maspeth, L. I.)" the colonies of Colen Donck, or Yonkers.<sup>b</sup> "Agatha his mother, and Daniel his brother, came to New Netherland in 1652. Guisbert, Daniel's son, was born in Holland in 1634. These are the ancestors of such of the name as are now to be found in this country, though the family is called Vanduck or Verdunck. They live principally on Long Island."<sup>c</sup>

The following letter was despatched by the Director General, Peter Stuyvesant and council, to Holland, in a vessel called the Fox, commanded by the skipper, Jacob Jansen Hayes:—

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Rec. vol. iv. 3.

<sup>b</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N. vol. ii, p. 551.

<sup>c</sup> Ditto see note. On the 26th of August, 1655, Governor Stuyvesant grants a piece of land lying on the north side of Manhattans called Muscoota, to one Cornelis Van der Donck (Alb. Rec. xxv. In 1653 Madam Anna Van der Donck occurs as defendant in a suit, (her son Guisbert.) Dutch Rec. N. Y. City Clerk's office, 160.

*Honorable, Prudent, Wise and Right Respectful Gents:—*

Although since our last letter, no act of hostility has been committed, yet those of Hartford continue their threatenings, anticipates and encroachments, and purchased from the savages, all the land between Westchester and the North river, including different lots of land, which were as well under the administration of the Hon. Gov. Kieft, as ours, in the usual manner, granted by letters patent, and in virtue of these, possessed by those of our nation, as so among others, the land of Jonas Bronck, the lands of the *old Verdonck, divided and settled by his children and associates* in various plantations and farms, but who, in the massacre<sup>a</sup> were absconded with many others, all which are situated here and bordering on our island, only divided by a small creek, which in some places by low water is passable, so as they to us the savages declared and solicited them to purchase other lands to the east and the west of the North river, dated 20th June, 1664.<sup>b</sup>

On the 12th of March, 1664, the Dutch possessions in America were patented to his Royal Highness James Duke of York and Albany, by his brother King Charles II. This grant was immediately followed by a military and naval armament under the command of Colonel Richard Nicolls, which reduced the New Netherlands to the subjection of the English Crown, 27th August, 1664.

One of the articles of capitulation drawn up by the commissioners at the surrender, declared that "all people shall continue free denizens, and shall enjoy their lands, houses and goods, wheresoever they are within this country, and dispose of them as they please."<sup>c</sup>

On Sept. 21, 1666, Mary Doughty, widow of the late Adriaen Van der Donck, and wife of Hugh O'Neale,<sup>d</sup> in right of her former husband, claimed "all that land upon the maine not far from Westchester, called the Younckers land, and brought forward several Indians to prove the purchase."<sup>e</sup>

On October 8, 1666, 18th King Charles II. Governor Nicolls granted the following patent to Mr. Hugh O'Neale and Mary his wife:—

## PATENT FOR NEPPERHAEM.

Richard Nicolls, Esq., governor under his Royal Highness, ye Duke of York, of all his territoryes in America, to all to whom this present writing shall come, sendeth greeting: Whereas there is a certain tract of land within this government, upon the main, bounded to the northwards by a rivulet called by the

<sup>a</sup> The massacre here alluded to, took place Sept., 1655, during the absence of Stuyvesant, when the warriors of the Algonquin tribes, made a furious onset upon the colony.—See Bancroft's Hist. U. S., vol. II. 299.

<sup>b</sup> Alb. Rec. vol. xviii. 257.

<sup>c</sup> Smith's Hist. of N. Y. p. 19.

<sup>d</sup> Hugh O'Neale, formerly of Newton, Long Island. Assize Rec. p. 47. "The widow of Adriaen Van der Donck afterwards married Hugh O'Neale, of Patuxent, Maryland, whither, she and her father removed,"—N. Y. vol. MSS., Holland Doc. vii, vol. I, p. 633.—[Editor.

<sup>e</sup> See confirm. of Van der Donck's purchase.

Indians, Macakassin, so running southward to Nepperhaem, from thence to the kill Shorakkapoch, and then to Paprinimen, which is the southermost bounds, then to go across the country to the eastward by that which is commonly known by the name of Bronck's his river and land, which said tract hath heretofore been purchased of the Indian proprietors by Adriaen Van der Donck, deceased, whose relict, Mary, the wife of Hugh O'Neale, one of the patentees is, and due satisfaction was also given for the same, as hath by some of the said Indians been acknowledged before me; now for a further confirmation unto them, the said Hugh O'Neale and Mary his wife, relict of the aforesaid Adriaen Van der Donck, in their possession and enjoyment of the premises.

*Know ye*, that by virtue of this our commission and authority given unto me by his Royal Highness the Duke of York, I have thought fit to give, ratify, confirm and grant, and by these presents, do give, ratify, confirm and grant, unto the said Hugh O'Neale and Mary his wife, their heirs and assigns, all the aforementioned tract or parcel of land called Neperhaem, together with all woods, marshes, meadows, pastures, waters, lakes, creeks, rivulets, fishing, hunting, and fowling, and all other profits, commodities and emoluments to the said tract of land belonging, with their and every of their appurtenances, and every part and parcel thereof, to have and to hold the said tract of land and premises, with all and singular their appurtenances, unto the said Hugh O'Neale and Mary his wife, their heirs and assigns, to the proper use and behoofe of the said Hugh O'Neale and Mary his wife, their heirs and assigns forever, he, she, or they, or any of them, rendering and paying such acknowledgement, duties, as are or shall be constituted and ordayned by his Royal Highness the Duke of York and his heirs, or such governor or governors, as shall from time to time be appointed and set over them within this province. That, if at any time hereafter his Royal Highness, his heirs, successors, or assigns, shall think fit to make use of any timber for shipping, or for erecting or repairing of forts within this government, liberty is reserved for such uses and purposes to cut any sort of timber upon any unplanted grounds on the said tract of land, to make docks, harbours, wharves, houses, or any other conveniences relating thereunto, and also to make use of any rivers or rivulets and inlets of water for the purposes aforesaid, as fully and free as if no such patent had been granted.

Given under my hand and seal at Fort James, New York, on the Island of Manhattan, the eighth day of October, in the eighteenth year of the reign of our sovereign Lord, Charles the Second, by the grace of God, of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland King, Defender of the Faith, &c., &c., in the year of our Lord God, 1666.<sup>a</sup>

RICHARD NICOLLS.

Upon the 30th of October, 1666, Elias Doughty purchased lands in this town, of Hugh O'Neal and Mary his wife. The father of Elias was the Rev. Franciscus Doughty. "This minister, Franciscus Doughty, (says his son-in-law, Van der Donck,) in the time of the first troubles in England, came over in order to escape from them to New England, and found himself (to use a homely phrase,) out of the frying-pan into the

<sup>a</sup> Book of Pat. Alb.

fire. In order to be able to enjoy freedom of conscience according to the Dutch reformation, which he certainly missed in New England, he betook himself under the protection of the Dutch; and an absolute patent, with privileges for a colony, was granted and conferred on him by the Director General." This patent consisted of thirteen thousand three hundred and thirty-two acres of the lands called Mispeth, the present Newtown on L. I.) It was conferred upon him and his associates, on the 28th of March, 1642."<sup>a</sup> He had reinforced himself now in one year with some families; but in consequence of the breaking out of the war, they were all driven from their lands with loss of some people, and the destruction of much cattle, losing for the most part all their houses and whatever they possessed. After they had remained a while, and consumed more than they could collect, they came to the Mannhattans, where all the refugees resorted at that time, and Master Doughty was minister there.<sup>b</sup> The Rev. Franciscus Doughty was a member of the ancient and honorable family of the Doughtys or Douteys of Easher Surrey, and Boston, Lincolnshire, England, descended from an English Saxon house of Dohteg, before the Conquest, A. D. 1066.

On the 15th May, 1677, Elias Doughty, (son of the above) proprietor of the land heretofore belonging to the *Younckers van der Donck*, near Eastchester, was invested in the sole ownership by Hugh O'Neale and Mary his wife.

The descendants of Elias Doughty are still numerous in the county of Westchester. Of this family was Francis Doughty of Rye, in 1756, father of John Doughty, Esq., and grand-father of the Hon. John Doughty. The son of the latter is the present General George S. Doughty, of West Farms. From Elias Doughty, the *old or lower Yonckers* passed to William Boltz or Betts, George Tippetts,<sup>c</sup> and Joseph Hadley. "The name of the *Jonckers*, (says the Hon. Egbert Benson), the proprietor of the creek, now Saw Mill creek, van der Kee; and it is still to be collected from the documents, as not being improbable that the lands granted to Van der Donck, and perhaps including the island of the Indian name of *Papuriminon*, the southern shore at Kings

<sup>a</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N. Appendix, 426.

<sup>b</sup> Van der Donck's Vertooghe van N. N. "In 1642 a band of religionists, led on by the Rev Mr. Doughty, Richd Smith, and others, who had followed the Pilgrims from Old England to New England, were compelled to wsthdrow from the latter country by the persecution they received there, and after making formal application to the authorities of New Netherland, they had a grant of land assigned them, endowed with the usual privileges of free Manors, such as a free exercise of their religion, powers to plant towns, build churches, nominate magistrates, and administer civil and criminal jurisdiction."—(C. F. Hoffman.)

<sup>c</sup> A. D. 1664, one George Tippet, being accused and found guilty of hogg stealing, the Court doth adjudge the delinquent shall pay as a fine, to his majestie's use, the sum of £14, or receive ye corporal punishment of thirty-one stripes, at the common whipping-post, before ye State house of this city, upon ye breaking up of this Court, &c.—Assize Rec. Alb. 311.



Bridge, were the neighborhood called the LOWER YONCKERS, as to be distinguished from the other Yonckers, the lands of Van der Kee, on the Saw Mill creek.<sup>a</sup> This distinction between the *lower* Yonckers and the *upper*, or as it was sometimes called, the *little* and the *old* Yonckers, clearly points to two different proprietors. The first may have been Van der Kee, as Mr. Benson suggests, (although there is nothing in the shape of evidence to support it), and the second Adraen van der Donck, the Jonkheer or "young gentleman."

On the 22d of February, 1670, Joseph Hadley sold fifty acres called GEORGE'S Point, to Matthias Buckhout, who subsequently conveyed the same, on the 22d January, 1694, to Frederick Philipse.

"Upon the 10th of October, in the eleventh year of the reign of our Sovereign Lord, William the Third, by the grace of God, of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, &c., and in the year of our Lord Christ, 1699, occurs the following indenture:—

"Between Frederick Felipe of the city of New York, merchant, of the one part, &c., and Jacobus van Cortlandt, of the same city, merchant, of the other part, witnesseth that the said Frederick Felipe, as well for and in consideration of a certain sum of good and lawful money to him in hand paid, before the enscaling and delivery of these presents, by the said Jacobus van Cortlandt, &c., &c., hath given, granted, bargained and sold, conveyed, &c., unto the said Jacobus van Cortlandt, his heirs and assigns for ever, all that fifty acres of land—with the appurtenances lying within the limits and bounds of the Yonckers plantation in the county of Westchester, known by the name of 'Georges Point,' butted and bounded, &c., &c. Also one acre and a half of meadow, with the appurtenances, &c., together with twenty-five acres more of upland, with their appurtenances, and the reversion and reversions and all the estate, right, title, claim and demand whatsoever, of him the said Frederick Felipe, of, in, or into the said premises, to have and to hold the several parcels of land and meadow, to the said Jacobus van Cortlandt, &c., his heirs and assignees, forever. In testimony whereof the parties to these presents have set their hands and seals, the day and year first above written."

This property is still vested in a descendant of Jacobus van Cortlandt.

On the 13th August, 1701, we find the Indians confirming the Van Cortlandts' in their purchase:—

"To all Christian people, and others to whom the presents shall come, Clause Dewilt, Karacapacomont and her son Nemerau, sendeth greeting:—

"Know yee, that wee, the said Clause Dewilt, Karacapacomont, and Nemerau, native Indians and former proprietors of a certain tract of land, lying in the county of Westchester, in the province of New York, in America, commonly called and known by the name of the old Yonckers, now in possession of Jacobus

<sup>a</sup> Benson's Mem. of N. Y., 56.

van Cortlandt, of the city of New York, merchant, and the heirs of the Betts and Tippetts, for and in consideration of two fathom<sup>a</sup> of duffils and one pound two shillings and sixpence, current money of New York, in hand paid unto us by the said Jacobus van Cortlandt, have remised, released, and forever quit-claimed unto the said Jacobus van Cortlandt, and to the heirs of the Betts and Tippetts, and to their heirs and assigns forever, all our right, title and interest, which we ever had, now have, or hereafter may have, or claim to the said tract of land called the old Younckers, and to every part and parcel thereof; and do hereby acknowledge the above consideration to be in full of all dues and demands whatsoever, for the said tract of land and premises, to have and to hold the said tract of land called the old Younckers, to the said Jacobus van Cortlandt, and the heirs of the Betts and Tippetts, their heirs and assignees forever, witness our hands and seals the 13th of August, 1701."<sup>b</sup>

Sealed and delivered in the presence  
of GUALTER DU BOIS,  
WILLIAM SHARPES,

CLAASS DEWILT,  
KARACAPACOMONT,  
NEMERAU.

The *Little Yonkers* in contradistinction from the *Old*, above mentioned, appears to have been included in the sale to Elias Doughty of Flushing, 30th October, 1666, who granted it 29th November, 1672, to Thomas Delaval, Frederick Philipse and Thomas Lewis, mariner. Thomas Delaval,<sup>c</sup> by a codicil of his last will, bearing date June 10th, 1682, did devise unto John, his only son, all his interest in a full third part.

On February 19, 1684-5, Thomas Dongan, Governor of New York, by a patent did ratify and confirm unto John Delaval, Frederick Philipse and Geertje Lewis, relict of Thomas Lewis, the aforesaid tract.

On August 27, 1685, John Delaval sold his third part in the same to Frederick Philipse, as also Geertje, wife of Thomas Lewis, Lodowick Lewis, Barent Lewis, Leonard Lewis, Katherine Lewis and Thomas Lewis, by deed conveyed each their interest in third part to Frederick Philipse, 12th June, 1686.<sup>d</sup>

On the 17th day of April, 1685, occurs the following agreement between Frederick Philipse, merchant of New York, and John Pell, Esq., of Annhook's Neck, in the County of Westchester:—

"It was mutually agreed and consented unto by us underwritten, Frederick Philipse, merchant of the city of New York, and John Pell, Esq., of Annhook's Neck, that the Bronx's river shall be the division between both their lands; and that, if either the said Frederick Philipse or the said John Pell, shall at any time

<sup>a</sup> A Dutch fathom contained six feet English.

<sup>b</sup> Van Cortlandt papers.

<sup>c</sup> This individual was for many years Alderman, and Mayor of New York city in 1678.

<sup>d</sup> See Royal Charter of Philipsborough.

see cause to make any small dam across the said river, it shall be lawful for either party to fix the end of their dam of each other side, without lett or molestation."<sup>a</sup>

FREDERICK PHILIPSE,  
JOHN PELL.

Frederick Philipse being now vested in the fee simple, the whole territory was by royal charter, erected into the lordship and manor of Philipsborough, to be holden of the king, in free and common soccage, its lord yielding, rendering, and paying therefor, yearly and every year, on the feast day of the Annunciation of the Blessed Virgin Mary, at the fort in New York, the annual rent of £4 12s.

### THE ROYAL CHARTER.

"William and Mary, by the grace of God, &c., king and queen of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, defenders of the faith, &c., to all to whom these presents shall come, greeting: Whereas, the Honorable Richard Nicolls, Esq., late Governor of our Province of New York, &c., by a certain deed or patent, sealed with the seal of our said Province, bearing date the 8th day of October, in the year of our Lord, 1666, pursuant to the authority in him residing, did give and grant unto Hugh O'Neale and Mary his wife, their heirs and assigns, all that tract of land upon the main, bounded to the north by a rivulet called by the Indians, Meccackassin, so running southward to Nepperhan, from thence to the kill Shorackkapock and to Paparinnemo, which is the southernmost bounds, then to go across the country, eastward by that which is commonly known by the name of Bronx's river, together with all the woods, marshes, meadows, pastures, waters, lakes, creeks, rivulets, fishing, hunting and fowling, and all other profits, commodities and emoluments to said tract of land belonging, with their and every of their appurtenance, to have and to hold unto the said Hugh O'Neale and Mary his wife, their heirs and assigns forever, as by the said deed or patent, relation being thereunto had, may more fully and at large appear; and whereas, the said Hugh O'Neale and Mary his wife, by their certain deed or writ, dated 30th day of Oct., in said year of our Lord, 1666, did sell, alien, assign and set over all and singular their right and title and interest of in and to the aforementioned tract of land and premises, unto Elias Doughty of Flushing, in the Co. of York, on Long Island, unto the said Elias Doughty, his heirs and assigns forever, as by the said deed or writing, relation being thereunto had, as may more fully and at large appear; and whereas, the said Elias Doughty by his certain deed or writing, bearing date 29th day of Nov., in the year of our Lord 1672, for the consideration therein expressed and mentioned, did assign and set over, all and singular his right and title and interest, of, in and to the aforementioned tract of land and premises unto Thomas Deleval, Esq., Frederick Philips and Thomas Lewis, mariner, to hold to them, their heirs and assigns forever, as by the said deed or writing relation being thereunto had, may more fully and at large appear; and whereas, the said Thomas Deleval, in and by a certain codicil annexed unto his last will and testament in writing, bearing date the 10th day of June, in the

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. A. 62.



year of our Lord, 1682, amongst other things did devise unto John Deleval his only son, all that his interest in the aforementioned land and premises, his one full, equal and certain third thereof, as by the said codicil in writing, relation being thereunto had, may more fully and at large appear; and, whereas, the Hon. Col. Thomas Dongan, late Gov. of our said province &c., and as by a certain deed or patent, sealed with the seal of our said province &c., and bearing date the 19th of Feb., in the year of our Lord, 1684-5, pursuant to the authority in him then residing, for the consideration therein expressed, did further grant, ratify and confirm, unto the said Thomas Deleval, Frederick Philips, Geertje Lewis, relict of the said Thomas Lewis, due their heirs and assigns, all the aforesaid tract and parcel of land beginning at a small rivulet known and called by the Indians, Makakassin, from thence into the woods due east by a great rock stone and a lyne of marked trees, to Bronx's river, and thence by said river, four miles and something more, to a marked white oak tree upon the middle of a great ledge of rocks, which is the north-east corner of the land of Francis French & Co., in the mile square formerly sold out of the aforesaid patent, then by the said land, west, 35 deg. northerly, 1 mile or 80 chains from thence east 35 deg. southerly to Bronx's river to a marked tree, which is the south-east corner of the mile square, excepted out of the said patent, from thence by Bronx's, his river, 89 chains to a marked tree, which is the north-east corner of Wm. Betts and George Tippetts, and then by a certain lyne of marked trees due west 30 chains to the marked tree or south-east corner of the purchase of John Heddy, then due N. 34 chains, from thence due west by their purchase, 90 chains to the north-west corner of the 300 acres, then due south 16 chains to the north-west corner of the 20 acres purchased of John Heddy, thence and by the said land west 12 chains to the north-west corner, then by the side of the kill, south 18 chains to the land of Wm. Betts and George Tippetts, from thence by a lyne of marked trees due west 79 chains, to a white oak tree standing on the bank of Hudson's river, to the south of Dog-wood brook 16 chains and  $\frac{1}{2}$  and then northerly by the Hudson's river to Nepperha, which is near the Yonkers mills, and so continue by Hudson's river to the first mentioned small rivulet, Maccakassin, the whole being bounded to the north with a lyne of marked trees and a great rock stone, to the east by Bronx's river and the land of Francis French and Co., to the south by the land of Wm. Betts, George Tippetts and Thomas Heddy, to the west by Hudson's river, containing in all 7,708 *acres*, together with all and singular the messuages, tenements, buildings, barns, stables, orchards, gardens, pastures, meadows, mills, mill-dams, runs, streams, ponds, rivers, brooks, woods, under-woods, trees, timber, fencing, fishing, fowling, hunting, hawking, liberties, privileges, herditaments and improvements whatsoever, belonging or in any way appertaining, to have and to hold all the aforementioned tract and parcel of land, with all and singular the aforementioned premises, unto said John Deleval, Frederick Philips, Geertje Lewis, their heirs and assigns forever, as by the said deed or patent registered in our secretary's office of our province of New York aforesaid, relation being thereunto had, may more fully and at large appear; and, whereas the said Thomas Deleval, by a certain deed of indenture, sealed with the seal, and bearing date the 27th day of August, in the year of our Lord, 1685, did, for the consideration therein mentioned, grant, bargain and sell, all that one full third part of all and singular the said tract of land, afore recited, described and bounded within



the limits aforesaid unto him the said Frederick Philips one of the parties aforesaid, together with all that one full and equal third part of all and singular the houses, out-houses, barns, stables, mills, mill-dams, buildings, fences and edifices thereon erected and built; and likewise one full third part of all and singular the waters, water-courses, streams, woods, underwoods, fishing, fowling, hawking, hunting, hereditaments and appurtenances to the same belonging, or in any way appertaining, to have and to hold unto the said Frederick Philipse, his heirs and assigns forever, as by the said deed or indenture, relation being thereunto had, may more fully and at large appear; and whereas, the said Geertje Lewis, executrix of the last will and testament of Thomas Lewis, late of New York, mariner, her late husband, deceased, and Lodivick Lewis, Barrent Lewis, Leonard Lewis, Katharine Lewis and Thomas Lewis the children and co-heirs of said Thomas Lewis and Geertje his wife, by a certain deed of indenture, sealed with the seal bearing date the 12th day of June, in the year of our Lord 1686, did, for the consideration therein mentioned, grant, bargain and sell, all that the full one-third part of all and singular the said tract of land afore recited, described and bounded with the limits aforesaid, unto him, the said Frederick Philips, one of the parties aforesaid, together with all that one full and equal third part of all and singular the houses, out-houses, barns, stables, mills, mill-dams, buildings fences and edifices thereon erected and built, and likewise one full third part of all and singular the water, water-courses, streams, woods, underwoods, fishing, fowling, hunting, hawking, hereditaments and appurtenances to the same belonging or in any wise appertaining, to have and to hold unto the said Frederick Philips, his heirs and assigns forever, as by the said deed or indenture, relation being thereunto had, may more fully and at large appear; and whereas, the Hon. Sir Edmund Andross, late governor of our said province of New York, &c., by a certain writing or patent, sealed with the seal of our said province, bearing date the first day of April, in the year of our Lord, 1680, pursuant to the authority in him then residing, did give and grant unto the said Frederick Philipse, a certain tract or parcel of land, beginning at a creek or river called by the Indians, Pocanteco or or Wackandeco, with power thereon to set a mill or mills, with a due portion of land on each side, adjoining unto the said river, lying within the bounds of the Indians land at Wickers creek, on the east side of the Hudson river, which said Indian land, was by the said Frederick Philips purchased from the said native Indian proprietors thereof, by the licence and approbation of the said Sir Edmund Andross; and the said Indian proprietors did, in the presence of Sir Edmund Andross aforesaid, acknowledge to have received full satisfaction of him the said Frederick Philips for the said land adjoining, to each syde of the creek or river aforesaid, which said land is situate, lying and being on each side of the said creek or river, north and south 1600 treads or steps which at 12 feet to the rod, makes 400 rod, and runs up into the country so far as the said creek or river goeth, with this proviso or restriction that if the creek or river called by the Indians, Nippiroha, and by the charters Yonkers creek or kill shall come within the space of land of 400 rods on the south side of the aforementioned creek or river, that shall extend no farther than the said creek or river of Nippiroha, but the rest to be so far up into the country on each side of the said creek or river called Pocanteco as it runs, being about north-east, to have and to hold all the aforesaid recited tract or parcel of land unto him the said Frederick Philips, his heirs and

assigns forever, as by the said grant or patent registered in our Secretary's office of our province of New York, &c., aforesaid, relation being thereunto had may more fully and at large appear; and whereas the Honorable Thomas Dongan late Gov. of our province of New York, &c., aforesaid, by virtue of the power in him then residing hath, by another grant or patent sealed with the seal of our said province of New York, and registered in our secretary's office of our province aforesaid, bearing date the 13d of September, in the year of our Lord 1684, given granted, ratified, and confirmed, unto said, Frederick Philips, his heirs and assigns, several tracts and parcels of land within the limits and bounds hereafter mentioned, that were according to the usage, custom, and laws of our said province purchased by the said Frederick Philips from the native Indians and proprietors, in manner and form following, (that is to say,) all those certain parcels and pieces of land lying about the Wigwaskeek that was on the 24th day of October, in the year of our Lord, 1680, purchased by the said Frederick Philips of the Indian Goharius, brother of Weskora, sachem of Wigwaskeek, for himself and by the full order of Goharius, which certain parcel or parcels of land are lying about Wigwaskeek to the north syde and tending from the land of the aforesaid Frederick Philips running along the North river to the north of the small creek called by the Indians Sepackena creek, as far as it goeth into the woods, and coming to the end of the aforesaid creek, then shall the aforesaid pieces or parcels of land have their lyne north-east, or if the creek Pocanteco Wackandeco upon which at present stands the mills of the said Frederick Philips shall run upon a north-east lyne, then the said land shall run along the said creek Pocanteco, or Weghkandeco, into the woods as the said creek or kill shall go, and there shall be the end or utmost bounds of the said certain pieces of land, as by the said writing or Indian deed, relation being thereunto had may more fully and at large appear; as likewise another tract or parcel of land on the east side of Hudson's river that was by said Frederick Philips purchased of the Indians Goharius Cobus, and Togquanduck, on the 23d day of April, in the year of our Lord, 1681, which tract or parcel of land being situate on the east side of the North or Hudson's river, beginning at the south side of a creek called Bissigtick, and so ranging along the said river northerly to the aforesaid land of the aforesaid Frederick Philips, and then amongst the said land north-east and by east until it comes to and meets with the creek called Nippiorha, if the said creek shall fall within that lyne, otherwise to extend no further than the head of the creek or kill called Pokanteco, or Puegkanteko, and southerly amongst the said river Neppiorha if the same shall fall within the said line as aforesaid; or else in a direct lyne from the head of the said creek or kill called Pocanteco Puegkandico, until it comes opposite to the said first mentioned creek called Bissigtick, and from thence westwardly to the head of the said creek and amongst the same to the North or Hudson's river, being the first station, as by the said writing or deed, relation being thereunto had, may more fully and at large appear, as also another certain tract or parcel of land on the east syde of the said Hudson's river that was by the said Frederick Philips purchased of the native Indians Armaghqueer, Scapham, alias Thapham, on the 8th day of April, in the year of our Lord 1682, which certain tract or parcel of land is situate, lying, and being on the east side of the North or Hudson's river to the south of the land formerly bought by the said Frederick Philips of the said Indians, beginning at the south side of a creek called Bissigh-

tick, and so ranging along the said river southerly to a creek or fall called by the Indians Weghquegsik, and by the Christians, Lawrence's plantation; and from the mouth of the said creek or fall upon a due east course to a creek called by the Indians Nippiorha, and by the Christians the Yonkers kill, and from thence alongst the west side of the said creek or kill as the same runs to the before mentioned land, formerly bought by the said Frederick Philips of the said Indians, and so along that land to the first station, as by the said writing or Indian deed, relation being thereunto had, may more fully and at large appear; as also another tract or parcel of land on the east side of Hudson's river that was by the said Frederick Philips purchased of the native Indians Warramanhack, Esparamogh, Annhook, &c., on the 6th day of September, in the year of our Lord, 1682, which certain tract or parcel of land is situated, lying, and being on the west side of the North or Hudson's river, beginning at the north side of the land belonging to Yonkers kill, Nippiorha, at a great rock called by the Indians Meghkeekassin, or the great stone, (as called by the Christians,) from thence ranging into the woods eastwardly to a creek called by the Indians Nippiorha aforesaid, and from thence along said creek northerly till you come to the eastward of the head of a creek called by the Indians Wegquiskeek, being the utmost bounds of the said Frederick Philips's land, formerly bought of the Indians, and from thence westwardly along the said creek Wegqueskeek to Hudson's river aforesaid, as by the said Indian deed, relation being thereunto had, may more fully and at large appear, and also another tract or parcel of land that was by the said Frederick Philips, purchased of the native Indians, Sapham, Ghoharius, Kakingsigo, on the 7th day of May, in the year of our Lord, 1684, which tract or parcel of land is situate, lying and being to the eastward of the said Frederick Philips between the creek called Nippiorha, or the Yonkers kill, and Bronk's river, beginning on the south side at the northerly bounds of the Yonkers land, and from thence along the aforesaid creek, Nippiorha, however it runs, till you come to the most northerly bounds of the said Frederick Philips's lands, and from thence north-east into the woods unto Bronk's river, as it runs southerly to the eastward of the Yonkers land aforesaid, and from thence with a westerly lyne, to the afore-named Yonkers kill, or Nippiorha, as by the said Indian deed, relation being thereunto had, may more fully and at large appear, all which several tracts and parcels of land within the several respective limits and bounds afore-mentioned, and purchased by the said Frederick Philips, of all and every the respective native Indians aforesaid, in manner aforesaid, were by the said Thomas Dongan, late governor of our province, under the seal of our said province, bearing date as aforesaid, given, granted, ratified, and confirmed unto him, said Frederick Philips, his heirs and assigns, together with all and singular, the houses, buildings, messuages, tenements, and hereditaments, mills, mill-dams, rivers, runns, streams, ponds, with liberty to erect other mills or dams, or places convenient, woods, under-woods, quarries, fishing, hawking, hunting and fowling, with all liberties, priviledges, and improvements whatsoever, to the said land and premises, belonging in or in anywise appertaining, to have and to hold all the aforesaid tract and tracts, parcel and parcels of land and premises, with their and every of their appurtenances, unto said Frederick Philips, his heirs and assignees forever, as by the said grant or patent, sealed with the seal of our said province, and registered in our secretary's office of our said province, bearing



date 23d day of December, in the year of our Lord 1684, relation being thereunto had, may more fully and at large appear; and whereas, the aforesaid Thomas Dongan, late Governor of our said province, by virtue of the said power and authority in him residing, hath moreover by another grant or patent, sealed with the seal of our said province, and registered in our Secretary's office aforesaid, bearing date the 11th day of November, in the year of our Lord 1686, given, granted, ratified, and confirmed unto Philip Philips, eldest son of him, the said Frederick Philips, all that tract or parcel of land commonly called by the Indians Sinck Sinck, and situate, lying, and being on the east side of Hudson's river, by the northernmost part of the land, purchased by the said Frederick Philips, and so running alongst Hudson's river to a certain creek or river called Kichtawan, and from thence running alongst the said creek, two English miles, and from thence running up the country upon a due east lyne, until it comes unto a creek called Nipiorha, by the Christians, Yonkers creek, and so running alongst the said creek until it comes unto the northerly bounds of the said land of Frederick Philips aforesaid, and from thence alongst the said land until it comes to Hudson's river, together with all manner of rivers, rivulets, runns, streams, feedings, pastures, woods, under-woods, trees, timbers, waters, water-courses, ponds, pools, pits, swamps, moors, marshes, meadows, easements, profits and commodities, fishing, fowling, hunting, hawking, mines, minerals, quarries, (royal mines only excepted), and all royalties, profits, commodities, hereditaments and appurtenances whatsoever, to the said tract or parcel of land within the bounds and limits aforesaid, belonging or in anywise appertaining, to have and to hold the said tract or parcel of land and all and singular other the premises with their and every of their appurtenances, unto the said Philip Philips, his heirs and assigns forever, as by the said grant or patent, relation being thereunto had, may more fully and at large appear, whereas the said Philip Philips did by mean assurance in the law, sell, alienate, enfeoff, and confirm unto his said father, Frederick Philips, all the afore recited tract or parcel of land within the limits and bounds above mentioned and expressed, together with all and singular, the premises, with their and every of their appurtenances, to have and to hold unto him the said Frederick Philips, his heirs and assigns, forever, as by his deed of conveyance, under his hand and seal bearing date the                    day of                    in the year of our Lord 168   , relation being thereunto had more fully and at large appear: and whereas, the aforesaid Thomas Dongan, late governor of our said province, by virtue of the said power and authority in him residing, hath, by another grant or patent sealed with the seal of our said province, and registered in our Secretary's office aforesaid, bearing date the 27th day of June, in the year of our Lord, 1687, given, granted, ratified, released and confirmed unto the said Frederick Philips, all that the moiety, or one equal half part of a certain entire parcel of meadow ground, situate lying and being at a certain place called Tappan, near Hudson's river, bounded to the north by a certain creek called or known by the name of Tappan creek, to the east by Hudson's river aforesaid, to the west by a certain parcel of upland now in possession of George Lockhart, and to the south by Hudson's river aforesaid, and the moiety or equal half of the said meadows to be laid out along the side of Hudson's river aforesaid, throughout the whole length of its bounds upon said river, from Tappan creek aforesaid, and to be bounded on the north by Tappan creek, to the east by Hudson's river, to the



west by the other moiety or half part of the said meadows, still running to the said George Lockhart's, and so to run southerly to the end of the said meadows, nothing excepted or reserved thereof, to the said George Lockhart, his heirs and assigns, but one cart or waine way through the said moiety or half part of the meadow aforesaid, which moiety or equal half part of the meadow aforesaid was by mean assurance in the law, conveyed to the said George Lackhart and Janet, his wife, unto the said Frederick Philips, his heirs and assigns, to have and to hold the said moiety or equal half part of the said meadows and premises with the appertinences unto the said Frederick Philips, his heirs and assigns forever, as by the said grant or patent, sealed with the seal of our said province, and registered in our secretary's office aforesaid, bearing date the said 27th day of June, in the year of our Lord, 1687, and as by the said deed of conveyance, under the hands and seals of the said George Lockhart and Janet his wife, bearing date 20th day of February, in the year of our Lord, 1685, relation being thereunto had respectively, may more fully and at large appear; and whereas, Augustine Graham, our surveyor-general for our said province of New York, &c., hath by warrant bearing date the 11th of February, in the fourth year of our reign, surveyed and laid out for the said Frederick Philips, a certain small parcel of salt meadows, situate and being on the north side of Tappan creek, in the county of Orange, beginning at a certain stake set on the east side of the said creek, and from thence run east  $37^{\circ} 40$  min. northerly to Hudson's river, six chains and ninety links, thence along the said river twelve chains and ninety links, south one degree, westerly to the mouth of the aforesaid creek, and from thence along the said creek, west five degrees thirty-five minutes, northerly eleven chains, thence north twelve degrees, eastwardly two chains and forty links, thence east forty degrees, southerly three chains forty-five links along the said creek, thence east eleven degrees thirty minutes, southerly two chains twenty links, thence north six degrees twenty-five minutes, seven chains and seventy links, to the stake where the line first began, being bounded on the north-west by a certain parcel of meadow said to belong to Cornelius Claater, on the east by Hudson's river, on the south and west by the said creek, containing in all six acres three roods and eight perches, as by the return of the survey, bearing date the 19th day of April, in the said fourth year of our reign, and in the year of our Lord, 1692, relation being thereunto had, may more fully and at large appear, all which several tracts or parcels of land lying together, and bounded and limited in manner hereafter expressed and mentioned, (that is to say), all the said tract and parcels of land that are on the east side of Hudson's river, are bounded on the northward by a creek or river commonly called by the Indians Kightowank, and by the English Knotrus river, and now Belonging to Stevanus van Cortlandt, Esq., and so eastward into the woods along the said creek or river, two English miles; and from thence upon a direct east line to Bronxes river, and so running southward along the said Bronxes river as it runs, until a direct west line cutteth the south side of a neck or island of land, at a creek or kill called Papparinemo, which divides York island from the main, and so along the said creek or kill as it runs to Hudson's river, which part of the said creek is called by the Indians Shorackhappok, and continues dividing the said York island from the main, and so from thence to the northward alongst Hudson's river, until it comes into the aforesaid creek or river called by the Indians Kightawank, and by the English Knotrus river, and

the salt meadow ground on the west side of Hudson's river, are bounded and limited as here before is plainly mentioned and expressed. And whereas, our loving subject the said Frederick Philips, one of the members of our council of our said province of New York, and the territories depending thereon in America, hath by his petition presented to Benjamin Fletcher, our captain-general and governor-in-chief of our said province of New York, &c., prayed our grant and confirmation of all and every the tracts and parcels of land within the limits and bounds aforesaid: and that we would likewise erect all the said tracts and parcels of land within the limits aforesaid, into a lordship or manor of Philipsborough, and that we would further grant unto our said loving subject, a certain neck or island of land called Paparinemo, adjoining to the land aforesaid, with the salt meadows thereunto belonging, together with power and authority to erect a bridge over the water or river commonly called Spiten Devil ferry, or Paparinemo and to receive toll from all passengers and droves of cattle that shall pass thereon, according to rates hereinafter mentioned; and whereas, it is manifested that our loving subject hath been a great charge and expense in the purchasing and settling of the aforecited tracts of land, whereupon considerable improvements have been made, and that he is likewise willing at his own proper cost and charge to build a bridge at the ferry aforesaid, for the benefit and accommodation of travelers, which reasonable request for his future encouragement, we being willing to grant, *Know ye*, that of our special grace, certain knowledge, and mere motion, we have given, granted, ratified, and confirmed, and by these presents do, for us, our heirs and successors, give, grant, ratify, and confirm unto the said Frederick Philips, his heirs and assigns, all and every the aforecited tracts and parcels of land and meadow ground within the limits and bounds before mentioned and expressed, and likewise the aforesaid neck or island of land called Paparinemo, and the meadow thereunto belonging, with power, authority and privilege to erect and build a dam bridge upon the aforesaid ferry of Spitendevil or Paparinemo, and to receive rates and tolls of all passengers and for droves of cattle according to the rates hereafter mentioned, (that is to say), three pence current money of New York, for each man and horse that shall pass the said bridge in the day time, and three pence current money aforesaid, for each head of neat cattle that shall pass the same, and twelve pence current money aforesaid, for each score of hogs, calves, and sheep that shall pass the same, and nine pence current money aforesaid, for every boat, vessel, or canoe that shall pass the said bridge and cause the same to be drawn up, and for each coach, cart, or sledge, or waggon that shall pass the same, the sum of ninepence current money aforesaid; and after sunset each passenger that shall pass said bridge, shall pay two pence current money aforesaid, each man and horse, six pence, each head of neat cattle six pence, each score of hogs, calves, and sheep, two shillings, for each boat or vessel, or canoe, one shilling and sixpence, for each coach, cart, waggon, or sledge, one shilling and sixpence; current money aforesaid, together with all the messuages, tenements, buildings, barns, houses, out-houses, mills, mill-dams, fences, orchards, gardens, pastures, meadows, marshes, swamps, moors, pools, woods, underwoods, trees, timber, quarries, rivers, runs, rivulets, brooks, ponds, lakes, streams, creeks, harbours, beaches, ferrys, fishing, fowling, hunting, hawking, mines, minerals, (silver and gold only excepted,) and all other rights, members, liberties, priviledges, jurisdictions, royalties, hereditaments,

profits, tolls, benefits, advantages, and appertinances whatsoever to the aforesaid tracts and neck or island of land and meadows, ferry, bridge, and mills belonging or in any ways appertaining, or accepted, reputed, taken, known, or occupied as part, parcel, or member thereof; and moreover, *know ye*, that of our further special grace, certain knowledge, and mere motion, we have thought fit, according to the request of our said loving subject, to erect all the aforesaid recited tracts and parcels of lands and meadows with the limits and bounds aforesaid, into a lordship or manor; and, therefore, by these presents we do erect, make, and constitute all the aforesaid recited tracts and parcels of land and meadows, within the limits and bounds aforesaid mentioned, together with all and every of the afore granted premises with all and every of the appertinances into a lordship or manor, to all intents and purposes; and it is our royal will and pleasure that the said lordship and manor shall from henceforth be called the lordship or manor of Philipsborough, and the aforesaid bridge to be from henceforth called Kingsbridge in the manor of Philipsborough aforesaid. And *know ye*, that we, reposing special trust and confidence in the loyalty, wisdom, justice, prudence, and circumspection of our loving subject, do, for us, our heirs and successors, give and grant unto the said Frederick Philips, and to the heirs and assignees of him the said Frederick Philips, full power and authority at all times forever hereafter in the said lordship or manor, one court leet and one court baron to hold and to keep at such times, and so often, yearly and every year, as he or they shall see meet; and all fines, issues, and amercements as the said Court Leet or Court Baron to be holden within said lordship or manor to be sett, forfeited, or employed, or payable, or happening at any time to be payable by any of the inhabitants, of or within the said lordship or manor of Philipsborough, in the limits and bounds, as also all and every of the power and authority herein before mentioned, for the holding and keeping the said Leet and Court Baron from time to time, and to award and issue out the customary writs to be issued and awarded out of the said Court Leet and Court Baron to be kept by the heirs and assignees of the said Frederick Philips forever, in their or every of their stewards deputed and appointed, with full and ample power and authority to distrain for the rents, levies, or other sums of money payable by virtue of the premises, and all other lawful remedies and means for the having possession, receiving, levying and enjoying the premises and every part and parcel of the same, and all waives, estrays, wrecks, deodands, and of the felons happening and being furnished within the said lordship and manor of Philipsborough, and all and every sum and sums of money to be paid as a *parte fine* upon any fine or fines to be levied of any lands, tenements or hereditaments within the lordship or manor of Philipsborough, together with the advowson and right of patronage of all and every the church or churches erected or to be erected or established or hereafter to be erected or established within the said manor of Philipsborough; and we do also further give and grant unto the said Frederick Philips, his heirs and assignees, that all and singular the tenants of the said Frederick Philips, within the said manor shall and may at all times hereafter meet together and choose assessors within the manor aforesaid, according to such rules, ways, and methods as are prescribed for the cities, towns, and counties within our province aforesaid by the acts of General Assembly, for the defraying the public charge of each respective city, town and county aforesaid, and such sums of money so



assessed or levied to collect and dispose of for such uses as the acts of General Assembly shall establish and appoint, to have and to hold, possess, collect, and enjoy, all and singular the said lordship or manor of Philipsborough, together with the aforesaid halls and premises, with their and every of their appertinances unto the said Frederick Philips, his heirs and assignees, to the only proper use, benefit, and behoof of him, the said Frederick Philips, his heirs and assignees forever, reserving unto us, our heirs and successors, free egress and ingress of all our and their forces, horse or foot, of our and their coaches, waggons, stores of war, ammunition, and expresses, that shall from time to time pass the said bridge for our their service, or anything contained to the contrary herein in any ways notwithstanding, to be holden of us, our heirs and successors, in free and common soccage according to the tenure of our manor of East Greenwich within our county of Kent in our realm of England, yielding rendering, and paying therefore, yearly and every year, on the feast day of the Annunciation of the Blessed Virgin Mary, at our fort at New York unto us, our heirs and successors, the annual rent of £4 12s. current money of our said province in lieu and stead of all former rents, services, dues, duties, and demands for the said lordship or manor of Philipsborough and premises. In testimony whereof we have caused the seal of our province of New York to be hereunto affixed. Witness, Benjamin Fletcher our captain-general and governor-in-chief of our province of New York aforesaid, province of Pennsylvania and county of New Castle, and the territory and tracts of land depending thereon in America, at Fort William Henry, the 12th day of June, in the fifth year of our reign, and in the year of our Lord, 1693."

Frederick Philipse, Esq., by his last will bearing date 9th of December, 1702, devised his lands in this town and part of Greenburgh to Frederick Philipse his grandson, born in Barbadoes ye only son of Philip, his eldest son, viz:—

"The Island of *Papirinemin* with the meadows ye toll and all ye lands and meadows called the *Yonkers plantation*, with all houses, mills, mill-dams, &c., as also a piece of land in the mile square by me late bought of Michael Hawdon and all that tract or parcel of land extending from the Yonkers patent or plantation to a creek called by the Indians *Wysquaqua* and by the Christians *William Portugues creek*, and thence according to ye course of that creek into ye woods to ye head of ye same from thence on a last line to the creek called the Yonker's creek, and thence to continue on the same course to Bronck's river; also the boat *Yonker*, with her furniture apparel and appurtenances, &c. Upon the death of the Hon. Frederick Philipse, the above devisee of his grandfather Frederick in 1751, Colonel Frederick Philipse his son became devisee in tail male of the whole manor of Philipsborough."

These lands continued in the possession of Colonel Frederick Philipse, till the year 1779. When having broken his military parole by not returning to Yonkers, they became confiscated to the people of this State, and sold and conveyed by Isaac Stoutenburgh and Philip van Cortlandt Commissioners of Forfeitures, appointed in pursuance of an act of the



Legislature of the State, passed 12th May, 1784, to the following persons:—

|                         |     |                        |     |
|-------------------------|-----|------------------------|-----|
| Mary Hunt               | 120 | Jacob van Tassel       | 0   |
| Abraham Archer          | 120 | Peter Acker            | 186 |
| Pierre van Cortlandt    | 150 | Abraham Acker          | 239 |
| ditto.                  | 120 | William Dalcher        | 215 |
| His own                 | 164 | John Jewell            | 285 |
| John Bishop             | 83  | Jonathan Odell         | 463 |
| Moses Ward              | 167 | Daniel Wiltsie         | 329 |
| Elijah Hunter           | 196 | Jacob Storms           | 279 |
| Peter Davids            | 200 | Richard Delawley       | 220 |
| Samuel Drake            | 115 | George Daterach        | 282 |
| Arnold Hunt             | 283 | Philip Livingston      | 233 |
| Richard Garrisen        | 123 | James D. Clark         | 286 |
| Abraham Orser           | 123 | Peter Post             | 226 |
| Thomas Bishop           | 159 | Jacobus Dyckman        | 300 |
| Job Sherwood            | 365 | George Forster         | 300 |
| Gerard G. Beeckman      | 750 | Garrett Brown          | 312 |
| Cornelius Jones         | 200 | Peter Forshee          | 171 |
| Gerard G. Beeckman      | 0   | Cornelius Darqua       | 29  |
| Michael McKeel          | 327 | Andrew Bostwick        | 279 |
| John van Tassel         | 160 | John Lawrence          | 175 |
| David Storms            | 25  | John Lamb              | 202 |
| James Hammond           | 0   | Robert Johnson         | 190 |
| and                     |     | Cornelius P. Lowe)     | 320 |
| George Coombs           | 162 | mills at Yonckers)     |     |
| James van Wart          | 0   | Sarah Archer           | 18  |
| William van Wart        | 0   | John Williams          | 0   |
| William Hunt            | 270 | Dennis Post            | 155 |
| John van Wart           | 230 | Thomas Valentine       | 238 |
| Reformed Dutch Church   | 0   | Joseph Oakley          | 164 |
| Globe Requa             | 296 | Elnathan Taylor        | 100 |
| Frederick van Cortlandt | 105 | John Dead <sup>a</sup> | 136 |

On the east side of this town, bordering the Bronx's river, is situated a tract of land called the *Mile Square*, lying principally in a beautiful vale, watered by the river and sheltered by picturesque hills. This tract was exempted out of the great manorial patent of 1693, and appears originally to have formed a part of the possessions of the Doughtys of Flushing; as we find John Doughty of that place in 1685 selling sixty-four acres of land here, in *one square mile*, to Francis French, Ebenezer Jones and John Wascot.<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Liber B. Co. Rec. p. 53.

<sup>b</sup> On the 29th of January, 1779, occurs a petition of Jonathan Horton and 172 others, inhabitants of Philipse's Manor, "whigs," "for ye refusal to purchase ye Manor farms in case of confiscation and sale" &c.—Journals of Senate of New York, vol. 1779-83, p. 159.

"22d May, 1674, John Winter of Westchester sold to to Joseph Jeames of Fairfield, Connecticut, a parcel of land containing 120 acres, which is one quarter part of ye tract of land Francis French and Ebenezer Jones bought of Elias Doughty. This land lay west northerly from Eastchester, on the other side of Brunckses river."—*Fairfield Records*.

In 1685, John Hiatt, of Bronx's river, deeds sixty acres of upland to Hopestill Betts of the Yonckers, this sale being a part of the whole tract of land called by the name of the *Mile Square*. Tradition says that this place was given by Frederick Philipse as a dower portion when his daughter Annetjé married Philip French. From the French and Jones family it passed by sale to the Oakleys, Bertines, Curwells, Sherwoods and Riches. The latter family have been long residents here, and are still possessed of a large estate, which has been successively occupied for several generations. By marriage they are connected with the ancient family of the Valentines. The Rich family originally came from Germany, and are descended of the Ulrich of Flaack, whose son, Balthassar Ryché, emigrated to this country at an early period of its settlement. The following ancient document is still preserved in the family; it is written in the German language, and was brought from Germany by Balthassar Ryché:—

"I, Johann Conradt Heidegger, sen'r, of the corporation for Guild, and by the council of the honorable city of Zurich, duly appointed sheriff of the county of Kyburgh, certify and make known that on the date mentioned below, the bearer of this, Balthassar Ryché, son of the late Uulrich of Flaack, situated in my jurisdiction, appeared before me, stating, that whereas having been many years and days absent from this country, and in consequence of a purchase made by him, intending to reside in future with his wife and children at Sandhussen in the electoral palatinate as his permanent residence, he therefore humbly requested an authentic certificate showing his honest birth, pedigree, and name, and likewise that he leaves this country with a good name and character, in order that he may produce such testimony when and where it might be requisite. Wherefore I, having heard the said Ryché's petition, conceive it to be no more than right and just to grant him his request. After having made diligent enquiries respecting his character, and also obtained from the regularly ordained minister here a written acknowledgment that his parents were lawfully married and he thus legitimately conceived and born, and subsequently baptized in a Christian like manner on the first day of June, in the year 1662, in the presence of sponsors. It also appears that from his infancy and during the time he resided here he conducted himself uprightly and without reproach; and that when he left this place he carried with him an honest reputation. In testimony whereof and in compliance with his humble and dutiful request, I have caused this written certificate to be prepared for the said Ryché and have caused the seal of office to be affixed thereto.

Done and passed on the sixteenth day of January, 1699, counting from the birth of Christ our Saviour.

Signed

The County Clerk (SCHIEGG) at Kyburgh.

Mile Square during the war of the Revolution appears to have been a favorite camp ground with both armies, on account of its sheltered situation and vicinity to the water. Here were quartered Colonel Emmerick's British light horse. The British Hussars were billeted here for several summers. The Ryché's mansion being occupied as head quarters, it was the custom of the troopers to tie up their horses to long cords stretched from the apple trees in the orchard, many of which are still standing. For security the roads were patrolled and videttes stretched along the neighboring heights. The remains of bastions are still visible on their summits.

In 1776, the American Rifle Corps were stationed here; and from this place crossed the Bronx to attack and harrass the British flank, as they moved towards White Plains, after landing on Throgmorton's neck. Subsequent to the memorable battle of White Plains the British returned to Mile Square, reconstructed Hunt's bridge, and occupied the hill forts.

In 1778, the British light infantry and Highland companies under General Simcoe, formed an ambuscade in an orchard, at the place where the roads fork to Hunt's bridge and Valentine's hill, in the hope of surprising a large and strong body of the American army moving on the opposite side of the Bronx. It appears from the British account as related by Simcoe, that,

"Hunt's bridge was commanded by the heights on the side of Kings-Bridge, which the enemy had fortified in 1776. In the British rear was a wood; it had been designed to conceal the Queen's Rangers under General Simcoe, and while the Yagers and cavalry should have engaged with any corps who might patrol to Valentine's hill, it was thought probable that the enemy on the opposite side of the Bronx would pass over to their assistance, when the infantry and Highlanders would rush from the wood, and occupying the fences do severe and cool execution upon them as they were on the bridge and occupied in the deep hollow. An advanced party of the enemy, notwithstanding the circumstances which made the troops quit Valentine's hill, had already passed the Bronx; the Yager cavalry were ordered to proceed towards Kings Bridge, slowly and in full sight of the enemy who were on Hunt's hill. There was still hopes by forming the ambuscade to do some service, when, to Lieutenant Col. Simcoe's great surprise, the enemy's cannon were fired at the infantry, whom he expected to have been hidden from their sight, by the intervention of the woods; but it appeared that while Captain Ross was with the advanced companies some officers imprudently had got upon a fence, out of curiosity, and discovered themselves to the enemy. Lieutenant Colonel Simcoe immediately withdrew his men out of the reach of any chance shot, and made use of the low ground (the crossing of which would have led him into the ambuscade,) to march his infantry under its cover, out of their sight, or the reach of their cannon; he sent orders to Captain Ross to withdraw;

and again ambuscaded the cavalry in a position to take advantage of the enemy if any party of them should pursue him, or from Valentine's hill should endeavor to incommode his retreat. Observing the movement of the Yager cavalry, the enemy marched a party to watch their movements, on the opposite bank, while their main body formed the line. Captain Ross thought proper to wait for the party that had crossed the Bronx. He permitted them to come close to him, when his fire threw them into confusion; he then retreated, making a small circuit to avoid some riflemen who had occupied the wood, and the corps returned to the camp."<sup>a</sup>

A day or two preceding the battle of White Plains a large body of British horse advanced upon the road leading through this place for the purpose of reconnoitering.

September, 1778, Sir Archibald Campbell, advanced with the 71st regiment of the Scotch Highlanders, to Mile square. They were soon after joined by General Grant, with another force of Highlanders who occupied the ground from the Bronx at Hunt's Bridge to the North River. During the whole course of the war, Colonel James de Lancey kept a recruiting officer constantly stationed at Jones's house, in the Mile square, as he always considered Mile square itself within the British lines.

On the road leading from the Mile square to the city of Yonkers, are still visible, the remains of an old hostel—the keeper of which was one Gainos, a Frenchman. This individual, during the occupancy of Mile square by the American forces, supplied the army with liquor and provisions. On the approach of the enemy from New York, he chose to retire with General Washington to White Plains; shortly after the evacuation of the premises by Gainos, his tenants left in charge were alarmed by the midnight attack of a gang of British *Cow-boys*, a scuffle ensued, during which one of the assailants was killed.

In the retreat of the robbers, they pitched the headless body of their slain comrade, into the adjoining well. This tragical event has given rise to strange stories; and has thrown over this spot a veil of horror, which is heightened by the loneliness of the situation. Some benighted countryman has construed the gnarled and fantastic cedars, (which surround this spot), into the headless form of the *cow-boy* seated on the well; and the sweeping blast, or gurgling brook, into his doleful groans. The common people still regard this place with superstitious dread, no one daring to approach it after dusk.

*Valentine's hill*, is a high ridge bordering the Mile square on the west; its summit affords one of the finest views in Westchester county. To the

<sup>a</sup> Simcoe's Milit. Journal, p. 77.



east the eye ranges over an extensive country of hills, woods and vales, stretching towards Long Island Sound; the distant horizon skirted by light blue hills. To the north lie the Tuckahoe hills, while westward the view is bounded by the Yonkers ridge, surmounted with lofty woods, with here and there a glimpse to be obtained of the dark palisades peeping through some opening in the trees; below lies a beautiful vale, through which meanders Tippet's Brook. At the base of the hill winds the Croton Acqueduct.

Valentine's hill and the adjoining property has been occupied by the ancient and numerous family of the Valentines, for nearly one hundred and twenty years. In this immediate neighborhood is situated the old burying-ground. Here are interred the remains of Frederick Devoe, the grand-father of Col. Thomas Farringdon of New York city, and several members of the Valentine and Brown families. It is now included in Woodlawn cemetery. The ancestor of the family, Matthias Valentine, having been one of the first tenants under the Philipses; on his settlement here, the whole surrounding country was one vast forest, the lonely domain of the deer. The verges of these forests also abounded with another noble species of game long since extinct, and that was the wild turkey. It is said that flocks of them used to fly from the Yonkers ridge on the west side of Tippet's brook to this hill, at certain seasons of the year, for the purpose of feeding on the acorn and beech nut. The flight was always commenced by a large black cock of the woods, sunset being the signal for departure; the leader gave the well known note, and they were instantly on the wing for the opposite hills. There yet remains a fine specimen of the ancient denizens of the forests on the western edge of this hill, by the roadside leading to the village. This venerable chestnut tree, in the Fall of the year, appears to be the favorite gathering place of thousands of swallows just before they commence their migrations.

In possession of the Valentine family are numerous receipts given for rent; formerly due the Lords of Philipsborough. As a specimen occurs the following:—

*Op Nipperra Des 20 Mars No. 1727,*

den 20 Mars heft Theis Valentin en syn Moeder hier gebracht 13½ boschel tarwe vor de huer von land vor ye Tahr Ao 1726.

*Yonckers, January ye 28 day, 1734-5.*

Then received of Mr. Matthiase Vallentine 7½ bushels of Rent wheat on behalf of Mr. Philipse.

I said received by me,

WILLIAM PECK.

At the commencement of the Revolutionary War this hill was rented by two grand-sons of the first proprietor, Thomas and Gilbert Valentine, who occupied it through the whole course of the war. In the summer of 1775, the American army threw up entrenchments on its summit, the remains of which are still visible. When his Excellency General Washington lay encamped on Valentine's hill in the Fall of 1776, it was supposed to be the design of the enemy to attack his position. On this occasion Thomas Valentine was engaged with the General in conversation, leaning upon the pommel of his saddle, when the heads of the British columns were seen approaching at a distance of three or four miles on the opposite side of the Bronx, as if taking the direction of the hill. Under this supposition, Washington ordered out several companies to attack the flanking parties of the enemy, who, it was discovered were taking the high road to the White Plains. It was afterwards asserted by a British officer, that through the aid of their glasses they had seen Thomas Valentine and the General in conversation.

Washington having ascertained the intention of the enemy, pushed on his left wing to the White Plains, while his right occupied the hill.

From the 12th to the 27th of October, 1776, the American army lay entrenched in detached camps, from this hill to the White Plains.<sup>a</sup> On the 27th, as the enemy continued to advance upon the White Plains, General Washington suddenly called in all his detachments, and abandoning the position he had occupied along the Bronx, assembled all his forces in a strong camp upon Chatterton Heights. Upon the 28th of October, the day of the battle, it was asserted by the residents on the hill, that not only was the cannonade distinctly heard, but also the singing of the Hessians as they advanced to the attack the American position. After the battle of the 28th, the British infantry were stationed here.

The old Valentine house, which stood north-west of the present residence, was used for some time by General Washington as head-quarters.

It would appear from the following letter, in possession of the family, that Thomas Valentine had aided the advance of Washington's left wing towards the White Plains:—

VALENTINE'S HILL, JAN'Y 27TH, 1777.

These may certify, that on or about the 25th day of October last, I ordered Thomas Valentine's one yoke of oxen and cart, to be taken for the public service.

They carried a load to ye White Plains. There I discharged them. I am informed they were further taken on their return, and that Mr. Valentine hath not received them.

B. LINCOLN.

---

<sup>a</sup> Stedman's Hist. of the American war.

On the 6th of June, 1778, Sir William Erskine fell back towards Valentine's Hill. The Queen's Rangers encamping on Odell's Hill, soon after, these corps formed a part of an escort which accompanied the English commander-in-chief to the White Plains,<sup>a</sup> 1778. Lieutenant-Colonel Tarleton was ordered, with the whole of the English cavalry, to this hill, for the purpose of covering the right, when they endeavored to surprise General Gist in the parsonage. The same year, upon the retiring of Lieutenant-Colonel Simcoe, the Continental forces again took possession of the hill.

On the 16th of September, 1782, (says General Heath), the enemy made a grand forage near Valentine's Hill; Sir Guy Carleton was out in person, as was the young Prince, (William Henry, Duke of Clarence, afterwards King William the Fourth). The covering party, it was said consisted of five or six thousand men.<sup>b</sup>

During the absence of the armies, Valentine's Hill was much exposed to the depredations of gangs of outlaws called *Cow Boys* and *Skinnners*, who roamed the country in search of plunder. On one occasion, a party of the former forced their entrance into the Valentine House; seizing the proprietor, Thomas Valentine, they demanded his life or money; whereupon, disbelieving, or affecting to disbelieve him, they threatened, on his again refusing, to hang him instantly. Obtaining no satisfactory answer, they carried him to the foot of a cherry tree, still standing, near the corner of the old garden, and had placed the cord around his neck, when he suddenly threw it off, exclaiming, "Don't be such d——d fools as to hang a man when he hasn't any money." The coolness and apparent sincerity of his language, served effectually to disarm the robbers; for they not only desisted from their purpose, but released him. Instances had occurred in the neighborhood, in which they had actually carried their threats into execution.

One or two instances of heroic courage in a female of this family (Susan Valentine, afterwards Mrs. Vredenburg) is deserving of record. These marauders, like all other villians, frequently proved themselves great cowards. Miss Susan Valentine, when a young woman, prevented a large party from entering the house by threatening them, single handed, with a large oven shovel—solemnly protesting she would split the head of the first man that dared to cross the threshold. Her courage and determination alone served to protect the house from plunder. On another occasion, an intimate friend, Mr. Sneden, had entrusted her with the

---

<sup>a</sup> Simcoe's Mil. Journal.

<sup>b</sup> Heath's Mem. 353.

care of £30 in gold and silver—not daring to carry this amount about his person, as he was going a long journey into the interior.

On receiving her charge, Miss Valentine, for greater security concealed it in her dress, designing to keep it there until the owner's safe return.

The same evening of Mr. Sneden's departure, a party of Skinners forced their way into her bed-room, dragged her from the bed, and demanded her money. This she either denied possessing, or refused to deliver; whereupon, becoming violent, she called to her brother. During the scuffle that followed her brother's entrance, she contrived to crawl out at the foot of the bed, hoping, in this way, to escape unobserved. In this, she was disappointed; the villains observed and again seized her. In the violent attempt made to extricate herself the second time, the money fell on the floor, or, as she herself described it "was fairly shook out of her." The freebooters greedily seized it, and marched off, delighted with the success of their enterprize.

In this town is situated *Berrian's Neck*, the ancient *Nipnichsen* of the Mohegans. The Dutch conferred upon it the name of *Konstabelsche hoek*, or Point, from its owner, William Constable. This neck forms the northern bank, at the mouth, of the noted *Spyt den Dyvel Kil*, or channel. At an early period it belonged to Samuel Edsall. From the Edsalls it passed to the Tippetts, who, during the revolutionary struggle, adhered to the side of the Crown. In consequence, their property was confiscated to the State, (the Tippetts having removed to Nova Scotia,) and sold to Samuel Berrian, who married Dorcas a daughter of George Tippet,<sup>a</sup> former proprietor. A second daughter became the wife of the celebrated Col. James de Lancey, one of the boldest leaders of the Neutral Ground. In 1796, Samuel Berrian, the father of Richard and grand-father of the late Rev. William Berrian, rector of Trinity church, New York, sold the whole estate of Tippet's Neck, consisting of 200 acres, to his nephew, Abraham Berrian.

The latter was the son of Richard Berrian, by his wife Grace, daughter of Abraham Riker of Newtown, L. I., and grand-son of Cornelius the son of John, the eldest son of Cornelius Jansen Berrian who settled in Flatbush, L. I., as early as 1669. He married Jannet, daughter of Jan Stryker; and, being a person of character and education, enjoyed offices in the town government, and was likewise a deacon of the Dutch church. In 1685 he removed his residence to Newtown, where he died in 1689.

---

<sup>a</sup> "A true inventory of all and singular the goods &c. of George Tippetts of Yonkers was taken 29th day of Sept., 1675, by Thos. Hunt of Westchester, Wm. Heydon of Eastchester and Edw. Griffin of Flushing."—Surr. Office N. Y., No. 1, p. 234, wills and adm. 1665-1680.



All testimony unites in ascribing to this family a French origin ; and is made probable that the seat of their ancestors was at Berrien, now a considerable town in the department of Finisterre. Concurrent traditions, existing in diverse branches of the family, declare their ancestor was a Huguenot, who, during the civil wars of France was forced to flee and take refuge in Holland.

The children of Abraham—were Abraham who died in 1851, aged 71 ; Nathaniel, died in 1847, aged 65 ; Richard, blind, died 1827, aged 40 ; Rebecca married George Brinkerhoff ; Grace-Moore, married Major Leonard Bleecker ; Charity, married John Hoogland, and Mary.<sup>a</sup>

The neck remains yet undivided. The heirs are Abraham Berrian, John Hoogland, and Mr. Bleecker.

There are remains of three distinct forts on Tippetts or Berrian's Neck, which once formed a part of the chain of hill batteries reaching from the North to the East Rivers. On January the 19th, 1777, (says Gen. Heath,) it was determined to make an attempt to cut off the British battalion within King's Bridge, early the next morning, by passing a strong detachment over Spitten Devil Creek on the ice, which, however, was not very strong, but the weather was cold. One thousand were detached for this purpose ; but the weather having grown warm in the night, the ice was judged, by the unanimous opinion of all the general officers on the ground, to be too hazardous, on the morning of the 20th, to venture the attempt. On this day there was a cannonade on both sides, and the enemy on the island side were thrown into much confusion. Our General observed that when the enemy within the island were cannonaded across Harlem Creek, they sheltered themselves behind the little hill near the bridge, next to Spitten Devil Creek. On this afternoon he rode round on to Tippetts's Hill, which was in its rear, and found that a field-piece, drawn up on that side, would leave the enemy no hiding place. On the 21st, a cannonade commenced again on both sides. In the afternoon a field-piece was hauled up to Tippetts's Hill, and the enemy being cannonaded both in front and rear, they were thrown into the utmost confusion : some secured themselves in their redoubt, others under the banks ; some lay flat on the ground, and some betook themselves to the cellars : so that in a short time there was no object for the gunners."<sup>b</sup>

The principal fort now standing on the neck is situated a little south of the residence of Mr. Whiting, on the property of Mr. John Ewings. It is in the form of a hollow square, with banks fifteen or twenty feet

<sup>a</sup> Ricker's annals of Newtown, L. I., p. 338-340.

<sup>b</sup> Heath's Mem. 110.

high. Nothing can exceed the boldness of the scenery, as viewed from this elevated spot; below, the steep sides of the neck are bordered with beautiful woodland that skirts the shores of the majestic Hudson; while beyond, the palisades are seen abruptly rising in all their grandeur from the opposite margin of the river. South-east are the distant heights of Fordham and Westchester, and north, the Hudson reaching into the Tappan Zee.

The remains of "*Indian shell beds*," are still visible immediately in the rear of the fort. Foot paths leads through the woods that skirt the river to the extreme point of the neck. The Berrian residence, a fine structure of stone, now occupied by Mr. Tucker, is situated on rising ground near the extreme point; its beautiful situation claims notice. The Hudson here expands its waters; and, united with those of the Haarlem river at the mouth of the Spuyten Duyvel, gives a beautiful lake-like appearance to the whole; the winding creek, the heights of Fordham and wooded hills of New York island, serve to unite and blend a landscape which might have inspired the pen of a Thompson or the pencil of a Claude. The old Tippet mansion is located on the eastern side of this neck, embosomed in the bank and shaded with tall poplars. It possesses a desolate and antiquated appearance, in perfect keeping with the strange stories that are told of its still being haunted by the ghosts of the old tories. Deer are said to have frequented the woods bordering on this neck as late as 1782.

The mouth of the Spuyt den duyvel kil and Berrian's neck will ever be memorable as the scene of the fight between Hendrick Hudson and the Indians, A. D. 1609.

At day-break on the 22d of October, the Halve Maen (Crescent) sailed from Teller's Point on her passage down the river, with a fair wind, twenty-one miles, till the tides set too strong against her, when she came to anchor near the upper end of Manhattan Island. "The two captive Indians who had escaped at West Point had, it appears, made their way on the east side of the river, rousing on their return the spirits of Sleepy Hollow,<sup>a</sup> or the more ferocious Manhatta,<sup>b</sup> and here 'in the inlet of Haarlem river, they had concentrated a force that impatiently awaited the arrival of the rich booty, which they flattered themselves they should obtain.'

"They had not waited long ere the Halve Maen appeared, and immediately hove to, near their place of ambush. One of the Indians who

---

<sup>a</sup> Of the Mahicanni nation, who lived, says Moulton, a little north-west of White-Plains.—*Irving's Sketch Book*.

<sup>b</sup> Who probably extended to Tappan Bay.—*Moulton*.

had escaped from Hudson's vessel now came out with many others, armed with bows and arrows, expecting to betray them."<sup>a</sup> But, says Juet the mate of Hudson's vessel, "we perceived their intent, and suffered none of them to enter our ship, whereupon two canoes full of men with bows and arrows shot at us after our stern, in recompense whereof we discharged six muskets and killed two or three of them; then above one hundred of them came to a point of land to shoot at us, then, I shot a falcon at them and killed two of them: whereupon the rest fled into the woods. Yet they manned off another canoe with nine or ten men, which came to meet us; so I shot at it also a falcon, and shot it through and killed one of them, then our men with muskets killed three or four more of them, so they went their way."<sup>b</sup>

It was here, too, that during the absence of the illustrious Peter Stuyvesant, who was then occupied in reducing the Swedish fortress on the Delaware, a body of nine hundred Indians having crossed the river, came and landed at "Spiteful Devil" creek. Here they posted themselves, and remained until they were apprised of his return.<sup>c</sup>

The waters of the kill or channel, derive their name from a daring Dutch burgher of the Manhattans, who, bent upon performing some deed of knight errantry, determined upon crossing this stream in a violent storm, in opposition to the remonstrances of his friends; swearing he would swim across "en spyt den duyvel," (in spite of the devil), but scarcely had he reached the channel when he was overwhelmed by the stormy billows and sank to rise no more.

This incident has been well described in the Sketch Book, by Washington Irving, although he has fixed a much later date for the origin of the name than we find it recorded in the Colonial annals. It is entitled,

"THE DOLEFUL DISASTER OF ANTHONY THE TRUMPETER."

"Stuyvesant resolutely bent upon defending his beloved city (New Amsterdam) in spite of itself, called unto him his trusty Nan Corlear, who was his right hand man in all times of emergency. Him did he adjure to take his war denouncing trumpet, and mounting his horse, to beat up the country, night and day, sounding the alarm along the pastoral borders of the Bronx, starting the wild solitudes of Croton, arousing the rugged yeomanry of Weehawk and Hoboken, the mighty men of battle of Tappan bay, and the brave boys of Tarrytown and Sleepy Hollow, together with all the other warriors of the country round about; charging them one and all, to sling their powder horns, shoulder their fowling pieces, and march merrily down to the Manhattans. Now there

<sup>a</sup> Moulton's Hist. N. Y. part i. 272, 2.

<sup>b</sup> Hudson's Journal.

<sup>c</sup> Egbert Benson's Mem. N. Y. 94.

was nothing in all the world, the divine sex excepted, that Anthony van Corlear loved better than errands of this kind. So just stopping to take a lusty dinner, and bracing to his side his junk bottle, well charged with heart inspiring Hollands, he issued jollily from the city gate that looked out upon what is at present called Broadway; sounding as usual a farewell strain, that rung in sprightly echoes through the winding streets of New Amsterdam. Alas! never more were they to be gladdened by the melody of their favorite trumpeter! It was a dark and stormy night when the good Anthony at the famous creek (sagely denominated Harlem river) which separates the island of Manna-hata from the main land. The wind was high, the elements were in an uproar, and no Charon could be found to ferry the adventurous sounder of brass across the water.

"For a short time he vapoured like an impatient ghost upon the brink; and then, betinking himself of the urgency of his errand, took a hearty embrace of his stone bottle, swore most valorously that he would swim across, 'en spyt den duyvel,' (in spite of the devil!) and daringly plunged into the stream. Luckless Anthony! scarce had he buffeted half way over, when he was observed to struggle violently, as if battling with the spirit of the waters; instinctively he put his trumpet to his mouth, and giving a vehement blast, sunk forever to the bottom!

"The potent clangour of his trumpet—like the ivory horn of the renowned Paladin Orlando, when expiring in the glorious field of Roncesvalles—rung far and wide through the country, alarming the neighbours around, who hurried in amazement to the spot. Here an old Dutch burgher, famed for his veracity, and who had been a witness of the fact, related to them the melancholy affair; with the fearful addition, (to which I am slow in giving belief,) that he saw the duyvel, in the shape of a huge moss-bonker, seize the sturdy Anthony by the leg, and drag him beneath the waves. Certain it is, the place with the adjoining promontory which projects into the Hudson, has been called 'spyt den duyvel,' or Spuyten Duyvel, ever since. The restless ghost of the unfortunate Anthony still haunts the surrounding solitudes, and his trumpet has often been heard by the neighbors, of a stormy night, mingling with the howling of the blast. Nobody ever attempts to swim over the creek after dark; on the contrary, a bridge has been built to guard against such melancholy accidents in future."<sup>a</sup>

This creek, and neighboring waters, are also celebrated for their shad fishery. The season for fishing commences in March, and continues throughout April and May. It is entirely governed by the influx and reflux of the tide, or the last of the flood and ebb. The fishermen make four lifts every twenty-four hours. The aggregate value of this fish, (the *Alosa Sapidissima*, Rap.,) taken in the Hudson river and neighboring waters south of the Highlands, amounts to \$100,000 annually.

The small settlement of Kings Bridge bordering on the Haarlem river, took its name from a ferry and bridge established here at a very early period of the Colonial administration. The Westchester side of the bridge (where stands the Macomb's mansion,) was formerly an island

<sup>a</sup> Beauties of Washington Irving, p. 198.



called by the Indians Paperinemen, as we find the Director General, William Kieft, granting unto Matys (Matthew) Jansen the isle of Paperinemen, 18th August, 1646.<sup>a</sup> 1674, John Archer, lord of the manor of Fordham, laid claim to a neck of land called Humock Island, commonly called by the Indians Paperinemen, which he asserted he had by patent. But it would appear that governor Lovelace had already settled an individual by the name of Vervelen upon the island to keep a ferry for the accomodation of passengers between the island and the Westchester shore. To satisfy Archer's claim, however, the secretary of the colony, Matthias Nicolls, agreed to pay a yearly rent for the same.

In 1692, His Excellency the Governor "out of great favour and good to the city of New York proposed the building of a bridge over the *spiken devil ferry*."<sup>b</sup>

The same year at a meeting of the Mayor, Aldermen and Assistants, we find them petitioning the Governor :—

"That as Frederick Phillipse will undertake to build the bridge at the said place, for the conveniency of all travellers and droves of cattle at a moderate and reasonable toll; they do therefore humbly pray, that if the said Phillipse will undertake, in one year's time, to build a good and convenient draw bridge for the passage of all travellers, droves of cattle and passage of carts and waggons, for the toll of one penny for every neat cattle, and two pence for each man and horse, and 12 pence for each score of hogs and sheep, and six pence for each cart and waggon that shall pass thereon, that he may have the preference of their majesties grant for the same by having a bridge built there."<sup>c</sup>

The following year, 1693, the 5th of King William the third and Queen Mary, the Ferry, Island and meadow were confirmed to Frederick Philipse, Lord of the manor of Philipsburgh, by royal charter and power given him to erect thereon a bridge and to receive a certain toll therein specified, and furthermore the said bridge to be henceforth called *King's Bridge*.<sup>d</sup>

Madam Knight on her journey from New York to New Haven in the year 1704, speaks thus of this place: "About 5 o'clock came to Spiting Devil, else Kings Bridge, where they pay three pence for passing over with a horse, which the man, that keeps the gate set up at the end of the bridge, receives."

During the war of the revolution, Kings Bridge constituted the "*bar-*

<sup>a</sup> Dutch Trans. Rec. G. G. p. 360.

<sup>b</sup> Minutes of Common Council N. Y. Vol. ii. 70.

<sup>c</sup> Minutes of Common Council, Vol. ii. 70.

<sup>d</sup> Charter of Philipsburgh.

<sup>e</sup> Journal Madam Knight, 56.

rier" of the British line, when they occupied New York Island, while as far north as the Croton extended, the "*Neutral Ground.*" Like the pass of ancient Thermopylæ, Kings Bridge can boast of her faithful bands of Spartans, who fought for "liberty or death." As early as May 25, 1775, Congress ordered:—

"That a post be immediately taken and fortified, at or near Kings Bridge, and that the ground be chosen with a particular view to prevent the communication between the city of New York and the country from being interrupted by land."

On the abandonment of Manhattan Island in, 1776, by the American Army, Kings Bridge was occupied by the American General as headquarters.

This bridge was the scene of a bloody conflict between a portion of the Continental army under the command of Major General Heath, and a large body of Hessians under Knyphausen.

January 17, 1777, a detachment "says Heath with two field pieces, was ordered to move to the north of the fort, (in which was a garrison of Hessians who had refused to surrender,) to a hill above Harlem creek, not far from the New Bridge.<sup>a</sup> When the detachment arrived at this place, a battalion of Hessians appeared drawn up on the side of the hill just within Kings Bridge, and back of Hyatt's tavern. Our general (Heath) ordered the artillery to cannonade them immediately. The first shot cleared the right of the battalion, nearly a platoon settling down as the shot passed them, which entered the bank close behind them. The second shot passed about the centre of the battalion, when to the amount of a grand division settled down, which was an evidence that they would not stand much longer. One of the pieces was ordered to be drawn lower down the hill; on which the battalion quitted their ground and marched off as fast as they could, without running to get behind the redoubt and hill at the bridge, receiving one shot more as they were turning round the point. It was not suspected that the enemy had any cannon in the redoubt within the bridge, but they now began to cannonade the artillery men who had descended the hill, who had to draw up their pieces as fast as possible, which they effected without any loss but received three or four shots quite among them, before they could reach the top of the hill."<sup>b</sup> The attack on the 19th and 21st has been already detailed in the account of Tippetts hill.

In July, 1778, Lord Cathcart held the command of the British forces at Kings Bridge.

<sup>a</sup> The new bridge was erected by Jacob Dykeman and Johannes Vermilyea, previous to the war, for the purpose of avoiding the toll of the old bridge.

<sup>b</sup> Heath's Mem. 109.

"The late skirmish, (says Heath,) writing in 1781, near King's Bridge, was occasioned by the American army's moving down, in order to give the French officers a view of the British out-posts near the bridge. A number of Americans were killed and wounded by long shot from the yaugers of the enemy, who kept up a popping fire whenever they could reach our troops."<sup>a</sup>

The vestiges of the military camp pits can still be traced on the hills around the bridge, while within a few feet of it the remains of a British officer were recently disinterred—and, incredible as it may seem, in his full uniform; the brass buttons as perfect as the day they were moulded, containing the number of his regiment.

King's Bridge was also the rendezvous of a corps of freebooters called "*Cow Boys*," whose bands ravaged the surrounding hills and valleys. "On the part of the British," remarks the author of the *Spy*, "the stimulus of loyalty was by no means suffered to sleep where so fruitful a field offered on which it might be expended. But their freebooters were enrolled, and their efforts more systematized. Long experience had taught their leaders the efficacy of concentrated force; and unless tradition does great injustice to their exploits, the result did no little credit to their foresight. The corps—we presume from their well known affection to that useful animal—had received the significant appellation of '*Cow Boys*.'"<sup>b</sup> The morality of these heroes of the Neutral Ground, was of a singular kind: the rapine by which they subsisted, they accounted lawful and honorable.

King's Bridge lies prettily situated in a beautiful vale near the confluence of the Hudson and Harlem Rivers. It is almost surrounded by high rolling hills, whose tops are crowned by hill forts and fine spreading woods. This spot was first chosen as the site of the city of New Amsterdam, on account of its secure and inland position.

Immediately west of the bridge flows *Tippett's Brook*, the *Mosholu* of the Indians, and here it unites with the Harlem River. This latter stream, formerly called the Muscoota,<sup>c</sup> has been long known as a favorite resort to the angler. The beautiful striped bass (*Labrax Lineatus*, Cuvier,) abounds in these waters. The fishing season usually commences in May, and reaches perfection in the months of September and October. The baits preferred (although they vary according to location) are the soft crab, shrimp and squid, or common cuttle fish. The bass is

<sup>a</sup> Heath's mem. 294.

<sup>b</sup> *Spy*, 1, 24.

<sup>c</sup> This name frequently applies to the Harlem River in the Albany and County Records.

well known to be an anadromous, living in the salt water, but generally spawning in the fresh. These fish sometimes attain to a large size.

The favorite station of the angler is the New Bridge. The present tavern at King's Bridge occupies the site of the old Dyckman Hotel, in which its landlords were wont to entertain the ancient aldermen of the Manhattans.

The residence of the late Robert Macomb, Esq., now occupied by his widow, lies beautifully embossed in shrubbery, commanding fine views of the bridge, creek, New York island, and neighboring hills. Among the latter stands prominent *Tetard's Height*, with its powder house, and *Fort Independence*. From this hill the continental army retreated, on the approach of General Knyphausen, in 1776. The pleasure grounds around the Macomb mansion, are tastily laid out in shrubberies and walks, while the beautiful waters of the "*Muscoota*" add variety to the scenery.

In one of the rooms we noticed a beautiful painting, by Waldo, of Major Gen. Alexander Macomb. This family is descended from the MacCombie's, of Ireland, an ancient and honorable stock who removed to that country from Scotland.<sup>a</sup> The grand-father of the General was John Macomb, who emigrated from Ireland to this country in 1742, and held an official place under the Colonial government. He established himself in New York, where his son Alexander Macomb, father of Major Gen. Alexander, was educated. The father was a representative in the State Legislature, from the city of New York, in 1787-8, and during the late war with Great Britain he furnished five sons for the service of his country in the militia and regular army. He afterwards removed to Detroit, where he amassed a large fortune in the fur trade. Here he married Catharine Navarre, a lady of noble French extraction. Major General Alexander Macomb was born 3d April, 1782.

This distinguished individual was the hero of Plattsburgh, and subsequently General-in-chief (May, 1828, until his decease, June, 1846) of the United States army. His sister married Capt. Arent Schuyler de Peyster.

Leaving the Bridge, the approach to the village of Yonkers from the south possesses many points of interest. Along the edge of the valley are scattered beautiful knolls and high ranges of hills, either cultivated or covered with woods; to the left, seated on a fine, wooded hill, is a large stone mansion, erected by Augustus van Cortlandt, Esq., A.D. 1822, upon the site of a much older building, which was destroyed by fire A. D.

<sup>a</sup> The arms of MacComb or McCoombe, ar. a saltire per fesse and per saltire, or and az. countercharged.



1822. The ascent to the house is through the romantic woods of Cortlandt's ridge. The road passes over a deep ravine, watered by a picturesque brook, and through high masses of frowning rock. The lawn in front commands a view of the vale of Yonkers, while at the foot of the hill runs Tippet's Brook.

The farm house situated on this property was built by Frederick van Cortlandt, A. D. 1766. In 1848, flourishing upon the lawn in the rear of the mansion, was an aged apple tree marked with the name of Jacobus van Cortlandt—date illegible.

This property, which lies directly north of Berrian's Neck, passed, upon the death of Frederick van Cortlandt, to his brother Augustus van Cortlandt. The latter, by will, bequeathed the same to his grandson Augustus Morris, "provided he assumed the name of Van Cortlandt." Augustus van Cortlandt subsequently sold the property to Samuel B. Thompson, John Ewing, William C. Wetmore, and James R. Whiting. The latter gentleman has recently erected a beautiful stone residence on the western side of the neck, which commands extensive prospects of the Hudson and palisades; the entrance is by a beautiful road that winds through a thick wood to the house. The Van Cortlandt mansion and surrounding property belongs to Samuel B. Thompson, Esq., and is now occupied by the McFarlane family. The western side of Cortlandt's ridge embraces fine views of the Hudson River, palisades and hills stretching northwards. Upon the property of W. C. Wetmore, Esq., there is a celebrated white oak, which stands in the midst of a pretty glade called the "*Cow Boy Oak*," from the fact that these lawless desperadoes were often suspended from its branches.

"Short was their shrift, and sure the cord."

[*Rokeby*.]

Cortlandt house, the ancient residence of the Van Cortlandt family, stands in the vale below, about one mile north from Kings Bridge, on the road leading to the village of Yonkers. Prior to the purchase of the Philipses, this estate (as before shown) formed a portion of the fief of Colen-donck, and was styled the "*Old Yonckers*." From the Patron Adriaen van der Donck, it passed through the hands of various proprietors to the Hon. Frederick Philipse, who sold it to his son-in-law Jacobus van Cortlandt, A. D. 1699. Since then, it has been considerably enlarged by other purchases. The whole eight hundred and fifty acres is now vested in his descendant, Augustus van Cortlandt, Esq., with the exception of one hundred and five acres which has been laid out by competent engineers, as Oloff Park. This beautiful and valua-

ble part of the Cortlandt estate, is but half a mile north of New York city, and lies almost entirely on elevated ground, from portions of which most beautiful views reward the visitor. Jerome Park lies just south of it, and the magnificent Central avenue is not more than a quarter of a mile distant.

A broad avenue named Van Cortlandt, has been opened through the Park, and the most elevated portion has been set aside for a park within a park. Fronting on this enclosure which has been named Stevenson Park, are most beautiful villa sites, containing from ten to forty city lots. Oloff Park has as its boundaries, three important and ancient roads; the old Albany Post Road, the old Boston Post Road, and the road from Yonkers to William's Bridge and Westchester. In addition to these and Van Cortlandt avenue, referred to above, Gouvenure avenue, Stevenson avenue and Lesler place, have been laid out within the limits of the park.

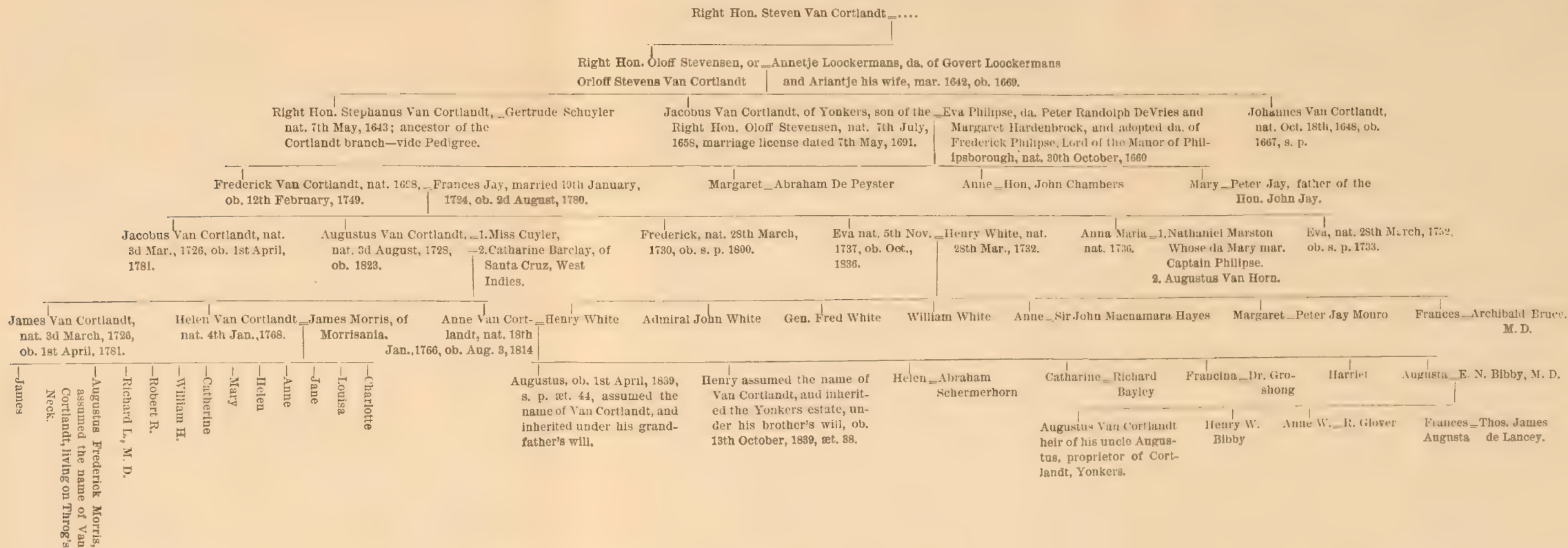
The Central Park Commissioners, who have done so much to beautify and improve the upper portion of New York Island, now have, by act of the Legislature, supreme control over this part of Westchester County—and by opening Central avenue and Grand Boulevards, draining low grounds and providing water supply for the future inhabitants, will soon make this part of the county approximate in value to the most valuable lots up town; and, secondly, it is very confidently predicted that before many years, the business part of the city will be in the neighborhood of the Harlem river. With Hell Gate cleared of its obstructions, the last obstacle to the change in the course of shipping will be removed.

It is believed that then, ships, instead of entering by way of the Bay will come by way of Long Island Sound, and have their wharves near and along the Harlem River; that the latter will be made a grand ship canal through which communication with the Hudson and inland towns will be made. Already the late far-sighted Commodore Vanderbilt, has a railroad chartered—and we believe, under contract—which is to connect Spuyten Duyvil on the Hudson with the future port at the other end of Harlem River.

Jacobus van Cortlandt, the first of the name who enjoyed this estate was the second son of the Right Hon. Oloff Stevensen van Cortlandt, a native of Cortlandt in Holland, who came out to this country in the military service of the Dutch West India Company, and grandson of the Right Hon. Steven van Cortlandt a lineal descendant of the ancient Dukes of Cortlandt or Courland. Jacobus married in 1691 Eva Philipse daughter of the Hon. Frederick Philipse of the manor of

# PEDIGREE OF VAN CORTLANDT, OF YONKERS.

Arms:—Arg. the wings or arms of a wind-mill slatierways sa, voided of the field, five estoiles gu. Crest:—An estoile gu. between two wings elevated arg. Motto:—*Virtus sibi munus.*







Philipsburgh. Besides the Yonkers estate, Jacobus van Cortlandt was a large landed proprietor in the town of Bedford, in this county. This individual was an eminent merchant of New York city, where he was born on the 7th of July 1668. He was also one of the five members returned by the High Sheriff to represent the city and county of New York in the Colonial Assembly, A. D. 1691.

He was, too, elected to represent the Dock ward in the Common Council for several years, and subsequently (1710-1719) held the office of Mayor. He died in the spring of 1739.

By his will, dated 12th of May, 1739, he devised and bequeathed unto his son Frederick van Cortlandt,

“All that my farm situate lying and being in a place commonly called and known by the name of the *Little or Lower Yonckers &c.*, and all other the land, meadows and real estate, I am seized of or have a right to in the Manor of Philipsburgh, &c., for his natural life, and from and after his decease to the heirs male lawfully begotten, &c. To his eldest daughter, Margaret, wife of Abraham de Peyster, property in the city of New York; and the same to his remaining daughters, Anne, wife of John Chambers, and Mary, wife of Peter Jay.<sup>a</sup>

Frederick van Cortlandt only son of the above testator, married Frances Jay, daughter of the Huguenot, Augustus Jay, by his wife Anna Maria Bayard.

Upon the death of Frederick van Cortlandt, 12th Feb., 1749,<sup>b</sup> the estate devolved by the will of Jacobus, senr. to Jacobus van Cortlandt jun., eldest son and heir at law of Frederick. This individual, better known as Col. James van Cortlandt, nobly used his influence (while residing here during the war,) in ameliorating the condition of his suffering countrymen. It not unfrequently happened that a poor neighbour was robbed of everything he possessed; upon application to Col. van Cortlandt he would assume his red watch coat, and mounting his horse ride down to the city, to intercede in their behalf. He seldom applied in vain, such was the universal respect for his character. Previous to the close of the war he was compelled to leave his country residence at Yonckers, on account of ill health. He died shortly afterwards in the city of New York, 1st of April, 1781. His remains were interred in the family tomb, Vault Hill. On the death of Col. James van Cortlandt, the property passed to his brother, Augustus van Cortlandt, the next heir of the entail. This gentleman held the office of Clerk of the Common Council in New York, on the breaking out of the Rev-

<sup>a</sup> Surrogate's office, N. Y. fol. xlii. 425.

<sup>b</sup> The will of Frederick van C. bears date 2d Oct. 1749. To his wife Frances he bequeaths two negro girls and a four wheeled chaise. His children were James, Augustus, Frederick, Anna Maria and Eva—Surrogate's office, N. Y. fol. xviii. 62.

olution ; this appears from the following letter addressed by him to the New York Committee of Safety—Dated Sept. 5, 1775 :—

“GENTS.—Being requested by the Provincial Congress to enquire for some place of safety to deposit the public records in, and to inform the Committee of safety thereof, agreeable to which, Mr. Cortlandt informs the committee of safety, that previous to the above request, he caused the public records to be put into chests, and secured them in a cellar in his garden, made for that purpose, of stone and brick, well arched and exceedingly dry. This precaution was taken against accidents happening by fire ; should the city be invaded by an army from Great Britain, or British troops, he in such case intended to remove them to his brother's at Yonkers, in the county of Westchester. If the committee of safety shall judge any other place more secure, Mr. Van Cortlandt will be glad to be informed thereof, that he may communicate the same to the corporation of this city for their approbation.”<sup>a</sup>

He remains their most obedient humble servant,

AUGUSTUS VAN CORTLANDT.

By the will of the above Augustus van Cortlandt, dated 20th of December, 1823, he bequeathes his property after the following manner :—

“WHEREAS, the greatest part of the lands and real estate which I occupy and hold in the town of Yonkers, was derived to me by inheritance from my ancestors ; and, whereas I have lately purchased several tracts and pieces of land also lying in ye said town of Yonkers, which I at present occupy and possess, &c. *Item*, it is my desire that the same remain entire, and pass from time to time to one of my surname and family ; whereupon I do hereby give and devise all my lands and real estate, and all dwelling houses, mills and other buildings thereon in the town of Yonkers, &c., unto my affectionate relations, John Jay and Peter Augustus Jay, and to their heirs for ever, except a certain dwelling house and farm in the said town of Yonkers, and a lot of ground near my mill-pond, &c., which belonged to my late brother, Frederick van Cortlandt, to hold the same in trust for the following uses : viz., 1st, To hold the same for my son-in-law, Henry White, late the husband of my deceased daughter, Anna White, for and during the time of his natural life. 2nd, For and after the decease of my son in-law Henry White, and in case Augustus, the son of the said Henry White and my said deceased daughter shall survive the said Henry White, then to hold the same for the use of the said Augustus, and his heirs and assignees, on condition that from and after my decease, he do take and constantly and exclusively use the name of Van Cortlandt, &c., &c.”<sup>b</sup>

Augustus van Cortlandt, the above devisee, subsequently took possession of the estate under the will of his grandfather, the above testator. The Revised Statutes of 1825, having abolished the entail, Augustus became possessed of the estate in fee simple. Upon the 18th of Feb., 1827, Augustus van Cortlandt bequeathed the Yonkers to his brother

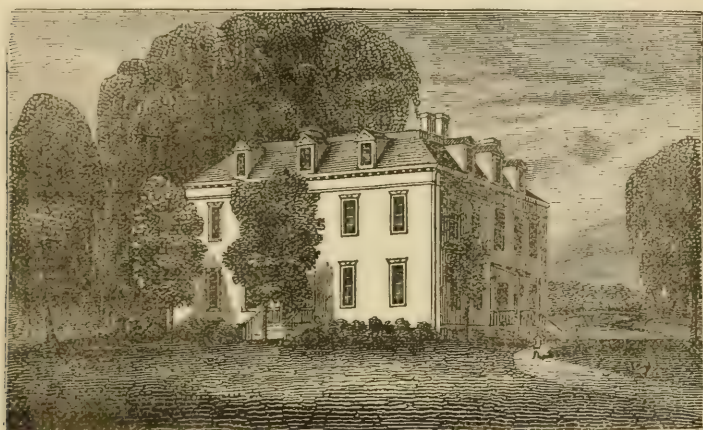
<sup>a</sup> American Archives, 4th series, vol. iii. 645.

<sup>b</sup> Surrogate's office, N. Y.

Henry, for life, and to his brother's eldest son forever, provided they take and constantly use the name of "Van Cortlandt;" and upon the failure of male heirs, to Henry, the testator provided that the property should pass to his nephew, Augustus van Cortlandt Bibby, son of his sister Augusta.

Henry, the above devisee, took possession of the estate on his brother's death, in 1839, and assumed the name of Van Cortlandt. Henry van Cortlandt died October, 1839, and was succeeded by his nephew, the present proprietor, Augustus van Cortlandt, Esq.

The present mansion house, a large edifice of stone, was erected by Frederick van Cortlandt, A. D. 1748;<sup>a</sup> it forms a noble object when viewed from the lawn. The situation commands nearly the whole length of the vale of Yonkers; streaching south, the view is terminated only by



Cortlandt House, the residence of Augustus Van Cortlandt, Esq.

the high hills of New York island, and heights of Fordham. The pleasure grounds in front, appear to have been laid out in the ancient Dutch style, with high artificial banks, adorned with rows of stately box, venerable for their height and antiquity; while beneath are still visible the remains of old fish ponds and *jets d'eau*. Above the old fashioned window, grim visages in the shape of corbels seem to frown upon the beholder. We suppose them to be a kind of "*genii loci*."

Two eagles surmount the posts of the old gateway facing the stables. These were part of the spoils taken from a Spanish privateer during the

<sup>a</sup> The following item occurs in the will of Frederick van Cortlandt, dated 2nd of Oct., 1749: "whereas, I am now about finishing a large stone dwelling house on the plantation in which I now live, which, with the same plantation, will, by virtue of my deceased father's will, devolve after my decease, upon my eldest son James, &c.—Surrogate's office N. Y., fol. xviii. 62.



war; and presented to Augustus van Cortlandt, by Rear Admiral Robert Digby of the British navy. To the east of the house, the Mosholu (Tippetts brook) pent up by the mill dam, forms an extensive sheet of water, which is greatly enriched by the vicinity of green meadows, orchards and neighboring hills. South of the pond is situated the old mill. Amid the grove of locusts on George's point, a little north of the mill, stood the original residence of the Van Cortlandts.

The interior of the present house is neatly fitted up and furnished, its drawing room and library-windows look out on beautiful prospects; in the latter apartment are some fine family portraits: Henry White, jr., by Jarvis; Vice Admiral Sir John White, in full uniform, a copy by Chapman from the original of Jarvis; Augustus Van Cortlandt, by Jarvis; Thomas Bibby, by Chapman; Mr. Babcock, by Stewart; and John White, sen., by Copley.

The old family Bible of the Van Cortlandt's, printed at Amsterdam, A.D. 1714, contains some curious memoranda of the Jay family. The first entry occurs, New York, den 19th Jan., 1723-4.

During the early period of the Revolutionary war, this house was garrisoned by a piquet guard of the Green Yagers, whose officers held their head-quarters here.

His Excellency, General Washington, and aids, dined in one of the apartments on the memorable July of 1781, when the British piquets were driven within the lines upon New York Island. In another room, the unfortunate Captain Rowe expired in the arms of his bride-elect.

To the north of the mansion, is seen rising Vault Hill, so called from the family sepulchre, which is seated upon its summit. From this spot hallowed by the remains of the illustrious dead, the view is exceedingly beautiful; Tippetts's vale, the mill-pond, orchards, and neighboring hills. The vault itself is a small square edifice of stone, surmounted with a pointed roof, the whole enclosed by a solid stone wall. Within an adjoining vault, in the same yard, repose the remains of

CHARLOTTE AMELIA BAYLEY,<sup>a</sup>

relic of Doctor RICHARD BAYLEY,

who died the 1st day of Sept.,

1805.

It was upon this hill that General Washington stationed his troops and lighted camp-fires for the purpose of deceiving the enemy, whilst he secretly withdrew to join La Fayette before Yorktown, in Virginia, A.D. 1781.

---

<sup>a</sup> This lady was a sister-in-law of Augustus Van Cortlandt, Sen.



There are still the remains of a considerable fort on the north end of the ridge. During the Revolutionary struggle, the valley south from Vault Hill to Kings Bridge, appears to have been the constant scene of skirmishing between the two armies.

On the 3d of July, 1781, General Washington planned an expedition to cut off Colonel James de Lancey, stationed in the vale, and Major Pruschank, another British officer occupying Cortlandt ridge, in command of the Yager horse.

It had been so arranged that the Duke of Lauzun should march to Williams' Bridge, and there make his rendezvous till daylight the following morning. General Lincoln was to be piloted down from Tappan and landed below Yonkers, while Washington himself should take post on Valentine's hill. Lauzun accordingly conducted his cavalry to William's Bridge, where he halted. In the mean time General Lincoln had been landed half a mile below the village, on the property now owned by Thomas W. Ludlow, Esq., then occupied by Isaac Post. After landing, Lincoln, guided by Major Lawrence, passed along shore south, missing Col. Emmerick with his corps marching north to Boar hill; then crossing over the hills east, Lincoln followed the course of Tippet's brook, for the purpose of avoiding Pruschank's corps, stationed upon Cortlandt's ridge. Passing the Van Cortlandt residence, he kept close to the edge of Gun and Locust hills, and had arrived in the vicinity of General Montgomery's house, (then occupied by his widow,) unobserved by the sentinels on the opposite side, when the enemy's patrol fired. De Lancey, instantly on the alert, commenced his retreat in face of General Lincoln's advancing columns. Totten, De Lancey's lieutenant, seemed determined to make a stand, but soon received positive orders from De Lancey to retire, which he did, just in time to avoid the surprisal.

Colonel Armand, the celebrated French cavalry officer made a daring and successful attempt to surprise a large piquet of Green Yagers, stationed at Warner's store, under the command of De Wurmb. For this purpose Armand left his quarters above the Croton and proceeded down the main post road to the village of Yonkers; after passing the village, and when in the neighborhood of the enemy's encampment, he started his whole corps on a full gallop. The Yagers had taken the precaution to post a sentinel at Hadley's spring, but the poor fellow became so perfectly alarmed and powerless on seeing the furious onset of Armand's horse, that he could give no alarm, and was instantly dispatched. The consequence was, the whole corps were killed or made prisoners. Colonel Armand then made good his retreat, passing in front of the Van Cortlandt residence, and returning by way of Tippet's valley. In

the mean time the British bugle sounded to horse, and his enemies were in full pursuit. On arriving at the Van Cortlandt house a vigorous search was made for Armand, who was by this time far advanced on his retreat to the Croton.

On the Van Cortlandt estate is situated Indian bridge and field; the former crosses Tippet's brook, the latter forms a portion of the Cortlandt woods—an extensive range of woodland to the north-east of the mansion. Both these places are memorable as the scene of a severe engagement between the British troops and Stockbridge Indians, on the 31st of August, 1778.

The action is thus related in Simcoe's Military Journal:—

“Lt. Col. Simcoe, returning from head quarters, the 20th of August, heard a firing in front, and being informed that Lt. Col. Emmerick had patrolled, he immediately marched to his assistance. He soon met him retreating; and Lt. Col. Emmerick being of opinion the rebels were in such force, that it would be advisable to return, he did so. Lt. Col. Simcoe understood that Nimham, an Indian chief, and some of his tribe, were with the enemy; and by his spies, who were excellent, he was informed that they were highly elated at the retreat of Emmerick's corps, and applied it to the whole of the light troops at Kingsbridge. Lt. Col. Simcoe took measures to increase their belief; and, ordering a day's provision to be cooked, marched the next morning, the 31st of August, a small distance in front of the post, and determined to wait there the whole day, in hopes of betraying the enemy into an ambuscade; the country was most favorable to it. His idea was, as the enemy moved upon the road which is delineated in the plan as intersecting the country, to advance from his flanks; this movement would be perfectly concealed by the fall of the ground upon his right, and by the woods upon the left; and he meant to gain the heights in the rear of the enemy, attacking whomsoever should be within by his cavalry and such infantry as might be necessary. In pursuance of these intentions, Lt. Col. Emmerick with his corps, was detached from the Queen's Rangers and Legion, as Lt. Col. Simcoe thought, fully instructed in the plan; however, he most unfortunately mistook the nearer house for one at a greater distance, the names being the same, and there he posted himself—and soon after sent from thence a patrol forward upon the road, before Lt. Col. Simcoe could have time to stop it. This patrol had no effect, not meeting with any enemy; had a single man of it deserted, or been taken, the whole attempt had, probably, been abortive. Lt. Col. Simcoe, who was half way up a tree, on the top of which was a drummer boy, saw a flanking party of the enemy approach. The troops had scarcely fallen into their ranks, when a smart firing was heard from the Indians, who had lined the fences of the road, and were exchanging shot with Lt. Col. Emmerick, whom they had discovered. The Queen's Rangers moved rapidly to gain the heights, and Lieut. Col. Tarleton immediately advanced with the Hussars and the Legion cavalry; not being able to pass the fences in his front, he made a circuit to return further upon their right; which being reported to Lieut. Col. Simcoe, he broke from the column of the Rangers, with the grenadier company, and, directing Major Ross to conduct the

corps to the heights, advanced to the road, and arrived, without being perceived, within ten yards of the Indians. They had been intent upon the attack of Emmerick's corps and the Legion; they now gave a yell, and fired upon the grenadier company, wounding four of them, and Lieut. Col. Simcoe. They were driven from the fences; and Lieut. Col. Tarleton, with the cavalry, got among them, and pursued them rapidly down Cortlandt's ridge. That active officer had a narrow escape; in striking at one of the fugitives, he lost his balance and fell from his horse; luckily, the Indian had no bayonet, and his musket had been discharged. Lieut. Col. Simcoe joined the battalion and seized the heights. A captain of the rebel light infantry, and a few of his men were taken; but a body of them, under Major Stewart, who afterwards was distinguished at Stony Point, left the Indians and fled.

"Though this ambushade, its greater part, failed, it was of consequence. Near forty of the Indians were killed, or desperately wounded; among others, Nimham, a chieftain, who had been in England, and his son; and it was reported to have stopped a larger number of them, who were excellent marksmen, from joining General Washington's army. The Indian Doctor was taken; and he said that when Nimham saw the grenadiers close in his rear, he called out to his people to fly, 'that he himself was old, and would die there.' He wounded Lieut. Col. Simcoe, and was killed by Wright, his orderly Hussar. The Indians fought most gallantly; they pulled more than one of the cavalry from their horses. French, an active youth, bugle-horn to the Hussars, struck at an Indian, but missed his blow, the man dragged him from his horse, and was searching for his knife to stab him, when, loosening French's hand, he luckily drew out a pocket-pistol and shot the Indian through the head, in which situation he was found. One man of the Legion cavalry was killed, and one of them, and two of the Hussars, wounded."<sup>a</sup>

The scene of this conflict lies on the land of the late Frederick Brown, now occupied by his widow. The struggle commenced in the second field west of Brown's house, and close by the present road leading to Devaux's. The opening in the Cortlandt woods still goes by the name of *Indian Field*. Here the dead were buried. The Indians, according to the British account, led down the ridge across the present aqueduct, to what is called *Indian Bridge*; which then, as now, crossed Tippet's brook. On gaining the western bank, they secreted themselves amid the rocks and bushes; here the cavalry pursued them; but being unable to scale the rocks, called upon the fugitives to surrender; promising them as a condition for so doing, life and protection. Upon this, three ventured to throw themselves upon the mercy of the British soldier, and were immediately drawn out by the bridge and cut to pieces. Notwithstanding the strictest search that could be made for the remainder, four managed to escape to the American lines beyond the Croton. One of the survi-

<sup>a</sup> See Simcoe's Military Journal, published by Bartlett & Welford, N. Y., to which work we refer our readers for an engraved plan of the above mentioned action.



vors by the name of Job, lived to a good old age ; gaining his livelihood by fishing on the banks of the Hudson ; but whenever he could be tempted to relate the horrors of that day, the big tears would start in his eyes and he would sob like a child. Nimham, the Indian chief, fell as related by the hand of Wright, Simcoe's orderly huzzar, in the swamp between Jesse Halstead's house and John and Frederick Devaux's, now the Man-kin property. There he was left a prey to the dogs and crows, to be devoured at their leisure. All traces of the bones are now gone. Eighteen Indians were buried in one pit in an Indian field ; it is still a current tradition, that the old Sachem haunts the scene of conflict.

“ Does fancy's mimic dread pourtray  
Amid the boughs a spectre gray,  
Or is it, the boding vision seen  
Where murders bloody work has been ? ” [ *Yamoyden*.

It is not a little singular, that a few months preceding this battle, the two British Generals Simcoe and Tarleton, had a narrow escape of their lives, from these very Indians. These officers it appears were making observations on the country, and patrolling with a few huzzars. “ The Stockbridge Indians, about sixty in number, excellent marksmen, had just joined General Washington's army. Lieut. Col. Simcoe was describing a private road to Lieut. Col. Tarleton ; Wright, his orderly dragoon, alighted and took down a fence of Devaux's farm-yard for them to pass through ; around this farm the Indians were lying in ambuscade. Wright had scarce mounted his horse, when these officers—for some trivial reason—altered their intentions ; and, spurring their horses, soon rode out of sight, and out of reach of the Indians.

In a few days after, they had certain information of the ambuscade, which they so fortunately had escaped : in all probability they owed their lives to the Indians' expectation of surrounding and taking them prisoners ”<sup>a</sup>

Bordering the road north-west of the Van Cortlandt's, is the old Hadley property, owned by the late Major Joseph Delafield. The following account of the family, has kindly been furnished by a member of it :—

In 1829 Major Delafield purchased a farm of 250 acres on the North River between Spuyten-Duyvel and the present village of Riverdale, to which he gave the name of Fieldston from a family seat in Great Britain. This name, until villages sprang up with local designations, was generally used : and when, in 1873, the locality separating from Yonkers sought in town meeting its separate name, Fieldston fell short of being selected instead of Kings Bridge, but by a few votes.

Through Fieldston easterly from the river ran the southern boundary, in many

<sup>a</sup> Simcoe's Mil. Journal, p. 80.



places still standing, of the old Phillipse manor. Against its walls, near the river, now in a forest but said to have been cultivated lands a hundred years ago, remain the foundations of Nanny Piper's cottage, perhaps the widow of an old retainer or wood guard, by whose name a never dying spring, famous for the purity of its waters, is still known. Other springs with which the wooded hills are wonderfully well supplied, yet point to old dwellings, especially one on the high ground above the Albany turnpike, near which are the foundations of a house, of which even Tradition can give no account; and another, hid in the woods, is known as Cork Tom.

On the south of the farm, an upland pasture, until lately covered with ancient apple trees, too old in this generation to bear fruit, was twenty years ago known as Johnson's meadow. Here Johnson, a spy, was hung during the revolution. Until increasing population and Riverdale avenue opened the woods and let in the light, Johnson's ghost haunted the spot, to the terror of young and old among the farmers of the soil. His was the only undoubted ghost of antiquity, certified to by many eye witnesses that favored with his presence the rocky ridge from Spuyten-Duyvel to Yonkers. In 1830 there were many traces of the revolution remaining; an old chariot covered with gilt, taken from some British officer, caltrops found on the broad river slope, thrown there to impede the charge of cavalry; old English muskets and a grind-stone, marked with the regal R, which restored to a frame has until recently been in use.

On the turnpike stands the old stone farm house, then one of the best buildings in the neighborhood, occupied in turn by officers of either party and claimed to have more than once given shelter to Washington.

In 1830 Major Delafield built himself a bachelor establishment (destroyed by fire in 1833) directly over the river and near by a lime kiln, erected on a new plan as described in volumes imported by him for the purpose from France. This kiln, the first of its kind in America, became the model of all those subsequently built throughout the country. The enterprise proved very profitable, so long as the coal dealers of New York gladly gave the coal dust in exchange for carting it away from their yards; as lime kilns on the same plan increased and other uses were found for coal dust the profits diminished and the work was abandoned in 1837.

In 1849 Major Delafield built a residence in a beautiful position overlooking the river, which he occupied in summer until his death. It is now enlarged and occupied by his eldest son. His second son built at Fieldston in 1870.

Major Joseph Delafield born 22d. August 1790, graduated from Yale college 1808, studied law with Hon. J. Ogden Hoffman, admitted to practice 1811, appointed lieutenant 1810 and captain 1812 in Hawkins famous battery of artillery, and in the following year major of the 46th U. S. infantry. At the close of the war he resigned his commission in the army and wishing active service accepted the appointment first of acting and later as full agent for settling the northern boundary of the United States under the 6th and 7th articles of the treaty of Ghent. Until 1828 his summers were occupied in command of the detachment on the boundary, there he commenced the formation of his afterwards famous collection of minerals. The long cold winters of the north preventing active operations he passed in New York, Boston, Philadelphia and Washington, always studious but not neglectful of the pleasures of society. He married 12th De-

ember, 1833. Julia, eldest daughter of Maturin Livingston of Staatsburg, N. Y., and from henceforth devoted himself to his books and scientific pursuits. For forty years was President of the Society of Natural History; was a member of a great number of scientific societies in this country and throughout Europe, was trustee in many institutions, vestryman in Trinity church, &c., &c. After a long and useful life he died 12 February 1875, in his 85th year at the same time with his brothers, Henry and Edward, all of whom were buried on the same day from Trinity church. The beautiful building could not contain one-fourth of those who assembled on the 16th of February to pay the last honors to the brothers Delafield. Major Delafield had issue four children, of whom two sons and one daughter survived him.

1. Lewis L., married Emily, daughter of Frederick Prime, of New Rochelle, N. Y., and has issue. 2 Maturin L., married Mary Coleman, eldest daughter of Eugene A. Livingston of Dutchess County, N. Y., and has issue. 3 Julia L. 4 Joseph died in childhood. The father John Delafield, born 16th March 1748, died 3 July 1824, was the head of the English family of that name. His descent may be found in Burke's Commoners, in his Dictionary of the Landed Gentry, and under the head of foreign titles in the Peerage and also in the German Gothaischer genealogisches Tashenbuch der Graflichen Hauser. John Delafield having expended most of his fortune returned to America, landing in New York 5 April, 1783. Settling in New York he entered into commerce, meeting with the greatest success. He married Ann, daughter and co-heiress of Joseph Hallett, and had nine (9) sons and four daughters. Of the daughters but one married; Susan M., married to Henry Parish but had no issue. Two sons died young. the eldest son. 1 John, born 22 January 1786, died 22 October 1853, banker; President Phenix Bank, President New York State Agricultural Society &c, married twice, 1st in England to a cousin Mary, only child of John Roberts of Whitechurch, Burks and left issue. 2nd to Harriet Wadsworth, daughter of Col. Benjamin Tallmadge of Litchfield, Conn., and left issue. 2d Joseph, born 22 August 1790, died 12 February, 1875, married Julia daughter of Maturin Livingston of Staatsburgh and left issue as above. 3d and 4th Henry and William, twins, born, 19 July 1792, merchants. William died unmarried, 20 November 1853. Henry married Mary daughter of Judge L. Monson of Delaware Co., N. Y., and dying February 15th 1875, left one daughter. 5 Edward, born 17 May, 1794, died 13 February 1875, M. D., President of College of Physicians and Surgeons and President of Roosevelt Hospital, &c., married twice; 1st to Elinor E. Langdon, daughter of Thomas Elwyn, of Portsmouth, N. H., by whom no issue survived him; 2d to Julia, daughter of Hon. Nicoll Floyd of Mastic, Long Island, by whom he left issue. 6 Richard, born September, 1798, died 5 November 1873, Brigadier General, Brevet Major General and Chief of Engineers U. S. army; married twice, 1st to Helen, daughter of Andrew Summers, of Philadelphia, Penn., by whom he had no issue; 2d to Harriet B., daughter of Gen. Elijah M. Covington, of Covington, Ky., by whom he left issue. 7 Rufus King, born 18 November 1802, died 6 February 1874, merchant and President of the Delafield & Bascher Cement Co., married Eliza, daughter of Wm. Bard, of High Park, N. Y., and left issue.

The shore of the Hudson in this region is studded with beautiful villas.

In the immediate vicinity of the latter is situated Font Hill, the seat of Mr. Edwin Forrest, now owned by the Sisters of Charity of St. Vincent de Paul. They have erected a very large young ladies academy. The old edifice which is of stone, after the designs of Mr. Thos C. Smith, presents a fine specimen of the English castellated style. The building has six towers, affording extended views of the Hudson River; the highest of these called the flag or stair tower, is seventy-one feet from the surface of the ground.

The gothic residence of the late Thomas W. Ludlow occupies a very pleasant spot on the bank of the river, a short distance south of the village, on a plateau with hills to the east, and the river in front to the west. From this place the noble Hudson appears in all its glory. The edifice is built of brick in the Elizabethian style. The exterior presents quite the beau ideal of an old English country residence. A pretty lodge in the rural gothic order adorned the entrance of the grounds, but has given way to a progress of the age; which by cutting streets through the old domain, long since separated the place into many streets. Mr. Thomas W. Ludlow is the youngest son of Thomas Ludlow, Esq., who was Marshal of the Court of Admiralty in 1780.<sup>a</sup> The family of Ludlow derives its surname from the ancient town so denominated, in the county of Salop, England. They afterwards removed to High Deverell in Wiltshire, about the middle of the 14th century; at which time lived William Ludlow, Esq., of High Deverell, from whom lineally descended Sir Henry Ludlow, Knt. of Maiden Bradley, in the county of Wilts, M. P. for that shire, father of Edmund Ludlow, the celebrated Republican General during the civil wars, who died in exile, at Vevay, in Switzerland, in 1693, where a monument is erected to his memory. The half brother of Sir Henry Ludlow, was Edmund Ludlow, Esq. ancestor of the American branch. Of this family, is Henry Ludlow, Esq.

Near the city of Yonkers, is situated the farm and residence of the late Elijah Rich. Directly opposite the house, a commanding eminence of rocks rises very abruptly. Up the side of this steep precipice, General Washington, pursued by the enemy's patrol, was compelled to fly to escape capture. From the high grounds in the rear, are fine views of the river. Here, in 1777, a memorable engagement took place between the two British frigates, the *Rose* and the *Phoenix*, which lay off at anchor, and the gun-boats of the patriots which sallied out of the harbor of Yonkers, having in tow a large tender filled with combustibles, intend-

<sup>a</sup> His staff of office is still preserved at Yonkers in the shape of a silver oar, inscribed "Court of Vice Admiralty, New York."



ing to run it alongside of the frigates. The crews, however, kept it off by means of spars; and a heavy fire of grape and cannister compelled the gun-boats and their brave crews to seek shelter in the mouth of the Saw Mill river.

The year previous, General Heath had been requested by the person in command of the fire ships, to be a spectator of the burning of these vessels.

On the 16th of August, 1776, General Heath, accompanied by General Clinton and several other officers, took a proper position on the banks of the Hudson.

"The night," says Heath, himself, "was pretty dark; we soon found that the galleys and fire vessels were silently moving up with the tide. After some time, and almost immediately after the sentinels on board the British ships, had passed the word 'all is well,' two of the fire vessels flashed into a blaze; the one close to the side of the Phoenix, the other grappling one of the tenders. To appearance, the flames were against the side of the Phoenix, and there was much confusion on board. A number of cannon were discharged into the fire vessel, in order to sink her. A number of seamen ascended and got out on the yard-arm, supposed to clear away some grapplings. The fire vessel was alongside, as was judged ten minutes—when the Phoenix either cut or slipped her cable, let fall her fore-topsail, wore round and stood up the river, being immediately veiled from the spectators, by the darkness of the night. The Rose and the other two tenders remained at their moorings."<sup>a</sup>

Cannon balls are still dug out of the banks in great numbers.

A little south, upon the east shore, lies the *Vischer's rock*, or *Fisher's Point*. The Groshon place was frequently visited during the war, by prowling bands of "Cow-boys;" who not only levied exactions of stock and money, but compelled its inmates to find other shelter out of doors, while they filled the rooms with straw and quartered themselves thereon for the night. A cow and horse belonging to the family, were concealed for some time in one of the bed-rooms; while the family silver was stowed away between the wainscoat.

Contiguous to the old village of Yonkers, and immediately south of it, is situated on a commanding eminence, the hotel of the late De Witt C. Kellinger, called the Mansion House.—

This place was called by its aboriginal possessors, *Nap-pe-cka-mak*, a name derived as before stated from its situation at the mouth of the Neperah; or in other words, it was the *Rapid water settlement*.<sup>b</sup>

The Dutch afterwards conferred upon it the name of the *Little Jonkers Plantation*. This word was sometimes pronounced Yonkers, which

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Mem. 54.

<sup>b</sup> The word at this date has become Nepperhan (1979).



gives us the present name of the village. During the occupancy of the Phillips's, it was called *Phillipsborough*, after the Manor.

The Dutch termed the Saw Mill, the Saeg kil (stream.) After the Patroon's settlement, it was named in compliment to him, the Jonkers or Yonkers kill and Colendoncks kill. "Several fine creeks enter into the North river, says Van der Donck, such as the Colendonck's kill or Saw kill."<sup>a</sup>

Yonkers is now a large and flourishing city. On April 12th, 1855, 1½ miles on the river front and ½ a mile in width was incorporated, and this act was amended in '57, '60, '68 and '71. The officers consisted of a President, Wm. Radford; Clerk, W. H. Post; and six Trustees: Lemuel W. Wells, Wm. C. Waring, Thos. A. Farrington, Reuben W. Van Pelt, Fulding S. Grant, Jacob Reed. By act of Legislature, June 1st, 1872 the whole township was erected into a city, by the name of the city of Yonkers and divided into four wards—a Mayor, City Clerk, and one Legislative Board, consisting of eight Aldermen, and called the Common Council. The first officers were, Mayor, Jas. C. Courter; clerk, Wm. H. Doty; President of Common Council, Ethan Flagg. For a time it was under the Metropolitan police; but by an act of the Legislature, passed in 1871, it was set off and formed a department of its own, consisting of four commissioners, appointed by the Mayor—one each year for four years term; one captain, two sergeants, two seniors, two roundsmen, and eighteen men. There are nine signal telegraph stations with head quarters, besides telephones. The first commissioners were Chas. R. Dusenberry, R. W. Cobb, Joseph Reese, Dennis McGrath.

An act to provide water for the city of Yonkers was passed Feb. 28th, 73, and amended in '74 by the Legislature, and for the building of a reservoir. The first commissioners were David Hawley, Peter P. Getty, R. Eickemeyer, P. White, and S. Barker. Hawley and Barker resigned, and J. H. Knox and Chas. H. Hamilton were appointed to fill the vacancy. Wm. W. Wilson was appointed engineer.

The fire department consists of a chief engineer, two assistants, 259 members, of Engine, Hose, and Hook and Ladder companies. There are three principal hotels—the Getty House, Yonkers Hotel, and Peabody House.

The city is lighted by gas. There are several very large factories. It has some handsome buildings, and seventeen churches—three Protestant Episcopal, three Presbyterian, one Reformed, two Baptist, two Methodist, two Roman Catholic, one Unitarian, one German, one African,

<sup>a</sup> Vander Donck's N. N., N. Y. Hist. Soc. p. Ser. I. 142.

Zion church, and one Messiah, Colored Baptist, and five Union Free schools.

On the organization of the city, a City Court was established; jurisdiction limited to \$1000. Appeals taken to County or Supreme Court, according to amounts involved.

The old Philips Manor house was purchased by the city on the 1st of May, 1868, for public purposes. As few alterations were made in it as possible. It became necessary to remove the beams and garret floor of the north end of the building, in order to construct a Common Council chamber, which has been done with great skill and taste. On the first floor, which was the kitchen and drawing room, is now held the City Court. The principal chamber is used as the office of the Board of Water Commissioners. The large chamber, in the western end of the building, is used for the Engineers of the Water Department. The old parlor is now used as the Mayor's and Clerk's Office. The room used as a sitting room or drawing room on the first floor of the old house is used as an office for the City Treasurer, Receiver of Taxes, and Board of Assessors. Yonkers has two Savings Banks, two Banks of Deposits, and St. John's Riverside Hospital.

#### THE SETTING OFF OF KINGS BRIDGE.

On Sept. 16th 1872, the Board of Supervisors of Westchester County passed an act by which they set off and erected into a separate township, to be called Kings Bridge, about  $\frac{1}{3}$  of the territory situated south of the old Post farm, and a line extending easterly therefrom to the Bronx River. This act was confirmed by the Legislature, on Jan. 1st 1874. Soon after, the towns of Kings Bridge, West Farms, and Morrisania were annexed to the city of New York. Formerly a beautiful road led to the landing, which was tastefully ornamented with the fine horse chestnut (*Æsculus*.) This avenue afforded a beautiful sight in the month of May, when those trees put forth their gay clusters of white flowers. In 1879 but one of these trees remained of all that in old times lined the western side of the Post Road from its crossing of the Saw Mill to the road, to the old landing, and thence toward the landing itself. This survivor is now in the centre of Washington avenue, and is protected from injury by oaken strips and bands of iron. But the beauty of the *coup d'œil* is the scene from the landing. In front flows the Hudson, like a broad silvery mirror; while opposite, tower in majesty the basaltic rocks of the Palisades.<sup>a</sup> Northward, the view is terminated by the highlands of Tappaan

<sup>a</sup> The Indian name for the palisades is supposed to have been that of the present town of Wehawken; the term *awk*, to indicate a structure of rocks resembling trees. — *Schoolcraft*.

and the distant hills of Westchester, which bound the eastern shore of the Tappaan Zee. The prominent cliff at the south-west corner of Rockland Co., presents a noble object viewed from this spot. It boldly projects at the entrance of the Zee, and in a bright summer's day may be seen casting its shade upon the waters.<sup>a</sup> A very deep interest attaches itself to this spot, when we recollect, that on the afternoon of the 13th Sep., 1609, Hendrick Hudson "taking advantage of a light wind and and flood tide, anchored the "Halve Maen"<sup>b</sup> near where the village pier projects into the Hudson. The old Dutch Patroon of this town, Adriaen van der Donck, in his *N. Neth. Vertoogh*, (a rare old book printed just 41 years after the discovery of Hudson) tells us what our native tribes thought when they for the first time saw this wondrous vessel."

"They did not know there were any more people in the world than of the same with themselves: much less, people who differ so widely from each other as our nation and theirs; so that, when they first discovered our ship, they did not know what to make of it. They were in great fear, and knew not whether it might not be an apparition; but whether from Heaven or Hell, they could not divine. Others supposed it to be a great sea monster, and that those in it had more the appearance of devils than human beings; at least a strange report circulated through the country, and caused a great consternation among them."<sup>c</sup>

What must have been the wonder then, of the Nap-pe-cka-mak settlement, when they beheld the apparition anchor off the mouth of the Saw mill—especially when we conjure up old Master Hendrick Hudson standing upon the poop of his round built yacht, and Master Robert Juet and brother officers in their tall shovelled brim hats and doublets. This arrival must have created quite a talk among the Mohegan squaws of Nappeckamack. In connection with the Palisades and the river, the romantic legend of the "storm ship" must not be forgotten. To the great terror of the early colonists, she would appear gliding by the Palisades bearing her Dutch colors, the evening sun gilding her canvass as she came riding over the billows on her voyage down the river like Moore's spectre ship, bound to "Dead Man's Isle."

Occasionally, the old village and landing appear to have been enlivened by the march and embarkation of troops. The following extract occurs in the journal of Lewis Morris, Judge of the Admiralty:—

"June 4th, 1746, returned home, dined at Westchester, when the detachments from Queens county and Westchester marched to Colonel

<sup>a</sup> Mr. H. Schoolcraft suggests, that the term "Tabansee," which means in the Algonquin, a short crouching person, may originally have been applied to this noble cliff. It is 549 feet above the level of the Hudson. *Proceed. of N. Y. Hist. Soc.*, 1844.

<sup>b</sup> Moulton's *Hist. of N. Y.*, p. 238.

<sup>c</sup> Moulton *Hist.*, p. 256.

Philipse's, in order to embark for Albany, on board of Captain Conradts Derrike's sloop, who lay there for that purpose."<sup>a</sup>

This was on occasion of the war with France, when the Colony of New York was making formidable preparations for the reduction of Canada.

Directly opposite the dock on the Jersey shore, is situated Closter landing, from which a road gradually ascends to the summit of the Palisades—a height of 517 feet above the river. Here Lord Grey, after coming up the Hudson in barges, disembarked his troops for the purpose of cutting off Baylor's light dragoons then stationed at Tappaan.<sup>b</sup>

During the winter of 1780, the river was frozen so hard, that sleighs were driven from this place to the city on the ice. At a short distance above the landing, facing the post road, is the old *Manor hall*. The present front was erected cir. 1745; the rear, at a much earlier period—which is reported to have been built soon after the Philipse family purchased here, A. D. 1682—although the favorite residence, at first, appears to have been Castle Philipse, in Sleepy Hollow.

The front of the Manor hall presented quite a handsome elevation for a country residence of the olden time.

It is built in the Dutch style, so fashionable at that period; its roof is surmounted by a heavy line of balustrade forming a terrace, that commands extensive views of the river.

The principal entrance is through the eastern porch, ornamented with light columns and corresponding pilasters. There are likewise two porches on the eastern front, looking upon the lawn. The interior is fitted up with wainscoted walls, ceilings highly ornamented in arabesque work, and carved marble mantels. The view from the south, commands the old stone mill, village spires, and the wooded banks of Philip's point. On the west, beautiful prospects of the dock and river; on the east, a verdant lawn skirted by garden terraces, horse-chestnuts and the main road, above which rises Locust hill.

The hall is capacious, and its wide staircase with antique balustrades and banister, has a fine effect. The bedrooms are large panelled

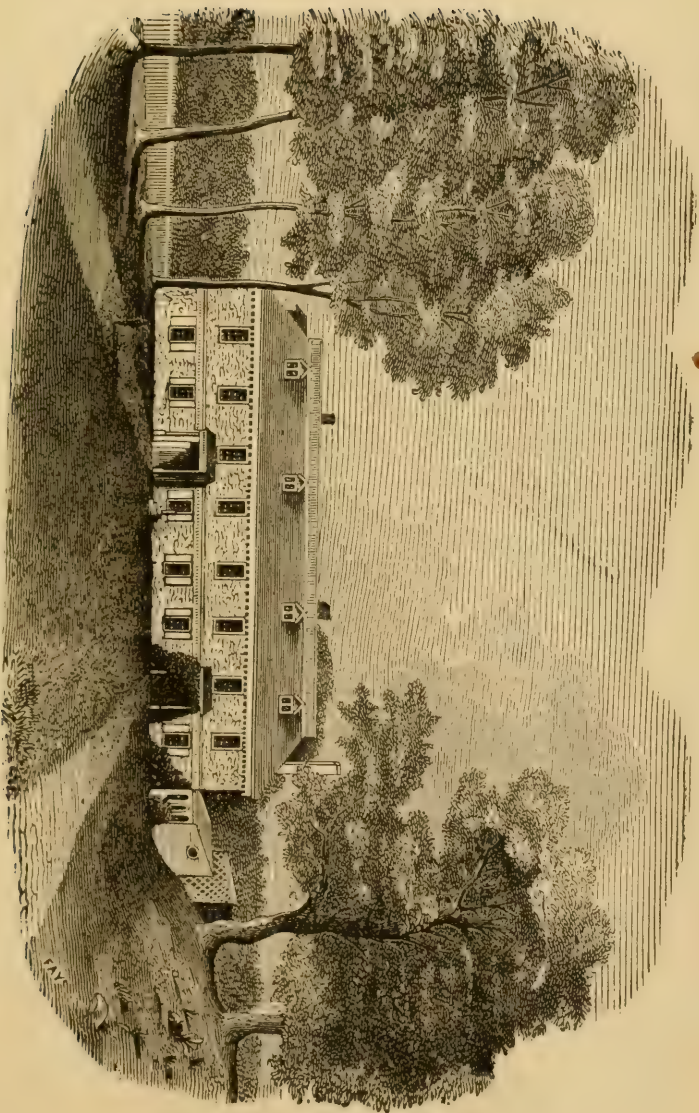
---

<sup>a</sup> Journal of Lewis Morris.

<sup>b</sup> October, 1778, (says Thacher) the regiment of cavalry commanded by Col. Baylor being posted on our lines near Tappan, their situation was betrayed by some Tories, and a party of the enemy surprised them while in a barn, in the night, and massacred a part of them under circumstances of savage cruelty. The commander of the party who disgraced themselves by this foul deed, was the English General Grey. Col. Baylor's detachment consisted of one hundred and four horsemen. The attack was so sudden, that they were entirely defenceless, and the enemy immediately commenced the horrid work of slaughter; their entreaties and cries for mercy were totally disregarded by their savage foes. It has been well ascertained that the British soldiers were ordered by their inhuman officers to bayonet every man they could find, and give no quarter.—*Thacher's Military Journal*, 147.



MANOR HALL, YONKERS.





apartments, with old fashioned fire-places faced in Dutch tile, representing thereon, Scripture stories with appropriate references.

The walks around are laid out in the shape of noble terraces, some of which lead between tall avenues of box. The garden is extensive, and enriched by valuable fruit trees and shrubs. The splendid orange and myrtle trees that once adorned the green house, were formerly in the possession of Mrs. Macomb of Kings Bridge. The green sward, sloping gradually to the Hudson, is here and there dotted with fine specimens of ornamental trees; this, during the occupancy of the Philipse's, was emparked and stocked with deer. Among other exotics (which seem to thrive here,) we noticed on the edge of the river the English yew; judging from its appearance and the exposed situation which it occupies, we should say it was quite hardy enough to endure our coldest winters. We should be glad to see this beautiful tree, whose dark verdure never fails, naturalized in the gardens of Westchester.<sup>a</sup>

In this mansion the lords of the manor, on the great rent days, feasted their tenantry. Some idea may be formed of this establishment which maintained thirty white and twenty colored servants. There appears to have been two rent days yearly for the manor of Phillipsborough. One in January, held at Yonkers, for the convenience of the lower tenantry; another a few days subsequent, at Sleepy Hollow, for the upper.

In lieu of rent, was frequently received a couple of fat hens, a day's work, or a trifling sum amounting to three or four pounds. The farmers bordering the river having greater privileges, paid higher rents. The Courts Leet and Baron were held yearly at the house of John Cockles, the site of the present Nap-pec-ka mak tavern. This court took cognizance of all criminal matters, and sometimes inflicted punishments that were even capital. In the administration of justice the baronial lord presided, either in his own person or that of his steward.

In the Manor Hall, July 3d, 1730, was born Mary Philipse, daughter of the Hon. Frederick Philipse, speaker of the House of Assembly and lord of the manor of Phillipsborough. From this lady's character Fenimore Cooper formed the heroine of the *Spy*, under the name of "France." It was in the drawing room of this old hall, the ceiling of which is highly ornamented with arabesque work, that the charming Mary Philipse was married to Colonel Roger Morris on Sunday afternoon of January 15th, 1758.

That wedding, we are assured, was a pleasant romance of the Hudson. The leading families of the province, and the British forces

<sup>a</sup> This is the description of the Manor house in 1848.

in America, had representatives there. The sleighing was good and the weather was mild, and early as two o'clock in the afternoon the guests began to arrive. The Rev. Henry Barclay, rector of Trinity church in New York, with his assistant, Mr. Auctmuty, was there at three o'clock. Half an hour later the marriage was solemnized under a crimson canopy, emblazoned with the golden crest of the family (a crowned demi-lion, rampant, rising from a coronet) in the presence of a brilliant assembly. The bridesmaids were Miss Barclay, Miss Van Cortlandt, and Miss DeLancey. The groomsmen were Mr. Heathcote, Captain Kennedy, and Mr. Watts, acting Governor DeLancey (son-in law to Colonel Heathcote, lord of the manor of Scarsdale) assisted at the ceremony. The brother of the bride, the last lord of the manor—decorated with the gold chain and jeweled badge of office of his family as keeper of the deer forests of Bohemia—gave away the bride, for her father had been dead seven years. Her dowry in her own right was a large domain, plate, jewelry and money.

A grand feast followed the nuptial ceremony, and late on that brilliant moon-lit night most of the guests departed. While they were feasting, a tall Indian, closely wrapped in a scarlet blanket, appeared at the door of the banquet hall, and with measured words said, "your possessions shall pass from you when the eagle shall despoil the lion of his mane." He as suddenly disappeared. This message was as mysterious as the writing on the wall at Belshazzar's feast. The bride pondered the ominous words for years; and when, because they were royalists in action, the magnificent domain of the Philipses was confiscated by the Americans at the close of the Revolution, the significance of the prophecy and its fulfillment were manifested. Such is the story of the wedding as told by Angevine (son of the favorite colored valet of Philipse), who was sexton of St. John's church at Yonkers for forty-five years."<sup>a</sup>

Captain, afterwards Colonel, Roger Morris greatly distinguished himself during the first American war, and was wounded in the battle of Monongahela river; on which occasion General Braddock was killed with most of his officers. In that engagement George Washington, Robert Orme, and Roger Morris, Esqrs., were aids to Braddock.<sup>b</sup> At the commencement of the Revolution he was a member of the Council of the Colony, and continued in office until the peace, although the Whigs organized a government as early as 1777, under a written and well framed constitution. Col. Roger Morris died in England in 1794,

<sup>a</sup> Harper's *New Monthly Mag.* "Romance of the Hudson," No. cccxi, April, 1876, vol. llll. p. 641.

<sup>b</sup> Burke's *Hist. of the Landed Gentry of England*, vol. iv. 490.



aged sixty-seven; and Mary his widow died in 1825, at the age of ninety-six. Their remains were deposited near Saviour-gate church, at York. Their son was Captain Henry Gage Morris, R. N.

Their children were as follows: Henry Gage, above mentioned, a captain in the royal navy; Amherst, who was named for his god-father Lord Arnherst, who was also a captain in the royal navy and who died unmarried in 1802; Johanna, who married Captain Thomas Cowper Hincks of the British dragoons, and who died in 1819; and another daughter, whose name and fate have not been ascertained.

To the memory of Captain Arnherst Morris there is a monument at Baidon, England. Of Captain Henry Gage Morris, honorable mention is made in the British Naval History. Of Mrs. Morris' early life there is a most interesting incident. That Washington had some desire to become her suitor, is a fact which rests on the highest authority.

In Mr. Sparks' life of the illustrious commander-in-chief, there is the following passage:—

“While in New York in 1756, Washington was lodged and kindly entertained at the house of Mr. Beverley Robinson, between whom and himself an intimacy of friendship subsisted, which indeed continued without change, till severed by their opposite fortunes twenty years afterwards in the Revolution. It happened that Miss Mary Philips, a sister of Mrs. Robinson, and a young lady of rare accomplishments, was an inmate in the family. The charms of this lady made a deep impression upon the heart of the Virginia Colonel. He went to Boston, returned, and was again welcomed to the hospitality of Mr. Robinson. He lingered there till duty called him away; but he was careful to entrust his secret to a confidential friend, whose letters kept him informed of every important event. In a few months intelligence came that a rival was in the field; and that the consequences could not be answered for, if he delayed to renew his visits to New York. Whether time, the bustle of the camp, or the scenes of war had moderated his admiration, or whether he despaired of success, is not known. He never saw that lady again till she was married to that same rival, Captain Morris, his former associate in arms, and one of Braddock's aids-de-camp.

“In an English work, shown to me by Mrs. Morris' relatives in New Brunswick, it is stated that she refused Washington. But this is very doubtful; and the passage just cited, which is founded upon Washington's papers, seems to utterly disprove the assertion. Imagination dwells upon the outlawry of a lady whose beauty and virtues won the admiration of the great Whig Chief. Humanity is shocked that a woman was attainted of treason, for no crime but that of clinging to the fortunes of her husband whom she had vowed on the altar of religion never to desert.”<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> “The American Loyalists,” by Lorenzo Sabine. See also *Historical view of the commission for inquiry into the losses and claims of the American Loyalists*, by John Eardley Wilmot, Esq., London, 1815.

"A part of the Phillips estate, (observes Mr. Sabine,) was in possession of Colonel Morris in right of his wife, and was confiscated; and that the whole interest should pass under the act, Mrs. Morris was included in the attainder. It is believed that this lady, her sisters, Mrs. Robinson, and Mrs. Inglis, were the only females who were attainted of treason during the struggle. But it appeared in due time, that the confiscation act did not affect the rights of Mrs. Morris's children. The fee simple of the estate was valued by the British government at £20,000; and by the rules of determining the worth of life interests, the life interest of Col. Morris and his wife were fixed at £12,605, for which sum they received a certificate of compensation.

"In 1787, the Attorney General of England examined the case, and gave the opinion, that the reversionary interest (or property of the children at the decease of the parents,) was not included in their attainder, and was recoverable under the principles of law and of right. In the year 1809, their son, Captain Henry Gage Morris of the royal navy, in behalf of himself and his two sisters, accordingly sold this reversionary interest to John Jacob Astor, Esquire, of New York, for the sum of £20,000 sterling. In 1828 Mr. Astor made a compromise with the State of New York, by which he received for the rights thus purchased by him (with or without associates,) the large amount of five hundred thousand dollars. The terms of the arrangement required, that within a specified time he should execute a deed of conveyance in fee simple, with a warrantee against the claims of the Morris—husband and wife—their heirs, and all persons claiming under them; and that he should also obtain the judgment of the Supreme Court of the United States affirming the validity and perfectibility of his title. These conditions were complied with, and the respectable body of farmers who held the confiscated lands under titles derived from the sales of the commissioners of forfeitures, were thus quieted in their possessions. It is understood that the British government made them a second compensation for their losses, and that the whole sum received was £17,000 sterling.

There is a beautiful portrait of Mary Philipse still preserved at Philipstown in the Highlands, which represents the youthful heroine in all her native loveliness. It is in the possession of her namesake and grand niece, Mary Philipse, widow of the late Samuel Gouverneur, Esq. In Rivington's *Royal Gazette* of May 18, 1773, occurs the following notice of the commencement at King's College, (now Columbia College) New York.

"Tuesday being the day appointed for the annual commencement of the graduates of King's College in this city, a very numerous and splen-

did audience assembled at Trinity church. After prayers and a Latin speech by the President, an elegant salutatory oration was delivered with great propriety of pronounciation and gracefulness of action by Mr. Frederick Philipse. The audience was then entertained with a discourse on the happiness of connubial life, by Mr. Beverly Robinson, whose just observations on the subject did him much honor. Degrees were after this, conferred on the following gentlemen: Beverly Robinson, Frederick Philipse, Nathaniel Philipse, B. A. Philip Pell, and the Rev. Harry Munro, M. A."

Upon the arrival of the British forces in New York, Colonel Frederick was arrested on some suspicions in the Manor Hall, at Yonkers, and removed to Hartford, Connecticut, by the American authorities. On this occasion, his faithful colored valet, George Angevine, attended him until his return to Philipsborough, which took place shortly afterwards. Here Colonel Philipse was residing when the battle of White Plains was fought.

After the departure of the family from Yonkers, in 1777, John Williams, steward of the manor, took charge of the property till the confiscation, A. D. 1779. As before mentioned, at the close of the war, the whole manor became forfeited.

February 1, 1781, the following individuals were appointed Commissioners for the southern district of New York: Stephen Ward, Mr. Lawrence and Isaac Stoutenbergh. September 1785, those gentlemen conveyed the homestead and mills situated in Yonkers, amounting to 320 acres, to Cornelius P. Lowe; bounded west by Hudson river, on the north by R. Johnson, &c., &c. May 12, 1786, Cornelius P. Lowe conveyed part to William Constable. April 29, 1796, Wm. Constable and wife sold to Jacob Stout. April 1, 1803, Jacob Stout conveyed it to Joseph Howland. It was finally bought under a decree of Chancery by Lemuel Wells, Esq., at whose death in 1842, the Mansion House with 300 acres, passed to his heirs at law, he dying intestate. The present proprietor of the Manor House is his nephew, Lemuel W. Wells, Esq. The Wells family are originally from Cambridgeshire, England, and descend from Richard Wells, who held the manor of Wells at a very early period. In the possession of the present Lemuel W. Wells, Esq., is a coat of arms beautifully embroidered in silk needlework. These arms were granted to the Cambridge Wells's, A. D. 1614.<sup>a</sup> The present family are more immediately descended from Samuel Wells, of Wethersfield, Conn., who removed A. D. 1639, with his three sons—John, Thomas and Samuel—to Milford, Conn.<sup>b</sup> This family gave a Governor to that State.

<sup>a</sup> Berry's Encyclopedia of Arms.

<sup>b</sup> Trumbull's Conn., 105

The last lord of the manor, Colonel Frederick Philipse, returned to Chester, England, where he died, A. D. 1785, after a short illness, and has a monument erected there to his memory. His faithful colored valet, Angevine, who had accompanied his master in all his changes of fortune, survived him but one year. They are both interred in the same church yard.

Charley Philips, son of Angevine, still lives on the banks of the Hudson, and was—under a succession of dynasties—45 years sexton of St. John's church, Yonkers.

There is still living in this village and near the landing, Capt. Joel Cook, a hero of 1776, who belonged to Colonel Meigs' regiment.<sup>a</sup> The day André was captured, Gen. Washington ordered the brigade then stationed at Peekskill to march to West Point.

This gentleman during the war escorted 1500 men from Teller's Point to the neighborhood of Kings Bridge.

In compliment to the services of the old veteran, the citizens of Yonkers presented him with a gold medal bearing the following inscription:—

Presented to  
CAPT. JOEL COOK,  
by the citizens of Yonkers,  
in honor of his patriotic services in defence of  
LIBERTY,  
July 4th, 1845,  
at the battles of  
Lexington, Danbury, White Plains, Trenton and Stony Point,  
Springfield and Tippacanoe.

The inhabitants of this town appear to have taken an active part during the struggle for Independence.

On the 11th April, 1775, Colonel Frederick Philipse appeared at the head of a large body of his tenantry, when the deputies from the several towns of Westchester met at White Plains, for the purpose of electing delegates to represent this colony in the general Congress to be held in Philadelphia.<sup>b</sup>

At a meeting of the Committee for this County held at White Plains, on Thursday and Friday, the 17th and 18th days of August, inst., the committee divided the County into districts or beats, agreeable to the directions of the Provincial Congress, for forming militia and minute companies.

Yonkers formed one of the districts of the southern battalion. The

<sup>a</sup> This was 1848.

<sup>b</sup> See page 350.



officers chosen were John Cock, Captain; William Betts, first lieutenant; John Warner, second lieutenant; and Jacob Post, ensign.<sup>a</sup>

The following petition from the inhabitants of Lower Yonkers, occurs in 1775:—

*Lower Yonkers, Sept. 15, 1775.*

To the Hon. the Provincial Congress for the Province of New York, convened in their recess, to the Hon. Committee of safety. The humble petition of the inhabitants of the precincts of Lower Yonkers, in the county of Westchester, humbly sheweth, that your Hon. House had made a resolve, and published the same, recommending to the inhabitants of every town, manor, precinct and district within the province aforesaid, to meet, nominate and appoint a captain and other officers, to form themselves as companies of militia; and, whereas the inhabitants of this precinct did meet agreeable to your said resolve, on the 24th day of August last, under the inspection of the committee of that district, and by a very great majority, as by the list will appear, did nominate and appoint Mr. John Cock of the said precinct, for his known skill and ability in military discipline, and for other good causes, captain of the company for the district aforesaid; and, whereas, we are informed that a complaint hath been made to the committee by a few of the inhabitants against the said Mr. John Cock, out of spite and malice, and as we conceive what has been alleged against him was before signing the association, we are well assured that since his signing the association, no person can accuse him of breaking the same by any ways or means whatsoever; therefore, we the petitioners and subscribers, do humbly beg the indulgence of this Hon. House to grant Mr. John Cock the commission of captain for the company aforesaid; as we are convinced he was chosen agreeable to your said resolve, and your petitioners as in duty bound shall ever pray.

Anthony Archer,  
Basil ———  
Thos. Oakley,  
Jonathan Fowler,  
Abraham Hick,  
Matthias Archer,  
Ezekiel Brown,  
Araham Astor,  
Robert Farrington,  
John Odell,  
Abraham Odell,  
Abraham Post,  
Dennis Post,  
William Post,  
Robert Brown,  
Daniel Dean,  
Stephen Bastine,  
Henry Norris,  
John Gresinall,

John Devoe,  
Jacob Post,  
Israel Post,  
Lewis Post,  
John Warner,  
Elnathan Taylor,  
Jacob Taylor,  
James Crawford,  
Elnathan Taylor,  
David Oakley, jr.,  
Joseph Oakley, jr.,  
George Crawford,  
Moses Oakley,  
Francis Smith,  
Jordan Norris,  
Frederick Vermilyea,  
John Cartright,  
Edward Cartright,  
Henry Taylor,  
Fred. Brown.

Charles Tyler,  
Martin Post,  
James Munro,  
Anthony Allaire,  
Edward Ryer,  
Benj. Farrington,  
Will. Rose.  
Henry Presher,  
Thomas Farrington,  
Isaac Post,  
James Rich,  
Gilbert Brown,  
Thomas Tippet,  
Samuel Lawrence,  
Thomas Merrit,  
Samuel Williams,  
Israel Underhill,  
Henry Brown,  
Benjamin Archer,

<sup>a</sup> American Archives, p. 691.

The commanding eminence rising above the village directly east of the Philipse Mansion, is called Locust Hill. Here the American army were encamped during a part of the war, while the enemy lay in the lower grounds.

October 12th, 1776, the American army marched from Kings Bridge, along the heights above Yonkers towards Dobb's Ferry.

St. John's church, Yonkers, together with its gothic parsonage, stands pleasantly situated on the south bank of the Saw mill. This church is one of the handsomest in the county, having been recently repaired and



St. John's Rectory.

beautified at a heavy cost. It owes its early foundation to the Philipses, who, as lords of the Manor at that time enjoyed the advowson or right of patronage to all and every church erected therein. Its first founder and patron was the Hon. Frederick Philipse, for some years speaker of the house of the Assembly in the province of New York, 1721-8.

There is every reason to believe that this distinguished individual took some steps towards the erection of the church previous to his death, which happened in 1751: (he died of consumption at the age of 53.) In his will, which is dated the 6th of June, of the same year, he directs,

“That out of the rents that were, or should thereafter be due him, from the manor of Phillipsborough, the sum of £400 be by his executrix laid out in erecting a building or finishing a church of England as

by law established, on the farm near and to the northward of the house then in the tenure of William Jones, sen., unless he should build the said church in his lifetime; and he devised all the said farm with all the buildings thereon, unto all his children, and their heirs, in trust, for the use of such ministers of the Church of England as by law established, as should be from time to time admitted or instituted in the said church; and so for ever to remain for a glebe to the said church."<sup>a</sup>

That the building was commenced in 1752, there is no doubt; for among the family papers, occurs an account of the expenses on the church at Philipsborough to the estate of Frederick Phillipse, debtor, commencing Nov. 1752, closing December, 1753; whole amount, £623 6s. 9d. This sum shows that his executrix had exceeded the original bequest in the will, £223. The curious reader will not be displeased with one or two more of these accounts, showing the expenses attendant on building a church at that early period:—

BENJAMIN FOWLER'S ACCOUNT IN FULL FOR YE CHURCH.

May 11th, 1753, dito 6½ days works at geting timber  
for the dors and the winder frams for the church,  
at 5 shillings per day, - - - - - £1 12 6.

September the 20th, to working and going to ask the  
peple to come to work at the church, 8 days,  
&c., &c. - - - - -

John Underhill's receipt for supplying the workmen  
at the church with beef, commencing Aug. 31st.

Madame Philipse, dito, 69 pound of beef, at 2s 3d per  
pound, - - - - - £15 10 3.

Received of BEVERLY ROBINSON, the above amount in full,

JOHN UNDERHILL.

Nothing remains of the original structure, except the walls and tower, the roof and wood-work having been destroyed by an accidental fire, May, 1791. When the ruins of the church came to be examined after this melancholy accident, the skeleton of a full sized man was discovered behind the remains of the pulpit. In 1792, it was again repaired; and on the 21st of August of that year, consecrated to the service of Almighty God, under the name and title of St. John's church, Phillipsborough, by the Right Rev. Samuel Provoost, first Bishop of the State of New York. The edifice consisted of a square tower surmounted with a wooden cupola and spire, body and vestry-room in the rear.

The principal entrance was by a circular-headed door on the south

<sup>a</sup> Surrogate's office, N. Y. No. xviii. 3.

side. There were two monumental tablets in the church; the first placed against the south wall, is inscribed:

To perpetuate the memory of the

REV. ELIAS COOPER,

27 years Rector of this Church  
who departed this life, January 16, 1816,  
aged 58 years and 11 days.

He laboured industriously to promote the  
happiness of mankind  
by advancing the influence of the Christian religion.  
Pious without superstition, and zealous  
without bigotry;



St. John's Church, Yonkers, in 1752.

a friend to the poor and an ornament to the Church,  
exemplary in the discharge of every relation  
and professional duty,  
respected and honored through life by those  
who knew his virtues,  
and in his death universally lamented.  
This humble monument (not of his praise)  
is erected by his faithful flock,  
who knew him, loved him, and lament their loss,  
and are desirous of recording in  
this inscription,  
their esteem, affection and regret.



The second, on the chancel wall, is erected

TO THE MEMORY OF THE

REV. ALEXANDER H. CROSBY, A.M.,

10 years Rector of this Church,  
 who died at the Island of St. Croix,  
 January 4, 1839, aged 35 years.  
 In the General Theological Seminary,  
 the piety, virtues and talents,  
 were nurtured, which fitted him for the  
 CHRISTIAN MINISTRY,  
 sincerity of character, kindness of heart,  
 and purity of life, united with steady zeal,  
 current principles, patient labor and true  
 devotedness to God, edified the Church,  
 won for him the hearts of his flock,  
 and were honored by his Divine master,  
 with abundant fruits.

In all things he was an example and a  
 pattern for the people to follow; and with  
 this testimony he has entered into his rest.

A BELOVED BROTHER,  
 and faithful minister in the Lord.

The flock  
 for whose sakes he gladly spent himself,  
 have erected this tablet to attest their sense  
 of his excellence,  
 and their grief for his loss.

The bell<sup>a</sup> was presented to the church by the late Joseph Howland, Esq., and contains the following inscription:

"B. HANKS,  
 MANSFIELD, CONN., 1818."

It is much to be regretted, that the old communion service of this church was carried off during the war of the Revolution, for safe keeping, to the city of New York. Some years after the close of the war, the altar cloth was discovered in an old dusty box, where it had lain through the whole period of the Revolution: this is now in use at St. John's chapel, Tuckahoe. The silver now used at the administration of the holy sacrament, consists of one large silver flagon, two silver chalices, a

<sup>a</sup> Bells were used by the ancient Romans to signify the time of bathing, and naturally applied by the early Christians to denote the hours of devotion.

silver bason or font ; the latter presented by a member of the Van Cortlandt family ; and a silver plate bearing the following inscription :

“ Presented  
To the Episcopal Church  
Of the town of Yonkers,  
1795.”

During the troubles of the Revolution, an American soldier, killed in this neighborhood, is known to have been interred beneath the floor of this church, but there is no tradition of the cause of so unusual a place of sepulture being chosen.

“ Here the warrior rests in peace,  
And holy church his tomb doth grace.”

The church-yard has been long since abandoned on account of its rocky situation. The one now used is located on the old parsonage property, and formed once a portion of the glebe. It is beautifully situated on a rising knoll in the valley of the Saw Mill. The first interment on record occurs 1783, Richard Archer. Among other memorials in this yard are those of

LEMUEL WELLS, ESQ.,  
born in the city of Hartford,  
Mar. Eliza H.  
died Feb. 11, 1842,  
aged 82.

MISS SUSANNAH HOWLAND,  
born in Boston, 1753,  
died in Greenburgh, 1823,  
aged 73 years.

The first mention of the parish of Yonkers occurs in an act passed during the first session of the third Assembly, 5th of King William and Queen Mary, September, 1693, entitled an act for settling a ministry and raising a maintenance for them in the city of New York, counties of Richmond, Westchester and Queens ; “ Wherein it was enacted by General Assembly, and by the authority of the same, that in each county there shall be called and inducted two clergymen for the county of Westchester—one to have the cure of Westchester, Eastchester, Yonkers and the manor of Pelham ; the other to have the cure of Rye, Mamaroneck and Bedford ; and allowed £100 each, to each, £50 to be paid in country produce. In raising the respective maintenances for the ministers, the respective justices of every city and county aforesaid, or any two of them are required to issue out warrants to the constables to summon the freeholders of every city, town and precinct, for the

choosing two vestrymen and two wardens.<sup>a</sup> Confirmed the 11th of May, 1697. This act was further explained 3rd Queen Anne."<sup>b</sup>

A. D. 1698, Lord Cornbury, Governor of the Province, issued an order to the magistrates of the several towns in Westchester County to build churches; by virtue of this, several towns were enabled to build public houses for the worship of Almighty God. St. Peter's church, Westchester, was thus built and became the parish church inclusive of the precincts of Eastchester, Manor of Pelham and *Yonkers*.

The quota contributed by the precinct of Yonkers towards the support of the Rector and poor of the parish in 1702, was £7.6, in 1709, £8.

The first vestryman elected by the freeholders of this precinct was Mr. John Archer; seven years later John Archer and Noah Barton, were vestrymen.

A. D. 1702, King William III. by Royal Charter, incorporated the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts. The principal object of this society was to send clergymen to the colonies; "and the society to earnestly request and beseech all persons concerned that they recommend no man out of favor or affection or any other worldly consideration; but with a sincere regard to the honor of Almighty God and our blessed Saviour, as they tender the interest of the Christian religion and the good of men's souls."<sup>c</sup>

The first Rector of the parish of Westchester and precinct of Yonkers was the Rev. John Bartow, who received his license from the Bishop of London in 1702. The same year upon his arrival here, he was inducted by the commission of his Excellency Governor Cornbury.

In 1703 Rev. John Bartow commenced his services within this precinct. September 5, 1708, he writes to the society that he occasionally preached at Yonkers, where the population was then 250 souls.<sup>d</sup>

In 1713, the Propagation Society founded a charity school for the education of children in this town. The same year £5 per annum is granted to a schoolmaster at Yonkers, where there is a large congregation of Dutch and English, for instructing the younger sort of both nations in the catechism and liturgy, provided he can produce a certificate of his teaching thirty children. In that summer A. D. 1719, Mr. Jones was allowed fifty shillings for teaching children to read at Mile Square.

<sup>a</sup> Acts of Assembly passed in the province of N. Y. from 1691 to 1725, p. 23.

<sup>b</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>c</sup> From a collection of papers printed by order of the Society, 9.

<sup>d</sup> From the Westchester Records we take the following extract, "John Archer, constable of the Yonkers appears, with a receipt from Mr. Bartow, bearing date ye 21 May, 1714-15 since the year 1702, as the minister's rate with the collection allowed, &c.

In 1761, the Rev. Mr. Milner, Rector of the parish, informs the Propagation Society, that one of the edifices he preaches in at Yonkers was a new one, raised by the generosity of Colonel Frederick Philipse of Philipsborough, who has given to its service a fine farm as a glebe, consisting of two hundred acres, upon which he purposes to build a good house for a minister. In 1764 the society report that they have received a letter from Colonel Frederick Philipse of Philipsborough within the Province of New York, dated October 23, 1764, representing:—

“That at the expense of himself and family there is now erected on the Manor of Philipsborough a handsome stone church completely finished, and everything necessary for the decent performance of divine service prepared; that about three quarters of a mile from the church he has laid out and appropriated two hundred and fifty acres of excellent arable and wood land for a glebe for the minister for ever, and that he fully intends as soon as they are happy to have a worthy clergyman of the Church of England settled among them, to build him a genteel and handsome house upon said glebe, the materials for which are now providing, and which will cost at least £400. He therefore earnestly requests the society to send them a missionary, that he and his tenants, nearly one hundred and fifty families, may be no longer destitute of the worship of the Church of England.”

The board taking this letter into consideration appointed the Rev. Harry Munro,<sup>a</sup> a gentleman recommended to them by all the clergy of

<sup>a</sup> Vol. I. 315.

New Jersey and the Rev. Messrs. Charlton and Auchmuty at Perth Amboy, September 20th, 1764, and by other very ample testimonials, to be the society's missionary at Philipsborough, with a salary of £30 per annum.

June 8th, 1765, Mr. Munro himself, writes, “that on his arrival at his mission, he found everything promising and agreeable, a neat church (always kept in good repair by Col. Frederick Philipse and family) and a decent congregation, materials already for a parsonage, the glebe well fenced, plenty of wood, and a sufficient quantity of arable land.”

In 1771, the Rev. Luke Babcock was recommended by the clergy of New York, “being lately ordained by the bishop of London, as a proper person for a missionary. And Colonel Philipse having requested that the mission of Philipsborough formerly filled by the Rev. Harry Munro, should be renewed; and the Colonel having made a proper provision for the maintenance of a minister, with the assistance of the society, they have accordingly appointed the Rev. Luke Babcock to the mission with a salary of £30.”

The youngest son of Doctor Joshua Babcock, of Westerly Narragan-



sett (observes Mr. Updike) was Rev. Luke Babcock, "an Episcopal clergyman at Philips's Manor, on the Hudson, where he died, leaving a wife and several children." Hawkins, in his *Historical Notices of the Missions of the Church of England*, says: "Another victim of ill treatment already mentioned, was the Rev. Luke Babcock, missionary at Philipsborough. He was seized by the insurgents, his papers were examined, and because he answered affirmatively to the question, 'Whether he considered himself bound by his oath of allegiance to the king,' he was deemed an enemy to the liberties of America, and ordered to be kept in custody."<sup>a</sup> After four month's confinement his health gave way, and he was then dismissed with a written order to remove within the lines of the king's army. "He got home," (says Mr. Seabury,) "with difficulty, in a raging fever and delirious, and there died, extremely regretted."<sup>b</sup> Indeed, I know not a more excellent man; and I fear his loss, especially in that mission, will scarcely be made up.<sup>c</sup>

His wife was Grace Isaacs, a cousin of Judge Isaacs of New Haven. His children were Cortlandt, Frederick, the father of Mrs. W. L. Morris, of Wave Hill, Yonkers, and Henrietta, who married a Mr. Richard Saltonstal of New York.

This parish suffered greatly during the war of the Revolution. The church was used at intervals by both armies as an hospital; and its pulpit was occupied by ministers of different denominations, who made some strong efforts to retain possession.

At the close of the war, May 1st, the State of New York passed an act vesting the church with two acres of land, and the glebe, in the corporation of the Episcopal church, Yonkers.

This was confirmed by another act of the Legislature, passed April 3, 1792, wherein it is specified: "That all the estate, right, title, interest, claim and demand of the people of the State of New York, in and to the said church, and two acres of land, and in and to the said parsonage or glebe, shall be, and hereby are granted to, and vested in the corporation of the Episcopal church in the town of Yonkers, in the County of Westchester and State of New York, and their successors forever, for the use of the said corporation."

This church had been previously incorporated under the act of 1784. Sept. 15, 1787, Augustus van Cortlandt and John Warner, trustees.

In accordance with the act passed for the relief of the Episcopal church, passed March 17, 1795, it was again incorporated, Sept. 7, 1795.

<sup>a</sup> He was seized and carried off a prisoner to Hartford, Conn. Here he was detained in custody, from October, 1776, to February of 1777.—*Editor*.

<sup>b</sup> His remains were deposited in the family vault of the Van Cortlandt's.—*Editor*.

<sup>c</sup> Updike's *Hist. of the Narragansett church*. 310.

Augustus van Cortlandt and William Constable, wardens; John Warner, Thomas Valentine, Isaac Vermilyea, Frederick Underhill, Shadrach Taylor, Isaac Lawrence, Stephen Oakley and Jacob Post, vestrymen. In the first Convention of the Protestant Episcopal church in the diocese of New York, held in the city of New York, June 22d, 1785, this church does not appear to have been represented.

To the Convention of 1787, she sent her first delegates, Augustus van Cortlandt and Israel Honeywell, Esqrs.

The principal benefactors to this parish, have been, the Hon. Frederick Philipse, Mark Noble, Esq., Augustus van Cortlandt, Esq.,<sup>a</sup> and the wardens and vestry of Trinity Church, New York.<sup>b</sup>

In 1845, owing to the large increase of families within this parish, and the numerous calls made upon its officiating clergy, it was deemed advisable, after mature deliberation, to erect a patronage within the village of Yonkers. For this purpose, an order was obtained the same year from the Court of Chancery, to dispose of the old parsonage and glebe. These were finally sold for \$6,500. With part of these funds, the present Rectory was built, the corporation reserving to themselves the burying ground in the Saw Mill Valley.

A part of Philipse's point in the rear of the present rectory, appears to have been used as a grave-yard for strangers.

The following table extracted from the reports of the venerable Propagation Society and the church records, deduces the catalogue of incumbents to the present time :—

## LIST OF MINISTERS AND RECTORS.

| Instituted or called. | Incumbents.                        | Vacated by. |
|-----------------------|------------------------------------|-------------|
| Sept. 20, 1764.       | REV. HARRY MUNRO, A.M. Clericus,   | Per resig.  |
| 1770,                 | REV. LUKE BABCOCK, Clericus,       | " death.    |
| 1777,                 | REV. GEORGE PATTON, Clericus,      | " resig.    |
| 1786,                 | REV. ANDREW FOWLER, Presb.         | " "         |
| Sept. 10, 1788,       | REV. ELIAS COOPER, Presb.          | " death.    |
| Mar. 14, 1816,        | REV. WILLIAM POWELL, Presb.        | " resig.    |
| Mar. 20, 1820,        | REV. JOHN GRIGG, Presb.            | " "         |
| Oct. 17, 1823,        | REV. JOHN WEST, Presb.             | " "         |
| Dec. 15, 1828,        | REV. ALEX. H. CROSBY, A. M. Presb. | " death.    |
| May 4, 1839,          | REV. SMITH PYNE, A. M. Presb.      | " resig.    |
| Mar. 20, 1841,        | REV. HENRY L. STORES, Presb.       | " death.    |
| 1852,                 | REV. ABRAHAM BEACH CARTER,         | " resig.    |

<sup>a</sup> This individual, by his will dated Dec. 20. 1823 bequeathed "the sum of \$500 to the Rector, wardens and vestry of St. John's church, at Yonkers, being the Protestant Episcopal church of that town, to be put and kept out at interest by them, upon good real security, within the County of Westchester."

<sup>b</sup> In 18—, Trinity Church contributed \$—— for a parsonage at Yonkers, to which was added in 18——, the sum of \$——.

|       |       |  |                    |
|-------|-------|--|--------------------|
|       | 1869, | REV. THOMAS A. JAGGAR, D.D., now Bishop, “ “ |                    |
| Nov.  | 1870, | REV. WILLIAM S. LANGFORD, “ “                |                    |
| Dec., | 1875, | REV. A. B. ATKINS, D. D., “ “                |                    |
| Oct., | 1879, | REV. JAMES HOUGHTON,                         | Present incumbent. |

There is also a Reformed Dutch Church standing directly south of St. John's, situated upon rising ground. This church was erected on a portion of the estate of the late Lemuel Wells, Esq., which was given by his heirs in 1844. The building is a neat edifice of brick. The interior arrangements, and fittings up, are peculiarly appropriate, being neat and simple. A chaste pulpit and communion table, occupy the west end, while a gallery extends across the eastern.

This church was incorporated under the act of 1813, dated July 13, 1844. Lemuel W. Wells and Duncan McFarland, elders; Frederick Nodine and Ralph Shipman, deacons. The first installed pastor was the Rev. V. M. Hurlbert, present minister.

There appears to have been a Dutch Reformed congregation in this town as early as 1784, “called the Reformed Dutch Church at the Lower Mills, in the Manor of Phillipsborough,” incorporated under the Act of 1784, dated September 8th, 1786; William Warner, Abraham Odell, Isaac Vermilyea, James McChain, Jacobus Dyckman, trustees.

The Methodist Episcopal church was organized March 1st, 1828, under the name and title of Christ church: first trustees, Joseph Oakley, Frederick Shonnard, Thomas Griffen and David Oakley.

North-west of the city is *Wild Boar Hill*,<sup>a</sup> so called from the animal that once frequented the solitudes of its ancient forests. So troublesome and numerous had this animal become at one period, that the Provincial Government was compelled to pass laws for its destruction.

Up to a late era, Indians occupied this hill in great numbers. From here they are all said to have taken their departure in one night. The scarcity of the wild game, together with the encroachments of the white man, may in some measure, account for this sudden removal.

During one period of the Revolution it was the site of the American encampment. Its summit commands fine views of the surrounding country and the noble Hudson, stretching in one long reach to Jersey City.

Somewhere near this spot there formerly stood a peculiar shaped tree, as if adapted by nature to receive the body of a man. In this rustic couch, the illustrious Washington, wearied with his toils, slept for two hours; his trusty guide, Martin Post, watching.<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> This hill is laid down in General Washington's surveyed map of the county, as Boar hill.

<sup>b</sup> Post was at this time attached to Col. Schammel's regiment.

In the summer of 1780, the famous spy Huddleston was discovered concealed in the woods upon this hill, and was afterwards hung at Poughkeepsie. For a long time it was frequented by the American water guards, whose business it was to intercept all traders passing to the British lines.

On the south side of this hill fell the brave Captain Rowe of Pruschank's yagers. This individual appears to have been in the habit of making a daily tour from Kings Bridge, round by Mile Square, for the purpose of reconnoitering. On the morning of the melancholy accident which terminated his career, he was on his last tour of military duty, having already resigned his commission for the purpose of marrying the accomplished Elizabeth Fowler of Haarlem; when passing with a company of light dragoons he was suddenly fired upon by three Americans of the water guard of Captain Pray's company, who had ambuscaded themselves in the cedars near the site of the present residence of Mr. Bangalore. Their shot took deadly effect, for the Captain fell from his horse mortally wounded. The yagers instantly made prisoners of the undisciplined water guards, and a messenger was immediately dispatched to Mrs. Babcock, then living below in the parsonage, for a vehicle to remove the wounded officer. The use of her gig and horse was soon obtained, and a neighbor, Anthony Archer, pressed to drive. In this they conveyed the dying man to Col. Van Cortlandt's. They appear to have taken the route of Tippet's valley, as the party stopped at Mr. Frederick Post's to obtain a drink of water. In the mean time an express had been forwarded to Miss Fowler, his affianced bride, to hasten without delay to the side of her dying lover. On her arrival, accompanied by her mother, the expiring soldier had just strength enough left to articulate a few words, when he sunk exhausted with the effort.

As late as 1780 a thick forest extended from the village north to Mr. William Bolmer's, bounded by the Hudson and Saw Mill rivers. The site of these woods on the Hudson shore is now occupied by a number of country residences, among which are those of Sampson Simpson, Esq. This gentleman's father, in company with Col. James had charge of the silver mines at Sing Sing previous to the Revolution. Also Pomona Hall, the residence of Philip Rhinelanders Roberts, Esq. In this house the aspiring politician Colonel Burr found a safe asylum to shelter himself from the storm of indignation which followed the death of the illustrious Hamilton.

The eastern edge of Boar hill is still covered with beautiful woods, sloping gradually to the bank of the Saw Mill river. This lovely stream rises among the picturesque hills of Chappaqua; its source is formed



from two springs, one on the land of Job Collins, the other on the property of Willett Kipps. Its descent from the springs lies nearly in a south course of sixteen miles through the rich bottoms of a valley bordered with high woodlands ; and not unfrequently its waters become lost in some rocky dell or amongst dark foliage. At times it is seen stealing through some green meadow with a babbling sound, or occasionally becoming impetuous, it rushes over rocks and stones in its headlong course ; but more frequently

“Clear are the depths where its eddies play,  
And dimples deepen and whirl away.”—*Bryant*.

At the foot of Boar hill a bridge crosses the stream nearly opposite the Parsonage.<sup>a</sup> It was here that Eden Hunt, brother of Major David Hunt, was waylaid and attacked by two soldiers belonging to the British Refugee Corps. It would appear that the unfortunate man being better mounted than the rest of his companions, who were all retreating before Col. De Lancey, rode considerably in advance ; and on coming to the cross roads near the Methodist church, he mistook his way, and was following the course of the Saw Mill road when he was mortally wounded. The rest of the party made good their retreat by the Albany turnpike.

The old Parsonage, formerly called Babcock's house, appears to have been frequently garrisoned by the troops of both armies. It was here that Lord Howe fixed his head-quarters, and here the American Col. Gist was visiting in 1778, when the enemy determined upon his surprisal. At this period the house was occupied by the handsome and accomplished widow of the Rev. Luke Babcock and Miss Sarah Williams, a sister of Mrs. Frederick Philipse. To the former lady Col. Gist was devotedly attached ; consequently when an opportunity afforded, he gladly moved his command into that vicinity. On the night preceding the attack, he had stationed his camp at the foot of Boar hill, directly opposite the parsonage, for the better purpose of paying a special visit to this lady. It is said that whilst engaged in urging his suit the enemy were quietly surrounding his quarters ; he had barely received his final dismissal from Mrs. Babcock when he was startled with the firing of musketry. The following account of the attack is thus given by the British commander, Lieut. Col. Simcoe :—

“Colonel Gist, who commanded a light corps of the rebels, was posted near *Babcock's house*, from whence he made frequent patrols. Lieut. Col. Simcoe had determined to attack him ; when, a deserter coming in, at night, who gave an accurate account of his position, the following

<sup>a</sup> This is a description of 1848.

morning was fixed upon for the attempt. General Kniphausen, who commanded at Kings Bridge, approved of the enterprise, and ordered a detachment of the Yagers to co-operate in it; Lieut. Col. Emmerick undertook to lead the march, having in his corps people who were well acquainted with the country.

The following disposition was made. Emmerick's infantry, followed by the Queen's Rangers, were to march through the meadows on the side of Valentine's hill, opposite Cortland's ridge, and pass between the rebel sentries to Babcock's house, when they would be in the rear of Gist's encampment, which they were immediately to attack. Lieut. Col. Tarleton, with the whole of the cavalry, was to proceed to cover the right, and arrive at Valentine's hill by daylight; a detachment of Yagers, under Capt. Wreden, were to march on Cortland's ridge, and to halt opposite to Gist's encampment; and a larger detachment of Yagers, under Major Pruschank, were, at the same time, to be ready to force Philipse's bridge, then to proceed to the bridge opposite Babcock's house, and to cut off the enemy's retreat by that road. The signal for these divisions moving on, was to be the noise of storming Gist's encampment. Lieut. Col. Emmerick conducted the march in so able a manner, and the whole corps followed with so much silence, that the enemy's sentinels were passed without alarm, and this division gained the heights in the rear, and could see the whole chain of sentinels walking below them. Major Ross was detached to possess himself of Post's house, to preserve a communication with Lieut. Col. Tarleton on Valentine's hill; the remainder of the Rangers inclined to the right, towards Gist's camp, and Lieut. Col. Emmerick was directed to secure the Saw Mill road. Firing soon began; and it was apparent from Lieut. Col. Emmerick's quarter, whom the enemy had discovered. Lieut. Col. Simcoe immediately moved rapidly into the road, and directly up the steeps to the enemy's camp, as a nearer way than through the thickets; he attained it, and, to his great surprise, found that Major Pruschank had not forced Philips' Bridge, as had been intended, but had crossed and joined Capt. Weeden on Cortlandt's ridge; and that Col. Gist had escaped through the passage which had been so unaccountably left open. Lieut. Col. Tarleton fell in with a patrol of cavalry, and dispersed it; and the Queen's Rangers, as soon as they got possession of Gist's camp, having ambuscaded themselves, took a patrol which came forward on hearing the firing. The troops set fire to Gist's huts and returned to their camp."<sup>a</sup>

From the American accounts, it appears that all the roads and bridges had been well guarded by the enemy, except the one now called Warner's Bridge, and that Capt. John Odell, upon the first alarm led off his troops through the woods on the west side of the Saw Mill; here Colonel Gist joined them. In the meantime Mrs. Babcock, having stationed herself in one of the dormer windows of the Parsonage, aided their escape whenever they appeared, by the waving of a white handkerchief.

<sup>a</sup> Simcoe's Mill. Journal, p. 86.





# PEDICREE OF ODELL, OF RYE, GREENBURGH AND YONKERS.

Revised and corrected by RUFUS KING, of Yonkers, New York, 1881.

Arms:—Argent, three Crescents, gules. Crest:—An Eagle displayed, gules. Motto:—*Fac et Spera.*

Page p 653, vol II

the emigrant to America, was at Concord, Mass., 1639. He removed to Fairfield, Conn., about 1644, where his will, dated 6th June, 1676, was proved 12th of same month, by his son, John Odell, who, with his son-in-law, Samuel Moorehouse, were made Executors. This will mentions:—Sons, William and John; daughter, Rebecca Moorehouse; grand-children, Samuel Moorehouse and Thomas Moorehouse, and John Odell, son of John Odell; also, daughter-in-law Mary Odell. The inventory of the estate amounted to £447 1-5, including "undivided land in ye Common at ye Concord," (Fairfield Wills, 1676 and 1689, p. 90).

Mr. William Odell

William, Jr., da. of Mr. Richard Vowles, of Fairfield, who was free-man in 1662, and representative of the Colonial Government in 1665-8-9. b. at Concord, 2d Dec. 1639, buried there 4th Feb., 1641. (N. E. Reg., Vol. 4, p. 272).

James Rebecca—Samuel Moorehouse, of Fairfield, Conn. b. at Concord, 17th May, 1642.

John, Senr., Mary who died about 1711. Is called "widow, of Stratfield," in inventory of her estate taken by her son Samuel, 11th March, 1711.

of Stratfield, Conn.; freeman, 18th Oct., 1664; in 1666, executed deed in behalf of his father, William Odell; in 1673, received grant of land from town of Fairfield. Will, 22d April, 1707, mentions, wife Mary, da. Mary, and other daughters. (Fairfield Wills). His grand-son, John Odell, removed to Conn. Farms, N.J., where he m. Temperance, da. Rev. Jonathan Dickinson, and became the father of the Hon. and Rev. Jonathan Odell, A.M., M.D., Rector of St. Mary's church, Burlington, N.J.; b. at Newark, N.J., 25th Sept., 1737, died at Frederickton, N.B., 26th Nov., 1818.

John, Senr., Mary who died about 1711. Is called "widow, of Stratfield," in inventory of her estate taken by her son Samuel, 11th March, 1711.

John—Joanna Turner. of Fordham, N.Y., in 1683, sold land which was his "deceased father Wm. Odell's." In 1785, is called "Hon. father John Odell," in son John's will, mentioned below.

Samuel—Patience— of Eastchester, N.Y. In 1699, at White Plains, signed Oath of Alleg. to King William. In 1705, with wife Anne, assigned land at Rye, N.Y., to Humphrey Underhill.

Isaac—Anne Tompkins In 1699, signed Oath of Allegiance at White Plains, N.Y.

Jonathan— Michael— Bussing In 1685, at Rye, N.Y., signed as witness to Robert Bloomers deed.

Hachaliah Stephen of Rye, N.Y., removed to Dutchess Co. Sarah—John Archer, Esq., first Lord of the Manor of Fordham, N.Y., 7 Oct., 1686. (See Archer Pedigree).

John—Hannah Vermilye, da. of Altien, of Yonkers, N.Y. Is called "Hannah mentions: Hon. father John Odell, wife Hannah, brother Michael, children, John, Isaac, Abraham, Jonathan, Hannah and Altien. (N.Y. Wills, Liber. 18, p. 188).

Isaac—Devaux John—Benson of Fordham, N.Y. His will, N.Y., 25 Sept., 1785, proved July, 1788, mentions: Hon. father John Odell, wife Hannah, brother Michael, children, John, Isaac, Abraham, Jonathan, Hannah and Altien. (N.Y. Wills, Liber. 18, p. 188).

Abraham—Rebecca Dyckman, b. 22d April, 1725; will at White Plains, N.Y., dated 21st June, 1819, mentions: wife Rebecca; sons, Jacob and Jonathan; da's., Hannah Odell, Alida Oakley and Rebecca Valentine, dec. Exors., wife Rebecca, son Jacob and nephew Abraham, son of brother Jonathan, of Greenburgh, N.Y.

Jonathan—Margaret Dyckman, d. 20 Mar., 1783, aged 51. Buried at Tarrytown, N.Y. mentions: sons, William, John and Abraham, and other relatives, including daughters, Johanna Dyckman, Rebecca Dyckman and Jane Vermilye.

Hannah—Altien—John Devaux. A daughter—Evert Brown

Daniel—Valentine of Mile Square. Abraham—of Dutchess Co., N.Y. John—of Yonkers, N.Y.

Joshua—Mary Vincent of Odelltown, Lower Canada. Joseph—Martha Manning of Yonkers, N.Y. John—Mary Wiltsa

James—Odell Stephen—Elizabeth Sherwood Jonathan—Eleanor Underhill Margaret—Charles Dusenberry Hannah—Lewis Rich Sarah—Matthias Archer

John—Isaac—Odell of Onondagua, father of Isaac, late member of Assembly. Sarah—Hobbs Clyntje—James Teller John, the father of Isaac and Jemima.

General Jacob—Ann Devoor of Yonkers, N.Y., b. 25th July, 1756; a distinguished officer in the American army; buried in St. John's cemetery, Yonkers, N.Y.

John, b. 28 Dec., 1759. Jane—Abraham Valentine b. 8th Oct., 1754. Jonathan—Elizabeth Underhill b. 23d June, 1760. Rebecca—Elijah Valentine b. 19th June, 1766. Alida—James Oakley Hannah—Isaac Odell Johanna

Abraham—Anne Mandeville, da. of Cornelius, of Greenburgh, N.Y., b. 4 Jan., 1760; d. 27 Feb., 1820. Member of N.Y. State Assembly; buried at Tarrytown, N.Y.

Colonel John—1. Hannah McChain. no issue. 2. Abigail Browne, da. Hachaliah, of Somerstown, N.Y. (See Browne Pedigree). b. 26 Feb., 1752, d. 20 Oct., 1799. Will at White Plains, dated 19 Sept., 1798, mentions: wife Hannah; sons, Jonathan and Jasper, and child unborn.

Hannah—Stymus, da. Jasper. b. 25 Sept., 1758, d. 24 June, 1811, N.Y.

Isaac—Phoebe Dean of Croton, b. 18 Mar., 1762, d. 14 Feb., 1855, da. Daniel.

William—Hannah Wiltsa, da. Daniel. b. 18 Mar., 1762, d. 14 Feb., 1855.

Jemima—Gerrit Dyckman, Jane—John Honeywe, da. Isaac Vermilye. Rebecca—W. N. Dyckman Margaret, died young unmarried. Alletta, died young. Jonathan, died in infancy. Johanna

John—Esther of Dutchess Co. Crawford. Joseph—Rebecca of Greenburgh. Thompson. Abraham—Mary of Dutchess Co. Nelson. Daniel—Ann Boyce. James—Elizabeth Odell. Joshua—Sarah Tuttle. Abigail—Lawrence Underhill. Isaac—Charly Lawrence

John—O. M. Odell of Yonkers, b. 16th Feb., 1800, d. Nov., 1859. Jacob De Lancey—Ann Elizabeth Rich, b. 14th Feb., 1803, d. 31st Nov., 1877. See N. Y. Gen. and Bio. Record, Vol. 12, p. 48.

Cornelius Mandeville—1. Hannah Underhill da. Bishop, of Scarsdale; d. 21st June, 1823. 2. Jane Odell, da. Gen. Jacob, of Yonkers, N.Y.

Margaret, b. 4 Nov., 1782 Rachel, b. 16 July, 1785. William, b. 13 July, 1785. Jacob, b. 23 Feb., 1790. Catharine, b. 23 Nov., 1792. Johanna, b. 31 July, 1795. Anne, b. 22 June, 1800. Phoebe, b. 27 Feb., 1804, married Rufus S. King, of New York city; b. 11 Sept., 1798, d. 22 July, 1870.

Anne—Bishop Underhill of Scarsdale, N.Y. Jackson—Anna Ward da. Bartholomew of Greenburgh, N.Y. da. Maria Chatterton Margaret—Isaac Stymus

Jonathan—Jane Thompson of Tarrytown, N.Y. Jasper—Wylie Jacob—Smith

Jonathan—Phoebe Thompson niece of Gov. Thompson, of New York. Daniel—Maria Chatterton Margaret—Isaac Stymus

Jonathan—Susan McChain Daniel—Charlotte Dean Isaac—Mary A. Barker Abraham, died unmarried. Jacob—William—Rebecca Dyckman Johanna—Gerrit Dyckman Wm. Dyckman—Fowler

Margaret—Barker Altien—Hardenbrook, of N.Y. city. Eliza—Densmore, of Brooklyn, N.Y.

Gilbert Hannah Joshua Isaac—Mary Odell b. 29 da. Isaac Sept., and Charity 1778 Lawrence

Charles—Charity Betsy John Benjamin

Peter Daniel James Elizabeth Adgah Charlotte William

Joshua—Jane Lynt William L. Anne—Gilbert Thompson. Hannah—Ben. Brown of Yonkers

Stephen Daniel Joshua Mary Elizabeth Sarah

Thomas B. Daniel Benjamin Lawrence Mary Susan Jane Caroline Harriett Anne

Mary—Isaac Odell b. 3 Aug., 1785, d. 29 Sept., 1778. Sarah Sophia Lawrence

Benjamin John Moses Joseph Lancaster—Sarah Corl (See Corl Pedigree). Charles Rachel—Estes Marianne—John Van



During the winter of 1780 a gang of six or eight "cow boys" broke open the Parsonage and robbed the defenceless ladies of everything valuable. To escape detection, they had blackened their faces and disguised their persons. Upon the departure of this gang their leader, after making a profound bow, thus addressed Mrs. Babcock:—

"Fare you well and fare you better,  
And when I die, I'll send you a letter."

Fortunately, Mrs. Babcock, through the intervention of Col. James van Cortlandt, obtained restitution of everything. Within a few years, trees have been cut down near the site of Gist's camp and found to contain balls buried six inches in the wood.

North of the Parsonage, on the Saw Mill river road, is situated the residence and property of the late Mr. Robert Reed. This patriotic individual having obtained certain information from King's Bridge, that the enemy were fitting out an expedition against Col. Thompson—then stationed at the Four Corners—and were on the eve of marching, he instantly mounted his horse and rode up to the American quarters, a distance of thirteen or fourteen miles, thus giving Thompson timely warning of the enemy's approach. The horse upon which he rode died a few minutes after his arrival.

In the Saw Mill valley is also situated the residence of the late General Jacob Odell, a descendant of the ancient and honorable family of the Odils. "The river Ouse," says Camden, "runs under Odil or Woodhill, formerly Wayhull, which also had its Barons of Wayhull, eminent for their ancient nobility, where was a castle." The first ancestor of the family in this country, was William Odell, of Concord, who removed to Fairfield, Connecticut, in 1644. His son William was one of the principal proprietors of Rye, in 1661-2.<sup>a</sup>

General Jacob Odell, at the early age of 21 years, embraced the military profession, and in the year 1776, took up arms in defence of his country. He used to recount with pleasure the time and the very spot where himself and three other cousins of the name, volunteered their services to the Continental Congress. It was beneath the white-wood tree where the Westchester farmers stopped Major André, and found the papers that revealed the treason of Arnold. After enlisting, he served in Captain Samuel Drake's regiment, belonging to the brigade of General Scott. On the memorable retreat after the battle of Long Island, he was on picket guard. At the close of the war, and as soon as the militia was formed, he received his commission from Major General Morris.

<sup>a</sup> See Pedigree of Odell Family.

Like the rest of the "*Neutral Ground*," this part of Yonkers was infested with marauding parties of "Cow Boys" and "Skinners," the former of whom claimed the title of Loyalists; the latter, under the mask of patriotism, called themselves Whigs.

During the war when General Odell's father and family were living in the homestead, a party of these lawless ruffians, with blackened faces, armed with muskets, entered the house. Their first act appears to have been to secure the females in the cellar; having effected this, they proceeded to interrogate the General's father, and demanded his money.

On his refusing to satisfy their demands, they immediately hung him by his neck to an adjoining tree; and when life was well nigh extinct, they cut him down, and again repeated their threats, but to no better purpose. Whereupon they once more suspended and lowered him, leaving him for dead.

During these proceedings, the females had escaped from the cellar, and Mrs. Odell, the General's mother, a woman of great intrepidity, boldly assaulted them, upon which these cowardly villians attacked her with the butt ends of their muskets. She managed, however, to escape with a few broken ribs. On this occasion the General was too young to take an active part in the affray, and narrowly escaped by lowering himself with a cord from the garret window. His son Jacob Odell, Esq., now owns the property. The adjoining estate, north, belongs to his son-in law, Cornelius Odell, Esq.

The roads leading east of the Saw Mill valley intersect with the Sprain valley road, which runs nearly north and south.

The Sprain river, called by the Indians *Armonperahin*, rises in two springs north of Thirty Deer Ridge; the west branch in Wolf Swamp.<sup>a</sup> The other called the Grassy Sprain, on the lands of widow Underhill. These two springs flowing south intersect a little east of Benj. Fowler's. They again divide at the northern extremity of Thirty Deer Ridge, and running through two different vales again meet nearly opposite the Cat rocks—so called for the abundance of wild cats that once frequented the hill. These animals, Van der Donck assures us, had skins resembling that of a lioness; and not unlike them in form, with the exception of short tails like a rabbit or hare.

After uniting here, the Sprain pursues a south-east course until it discharges into the Bronx, on the lands of Nathaniel Valentine. The waters of the Sprain were pronounced by the commissioners in 1842, to be the purest in Westchester county.

<sup>a</sup> A wolf was killed here as late as 1806.

This beautiful stream was long celebrated for its trout. Well may the lover of the sport exclaim with Cotton,

“None so bright,  
So pleasant to the taste, none to the sight:  
None yield the angler such delight.”

This fish begins to bite in March or April. Very large sized trout have been caught here about the middle of March, and they continue till the months of July and August. They lie, generally, under the shelter of stumps, bridges and stones.

The bait generally used in catching this fish, is the common earth worm. By connoisseurs, the artificial fly is preferred.

The north-eastern part of this township is occupied by a high ridge of hills, called the *Tuckahoe Hills*. This portion of the town, originally formed a part of that large tract of land between the Saw Mill and the Bronx rivers, which was ceded by the Indian chiefs—Sephram and others—to Frederick Phillipse, June 5, 1684. Tradition says, that anciently, an Indian Sachem of that name had his residence on one of these hills, and exercised all authority among the tribes of the neighboring valleys.

The name Tuckahoe, means in the Algonquin, “The Bread;” literally, Tuckah (bread) the o, oe, or ong, being merely an objective sign relating to the plant itself.

The celebrated Captain Smith, in his travels and adventures, tells us, “That the chief root the Indians of Virginia have for food, is called *Tockawhoughé*. It groweth like flagge in marshes. In one day a savage will gather sufficient for a weeke. These roots are much of the greatness and taste of potatoes. They are toasted, a great many of them, with oke leaves and ferns, and then cover all with earth in the manner of a cole pit; over it on each side, they continue a great fire twenty-four hours before they dare eat it. Raw it is no better than poyson; and being roasted—except it be tender, and the heat abated, or sliced and dried in the sunne mixed with sorrel and greens, or such like—it will prickle and torment the throat, extraordinary; and yet in summer, they use this commonly for bread.”<sup>a</sup>

R. Beverly, in his History of Virginia, published A. D. 1722, calls it *Tuckahoe*.<sup>b</sup>

“Respecting the frequent diet of the Indians in general,” [says John F. Watson, “we may say that besides their usual plantations of corn, they often used wild roots; of these they had tawho, [arum virginicum,]

<sup>a</sup> Travels and Adventures of Capt. John Smith, p. 121.7.

<sup>b</sup> Beverly's Hist. of Virginia, p. 153.

and tawkee, [orantium aquaticum.] These roots grew in low damp grounds, were a kind of potatoes to them, and were divested of their poisonous or injurious quality by roasting."<sup>a</sup> The Mohegan term for bread is *Tauquah*.<sup>b</sup>

These names evidently point to one and the same plant, which still flourishes along the moist margins of the Tuckahoe creek. This stream rises on the lands of John Tompkins, and waters the western side of the ridge. Pursuing a south course, it discharges into the Armonperahin, near where the latter forms a junction with the Bronx.

Upon the highest ground of the ridge stands the Episcopal chapel, from which the eye can command a fine prospect embracing almost every variety of scenery. This chapel was erected A. D. 1798, during the Rectorship of the Rev. Elias Cooper, upon land the gift of the late John Bowne, Esq. Mr. Bowne was the son of Thomas Bowne, and grandson of John Bowne, formerly of Flushing, L. I., a descendant of the celebrated John Bowne of that place, who was born at Matlock, Derbyshire, England, March 9th, 1627. The adjoining estate was occupied by the sons of the late John Bowne, Esq.

We have seen a receipted bill rendered in 1798, for building the Protestant Episcopal Church at Turkeyhoe, (it is now in the possession of Elias Cooper Bowne, Esq., who is in his 84th year) to John Bowne, Esq., one of the founders of the church, and father to Elias Cooper Brown, Esq. And on one of the guide-posts near the church, a few years ago, as late as 1854, could easily be traced, the name "Turkeyhoe," painted over with the present name "Tuckahoe." The valley to the west was always famous, so Elias Cooper Bowne, Esq., informs us, for wild turkies. An old resident informed us that when the market wagon came down the valley, which was called Turkey hollow, the driver would call out, "Turkey! hoe."—*Editor*.

For many years it was an appendage or chapel of ease to the parish church of St. Johns, Yonkers. About 1846, the building underwent considerable repairs, and a commodious vestry-room was added to the chapel. On June 29th, 1847, it was consecrated to the service of Almighty God by the name of St. John's chapel, Tuckahoe.

In 1853, it severed its connection with the parent church, after having been a chapel for more than half a century.

Early in the summer of 1870, the church was put in thorough repair, a recess chancel added, and several additional pews. An organ was purchased in the same year:—

<sup>a</sup> John T. Watson, Hist. Tales, also Address of De Witt Clinton, &c., &c.

<sup>b</sup> Trans of Amer. Antiq. Soc.



## LIST OF RECTORS AND MINISTERS.

| CALL.         |                          | REMOVAL.      |
|---------------|--------------------------|---------------|
| Aug. 1, 1853, | REV. CHAS. JONES,        | 1858.         |
| Oct. 1859,    | REV. AUGUSTUS ST. CLAIR, | 1860.         |
| July 1860,    | REV. DAVID DOREMUS,      | 1861.         |
| " 1865,       | REV. A. M. IVES,         | Died in 1880. |

From 1861 to 1865, the church was closed.

In 1880, Elias Cooper Bowne, Esq., had the church completely renovated—frescoing it handsomely, and putting in beautiful stained-glass windows, carpeting and cushioning it throughout. It is now one of the gems of the county.

There are many interesting historical recollections connected with this hill and vicinity. During the eventful week that preceded the battle of White Plains, General Washington's advance corps lay upon the Tuckahoe heights, under the command of General Scott, whose whole corps numbered 2000 men. Directly south of the church, bordering the Eastchester road, was the property of Mr. Valentine Odell. Here a party of nine patriots were overtaken by a large company of DeLancey's horse, commanded by Colonel Oliver Hatfield. The whole party were barbarously killed or mortally wounded.

A touching incident deserves to be recorded, in connection with this melancholy affair. A dog belonging to one of the Americans that fell upon this occasion, took up his quarters at Mr. Caleb Smith's who lived a mile below. The ladies of Mr. Smith's family were frequently in the habit of visiting their neighbor Mr. Odell, when the dog would go with them half way and return. It appears nothing could ever tempt him to pass the fatal spot.

On the farm of the late Isaac Lent west of the hill, the American officer (Major Leavenworth of the Massachusetts line) ambuscaded a large detachment in 1778, for the purpose of cutting off Capt. Joshua Barnes of DeLancey's corps; who, he ascertained, had gone up in the neighborhood of Hart's Corners for the object of plundering. The better to draw Barnes into his ambuscade, Shotwell posted a party of his command upon the hill a little below the church. Upon the return of Barnes he immediately descried the detachment on the hill, to avoid which he lead his men off by the opposite side, thus walking directly into the trap laid by his wary foe. They received one heavy fire and surrendered, consisting of one full company—sixty-four men.

In the house of Isaac Lent, then occupied by Jacob Vermilyea, a small party of American volunteers under the command of Captain Honeywell had stopped to take some refreshments, having just returned from

an incursion into Morrisania—when they were suddenly surrounded by the enemy under Captain Totten, who fired upon the house killing one of the patriots and making prisoners of nine. These, however, finally rose upon the guard and escaped.

Near the vicinity of the school-house, Benjamin Hunt of the continental army, captured thirty of the enemy by stratagem, with a force of half that number. Availing himself of the darkness of the night, he called out as if in command of a large detachment, "Lieutenant Such-a-one to the right;" "Captain——to the left;" in this manner he deceived his enemy, who laid down their arms and surrendered at discretion.

On the east side of the Tuckahoe hill is the property of Charles R. Dusenberry, Esq., one of the most active members of the Croton water commissioners. The house occupies an elevated position, overlooking a picturesque vale to the south-east.

The Methodist church is prettily situated at the foot of the hill, surrounded by a fine locust grove, and near the margin of a small stream that washes the eastern side of the hills. The edifice is a handsome stone structure. This society was first organized in 1797, and called "the first Methodist Episcopal Church of the town of Yonkers."

The small *settlement of Tuckahoe* is situated upon the western margin of the Bronx. Here is a convenient depot of the Harlem railroad, post office, stores, and India rubber manufactory.

The Tuckahoe bridge which crosses the Bronx at this place, appears to have been erected at a very early period, as we find it recorded by that name, A. D. 1728.<sup>a</sup>

During the encampment of the American army upon the hills to the west, the British horse stationed above at Wood's house, (afterwards called Marble Hall), now the residence of S. D. Gifford, County Judge, were in the constant habit of coming down to water their horses at the foot of this bridge. On one occasion a small party of Continentals concealed themselves in ambush on the margin of the river, and lay waiting for the usual approach of the horse. A long interval elapsed, but at last the well known tramp declared the enemy near at hand. Every gun was cocked, and a death-like stillness prevailed; but whether the enemy suspected their designs, or obtained information, was never ascertained; for, at that time, they came with nearly their whole force. To have fired upon them, would have been but the prelude to a massacre; the patriots, therefore, lay snugly concealed until their departure.

The following extracts from the town records, relate to the first elec-

---

<sup>a</sup> Records of Roads, Co. Records.

tion of town officers, in 1756, and immediately subsequent to the Revolution:—

At a public town meeting of the freeholders and inhabitants of the Yonkers and Mile Square, at the house of Edward Stevenson, in said Yonkers, on the first Tuesday of April, in 1756, being the day appointed by act of the General Assembly of this Province of New York, for choosing town officers, and likewise to make regulation of creatures and fences. The under-written officers and orders of creatures and orders of fences, were made by majority of votes,

JAMES CORTON, *Supervisor and Pounder.*

BENJAMIN FOWLER, *Town Clerk.*

THOMAS SHERWOOD, *Constable and Collector.*

DAVID OAKLEY, }  
WILLIAM WARNER, } *Assessors.*

EDWARD WEEKS,  
WILLIAM CRAWFORD,  
DANIEL DEVOE,  
JOHN RIDER,  
ISAAC ODELL,  
HENDRICK POST. } *Highway Masters.*

ANDREW NODIN,  
CHARLES WARNER,  
MOSES TAILER,  
ISAAC ODELL, } *Fence and Damage Viewers.*

At a town meeting held for the Yonkers, in the Manor of Philipsborough, at the house of David Hunt, on the 28th day of December, 1783, under the Superintendence of Israel Honeywell, Esq., William Hadley and Thomas Sherwood, in pursuance of an ordinance for holding elections in the southern district, by the Council appointed. The act entitled an act to provide for the temporary government of the southern part of this State, until the enemy shall abandon or be dispossessed of the same, and until the Legislature can be convened, &c. Passed the 23d day of October, 1779. The following town officers were chosen :

ISRAEL HONEYWELL, Esq., *Supervisor.*

DAVID HUNT, *Clerk.*

THOMAS SHEEWOOD, *Constable and Collector.*

ISRAEL HONEYWELL, Jr., Esq., *Security.*

WILLIAM BETTS, }  
JACOB VERMILYEA, } *Assessors.*

FREDERICK VERMILYEA, *Overseer of Roads on the east side of Tippet's Brook,*  
WILLIAM CRAWFORD, " " " *for the upper part,*  
WILL. WARNER, " " " *for the middle part,*  
BENJAMIN ODELL, —————  
JOHN ARCHER, " " " *for Tuckahoe,*





# THE TOWN OF YORKTOWN.

---

Yorktown is situated sixteen miles north of White Plains, the county-seat, distant forty-two miles from New York, and one hundred and seventeen from Albany; bounded north, by Putnam county; east, by Somers and New Castle; south, by New Castle, and west by Cortlandt.

Prior to 1788, Yorktown and Somers constituted the "middle ward" of Cortlandt's manor, called "Hanover." A portion of the former early acquired the name of "Gertrude's Borough," in honor of Gertrude Beeckman, wife of Colonel Henry Beeckman, and one of the daughters and devisees of De Heer Stephanus Van Cortlandt, first Lord of the manor of Cortlandt. The present township was erected on the 7th of March, 1798.<sup>a</sup>

The Mohegan name "Appamaghpogh," appears to have been applied to the whole Indian territory within the manor, west of Meahagh (Verplanck's Point), which was subject to Weskhewen, chief sachem of Sachus, as late as 1685. The eastern section of Yorktown still bears the name of "Aemawalk," probably an abbreviation and corruption of the former town—thus, *Appamaghpogh*, *Amaghpogh*, *Amawogh* or *Ama-walk*. The lands of "Appamaghpogh," were originally granted to Stephanus Van Cortlandt in 1683, by the two Indian sachems, Pewemind and Oskewans, as mentioned in our description of Somers, &c.

The principal aboriginal settlement in this part of "Appamaghpogh," occupied the summit of "Indian Hill," a vast height which arises to an elevation of nearly six hundred feet above the northern margin of "Lake Magrigaries," "Magnegamus," or "Magregard," (Hollow Lake), situated

---

<sup>a</sup> Revised Statutes of N. Y., p. 486.

in Jefferson valley. On the southern side of the hill lies the Indian burying ground. The remains of several Indians were disinterred some years ago, near the residence of the late Dr. Hosea Fountain, whose property bordered on the lake. "Indian Hill" is also memorable as the last spot inhabited by a band of Aborigines in Westchester County. On the eastern border of the town is situated the Indian cemetery of "Appamoghphogh," or as it is now called "Amawalk."

Upon the partition of the manor of Cortlandt, among the heirs and devisees of De Heer Stephanus van Cortlandt, in the year 1734, the following allotments were made in this town:—

North lot No. 2, Andrew Miller; ditto, No. 3, Gertrude Beeckman; ditto No. 4, Cornelia Schuyler and her husband, Col. John Schuyler. This gentleman was the father of the illustrious Gen. Philip Schuyler, of the Revolution. Middle lot No. 2 and 3, Gertrude Verplank; ditto No. 4, Elizabeth Skinner; South lot No. 1, bordering the Croton river, John Watts; ditto, Nos. 4, 5, 6, 7, Philip Verplank; ditto, No. 8, Gertrude Beeckman; ditto, No. 9, Susannah Warren. The latter was the wife of Admiral Sir Peter Warren, K. B., who died in 1752; he commanded the expedition which captured Louisburg, capitol of the Island of Cape Breton, in 1745. They were married in 1731, lost two lovely children, Peter and Elizabeth, in 1746 or 7, but left issue three daughters; first, Ann, who married Lt. Gen. Charles Fitzroy, (second son of Lord Augustus Fitzroy, and grand-son of Charles, second Duke of Grafton), first Lord Southampton in 1758; secondly, Charlotte Warren, who married Willoughby Bertie, fourth Earl of Abingdon, in 1768; thirdly, Susan Warren, who married Gen. William Skinner.<sup>a</sup>

Subsequently the devisees and their heirs, made other divisions.

A. D. 1784, Andrew Miller sold to John Strang a farm in west range of north lot No. 2, consisting of two hundred acres, which he purchased of John Watts.

Gertrude Beeckman bequeathed lot No. 8, south of the Croton to her two nephews Philip and William Ricketts van Cortlandt, as tenants in common in fee tail.

Stephen van Cortlandt with his wife Catalina Staats, in 1791 gave a release to Elvan Purdy, with the fee of a certain lot No. 3, heretofore called *Gertrude's borough*, being by division amongst the heirs of Stephen van Cortlandt, deceased, allotted to Gertrude, one of his daughters, late wife of Henry Beeckman, containing 156 acres.

<sup>a</sup> *Heraldick Journal*, Whittenmore, vol. iii, 156. "Upon the 25th Jan., 1785, No. 19 was sold to Mr. Gilbert Van Cortlandt, of New York, for £84, 6s; bounded north-easterly by lands now, or late of the heirs of Sir Peter Warren, deceased; and south-easterly, by Furnace lot containing about 196 acres, forfeited to the people of this State by the attainder of Wm. Bayard."—*Abst. of sales of confiscated lands*, White Plains, p. 8.

The following receipts for rent prove the Purdys to have been tenants in common, long prior to the above release. They also established the early names of the town :—

“Rec'd, *Hanover*, May ye 10th, 1760, by ye hand of Abraham Purdy, three pound in part for his farm rent and for the use of Col. Henry Beeckman, Esq., per me.

£3 0 0

JOHN BRYAN.”

“Received at *Crompond*, 16th Nov'r, 1786, per Mr. Elvan Purdy, one pound 13s. in part of rent.

STEPHEN VAN CORTLANDT.”

“Received at *Yorktown*, Nov. 7th, 1789, of Mr. Elvan Purdy, £2, 19s. 9d. in full of rent due.

STEPHEN VAN CORTLANDT.”

The Purdy's, who were among the first tenants of the Van Cortlandt's in this town, are descended from Francis Purdy, who died at Fairfield, Conn., in 1658. His three sons—John, Joseph and Francis—were among the early settlers of Rye in this county. Joseph is first mentioned as residing in that town in 1677. “He was a leading member of the community, being Supervisor of the town in 1707-1708; Justice of the Peace in 1702, and after, representative of the county for several years in the Assembly; and one of the chief promoters of the Church, writes the Rev. James Wetmore, many years later. With Colonel Caleb Heathcote and others, in 1701, he purchased lands in New Castle, where some of his descendants settled. His will is dated Oct. 5th, 1709. He had seven sons, Joseph, Daniel, Samuel, David, Jonathan, John, (called still John), and Francis.”<sup>a</sup> Daniel, the second son, was one of the patentees of Budd's neck, in 1720, and held a thousand acres in Cortlandt's manor. He had three sons—Hackaliah, Joshua and Daniel. The latter was the father of Abraham, who was born on 10th of Oct, 1716; married Phœbe, daughter of Daniel Strong, and died at Yorktown, 17th of April, 1778. His eldest son was Abraham Purdy, Esq., for many years a lieutenant of Militia for the manor of Cortlandt, whose son, the late Alvan Purdy, Esq., erected the family homestead at Crompond, in 1775, and held a Lieutenantcy in Captain Haddy's company of militia, belonging to the regiment of Col. Samuel Drake. The sons of Alvan Purdy, were the late Abraham, of Goshen Co., N. Y.; James of Yorktown; and Alvan, late proprietor of the homestead.

The Lees, too, were among the early tenantry of the manor, and are supposed to have been a younger branch of the Lees of Lee—Magna,

<sup>a</sup> Baird's Hist. of Rye, pp. 344, 435.

Kent, England, who settled in Nottingham at an early period. William Lee, (whose sister Elizabeth, bequeathed her estate in England to the heirs general), emigrated from Nottingham to America in 1675, died in 1724, married Mary Marvin, and left three sons and seven daughters. His sons were Thomas, of Long Island, who died without issue; Joseph, of Long Island, and Richard, who entered the French Military service in Canada, and died without issue. Joseph Lee, second son of William, on the 4th of December, 1753, purchased of Andrew Johnston, of Perth Amboy, N. J., "All that lott of land in the manor of Cortlandt, known by the name of Lot No. 18, and part of lot No. 17, in north lot No. 2. He also purchased the farm on which his great-grand-son, Enos Lee, now lives, in 1786; he also owned Crumpond Corner. His sons were Joseph of Yorktown, who died aged 77, leaving William, who died aged 50; Joseph, who died aged 50; Hon. Elijah, who died aged 78, and Enos, who died aged 70, (the father of Stephen, whose sons are David and Enos of Yorktown). Thomas Lee, second son of Joseph, second son of William, of Cortlandt manor, died aged 80, leaving six sons. David, died aged 90, married a Young; Peter, of Ohio, died aged 80; Paul, died aged 70; Israel, of Orange Co., N. Y., died aged 80; Philippi, also of Orange, died aged 80; and William of New Jersey, died aged 80; John, third son of Joseph, removed from Long Island, to Yorktown, in 1750; he was born in 1726, married Sarah Perine, and died March 12th, 1816; she died July 31st, 1796, aged 74. Their children were, Thomas, died aged 40, without issue; John, of New Jersey, died aged 84; Sarah, died aged 65, married John Horton; Henry, died aged 90, without issue; Hannah, died aged 87; Margaret, died aged 77, married Jonas Williams; Abigail, died aged 60, married David Knapp; Phoebe, died aged 78, married Francis Colgrove; Dinah, married Thaddeus Rockwell; Robert Lee, of Yorktown, (father of the late Hon. Thomas R. Lee, of Croton Falls); Phoebe, died aged 84, married Dennis Coombs; Anna, died aged 85, married — Martin; Ruth, died aged 84, married John Wright; Elizabeth, died aged 80, married — Martineau; Sarah, died aged 60; Mary, died aged 64, and Abigail, died aged 18.<sup>a</sup>

In Crompond street, near the residence of Enos Lee, is situated an ancient cemetery<sup>b</sup> surrounded by a dense locust grove, containing memorials to the Travis's, Hyatt's, Ferris's and Hughson's:—

<sup>a</sup> The arms of this family are: az on a fesse, between two fillets, or, three leopard's heads, gu. Crest. A demi Moor ppur. vested gu. rimmed round the collar with two bars or, tied round the waist with a ribbon ar. wreathed about the head ar. and gu. holding in his dexter hand a gem-ring of the third.

<sup>b</sup> This cemetery (which is doubtless a public one) containing about half an acre of land, is claimed by John J. Roak and Asa Adams.



Here lies interred  
the body of  
**JOSEPH HUGHSON,**  
the son of  
**NATHANIEL HUGHSON,**  
Born Feb. the 16th day, 1744,  
Departed this life June the 30th day, 1759,  
Aged 15 years, 4 months  
and 2 weeks.

In memory of  
**JEMIMA FERRIS,**  
wife of  
**GEORGE FERRIS,**  
who was born April 8th, 1766,  
and departed this life  
March 14th, 1806,  
Aged 39 years, 11 months  
and 6 days.

Hail sinful mortal read this lay  
The type of thy short ending day,  
For lo, thy flesh devoted must  
Ere long return to native dust.

This parish was first organized under the ministrations of the Rev. James Wetmore, of Rye, and the Rev. Ebenezer Dibblee, of Stamford, Conn. Episcopal services, we are assured, were held at the village of Crompond, in Yorktown, at a very early period by the former gentleman who was not wanting in his endeavors to promote the interest of true religion among the inhabitants; but his advanced age and their distance prevented his being so very sociable, as otherwise he might have been. In 1762 Mr. Dibblee, who had occasionally performed services at Crompond, and St. George Talbot, Esq., in company visited this place. The former described the people at that time, "as sheep without a shepherd, a prey to various sectaries and enthusiastic lay teachers." He also says "that he found here many well wishers and professors of the Church of England, who told him they had not heard the Liturgy in several years." About 1774, a site was given by John Schuyler, Esq.,<sup>a</sup> for the erection of an Episcopal Church at Crompond in the vicinity of where the Congregational Meeting House stood; but the troubles consequent upon the breaking out of the Revolutionary war put an end to the enterprise, and the deed of gift has been withheld ever since. The original conveyance from Schuyler to Sackett is said to be in the

<sup>a</sup> John Schuyler, Esq., married Cornelia, daughter of Stephanus van Cortlandt. His son was Gen. Philip Schuyler, of the Revolutionary war.

possession of Mr. Baldwin, of Lake Mahopac. "The house of Mrs. Johnson stood on the church property, a little south of the Congregational Meeting House."<sup>a</sup>

A Presbyterian society in this town appears to have been first organized under the ministry of the Rev. Samuel Sackett, about 1740. Upon the 2nd of January, 1739, we find a deed for three acres of land given by Joseph Lane, Henry Beekman and Gertrude, his wife, unto John Hyatt, John Haight and David Travis, trustees for the first Presbyterian church, on which land the meeting house was erected; (said three acres being part of two hundred and twenty acres leased to Joseph Lane for three lives, 25th March, 1737.) dated 2nd of January, 1739, according to the act of 1784, and the act of 1801.<sup>b</sup>

The following title occurs in an old hog skin record formerly in the possession of the Rev. Silas Constant:—

"A Record of the Proceedings of the Presbyterian Society of Hanover, from the seventh Day of Aug., in the Thirty Fourth year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord George the Second by the Grace of God of Great Britain, France, Ireland &c., and in the year of our Lord Christ one Thousand and seven Hundred and sixty. An. Dom. 1760."<sup>c</sup>

On the 26th of May, 1784, this Society was incorporated under the name and title of the "First Presbyterian Society, upon the plan of the Church of Scotland." Aaron Furman, Gilbert Travis, Ebenezer White, Elijah Lee, Henry Strong and Gabriel Carman, trustees; elected 3d of May, 1784. A re-incorporation of the same occurs on the 4th of March, 1806.<sup>d</sup>

The *Presbyterian Church* is handsomely located on the highest ground of the village, commanding a fine view of the surrounding country; it was built in 1799, on the site of an older edifice erected cir. 1738, and destroyed by fire in June or July, 1799. The late Thomas Strong testified "that when the British, under Abercrombie, came to Crompond and burnt Strong's house, it was in the afternoon. But when their light horse arrived under Tarleton, it was early in the morning of the 24th of June. Tarleton came up by a circuitous route, following the Croton

<sup>a</sup> Testimony of Mrs. — Hyatt, of Somers. In reply to an enquiry on this subject, the Rev. N. Hyatt thus addressed the author. "St. James's Rectory, South Santee, Jan. 13th 1853.—Dear Sir, I have yours of the 6th inst., making enquiry respecting "a certain piece of property in Yorktown said to have been given for the use of the Church." All that I can say in reply is, that the late Thomas Strong of Crompond, assured me of the fact that there was land given for an Episcopal Church, and that it was near the Congregational Meeting House. I do not remember by whom it was given, or how much was given. My impression is that it was merely for a site for the church, though it may have been more. The time it was given I think was about the period of the Revolutionary war."

<sup>b</sup> County Rec. Religious Soc. Lib. A, 83.

<sup>c</sup> Kindly furnished by the Rev. W. J. Cummings.

<sup>d</sup> Co. Rec. Religious Soc. Lib. A, pp. 77, 79, 81, 83, 147.

above Pine's Bridge one mile and a half or more, crossing the Croton at Vails ford, advanced upon Crompond from the east by a road which rounds like a semi-circle, coming into the Crompond road a little south of where Delavan lived. It was at Delavan's house, where they found John Shaw, whom they killed—mistaking him for Capt. Delavan. This happened in the morning of June 24th, on the road from Crompond to Pine's Bridge, about three-quarters of a mile from Crompond. *The British burnt the Meeting House and parsonage* and retired upon Pine's Bridge. On the 3d of June, 1779, Major Abercombie, burnt Mayor Strong's house then occupied as a Court House, and also burnt a store house then used as a depot for arms and stores, &c., for the military. Shaw was killed at Delavan's stables; he defended himself stoutly, but was set upon by five or six burly horsemen and cut to pieces. The "Cow boys, Tories and horse thieves penetrated Westchester and Dutchess counties all the way to Albany. On the 24th of June, 1779, some of Tarleton's men advanced a mile north of the meeting house as far as the brook beyond my house."

"Ezekiel Hyatt raised a company of minute men in rifle dress, say about forty, with black gaiters, which were placed by the Provincial Congress under the three committee men for Crompond, viz., Joseph Strong, Abraham Purdy and Joseph Lee, who ordered Hyatt to apprehend one Chase a tory—very influential with the rabble. Chase was taken and lodged in a guard house at Peekskill, whereupon two or three hundred Tories assembled in arms and demanded his release; Hyatt, however studily refused to give him up. Nathaniel Merritt, who lived in Peekskill, was also another influential man among the Tories; he assembled a large company at his house and threatened to release the prisoner, upon this my father, uncle Henry, and Joseph Strong, obtained six hundred Continental troops of the committee, and disarmed the Tories and placed their arms and instruments in the Parsonage house for safe keeping. A more queer collection of arms it was impossible to collect together, old fire locks, rusty and worn out pistols, and ancient swords of all descriptions, &c."<sup>a</sup>

At the time of its destruction, the old church appears to have been used as a store house by the Continental troops; for, during the year 1739, a select committee appointed by Congress to investigate Revolutionary claims, reported "That Congress pay the Yorktown congregation the sum of three thousand five hundred dollars out of the first unappropriated funds—the Government having occupied the church and parson-

<sup>a</sup> Testimony of the late Thomas Strang, of Yorktown, in 1844. Mr. McDonald's MSS. in the possession of George Moore, Esq., of N. Y.

age as barracks and store houses, during the Revolutionary war." This appropriation, however, was never made by Congress.

The present edifice<sup>a</sup> is constructed of wood, presenting in front a lofty colonnade, above which rises a neat tower, finished with a rich cornice and pinnacles, in which is a large bell weighing over 600 lbs., inscribed as follows :

"Cast by J. H. Thompson, New York, 1823."

The Rev. Samuel Sackett, first pastor of this society, was the son of the Rev. Richard Sackett, minister of the second society of Greenwich, in 1717, who graduated A.M. at Yale College, in 1709, and died in 1727.



Presbyterian Church, Crompond.

He was installed pastor of the Bedford society in 1743, and charged with the occasional supply of Salem and Cortlandt manor.

In 1747, Crompond obtained his services for half his time, and in December, 1749, he was released from his labors here and gave the whole of his time to Bedford. In 1753, he resigned the care of the church in Bedford and settled at once over the church of Hanover, and again he appears to have gone back to Bedford, was dismissed April 1st, 1760, and the next year was installed again in Crompond. Mr. Sackett had a great deal of trouble with his brethren in the Presbytery. He differed widely with them, in both the doctrine and government of the Presbyterian church. On the whole he preached for twenty years here, and

<sup>a</sup> The celebrated Sampson Occom, of the Michign tribe, preached in this church on one occasion.



finally rested from his labors on the 5th of June, 1784. His tomb in the adjoining grave-yard, bears the following inscription:—

REV. SAMUEL SACKETT,

who died June 5th, 1784.

He was a judicious, faithful, laborious  
and successful minister of Christ.

Thrice blest departed spirit thou art free  
From the toils of mortality.

The remains of his son Joseph, repose close by, with the following inscription on the tomb-stone:—

Here lyes the body of

JOSEPH SACKETT,

Born April 18th, 1735,

and departed this life Dec. 1757.

“Behold all ye that now pass by,  
As you are now, so once was I,  
As I am now, so you may be,  
Prepare for death and follow me.”

Hannah, his daughter, married Stephen James de Lancey, second son of the Hon. James de Lancey, and a grand-son of Anna, daughter of Hon. Stephanus van Cortlandt, Lord of the manor of Cortlandt. This lady, mounted on a fine bay horse, was endeavoring to escape from the burning of the meeting-house in July, 1779, when she was overtaken, about one mile north of Crompond, by some of the enemies cavalry, who robbed her of her shoe-buckles and ear-rings, and requested her to dismount; she refused and exclaimed, “Is this the way you treat unprotected females? I will inform your superiors! where is your commander?” he appeared. “I am the wife of Stephen de Lancey; is this proper treatment for her? I demand an escort to a place of safety!” The British officer, on hearing de Lancey’s name, granted her request. She carefully, however, abstained from telling him that she was the daughter of Mr. Sackett, the whig Presbyterian minister of Crompond.<sup>a</sup>

#### LIST OF PASTORS AND SUPPLIES.

| INST. OR CALL.   | PASTORS.             | VACATED BY |
|------------------|----------------------|------------|
| Supply in 1742.  |                      |            |
| Pastor 1761      | REV. SAMUEL SACKETT  | death      |
| Supply in 1785-6 |                      |            |
| Pastor 1786      | REV. SILAS CONSTANT  | resigned   |
| 1808             | REV. ANDREW THOMPSON | “          |

<sup>a</sup> Testimony of Thomas Strang.—McDonald MSS. in possession of Geo. H. Moore, Esq.

| INST. OR CALL.   | PASTORS.                          | VACATED BY      |
|------------------|-----------------------------------|-----------------|
| 1822             | REV. ASAHEL BRONSON               | "               |
| June 14th, 1827  | REV. RICHARD WYNKOOP <sup>a</sup> | "               |
| April 18th, 1836 | REV. ROBERT G. THOMPSON           | "               |
| Nov. 11th, 1847  | REV. MATTHEW T. ADAM              | "               |
| 1853             | REV. SAMUEL D. WESTERVELT         | "               |
| Oct. 15th, 1866  | REV. JAMES W. JOHNSTON            | "               |
| Aug. 8th, 1877   | REV. WILLIAM J. CUMMING           | present pastor. |

In the grave-yard surrounding the church are monuments to Captain Samuel Sackett, Deacon Knapp, Dr. Brewer, and others.

DR. JAMES BREWER,  
a native of Massachusetts,  
but for many years a practising Physician  
in Yorktown.

Whilst visiting a patient in Jefferson Valley, he was captured by Cow-boys, and trying to escape in Hog Lane, was killed by them, November 20th, 1780, aged 39 years, 4 months and 7 days.

In the south-east corner of the yard (just thirty-six feet from the present east fence and six feet from the south fence), lie the mortal remains of Col. Christopher Green, the hero of *Redbank*, and Major Flagg, his brave companion in arms, both of whom fell by the hands of cruel treachery, on the morning of the 14th of May, 1781. But where shall we look for a monument, or even a stone, to mark the spot where these brave patriots lie pillowed in the dust? When will justice be rendered to the memory of the brave and illustrious dead, who fell in the noble cause of freedom?

Near this spot are interred the remains of the noted Brom. Dyckman, of Revolutionary fame.

The new parsonage is pleasantly situated, facing Crompond Street. The old one, which has been sold, stood on the site of a still older edifice, which was occupied for some time, during the Revolution, by the Yorktown Committee of Public Safety. Here that tribunal transacted business, disarmed the disaffected, and punished the incorrigible. Zephaniah Platt and others, aided by six hundred Connecticut troops, disarmed the Loyalists of Cortlandt's manor, during the winter of 1776. Here, also, a convention of Congress assembled for the purpose of distributing commissions to the officers who were empowered to raise the militia.

For the destruction of this obnoxious post, Col. Robertson obtained of the English governor, a special order and the command of an entire regiment. From New York, he appears to have proceeded by water to Peekskill, where he landed, swearing he would burn the d——d Committee

<sup>a</sup> His son is the present Mr. Richard Wynkoop of New York city.

House ; and guided by a spy, named Caleb Morgan, marched to Crompond, where he burnt the parsonage, then used as a store house and arsenal. Upon the departure of the British troops, the Continental guard took possession of the meeting-house.

The Congregational Society of Crompond, which was organized under the ministry of the Rev. Silas Constant, has ceased to exist—the members having been absorbed into the Presbyterian Church.

In 1787, Dr. Elias Cornelius and Mr. Benjamin Haight, were chosen deacons. In 1790, a part of the members withdrew by mutual consent, and formed a new church at Red Mills. About the year 1806, a division occurred in the church, when more than two-thirds of her members adhered to Mr. Constant, and maintained the Congregational mode of worship, the remainder resumed the Presbyterian form.

In 1816, a number of members harmoniously left the society and formed a church at Peekskill.

From the time of Mr. Constant's death until the closing of the organization quite a number of ministers had officiated here, among whom may be mentioned the Rev. Daniel Jones, Rev. Griffeth H. Griffeth, Rev. Albert Hyde, and the Rev. J. B. Loring.

The church edifice has been sold and removed from its former site.

Among other monuments in the grave yard is the following :

In memory of the  
REV. SILAS CONSTANT,  
who departed this life  
March 22, 1825,  
Aged 75 years, 2 mo. and 7 days.

The *Friends meeting house* is situated at a short distance from the village of Crompond, and stands on land jointly given by John Clapp and Joseph Waters, in 1774.

The following is a brief abstract of the conveyance :—

“ John Clapp of Greenwich, and Joseph Waters of Cortlandt manor, of the first part, convey to John Griffin, John Cromwell, John Cornell, Uriah Field and Thomas Clapp, of the second part, all that tract of land being in *Amawalk*, in Cortlandt manor, consisting of two acres lying and being in the north-east corner of great lot No. 4. Dated 12 day of October, 1774.

The Methodist Episcopal society of Yorktown, was first incorporated upon the 13th of August, 1792 ; Timothy Oakley, John Oakley, Solomon Fowler, James Haden, Thomas Kirkham and Jacob Badeau, trustees.<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Religious Soc. Lib. A. 34. For re-incorporation, see pages 163, 175, &c.

A Baptist society was incorporated on the 27th of April, 1793; Reuben Garrison, John Tompkins and Amos Lane, trustees.<sup>a</sup>

*Crompond*, the principal village in this township, is situated on the high road leading from Somers to Peekskill; it contains a Presbyterian church, a post office, a store, and several dwellings. The name is undoubtedly derived from the large pond that lies north-west of the village, which, from its peculiar shape, is sometimes called the *crooked pond*—"Cron," denoting in the Dutch language, crooked. This beautiful sheet of water covers an area of 200 acres.

In the vicinity of Crompond, and bordering on King street, is the residence of the late Hon. Henry White, (now occupied by his nephew, Constant White) one of the judges of the late Court of Common Pleas in this county. Judge White was the son of Ebenezer White, M. D., who died 8th of March, 1825, by his wife Helena Bartow, and grandson of the Rev. Ebenezer White of South Hampton, Long Island. Dr. White left issue also, Bartow White, Dr. Ebenezer White of Somers-town (for many years Surrogate of the County and a Member of Assembly) Lewis of Peoria, James, Theodosius of Somers, and a daughter Catharine. Judge White, died Nov, 5th 1857. Dr. White of Yorktown, through the whole course of the Revolution sustained the character of a patriot, with that devotion and firmness which characterized the many at that eventful period of our history. It appears that the enemy made several unsuccessful attempts to capture this distinguished individual. On one occasion they were desirous of exchanging the doctor for a British surgeon then in the hands of the Americans. To effect his surprisal a large party of Light Horse were despatched to Crompond, with strict orders to surround his dwelling and make him prisoner. Some kind friend, however, gave the doctor timely warning which enabled him to escape.

As a substitute, they seized upon Dr. James Brewer, who resided in the immediate neighborhood, and were proceeding home with their prisoner, when passing through Stony street they were fired upon by a party of Americans, who lay concealed behind the fences. Dr. Brewer received a mortal wound and expired the next morning, Nov. 20, 1780, in the arms of Dr. White—who had thus narrowly escaped the melancholy fate of his friend. It deserves to be mentioned, that he was the only one wounded of the party. Dr. Brewer, who thus perished at the early age of thirty-nine, was a native of Massachusetts and left by his wife, Hannah Brewer, four sons and three daughters. His grandson is the present Dr. James Brewer, of Peekskill.

<sup>a</sup> Ibid. Lib. A. 40. For re-incorporation, see page 93.





## PEDIGREE OF THE STRANG'S, OF RYE AND YORKTOWN.

Arms, gu. two lions, passant, guardant, arg. Crest, a lion, passant, guardant, or.

Daniel L'Estrange and Charlotte his wife, a daughter of Francis Hubert, being Protestants, were compelled to make their escape from the city of Paris, in 1685, during the persecution under Louis XIV. by the Roman Catholics and Jesuits, and came to the city of London, in Great Britain, where L'Estrange, through the interest of some merchants obtained a Lieut. in the Guards of James, then King of Great Britain, and continued there until 1688, when he with his wife embarked for America, in company with a number of French Protestant families, and arrived at the city of New York, from whence they, moving to the town of New Rochelle, in Westchester County, settled themselves; after remaining some years there, they moved to the town of Rye, in the same county, where they continued until the time of their respective deaths; Mr. L'Estrange dying a few years before his wife.

Daniel L'Estrange, nat. 1656, at Paris, will dated 1706, vol. 7, 288—Charlotte, da. of Francis Hubert.

Daniel—Phoebe Purdy Henry—Kissam Gabriel—Charlotte—Roger Park Penelope—Sam'l Purdy Mary—John Budd Lucy—Davis a West India planter

William

Daniel—Eliza Galpin Joseph—1. Jemima Budd  
2 Anna Haight

Francis—Eliza Hyatt

Gabriel—Hannah Clements

John, ob. s. p.

Henry—Margaret Hazard, ma. 1761  
ob. July 22, 1832, set. 83

Eliza—Joseph Sackett  
Phoebe—Ab'm Purdy

Daniel—Mary Hubbs, ob. set. 96  
ob. set. 88

Levina—John Woods, Esq.  
Hannah—Gabriel Carman  
Eliza—Rich. Vandreck

Martha—Jas. Purdy nat. 1789  
Phoebe—Keebler nat. 1776  
Margaret—Wood nat. 1788  
Hannah—Henry nat. 1778  
Sally, nat. May 10, 1768  
Bersey—Beth Whit- nat. Sept. 18, 1776  
Nancy—Dan'l Horton nat. Sept. 20, 1764  
John Hazard—Eliza nat. 1786  
Henry—Catharine nat. 1781  
Nathaniel—Levi nat. 1774  
Daniel—Sally Ryder nat. 1772  
Ebeneszer—Jemima nat. 1770  
Thomas ob. s. p. nat. 1768

Mary—Frances  
Jensbe—  
Henry  
DeUingham

Gabriel William

John—Drusila Oakley  
John, of Yorktown

Sylvanus  
Joshua—Rebecca

Jemima—Stephen Browne  
Deborah—Sally Waring  
Catharine White

Joseph—Elizabeth Belcher Morgan  
White

Mahida  
Jonas  
Maria Antoinette  
Hegea  
Eugene—Wm. Belcher  
Cuthbert  
Edward Jenner  
Stephen Brown  
Theodosius  
James Eugene, of Jefferson  
Barrow

Ada—R. Wynkoop

Jemima, ob. s. p.  
Sarah Fowler  
Het-ty Hav-iland  
Gilbert  
John

Juliette  
Mary  
Hetty—Charles Diven  
Pamela—James Wright  
Jane—Daniel Knapp  
Alfred  
Joseph, of Peekskill  
Peter—Caroline Standley  
Frederick—Catharine Hugson

Two infants ob. young

Jemima—Caleb Smith  
Sally Ann  
Maria—Samuel M'Cord  
Charlotte—Stephen Shlick  
John

Ester  
Eliza—John Ward  
Mary—Jacob Shlick  
Ghirard—Leah Briggs  
Solomon—Elizabeth Cove L. I.

Samuel  
Hetty Whitt

Daniel  
Joseph

Nicholas

Daniel—Maria  
of Hal-let's Cove

Anne E.—Wm. H. Craft  
Edward Bogardus

Susan Anne

Thomas, of Mobile

James S., N. Y.

Chas. E. of Katonah

Poly—Jacob Wilday  
Catharine—Henry Griffin  
Elizabeth—Levi Dearborn  
Hannah—Abraham C. Greener  
Stephen  
Ann—Hayland Cornell

Daniel, of N. Y.  
Eliza Taylor

Joseph—Anne Theall

John, of N. Y.

Sarah Gedfield

Henry—Eliza Reynolds

William—Mary Bouton

Levina—Benjamin Crocker  
Betsey—Gilbert Brown

In King street is also situated the residence of Major Thomas Strang a soldier of the Revolution. Major Strang is the son of Capt. Henry Strang who was the grandson of the worthy Huguenot, Daniel L'Estrange and Charlotte his wife. From the genealogical table in possession of the Strangs of Putnam, it appears that Daniel L'Estrange and Charlotte his wife, (daughter of Francis Hubert) being Protestants, fled from the city of Paris in the year of our Lord 1685, during the persecutions under Louis the XIV, and came to the city of London. He obtained a lieutenancy in the guards of James II., King of Great Britain, and continued there until the year 1688, when with his wife he embarked for America in company with a number of French Protestants and arrived at the city of New York. From thence he went to New Rochelle, and subsequently removed to Rye.<sup>a</sup> Daniel L'Estrange who was born in the city of Paris A. D. 1656, died at Rye in this county, A. D. 1706. His will bears date the same year. The late Major Joseph Strang, uncle of the present proprietor, greatly distinguished himself in the bateaux service during the old French war.

In the same street resided Susan De Lancey and her mother Anne, daughter of Col. Caleb Heathcote, and widow of the Hon. James De Lancey, Lt. Governor of the Province of New York, who died in July 1760. These ladies retired here, for the sake of escaping the turmoils of the Revolution. Mrs. De Lancey died here in 1779, and was buried at Crompond; but her remains have since been removed to Heathcote Hill, Mamaroneck. During the war their house afforded an asylum for the persecuted, who found here a safe protection from their enemies. Susan De Lancey afterward resided with her brother, John Peter De Lancey, at Heathcote Hill, where she died in 1815 and was interred in the De Lancey family burying ground.

Near the main road leading from Crompond to Somers is situated the estate and residence of the late Robert P. Lee, Esq., for many years one of the leading members of the bar in this country. Mr. Lee was the youngest son of John Lee of Yorktown, whose grandfather William Lee, emigrated to this country in 1675 from Nottingham, England.

The village of Crompond and its immediate neighborhood appears to have been greatly harrassed during the revolutionary troubles by frequent forays of the enemy. Before the morning of the 24th of June, 1779, (says General Heath,) about 200 of the enemy's light horse came up as far as Crompond, surprising two militia pickets, killed and took prisoners

<sup>a</sup> The following tradition has been handed down in the family, that the above Charlotte L'Estrange wishing to accompany her husband in his escape from France left her infant as a hostage in Paris, her enemies hoping by this artifice to insure her return, but taking ship the first opportunity she crossed the channel into England. During the bitter prosecution that preceded their flight the family Bible was concealed beneath the hearth stone.

nearly thirty men. About 130 light infantry of the enemy at the same time came out from Verplank's Point, made an excursion round and then returned.<sup>a</sup> Upon another occasion the Continental troops having stacked their arms in the church, then used as an Arsenal, were engaged at breakfast when the enemy made a sudden and furious onset, capturing and killing some and compelling others to seek safety in flight. Among the latter was Bot Lent who fled down King street, closely pursued by two of the British light horse. After following the road some distance Lent took to the woods, when his enemies gave up the pursuit. They had scarcely, however, turned their backs, than he raised his rifle and fired at the nearest. The shot must have taken effect, for his comrade was afterwards seen dragging him down the road covered with blood. Major Strang, who happened to be miserably mounted, was pursued down the same street, and narrowly escaped by jumping from his horse.

It seems from the following letter, that timely notice was occasionally given of the enemy's approach:—

*Hanover, Saturday Morning, one o'clock.*

SIR.—Captain Buckhout and Mr. Hunt are sent by Colonel Putnam to inform you that the light-horse are to be in this place about day-light. He is at Solomon Hunt's with his detachment; any of the inhabitants who shall join him, will be gratefully received.

I am yours,

JOSEPH STRANG.

N. B.—I am desired to let you know that it is expected that you will acquaint your neighbors up the street, and Mr. Carmans.

The subjoined account of this place is given by Thacher, in his military journal:—

“CROMPOND, MARCH, 1781.

“The advanced guard of our army, consisting of about two hundred men, is posted at *Crompond*, about twenty miles below West Point, and is relieved every two or three weeks. A surgeon constantly attends, and I am now ordered to repair to that post, to relieve Dr. Thomas.

“I have taken my quarters at Crompond, in a house with Major Trescott, who commands at this post. This vicinity is constantly harrassed by small parties of volunteers on our side, and parties of royalists and tories on the other, who are making every effort to effect mutual destruction; seeking every opportunity to beat up each other's quarters, and to kill or capture all who are found in arms. This is to be considered a very hazardous situation; it requires the utmost vigilance to guard against a surprise. Major Trescott is an excellent disciplinarian, an active vigilant officer, and well acquainted with his duty. A party of volunteers collected here on horseback, for a secret expedition, and by their earnest request, Major Trescott marched in the night with a party to cover their retreat, and to

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Mem. 206.



take any advantage which might offer. The party returned the next day with six tory prisoners, three of whom were wounded by the broad-sword. One of our volunteers, named Hunt, received a dangerous wound through the shoulder and lungs; the air escaped from the wound at every breath. Dr. Eustis came to the lines, and dilated the wound in the breast; and as the patient is athletic, and had not sustained a very copious loss of blood, he recommended repeated and liberal blood letting—observing that in order to cure a wound through the lungs, you must bleed your patient to *death*. He eventually recovered, which is to be ascribed principally to the free use of the lancet, and such abstemious living, as to reduce him to the greatest extremity. A considerable number of wounded prisoners receive my daily attention.

“A gentleman volunteer, by name Requaw, received a dangerous wound and was carried into the British lines; I was requested by his brother to visit him, under the sanction of a flag of truce, in company with Dr. White, who resides in this vicinity. This invitation I cheerfully accepted; and Mr. Requaw having obtained a flag from the proper authority and procured horses, we set off in the morning, arrived at Westchester before evening, and dressed the wounded man. We passed the night at Mrs. Bartow's, mother-in-law of Dr. W. She has remained at her farm between the lines during the war, and being friendly to our interest, has received much abusive treatment from the royalists. We were treated in the most friendly manner, and her daughter, an amiable well educated girl, entertained us in conversation till one o'clock in the morning, relating numerous occurrences and incidents of an interesting nature, respecting the royal party. The next day we visited our patient again, paid the necessary attention and repaired to a tavern, where I was gratified with an interview with the much famed Colonel De Lancey, who commands the Refugee Corps. He conducted with much civility, and having a public dinner prepared at the tavern, he invited us to dine with him and his officers. After dinner, Colonel De Lancey furnished us with a permit to return with our flag; we rode ten miles, and took lodgings in a private house. Here we were informed that six of our men, having taken from the refugees thirty head of cattle, were overtaken by forty of De Lancey's corps and were all killed but one, and the cattle re-taken. In the morning breakfasted with a friendly Quaker family, in whose house was one of our men who had been wounded when four others were killed; we dressed his wounds, which were numerous and dangerous. In another house we saw four dead bodies, mangled in a most inhuman manner by the refugees, and among them, one groaning under five wounds on his head, two of them quite through the skull bone with a broad-sword. This man was capable of giving us an account of the murder of his four companions. They surrendered and begged for life, but their entreaties were disregarded, and the swords of their cruel foes were plunged into their bodies so long as signs of life remained. We found many friends to our cause, who reside on their farms between the lines of the two armies, whose situation is truly deplorable, being continually exposed to the ravages of the tories, horse thieves, and cow boys, who rob and plunder them without mercy, and the personal abuse and punishments which they inflict is almost incredible.”

About a mile below the residence of Mr. William Smith, on the Pines Bridge road, a narrow lane diverges south-west to Davenport, or Dan-

forth's house. Here, Col. Christopher Greene was posted with the Rhode Island regiment, in advance of the Continental army, in 1781, and near the French force under Count Rochambeau. The following communication appears to have been addressed to Col. Greene, by John Dexter, of the orderly office, upon the reorganization of his force:—

ORDERLY OFFICE, IOTOWA, NOV. 19th, 1780.

MY DEAR SIR:—

I have been a considerable time expecting your arrival at camp, or at least a deputy or delegate from our regiment, in order to a settlement of the officers who continue in service from our State on the new arrangement. There are many circumstances which must inevitably attend it, that may possibly and probably not be considered without the most particular attention and deliberation. But the most material, which I recollect at this time, is this -- "The filling up all the vacancies in the regiment which happened previous to the passing the late resolution, for the re-arrangement of the army as far as the officers in it will extend." This I have made particular enquiry respecting at head-quarters. They say it is not only right, but tolerated, and is to be pursued in all the different lines of the army.

In this promotion I conceive my brother will be intererested, and I would wish to see the arrangement before it is delivered at head-quarters.

It has also been determined at head-quarters that the Captain Lieutenants must continue on the new arrangements as Lieutenants only, but are to be the eldest Lieutenants in the regiment.

Why I mention this circumstance is this: that on filling the vacancies in our regiment my brother will be entitled to the Captain Lieutenancy as will Jerauldin Angells.

There are particular reasons, besides the justice of it, why I wish the vacancies should be filled. These, however, I should wish not to communicate—only by word of mouth.

You must all along observe that I have addressed you as the Colonel of the one regiment to be raised by the State of Rhode Island, as I cannot entertain a thought of your wishing to retire.

I should have seen you at Rhode Island before this time if the state of my *finances*, would have admitted, but all the cry in camp is want of money, no money, no money since the first of the year.

You may, if you please, show my brother this letter with my love to him—I wish to see him. I would write him if I had time.

I am in the greatest hurry, but nevertheless do not forget that I am, with the greatest respect,

Your most obedient servant,  
(Signed)

JNO. DEXTER.

Eight days after the date of the above letter, the following order was addressed to Col. Greene by General Washington:—

SIR:—

It is probable you will receive the Count de Rochambeau's order to march with your regiment to West Point. Should this be the case you will only come

on with such officers as are to remain on service on the new arrangement, and such men as are engaged for the war, or at least for a term that will last through the next campaign. The other men you may dismiss, unless the Count de Rochambeau, should find any employment for them where they now are. In this you will perceive, it is presumed you have already agreed upon the arrangement.

I am, sir, your obedient humble servant,

(Signed)

GEO. WASHINGTON.

Head-quarters, Nov. 22d, 1780.

Since writing the above, I have received your letter of the 18th.

5

Public Service,

COLONEL GREENE,

Newport, Long Island.

GEO. WASHINGTON.

The arrangement alluded to in the foregoing letter, must have soon after taken place; for on the 15th of April, 1781, the Colonel accompanied Major Flagg in viewing the lines at Pines Bridge, as it appears from the following letter addressed by Col. Greene to Col. Samuel Ward of Warwick, Rhode Island. It showed that the Colonel had some forebodings of the fate which awaited him:—

DEAR COL:—

RHODE ISLAND VILLAGE, 16TH APRIL, 1781.

I had the happiness to receive your two favours of the 12th and 31st ult. by Major Flagg, and, sorry you meet with so much difficulty in getting the matters you have in charge for yourself and old mother officers settled to your mind; however, I don't doubt your perseverance will in a short time effect it. I know, nothing in your power will be omitted to serve your friends of which I have ever had the strongest assurances of being one. I often very agreeably reflect upon the toils and dangers we have gone through together, during the course of this horrid war; and nothing would have been more agreeable than to have had your company in command to the end of it. But so it could not be, without injustice to a great military character and a very worthy gentleman.<sup>a</sup> We therefore must, for the present, be apart. I was overjoyed at the Major's arrival. I yesterday went with him to the lines at Pines Bridge. I shall join him, myself, in a very few days. We have at present but about two hundred, including officers, to guard about twenty miles; but expect, as soon as the men get out of the small-pox, to have the force augmented to three or four hundred. I am exceedingly sorry the Governor and family had not the pleasure of Gen. Washington's company when he was in Rhode Island, as I am sure nothing could have been more pleasing to them. I hardly know what to think of the plan of boats, as they call them, in the French plan you sent me; and therefore can at present give no judgment on the matter. Should you see any of the gentlemen of my acquaintance, please to present them with my most respectful compliments. I hope to have the pleasure of their company in the field this summer. I have been much indulged, and consequently very lazy. Since I arrived here I have not been called upon for any regular tour

<sup>a</sup> Lient. Col. Olney is here referred to.

of duty—unless dining out sometimes at headquarters, and often with Gen. Heath and other gentlemen, can be called so. *I expect when I go upon the lines to be more industrious and alert, otherwise I may be surprised; that, you know, I always held up as unpardonable in an officer.*

We have no late news, none later than has been in all the prints from Gen. Greene. I am exceedingly anxious to hear from him, his army I fear is too raw to contend with the troops he has to oppose it. If he succeeds with such men he must immortalize his name. I am certain he is as equal to the task as any one, but I am sure he must have his head as well as his hands full, and perhaps the ablest generals and best troops in the British army to cope with.

The villains who go by the name of *Cow-boys*, are often out stealing horses and cattle from the inhabitants. The laws of the State, I believe, are not severe enough upon them. I have heard of many being taken and none hanged.

And believe me to be your sincere Friend and Servant,

COL. WARD.

C. GREENE.

Address COL. SAMUEL WARD,<sup>a</sup>  
Warwick.

C. GREENE."

Scarcely had a month elapsed ere Col. Greene's worst fears were fully realized by his surprisal at Davenport's or Danforth's house, by the British refugees, upon the 13th of May, 1781. The following account of this incursion, is given by General Heath:—

"The next day intelligence was received, that on the 13th, Col. Green of the Rhode Island regiment, who was doing duty on the lines of the American army, was surprised by a body of the enemy's horse, supposed to be about 150 dragoons, and that the Colonel, Major Fagg, two subalterns and twenty-seven men were killed, and several wounded. Col. Green was a brave and intrepid officer, and his loss was much regretted. The colonel had taken post above and near to Croton river, at a place where the river was fordable, to prevent the enemy passing up by this ford to ravage the country. He had practiced the greatest vigilance in guarding this ford in the night time, taking off the guards after sunrise, apprehending that the enemy would never presume to cross the river in the day time; but the enemy, having learnt his mode of doing duty, on the morning of the 13th effected his overthrow, by crossing the ford soon after the guards had come off, and surrounding their quarters before they had an idea of any enemy being near them. In this situation, the utmost exertion could not then avail them."<sup>b</sup>

A person named Gilbert Totten, is said to have betrayed his countrymen to Col. Peter de Lancey, on this occasion, in retaliation for an act of discipline administered under the following circumstances:—It appears Totten had been for some time mustered into the English service, hold-

<sup>a</sup> This signature doubtless served as a passport to bearer. Copied from original document in possession of the late John Ward, of Bond street, N. Y.

<sup>b</sup> Heath's Mem. 258—9.



ing a captain's commission, and had just been arrested by Col. Dunmore (who commanded a regiment of colored soldiers stationed near Pines Bridge, about half a mile north-east of the pickets on Crow Hill) for coming up with a flag, under peculiar circumstances, and a black soldier placed over him as guard. Upon his discharge, shortly after, he swore vengeance, "declaring that the next flag sent up would be a red one."<sup>a</sup> "When Totten was up at Pines Bridge, in the spring of 1781, and insulted, the officer of the guard said to him on parting: "When will you be up again with a flag, (or another one be sent?)" To which he replied: "The next flag that comes up *"will be a bloody one."* With these ominous words he departed. "When Totten was insulted at Pines Bridge, just before the capture of Davenport's house, he said on parting, to the officer who commanded the guard, "When I come up again it will be with a *red flag*, and after that *niggers will be scarce.*"<sup>b</sup>

True to his word, he went directly to Col. de Lancey's head-quarters at Morrisania and gave him the clue by which he might cross the Croton and surprise, not only Green, but the negro guard at Pines Bridge. Capt. Samuel Kipp (with Totten as guide)<sup>c</sup> probably led the party, (which he was pleased to denominate Invincibles) over the ford, with the full determination neither to give or take quarter.

July 1867, the late Joshua Carpenter informed the author, "that his aunt Fanny Totten, told him that Gilbert Totten (her cousin) led de Lancey's party to Davenport's house, and that the enemy came up (after crossing the Croton at Oblenus's ford) by way of the valley on the east side of Turkey Mountain, then a perfect wilderness, until they struck just west of the house; when suddenly they wheeled and galloped up the hill, surprising the sentinel who fired and fled towards the house. The American soldiers were lying on the stoop when alarmed by the firing on the west side. Some managed to escape by jumping off the east end of the piazza, and making for the orchard in the rear. When the firing first began, the sun was about an hour high. The sliding of the window by Mayor Flagg first attracted the enemies attention, and induced them to fire into that part of the house. Between twelve and twenty fell, in and around the house, and were afterward interred in one common grave or pit in the north-west corner of the lot, near an ash tree. The British returned by the way of the Crompond road and so to Pines

<sup>a</sup> Testimony of Gen. Nat. Montross, of Yorktown.—McDonald's MSS. in possession of George Moore, Esq.,

<sup>b</sup> Test. of Abraham Weeks of Somers, aged 82.—McDonald MSS. in possession of George Moore, Esq.

<sup>c</sup> Totten was humane to prisoners and popular, but Capt. Samuel Kipp was severe.—Test. of Joseph Putney, McDonald's MSS.

Bridge, where they surprised and shot the colored picket guard stationed there. One mile from the entrance of the lane, by a rock on the right hand side of the road, and about a quarter of a mile from Pines Bridge, descending, Green fell off the horse and was laid down to die.

De Lancey anxious for an opportunity to return the recent attack made upon his quarters by Captain Cushing, instantly fitted out a force of about 150 dragoons, as described by Heath. The route selected by their experienced commander, was the road leading to White Plains, by which means the party escaped through the only opening in the long line of sentinels stretched across the country. Near Chappaqua, they halted for a short time at the house of Daniel Underhill, and then proceeded by the west road—which is an intersection of the present Sing Sing turnpike—till they arrived at the residence of Mr. Lyon; here, they anxiously awaited the withdrawal of the American guard at Oblenus's ford, which is nearly one mile west of Pine's Bridge. Up to this moment no one of the party, save their commander and his guide, knew the object for which they had been detailed. According to General Heath's account, the American officers appear to have had no idea that the enemy would dare to cross the ford after sunrise; and therefore had taken no precautions to prevent it. By this means, Davenport's house was surrounded by the enemy, and all possibility of escape cut off before the danger was discovered. De Lancey remained on the south side of the river, probably with a view to cover the retreat of the party, if it should prove necessary.

To General Heath's account of the surprisal, we must be permitted to add the following extract from Col. H. Lee's history of the Southern war:—

“In the spring of 1781, when General Washington began to expect the promised naval aid from our best friend, the ill-fated Louis XVI., he occasionally approached the enemy's lines on the side of York island. In one of these movements, Col. Green, with a suitable force, was posted on the Croton River, in advance of the army. On the other side of this river lay a corps of refugees, (American citizens who had joined the British army,) under the command of Col. Delancy. These half citizens, half soldiers, were notorious for rapine and murder: and to their vindictive conduct may be justly ascribed most of the cruelties which stained the progress of our war, and which at length compelled Washington to order Captain Asgill, of the British army, to be brought to head-quarters, for the purpose of retaliating, by his execution, for the murder of Capt. Huddy, of New Jersey, perpetrated by a Capt. Lippencourt, of the refugees. The commandant of these refugees, (Delancy was not present,) having ascertained the position of Greene's corps, which the colonel had cantoned in adjacent farm houses—probably with a view to the procurement of subsistence—took the resolution to strike it. This was accordingly done, by a nocturnal movement, on the 18th of

May. The enemy crossed the Croton before daylight, and hastening his advance, reached our station with the dawn of day unperceived. As he approached the farm house in which the Lieutenant-Colonel was quartered, the noise of troops marching was heard, which was the first intimation of the fatal design. Greene and Major Flagg immediately prepared themselves for defence; but they were too late, so expeditious was the progress of the enemy. Flagg discharged his pistols, and instantly afterwards fell mortally wounded, when the ruffians (unworthy the appellation of soldiers) burst open the door of Greene's apartment. Here the gallant veteran singly received them with his drawn sword.<sup>a</sup> Several fell beneath the arm accustomed to conquer; till at length, overpowered by numbers, and faint from the loss of blood streaming from his wounds, barbarity triumphed over valor. 'His right arm was almost cut off in two places, the left in one, a severe cut on the left shoulder, a sword thrust through the abdomen, a bayonet in the right side, and another through the abdomen, several sword cuts on the head, and many in different parts of the body.'

"Thus cruelly mangled, fell the generous conqueror of Count Donop, whose wounds, as well as those of his unfortunate associates, had been tenderly dressed as soon as the battle terminated, and whose pains and sorrows had been as tenderly assuaged. How different was the relentless fury here displayed!

"The commander-in-chief heard with anguish and indignation the tragical fate of his loved, his faithful friend and soldier, in whose feelings the army sincerely participated. On the subsequent day, the corpse was brought to head-quarters, and his funeral was solemnized with military honors and universal grief.<sup>b</sup>

The following additional particulars concerning this melancholy affair are contained in a letter from the paymaster, Thomas Hughes to Mr. Job Greene of Warwick, R. I., a son of Colonel Greene.

RHODE ISLAND VILLAGE, 14TH, MAY, 1781.

DEAR SIR:—It is with pain I write on a subject that is so nearly and closely connected to you as a parent; I must, my dear friend, inform you of the unhappy fate which befel your father.

This morning the enemy made an attack on the lines, which was a compleat surprise, and he fell a sacrifice to the cruel hand of tyranny in defending himself against the strokes struck by the light horsemen. He had his right arm almost cut off in two places, his left in one, a severe cut in the left shoulder, a sword run through his body, a bayonett into his right side, another through his body, his head cut to pieces in several places, his back and body cut and hacked in such a manner as gives me pain to inform you: he was carried about three quarters of a mile from his quarters, where they left him to dye, or rather through the loss of blood and not strength to go forward, finished his days in the woods; and as they

<sup>a</sup> "When Davenport's house was taken one Ackerly broke in and entered first; Col. Greene seized and threw him down, and was on the point of dispatching him with his sword, when he received a cut in the arm, which disabled him. Ackerly was from near Pines Bridge."—Test. of Joshua Putney, aged 84.—McDonald MSS. in possession of Geo. Moore, Esq., Lib. of N. Y. Hist. Soc. The officer commanding at the Bridge, who insulted Totten escaped on the 14th of May, 1781, by being absent accidentally at the time of attack, some two or three miles off.—Test. of Joshua Putney.—McDonald MSS.

<sup>b</sup> At the close of the Revolutionary war Col. DeLancey politely forwarded to General Thomas, of Harrison, the blood-stained pocket-books of Col. Green and Major Flagg. These interesting relics, we regret to say, (since the General's decease) have been destroyed.

went by the houses informed the inhabitants, should there be any enquiring after the Colonel, that they left him dead in the edge of a wood. This cruel and barbarous treatment was perpetrated by Dullenceas core, himself at the head. Major Flagg, as he arose from his bed received a ball in his head; and when they entered the house they stabbed and cut him in a cruel manner, that he expired immediately. A doctor of the New Hampshire line, and a lieutenant of the Massachusetts line, was wounded in the house and carried off. Lieutenant Macomber being sick in bed, was made a prisoner. Ensign Guanman, who commanded a guard at the bridge, with himself and all but me was talking or killed.

I went on the lines the evening before, to pay off the troops, and tarried with Greeman, my horse being hitched at the door; and when the alarm was given, I saddled him and just made my escape. My flight was so rapid, I left my recpts, behind. The woman of the house was so kind as to hide them, so that I received them again. The loss, my dear friend, must fall heavily on the family; but as life is uncertain, we must surrender it when the great Jehovah calls. To-morrow we shall bestow on each of them the honors that is due to men who so nobly suffered the pains of death in the service of their country. It is uncertain what number we had killed and talking; but I believe about forty talking, and near twenty killed and wounded. John is killed, Prince wounded and I am affraid will dye.

Please to make my respects to your mamma and sisters, and believe me to be with esteem

[ Signed ]

your sincere friend and humble servant,

MR. JOB GREENE.

THOMAS HUGHES.<sup>a</sup>

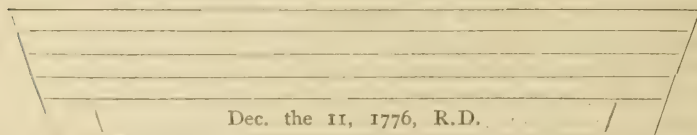
MR. JOB GRENE,

Warwick.

Honored by } <sup>b</sup>

LT. DEXTER. }

We have seen that Davenport's house was occupied at the time of the surprisal by Richardson Davenport, who was one of the early settlers of this portion of Cortlandt manor when it was a perfect wilderness. For some time the family occupied a stone cellar, until the present structure was erected in 1776, as appears from the following inscription placed in



the passage-way near the front door. For some years it was used as a tavern, until occupied by Col. Greene as head-quarters. Jacob Carpenter, who married Rachel, daughter of Richardson Davenport, moved

<sup>a</sup> Hughes was Capt. and Paymaster of the Rhode Island Regiment and a son of Col. Green.

<sup>b</sup> Copied from the original document in the possession of the late John Ward, Esq., of Bond Street, New York.



here in 1793. He was a son of John Carpenter, whose family formerly resided on Long Island, and subsequently emigrated to East or Westchester, and from thence removed to New Castle. In the latter place, John Carpenter died, and was buried at the Chappaqua meeting-house, Jacob Carpenter's sons were the late Joshua, of Davenport house; and Jacob, now living at 34 Grove street, New York. Jacob's daughter, Amy W., married Daniel H. Griffen, who now owns the Davenport estate and homestead.

Mr. Griffen still points out the spot where the bed of Col. Greene stood, and the window from which the Lieutenant fired his pistols, and through which Major Flagg received the fatal shot, while the old-fashioned wainscoting and doors, are pierced with numerous bullet-holes. A large addition has since been made to the house on the east. The wonderfully extensive views which this elevated spot commands, will amply repay the visitor, besides the interest attached to the above associations.

The following communication is supposed to have been addressed to Henry Ward, Esq., Secretary of State for Rhode Island, who was then residing at Providence, uncle of Major Flagg, by Lieut. Col. Olney, who succeeded Col. Greene in command:—

“The advance guard of the American army, were on Croton river, which falls into the Hudson about 30 miles above New York, over this were two bridges at several miles distant from each other; near that on the main road, was stationed the principal part of the guard, consisting on the whole, of a Major's command; a Captain's command being detached some miles on the right and left. Small parties patrolled below the bridges. The quarters Major Flagg had taken, were two or three miles from the bridge, but at no great distance from the river, which at that time was not supposed to be fordable; this, however, was a mistake, and proved fatal to the party.

Col. de Lancey, who stooped so far from the dignity of a gentleman, as to command a regiment of freebooters, who subsisted on plunder, and served without pay, marched a strong party of Horse and Foot, into the vicinity of the post undiscovered, getting information of the quarters occupied by Col. Greene, Major Flagg and several other officers, secured only by a sergeant's guard; and finding a fordable place in the river, not far off, he passed his troops, and dividing his force into two parties, sent one to the bridge, where they surprised and took a subaltern's guard, and with the other, marched to Col. Greene's quarters. As our officer had no idea of their passing the river except at the bridge, they had taken no precautions to prevent a surprise. In addition to this, the quarter guard-sentinel, and all, were asleep; by this means the house was surrounded by the enemy, and all possibility of escape cut off before the danger was discovered. The officers were all asleep in one room; on being awakened by the firing without, they sprang from their beds and seized on arms. Near that on which Major Flagg lay, there was a window; he received a musket-shot through this—if I am

not much mistaken—before he had time to reach his pistols, which were placed near the foot of the bed. The ball passing through his head, he fell forward upon the bed and there continued; the enemy breaking into the room, found him in that situation—and thinking him to be sullen, gave him several cuts in the back with their broad-swords—but he was probably out of the reach of their unmanly rage, having expired the instant he received the ball. His remains were attended to the church-yard in Crompond, by the officers of the regiment and a respectable number of the inhabitants, and decently interred with the inhumanly mangled corpse of his Colonel.”<sup>a</sup>

The news of DeLancey’s movement reached Washington, at West Point, about six hours after Colonel Greene’s surprisal—too late to be of any service, as appears by the following:—

“May 14th, about noon intelligence was received from Gen. Paterson, of West Point, *that the enemy were on the north side of Croton River in force; that Col. Greene, Major Flagg, and some other officers, with forty or fifty men, were surprised and cut off at the Bridge, and that Col. Scammell, with the New Hampshire troops had marched to their assistance.* I ordered the Connecticut troops to move and support those of New Hampshire. In the evening information was brought that the enemy, consisting of about sixty horse and one hundred and forty infantry had retreated precipitately. May 16th, went to the posts at West Point; received a particular account of the surprise of Col. Greene, and the loss we sustained, which consisted of himself and Major Flagg killed, three officers and a surgeon taken prisoners, the latter and two of the former wounded; a sergeant and five rank and file killed, five wounded and thirty-three made prisoners or missing; in all forty four, besides officers.

In Rivington’s *Gazette* of May 16th, it is said that the party who made the attack, marched from Morrisania under the command of Col. De Lancey, and consisted of about one hundred cavalry and two hundred infantry.”<sup>b</sup>

Upon the same day that Washington visited the outposts at West Point, he thus addresses the President of Congress:—

#### GENERAL WASHINGTON TO THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS.

NEW WINDSOR, 17TH MAY, 1781.

SIR:—I am sorry to inform your Excellency, that a part of our advanced troops were surprised on Monday morning near Croton River, by about sixty horse and two hundred foot, under the command of Colonel DeLancey. Colonel Greene, who commanded our party, was mortally wounded in his quarters. The enemy attempted to carry him off, but he died upon the road. Major Flagg was

<sup>a</sup> Copied from the original, in the possession of the late John Ward, Esq., of Bond street, New York, which was presented to Mr. R. R. Ward of New York, by Mrs. Bowen, daughter of the above-mentioned Henry Ward.

<sup>b</sup> Spark’s writings of Washington, Vol. VIII., p—48.

killed. The loss of these two officers is to be regretted, especially the former, who has, upon several occasions distinguished himself, particularly in the defence of the post at Red Bank, in 1777, when he defeated Count Donop. I enclose a return of our loss upon that occasion."<sup>a</sup>

It may not prove uninteresting to add the testimony of Lydia Vail, a grand-daughter of Richardson Davenport, owner of the house, who was a young girl about eleven years old when the surprisal took place in 1781:—

"Oct. 19th, 1844.—When the house of my grandfather, Richardson Davenport, was attacked in May 1781, I was a girl ten or eleven years old, or thereabouts. I was at Davenport's house a few minutes after the Refugees left. Part approached in front of the building, and part by the road from the Croton, which road then passed by the rear of the house *i. e.* on the north and north-west of it. Greene, Flagg, and a young Lieutenant, whose name I do not remember, occupied a large bed-room in the north-west corner of the second story which communicated directly with the ground by an outer door at the rear or north end of the house. In consequence of being built upon ground which rises in the rear, Davenport's house was then two stories high in front and but one in the rear. This is partly the case at present. My grandfather was in the adjoining apartment, and overheard all the conversation of the three officers. The rashness and folly of the young Lieutenant was the cause of the disaster, as my grandfather and his family always said; at least as far as relates to the bloodshed. This was their account, which I heard at the time and often afterwards. When the Refugees came up they fired a volley, to signalize their friends in the orchard near Pines Bridge, and approached the house without making further use of their arms, calling upon the inmates to surrender. The young Lieutenant always slept with a pair of loaded pistols upon a stand at the head of his bed, and when he heard the noise he sprang up, raised the window sash, on the west side of the room and discharged both pistols at the enemy—who instantly cried out: 'Kill! Kill! no quarter!' Flagg then exclaimed aloud to the Lieutenant, calling him by name, "——— you've undone us.' These were the last words he was ever heard to utter. Green, half dressed, but sword in hand, said, 'we must sell our lives as dearly as we can!' and approaching the head of the stairs, called aloud to the soldiers below: 'Stand to your arms men! Courage! They are only a parcel of cow boys, fire away!' Flagg approached the window from which the Lieutenant had fired, and a volley was discharged at him. He fell, pierced with five or six balls.

When I entered the house just after the refugees had left, the young lieutenant was lying dead at the door. He was the first one they killed on breaking in. Flagg, though desperately wounded, was yet alive and they dispatched him. Four or five were dead, where the tents stood east of the house, besides many wounded. A greater part, at least half of the Rhode Island regiment were cut off at this time. Besides the officer I

<sup>a</sup> Washington's Diary.

have mentioned, three others quartered at the time, at my grand-father's; whose house was Col. Green's head quarters, Dr. Cushman, (a Continental surgeon), and also a captain and lieutenant, whose names I do not recollect. The refugees retired by the south road or path to the Crompond road, taking Greene with them on horseback; near where this path or farm road comes out into the highway, Greene, faint with loss of blood, fell off. Finding that he was dying they placed him in a spot surrounded by whortleberry bushes, and putting something under his head for support, left him in that state to finish his days alone. Here he bled to death, and was soon after found with no clothing on but his shirt and drawers. The whortleberry bushes were by or near to the public highway, (*i. e.* the Crompond and Pines Bridge road). They soon after took the bodies of the dead officers and buried them with the honors of war, in Crompond church-yard, depositing the remains of Greene and Flagg—and I believe, those of the young lieutenant—in one common grave. The widow of Col. Greene was present at this ceremony, which was conducted with great pomp; a large number of the military, as well as of citizens, moving in the procession, while the bands played the most solemn airs from the dead-march, &c.

Ensign Green, commanding the guards at Pines Bridge, was a nephew of the Colonel.

After all the circumstances of the surprise at Davenport's house came to be known and understood, Col. De Lancey and the Refugees were not blamed. The impetuosity and indiscretion of a single individual, caused probably, all the bloodshed at my grand-father's. 'The young lieutenant atoned for his error, by fighting bravely to the last.'<sup>a</sup>

On the 19th of November, 1844, Lydia Vail, adds to her former testimony by saying:—

"Two negro servants and my father were wounded, one in the arm and the others in the shoulder. The very night before the surprise, Greene said to my grand-father, 'Mr. Davenport, you are a happy man, surrounded by a fine wife and a dutiful family of children. I envy you much, but I hope this unnatural war is drawing to a close and that this time next spring, I also shall enjoy domestic happiness, as you do, with my wife and children.' Twelve hours had not elapsed after this, before he was a dead man. Davenport's house was Greene's headquarters. Greene was much beloved by my grand-father's family, as well as Flagg and the other officers; and the death of those who fell, particularly that of Greene, was much and long lamented. This disaster happened a little before sunrise. I lived at my father's, half a mile off northerly, on the Crompond road; word came to us that they were all cut off and killed at head-quarters, and we all ran through the fields to Davenport's house. The Refugees were at this moment retreating through the woods towards Pines Bridge, and when we saw their glittering caps and arms, we stopped and hid till they had passed. We arrived at Davenport's about sunrise or little after, and found the floors and walls

<sup>a</sup> Testimony of Lydia Vail of Somers, aged 74, given Oct. 19th, 1844.—McDonald MSS. in possession of Geo. H. Moore, Esq., Lib. of N. Y. Hist. Soc.



covered with the blood of the dead, wounded and dying. Flagg and the captain were killed outright. The Refugees forced Greene to mount a horse, and retreated upon Pines Bridge by a lane which then led to the main or Crompond road, through a piece of woods which at that time extended to the main road. This lane was considerably south of the present lane, which lead from Davenport's house to the Crompond road, and was a much nearer road to Pines Bridge. Green held on the horse till they were just coming out of the wood into the main road. He then fell off, and they found he had fainted and was dying from loss of blood. They then laid him on the bank by the side of the road, and passed on. Major Morrell escaped the disaster of Davenport's house by accident. He happened to pass that eventful night at a Mrs. Remsen's, who lived some where near Pines Bridge, (courting it was said); returning to head-quarters (where he stayed) next morning, he heard a noise which seemed to approach; he reined up his horse, listened, and looking in the direction from whence the sounds came, saw the glittering of the soldiers caps and swords; spurring his horse he leaped over the fence and concealed himself in a thicket, until the detachment had passed by. The widow Griffin's house stood above the Croton on the west side of the Crompond road; her maiden name was Brundage. The widow Budd's house stood below the Croton, and at Pines Bridge, on the left side of the road leading to White Plains, and on the right of the road leading to North Castle Corner; her maiden name was Griffin."<sup>a</sup>

Lieut. Col. Greene was murdered in the meridian of life, being only forty-four years old. He married in 1758, Miss Anne Lippitt, a daughter of J. Lippitt, Esq., of Warwick, whom he left a widow, with three sons and four daughters. He was stout and strong in person, about five feet ten inches high, with a broad round chest; his aspect manly, and demeanor pleasing, enjoying always a high state of health, its bloom irradiated a countenance which significantly expressed the fortitude and mildness invariably displayed throughout his life.

The following communication was addressed by Washington to Col. Greene, only seven days before Count Donop attacked Fort Mercer at Red Bank, on the Delaware:—

HEAD-QUARTERS, OCTOBER 15TH, 1777, }  
11 o'clock at night. }

SIR:—I am persuaded by intelligence from different quarters that the enemy are determined to endeavour, by a speedy and vigorous effort to carry Fort Mifflin, and for this purpose are preparing a considerable force. Their attempt will probably be sudden and violent, as they are hardly in a situation to delay a matter so essential to them as that of removing the river obstructions. It is of infinite importance to disappoint their intentions in this instance, as their keeping or evacuating Philadelphia materially depends upon their having the communi-

<sup>a</sup> Testimony of Lydia Vail, aged 74, Nov. 19, 1844, granddaughter of Richardson Davenport, and niece of Francis Totten.—McDonaid MSS. In possession of Geo. Moore, Esq.

cation with their shipping immediately opened, and it is not unlikely they may despair of effecting, it if they should fail in the push, which I imagine they are now about to make. Col. Smith's present force is not as great as could be wished, and requires to be augmented to put him in a condition to make an effectual opposition. I would therefore have you to detach immediately as large a part of your force as you possibly can in aid of the garrison. I cannot well determine what proportion. This must be regulated by circumstances and appearances, but my present idea is that the principal part should go to his assistance. To enable you the better to spare a respectable reinforcement, I have directed General Newcomb to send his brigade of militia to Red Bank or as many of them as he can prevail upon to go. Colonel Angell will also march early to-morrow morning to join you with his regiment. The garrisons and Steel's may be informed of these succours; by way of keeping up their spirits. I would not have you trust to the houses in the neighbourhood of your post, as these in case of an investiture will fail you; which makes it prudent to have a sufficient number of huts before hand prepared within the fort.

I hope, and doubt not, you will keep fully in mind the prodigious importance of not suffering the enemy to get entire possession of the Delaware; and will spare no pains nor activity to frustrate their efforts for that purpose. Be watchful on every quarter and industrious in stopping every avenue by which you are assailable. Be cautious not to pay too much attention to any one part of your works, and neglect the others, but take every precaution to strengthen the whole; for otherwise the greatest danger may be where you least expect it. I am, sir,

Your obed't serv't.

N.B.—The above letter was written by his Excellency's orders; but as he went to bed before it was finished, it will be handed you without his signature.

(Signed)

3

ALEX. HAMILTON, A. D. C.,

(on public service).

COLONEL GREENE,

ALEX. HAMILTON, A. D. C. }  
to ye Com. in Chief. } a -

Commanding Officer,  
Red Bank.

The Rev. M. L. Weems, the former rector of Mt. Vernon Parish, Va., thus describes the attack made by Count Donop, on the Red Bank in his *Life of General Washington* :—

“On the eastern or Jersey side of the river, at a place called the Red Bank, Washington ordered a strong redoubt, the command of which, with 205 men, was given to Col. Greene. These with some *chevaux-de-frise* sunk in the river, and a few galleys, formed all the barrier that Washington could present against the British Navy. The strength of this barrier was soon put to a fiery trial. Great preparations were made to attack the Americans, at the same instant, both by land and water. Count Donop, with a host of Hessians, was sent over to be in readiness to attack Red Bank, while the tide of flood groaning under their enormous weight, brought up the men of war.

<sup>a</sup> Copied from original document in possession of the late John Ward, Esq., of Bond St. N. Y.

The morning was still, and the heavens overcast with sad clouds—as if nature sympathizing with her children, was ready to drop showers of celestial pity on their strifes. No sooner had the ships floated up within three cables length of the fort, than they began a most tremendous cannonade; while cannon balls and fire-tailed bombs, like comets, fell upon it thick as hail. The gallant Smith and his myrmidons, stood the shock to a miracle, and like men fighting under the eye of their Washington, drove the two-and-thirty pounders through them, with such spirit and success, that in a little time, the *Augusta*, a heavy 64 gun ship took fire and blew up, the horrible balloon and many of the crew. Another ship called the *Merlin*, or *Black Bird*, soon got on the wing, blew up likewise and went off in thunder to join the *Angusta*. At the same moment Col. Donop, with his Hessians, made a gallant attack on the fort at Red Bank. After a few well directed fires, Greene and his men artfully retired from the out-works. The enemy, now supposing the day their own, rushed on in vast numbers along a large opening in the fort, and within twenty steps of a masked battery of eighteen pounders, loaded with grape shot and spike nails. All at once, hell itself seemed to open before their affrighted view. But their pains and their terrors were but for a moment. Together down they sunk by hundreds, into the sweet slumbers of death, scarcely sensible of the fatal blow that reft their lives.

Heaps on heaps, the slaughtered Hessians lie;  
 Brave Greene beholds them with a tearful eye.  
 Far now from home, and from their native shore,  
 They sleep in death and hear of wars no more.

“Poor Donop was mortally wounded, and taken prisoner. The attentions of the American officers, and particularly the kind condolence of the God-like Washington, quite overcame him: and his last moments were steeped in tears of regret, for having left his native land, to fight a distant people, who had never injured him. ‘See here, Colonel,’ said the dying count, (to Col. Danl. Clymer, who had been sent by Washington to condole with him) ‘see in me, the vanity of all human pride! I have shone in all the Courts of Europe, and now, I am dying here, on the banks of the Delaware, in the house of an obscure Quaker.”<sup>a</sup>

As Captain Mauduit Duplessis was traversing the scene of slaughter after the repulse, he was accosted by a voice from among the slain: “Whoever you are, draw me hence.” It was the unfortunate Count Donop. Duplessis had him conveyed to a house near the fort, where every attention was paid to his comfort; he languished for three days, during which Duplessis was continually at his bed-side. “This is finishing a noble career early,” said the Count sadly, as he found his death approaching. Then, as if conscious of the degrading service in which he had fallen, hired out by his prince to aid a foreign power in

<sup>a</sup> Life of George Washington by M. L. Weems, formerly Rector of Mt. Vernon Parish. Phila. 1809.

quelling the brave struggles of a people for their liberty, and contrasting it with that in which the chivalrous youth by his bedside was engaged—"I die," added he bitterly, "the victim of my ambition, and of the avarice of my sovereign."<sup>a</sup> He was but thirty-seven years of age at the time of his death.

According to the plan of the enemy, Fort Mifflin, opposite to Fort Mercer, was to have been attacked at the same time by water. The force employed was the *Augusta* of sixty-four guns, the *Roebuck* of forty four, two frigates, the *Merlin* sloop of eighteen guns, and a galley. They forced their way through the lower line of *chevaux-de-frise*; but the *Augusta* and *Merlin* ran aground below the second line, and every effort to get them off proved fruitless. To divert attention from their situation, the other vessels drew as near to Fort Mifflin as they could, and opened a cannonade; but the obstructions in the river had so altered the channel that they could not get within very effective distance. They kept up a fire upon the fort throughout the evening, and recommenced it early in the morning, as did likewise the British batteries on the Pennsylvania shore; hoping that under cover of it, the ships might be got off. A strong adverse wind, however, kept the tide from rising sufficiently to float them.

The Americans discovered their situation, and sent down four fire-ships to destroy them, but without effect. A heavy fire was now opened upon them from the galleys and floating batteries. It was warmly returned. In the course of the action, a red hot shot set the *Augusta* on fire. It was impossible to check the flames. All haste was made with boats to save the crew, while the other ships drew off as fast as possible to be out of reach of the explosion. She blew up, however, while the second lieutenant, the chaplain, the gunner, and several of the crew were yet on board, most of whom perished. The *Merlin* was now set on fire and abandoned; the *Roebuck* and the other vessels dropped down the river, and had kept up a brave defence against batteries directed by the enemy on the Pennsylvania shore. A reinforcement of Virginia troops made the garrison between three and four hundred strong.

Floating batteries, galleys and fire-ships, commanded by Commodore Hazlewood, were stationed under the forts and about the river.

Fort Mercer had hitherto been garrisoned by militia, but Washington now replaced them by four hundred of Gen. Varnum's Rhode Island

<sup>a</sup> DeChastellux, vol. i. p. 266. "Donop was terribly wounded and taken to the house of a Quaker near by, where he expired three days afterwards. He was buried within the fort. A few years ago his bones were disinterred, and his skull was taken possession of by a New Jersey physician."—Lossing's Hist. of U. S.



Continental. Col. Christopher Greene, was put in command ; a brave officer who had accompanied Arnold in his rough expedition to Canada, and fought valiantly under the walls of Quebec. "The post with which you are intrusted," writes Washington in his letter of instructions, "is of the utmost importance to America. The whole defence of the Delaware depends upon it ; and consequently all the enemy's hopes of keeping Philadelphia, and finally succeeding in the present Campaign."

Col. Greene was accompanied by Captain Mauduit Duplessis, who was to have the direction of the artillery. He was a young French engineer of great merit, who had volunteered in the American cause, and received a commission from Congress. The *chevaux de frise*, in the river, had been constructed under his superintendence.

Greene, aided by Duplessis, made all haste to put Fort Mercer in a state of defense ; but before the outworks were completed, he was surprised (Oct. 22d,) by the appearance of a large force from a wood within cannon-shot of the fort. Their uniforms showed them to be Hessians. They were, in fact, four battallions, twelve hundred strong of grenadiers, picked men, besides light infantry and chasseurs, all commanded by Count Donop, who had figured in the last year's campaign. Col. Greene, in nowise dismayed by the superiority of the enemy, forming in glistening array before the wood, prepared for a stout resistance. In a little while an officer was descried, riding slowly up with a flag, accompanied by a drummer. Greene ordered his men to keep out of sight, that the fort might appear but slightly garrisoned.

When within proper distance, the drummer sounded a parley, and, the officer summoned the garrison to surrender ; with a threat of no quarter, in case of resistance.

Greene's reply was, that the post would be defended to the last extremity.

The flag rode back and made report. Forthwith the Hessians were seen at work throwing up a battery within half a mile of the outworks. It was finished by four o'clock, and opened a heavy cannonade, under cover of which the enemy were preparing to approach.

As the American outworks were but half finished, and were too extensive to be manned by the garrison, it was determined by Greene and Duplessis, that the troops should make but a short stand there ; to gall the enemy by their approach, and then retire within the redoubt, which was defended by a deep intrenchment, boarded and fraised.

Donop led on his troops in gallant style, under cover of a heavy fire from his battery. They advanced in two columns, to attack the outworks in two places. As they advanced, they were excessively galled

by a flanking fire from the American galleys and batteries, and by sharp volleys from the outworks. The latter, however, as had been concerted, were quickly abandoned by the garrison. The enemy entered at two places, and, imagining the day their own, the two columns pushed on with shouts to storm different parts of the redoubt. As yet, no troops were to be seen; but as one of the columns approached the redoubt on the north side, a tremendous discharge of grape-shot and musketry burst forth from the embrasures in front, and a half-masked battery on the left. The slaughter was prodigious; the column was driven back in confusion. Count Donop with the other column, in attempting the south side of the redoubt, had passed the abatis; some of his men had traversed the fosse; others had clambered over the pickets, when a similar tempest of artillery and musketry burst upon them. Some were killed on the spot, many were wounded, and the rest were driven out. Donop himself was wounded, and remained on the spot; Lieutenant-Colonel Mingerode, the second in command, was also dangerously wounded. Several other of the best officers were slain or disabled. Lieutenant-Colonel Linsing, the oldest remaining officer, endeavored to draw off the troops in good order, but in vain; they retreated in confusion, hotly pursued, and were again cut up in their retreat by the flanking fire from the galleys and floating batteries.

The loss of the enemy in killed and wounded, in this brief but severe action, was about four hundred men. That of the Americans, eight killed and twenty-nine wounded.

Washington Irving thus describes the attack made by the enemy on Fort Mifflin and Mercer on the 22d of October, 1777:—

“On the forts and obstructions in the river, Washington mainly counted to complete the harassment of Philadelphia. The defences had been materially impaired. The works at Billingsport had been attacked and destroyed, and some of the enemy’s ships had forced their way through the *chevaux-de-frise*, placed there. The American frigate Delaware, stationed in the river between the upper forts and Philadelphia, had run aground before a British battery and been captured.

It was now the great object of the Howes to reduce and destroy, and of Washington to defend and maintain, the remaining forts and obstructions. Fort Mifflin, which we have already mentioned, was erected on a low, green, reedy island in the Delaware, a few miles below Philadelphia, and below the mouth of the Shuylkill. It consisted of a strong redoubt, with extensive outworks and batteries. There was but a narrow channel between the island and the Pennsylvania shore. The main channel, practicable for ships, was on the other side. In this were sunk strong *chevaux-de-frise*, difficult either to be weighed or cut through, and dangerous to any ships that might run against them; subjected as they would be to the batteries of Fort Mifflin on one side, and on the other to those of Fort Mercer, a strong work at Red Bank on the Jersey shore.

Fort Mifflin was garrisoned by troops of the Maryland line, under Lieutenant-Colonel Samuel Smith of Baltimore; and the attack on Fort Mercer was given up.

These signal repulses of the enemy had an animating effect on the public mind, and were promptly noticed by Congress. Col. Greene, who commanded at Fort Mercer; Lieutenant-Colonel Smith of Maryland, who commanded at Fort Mifflin; and Commodore Hazelwood, who commanded the galleys, received the thanks of that body; and consequently a sword was voted to each, as a testimonial of distinguished merit."<sup>a</sup>

Shrub Oak is a small village, in the northern part of the town, forming a portion of Jefferson valley, and situated not far distant from Lake Magrigraries, or what is now denominated Lake Osceola. This place is beautifully situated in a well watered and picturesque region, and, chiefly on account of its healthiness, is much sought after by New York citizens who are erecting some fine country seats in the neighborhood. One of the oldest residences in the village is located on Park street and belonged formerly to the Paulding family, but is now owned by the Rev. George S. Gordon, one of the former rectors of St. Peter's church, Peekskill. It seems that the celebrated John Paulding of revolutionary fame, purchased the estate, on which the mansion stands, of Ezekiel Knapp, probably before the Revolution or soon after. Upon the 11th of January, 1817, we find the said John Paulding conveying to Nathaniel Garrison of Cortlandtown, for the sum of \$4,500, one piece (of this very property), "containing eighty-two acres, be the same more or less, excepting the lands deeded to the Methodist meeting house and Isaac Knapp, and except the lot sold for a district school-house and a piece containing four acres, two rods and six perches."<sup>b</sup> Garrison afterwards sold to Dr. Collett (who married a daughter of Dr. Felton, then rector of St. Stephen's church, N. Y.) and the latter conveyed to the Rev. George S. Gordon.<sup>c</sup> The old house, which was used as a tavern during the Revolutionary war, is well constructed of heavy oak timber, while the parlor and dining room are finished with old fashioned mantles and fire places six feet wide. Tradition says that a bold Tory captain, who was suspected of being a spy, was shot at the gate while attempting to escape. It is well known that Major Andre passed this spot on his way to Crompond. The Five Mile Turnpike leading from Peekskill to Red Mills, passes within one quarter of a mile of this place, likewise the intended route of the railroad from Turners Station in Rockland Co., to Fort Montgomery and thence by the great Suspen-

<sup>a</sup> From Irving's *Life of Washington*, vol. iii, pp. 269 to 275.

<sup>b</sup> Copied from original Doc. in possession of the Rev. G. S. Gordon.

<sup>c</sup> The Rev. George S. Gordon is a son of the late Capt. Henry Gordon of U. S. N. by Maria da. of Will. and Mary Tapp. Wm. Tapp was born in London, Middlesex, England, 22d Dec. 1750.—N. Styles.

sion Bridge across the Hudson River at St. Antony's nose, next following the Peekskill creek, passing through Shrub Oak to Hollocksville or Mahopac, and thence south into New York city.

The Methodist Episcopal church is very pleasantly situated, almost in the centre of the village, directly opposite the old cemetery. It is a large gothic edifice of stone, fifty by ninety, with a low embattled tower of the same material, costing about \$39,000. It was designed by the well known architect, William F. Martin, a resident of this village; and dedicated in December, 1870. To it, is attached a small parsonage of wood and six acres of land, valued at \$6,000. The interior of the church is neatly finished in black-walnut trimming, while the windows are filled with stained glass quarryings of lead work. The desk Bible contains the following :—

“CENTENARY METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH,  
Shrub Oak, October, 1870.”

The bell weighs 1,950 pounds, and cost \$1,000. The burying-ground opposite the church, contains memorials to the Hyatt's, Fowler's, Lounsbrough's, Hall's, Conklin's, Horton's, Crawford's, Halleck's, Smith's, Wild-ey's, and Townsend's, &c.

The Methodist Episcopal Church, it is said, was first organized here about one hundred years ago; but be this as it may, we have already seen that John Paulding, sometime before 1817, had deeded to the “Methodist Meeting House” a small portion of his property. The old church stands a short distance only from the present structure, and is now used by the Roman Catholics for their services.

The present pastor of the Methodist Episcopal Church is the Rev. G. D. Gillespie, who reports 260 communicants.

Near Shrub Oak, a short distance only from the Peekskill turnpike, is situated “Lake Mohegan,” a charming sheet of water covering an area of three hundred acres and one eighth in length. An analysis of its waters gives the two following ingredients as held in solution—viz : Sixty per cent. of lime, and thirty per cent. of magnesia. Many fine bass and pickerel are taken here, (some of the former weighing five lbs) as well as white and yellow perch. Five years ago an attempt was made to stock the lake with 10,000 salmon trout; but since then the black bass have been introduced with better success. At the head of the lake stands the residence of Charles D'Urban Morris, A. M., who for a number of years past has so successfully conducted the “Lake School.” This branch of the Morris family is not only descended directly from the Philippses, (Manorial lords of Philippsburgh) but



is also connected with the Van Cortlandts, the lords of Cortlandt Manor. Roger Morris (eleventh in descent from Cadugan of Philip Dorddu, a powerful Welsh chieftain) who stood high in favor, and on terms of great friendship, with the Duke of Argyle and the Earl of Pembroke in 1734, married Mary, daughter of Sir Peter Jackson, Knt., a (Turkey) merchant of London, by Mary his wife, daughter of Sir Peter Vandeput, Knt., sheriff of London in 1684, by Margaret his wife, daughter of Sir John Buckworth, Knt. of West Shun Surrey. Roger Morris died 13th Jan., 1748. The third son of Roger Morris and Mary Jackson was Roger Morris, Esq., lieutenant-colonel in the British army, born 28th of January, 1727, married 19th January, 1758, Mary, daughter of Frederick Philipse, last Lord of the Manor of Philipsburgh. It was from this lady's character that Cooper formed the heroine of "The Spy," under the name of Frances. Washington is said to have greatly admired her. Col. Roger Morris served with distinction in the first American war, and was wounded in the celebrated battle of the Monongahela River, in which General Braddock was killed with most of his officers. In that engagement George Washington, Robert Orme and Roger Morris, Esqrs., were aides-de-camp to General Braddock; and of the conflict, an original manuscript account, a very curious document, was in possession of the late Capt. Henry Gage Morris, of the R. N.

Col. Roger Morris died 13th Sept., 1794, aged sixty-eight; Mary, his wife, 18th July, 1825, aged ninety-six, having been born 5th July, 1730. The remains of this distinguished and worthy couple are deposited in a vault in St. Saviours church, York, England, where the following inscription occurs on a marble tablet:—

Near this spot are deposited the remains of

**COLONEL ROGER MORRIS,**

formerly of his Majesty's 47th Regiment of Foot,  
who departed this life on the 13th day of September, 1794,  
in the 68th year of his age.

AND OF

**MARY MORRIS,**

relic of the same  
who departed this life on the 18th day of July, 1825,  
in the 96th year of her age.

AND ALSO OF

**MARIA MORRIS,**

the affectionate daughter of the above,  
who departed this life on the 25th day of Sept., 1836,  
in the 71st year of her age.

Col. Roger Morris had five children; (1), Joanna Morris, married in 1787, to Thomas Cowper Hincks, Esq., Captain in the Dragoon Guards, and left issue. (2), Amherst, (named after his god-father, Lord Amherst), born in 1763, Commander in the Royal Navy; died at Bailden, in Yorkshire, in 1802. The following inscription is on his grave-stone there:—

To the memory of  
CAPTAIN AMHERST MORRIS,  
of the Royal Navy,  
who died the 27th day of April, Anno Domini 1802,  
aged 38 years.  
*Virtute nihil obstat et armis.*

(3), Maria, died at York, as above; (4), Margaret, died young in this country; Henry Gage Morris, Rear Admiral of the Royal Navy, who was born in 1770, married in 1805, died in 1851, and lies buried in the church-yard of Beverly Minster, Yorkshire, leaving, by his wife Rebecka, Newenham, Millard, Orpen, daughter of Rev. Francis Orpen, of Cork, Ireland, and six sons, viz:—Rev. Francis Orpen Morris, Rector of Nun-Burnholme, Yorkshire; Rear Admiral Henry Gage Morris, of the Royal Navy, London; Frederick Philipse Morris, Barrister, London; Beverly Robinson Morris, M.D., Nottingham; Rev. Adolphus Philipse Morris, A.M., first rector of St. Mary's Parish, Yorktown, and now curate of Leeds, Kent, England; and Charles D'Urban Morris, A.M., of Lake Mohegan.

The parochial church of St. Mary stands near the Lake, and the residence of Mr. Morris, fronting on the Peekskill road, leading from Lake Mahopac to the latter place; it is built of stone concrete, in the early English style. The church lot, embracing half an acre, was the gift of Charles D'Urban Morris, A.M.

Shrub Oak contains a Methodist church, a post-office, and about fifteen dwellings. The Methodist society of this place was first incorporated upon the 22d of September, 1840; Newman Lounsberry, Benjamin Curry, Solomon Requa, Thomas Curry, jr., and Jonathan Danow, trustees.<sup>a</sup> The church, which was erected in 1839, is a very neat wooden structure. In the immediate neighborhood, lies Lake Magrigaries, (Hollow Lake, already alluded to,) which is a beautiful sheet of water, well stocked with fish.

A rich and picturesque vale extends south from Crompond, backed by rolling hills. Upon one of the principal heights in this vicinity,

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Religious Soc. lib. B. 65.

called French hill, the French forces were encamped in 1781-2, under Comte de Rochambeau. "The French army, at the time the Marquis speaks of, (Nov. 1782, says the translator of Chastellux,) had been for some time encamped at Crompond, near Cortlandt's manor, a few miles from that of General Washington's, and between which there was a daily intercourse. The translator dined, in October, 1782, in General Washington's tent, with the Marquis de Laval, the Baron de Viomenil, and several French officers, within hearing of the British guns, which were at that period happily become a *Brutum fulmen*."<sup>a</sup> On the north-west side of French hill, are the two ponds styled by the Indians *Kcakat-is*. The largest of these, sometimes known by the name of the *Great Pond*, covers an area of 200 acres, and discharges its redundant waters into the smaller one of 100 acres. Both are supplied by numerous springs, and have their outlet in *Muscoota river*. The site of an Indian village is still pointed out, on the borders of the Great Pond, north of cedar swamp, likewise the remains of a cemetery on Cedar Point.<sup>b</sup>

Several roads intersect the town, running principally north and south, from the Mahopack turnpike to the great post-road, formerly called the King's road. These consist of Stoney, King's Gormè, Amawalk, Tomahawk and Lovett streets.

The Pine's Bridge road leading south from Crompond, affords magnificent views of the rich and fertile country bordering the Croton River, together with the village of Yorktown, and the Turkey and Collabergh mountains. Upon this road are situated the farms and residences of General Bernardus Montross, Mr. Seth Whitney, Mr. James Underhill, Mr. Richard M. Underhill and George McKeel, &c. In a back room of the General's house, fell the notorious freebooter, Joseph Hueson, by the hand of Seth Whitney, (father of the above mentioned gentleman) former proprietor of the estate. Hueson was a perfect scourge and terror to this part of the country during the Revolution, for he devoted himself to the most cruel pillage and robbery among the defenceless inhabitants. Whilst in the act of entering the house for plunder, Whitney plunged a bayonet into his body. Upon hearing their leader exclaim, "the rascal has killed me!" a band of ruffians forced an entrance, seized Whitney, and inflicted on him the most savage cruelties. Directly opposite the mansion of the latter, stands the orthodox Friends meeting-house, erected in 1833.

A road diverging to the south-west, near the meeting-house, leads to

<sup>a</sup> Travels in North America in the years 1780, 81, 82, by the Marquis Chastellux. One of the principal visitors at the French camp in 1782, was the Baron de Talleyrand.

<sup>b</sup> Upon Cedar Point an eccentric character known as Nancy Lane the hermitess, resided for many years.

the Turkey mountain, a vast tract of woodland covering 800 acres; from the summit of which, the spectator has a noble prospect of the surrounding country. At the foot of the mountain is situated the residence of Mr. Edward Burrough Underhill, son of the late Abraham I. Underhill, "a worthy and prominent member of the society of Friends, who sustained throughout a useful and protracted life, an unsullied reputation." Abraham I. Underhill, who died on the 5th of May, 1841, aged 78 years, was the second son of Isaac Underhill, fourth in descent from John Underhill of Oyster Bay, L. I. In the old family mansion which stands one mile south of this spot, (on the Pine's Bridge road) is shown the room where Major Andre and Joshua H. Smith breakfasted on the 23d of September, 1780. At this period, the house was occupied by Isaac Underhill and Sarah his wife,<sup>a</sup> who appears to have been a woman of good resolution and courage; whilst engaged in entertaining Andre and his companion, she took particular notice of the former—and imagined she read in his confusion, a person embarrassed in some great undertaking. A few days previous to this event, Mrs. Underhill had visited head-quarters to recover some cattle carried off by a band of marauders.

This lady was the daughter of Robert Field, whose nephew John was a resident of Yorktown. The following notice of the death of Moses Field, (son of John) occurs in the *New York American* of Oct. 25, 1833:

"Died at Peekskill, on the 18th inst., Moses Field of this city, aged fifty-three years. The poor could not have sustained a greater loss in an individual. No man had more enlarged and persevering benevolence in feeding the hungry, clothing the naked and providing for the sick. His greatest happiness appeared to be, to mitigate the suffering and relieve the wants of the virtuous poor."

Abraham J. Underhill, the son of Isaac and Sarah, has left us the following account of his own and his father's Reminiscences of the Revolution:—

"My father Isaac Underhill, born at White Plains, was a tall, healthy man of great bodily strength, and very industrious even to old age—say over eighty. During his life, he partly cleared three farms near Saw Mill River, Nanahegan or Philips Manor, now the town of Mt. Pleasant. He was possessed of good natural abilities and judgment, but like most men of his time felt sadly the want of an early education. For many years he was an elder in the society of Friends. Before leaving White Plains my father had partly cleared the farms of his two brothers Jacob and Abraham at Nanahegan, travelling to and fro by a foot path which

<sup>a</sup> Upon the 9th of Nov., 1832, George McKeel conveyed to Isaac McKeel, Daniel Smith, Aaron Underhill and Edward Burrough Underhill, one acre of land, three miles north of Pine's Bridge.



was then the only road between the two places—the surrounding country being infested by Indians, and wild animals. He moved to Nanahegan about the year 1738, at which time the Indians had not left the neighborhood. In 1774 he settled down at Amawalk, (Yorktown) the farm then having been one of the first cleared in that section of the country,

“During the Revolutionary war the main body of Washington’s army, on its way from White Plains to New Jersey, marched past the house going from Pines Bridge to Peekskill. I frequently saw Washington pass during the time, so that I knew him as well as I did anybody. He always had a life guard of twelve young gentlemen riding before him with drawn swords for protection and honor—they were said to be Virginians. I recollect perfectly well meeting him by the school house near Parkers, and at another time a little south of the old Amawalk meeting-house, and also when he passed our house. On the two former occasions he was not with the army. On the latter he proclaimed his intention to capture New York, and was making every exertion to collect men and stores for that purpose; but his real object was to amuse the British in New York, to prevent their sending forces to Yorktown in Virginia to relieve Lord Cornwallis. Washington went down as far as White Plains and then commenced forced marches to West Point and so through New Jersey south to Yorktown, and succeeded in capturing Cornwallis and all his army before he could be relieved from New York. A sergeant’s guard was kept at our house almost throughout the war.

“Major Andre, with Lawyer Smith of Orange Co., called at my father’s the day he was taken at about eight o’clock in the morning; they wanted breakfast. Andre was on his way from West Point to New York, and made many inquiries respecting the road; his mind appeared to be very much impressed, so that he could not be still a moment. Smith eat breakfast (which mother prepared for them) but Andre appeared very agitated, walked back and forward before the front door and eat nothing; he had on a blue tight bodied coat, made plain, after the fashion of the New England farmers of the day. Smith went back north from our house, and Andre went on toward New York alone—going south by the way of Pines Bridge, and Tarrytown; near the latter place he was taken prisoner.

“In the time of the Revolution the British Light Horse came through this part of the country, taking the route from Crompond to our house. On this occasion they burned many houses, killed several men and wounded every one they met, carrying them off prisoners to New York. Every house was robbed by them, and all the cattle they could possibly find, driven off. A few weeks previous to this a violent hurricane had taken off the back portion of the roof of our house. The British rode up very furiously, with their swords, drawn and demanded which party had removed the roof; I replied “The upper party,” which they understood to mean the Whigs—the British being the lower party. They then placed a sentinel at the door who prevented any of the party from going into the house or taking anything from us, which we considered a remarkable Providential preservation.

"In the Revolution robberies and murders were very frequent in this part of the country. One night there were two strangers putting up at our house, from New England; in the dead of night a man knocked at the door—father asked who was there? the reply was "a friend." Father mistook the voice for that of a particular friend of his, but mother thought they were robbers beyond any doubt; father got up and opened the upper half of the door, and soon found they were come to pillage the house. Mother, while father was parleying with the gang outside, armed all her children—seven sons and four daughters—(all as large as men), put men's coats and pants on the girls, in the space of a few minutes, and marched them into the room where father was; so large a company struck such a damper upon the robbers, that they immediately retreated. We then looked for the strangers who were stopping with us, and after a considerable search, found them hidden away under the back part of the bed. They appeared to be very much frightened, having about their persons \$1,500 in Continental money, (which was then good). This was about 1776; they felt very thankful for their deliverance.

"On another occasion, being detained at work in the field after dark, on my return to the house, and when very near it, I suddenly found myself stepping on some men, and was much frightened. These men (about 100), were lying flat on the ground, their quarters being at the house then occupied by Joshua Carpenter; an officer stepped up to me, and enquired who I was and where I was going? I replied that my home was close by, and I had been detained later than usual by work. He made me promise to say nothing about what I had seen, and then let me go. Their object was apparently to prevent surprise, or to intercept some passing enemy.

"Joshua Huson was a notorious character in the Revolution, being connected with the British army, although a native of Yorktown. He frequently passed through the American army acting as a spy, and carrying his information to Canada. Rochambeau's army lay encamped in Yorktown about six weeks, but it had scarcely been there one week before Huson passed through it. He frequently lay in ambush and shot down American officers, or others that he disliked. All efforts to secure him were unsuccessful, though large rewards were offered for his apprehension. At length, aided by some confederates, he broke into the house of Seth Whitney, (now Barney Montross's), abusing and beating him badly and carrying off any thing they wanted. Huson told Whitney that he would come again and kill him. The old man (Whitney) fixed a bayonet on a rake handle, determined to dispatch the robber, should he ever try it again. Whitney's wife warned Huson to keep away, but paying no attention to the warning, he soon after tried to break in; when about half way through the window, Whitney, true to his threat, stabbed him just below the breast-bone, making a wound about one and a half inches deep. Huson, notwithstanding, made good his entrance and beat Whitney until he thought him dead. Huson and his assistants then mounted and rode away. At first the family believed Whitney dead, but after a while they were successful in restoring him and he soon

got well. When I saw him the day after the beating, he was dreadfully bruised. Huson's wound proved much more serious than he had at first supposed, for it bled internally; and when within twenty rods of our house, exclaimed "I am a dead man," and fell from his horse a corpse. His comrades applied to some Tories living in the neighborhood, who took the body and buried it about eighteen inches deep, under an apple tree in Veil's orchard on the east side of the road. The next day they dug another grave behind the hill in the woods, south-east of William Smith's house, a very out of the way place. The better to conceal the grave, they cut down a tree—making it fall directly over the spot. Five months afterwards, it became generally known that Huson was buried there; whereupon the neighbors disinterred the remains, and crowds of people came, some from a great distance, to see the remains of one who had been such a terror and scourge to the whole country round. They wanted to satisfy themselves that he was really dead; some proposed to hang the corpse on a gibbet, but finally better feelings prevailed and they consigned it to the grave where it probably remained undisturbed. Several of the men who first buried him we afterwards discovered to be the same party who also robbed our tenant house and intended to pillage us. Whitney, as a reward for killing Huson, was exempted from paying taxes during the remainder of his life. This Huson was of the same family as the man who was hung for instigating the negroes to insurrection in New York city.

Rochambeau, while in our neighborhood, had his head-quarters at Parkers (then Samuel Dilway's) while another French General was quartered at my father's. The Generals always dined together alternately at each others quarters, this brought them, once a week, to our house. Great preparations were always made on these occasions—a French cook who had been in the employ of the king of France, and his assistants, serving in the kitchen.

"I once entered a complaint, to the General staying at our house, that some of his soldiers were in the habit of stealing turnips. He accompanied me to the field about three-quarters of a mile back of the house, that he might judge for himself; when we came to the field he gave me four crowns as pay for what turnips his soldiers had taken, that satisfied me and we returned to the house. I recollect that while returning I offered him a peach, which he declined taking.

"One morning a man came running to our house saying, Col. Green and about fifty of his men who were quartered at Danford's, (now Joshua Carpenter's) had been killed. It appeared that the British light horse, each rider with another behind him, had surprised the Americans immediately after they had drawn in their sentinels, early in the morning, killing and wounding them as they lay in their tents, which were pitched around the house. Col. Green was in bed at the time; he sprang up and seized his sword, but was soon cut down. It was supposed nearly 200 bullets were fired into the house; at the same time there was a party of Americans stationed at our house commanded by a lieutenant—but it was probably unknown to the British, or they might have cut them off too. Had they attacked the house, the family would have been in great



danger; for some of the boys were in bed with the officers, and in the confusion it is scarcely possible that all would have escaped injury. I had often thought of making the house musket-proof by casing the outside with logs.

"The British army had possession of New York; their northern lines being at King's Bridge, while the American lines were at Croton River, about 25 miles north of the British. The distance between being occasionally occupied first by one party and then the other. Thefts and murders were of constant occurrence, so that few of the former inhabitants of this portion of Westchester county chose to remain at home. There being no cattle left to eat the pasture, the grass grew to a great height, so that it fell down and rotted on the ground from year to year. In 1777, we being just above the American lines, the Cow Boys, stole from us 14 head of cattle and drove them off to Morrisania. Mother, on horseback, traced them to the British lines and determined to recover them by an appeal to the British General, then quartered on Harlem heights. Upon her arrival at King's Bridge, she discovered that the sentinel stationed there, was the same light horseman that had once stood guard before her own house at Yorktown, on occasion of the roof being blown off. It was a mutual recognition, and the soldier kindly led her across the bridge, for which she bestowed upon him a pistareen. Arrived at headquarters she quickly proved to the guard's satisfaction that her son was one of the harmless people called Quakers, who took no part in the war; whereupon he gave her an order directed to the Cow-Boys, either to return the stolen property or pay its full value. Thus officially armed she went to Morrisania and presented the order to the robbers who, in a great rage, threatened not only to kill her but her family; a few words, however, sufficed to quiet them down, and they paid her the full value for the cattle, in gold. Upon reflection, she deemed it hardly safe to return home through the Neutral Ground with so much money on her person; so she deposited it with Israel Underhill, who then resided on the estate now owned by Lorillard Spencer, Esq., who concealed it under a stone wall on his farm. The whole was returned safely after the war. The Skinner's somehow became aware of her errand, and tried in every way, except by force, to get possession of the money; but she quietly informed them it had been left at Westchester. On another occasion, some Cow-Boys having stolen three horses, she followed them on horseback and recovered them from the commanding officer at Morrisania."

Mr. Joshua Carpenter,<sup>a</sup> the present occupant of the house, still points out the spot where the bed of Colonel Green stood, and the window from which Major Flagg fired his pistols, while the old fashioned wainscoting and doors are pierced with numerous bullet holes. A large addition has been since made to the house, on the east. The wonderfully extensive views which this elevated spot commands, will amply repay the visitor, besides the interest attached to the above associations.

<sup>a</sup> Mr. Carpenter is a grand-son of Richard Davenport, who held the property in 1780.



In the south-east corner of Yorktown, is situated the great dam of the Croton Aqueduct, one of the most important and extensive works ever undertaken in this country. "The dam across the Croton is placed where the river enters between the hills, after having passed for several miles through a more level country. The hill on the south side is composed of solid rock."<sup>a</sup> The dam itself is not of great length, but is one of the most ingenious works of substantial masonry any where to be found. The highest point of the structure is rather more than fifty feet above the natural bed of the Croton. By this elevation, the water is thrown back more than six miles, forming a beautiful lake of several hundred acres, containing about 100,000,000 gallons for each foot in depth for the surface. The water is drawn into the aqueduct by means of a tunnel cut into the rock, which constitutes the hill on the south side. At distances of one mile, a circular hollow tower is erected over the aqueduct, for the purpose of ventilation, these being composed of white marble, produce a very pretty effect. Every three miles is an apparatus for drawing off the water in case any internal repairs should be necessary, &c.<sup>b</sup>

The whole quantity of land which the Water Commissioners have been compelled to buy on the forty miles of the works, amount to nine hundred acres, and the average price has been nearly five hundred dollars per acre.

The great bend of the Croton, west of Pine's Bridge, was denominated by the aborigines *Keweghtegnack*. Croton lake, bordered by meadows and high hills, presents a lovely and interesting scene to the eye of the beholder. The following lines, suggested by a visit to the lake, are from the Hudson River *Chronicle* :—

#### TO CROTON LAKE.

How mildly beams the moon's pale light,  
 As o'er thy breast we gaily glide ;  
 Her silvery lustre charms the night,  
 As swift we float along the tide.  
 Unruffled calm thy bosom lies,  
 Save where the oars the stillness break ;  
 Nor do the breezes dare to rise,  
 To mar thy beauty, Croton Lake.

<sup>a</sup> Disturnell's *Gazetteer* of N. Y.

<sup>b</sup> Disturnell's *Gazetteer* of N. Y.

<sup>c</sup> *Ibid*.

The purest joys that friendship yields,  
 We here in rich profusion taste,  
 While busy thought roams o'er the fields  
 Of memory, brightening from the past ;  
 Sweet recollections crowd the mind,  
 With former scenes of purest bliss ;  
 While now, a sweet delight we find  
 In musing o'er past happiness.

Now is the hour of tranquil peace,  
 While gliding o'er thy fair expanse ;  
 All fierce, tumultuous passions cease,  
 And heavenly joys the soul entrance ;  
 The hallowed fellowship of friends  
 We here with rich delight partake,  
 Nor o'er, till this existence ends,  
 Shall we its memory dear forsake.

But list ! the hour sounds to depart,  
 And thy bright shores we leave with pain ;  
 Thou ever shalt be near my heart,  
 While life or thought or hope remain ;  
 The friends I here have found, shall be  
 Dear to my heart till life forsake ;  
 And often shall I think of thee,  
 Thou mildly beauteous Croton Lake.

The supplies of the Croton are derived exclusively from the elevated region of the Highlands, in Westchester county and Putnam, being furnished by the pure springs which so remarkably characterize the granitic formation of this region. Many of the ponds and lakes from which it is maintained, are, three or four hundred acres in extent, and as large as 1,000 acres ; all these ponds are surrounded by clear upland shores, which furnish soft and clear water. Half a gallon of water taken from the Croton at Wood's bridge, yielded by evaporation, 2,333 grains residuum, in the following proportions :—Vegetable matter, 133 ; Carbonates of lime and magnesia, 1,200 ; Muriate of magnesia, 1,000 ; Total, of grains,<sup>a</sup> 2,333.

Prior to the erection of the dam, shad fish annually ascended the river some miles above the present lake. The fishing is now entirely confined to trout, perch, and other fresh water fish.

In 1800 it was proposed to render the Croton river navigable, from its mouth to Pine's Bridge. The following report of the engineers is entitled :—

<sup>a</sup> See Corporat, Doc. of N. Y., No. xxxvi. 409.

"ESTIMATE OF EXPENSE TO MAKE THE CROTON RIVER NAVIGABLE FOR BOATS OF  
TWO TONS."

|   |              |
|---|--------------|
| The falls at Croton river with a lock, . . . . .  | £350         |
| The falls below the Old bridge, . . . . .   | 250          |
| Small rapid, . . . . .  | 10           |
| Rapid and stony, . . . . .  | 15           |
| Two small falls, . . . . .  | 15           |
| Rocky falls and stony water, . . . . .  | 60           |
| Fall both above and below Fowler's mill, . . . . .  | 100          |
| Rapids and rocks, . . . . .   | 80           |
| Long rapid water, two stony falls, . . . . .  | 250          |
| do do . . . . .   | 150          |
| Fall at Carpenter's mills and locks . . . . .   | 110          |
| A short rapid, . . . . .  | 30           |
| This brings us to Pines Bridge. Here we find eighteen obstructions, such as small rapids, fish wares, stony, &c., &c. |              |
| The cost of which is estimated at . . . . .   | 230          |
|   | <hr/> £1,650 |

Pines Bridge crosses the lake about one mile above the dam. On the south side of the Croton is a small settlement bearing the name of Crotonville—which contains a Methodist church, a Friend's meeting house, two stores, a tavern, a post office, and several scattered dwellings. The old bridge was situated west of the present structure, and served, during the Revolution, as the principal communication between the lines. Here the Americans generally kept a strong guard for the purpose of affording timely notice of an enemy's approach. It was also a place of rendezvous, as appears from the following orders:—

MANOR OF CORTLAND, 12th Nov., 1781.

Lieutenant Purdy, you are commanded to march twenty-four of your men, well armed and equipt with six days provision, to *Pines Bridge*, by to-morrow morning at 8 o'clock, with all the teams in your company.

SAMUEL DRAKE, *Colonel*.

DANFORTH'S, 8 o'clock in the evening.

Sir—I have this moment received intelligence that the enemy are out as far as Young's. I shall be at the *Bridge*, ready to march, at 2 o'clock, and wish to have all the militia in Cronpond mustered and at the *Bridge* by that time.

I am, sir, your most obedient servant,

WILLIAM HULL, *Lieut. Colonel*.

P. S.—I beg you to send to Major Strang's and Capt. Drake's.

On the morning of the 25th of June, 1779, the British light horse, and about 1,000 infantry, were at *Pines Bridge*. Gen. Heath "ordered 200 light infantry, under the command of Lieut. Col. Grosvenor, to march to Robinson's stores, near Marpoch Pond, to cover that quarter."<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Mem. 206.

On the 21st of October, 1780, "intelligence was received that the enemy were meditating an excursion as far up as Crompond and its vicinity, to sweep off the cattle." Gen. Heath immediately ordered Col. Hazen, with a detachment of 500 men, to move to *Pines Bridge*, and Lieut. Col. Jameson, with the 2d light dragoons, to move from Bedford towards Col. Hazen. The detachment arrived at *Pines Bridge* about two o'clock the next morning. The evening of the 23d, Col. Hazen returned with the detachment; the enemy did not come out.<sup>a</sup> It was in the vicinity of Pines Bridge that Enoch Crosby, the Westchester spy, first commenced his career of secret service.

By way of a general geographical description of Yorktown, it may be observed, "that the north is broken by the hills of the southern border of the Highlands, and the general surface is hilly, though its hills are of a moderate height in the south"<sup>b</sup> The numerous streams supply abundance of mill seats. "The soil is generally productive, and well distributed into arable, pasture, and meadow lands. Much of it is stony; and previous to the late introduction of gypsum as a manure, many farms were nearly exhausted by constant tillage."<sup>c</sup> The timber is very thrifty and tall, consisting for the most part of oak, chestnut, hickory and walnut, &c. The low grounds yield maple, black birch, ash and hemlock, &c.

The first entry relating to town officers occurs in the manor book, entitled,

*"Record for the manor of Cortlandt and Yorktown."*

"At a town meeting held for ye manor of Cortlandt, on the first Tuesday, in April, in the year of our Lord, 1760, to choose town officers for ye said manor for the ensuing year, and the respective names and offices of those chosen."

PIERRE VAN CORTLANDT, *Supervisor.*

MOSES TRAVIS, *Clerk.*

JOSEPH SHERWOOD, *Treasurer.*

DANIEL STRANG, }  
JOSEPH TIDD, } *Assessors.*

JOSEPH TRAVIS, for the *Water Collector* at Peekskill.

JOHN TRAVIS, *Pounder.*

JEREMIAH DRAKE, *Constable* for the west part;

JOHN YEOMANS, for ye middle part;

JOHN PURDY, for ye east part, &c.<sup>d</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Ibid. 260.

<sup>b</sup> Spafford's *Gazetteer* of New York.

<sup>c</sup> Ibid.

<sup>d</sup> See Rec. of Yorktown. The names of some twenty freeholders are also attached to the list.



# APPENDIX A.

---

## PEDIGREES OF THE FAMILIES

OF THE

## COUNTY OF WESTCHESTER.

---

NOTE.—In the following pages b. stands for born; m. or mar. for married; d. for died; da. for daughter; and æt. for aged.

---

**AMBLER OF BEDFORD.** Two brothers of this name were among the early settlers of Bedford. *Benjamin Ambler*, mar. ———— Dibble, and left three sons, Joseph, Joshua and Benjamin, and a da., Rachel, who mar. ———— Miller. Benjamin, the youngest, mar. Mary Wilson, and left Henry and William H. of Bedford.

**ANGEVINE.** The name of *Zacharie Angevine*, occurs as a freeholder of New Rochelle, in 1710, mar. May, 1676. Pierre, probably son of Zacharie, left 1, Louis; 2, Pierre; 3, Marie. Louis, mar. Esther Sicard, and had Louis, b. 19th August, 1732. Pierre, b. 30 August, 1734. Marie, Esther and Annie, the latter b. 1731. Pierre, second son of first Pierre, mar. Margaret ————, and left a da. Esther, b. 4 Dec. 1729. John, a member of this family, left John and Daniel. Mary, da. of John, d. January, 1841, æt. 105. Daniel, mar. Catharine Geraud, and left Daniel, who was lost at sea. Eli Angevine, of Scarsdale, had nine children; 1st, Jonathan of Poughkeepsie; 2nd, Caleb of Poughkeepsie, mar. ———— Ostrander; 3d, Phæbe mar. Stephen Lockwood; 4th, Charity mar. Israel Sheerly; 5th, Susan mar. Isaac Purdy; 6th, Mary mar. Budd Purdy; 7th, Patience mar. Jacob Burnett; 8th, Peggy mar. Joshua Underhill; 9th, Elizabeth mar. Richard Cornell. Jonathan of Poughkeepsie, mar. Susan Ferris, and has Eli and Caleb.

**ARCHER OF FORDHAM.** The ancestor of this family is supposed to have been *Humphrey Archer* who was born 1527, and died Oct. 24th, 1562, eldest son and heir of Richard Archer, twelfth in descent from Fulbert L. Archer, one of the companions of William the Conqueror. Humphrey mar. Elizabeth Townsend, and left 1, Humphrey; 2, Arthur; 3, Andrew, who mar. Margaret Raleigh; 4,

John, who mar. Eleanor Frewin; 5, Bridget, who mar. John Bancroft; 6, Marjory, who mar. John Collis; 7, Elizabeth, who mar. John Hereford. Andrew, third son of Humphrey, died 2 April, 1629, leaving issue by his wife Margaret two sons, Simon, born September 21, 1624, who mar. Anne Ferris; and Lieut. Col. Thomas, an officer in the Parliament service, who fled beyond the seas; Humphrey, Elizabeth and Penelope. Richard second son of Andrew by his wife Mary Bull, left one son Rowland. John Archer, fourth son of first Humphrey by Eleanor Frewin, left one son John the father of *John Archer first Lord of the Manor of Fordham*, Westchester county. John, first Lord of the Manor, mar. Sarah Odell, da. of William, and had one son John and three daughters, viz. Mary, Catharine and Sarah. John, second Lord of the manor married Mary Fowler, had three sons; 1, Samuel; 2, Richard who mar. Sarah Valentine, and died 1783; 3, John who mar. Elizabeth ———, will dat. 1708, no. xxi. 60, a da. Eleanor who married Oliver Drew, Samuel Archer, first son of John, left one son Benjamin of Fordham who had first, Benjamin, owner in fee of part of the Manor, mar. Rachel de Vaux; second, John; fourth, Mary who mar. John Pugsley; fifth, Sarah who mar. Jacob Alord, and sixth, Rachel who mar. James Crawford. Benjamin first son of Benjamin, had 1, William of Fordham; 2, Samuel of ditto, whose sons are George, Charles, Benjamin, Lewis, William and Henry; 3, Catharine who mar. Charles Valentine; and 4, Rachel who mar. Richard Archer. Richard Archer, second son of John, second proprietor of the Manor by his wife Sarah Valentine left two sons; 1, Anthony, born 1746, died 1838, mar. Margaret Mapes, and had Elijah, Benjamin of N. Y., Richard, Charles, Anthony of Yonkers, Sarah, Mary, Margaret, Eliza and Sally; 2, Matthias who had Matthias, who mar. Sarah Odell, da. of Hendrick, and left Charles and Odell of Yonkers. John Archer, third son of John second proprietor, had 1, Abraham of Eastchester, in 1764, mar. Mary ———; 2, Jacob; 3, John of Winterhill, Eastchester, mar. Mary Leggett; 4, Jonathan of Eastchester, will dat. 1764, no. xxiv. 279, whose children were Sarah who mar. Joseph Fowler, John, Ezekiel, and Abigail who mar. Joshua Pell. John of Winterhill and Mary Leggett had 1, James who mar. Phoebe ———, their children are Mary, Phoebe, Anne and Esther; 2, Gabriel who mar. Susan Hunt and left John of N. Y., James, Daniel, Benjamin of New Castle, Elizabeth who mar. Clark Guion, Sally wife of Stephen Hunt, Phoebe wife of Robert Sarles, Mary wife of Isaac Carpenter, Hetty wife of Nehemiah Purdy, and Susan the wife of Elisha Tompkins; 3, John mar. Susan Wheeler; 4, Catharine mar. John Bashford; 5, Mary mar. John Brown; 6, Bridget mar. Samuel Hitchcock; 7, Martha mar. William Green; 8, Sarah mar. Jacob ———; 9, Hannah mar. Archer Reed.

BAILEY OF SOMERS. *Levi Bailey* living in 1795, mar. ——— Gilchrist. He had De Vaux of Putnam co., James of Somers, Gilbert, Thomas, William of Nova Scotia, Levi of Canada, Stephen, Daniel, Sarah who mar. Daniel Carpenter, Esther who mar. John Steven and Sarah who mar. Nathan Brown. De Vaux mar. Elizabeth Smith and left 1, Samuel; 2, Stephen; 3, Benjamin; 4, William; 5, Levi; 6, Horace; 7, Daniel; 8, Ira; 9, Isaac; 10, Thomas; 11, Esther. James of Somers mar. Ann Brown and had 1, Stephen; 2, Hachaliah of Somers d. 1845; 3, Mary; 4, Ann; 5, Jane; 6, Susan; 7, Elizabeth; 8, Theodore. Gilbert mar. Sarah Field and left—1, William; 2, Joseph; 3, Levi; 4, Solomon; 5, Simon,

6, Claude; 7, Jane; 8, Elizabeth. Thomas mar. Sarah ———, and had Jacob and Deborah. William of Nova Scotia left Levi and Esther. Levi of Canada had John and Chloe. David left Daniel and Deborah.

BARKER OF SCARSDALE. — *Barker*, left three sons, (I.) William of Scarsdale mar. ——— Fowler of Eastchester, and had 1, Thomas of Greenburgh, mar. Anne Horton whose sons are Peter, Caleb and Samuel. 2, John mar. Mary granda. of the Rev. John Smith, their son is William Barker of White Plains. 3, William of Mamaroneck mar. ——— Fowler of Eastchester, and left one son Samuel; 4, Samuel of Scarsdale. 5, A. da. mar. ——— Bonnett of Philipse's Manor. (II.) Daniel the father of Daniel. (III.) Thomas of Dutchess county.

BAYARDS OF WESTCHESTER. — *Stephen Bayard* had two sons Col. Samuel Vetch Bayard of Throckmorton's Neck, Westchester; and William of New York. Col. Samuel mar. 24th of April, 1778, Catharine van Horne and left—1, William b. at Halifax, N. S. Feb. 14, 1779; 2, Elizabeth b. at N. Y. Dec. 1, 1780; 3, Catharine nat. 13 Oct. 1782; 4, Stephen b. at Cornwallis, N. S., Oct. 26, 1785, mar. Elizabeth Anne de Lancey and left Eliza Anne mar. Jacob Lorillard, Stephen, and William, M. D. of West Farms; 5, Robert b. at Wilmot, N. S., March 1, 1788; 6, Samuel b. at Wilmot, N. S., March 1, 1790; 7, Frances b, 25 July, 1793; 8, Ethelinda; 9, Eliza mar. George L. Cooper; 10, Louisa; 11, Sarah. William of New York, second son of Stephen, mar. Harriet Cornell and had 1, Harriet mar. Stephen van Renselaer; 2, Justina mar. Joseph Blackwell; 3, Susan mar. Duncan P. Campbell; 4, Maria; 5, Robert of Fishkill; 6, William of New York.

BENEDICT OF LEWISBOROUGH. — *Amos Benedict* removed at an early period from Norwalk to South Salem; killed by the fall of a tree. His children were, 1st, *Solomon*, who mar. Hannah Benedict and left one son, Solomon; 2, *Isaac*, mar. Elizabeth Burchitt, and had Isaac, Ady, Elizabeth, mar. Samuel Townsend, Huld, Anne, and Esther; 3, Amos, mar. Elizabeth Brown; 4, Jacob; 5, Jonah, mar. Mary Rusky, and left Peter, the present occupant of the Homestead, near Long Pond.

BERRIAN OF YONKERS. — The family of *Berrian* was among the French Huguenots who fled from France to Holland on the Revocation of the edict of Nantes. *Nicholas Berrian*, the first of the family who emigrated to this country, had five sons; 1, Nicholas; 2, Cornelius; 3, Richard; 4, Samuel; 5, Peter; Cornelius, the second son, mar. Sarah Warner. Richard, who was b. in Holland, resided for some time upon Long Island. He mar. Grace, or Geshé, Ryker of Ryker's Island, and left, 1, Abraham, second proprietor of Berrian's Neck, who mar. 1st, Mary Moore; 2nd, Mary Williams; their children were Col. Abraham, Nathaniel of Berrian's Neck, b. June 24, 1781, d. 1845. Richard, Phoebe, Mary, Geshè, and Charity; Geshé, mar. Jesse Leverich. Samuel, 4th son of first Nicholas, mar. ——— Tippet, and left two sons; 1st, Samuel; 2nd, Richard; whose son was the Rev. William Berrian, D. D., late Rector of Trinity church, New York.

BERTINE OF NEW ROCHELLE. The ancestors of the *Bertines*, or Berteins (as the name was originally spelt,) were Protestants, inhabitants of Rochelle, in

France. On the Revocation of the edict of Nantes, *Pierre Bertine* fled from France to England, and soon after came thence to America. Two brothers by the name of Peter and James were living at New Rochelle in 1742. Peter left three sons, James, Peter, and Isaac, and a daughter Elizabeth. James mar. Deborah Cozine, and had James, Thomas, Hannah, who mar. William H. Pinckney of Eastchester; Sarah, mar. Henry Remsen; Eliza, mar. Gilbert Hatfield, and Julia, who married Gershom Smith.

**BIRDSALL OF PEEKSKILL.**—*Daniel Birdsall* of Peekskill, b. 17th January, 1734–5, d. Oct. 29th, 1800, mar. Hannah ———; she was b. 7th Nov. 1737. Their children were, 1, Daniel, jr. of Peekskill, who mar. 1st, Phebe Brown; and secondly, Letitia Lewis; and left William B. of Peekskill, James of New York; Samuel of Cincinnati, Ohio; Daniel, Mary, who mar. Medad Raymond; Anne Eliza and Hannah; 2, Samuel, left William, who mar. 1st, Nancy Haws; 2nd, ——— Spock, and had Samuel of Peekskill; 3, Sarah, b. Nov. 6, 1758; 4, Mary Hannah, b. Sept. 1760; 5, Elizabeth, b. 8th July, 1765; 6, Martha.

**BLEECKER.**—*Jan Jansen Bleecker*, a native of Meppel in the Province of Overysse, Holland, came to New Amsterdam from Holland in 1658, and subsequently removed to Albany. He was one of the first aldermen named in the charter of Albany, A. D. 1686; and mayor of that city in 1695, mar. Margaret da. of Rutger Jacobsen, A. D. 1667. He d. æt. 91. They had eight children; 1, John, Mayor of Albany in 1701, d. Sept. 1738, æt 70, mar. Anna Coster, Oct. 1693; 2, Rutger, Recorder and Mayor of Albany, 1725, 6, 7, 8, d. Aug. 1756, æt. 82, mar. Catalina Schuyler, da. of David S.; 3, Nicolas; 4, Henry; 5, Catharine, mar. Abraham Cuyler; 6, Jane, mar. John Glen; 7, Margaret, mar. Henry Ten Eyck; 8, Rachel. John, the eldest, left five sons, John, Henry, Nicolas, Jacob, and Anthony. John, eldest son of John, mar. 1st, ——— Ten Eyck; 2d, ——— Brees, their children were, 1, Jacob; 2, John, d. Sept. 1747, mar. Gerritje van Schaick, and left John, mar. ——— Van Allen, Sybrant and Jacob; 3, Gertrude, mar. Abraham Wendell; 4, Anne; 5, Catharine. Henry, 2d son of John and Anna Coster, d. in the country of the Senecas. Nicolas, 3d son, mar. Margaret Rooseboom, and left three sons, Henry, John, and Nicolas. Henry, the eldest, mar. Catharina Cuyler, their children are Nicolas of Albany, mar. Nettje Staats, Henry of Albany, mar. Elizabeth Metcalfe, Margaret, mar. Hermanus Ten Eyck, and Catharine, mar. James van Ingen. John, second son of Nicolas, d. 1825, æt 87, mar. Margaret van Dusen, and left, 1, Henry S., of Albany; 2, Nicolas, of Albany; 3, Jacob; 4, Eliza, mar. Jacob Brodhead; 5, Harriet, mar. John Romeyn; 6, Margaret, mar. John van Schaick. Jacob, fourth son of John and Anna Coster, mar. Margaret Ten Eyck, and left one son, Hermanus, who mar. ——— Wendell, their sons are Jacob J. and Hermanus of Albany. Anthony, fifth son of John and Anna Coster, d. without issue at Otsego. Rutger, second son of Jan Jansen, d. 1756, leaving two sons, John Rutger and James, of New Rochelle, also a da. Margaret. John Rutger d. A. D. 1800, æt. 88, mar. Elizabeth Staats da. of Barent S., and left, 1, Barent, of Albany mar. Sarah Lansing; 2, John, mar. 1st, Jane Gilliland; 2nd, Elizabeth van Rensselaer, widow of John Schuyler. Their children were, 1, Eliza, mar. Grant Powell; 2, Charlotte, mar. Vinal Luce; 3, Sarah; 4, Stephen, d. 1826; 5,



John, d. 1832. 6, Catharine, mar. C. G. Van Rensselaer; 3, Rutger, mar. Catharine Elmendorf, and left John R., Elizabeth, mar. Peter Brinckerhoof, Maria, mar. Morris Mills, and Blandina, mar. Charles D. Dudley. James of New Rochelle, second son of first Rutger, mar. Abigail R. Lispenard of New Rochelle, and left, 1st. Anthony L., mar. Mary Noel; 2, Rutger; 3, David; 4, Andrew; 5, James; 6, John, mar. Anne Eliza Schuyler; 7, Leonard, mar. 1st. da. of James Abeel: 2d. Grace Moore Berrian; 8, Elizabeth Grace, mar. William Le Hart. *Arms*, az. two embattled chevrons or, empaling, arg. a rose branch ppr. *Crest*, a pheon or.

**BREWER OF PEEKSKILL.**—The ancestor of this family was *Daniel Breerer* of Massachusetts, who d. A. D. 1770. He mar. Phœbe Locke and left issue; 1, Samuel d. A. D. 1810; 2, James, M. D. b. 1741, d. Nov. 20th, 1780, mar. Hannah Lee, da. of Joseph Lee, of Yorktown, she died Sept. 4th 1810; 3, Daniel, d. 1777; 4, Phœbe mar. ——— Jones of Ashbury, Mass.; 5, Lucy mar. ——— Darbe of Hanwick, N. H.; 6, Mary mar. Williams of Randolph, Vermont; 7, Sarah mar. ——— Willard of Maine; 8, Mette mar. Solomon Safford, of Bennington, Vermont. James, M. D., and Hannah Lee, left, 1, Sarah mar. Elias Cornelius, M. D., of Philipstown; 2, Mary d. Oct. 19, 1779, æt. 33, mar. Stephen Brown of Peekskill; 3, Joseph d. May 31, 1803, æt. 34; 4, Daniel d. Sept. 6, 1804, æt. 33, mar. Phœbe Howell, left one son, James, who died young; 5th, James, died Oct. 24, 1810, æt. 27 years, mar. Anne Brotherson, and left James, M. D., of Peekskill, and Sarah Ann, who mar. Coffin S. Brown, of Peekskill; 6, Phœbe d. July 7, 1816, æt. 38, mar. Daniel W. Birdsall; 7, Samuel d. March 1, 1815, æt. 35, mar. Elizabeth, da. of John Titus of Flushing, L. I., and left two da., Mary and Elizabeth, who mar. Thurston, Huntington.

**BOLTON.**—The surname of *Bolton* is one of considerable antiquity, and is derived from the place of that name in Yorkshire, England.

“Bodelton or Bothelton, the ancient orthography of all the towns which bear this name, (says Whitaker) is evidently from Boel, mansio, implying probably, that it was the principal residence of some Saxon thane. The spelling, with a slight variation, was continued a century or more after the conquest: for, in the time of Stephen, Abbot of Salley, (probably in Henry the second's reign,) Elias de Bothilton held lands in this place,<sup>a</sup> de Feodo de la Leya.”<sup>b</sup>

In the reign of Henry the third, Richard de Bonhilton is named of the village of Bonhilton, in Yorkshire. The Testa Villarum of the time of Henry the third, and Edward the first, contain the name of Robert de Bolrun, as holding six acres of land at Bolrun, in Yorkshire. John de Bolton, bow bearer of Bolton forest, in 1312, was the lineal representative according to Dugdale, of the Saxon earls of Mercia. From Whitaker's History of Craven it appears that Edwin, Earl of Mercia, was seized of the manor of Bodeltone before the conquest, and held it five years after. This nobleman was son of Leofwine, and brother of Leopie,

<sup>a</sup> Parish of Bolton, juxta Bowland.

<sup>b</sup> Whitaker's Hist. of the Deanery of Craven.

<sup>c</sup> The Manor of Midhope, one of the most extensive and valuable grazing farms in Craven, was parcel of the great possessions of the *Boltuns*, and passed into the Lister family, by marriage with a co-heiress of that most ancient name, in the time of Edward the Second.” Whitaker's Hist. of Craven. *Bolton* was, though the style hath been altered, (says Segar) an ancient Barony by tenure in Henry the Second's time, and the Scroopes of Upsall and Masham re in a direct line descended from the Barons Bolton of Bolton.”

earls of Mercia. In the year 1330. John de Bolton was rector of the church at Bolton, in Yorkshire; and John de Bolton, patron of the same. Henry Bolton is the next ancestor of whom we have any account. He appears to have been living at Bolton in Lancashire, about 1332. He left Robert the father of William, who had a son Robert.

Robert Bolton, the more immediate ancestor of the family, was residing at Blackburn, Lancashire, in 1569. His sons were John and Robert. Of the youngest. Fuller in his *Worthies of England*, thus speaks: "Robert Bolton was born at Blackburne, in Lancashire, on Whitsunday, 1572, a year as infamous for the massacre of many Protestants in France, as for the birth of some eminent in England. His parents having a narrow estate, struggled with their necessities to give him a liberal education: he was bred first, in Lincoln, then in Brazen-nose college, in Oxford. He had Isocrates' six marks or properties of a good scholar. His want of means proved an advancement unto him; for, not having whence to buy books, he borrowed the best authors of his tutor, read over, abridged into note books, and returned them. He was as able to express himself in Latin or Greek, as English; and that, *stylo imperatorio*. He was chosen one of the disputants before King James, at his first coming to the university, and performed it with great applause.

Thus far I have followed my author mentioned in the margin; but we must depart from him a little in one particular. Though Mr. Bolton's parents were not overflowing with wealth, they had a competent estate, (as I am informed by credible intelligence) wherein their family had comfortably continued long time in good repute.

Sir Augustine Nicolls presented him to the rectory of Broughton, in Northamptonshire: sending him his presentation unexpectedly, from his chamber in Sergeant's Inn, where Dr. King, Bishop of London, being accidentally present, thanked the judge for his good choice; but told him withal, that he had deprived the university of a singular ornament. Besides his constant preaching, he hath left behind him, many useful books, the witnesses of his piety and learning; and died, in the 59th year of his age, December 17, 1631.

The following epitaph is engraven on his monument in Broughton church Northamptonshire:

ROBERTUS JACET HIC BOLTONUS,  
CÆTERA NOVIT,  
OCCUBITUS DEPLENS ANGLIA TOTA  
DIEM,  
PRIMUS ET OPTIMUS HUIUS, EO  
CLESIE PRÆCO  
DOCTISSIME PIUS QUI 17, DIE  
DECEMB.,  
ANNO DNI, 1631, PLACIDE OBDOR  
MIVIT IN DOMINO."

Rev. Robert Bolton mar. Anne Boyce of Kent, and left one son, Samuel and four daughters. John Bolton, eldest brother of the above Robert, inherited his

father's property at Blackburn, and was living in 1632. Among the names of his children, all of which are not preserved, we find Robert who was baptized at Blackburn in 1609, father to John baptized in the same place, in 1632. John died about 1700, at Sheffield, Yorkshire, he mar. Anne, and left Robert, b. at Blackburn, 26 July, 1688; and a da. Anne, who mar. Thomas Richmond. Robert emigrated from Sheffield to Philadelphia, Penn., in 1720, and mar. Anne Curtis, widow of Robert Clay, on the 19th Feb., 1721. He was for many years warden of Christ church, Philadelphia. He d. June 25th, 1742; she d. May 7th, 1747. Their children were: 1, Robert, b. January 1st, 1722; 2, Anne; 3, Mary, mar. 1741. Hon. James Habersham of Savannah, Georgia; 4, Rebecca d. Dec. 22, 1729; 5, Joseph, d. May 1, 1725; 6, John, b. 1725, d. May 20, 1726; 7, John, b. 1726; Joseph and Hannah, b. 20 June, 1727. Joseph, d. June 13, 1729, Hannah, d. 25 April, 1728. Robert the eldest, removed to Savannah, Ga., where he married Susannah Mauvé, a native of Vivay, Switzerland. He left Robert of Savannah, b. in 1757. Hannah, m. Mr. Moore; Sarah, m. Will. Evans; Anne, m. Nathl. Adams; and Rebecca, m. Thomas Newell.

Robert of Savannah mar. Sarah McClean, and had, 1st, Robert, b. at Savannah, Sept. 10, 1788, baptized by his grandfather, Robert. 2nd, Sarah, mar. her second cousin, John Bolton. 3d, Anne, mar. her second cousin, Curtis Bolton; 4th, James mar. 1, Miss Clay of Philadelphia; 2, Honora Richardson d. Feb. 16th, 1824. left three sons, James, Elward and William; 5, Frances mar. Richard Richardson of New Orleans. 6th, Rebecca. Robert, the eldest, mar. Anne Jay, da. of the Rev. William Jay of Bath, England; and had, 1st, Robert Bolton, b. at Bath, April 17, 1814, mar. 1, Josephine, da. of Brewster Woodhull; 2, Elizabeth R. Brenton, da. of James B.; 2nd, Anne; 3d, William Jay; 4th, John; 5th, Cornelius Winter; 6th, Mary Statira; 7th, Arabella; 8th, James; 9th, Rhoda; 10th, Abby; 11th, Meta; 12th, Adele and Adelaide; 13th. Frances Georgianna.

BONNETT OF NEW ROCHELLE.—The ancestors of the Bonnetts were Protestants, inhabitants of Rochelle, in France. On the Revocation of the Edict of Nantes, Daniel Bonnett fled from France to England. He subsequently emigrated to America. Daniel left, 1, Pierre, b. in England; 2, Jacques; 3, Daniel. Jacques had Peter, who mar. Mary Parcot, and James, who left one son, Peter, of New York. Peter, the eldest son of Jacques, d. in 1823, and had Salmon, of Upper New Rochelle, and a da. Elizabeth, who mar. Bartholomew Ward.

BRONDIG OF RYE.—*John Brondish* or Brondig, was one of the first and principal proprietors of Manusing Island and Poningoe Neck, in 1662. He left four sons—John, Joseph, Daniel and Joshua—ancestors of the numerous and respectable families which bear the name in Westchester County.

BROWN OF RYE.—This family was a younger branch of the Browns of Beechworth, in the County of Kent, England, founded by Sir Anthony Brown,<sup>a</sup> who was created a Knight of the Bath, at the coronation of Richard II. He left issue two sons, Sir Richard his heir, and Sir. Stephen, Lord Mayor of Landon in 1439. Sir Robert Brown, living *temp.* Henry V. was father of Sir Thomas Browne, treasurer of the household to Henry VI., and Sheriff of Kent, in 1444 and 1460

<sup>a</sup> The name of Brown is frequently written in ancient records with the addition of the *e*, and several families have even retained this orthography.

Thomas Brown, Esq., of Rye, County of Sussex, England, emigrated to Concord, Massachusetts, cir. 1632, from whence he removed to Cambridge, where he lived some time.<sup>a</sup> His sons were (I.), Thomas of Rye, who d. A. D. 1694, and Hachaliah of Rye. The latter left issue; 1, Benjamin, d. in 1755, and had 1, Benjamin; 2, Joseph; 3, Daniel; 4, William. (II.), Peter, d. 1731-2, mar. Martha ———, he left, 1st, Ebenezer; 2nd, Caleb; 3rd, Peter, d. 1739; he had Rebecca, mar. John Purdy, and Sarah, mar. Thomas Sutton; 4th, Hon. Nathaniel; 5th, Hon. Nehemiah; 6th, Hannah; 7th, Sarah; 8th, Rebecca; 9th, Elizabeth. (III.), Thomas d. 1762; (IV.), Hachaliah, d. 1784, mar. Ann Kniffen; he left, 1st, Hachaliah of Somers, b. August 20, 1727, d. May 22, 1813, mar. Abby Halsted. She was b. 1734, d. August, 1807. The children of Hachaliah and Abby Halsted, were *Nathan*, b. Aug. 24, 1756, d. March, 1814; *Stephen*, b. July 10, 1766; *Lewis*, b. May 12, 1776, d. March 3, 1830, mar. Clarissa Clift of Somers; *Ann*, b. 28 Oct., 1754, d. July, 1804, mar. James Bailey; *Mary*, b. 22 June, 1758, d. 25 Aug., æt. 52, mar. Hon. Elijah Lee; *Aner*, b. 16 Feb., 1760, d. 7 April, 1807, mar. ——— Crane, M. D.; *Abigail*, b. 15th Jan., 1762, d. 20 April, 1828, mar. Colonel John Odell, of Greenburgh; *Susannah*, b. 15 Dec., 1763, mar. John Titus; *Esther*, b. 8 April, 1768, d. 16 April, 1798; and *Sarah*, b. 1 June, 1772, mar. Jonathan Ward. 2nd, Christopher of Somers, second son of Hachaliah, had Isaac, Aaron, Frederick and Phoebe. 3d, David d. 1773, mar. Esther Wetmore, da. of Rev. James Wetmore. 4th, Nathan d. 1764, mar. Elizabeth Kniffen, he left *Gilbert*, d. Dec. 27, 1820, æt. 61. *Elizabeth* d. June, 1831, æt. 71. *Margaret* d. Feb. 1, 1820, æt. 50; and *Lavinia*. 5th, Thomas d. April 6, 1815, æt. 86, mar. Jane Seaman, she d. April 8, 1813, æt. 71. Their children were, *David*, d. Feb. 5, 1847, æt. 85. *Thomas* d. Sept. 20, 1830, æt. 58. *Nathan*, *Hachaliah*, *Letitia*, d. Sept. 20, 1830, æt. 30, mar. Hon. Elijah Lee; *Anne*, mar. David Stebbins. *Jane*, d. Sept. 24, 1830, æt. 53. *Abigail* d. 1813, mar. Thomas Strang, and *Catharine* mar. Rev. Elias Cooper, Rector of St. John's church, Yonkers. 6th, Josiah d. Aug. 30 1789, æt. 47, mar. Deborah Brown, da. of Jonathan; she d. January 15, 1830, æt. 76. Their children were, *Hachaliah*, *Nancy*, mar. John Watson, *Elizabeth* and *Clarissa*; 7th, Isaac; 8th, Gilbert d. young; and 9th, Gilbert who also d. young. (V.), Deliverance had three sons; 1st, Deliverance; 2nd, Zebediah and Jonathan. (VI.), Anne mar. Daniel Purdy. (VII.), Mary mar. Absalom Brondige. Of this family, was Jonathan Brown, whose son Jonathan left issue; 1st, Jonathan mar. Esther Parcels, he had, Elizabeth mar. James Butterworth, and Clarissa who mar. ——— Perkins; 2nd, Obadiah, he left Isaac and Anne; 3d, Charles mar. ——— Wyrgans; 4th, Clarissa mar. Nicholas Hasbraeck; 5th, Deborah mar. Josiah Brown. *Arms.* sa, three lions, pasant, in bend, betw. two double cottesses, arg. *Crest*, an eagle displayed vert. Another *crest*, a stag, ppr., altered and ducally gorged and lined or.

BROWN OF PEEKSKILL.—Several individuals of the name of Brown, were among the early settlers of Massachusetts. *William Brown* was born in Connecticut. His son Samuel was a freholder of North Castle, in this County, and left, (I.), Nathaniel of Nine Partners, Dutchess Co., who had a son James C. of Saratoga, N. Y., and a da. *Mary*, mar. Jonathan Griffin. (II.), Mordecai of Cox-

<sup>a</sup> See Farmer's Register.



sackie, who had Samuel, living near Lake Champlain, and James of Fishkill. (III.), Thomas, formerly of Nine Partners, subsequently a resident at Peekskill, where he d., cir. 1800, æt. 90, mar. Susannah Bugbee. (IV.), William of Queensbury, Saratoga Co., left William of Queensbury. (V.), Benedict of Queensbury, who had sons, Justus, Silas, Hougill and Timothy, Thomas, third son of Samuel, left, 1st, Nathaniel, b. May 16, 1744, d. May 30, 1811, mar. Mary Hall, da. of Caleb Hall and Jane Dagget his wife, she was b. Nov. 23, 1745, date of mar. May 16, 1766, d. Jan. 24, 1835; 2nd, Gilbert b. 1746, mar. Levina Wolley, and had David of New York, Isaac of New York, Cinthia, Fanny mar. Moses Ward, of Newark, N. J., and two other da.; 3d, Nathan of Peekskill mar. Peace, and left Gideon, Susan and Elizabeth; 4th, Alvan, whose descendants are living in N. Y.; 5th, Phœbe mar. 1st, ——— Walters; 2nd, James Tucker. Nathaniel, eldest son of Thomas, by Mary Hall, left: (I.), Stephen of Peekskill, b. Feb. 23, 1767, d. at Purchase, May 2, 1831, while attending quarterly meeting at that place. Mar. Sept. 3, 1791, Mary Brewer, da. of James. She was b. Sept. 3d, 1766, and d. Oct. 19, 1799. Their children were, 1. Phœbe, b. Sept. 30, 1792, d. April 23, 1805. 2. James, of Peekskill, b. Oct. 22, 1794, 3. Hannah, b. Aug. 9, 1797, mar. Abner Brundage, of Peekskill. Stephen, mar. secondly, Jemima Strang, da. of Major Joseph Strang, and had, 1. Ann, b. May, 1801; 2. Egbert, b. Jan. 7, 1803, d. Feb. 14, 1815; 3. Mary, b. January 22, 1805, mar. Sandford Knapp, M.D.; 4. Sarah; 5. Jane, d. 1819. (II.), Nathaniel, b. Feb. 17, 1769, mar. Charity Cox, and had Jacob, Samuel, of New York. Stephen C., and Esther. (III.), Mary, b. Sept. 8, 1770, d. 1785. (IV.), Sarah, b. Aug. 13, 1771, mar. Jacob Bedle. (V.), Cornelius, b. May 24, 1773, d. Dec. 1831; mar. 1st, Elizabeth Osborne, 2nd, Lea Jones, and left by his wife, Martha, mar. Able Smith, by second, Nathaniel, Smith, Thomas, Edgar, and Anne Eliza, who mar. ——— Veeley. (VI.), Thomas, b. Sept. 13, 1775, d. 1829, mar. 1st, Nancy Concklin; 2d, Martha Birdsall. (VII.), Mary, b. Oct. 4, 1778, mar. Sopher Jones. (VIII.), Susannah, b. June 8, 1780, d. 1781. (IX.), Caleb, b. May 22, 1782, mar. Phœbe Weeks, and left Hannah, who mar. John Merrit of N. Y., Thomas, Joshua, Dorothy, Mary, and Nathaniel. (X.), Gilbert, b. Sept. 24, 1784, d. May 6th, 1837, mar. Hannah Osborne, and had two da., Elizabeth and Nancy.

Budd.—*John Budd*, of Southold, L. I., mar. Catharine ———, and had John Budd of Southold, first proprietor of Apawquammis or Budd's Neck, 1661; will dated 13th Oct. 1669; mar. and left issue two sons. 1, John Budd, to whom his father bequeathed all his portion of the mills on Blind Brook, 1671. 2, Joseph, first patentee of Budd's Neck under the crown, 26th February, 1695, will dated 1722; Surrogate's office N. Y., viii. p. 311. Joseph, mar. Sarah ———, and had, 1, John, who mar. Mary Strang; by whom he had Gilbert, M. D., John, who left a son John, and Mary who mar. Gilbert Theal. 2, Joseph, who married Ann ———, leaving Joseph, Nicholas, Underhill, Anne, and Sarah, the wife of John Que of Dutchess. The will of Joseph, sen., is dat. 1763. 3, Elisha, b. 1705, d. 1765, will dat. 1765, No. xxv. 252; mar. Ann Lyon, who d. Dec. 6, 1760, æt. 60. Their children were, Jonathan, James, Merriam, who mar. Jonah Maynard, Sarah, who mar. ——— Purdy, Anne, who mar. ——— Brown, and Phœbe. 4, Underhill, proprietor of Budd's neck, b. April 29, baptized 30th May, 1708, will dat. 1755, lib. xix. p. 280; mar. Sarah Fowler, b.

June 17th, 1710, mar. Sept. 17, 1730, d. August 19, 1798. Their children were Col. Gilbert, who d. 7th Sept. 1813, and left twin daughters, Ophelia and Sarah, b. July 22, 1782; Sarah, b. July 21, 1781, Mary, b. Dec. 30, 1746, d. 1786. Tamar, mar. Ebenezer Haviland, M.D., and Hetty, mar. William Colman. 5. Gilbert, who d. Oct. 14, 1805; 6, Hannah, who mar. — Palmer; 7, Sarah; 8, Anne; 9, Tamar; 10, Mary.

BUSH OF RYE.—*Justus Bush* was one of the eighteen proprietors of Poningoe Neck, 1737. He mar. Anne — who d. Aug. 5, 1745. His three sons were Bernardus, Henry, and Abraham. Abraham mar. Ruth, da. Gilbert Lyon, and had 1. Abraham, who left William of King Street, Rye, the father of William S., Andrew L. Hobart, and Newberry; 2, Gilbert; 3, Anne, mar. Jonathan Fichers; 4, Sarah, mar. Thomas Theal; 5, Elizabeth, mar. Ezrahiah Wetmore; 6, Rebecca mar. Daniel Merritt.

CARPENTERS OF NORTH CASTLE.—Rich. Carpenter lived and died in Amesbury, Wiltshire, England. William, his son, came to America previous to 1636, and settled in Rhode Island with Roger Williams: he mar. Elizabeth, d. 1668. Joseph, son of William, removed to Oyster Bay, Long Island and bought a tract of land of the Indians near Glen Cove; had two sons, Nathaniel, who mar. Tamer Coles, and William, who mar. Mary Coles, Joseph d. 1692. Nathaniel, his son, who mar. Tamer, removed to North Castle near where B. A. Birdsall resides at Armonk: his son was the first white child born in the county, which so pleased the Indians that they gave it 100 acres in Byram Valley, about one mile south of the Lake. The farm is bounded west by a precipitous line of hills which extended north to Brimstone Alley. William, 2nd son of Joseph, mar. Mary. Cole, removed to Long Island. Timothy, son of Nathaniel, b. 1698, mar. Phebe Coles; he bought a tract of land in North Castle, east of Mile Square (now Armonk) and west to what was known as Smith's Tavern; he built a log house on the ridge west of E. Stivers. They had issue. (I.) Samuel. (II.) Ephraim. (III.) George. (IV.) Phoebe. (V.) William. (VI.) Archalaus. (VII.) Silas. (VIII.) Benjamin, (these two last were twins). (IX.) Timothy. (X.) Elizabeth. Samuel, 2nd, mar. Ester, and had children. William, Benjamin, Rachel, Phoebe, Ester, and Coles. Jothan, son of Benjamin (VIII.) lived on the Danbury Road north of Smith's Tavern, and had Aaron F., John and Benjamin. Silas, (VII.) removed to King st. and had a son Benjamin; George, (III.) William, (V.) Ephraim. (II.) removed to Dutchess Co., Archalaus, (VI.) settled near Garrison Mills in Yorktown, Timothy, (IX.) mar. Hannah Ferris, da. of John, of Bedford, in 1762. Their children were, John, William and Elizabeth. John, mar. Susannah Kipp, and lived on King st. They had Hannah, Sarah and Eliza, beth, twins, and Matilda. Elizabeth, mar. Caleb Merritt; William, remained on the Homestead and mar. Deborah Cock in 1788, and had issue. (I.) Reese, (II.) Phoebe, (III.) Timothy, (IV.) David R., (V.) Ferris, (VI.) Hannah, (VII.) Sarah, (VIII.) William, (IX.) John H., (X.) Daniel, (XI.) Job. William, (VIII.) mar. Sally Ann Ward and lived at Greensburgh: and had issue, Ward, Rachel, Samuel, Mary, Phoebe, John H. and William. Ward, mar. Francis Ward, and had C. Theodore, Emma L., George E., Harriet L. and Josephine C. Theodore, mar. Alice Thompson; and had Helen C., Francis Ward, Ward N., Birtha, Edith, Chas. T. and Edward Russel.

**CLAPP OF NORTH CASTLE.**—Two brothers of this name were among the earliest settlers of West Farms. John removed to North Castle about 120 years ago. His sons were (I.) John, proprietor of the Homestead, who left Thomas, Dorcas, mar. 1, William Sutton; 2, Francis Nash. Mary mar. Joseph Carpenter, (II.) Silas of Rhode Island. (III.) Elias who had John and Benjamin. (IV.) Gibson.

**CLARK OF BEDFORD.**—The names of William and Nathan Clark, occur in a list of freeholders of Bedford, in 1713-14. William, mar. Hannah — and had John, William, Ebenezer, David and Jabesh. Nathan left I. Stephen, father of Cornelius. II, Nathan who had Daniel of Vermont, the father of Stephen of Bedford. III, Reuben. IV, Martha. V, Sarah. VI, Joseph, proprietor of the Homestead, mar. Sarah Smith, he left 1, James; 2, Joseph, mar. Hannah Clock; their children were Israel, Sydney, Delaware, Lewis, John of Bedford, Joseph of Salem, Isaac of Orange Co., Bethia, Takiah Canfield, Clara, mar. Caleb K. Hobby, Phoebe, mar. John Bussing, Hannah, mar. Abel B. Raymond, and Anne, who mar. James Howe of Bedford. 3. Nathan of Bedford, mar. Lydia Holmes, and had Albert, d. æt. 23, Jeremiah of Bedford, Deborah, mar. James Ferris, Sarah, mar. Jesse Hoyt, Catharine and Abigail.

**CLOSE, OF NORTH SALEM.**—This family was formerly seated at Langley, near Macclesfield, England, A. D. 1486. Cloughes, Clowes, or Close, is a Saxon word signifying a cliff or cleft in a valley between high hills. *Thomas Close*, removed from England to Greenwich, Connecticut, in 1665, d. July 26, 1683. His sons were (I.) Thomas, (II.) Joseph. (III.) Benjamin, who left a son Benjamin, (IV.) John. Joseph, the second son of Thomas, b. 1674, removed from Greenwich to North Salem, in 1749, and d. in 1760, æt. 86. He mar. Rebecca Tompkins, she d. A. D. 1761, æt. 82. Their children were 1st, Joseph; 2, Elizabeth; 3. Solomon; 4, Sarah; 5, Rachel; 6, Thomas; 7, Benjamin; and 8, Rebecca. Solomon, second son of Joseph, was b. June 23, 1706, d. A. D. 1778, æt. 72, mar. Deborah Brush. He had ten children, (1.) Solomon of North Salem, who left —, mar. a Paddock; Phoebe, mar. Epenetus Wallace, M. D. of North Salem. (II.) Nathaniel of North Salem, b. 1732, d. 1773. He had 1, Nathaniel of North Salem, d. A. D. 1837, æt. 77, mar. Mary Wood, and left 1st. Ebenezer; 2d, Amzi of North Salem, who had Isaac, Daniel II., Ebenezer L., Jeremiah, Margaret A., Ammi K., Charles H., and Mary R.; 3, Nathaniel; 4th, Rachel; 5th, John of North Salem. 2, Jesse of North Salem, d. æt. 86, 3, Isaac; 4, Deborah, mar. Thomas Chapman; 5, Rachel mar. Joseph Crosby; 6, Sarah; 7, Matilda. (III.) Deborah, (IV.) Hannah, (V.) Rev. John of North Salem, a graduate of Princeton, N. J., minister at New Windsor, in 1792, b. 1737, d. 1813 at Waterford, New York, mar. Miss Weeks of L. I., and left two da. who reside at Waterford. (VI.) Sarah. (VII.) Jesse, in the military service of the Colony, d. at Half Moon Point, July 29th, 1758, æt. 17. (VIII.) Rev. David, a Presbyterian minister at Paterson, N. J. This individual was a great friend to his country, and during the Revolution, suffered much at the hands of the enemy. He graduated at Yale College, and d. at Patterson, in Putam Co., in 1783, æt. 41. (IX.) Rev. Tompkins, a Presbyterian minister, d. at Fishkill, Sept. 26, 1770, æt. 27, (X.) Mindwell, d. Oct. 22, 1762, mar. Elizabeth —.

**COE, OF RYE.** Two brothers of this name, from Norfolk Co., England, were settled in Massachusetts, as early as 1655. Robert removed to Durham, where



his posterity still reside. He was b. 1629, mar. 1657, and d. 1659. He left John, b. May 10, 1658, mar. Mary Hawley. John Coe, supposed brother of Robert, removed to Newtown, L. I., thence to Westchester, and settled at Rye. He was one of the principal proprietors of Poningoe Neck, 1662. His sons were John and Jonathan. John left a son Andrew, who was living at Rye, in 1744. Jonathan left John, the father of Jonathan, M. D., of Portchester. The latter d, Nov. 28, 1809, mar. Esther Green, she d, Dec. 1, 1805. Their children were 1. John of Saratoga, mar. — Furman; 2, Reuben, d. 21st March, 1822, æt. 67, mar. Phoebe Jordan, she d, Aug. 27th, 1842, æt. 80, and 6 mo. He left Charles, who d. Oct. 10, 1800, John, who d. Feb. 15, 1824, and Lavinia, who mar. Willett Moseman; 3, Edward, d. at Marlborough; 4, Mary, mar. John Mead, of Greenwich, Connecticut.

COCK.—Thos. Cock, M. D., N. Y., m. Elizabeth, 8th child of John Ferris of Grove Farm, and had Eliza Ferris m. Jas. B. Parsons, Ann Augusta died in France, m. Edward Willis, Emily L. m. Rich. H. Bowne. Thos. F., M. D., N. Y., m. 1st, Ann Augusta Wood; 2nd, Louisa De Forrest Woodruff. Eliza F. and Jas. B. Parsons had Elizabeth Ferris m. Geo. M. Woodruff, John Bowne, d., Emily B., Catharine, d., Mary B. m. Henry Boller, Jas. B., d., Robt. Wm. m. Julia Francis Russell, had Julia, Edward, Willis m. Mary F. Taber, had Edith, Ann Augusta, and Edward Willis had Anna F. m. Robt. Bowne, Thos. Cock, d., Emily Augusta m. John F. Scott, Anna F., and Robt. Bowne had Robert, Edward, Willis, and Howland. Emily Augusta and John F. Scott had William Sherman, Margaret Willis, d., Anna Augusta, John F., and Emily Willis. Emily L. and Richard H. Bowne had Robert, d., Sarah m. Isaac Frances Wood, Annie m. Charles Aliothe, and Eliza m. Thomas C. Bowne. Annie m. Charles Aliothe, had Richard Bowne m. Elizabeth Ferris, and George M. Woodruff had Geo. M., Elizabeth, and Janes. Ann Augusta and Thos. F. Cock, M. D., N. Y., had Ann Augusta m. Joseph Chapin, and Mary, d. (See Ferris chart.)

COOPER OF THROCKMORTON'S NECK.—The ancestors of the Coopers emigrated from England to Massachusetts, at a very early period. The name of JOHN occurs as freeman of Cambridge, in 1636. This individual is one of the grantees named in the Indian deed of Southampton, L. I., A. D. 1640. Mr. Cooper of Suffolk Co., L. I., a descendant of the above, had two sons and a da., the latter mar. and emigrated with her husband, to the western part of Pennsylvania. His sons he brought up as physicians. The youngest, Jeremiah, settled at Fishkill, in Dutchess Co. The eldest, Ananias, settled at Rhinebeck, in the same county, and was an active whig during the Revolutionary war. He had ten sons and three da. One son and one da. d. young. (I.) Thomas, the eldest, graduated at Princeton College, and became an eminent lawyer in the city of New York, he mar. Catharine Colden, grand-da. of the Hon. David Colden, Lt. Gov. of the Province of New York. He left 1. Colden, a lieutenant in the Provincial army, and aid-de-camp to General Izard, 2. Edward, d. young 3. Alice Ann, (II.) John, d. young, (III.) Henry, (IV.) Charles Dekay Cooper, M. D., fourth son of Ananias, resided at Albany, here he mar. Margaret Vernor. He left three sons and two da., 1. Major General John T. Cooper, of Albany, mar. Miss Henry, da. of John V. Henry; 2, William mar. a da. of the late Judge Vanderpool; 3, Rev. Charles



Dekay Cooper, of Rochester, mar. a da. of Judge Sutherland, formerly Chief Justice of the State of New York; 4, Margaret; 5, Elizabeth. (V.) *William*, d. young, (VI.) *George D. Cooper*, mar. Eliza Bayard, da. of Col. Samuel Vetch Bayard, and left a large family. 1, Catharine, d.; 2, Thomas, d.; 3, William B., d.; 4, Edward of Throckmorton's Neck, mar. Miss Gannage, and had four da.; 5, Eliza, d.; 6, Mary; 7, Elizabeth Justina, mar. Isaac Heansey, M. D.; 8, Harriette Bayard, mar. Rev. Samuel T. Evans; 9, Francis Bayard; 10, Georgiana Dekay, mar. Edward P. Clark; 11, George Duncan, jr.; 12, Matilda Watts, mar. Henry Whitehouse, Principal of St. Thomas's Hall, Holly Springs, Mississippi; 13, Alice Ann Swartwout. (VII.) *Mary*, d., unmar., (VIII.) *Francis*, ditto, (IX.) *Eliza Ann Swartwout*, ditto, (X.) *Joseph C.*, mar. Dorathea Staples, and left Thomas Colden, and Charles Staples, (XI.) *Gabriel* of Albany, d., unmar., (XII.) *Fayette*, M. D., of New York, (XIII.) *Margaret*, mar. Charles McEvers, and had three da., (XIV.) *Christina* mar. William Bachke, and left 1, Eliza; 2, Ann; 3, Helen; 4, Theophylact; 5, William.

CORNELLS OF WESTCHESTER.—Richard Cornell, the ancestor of this family, emigrated from England to Long Island about 1655 to 1660. Under the Dutch colonial government he purchased the estate of Little Neck. He afterwards removed to Low Neck, whence he became possessed by patent from the British colonial government dated 1686, of a tract of land, part of which he sold in 1691 to John Sands. He died cir. 1693, leaving five sons and two das., viz., William, Thomas, Jacob, John, Richard who d. s. p., Mary and Sarah. William, the eldest, left issue, (I.), Thomas. (II.), Richard of Success, mar. Phœbe Doughty, and had, 1, Charles of New York, b. 1743, d. 1800, mar. Deborah Bowne; 2, Phœbe, mar. Thomas Pearsall; 3, Mary, mar. Elijah Pell; 4, Anne, mar. Ferris Cornell of Scarsdale. Charles of New York and Deborah left, *first*, Charles of Long Island, b. 1769, d. 1807, mar. Catharine Rodman, and had, *a*, Richard of Long Island, b. 1792, d. 1831, s. p.; *b*, Alexander, b. 1800, mar. Catharine Magnus, and has Charles M., b. 1827, John F. D., b. 1829, Alexander. b. 1836, Charlotte L., b. 1831, and Catharine R., b. 1834; *c*, Thomas F., b. 1804, mar. Sarah F. Muon, and has Thomas F., b. 1830, Charles R., b. 1832, William T., b. 1833, and Stephen M., b. 1836; *d*, Phœbe, b. 1794, mar. Thomas Roe; *e*, Charlotte, b. 1795, mar. Henry I. Hagner; *f*, Adelaide, b. 1798, mar. 1st, Edward Cossart, 2nd, H. I. Hagner. *Second*, Robert, second son of Charles and Deborah, b. 1772, d. 1778. *Third*, Sarah, first da. of do., b. 1766, d. 1809, mar. John J. Glover. *Fourth*, Phœbe, second da., b. 1775, d. 1776. (III.), Samuel of Flushing, third son of first William, b. 1700, mar. 1st, Hannah Doughty, 2nd, — Doughty, 3rd, Susannah Willett, and left, 1, Samuel mar. — Mampson of Newbern, and had, Elizabeth mar. William Bayard of New York, Hannah mar. Herman Le Roy, Sarah mar. Matthew Clarkson of New York, Mary mar. — Edwards, and Susannah, who mar. — Chads; 2, Charles, b. 1738, d. 1790 at Bay Side, mar. Elizabeth Cornell, and left *Samuel*, who d. s. p., *Archibald* of Flushing, L. I., b. 1733, mar. Elizabeth Allen, *William*, d. s. p., *Phœbe*, b. 1773, mar. Lewis S. Hewlett of Cow Neck, L. I., *Sarah*, *Hannah* mar. William Coit, *Arabella* mar. Gordon Corning of Troy, *Jannette* mar. 1st, William D. Cheever, 2nd, Samuel Huntingdon, *Anne* mar. Gershom Cook; 3, Robert mar. Anne Lines; 4, Hannah mar. Francis Brown; 5, Mary mar. Arthur Mampson. *h*, Elizabeth, b. 1806, d. 1830, mar. W. H. Girard; *i*, Abigail

Jane, b. 1809, mar. W. H. Girard; *j*, Phœbe. *Fifth*, Mary, d. 1827, mar. Nathan Palmer. 6, Annemar. Benj. Floyd. (IV.), John of White Stone, L. I., fourth son of first William, mar. Mary Clement, and left, 1, Thomas, b. 1742, d. 1807, mar. Anne Gale, and had John, mar. Sarah Talman, and Thomas, mar. Elizabeth Ackerman; 2, John mar. Sarah Roe, and had Mary, mar. John Hunter, and Sarah, who mar. William Barnstead; 3, Oliver mar. Anne Roe, and left William, Oliver mar. Susan Bugby; Mary; Martha mar. Henry Lowerne, Charlotte mar. Joel Hunter, Caroline mar. Jonathan Peck, Elizabeth mar. Samuel Ellis, Margaret mar. Elijah Peck, Anne mar. Elijah Peck, and Sarah mar. Stephen Leonard; 4, Margaret, b. 1750, d. 1815, mar. Oliver Roe; 5, Mary mar. Austin Field; 6, Anne mar. William Roe. (V.), Charles, youngest son of first William, Thomas, second son of first Richard, left Thomas, member of Assembly from 1739 to 1764; Jacob, third son of first Richard; John of Cow Neck, L. I., living in 1677, mar. Mary Russell, and had, (L.), Richard, who removed in 1725 to Westchester, b. 1675, d. 1757, mar. Hannah Thorne of Flushing, she was b. 1678, and d. 1756; their children were 1, Richard, b. 1708, mar. Mary Ferris, and had Peter of Mamaroneck, who mar. Sarah Haviland, and left, *First*, Thomas, mar. Hannah Lynch, and had, *a*, Peter, who mar. Margaret Gedney, and had John, Thomas, Nathaniel, Anthony, Cornelia, Hannah, Elizabeth, Mary and Margaret; *b*, Samuel G.; *c*, Thomas L., mar. Emeline Lawrence; *d*, Sarah, mar. John Bates; *e*, Hester, mar. Timothy Haviland. *Second*, Richard, mar., 1, Elizabeth Angevine; 2, Ann Purdy, and had Caleb, Richard, Ebenezer, John, Elizabeth, mar. Jesse Seymour, Sarah Anne, mar. John Seymour, Deborah and Anne. *Third*, Ebenezer, mar. Elizabeth Purdy, left a da. Susan. *Fourth*, Haviland, b. 1764, mar., 1, Mary Gales; 2, Lavinia Storms, and had, *a*, Peter, b. 1789, mar. Sarah Matthews, and had, Elijah, Thomas, Edward and Richard; *b*, Thomas, b. 1792, mar. Amy Merritt, and had Haviland, William, James, John, Mary, Ruth and Ann; *c*, Haviland Cornell, b. 1801, mar. Ann Dillingham, da. of Henry Dillingham of Mass., and Jerusha Strang of Yorktown, had, 1, Stephen D.; 2, William H.; 3, Wallace; 4, Haviland; 5 and 6, George W. and Lafayette—twins; 7, Mary Ann; 8, Charles; *d*, Ebenezer, b. 1804, d. 1821; *e*, Dorothy, b. 1786, d. 1817, mar. Joseph Griffin; *f*, Sarah G., b. 1795, mar. Carpenter Merritt; *g*, Maria, b. 1798, mar. Benjamin Archer; 2, Joseph, second son of second Richard, b. 1708, d. 1770, mar. Phoebe Ferris, and had, *First*, Joseph of Mamaroneck, mar. 1735 Sarrah Hadden, and left, *a*, Richard, b. 1762, d. 1795; *b*, Jonathan, b. 1764, d. 1834, mar., 1, Lydia Carpenter; 2, Joanna Acker, and had *Caleb*, b. 1790, mar. Phœbe Lamoree, who left Isaac, George L., Merritt G., Jane and Deborah. *Joseph*, b. 1793, mar. Deborah D. Merritt, and left Theodore, b. 1819, d. 1822, Jonathan H., Caleb, Richard, Lydia, mar. Lewis Ryn, Caroline, Emeline and Deborah S. *Zeno*, b. 1795, d. 1795. *Zeno*, b. 1796, mar. Mary Brown, and had Anna Maria and Phœbe, *Philip Ward*, *Deborah*, and *Sarah D.* mar. Isaac L. Carpenter; *c*, Willett, b. 1770, mar. Mary Cock, and had *Daniel*, who mar. Francis P. Halstead, and left Cordelia, Mary Elizabeth and Ann Augusta; *Ambroise*, mar. Sarah Halstead, and had Jonathan H., Willett and Albert, *Charity*, d. 1834, mar. James Tompkins, *Sarah*, d. 1832, mar. Stephen Bradey, *Rebecca* and *Lydia*, mar. D. W. Chase; *d*, Sussannah, b. 1757, mar. Newberry Fowler; *e*, Deborah, b. 1760, mar. Jonathan Fowler. *Second*, Richard, b. 1738, d. 1748. *Third*, John of Mamaroneck,

b. 1743, d. 1872, mar. Alice Williams; she was b. 1744, d. 1830. Their children were, *Isaac*, b. 1767, d. 1832, mar. Sarah Bennet., and had David M., b. 1798, mar. Elizabeth Clive, and left Isaac, John C., David, Mary Elizabeth, Sarah Anne, Hester, Jane B. and Margaret. Charles, second son of Isaac and Sarah, mar. Maria Champenois, and had Esther and Albert W. Mary, eldest da. of Isaac, mar. Caleb Ward; Margaret, second do., Joseph Carpenter; Susan A., third da., William Varian; Sarah, fourth do., Timothy Calver. *John L.*, second son of John and Alice, b. 1781, mar., 1, Margery Williams; 2, Hannah Anderson, and had George; William, mar. Susan Secor; Margaret, mar. Edwin Underhill; Sarah, mar. Lancaster Odell; Mary, b. 1809, d. 1832; Alice, b. 1810, d. 1838, mar. William Champenois; Elizabeth, b. 1814, d. 1832; Susan, Ann and Elizabeth. *Margaret*, eldest da. of John and Alice, b. 1765, d. 1821, mar., 1, Isaac Horton; 2, William Anderson. *Phæbe*, second do., b. 1769. *Mary*, Third do., mar., 1, David Maun; 2, Rev. Samuel Haskell. *Phæbe*, fourth do., d. 1774. *Sarah*, fifth do., mar. J. Varian. *Elizabeth*, sixth do., mar. James Varian. *Fourth*, Ferris, b. 1748, d. 1816, mar., 1, Anne Cornell; 2, Hannah Quinby; 3, Sarah Cox, and had *Richard*, b. 1774, d. 177—, *Joseph*, b. 1776. *Thomas I.*, b. 1779, mar. Amy Fisher; 2, Gulielma Wood, and left *a*, Richard, who mar. Mary Annette Phelps, and had Eliza P.; John b. 1832, d. 1832, and Anna, b. 1834, d. 1836; *b*, Charles; *c*, Henry; *d*, Robert; *e*, Anne, mar. Daniel Griffin; *f*, Esther F., b. 1808, d. 1812; *g*, Amy W., b. 1812, d. 1812; *h*, Mary W.; *i*, Phæbe. *Samuel*, youngest son of Ferris, b. 1782, mar. Martha Bonnet, and had Arthur, Elizabeth, Hannah and Rachel. *Fifth*, Hannah, b. 1736, mar. James Fowler. *Sixth*, Sarah, b. 1739. *Seventh*, Mary, b. 1741, mar. John Merriitt. *Eighth*, Phæbe, b. 1750, mar. Abijah Haight. 3, John, third son of second Richard, b. 1717, d. 1781, s. p. 4, Benjamin, fourth son, b. 1723, d. 1771, mar. Abigail Stevenson, and had *First*, Stephen of Mamaroneck, b. 1749, d. 1802, mar. Margaret Haviland, and left, *a*, William H., b. 1776, mar. Dorcas Carpenter, and had Stephen, William, Deborah and Mary, who mar. Jacob Miller; *b*, Richard, b. 1781, d. 1798; *c*, Stephen, b. 1785, d. 1815, mar. Anna Titus, and had Richard, b. 1811, d. 1837, Titus, mar. Phæbe Ann Mott, and had William and Stephen, b. 1814, d. 1814; *d*, Benjamin, b. 1788, mar. Sarah Titus, and had Mary; *e*, Samuel, b. 1796, mar. Hannah Carpenter, and had Richard, Stephen G., Henry G., Rebecca Jane and Elizabeth; *f*, Deborah, mar. John Schuerman; *g*, Mary, b. 1783, d. 1784; *h*, Mary, mar. Henry Griffin; *i*, Abigail. *Second*, Benjamin, b. 1760, d. 1760. *Third*, Benjamin, b. 1761, mar., 1, Alice Sutton; 2, Pamela Farmington, and left *a*, John b. 1733, mar., 1, Sarah Matthews; 2, Mary Ann Porter, and had William M. of Newtown, L. I., Andrew Jackson, Jesse, Arvin, Alice, Elizabeth, mar. Henry Hackett, Ann Maria, Sarah and Emeline; *b*, Jesse, b. 1785, d. 1805; *c*, Silas, b. 1789, mar. Sarah Mott, and had Thomas, James M., Richard M., b. 1822, d. 1823, Anne M. and Sarah Alice; *d*, Thomas, b. 1794, d. 1797; *e*, Thomas T., mar. Sarah Mott; *f*, Benjamin F., b. 1873, d. 1874; *g*, Jane, b. 1787, d. 1830, mar. David Arnold; *h*, Phæbe, mar. Stephen Underhill; *i*, Dorcas, mar. Joseph Arnold; *j*, Mary F. *Fourth*, Hannah, b. 1744, mar. John Burling. *Fifth*, Jane, b. 1746, mar. Joseph Griffin. *Sixth*, Deborah, b. 1757, mar. Willett Bowne. *Seventh*, Anne, 1753, mar. Benjamin Haviland. *Eighth*, Phæbe, b. 1759, mar. John Gibbs. *Ninth*, Sarah, b. 1758, d. 1764. *Tenth*, Abigail, b. 1758, d. 1834.



*Fifth*, Mary, first da. of second Richard, b. 1703, d. 1762, mar. Rev. Henry Sands. *Sixth*, Deborah, second da., b. 1705, d. 1779, mar. Matthew Franklin. *Seventh*, Hannah, third da., b. 1711, mar. Josiah Quinby. *Eighth*, Phoebe, fourth da., b. 1745, mar. Ebenezer Haviland. *Ninth*, Rebecca, fifth da., b. 1718, d. 1735, mar. Edward Burling. *Tenth*, Elibabeth, sixth da., b. 1720, d. 1795, mar., 1, Aaron Palmer; 2, Aaron Quinby, (II.), Joshua, second son of first John and Mary Russell, mar. Sarah Thorne of Flushing, L. I., and had, 1, Joshua of Harrison, b. 1696, mar. Charity Haight, and left, *a*, Joshua, b. 1726, p. 1775, mar. Hannah Harrison, da. of John, and had, *First*, Samuel of Smith's Cove, Orange County, b. 1741, d. 1812, mar. Eleanor Hunt, and left *Aaron, Eden, Isaac, Harrison*, who mar. Charity Earle, and had Samuel, John and Hannah: *John, Haydock, Rebecca, Phæbe, Charlotte* and *Sarah*, who mar. Francis Hazard. *Second*, Joshua of Yorktown, b. 1765, d. 1825, mar. Rebecca Haight, and had *Jesse*, who mar. Ann Wortman, *William*, mar. Phoebe Carpenter, and had John J., James B., Sarah Anne and Lydia P., *James* d. s. p., *John* II. mar. Rachel Webster, *Samuel* P. mar. Julia Schooley, *Lydia*, mar. Hugh D. Webster, *Phæbe*, d. s. p., and *Mary* G. *Third*, John, b. 1769. *Fourth*, Charity b. 1759, d. 1776. *Fifth*, Sarah, b. 1762: d. 1810. *Sixth*, Phoebe, b. 1768, mar. James Hallett. *Seventh*, Hannah, b. 1775, d. 1777. *Eighth*, Mary, b. 1716, mar. William Cromwell: *b*, William, second son of Joshua and Charity Haight, b. 1728, mar. Mary Quinby, and had, *First*, Richard. *Second*, Quinby, mar. Hannah, Underhill. *Third*, James, mar., 1, Elizabeth Chadcaynes; 2, Phoebe Smith, and had Abraham, Oliver and Sarah. *Fourth*, John, d. s. p. *Fifth*, William mar. Esther Underhill, and had Solomon, Joel, Aaron, William, Charity, Deborah, Mercy and Mary. *Sixth*, Daniel, mar., 1, Elizabeth Birdsall; 2, *Mercy* Bowman. *Seventh*, Josiah, twin brother of the former, mar., 1, Susannah Birdsall: 2, Anne Reynolds; *c*, John, third son of Joshua and Charity, b. 1738, d. 1873, mar., 1, Mary Quinby; 2, Mary Ann Allen; *d*, Charity, only da. of Joshua, b. 1732, mar. Burnet Cornell, her cousin. 3, John, second son of Joshua and Sarah Thorne, d. s. p. 4, Samuel of Cow Neck, Flushing, b. 1702, mar., 1824, Hannah Carman, and had three sons and one da., viz. Baruch, who mar., 1, Charity Cornell; 2, Mary Clark; John, d. s. p., Joshua, and Martha, b. 1726, d. 1758, mar. Henry Sands. Baruch and Charity left, *First*, Joshua, d. s. p. *Second*, Comfort, mar. Elizabeth Embree, and left Robert, who mar. Almy Lovett, Abigail, mar., 1, Jacob Doughty. 2, Isaac Carse, Alice mar. Petre Townsend. *Third* Samuel, mar. Sarah Miller, and had, *a*, Elijah, mar. Charity Wills, and had Samuel M., mar. Emeline J. Howland; William W., Sydney, mar. Sarah Ann Nostrand, Walter W., Ann, Eliza Ann, mar. William Binns, and Mary Jane: *b*, Samuel M. II., b. 1784, d. 1803; *c*, Charity, mar. John Franklin; *d*, Ann, mar., 1, Obadiah Bostwick; 2, John Fraher; *e*, Zipporah, d. 1788, s. p. *Fourth*, Henry, mar. Sarah Coe. *Fifth*, John, mar. Lætitia Field. *Sixth*, Joshua, mar. Ann Van Nostrand. *Seventh*, Baruch, mar. Susan Petit. *Eighth*, Stephen, mar. Mary Wiggins. *Ninth*, Hannah, mar. Jeffrey Cornell. *Tenth*, Mary, mar. John Hicks. 4th, Sarah, eldest da. of Joshua and Sarah, mar. Henry Franklin of Harrison. 5th, Elizabeth, second da., mar. Joshua Franklin. (III.), John, third son of first John, b. 1681, mar. Mary, Starr of Danbury, Conn. (IV.), Caleb, fourth son, b. 1683, mar. Elizabeth Hagner of Flushing, and had, 1, Richardson, b. 1706, d. 1732, s. p.; 2, Caleb, b. 1709, d.



1775, mar. Catharine Thorne, and left, *First*, Joseph, b. 1739, d. s. p. *Second*, Richardson of Steubenville, Mass., d. 1741, mar. Tabitha Longfellow. *Third*, Stephen, b. 1744, mar. Mary Platt, and had Epenetus, mar. Ann Knapp, Stephen, mar. Elizabeth Brown, Catharine, Maria, mar. John Morehouse, Sarah, mar. Charles Gardiner. *Fourth*, Caleb, b. 1748, d. 1802, mar. Freelove Demilt, and had Richardson, who mar. Martha Cornell, Phoebe, Catharine, and Mary, who mar. Laton. *Fifth*, Aspinwall, mar. 1, Jane Mitchel; 2, Priscilla Mitchell, and had Robert, Joseph, Pricilla, mar. — Silly, Mary, mar. — Mooney, and Jane, mar. — Silly. *Sixth*, Catharine, mar. Wessell Sills. 3, John, third son of Caleb and Elizabeth, b. 1715, d. 1790, mar. 1, Martha Hewlett; 2, Phoebe Hewlett, and had, *First*, Charles, d. s. p. *Second*, Hewlett, mar. Elizabeth Willis, and left John, mar. Mary Ann Tredwell, Charles, d. 1814, Walter, mar. Sarah Allen, Margaret mar. Whitehead Mitchell, Martha mar. Richardson Cornell, and Phoebe mar. John Willis; 4, Richard, fourth son of Caleb and Elizabeth, b. 1710, d. 1772, mar. Catherine Deans. Their children were, *First*, Caleb, of the R. N., mar. Magdalene Butler. *Second*, Elizabeth mar. Stephen Marsh of Philadelphia. *Third*, Mary mar. William Miller. *Fourth*, Margaret mar., 1, George Graham; 2, William Cook; 3, William, fifth son of Caleb, b. 1721, d. 1797, mar. Ruth Hewlett, and had, *First*, Samuel mar. Martha Patterson of Franklin, Dutchess County, and had James, Samuel, Sarah, Emma Grace, Elizabeth and Mary. *Second*, Elizabeth b. 1754, d. 1825, mar. Charles Cornell of Bayside; 6, Joshua, sixth son of Caleb, b. 1826, d. 1800, mar. Hannah Hewlett, and had, *First*, Joshua, d. 1822. *Second*, Lewis b. 1757, d. 1804, mar. Elizabeth Sands, and had Augustus b. 1791, and Grace b. 1793, who mar. — Magruder. *Third*, Charles mar. Nancy Fleet of Flushing, and had Charles Fleet and William Warren. *Fourth*, James d. 1825. 7, Elizabeth, eldest da. of Caleb and Elizabeth, b. 1711, d. 1791, mar. John Sands; 8, Mary, second da. of do., b. 1714, d. 1780, mar. Thomas Appleby; 9, Susannah, third da., b. 1715, d. s. p.; 10, Margaret, fourth da., b. 1728, d. 1808, mar. John Willis. (V.), Mary, eldest da. of Caleb and Mary Russell, b. 1679, mar. James Sands of Matinecock, L. I. (VI.), Rebecca, second da., b. 1685, mar. — Starr of Danbury, Connecticut. Of this family was John Cornell of Rockaway, son of Thomas, second son of first Richard of Little Neck, who mar. (as supposed) — Whitehead, and left, (I.), Whitehead, who mar. Margaret Sebring, and had, 1, John mar. Sarah Cortelyou, and left, *a*, Hannah; *b*, George, d. young; *c*, Catharine; *d*, Margaret; *e*, Ann mar. Arthur Hurst; *f*, Whitehead mar. Juliet Hicks; *g*, Simon d.; *h*, George L. mar. Isabella Sheldon; *i*, John S. mar. Mary Randolph; *j*, Agnes; *k*, Peter C. mar. Elizabeth Bunce; *l*, Isaac R. mar. Elizabeth Duyckinck; *m*, Samuel G., mar. Sarah Douglass; *n*, Mary; 2, Isaac mar. Hannah Cortelyou; 3, William mar. Catharine Cowenhoven. (II.), Thomas mar. Elizabeth Thurston, and had, 1, John mar. Sarah Hicks; 2, Joseph mar. Maria Striker; 3, Thomas mar. C. Skidmore; 4, Elizabeth; 5, Abigail mar. — Keeling. (III.), William mar. Mary Mott, and had, 1, Abigail, who mar. C. Mott; 2, Martha mar. — Townsend; 3, Margaret mar. Lefferts Lefferts; 4, Elizabeth mar. Daniel Lefferts; 5, Samuel mar. Jane Hewlett; 6, Charles. (IV.), John had sons, 1, Whitehead d. in New Orleans; 2, Benjamin mar. Mary Willis; 3, William; 4, John. (V.), Silvester. (VI.), Daniel left, 1, Elizabeth mar. — Hendrickson; 2, Jane mar. — Golden; 3, Silvester. (VII.), Elizabeth mar. — Horsefield. *Arms*.—Ar. five castles, in cross, sa.

**COUTANTS.**—John Coutant, b. in France, 1648, mar. Sussanna, b. in France, 1660, had John, b. 1685, Peter, b. 1698, Judy, b. 1699, Hester, b. 1731. John mar. — Bonnefoy, had Isaac, b. 1723, d. 1802, mar. Fannie Badeau, b. 1731, d. 1825, had Isaac (I.) b. 1751, mar. Susanna Bartine, b. 1757, John (II.), Isaiah (III.), mar. Wilson, James (IV.), mar. Jane Gereau, Frances, mar. Elijah Horton, Margaret, mar. John Hudson, Catharine, mar. Oliver Besley, and Susanna, mar. John Le Fevere. Isaac had Deborah, mar. Jno. C. Miller, Mary C., mar. 1st. Aaron C. Burr, 2nd, Jno. Sueden. Isaiah had Isaac, mar. Jane Bonnett, and Mary, mar. James P. Huntingdon. Isaac had James, mar. Mary A. Jones, Richard B., and William. James had Richard B., mar. Hannah D. Rundell, and Charlotte. Richard B. had Isaac. James (IV.) had Rev. Lewis J. (I.), mar. Sarah A., da. of J. Le Count; Clarissa mar. Lewis F. Breschard, of Paris, France; Margaret mar. Claudius Redon. Isaiah (IV.) mar. Deborah Palmer; Elizabeth; Andrew (V.), mar. Esther Walker; James (IV.); John (III.); Elijah (II.) mar. Phoebe Archer; and George (VII.), mar. 2nd, Rebecca Morrell, Frances Bailey; and Jane. Rev. Lewis J. had James L., Sarah J. Meliscent, mar. Samuel C. Welling, Louisa, mar. Albert T. Jones. Elijah (II.) had James, Margaret L., Elizabeth, and Mary A. Andrew (V.) had Augustus A., mar. Jane Patterson, Augustus E., Margaret (V.), and Vesta J. George (VII.) had by Frances Bailey, George W., mar. Susan A. Lane, Julia A., mar. William H. Leonards, J. Edson, Caroline C., mar. Robert Cooper, and Leonard W.; by Rebecca Morrell had Susan J., mar. John C. Dickinson, and Peter J., mar. Margaret Vaile. Richard B. had Isaac. Augustus A. and Jane Patterson had Augustus, Georgiene A., and Mary R.

**CROMWELL OF HARRISON.**—"The family of the **PROTECTOR**, which arose in Wales, and was deemed illustrious by the genealogists of the principality, bore the surname of **CROMWELL**, by assumption only, its patronimic, **WILLIAMS**, having been abandoned at the special desire of *King Henry VIII.* "That monarch," saith Noble, "strongly recommended to the Welsh, (whom he incorporated with the English,) to adopt the mode of most civilized nations, in taking family names, instead of their manner of adding their father's, and perhaps grandfather's name, to their own Christian one, *nap*, or *ap*, between the Christian and surname, as Morgan ap Williams, or Richard ap Morgan ap Williams, that is, Richard the son of Morgan, the son of Williams; and the King was the more anxious as it was found so inconvenient in identifying persons in judicial matters. Richard's father seems to have taken the name of Williams for his family name; but as the surname of Williams was of so late a standing, his Majesty recommended it to Sir Richard to use that of *Cromwell* in honor of his relation, the **EARL OF ESSEX**, whose present greatness entirely obliterated his former meanness."<sup>a</sup> The several branches of the Cromwell family in America claim descent from the same parent stock as that of the **PROTECTOR OLIVER CROMWELL**. It is presumed that the ancestors of the American line was Col. John Cromwell, third son of Sir Oliver, and a brother of the **PROTECTOR**. John, a colonel in the royal army, mar. Abigail ——. He had a da. Joan and a son John, who emigrated from Holland to the New Netherlands. John, son of Col. John, resided at Long Neck, Westchester. He mar. Mary ——, and left two sons, John, from whom

<sup>a</sup> Burke's *Hist. of the Landed Gentry of England*, vol. i. 429.

the present Oliver and Jeremiah of West Farms are descended, and James. The latter was b. 1696, and d. 1780; he mar. Esther Godfrey, and left, (I.) John, of Harrison, b. 5th December, 1727, d. 1805, mar. Anna Hopkins of L. I. she was born January 12. 1730. (II.) — Cromwell. (III.) James, who left Oliver. (IV.) William of Poughkeepsie, who had William of New York, and Robert of Canada. John, eldest son of James and Esther Godfrey, had, (I.) James, b. Nov. 6, 1742, d. 23d Dec. 1828, mar. 16th of May, 1782, Charlotte Hunt, da. of Aaron; she was b. 18th Nov. 1762, and d. Jan'y, 1839. Their children were, 1. Daniel, who mar. Elizabeth Townsend, and had Henry, Edward, Daniel, and Charlotte, all of New York. 2. James, who mar. Anne Abbott. 3. Oliver, mar. Sarah Titus, and left Joshua of Monroe Co., Thomas of New York, James, John of St. Louis, and William of New York. 4. David, mar. Rebecca Bowman, and had William D.; Henry, James, Frederick, Anna, Sarah, Charlotte, Maria, Rebecca, and Emily. 5. Aaron. 6. William, mar. Caroline Underhill, da. of Joshua, and had James W. and Caroline. 7. William and Mary, twins, d. æt. nine months. 8. John of Orange Co., mar. Lætitia Haviland, and has Walter of Orange Co., James, David, and Oliver. 9. Hannah, mar. David Griffin. 10. Rebecca, mar. George Fritts. 11. Anne, mar. John Haviland. (II.) Daniel, b. 17th July 1755, left John and Sarah, who mar. William Waring. John mar. Rachel —, and had, 1. James T., M. D., of Indiana; 2. Daniel S.; 3. Charles S., of New York, who mar. Henrietta Brooks, da. of Benjamin Brooks, Esq., of Bridgeport, Conn. This lady is a lineal descendant of Colonel John Jones, one of the judges whose signature appears to the warrant for the execution of *King* CHARLES I., by his wife, *Henrietta Cromwell*, eldest sister of the PROTECTOR. The children of Charles T. and Henrietta are Charles B., Henrietta, and Oliver Eaton Cromwell. 4. Leonard T. of New York. (III.) Naomi, b. 4th May, 1757, mar. Rev. — Halstead. (IV.) Esther, b. 1st Jan'y, 1760, mar. — Griffin. (V.) Hannah, b. 20th May, 1762, mar. — Field. (VI.) John, b. 18th August, 1767. (VII.) Joseph, b. 3d March, 1770, d. A. D. 1843, mar. Mary Clapp of Greenwich; he left William of Harrison, who mar. Sarah Griffin. (VIII.) William of Canada, b. 29th of April, 1773, d. left William. *Arms.* Sa. a lion rampant arg. *Crest.* A demi lion rampant arg., in his dexter gamb a gem ring or.

CURREY OF CORTLANDT.—*Richard Currey* of Northcastle left three sons and six das. I. Joshua. II. Stephen, mar. Francis Moore. III. Richard, mar. Sarah Ferris. IV. Jemima, mar. Elijah Horton. V. Phoebe, mar. John Sherwood of Cortlandt. VI. Sarah, mar. John Jones. VII. Rachel, mar. William Lane. VIII. Mary, mar. John Smith. IX. Elizabeth, mar. Joseph Lee.

DAVENPORT OF DAVENPORT'S NECK, NEW ROCHELLE.—This family derive their name from the town of Davenport or Danport in the county of Cheshire, England. Camden calls them "the famous family of Davenport." The first of the name on record was Ormus de Davenport who lived at the time of the conquest. William Davenport emigrated from England about 1670, and settled at Westchester, he mar. Mary ———, and left 1. *William* of Perth Amboy, in 1723 proprietor of lands in West Farms, mar. Bridget ———. 2. Francis, b. 1st March, 1685, d. 8th May, 1720, mar. Martha Newberry; she was b. Nov. 7th, 1688. Their children were, 1. Francis, b. 31st May, 1715, d. 2d Aug. 1797,



mar. Mary Hewlett, da. of Lewis: she was b. 5th Nov. 1743, d. 23d June, 1781. 2. Walter, b. 20th March, 1716. 3. Samuel b. 23d Aug., 1718. 4. Anne, b. 20th July, 1712. Francis, eldest son of Francis, left, (I.), *Lewis*, b. 4th April, 1745. (II.). *Newberry*, b. 5th June, 1746, d. 4th Jan'y, 1829, first proprietor of Davenport's Neck in 1786, mar. Elizabeth Hewlett, da. of Joseph; she was b. 19th Jan'y, 1759, mar. 20th Feb. 1774. They had, 1, Joseph; 2, James; 3, Hewlett; 4, Lawrence of Davenport's Neck; 5, Newberry of Davenport's Neck; 6, Deborah; 7, Mary, mar. Samuel Davis; 8, Elizabeth, mar. Mr. William Bush of Rye. (III.), Samuel, b. Oct. 5, 1752. (IV.), Martha, b. 2d June, 1748.

DELAVAN OF NORTH SALEM.—Timothy Delavan left nine sons, viz.: (1.), Timothy, who had Timothy. (II.), Nathaniel, who has several children. (III.), Samuel. (IV.) John, mar. 1st, — Husted, and had Chauncey, Jane, Catharine, and Elizabeth: he mar. 2d Patty Keeler, and had John, Frederick, Deborah, and Nancy. (V.) Cornelius, d. s. p. (VI.) Daniel. (VII.) Abraham, the father of Gilbert and Jesse. (VIII.) Stephen, who has Daniel and Frederick. (IX.) Nathan, the father of Charles and Elizabeth.

DRAKE OF EASTCHESTER.—“*John Drake*, of the council of Plymouth, son of the original company established by King James in 1606, for settling New England, was a branch of the family of Drake of Ashe, several of whose sons came to this country. *John*, who came to Boston in 1630, with two or more sons, and who finally settled in Windsor.” Samuel Drake, son of John, last mentioned, removed to Fairfield about 1650, and from thence to Eastchester in 1663. He mar. Anne ———, and left *Joseph* of Eastchester, *Samuel*, heir of his father's lands at Fairfield, *John* of Eastchester, *Sarah* and *Mary*, who mar. Joseph Joannes. Joseph, the eldest, mar. Mary Shute, and had issue, (I.) John, who settled at Peekskill Hollow. (II.), Samuel, of Fox Meadow, Scarsdale, d. A. D. 1774, æt. 75. He had, 1, Gilbert, d. 1803, æt. 90; 2, Samuel, M. D., late of Troy, N. Y., d. 1793, æt. 63; 3, Uriah; 4, Sarah, mar. Job Sherwood; Samuel, 2d, left *Joshua*, d. 1790, *Jasper*, d. 1829, *Elijah*, æt. 74, *Francis*, d. 1814, *Sarah*, mar. John Mandeville, *Ann*, d. unmar., Mary, mar. Joseph Lockwood, d. 1820, Rebecca, mar. G. Millegrew, and Samuel, M. D. (III.), Benjamin of Eastchester left, 1, Benjamin, who mar. 1st, Susan Pell; 2d, Martha Seaman; 3d, Phoebe ———: 4th, Charity Archer. The children of Benjamin, jr., were *Thomas*, who mar. Susannah Morgan, and left Charles, M. D., of New York, b. 1789, d. April, 1832, a distinguished physician, Sarah, mar. Jonathan Coddington, Susan, still living, and Anne, who mar. John Seaman. *Benjamin*, b. 21st Feb. 1763, d. 17th June, 1822, mar. Mary Parcot, she d. 1820. Their children were Daniel of New Rochelle, b. 14th April, 1786, mar. Abigail Soulice, Susanah, b. Jan'y 8, 1788, mar. Isaac Bonnet, and Nancy. *James*, mar. Sarah Dodge, and left James, Susan, mar. Joseph Drake, Sarah, mar. Richard Lawrence, and Mary, mar. Rev. — Lismekeese. *John*, fourth son of Benjamin, jr., b. 1772, mar. Magdalene Guion, b. 1774, and had Joseph, b. 1796, Susan, Elias Guion, b. 7th Dec., 1799, Benjamin, b. 1801, John Erskine, b. 18th Sept. 1802; Jacob, b. 1813, Caroline, b. 24th July, 1807, mar. John R. Townsend; Angeline E., mar. Samuel J. Skidmore; and Martha Magdalene, b. 18th Oct. 1778, d. *Jacob*, fifth son of Benjamin, jr., mar. 1st, Mary Williams, and had Jonas W., b. 1799, mar.



Mary Betts, Jacob, mar. 2d, Susan Ackerly, and left William Henry, Mary Anne, and others. *Moses*, sixth son of Benjamin, jr., b. 1776, mar. Susan Morgan. *Samuel*, seventh son of Benjamin, jr., b. 1778, d. aet. 22, mar. — Morgan. *Mary*, first da. of Benjamin, jr., mar. Henry Vervalen. *Phæbe*, second da., mar. Thomas Lovell. *Amy* d. unmar., and *Martha* d. aet. 10; 2. Col. Joseph, of New Rochelle, second son of Benjamin, sen., b. 12th July, 1737, O. S., d. 11th Sept., 1836, aet. 99; mar. 1st, Phæbe Hunt, 2d, Lydia Miller; and left Joseph, b. 2d Dec. 1766, d. 16th of July, 1794. 3. Moses of Dutchess Co., d. during early part of Revolutionary war; left issue three sons, viz., Jonathan, Richard and Stephen. Jonathan had one son, JOSEPH RODMAN DRAKE, THE POET, b. 1795, d. Sept. 1820, mar. Sarah Eckford. Janet, only child of the POET, mar. Col. George Dekay of L. I. Jonathan had also three das. 4. Abigail. 5. Mary, mar. Caleb Ward. 6. Sarah, mar. — Hunt. 7. Rebecca, mar. Caleb Morgan. (IV). Jasper, who lived in New York, had a son Francis who d. at sea, and several das. (V). Rebecca. (VI.) Sarah. VII. Anna, mar. — Fowler. *Arms*, arg. a wivern with wings displayed gu. *Crests*, 1st, an eagle displayed; 2nd, a naked dexter arm and hand erect, holding a battle axe sa. headed arg.

DYCKMAN OF PHILIPSBOROUGH.—All of this name in America are supposed to have originated from *William Dyckman*, (a native of Holland,) who was among the early settlers of New Amsterdam. This individual was a liberal benefactor of the Dutch Reformed Church of Fordham Manor. His grandson Jacobus, mar. — Kesur. The children of Jacobus were, 1. Jacob, mar. Tryntje Benson of Haarlem, and had 1, *Jacob*, the father of Jacob and John; 2, *Sampson*, mar. Rebecca Odell, da. of Isaac, and had 1st. Hannah; 2d, Catharine, mar. Matthias Valentine. 3, *Benjamin*, mar. Martha Lent, da. of Jacob, and left William, John, Sampson, and Jane. 4, *Jacob*, mar. Margaret Post, da. of Martin, and had Martin, Sampson, Staats Morris, Catharine, mar. Pell C. Vought, Martha Maria, mar. Isaac Mandeville, and Elmira, mar. Louis Levines. 5, *John*, mar. Letta Goetchius, and left issue Sampson and Rachel Goetchius. 6, *Garett*, mar. Joanna, da. of Jonathan Odell, and had William N. and Jacob G. 7, *William N.* mar. Rebecca Odell, da. of Jonathan. Their children were Sampson, Jonathan, William, Cathaline, Maria and Rebecca. 8, *Maria*, mar. John Clark. 9, *Jane*, mar. John van Vredenburgh. 10, *Catharine* mar. Daniel Hale. Staats Morris, son of Jacob, mar. Eliza Corné, grand da. of Peter Corné, and left Peter C., who mar. Susan Matilda Whetton. Eliza, da. of Peter C., mar. Col. John P. Cruger. (II). William Dyckman, second son of Jacobus, b. Aug. 23d, 1725, d. Aug. 10, 1787, mar. Mary Turner; she was b. Feb. 4, 1728, d. Feb. 14, 1802. Their children were, 1. *Jacobus*, b. Sept. 18th, 1748, who left William, Frederick, mar. Eva Myers, John, Abraham, mar. Margaret Honeywell, Jacob, James, Isaac, Michael, Hannah, mar. Caleb Smith, and Maria. 2, *Abraham*, b. Aug. 25, 1754, one of the Westchester guides during the Revolution. 3, *Michael*, b. August 9, 1756, d. Jan'y, 1808, a Westchester guide, mar. Sarah Oakley, and had two das. Sarah and Maria. 4, *William*, b. 9th Dec. 1792, also a Westchester guide; he left William and Evert, both residing at the West. 5, *John*, b. 28th July, 1764, d. 15th April, 1774. 6. *Mary*, b. June 2, 1752, d. 23d Feb. 1826, mar. Jacob Vermilyea. 7, *Jane*, b. 26th June, 1759, d. 24th March, 1772. 8. *Jemima*, b. 25th Feb. 1765, mar. Evert Brown. 9, *Charity*, b. 18th May, 1770, mar. Benjamin Lent.

**FIELD.**—The name of Field is of frequent occurrence in Doomsday's book, and there is often inter-changed with Lea—a word having the same signification. John Field of Ardsley, County of York, England, was a distinguished mathematician and astronomer. He is said to have been the first person who introduced into England, by his writings, the discoveries of Copernicus. His *Ephemerides* was published in that country in 1556. His will bears date Dec. 28th, 1586, in which he directs his body to be interred in the church porch at Ardsley. He mar. Jane Amyas of Kent, who d. A. D. 1609. His children were (I). Richard, b. 1562, who left a da. Mary; (II), Christopher; (III), John; (IV), Matthew of Ardsley, b. 1615; (V), Thomas; (VI), James; (VII), Martin; (VIII), William, who mar. the widow of George Burdett, da. of John Totwell, and had Judith, the wife of John Mundy. Matthew, fourth son of John, had two sons, James and Robert. James had Robert, James, Anne, and Judith. Robert removed to America, and settled at Flushing, L. I., in 1645. He left Anthony, Benjamin and Robert. Anthony, the eldest, mar. Susannah —, and had first, John, who removed to New Jersey. He was the father of Jeremiah and others; secondly, Benjamin, who mar. Hannah Bowne, she was b. in 1665, and d. A. D. 1707. The children of Benjamin and Hannah, were (I), Robert, b. 1707, the father of Uriah. Uriah left 1. Aaron, who had first Charles, the father of seven children, viz.: Edward, Richard, Charles M., Aaron, Phoebe, Jane, and Louisa M.; 2nd, Richard; 4th, Sarah C.; 5th, Anne; 6th, Eliza, 7th, Hannah; 2, Robert, second son of Uriah; 3, Josiah, *ibid.*; 4, James, *ibid.*; 5, Abigail; 6, Elizabeth; 7, Hannah; 8, Sarah; 9, Mary; 10, Anna. The two das. of Robert, son of Benjamin, were Jerusha and Sarah; (II), Benjamin, b. 1692; (III), John, b. 1694; (IV), Samuel, b. 1696, left three sons, William, Stephen and John. William had William and Samuel; (V), Anthony of Harrison, Westchester Co., b. 1698, mar. Hannah Burling, and had 1, John of Yorktown, who mar. Lydia Hazard of Rhode Island; 2, Thomas; 3, Moses; 4, Samuel, mar. Abigail Haight; 5, Benjamin, b. 1732, d. 1818, mar. Jerushua Sutton; 6, William, mar. Mary Hatfield; 7, Sarah, mar. Joseph Waters; 8, Mary. John, eldest son of Anthony and Hannah, left nine sons and four da.; 1, Hazard, mar., 1, Frances Wright; 2, Mary Bailey, and had two sons, Benjamin and Joseph. Benjamin mar. Catharine Depeyster, and has one son, Cortlandt. The four da. of Hazzard are Phoebe, Hannah, Jerusha, and Abigail; 2, John, mar. Frances Perry; 3, Daniel, mar. Elizabeth Field, and left one son James, and two da. James had Edward, James, and Adele; 4, James; 5, Joseph; 6, Moses of Peekskill, d. Oct. 18, 1833, mar. Susan K. Osgood, and left, Maunsell, Osgood, Franklin C., Moses A., William Hazard, Susan K., and Caroline M.; 7, William, mar. Sarah Fairchild, had a son William, who mar. Margaretta Day. The latter left two children, viz., William and Helen; 8, Hickson, mar. Eleanor K. De Forest, and had a son Hickson, who mar. Mary Bradhurst, and a da. Eleanor, who mar. John Jay; 9, Seaman, youngest son of John, mar. Eliza Debourg, and had De Forest, Eliza, mar. J. T. Blanchard, Odell, and Clemence; 10, Abigail, mar. Leonard Van Hoosen; 11, Phoebe, mar. Henry Fowler; 12, Jerusha; 13, Josiah; 14, Sarah, mar. Caleb Horton; 15, Abigail, d. young. (VI), Joseph, b. 1702, left Gilbert, Nehemiah, Solomon, and Comfort; (VII), Hannah, b. 1700; (VIII), Sarah, youngest da. of Benjamin and Hannah Bowne, was b. A. D. 1704. Uriah Field of Greenwich, Conn.,

son of Robert, by Robert's second wife Abigail, daughter of Joseph Sutton, mar. Mary Quimby, at Harrison's Purchase, 18th Jan., 1764, and had the following issue: (I), Aaron, b. 1764; (II), Abigail, b. 1766; (III), Robert, b. 1769; (IV), Elizabeth, b. 1771; (V), Josiah, b. 1774; (VI), Hannah, b. 1778; (VII), James, b. 1780; (VIII), Sarah, b. 1782; (IX), Mary, b. 1785; (X), Anne, 1789. (I), Aaron, mar. Jane Havaland, and had the following issue: 1, Charles; 2, Phoebe; 3, Richard; 4, Samuel; 5, Sarah C.; 6, Ann; 7, Eliza; 8, Hannah. 1, Charles, mar. Esther Griffin, and had 1, Phoebe; 2, Jane; 3, Edward; 4, Richard M. 2, Jane, da. of Charles, mar. Stephen Griffin, and had 1, Mary; 2, Henry; 3, Louisa; 4, Charles. 4, Richard M., son of Charles, mar. Deborah Merritt, and had 1, Charles M.; 2, Louisa M.; 3, Aaron. 1, Charles M., son of Richard M., mar. Annie Cromwell, and had 1, Henrietta; 2, Richard; 3, Caroline; 4, Frederick; 5, William; 6, Charles; 7, Charlotte. 2, Louisa M., da. of Richard M., mar. Edward Stabler, and had 1, Mary; 2, Edward; 3, Louisa. 3, Aaron, son of Richard M., mar. Charlotte Cromwell, and had 1, Fanny; 2, Henry; 3, Edward; 4, Herbert; 5, Hamilton. (II), Abigail, mar. Richard Mott, and had 1, William; 2, Robert F.; 3, Maria. 2, Robert F., mar. Hannah Smith, and had 1, Richard F. 1, Richard F., son of Robert F., mar. Susan Thomas, and had 1, Robert; 2, Amelia; 3, Richard; 4, Anna; 5, William. (III), Robert, mar. Hannah Wood, and had 1, Mary; 2, Abigail; 3, Uriah; 4, Fanny; 5, Jacob Wood; 6, Willet; 7, Henry C.; 8, Gulielina; 9, Elizabeth. 1, Mary, mar. Oliver Mathews, and had 1, Robert F.; 2, Jacob; 3, Albert; 4, Emily; 5, Mary Elizabeth; 6, Edward F.; 7, Henry Clay; 8, Oliver; 9, Joseph B.; 10, Henrietta. 1, Robert F., son of Mary, mar. Mary B. Loines, and had 1, Emily Alberta; 2, Frederick L.; 3, Clara A. 2, Frederick L., son of Robert F., mar. Marianna Valentine. 2, Jacob, son of Mary, mar. Ann Eliza Trowbridge, and had 1, John A.; 2, Helen A. 3, John A., son of Jacob, mar. Julia Marienes. 4, Albert, son of Mary, mar. Louisa Strong. 5, Mary Elizabeth, da. of Mary, mar. Samuel H. Tripp, and had 6, Louisa M.; 2, Caroline H.; 3, Henry L.; 4, Mary Alberta. 5, Louisa M., da. of Mary Elizabeth, mar. Samuel Kipp. 6, Edward F., son of Mary, mar. Anna Cook. 7, Henry Clay, son of Mary, mar. Mary Richards. 8, Oliver, son of Mary, mar. Ellen Kenney, and had 1, Franklin; 2, Elianor. 2, Abigail, da. of Robert, mar. Edmund Griffin, and had 1, Hannah; 2, John; 3, Henry; 4, Charles; 5, Esther. 2, John, son of Abigail, mar. Mary Meckel, and had 1, Arthur; 2, Charles; 3, Edward; 4, George; 5, Mary Jane. 3, Henry, son of Abigail, mar. Martha Valentine, and had 1, Hannah; 2, Elizabeth. 1, Hannah, da. of Henry, mar. Daniel Willets. 2, Elizabeth, da. of Henry, mar. James Havaland. 4, Charles, son of Abigail, mar. Sarah Valentine, and had 1, Anna; 2, Henry; 3, Edith. 5, Esther, da. of Abigail, mar. Joseph Willets, and had 1, Ida; 2, Fanny. 3, Uriah, son of Robert, mar. Mary Jane Quimby. 5, Jacob W., son of Robert, mar. Amanda McDonald, and had 1, Sarah Jane; 2, Charles. (I.), Sarah Jane, da. of Jacob W., mar. — Brennel. (II.), Charles, son of Jacob W., mar. Sarah Sillick, and had, 1, Amanda. (V.), Jacob W., son of Robert, mar. Margaret Wessels, and had, 1, Emma; 2, John. (VI.), Willet, son of Robert, mar. Rosanna Lee, and had, 1, Robert; 2, Edgar; 3, Uriah; 4, Hannah; 5, George. (VII.), Henry C., son of Robert, mar. Mary Senreman, and had, 1, Henrietta; 2, Margelena. (I.), Henriette, da. of Henry C., mar. Charles Briggs. (IV.), Elizabeth mar. John Carpenter, and had, 1, Uriah F.;



2, Aaron B.; 3, Mary; 4, Phœbe; 5, Joseph. (I.), Uriah F., son of Elizabeth, mar. Sarah Ann Deall, and had, 1, Sarah Elizabeth. (I.), Sarah Elizabeth, da. of Uriah, mar. Augustus Embury, and had, 1, Peter Augustus; 2, Clarence Uriah; 3, Alfonse Subat; 4, Emma; 5, Pauline; 6, Arthur Deall. (I.) Peter Augustus, son of Sarah Elizabeth, mar. Isabella M. Hunt, and had, 1, Philip; 2, Caldwell Colden. (III.), Alfonse Subal, son of Sarah Elizabeth, mar. Ella Loines, and had, 1, Augustus. (II.), Aaron B., son of Elizabeth, mar. Adelia A. Cornell, and had, 1, Mary Elizabeth; 2, John J.; 3, Uriah F.; 4, Silas S.; 5, Deborah A.; 6, George W.; 7, Aaron M. (I.), Mary Elizabeth, da. of Aaron B., mar. Richard Loines, and had, 1, Ella. (I.), Ella, da. of Mary Elizabeth, mar. Alfonse Liebat Embury. (III.), Uriah F., son of Aaron B., mar. Sarah Elizabeth Deall, and had, 1, Richard Loines; 2, Willet Weeks. (IV.), Silas S., son of Aaron B., mar. Ada Thompson, and had, 1, Charles. (V.), Deborah A., da. of Aaron B., mar. William Mathews, and had, 1, Edward. (VI.), Aaron M., son of Aaron B., mar. Carrie Watson, and had, 1, George. (VI.), Phœbe, da. of Elizabeth, mar. Silas Sutton, and had, 1, Elizabeth Ann; 2, John J. (I.), Elizabeth Ann, da. of Phœbe, mar. John C. Davis, and had, 1, Florence; 2, Mary; 3, Edith L. (II.), John J., son of Phœbe, mar. Alice H. Brister, and had, 1, Amy; 2, Bessie. (V.), Joseph, son of Elizabeth, mar. Charlotte M. Carpenter, and had, 1, Prissilla H.; 2, Phœbe S.; 3, Emily; 4, Sarah Ann; 5, Elizabeth Jane; 6, Henry M.; 7, Aaron B.; 8, Josephine. (I.), Prissilla H., da. of Joseph, mar. George W. Carpenter, and had, 1, Hannah; 2, Albert; 3, Sarah Ann. (IV.), Sarah Ann, da. of Joseph, mar. David S. Haviland. (V.), Elizabeth Jane, da. of Joseph, mar. Theodore Carpenter. (VIII.), Josephine, da. of Joseph, mar. George Luke. (V.), Josiah mar. Hannah Griffin, and had, 1, Esther; 2, Phœbe; 3, Sarah; 4, Richard; 5, Maria. (I.) Esther, da. of Josiah, mar. Moses Quinby, and had, 1, Richard; 2, Walter W.; 3, George W.; 4, Aaron J.; 5, Mary Jane. (II.), Walter W., son of Esther, mar. Catharine Wilcox, and had, 1, Josiah; 2, Cornelia B.; 3, George M.; 4, Frank. (II.), Cornelia B., da. of Walter W., mar. John C. Bailey, and had, 1, Annie J.; 2, Lillian; 3, Mead; 4, John F.; 5, Alonzo S. (III.), George M., son of Walter W., mar. Mary D. Galve, and had, 1, Mabel; 2, Ethel. (III.), George W., son of Esther, mar. Hannah Bowen, and had, 1, Emily; 2, Esther. (IV.), Aaron J., son of Esther, mar. Margaret L. Munson, and had, 1, Elizabeth Jane; 2, George W.; 3, Esther F.; 4, Mary Jane; 5, Minnie Isabel; 6, Lucinda M. (I.), Elizabeth J., da. of Aaron J., mar. Isaac H. Barton, and had, 1, George H. (V.), Mary Jane, da. of Esther, mar. Isaac Rushmore, and had, 1, Lauria; 2, Townsend; 3, Robert; 4, Mary Jane. (II.), Phœbe, da. of Josiah, mar. Josiah Barnes, and had, 1, Hannah G.; 2, Mary; 3, Sarah; 4, Josiah. (I.), Hannah G., da. of Phœbe, mar. Frederick Waldon. (II.), Mary, da. of Phœbe, mar. Samuel Barnes. (III.), Sarah, da. of Phœbe, mar. John S. Bowron, and had, 1, John; 2, Josiah F.; 3, Mariah A.; 4, Mary A. (II.), Josiah F., son of Sarah, mar. Eliza C. Conner, and had, 1, Sarah F.; 2, Eliza; 3, Charles. (III.), Mariah A., da. of Sarah, mar. William Tollfre, and had, 1, William. (IV.), Mary A., da. of Sarah, mar. Sidney Firth. (V.), Maria, da. of Josiah, mar. Watson Bowron, and had, 1, William Henry; 2, Mariah; 3, Josephine; 4, Francis. (VII.), James, mar. Phœbe Carpenter, and had, 1, Thomas C.; 2, Jane; 3, Joseph; 4, Edmond; 5, William C.; 6, Mary; 7, Sarah; 8, James; 9, Elias H. (I.), Thomas C.,



son of James, mar. Esther G. Haviland, and had, 1, John; 2, Phoebe C.; 3, Hannah; 4, Sarah. (I.), John, son of Thomas C., mar. Mary Gabriella Sutton, and had, 1, Thomas A.; 2, William II.; 3, Uriah. (II.), Phoebe C., da. of Thomas C., mar. David R. Underhill, and had, 1, Emma; 2, Carrie. (II.), Jane, da. of James, mar. Allen Sutton, and had, 1, James F.; 2, William A.; 3, Edmond F.; 4, Phoebe Jane. (I.), James F., son of Jane, mar. Phoebe T. Carpenter, and had, 1, Jane; 2, Hannah F. (II.), William A., son of Jane, mar. Catharine Richardson. (II.), Joseph, son of James, mar. Mary Hatfield. (IV.), Edmond, son of James, mar. Hannah L. Haight, and had, 1, Hannah Lydia. (I.), Hannah Lydia, da. of Edmond, mar. Francis Carpenter, and had, 1, Frederick; 2, Mary; 3, Howard. (V.), William C., son of James, mar. Mary Barnes, and had, 1, Stephen B.; 2, William II.; 3, Hannah B.; 4, Phoebe A. (II.), William II., son of William C., mar. Mary Carpenter, and had, 1, George; 2, Harriet. (VIII.), James, son of James, mar. Elizabeth Harbough, and had, 1, Frederick Augustus. (IX.), Elias H., son of James, mar. Sarah Hunt, and had, 1, Phoebe C.; 2, Lewis Eugene; 3, Jane Edmond. (VIII.), Sarah mar. John Griffin, and had, 1, Phoebe; 2, Mary; 3, George; 4, Eliza. (II.), Mary, da. of Sarah, mar. Isah Quinby, and had, 1, John J.; 2, Eliza F. (I.), John J., son of Mary, mar. Hannah G. Haviland, and had, 1, Howard; 2, Frank; 3, Robert. (II.), Eliza F., da. of Mary, mar. Edward S. Quinby, and had, 1, Elizabeth; 2, Edward; 3, Frederick. (III.), George, son of Sarah, mar. Sarah Husted, and had, 1, Ada. (IV.), Eliza, da. of Sarah, mar. Hiram Bent. (IX.), Mary mar. Daniel Griffin, and had, 1, Hannah; 2, Josiah; 3, Anna; 4, Daniel; 5, David. (I.), Hannah, da. of Mary, mar. Daniel Griffin, and had, 1, Marianna; 2, James; 3, Mariah. (II.), James, son of Hannah, mar. Sarah Burling, and had, 1, Howard. (III.), Anna, da. of Mary, mar. Edwin Keeler, and had, 1, Richard C.; 2, Edwin; 3, Phoebe Jane. (I.), Richard C., son of Anna, mar. Hannah Carpenter, and had, 1, James. (II.), Edwin, son of Anna, mar. Susan Brown, and had, 1, Harold; 2, Edwin; 3, Louis M. (X.), Ann mar. John Haviland, and had, 1, Mary; 2, Jane; 3, Richard F.; 4, James F.; 5, Phoebe; 6, Mariah; 7, Elizabeth; 8, John. (I.), Mary, da. of Ann, mar. George Provost, and had, 1, Emma; 2, Marianna; 3, John; 4, George; 5, Louisa (II.), Marianna, da. of Mary, mar. Jacob Welles. (VI.), Mariah, da. of Ann, mar. David R. Field. (VII.), Elizabeth, da. of Ann, mar. William Horton. (VIII.), John, son of Ann, mar. Olive P. Eldridge, and had, 1, Olive Janette. *Arms*, sa, a chev. betw. 3 garbs, arg. *Crest*, a dexter arm, issuing out of the clouds, fesse ways, ppr., habited gu., holding in the hand ppr., a sphere, or.

FALCONER.—*Peter Falconer*, one of the first patentees of North Castle, left two sons. (I.), William, who had, 1, Josiah; 2, Ruth; 3, Catharine; 4, Hannah. (II.), John of Eastchester, b. Dec. 18, 1747, d. June 24, 1831, at. 88, mar. Elizabeth Purdy, she was b. May 31, 1749, d. Dec. 22, 1799. Their children were, 1, David of N. Y., b. Dec. 10, 1772; 2, Jonathan of Miltown, N. Y., b. Feb. 14, 1774; 3, Roger of N. J., b. Aug. 20, 1775; 4, Josiah of N. Y., b. May 1, 1780; 5, William of N. Y., b. May 1, 1780; 6, Anne, b. Dec. 9, 1779, mar. Matthew Fogel; 7, Elizabeth, b. July, 1781, mar. William Baldwin; 8, Catharine, b. January 8, 1782, mar. John Fisher of White Plains.

**FARRINGTON OF EASTCHESTER.**—The family of Farrington are of Shaw Hall, Lancashire, England. The Farringtons, of Farrington, Wearden and Shaw Hall, all in the Parish of Leyland and County Palatine of Lancaster, arose at the time of the Conquest, and have since preserved an uninterrupted male succession. They resided at Farrington as recently as the time of Elizabeth, and continued at Wearden until the close of the sixteenth century, when they removed to Shaw Hall.

The manor and hundred of Leyland was held by them of King Edward the Confessor; and the men of the manor (which was of a superior order), as well as those of Salford, enjoyed the privilege of attending to their own harvest instead of the King's.

According to Thompson's History of Long Island, one Edmund Farrington with a number of others, embarked from Lynn, Massachusetts, in a vessel with a Capt. Howe, on or about the 17th of May, 1640, and arrived at Cow Bay, L. I., where they purchased of the Indians from the eastern part of Oyster Bay to Cow Bay; and where they were dispossessed, by the Dutch Governor Kieft, on the 19th of May, 1640.

This Farrington originally came from Southampton, England. He, with the others, afterwards bought Agawan of the Indians—a tract about twenty miles long and six miles wide—and made a settlement, which he called Southampton. They made their settlement on the 13th December, 1640. The consideration paid was sixteen coats and eighty bushels of Indian corn for the land. Edmund Farrington returned to Lynn, Mass., and in 1665 built a mill there, and dug a pond and opened a brook for a half mile called Farrington's Brook. Farrington died in 1680, aged 88 years. Two of his sons, viz. Thomas and Edmund, afterwards removed to Flushing. Thomas Farrington in 1645 was one of the patentees of Flushing, and his brother Edward was a magistrate there in 1657. The latter had a son named John Mastin Farrington.

Thomas Farrington, the first of that name mentioned in the Eastchester town records, was one of their descendants. He emigrated from Flushing to Eastchester about the year 1750, and became one of the purchasers of a portion of Long Reach, a district of the town; and the farm that he owned in that patent is yet in the possession of one of his descendants, Mr. Jonas Farrington of the city of New York.

Thomas settled in Yonkers—afterwards removed near Hunt's Bridge, and then to Long Reach.

Thomas Farrington died about the year 1793, about 90 years of age; his grave and that of his second wife lies at the junction of a lane called Farrington's Lane, running through his farm with the White Plains Road. Thomas Farrington mar., first wife, a Miss Norris; and his sister Jane Farrington mar. John Norris, the brother of his first wife. Their children—1, Robert mar. Charity, sister of Nehemiah Hunt; 2, Sarah mar. Anthony Valentine; 3, Thomas mar. Miss Taylor; 4, Benjamin mar. Susannah Tompkins; second wife, Margaret Mastin. Their children—1, Jonas mar. to Euphemiah Lawrence; 2, Mastin died unmarried; 3, Hannah mar. Joseph Oakley; 4, Penelope died Oct. 10, 1838, unmarried; 5, George mar. Frances Guion, d. April 16, 1830.

The following extract, from the Eastchester town records, apply to Thomas Farrington, viz.: he was appointed overseer of the roads April 15th, 1774:—

"There at is ye house of Thomas Farrington's a road rooned horse aboute fourteen hands high, shored before with a middle long tale, without either marke or brand as can be perceived. Entered ye 25th day of December, 1766, by me.  
 40. 0. 9. SAM'L SNEDEH, Town Clerk."

The following extracts from the town records apply to other members of his family:—

"George Farrington (his son) was appointed Overseer of the Roads on 1st April, 1784. Appointed Fence Viewer and Overseer of the Road on 5th April, 1796; re-elected 4th April, 1797. Appointed Overseer of the Poor 3d April, 1798; also 2d April, 1799; also Overseer of Roads 1st April, 1800.

"Jonas Farrington, another son, was selected Overseer of Roads 3d April, 1798; Overseer of Highways, 11th Dist., on 7th April, 1812; re-appointed 6th April, 1813; also 7th April, 1818; also 6th April, 1819."

Jonas Farrington, the son of Thomas Farrington, was born May 26, 1754; mar. Euphemia Lawrence, b. Jan. 20, 1764. Their children—1, Mastin b. Feb. 2, 1782; 2, Jane b. April 16, 1785; 3, George b. Aug. 10, 1787; 4, Jonas b. May 3, 1790; 5, Hannah b. May 3, 1793, died in infancy; 6, Charles b. April 2, 1796; 7, John Rich b. Dec. 23, 1798; 8, Rebecca b. Nov. 10, 1801. Jonas d. A. D. 1822, Sept. 22; Euphemia d. A. D. 1830, March 21. Their tombstones are in Eastchester churchyard. Of these children—*The First*, Mastin Farrington, d. March 29, 1823; mar. Keziah Oakley, b. July 25, 1782. Their children—1, Oakley b. Nov. 2, 1801, mar., 1825, May 8, to Mary Ann Boscawen, and had issue; 2, Mary b. Oct. 27, 1803, mar. a Mr. Munna, and had issue. *The Second*, Jane Farrington, mar. Anthony Valentine, and had issue; she d. in 1838. *The Third*, George Farrington, mar. a Miss Morgan, and had issue. *The Fourth*, Jonas Farrington, jr., mar. Sarah Wolff, and had—1, John, who mar. Margaret Jourdan, and had issue; 2, Rebecca mar. Abel Wheaton, jr., and had issue; 3, John Smith; 4, Sarah mar. Wm. L. Barker; 5, Hannah. *The Fifth*, Charles Farrington, mar. Catharine Boyce, b. A. D. 1799, and had—1, Emeline Euphemia b. April 19, 1819, mar. Wm. S. Wood; 2, Chas. W. b. April 4, 1825, mar.; 3, John Rich b. Feb. 4, 1820, mar.; 4, Eliza Rebecca d. *The Sixth*, John Rich Farrington mar. Hannah Barker, and had issue. *The Seventh*, Rebecca Farrington, mar. John P. Angevine A. D. 1837, and had Charles Berrian b. March 15, 1840.

There are great numbers of the descendants of the other children of Thomas Farrington settled in Westchester County, city of New York and Virginia.

FOUNTAIN OF BEDFORD.—..... Fountain, Esq., descended from the Fountains of Stockingham, Devonshire, England, was a merchant of opulence, and emigrated to America about 1650. He d. at. 100, leaving Moses, and a younger son who d. s. p. at. 104. Moses, the eldest, had also two sons, viz.: Moses and Matthew. The latter was a military officer of some distinction. Previous to the Revolutionary war he removed from Bedford to Eastchester, where he d. from the bite of a fox, at. 56. He left four sons, (I.), Stephen. (II.), Aaron. (III.), Rev. Ezra of Bedford, b. 20th May, 1743, d. Oct. 15, 1840. (IV.), James of Bedford. Rev. Ezra had, 1, *James*, M. D., of the New York University, who has Hosea, M. D., of Somers, Elias, Jabez, Husted, C. Horton, and Ezra James. 2, *Hosea*. 3, *Tyler* of Peckskill. *Arms*, arg. three bars, gamelles, gu. on a canton az. a lion passant guardant, or. *Crest*, an eagle's head erased, holding in his beak a snake.



**FOWLER OF EAST AND WESCHESTER.**—All of this name in Connecticut and New York are supposed to have originated from *William Fowler* of New Haven, who was elected a magistrate in 1637, and was one of the first settlers of Milford, 1639. *John Fowler* was living at Guilford, Conn. in 1650. *Benjamin Fowler*, of Westchester removed to Phillipse's Manor, b. 1715, mar. Sarah Vincent. Their children were, (I.), Anthony, mar. Elizabeth Taylor, and had, 1, Benjamin; 2, Abraham; 3, Anthony; 4, Nathaniel; 5, Sarah. (II.), Vincent, mar. 1st, Dorothy Valentine; 2nd, Mrs. Merritt, and left, 1, Ann; 2, Abraham; 3, Rebecca; 4, Benjamin; 5, Mary; 6, Sarah. (III.), Frederick, whose da. Jane, mar. Jeremiah Dobbs; (IV.), Josiah, d. s. p.; (V.), Benjamin, d. s. p.; (VI.), Hannah, mar. H. Fowler, M. D.; (VII.), Ann, mar. Dennis Brewer; (VIII.), Isabel, mar. Dennis Post. *Henry Fowler* of Eastchester was one of the associate proprietors of the Long Reach Patent in 1708. He left Henry, the father of William, who was b. A. D. 1701. William had Richard the father of Philemon of Eastchester. *Edmund Fowler* of Eastchester, d. A. D. 1747, mar. Rachel, and left, 1, Gilbert; 2, Edmund, to whom his father devised all those lands in Eastchester called Hutchin's; 3, Solomon. *John Fowler* of Eastchester had John, Abigail, who mar. — Secor, and Jemima, who mar. — Williams. John Fowler, jr., d. cir. 1765, mar. Elizabeth, and left, 1, John; 2, Andrew; 3, David; 4, Joshua; 5, Thomas.

**GAULLADET OF NEW ROCHELLE.**—The ancestors of the Gaulladets were Protestants, inhabitants of La Rochelle, in France. On the Revocation of the Edict of Nantes Pierre Eliseè Gaulladet, a physician at Rochelle, fled from France to England, from whence he removed to America and settled at New Rochelle. His son Pierre, d. A. D. 1774, mar. — Willmouth, and left, 1, Elisha; 2, Col. Peter, commander of a troop of light horse in the Continental service; 3, Joseph of New Rochelle, mar. Ann Badeau; 4, Mary, mar. Samuel Pease; 5, Frances, mar. — Casting.

**GUION OF NEW ROCHELLE.**—*Louis Guion*, *Ecuyer*, "the founder of this eminently respectable family" was b. at La Rochelle, in France, about 1654. Four years before the Revocation of the celebrated Edict of Nantes, he fled with his family into England, from whence he emigrated to America and settled at New Rochelle about 1687. Feb. 6th, 1695, he received letters of denization from King William of England. His son Louis, who d. at New Rochelle cir. 1725, mar. Tomaza —, and left (L.), Louis or Lewis, b. at sea, who had 1, Isaac, mar. Mary Bolt and left Thomas, Frederick S., Isaac, M. D., Lætitia, mar. Jos. Purdy, and Maria, b. 9th March, 1750; 2, Abraham, b. 1st Jan., 1719, d. Jan. 1, 1799, had issue 1, Frederick, b. 1751, d. 1831, mar. Jemima Hackett, and left Frederick Augustus, Maria, Alethea, Julia, and Cornelia; 2, John; 3, Major Isaac of Natchez, mar. Sarah Lewis, and had Capt. Frederick, U. S. A., Hon. John of Vicksburgh, Hon. Lewis of Mississippi, Capt. Walter, U. S. A.; 3, David, mar. Esther Parcot; 4, Peter, d. s. p.; 5, John of Rye Neck, b. Feb. 1, 1723, d. June 21, 1792, mar. 1747, Anna Hart, she was b. April 11, 1728, and d. Feb. 26, 1814. The children of John and Anna were 1, Jonathan, b. January 28, 1749, mar. Phœbe Lyon. Children of Jonathan and Phœbe Guion were: 1, Anne, b. Dec. 2nd, 1774; 2, James, b. Sept. 20th, 1777; 3, Sarah, b. Sept. 28th, 1779; 4, Mary, b. Aug. 23d, 1782; 5, Thomas, b. Aug. 11th,



1786; 6, Phœbe, b. April 24th, 1789; 7, Hetty, b. June 10th, 1791; 8, Alvah, b. Oct. 21, 1795. Phœbe, the wife of Jonathan, d. Dec. 11, 1819. Jonathan Guion, d. Aug. 28, 1835. The children of Abraham and Mary were Anne Eliza, d. Oct. 26, 1840, mar. Thomas Haviland of Rye, Sarah, d. May 15, 1798. Maria, mar. John W. Conover, of New York, John, d. 19th, Feb. 1798, William Henry, proprietor of the homestead on Rye Neck, Peter Knapp, d. July 10, 1838, mar. Jane Stockbridge of New York, James Hart of Rye Neck, mar. Jane Harriot, Sarah Ophelia, mar. Royal C. Ormsby of New York, Charity Amelia, mar. Garret Vermilyea of Rye, Hetty Adeline, mar. Gilbert Haight of Mamaroneck, Charlotte Purdy, d. April 2, 1824, and Chalan Gabriel of Rye Neck, mar. Sarah Wright, of L. I.; 9, Isaac, b. Sep. 19, 1767, mar. Elizabeth Wilsey; 10, Elijah, b. April 19, 1770, mar. Elizabeth Marshall, and left Rev. John M., and the Rev. Elijah, who mar. Clara Beck; 11, Monmouth Hart, b. Oct. 8, 1771, mar. Anne Lyon. (II.), Isaac, second son of second Louis, mar. Maria — and had Louis of Eastchester. The latter left Lewis of Eastchester, Daniel of Eastchester, Mary, mar. John Alberson, Isabel, Margaret, and Susannah. (III.), Aman, third son of second Louis, d. cir. 1757, mar. Elizabeth Samson, and had, 1, Elias, b. Sept. 14, 1728, d. Nov. 26, 1811, mar. 16th December, 1770, Magdalene Soulice, and had Elias of New Rochelle, b. Feb. 19, 1772, Mary Elizabeth, b. May 24, 1776, Magdalene, b. 19th August, 1774, mar. John Drake, son of Benjamin; 2, Benjamin, b. Feb., 1730, mar. Sarah Pell, da. of Joshua, she was b. July 30, 1744. They left Phœbe, bapt. 1784, and others; 3, Esaie, b. Aug. 26, 1736; 4, Aman of New Rochelle; 5, Elizabeth; 6, Susannah, mar. John Landrine. (IV.), Susannah, only da. of second Louis, mar. John Soulice. *Arms.* D'arg, au cap de vigne de sable chargé de trois grappes, de raisins de gueules.

**HADLEY OF YONKERS.**—Joseph Hadley was living at Yonkers in 1687. His grandson, Joseph, mar. Hittabel ———, and left George, who mar. Phœbe Tippet. The children of George were (I.), Isaac. (II.), Frederick. (III.), George. (IV.), Abraham. (V.), Stephen. (VI.), William. (VII.), Elizabeth. William, sixth son of George, mar. Elizabeth Warner, and left 1, Joseph, ob. at the West; 2, Moses, whose son Moses is still living; 3, William, d. at N. Y.; 4, Charles of Connecticut, where sons are still living; 5, John, d.; 6, James of N. Y.; 7, Isaac, whose two sons d. in the U. S. A.; 8, Jacob of Western New York; 9, Thomas d. at Charlestown; 10, George Washington.

**HANFORD OF NORTH SALEM.**—The Rev. Thomas Hanford, was the first Presbyterian minister of the town of Norwalk. He d. A. D. 1693, and left several sons. Thomas, the eldest, had Thomas. The latter left two sons, (1.), Thomas of Norwalk, whose da. Mary mar. ——— Wentworth. (II.), Gershom of North Salam, whose sons are, 1, Gershom; 2, Lewis, of North Salam; 3, John, of North Salem; 4, Josiah; 5, Thomas; 6, Nehemiah; 7, Stephen.

**HART OF RYE.**—Among several of the families worthy of note, is that of Edward Hart, the first of the family in this country. He settled in Flushing, Long Island, and was a man of whom his descendants may well feel proud. He was one of the leading men of that town; was town clerk when that was the highest office. In Dec., 1657, the Dutch Governor and counsel issued an order requiring

the people of Flushing, then called Vissengen, to cease from entertaining Quakers; and requiring them to apprehend and send to the city any who should profess or preach the doctrines of that heretical sect. To this order a strong remonstrance was returned by Edward Hart, signed by him as town clerk, with thirty of the principle inhabitants of the town; and which was presented to Gov. Stuyvesant by Tobias Feeke, the sheriff, who was immediately arrested. Hart was imprisoned for writing this remonstrance; after three weeks confinement, he was compelled to make a humble submission, and was then released—only at the earnest intercession of his neighbors, as he was one of the oldest settlers, and had a large family to provide for.<sup>a</sup> His son, Jonathan Hart, settled in Rye about 1685, and was chosen a townsman in 1686. He married Hannah Budd. The Harts of this county are descended from him.

**HOLMES OF BEDFORD.**—This family derive their origin from John Holmes, who emigrated from Beverly, Yorkshire, England, to America, about 1660. In 1690, he was one of the resident proprietors of Bedford, b. cir. 1639, d. 1729. His son John was for many years town clerk, and justice of the peace for Bedford. John Holmes, jun., d. A. D. 1763, he mar. Jamima ———, and left (I.), John, proprietor of the Cohamong farm, b. 1735, d. 1762, who had Lewis and Catharine. (II.), Col. James, b. 1737, d. July 18, 1824, mar. Sept. 25, 1787, Tamar Lounsberry, she d. Oct. 11, 1788. Their two da. were Tamar, b. June 4, 1786, who mar. James Ronalds, and Sally, b. Oct. 27, 1787, who mar. Jeremiah Lounsberry of Bedford. (III.), Stephen, proprietor of the homestead, d. Sept. 1779. (IV.), Sarah. (V.), Rebecca. (VI.), Lois. (VII.), Emma. (VIII.), Dorcas. Of this family was David Holmes of Bedford, in 1710, whose sons were (I.), Joseph, who left Joseph of Bedford, the father of Nathan, The latter had two children, viz., Joseph and Sarah, who mar. Charles Miller. (II.), Reuben. (III.), Jonathan, who mar. Dorothy, and left 1. Jonathan, who had two da., Martha, mar. Richard Wilder, and Mary, mar. Isaac Chase; 2. Solomon, mar. Rachel Miller, and left a son and three da.: 3. Hezekiah, mar. Elizabeth Finch, he d. in 1813, æt. 100. The children of Hezekiah are James of Thompsonstown, Jonathan, Patty, æt. 92, in 1847, and Rachel, æt. 82; 4. Dorothy; 5. Mary; 6 Rachel. (IV.), David, left two sons, 1st, David, the father of David, 2nd, Samuel, the father of Stephen.

**HORTON OF RYE AND WHITE PLAINS.**—The Horton family are descended from Barnabas Horton, one of the first settlers of Southhold, L. I. He, with others, came from England and landed in New Haven, Conn., with the Rev. John Young as their spiritual leader. With the assistance of Gen. Eaton they, about the year 1640, purchased the soil, and afterwards conducted the concerns of the settlement in the manner of the New England towns.<sup>b</sup> Joseph Horton, son of Barnabas Horton, mar. Jane Budd, a daughter of John Budd, settled in Rye, 1669, and was chosen a selectman in 1671; he was thought equal to any duty. He had several sons. Captain Joon, the eldest, left John, who was living at Rye, 1707. The latter had a son, Joseph, who mar. Elizabeth ———. David of White Plains, supposed son of Joseph, had four sons, (I.), Joseph. (II.),

<sup>a</sup> In Callahan's New Netherland, vol. 2, p. 351. Thompson's Long Island, vol. 2, p. 72, 289 299.

<sup>b</sup> Thompson's Long Island, vol. 1, p. 374.

Thomas. (III.), John. (IV.), Daniel who had 1, Stephen of White Plains, who left David of Yonkers and Benjamin; 2, Daniel; 3, Samuel; 4, George W. of City Island; 5, Elijah C.; 6, Anne mar. Samuel Crawford of White Plains; 7, Margaret. Of this family was William Horton of King street, Rye, who had (I.), Jeremiah of Mamaroneck, who mar. Elizabeth Hart, and left 1, Abraham; 2, James; 3, Benjamin; 4, Elijah; 5, Hannah; 6, Anne. (II.), Isaac, d. s. p. 1821, mar. Sarah Cornell. (III.), Timothy of L. I. (IV.), Rachel. (V.), Pruer. Daniel Horton of Rye, a lineal descendant of first Joseph, b. Feb. 22, 1776, mar. Anne Strang, she was b. Sept. 30, 1764. Their children were 1, James, b. Oct. 29, 1787; 2, Henry, b. Feb. 19, 1789; 3, Ebenezer, b. Nov. 30, 1796, ob. May 13, 1814; 4, Nathaniel, b. Jan. 17, 1794; 5, Phoebe, b. May 23, 1791; 6, Margaret, b. Oct. 20, 1795, d. Oct. 28, 1797; 7, Mary Ann, b. Sept. 2, 1798, d. May 18, 1823; 8, Martha, b. Sept. 7, 1801; 9, Margaret, b. April 2, 1804; 10, Caroline, Feb. 28, 1807; 11, Elizabeth Ann, b. Oct. 2, 1824. Of this family was John Horton of White Plains, who d. 1763, and left 1, Azariah; 2, Phoebe; 3, Patience; 4, Hannah.

HUESTIS OR EUSTIS.—Robert Huestis removed from Fairfield to Westchester, about 1664. By his wife Elizabeth, he had Robert, John, Samuel, and David. James, whether connected with Robert or not is uncertain, came from Fairfield to Eastchester, 1665. The children of James were 1st, *Jonathan*, b. Nov. 12, 1667. 2nd, *James*, b. Feb. 15, 1669. 3d, *Judah*, b. March 16, 1671. James, second son of James, mar. Tamar Pell, da. of John, and left 1st, James, d. cir. 1779-80, æt. 80, mar. Tamar Ferris, and had 1, James, mar. Griffen; 2, Caleb; 3, Samuel, a man of great literary attainments, lost his manuscripts by fire, which brought on mental derangement, mar. ——— Applyby; 4, Joshua, d. Dec. 1781, mar. Abbe Baker, she d. cir. 1821, æt. 90; 5, Martha, mar. James Boyd; 6, Sarah, mar. Samuel Nelson. Joshua, fourth son of James, had 1, Thomas of New Brunswick, b. Dec. 25, 1760, mar. 1, Phoebe Mabec; 2, Eliza Smith. He left by Phoebe Mabec, 1, Joshua, mar. Sarah Black; 2, Peter, mar. Miss Lefurge; 3, James; 4, Nathaniel; 5, Catharine. By Eliza Smith, 1, Phoebe; 2, Mabec, mar. Simon Newcombe; 3, Abby; 4, Joshua; 5, Thomas. (II.), Mary, d. 1836, mar. Benjamin Palmer. (III.), Benjamin, b. Dec. 1765, mar. Hannah Higby, she was b. June 16, 1771. Their children were 1, Joshua; 2, Fleming; 3, Benjamin; 4, Thomas Palmer; 5, Samuel; 6, William; 7, Daniel; 8, Harvey; 9, Catharine, mar. Abraham Lent; 10, Mary; 11, Abigail Jane. (IV.), Joshua, proprietor of Pelham Neck, b. July 15, 1768, mar. Leah Rodman, and left Ann Maria, d. 1834, mar. Moses Odell. (V.), Elizabeth, b. Oct. 23, 1769, mar. Augustus Lawrence, Esqr. (VI.), Daniel, mar. Susannah Rich, and left 1, Rebecca Anne, mar. Nicholas Underhill; 2, Mary, mar. Charles Augustus Briggs. (VII.), Elijah of Ithaca, Thompkins Co., mar. Elizabeth Green, and had 1, Deborah Ann, mar. 1st, William Riccards. 2nd, John Perry; 2, Jane, mar. 1st, John Farrell. 2nd, Will. Bennett; 3, Emmeline, mar. John Cutts; 4, Lorenzo Scott; 5, Thomas Green; 6, Joshua; 7, Charlotte. James, second son of first James, left secondly, John, b. cir. 1760, mar. Elizabeth Guion, and had (I.), John, ob. s. p. (II.), David, mar. Abigail Morgan, da. of Charles of East Clinton, and left 1, Augustus, Esqr., of Westchester, mar. Sarah Valentine, and left William, mar. Miss Allerton; 2, Stephen; 3, Elijah; 4, Benjamin, mar. 1st, Esther. 2nd,



Martha Lawrence, by the latter left John Lawrence, William Augustus. James, second son of first James, left thirdly, Samuel, of Long Reach, Eastchester. *Arms*, sa. a saltier, betw. four martlets, ar. within a bordure erm.

**HUNT OF HUNT'S POINT.**—This family are presumed to spring from one of the younger sons of Thomas Hunt of Shrewsbury, county of Shropshire, England, son of Richard Hunt, bailiff of Shrewsbury in 1613. Thomas was high sheriff of Shropshire in 1656. and a colonel in the Parliament service; he died A. D. 1669.

Thomas Hunt of Rye removed to Westchester, where he purchased the *Grove Farm*, which was patented to him by Governor Nicolls, 4th Dec. 1667. Will dated 6th Oct., 1694,—Rec. Wills, No. v. 99; mar. Elizabeth Jessup, da. of Edward. They had, 1, Thomas, a trustee of the freehold and commonalty of the town of Westchester in 1692; 2, Josiah, a trustee of ditto in 1692; 3, Joseph, who left a daughter Martha; 4, John, who mar. Grace —; his will is dat. 7th Jan'y, 1711; 5, Abigail, mar. John Pinckney. Thomas, the eldest, was father to Thomas of Hunt's Point, (who mar. Sarah Ward,) Augustus, Lewis, Robert, (who d. 1749,) and Abigail. Thomas and Sarah Ward left, 1, Thomas, b. 1727, d. July 4, 1838, mar. 1st, Milicent Wright, d. 15th Sept., 1832; 2nd, Hannah Wright; 2, Jesse, high sheriff of the County and proprietor of Hunter's Island, mar. Miss Staples; 3, Ward, mar. — Briggs of Eastchester. Thomas, the eldest, left issue, 1, Thomas, who mar. Frances Ambroise de Poline, and had Eliza and Frances; 2, Joseph, M. D., mar. — Buruet of Demerara, and left Joseph, Thomas, James of Michigan, and Henry; 3, Jonathan; 4, James, mar. — Ward, da. of Hon. Stephen; 5, Alsop, mar. Elizabeth Lockwood, da. of Major. Ebenezer; 6, Henry, mar. — Rogers of Demerara, and left two da.; 7, Joshua; 8, Richard, mar. 1st, Elizabeth Tice; 2nd, Eliza Hardy; 9, Margaret of West Farms; 10, Sarah. Jesse, high sheriff of the county, had Capt. Thomas, Lieut. Jesse, Samuel, and a da. who mar. — Gracie. Ward, third son of Thomas and youngest brother of Jesse, left Montgomery of Utica, and Walter of Mount Pleasant.

Josiah Hunt, second son of Thomas of the Grove Farm, by his wife Bethia Horguson, left one son, commonly called Grove Josiah, who had 1, Thomas; 2, Moses of Long Reach, Eastchester; 3, Josiah; 4, David; 5, Abner; 6, Phæbe, mar. — Fowler; 7, Martha, and 8, Abigail, mar. — Buckbed. Thomas, eldest son of Josiah, d. cir. 1756, mar. Mary —, and had *Mianna*, mar. John Ferris, *Stephen*, father of Sylvester, *Charles*, of Long Reach, Eastchester, *Elvin*, *Martha*, mar. James Tippet, *Christina*, *Alathea Anne*, mar. John Leggett, and *Helena*, who mar. Jonathan Odell. Moses, second son of Josiah, d. cir. 1760 and left Benjamin, Timothy, Gilead, Reuben, Mary, mar. — Yomaus, Rebecca, Sarah, mar. William Oakley, and Martha, mar. — Tippet. Josiah, third son of Josiah, d. cir. 1743, and had, Jacob, Caleb, Solomon the father of Nathan, Abigail and Anne; Tabitha, Rachel, mar. — Fowler, Rebecca, mar. — Pell, Lydia, mar. Walter Briggs, and Tabitha. Joseph, third son of Thomas Hunt of the Grove Farm, left Martha and others. John Hunt, fourth son of Thomas of the Grove Farm, was a trustee of the freehold and commonalty of Westchester in 1692, d. cir. 1711, mar. Grace —, and had, 1, William, ancestor of the Hunts of Tarrytown; 2, Joshua, d. cir. 1760, mar. Mary —, and had, John,



father of Joshua, Caleb, Enoch, Joshua, Israel, Miriam, mar. — Oakley, and Mary; 3, Jonathan; 4, Mary, mar. — Underhill; 5, Jeremiah; 6, Israel, whose son Israel left Joshua, the father of Gilbert and Israel. The latter resided at Eastchester and mar. — Bonnett; 7, James, to whom his father bequeathed thirty acres upon Throckmorton's Neck. Of this family was *Obadiah Hunt* of Phillipsborough, who d. 1736, and had Obadiah and Anne. Obadiah, jr., d. cir. 1760, and left, 1, Obadiah; 2, John; 3, Zebediah. *Joseph Hunt*, a resident of Cortlandt's Manor, d. cir. 1768, mar. Levina —, and had, 1, Gilbert; 2, Levina; 3, Eunice; 4, Jemima; 5, Anne; 6, Esther. *Aaron Hunt* of Westchester, a descendant of Thomas Hunt of Hunt's Point, mar. Rebecca Haydock, and had, 1, Eden, b. Dec. 3, 1755, a guide to General Washington; 2, Major David, b. Sept. 4, 1757; 3, Mary, b. January 10, 1760; 4, Charlotte and Eleanor, b. Nov. 18, 1762; 5, Eleanor, b. Nov. 21st, 1764; 6, Aaron, b. Sept. 24, 1767; 7, Roger and Haydock, b. Sept. 22, 1770; 8, Moses, b. Feb. 25, 1773. *Nehe-miah Hunt* of Eastchester, mar. — Lawrence, and had, 1, Euphemia; 2, Anne; 3, Mary; 4, Frederick; 5, Phœbe; Theodosius; 7, Aaron, d. 1828, mar. Elizabeth Fowler, da. of Thomas Fowler, and had Theodosius, Richard and others; 8, Basil, who had Richard, Reuben, Nathan and Jacob; 9, Thomas; 10, Martha. David, fourth son of Josiah Hunt, called Grove Josiah, mar. Mary Cromwell, and left (I.), Theophilus. (II.), Aaron. (III.), David, jr., who mar. — Honeywell, and left Jemima, who mar. Sidney Bowne. (IV.), Philip. (V.), Stephanus, mar. Liddia Lawrence, da. of Joseph, and left (I.), Joseph. (II.), Josiah. (III.), Richard. (IV.), Lydia. (V.), Lott. (VI.), Effingham. Josiah, second son of Stephanus, mar. Elizabeth Palmer, da. of Lewis, and had, (I.), Rachel, mar. Thomas Tate. (II.), Gulielmo, mar. Samuel Tate. (III.), Lydia, mar. Jacob Weeks. (IV.), Charlotte, mar. William Sutton. (V.), Stephanus, mar. Phœbe Dickinson, and left 1, Josiah Dickinson; 2, John Woolman; 3, Daniel; 4, Elias Hicks; 5, Susannah; 6, Catharine. (VI.), Euphemia, mar. Isaiah Travis. (VII.), Hannah. (VIII.), Lewis P., mar. Charlotte Weeks, da. of Benjamin (I.). (IX.), Edmund L. (X.), Philena, mar. Louis de St. Croix. Lewis P., (VIII.), by his wife Charlotte left, 1, Benjamin W., mar. Mary Quinbey, da. of William. (II.), Edmund L. (III.), Hannah. (IV.), Elizabeth, mar. Charles Wright. (V.), James mar. Sarah Frances Carpenter. (VI.), Sarah, mar. Elias Hicks Field. (VII.), Phœbe, mar. Peter Carpenter. Benjamin W. (I.) left by his wife Mary (Quinbey,) (I.), William. (II.), Deborah. (III.), Charles Lindley, who mar. Kate M. Carpenter. (IV.), Benjamin W. *Arms*, per. pale, ar. and sa. a saltier; counterchanged. *Crest*, a lion's head, erased, per. pale, ar. and sa. collared gu. lined and ringed or.

IRVING—The family of IRVING is from Scotland, in the northern part of which kingdom it was, (as an ancient record quoted by Chambers the historian, and by Sir Walter Scott observes,) “an ancient and principal family.” Very frequent mention is made of them in the early annals of that country; and in several instances they are spoken of by the above named writers as possessing a distinguished position and great influence among the baronial families of the north-east counties.

An old and curious manuscript history of this family is preserved by one of them in this country, entitled, “The original of the Family of Irvines or

Erivines, Written by Christopher Irvine, M. A., State Physician and History-grapher to his majesty, King Charles the Second, in Scotland, and gent to his brother Sir Gerard Irvine, Bart., of Castle Irvine in the kingdom of Ireland, in the year 1660." From this manuscript it appears that the oldest branch of the family styled the "Irvines of Bonshaw," were settled on the banks of the river Eshe, where they continued for many successive generations with varying fortunes. From this stock are descended the English and Irish Irvines, among the latter having been the Rt. Hon. General Sir John Irvine, Commander-in-chief of his majesty's forces in Ireland in the year 1779.

A very early offshoot of this parent stock were the "*Irvines of Drum*." The eldest son of the house of Bonshaw, William, having been knighted by King Robert Bruce in the year 1296, and for long and faithful services in the field, having been endowed with the lands of Drum on the river Dee in Aberdeenshire, which are *to this day* in possession of his descendants. The castle of Drum is about ten miles from the city of Aberdeen, and is now inhabited by Alexander Irvine, Esq., the lineal descendant of the above Sir William. Sir William Irvine of Drum married the daughter of Sir Robert Keith, Knight, Lord Marshall of Scotland, and of Margaret Hay, daughter of Gilbert Hay, Lord Hay, first Constable of that family. The manuscript referred to observes, that, "The king gave him the lands of the forest of Drum, and he himself having carried a private coat of arms whilst he was concealed under the name of the Earl of Carrick; he likewise gave him that, with permission for him and his descendants forever, to bear it as their armorial bearing, with this motto, "*sub sole, sub umbra virens*," alluding to the family's great fidelity to him in his troubles. The badge or bearing consists of three holly leaves banded *gules*, on a shield *argent*." The history relates the vicissitudes which befell this family with much minuteness and records their alliances with many of the most distinguished families of the kingdom: Abernethy, Forbes, Ogilvie, Douglas, Leslie, Dundas, &c., &c. There were several families of consideration which sprung from these alliances, among which are named the Irvines of King Caussie, Cutts, Glassil, Easterelane, Cornybaugh, Murthil, and Astainford, all of which estates were in the north-eastern counties of Scotland. During the civil wars they suffered severely in property, and have since lost much of their former influence, although still retaining a position of the highest respectability among the gentry of that part of Scotland.

The first of the family who settled in America was William Irving, the son of Magnus Irving, who was born in 1731, and who on coming to this country in 1763, altered the orthography of the family name, changing the final letter from *e* to *g*, to accord with the English usage. He was married at Falmouth, England, in 1761, to Sarah, daughter of John Sanders, Esq., of Falmouth, England. This gentleman was a very successful and highly respected merchant of the city of New York, commanding universal esteem from his probity. He died in the year 1807, leaving the following issue, I. William, "a merchant of the city of New York. He was distinguished as a gentleman of literary taste, and in 1812 became a member of Congress. He was concerned with his brother, Washington Irving, and Mr. J. K. Paulding in writing for Salmagundi:" b. 1766, d. 1821. He mar. Julia Paulding of Tarrytown, W. C. C., and left issue, 1. Lewis Graham, mar. — Hale, and had Lewis and Charles. 2. Rev. Wil-

liam Sanders of the Prot. Epis. Ch. d. s. p. 1823. 3. Oscar, late of Tarrytown, mar. 1st, Miss Dayton, 2d, Eliza, widow of Mr. Romayn. 4. Pierre Mouro, counsellor-at-law, N. Y., mar. 1st, Miss Berdau, and 2d, his cousin Helen, da. of General Richard Dodge. 5. Henry Ogden of Tarrytown. 6. Julia, mar. M. H. Grinnel, Esq., of New York. II. Anne, b. 1770, mar. General Richard Dodge of Johnstown, Montgomery Co.; she died A.D. 1808. III. Peter Irving, M.D., of Tarrytown, b. in N. Y., 1772, d. 1837, interred at Greenburgh. IV. Catharine Rodgers, b. 1774, mar. Daniel Paris, Esq., son of the late Colonel Isaac Paris. V. Ebenezer of Tarrytown, b. 1776, mar. Elizabeth Kip, (who died in 1827,) a descendant of the old Dutch family of that name in the city of N. Y. Their children are, 1. Pierre Paris, a clergyman of the Protestant Episcopal Church, mar. Anna, da. of John Deur, Esq., a grandson of the late Major General William Alexander, (Lord Sterling,) and has issue, Leslie, Alexander Duer, Anna, &c. 2. Edgar, mar. Amanda, da. of Thomas Tenant, Esq., of Baltimore, and has issue, Washington. 3. Theodore, a professor in Geneva College, mar. Jane, da. of the late Hon. Jacob Sutherland. 4. Sanders, mar. Julia, da. of John A. Granger, Esq., of Canandaigua. 5. William. 6. Washington, and several das., yet unmar. VI. John Treat, b. 1778, educated at Columbia College, a member of the bar, and for many years before his death, which took place in 1838, first judge of the city and county of New York. He mar. a da. of the late Hon. Gabriel Furman, and left issue, 1, Gabriel, mar. Miss Eckford; 2, William, an officer in the U. S. N., now deceased; 3, John Treat, mar. a da. of Abraham Schermerhorn, Esq.; 4, Abby, mar. Henry Van Wart, junior, Esq., of Birmingham, England; 5, George. (VII.), Sarah, b. 1780, mar. Henry Van Wart, sen., Esq., of Tarrytown, Westchester County, for the last forty years a resident of England. (VIII.), Washington Irving of Tarrytown. *Arms*, arg. three bunches of holly leaves, three leaves in each bunch, vert, tied gu, the strings floatant. *Crest*, an arm, couped above the wrist, in armour, ppr. lying fessewise, holding in the gauntlet a bunch of holly, as in the arms.

KIP, OF NEW CASTLE.—Jacobus Kip, a native of Holland, emigrated from that country to New Amsterdam, with his parents, about 1'45. He was b. A. D. 1631, and mar. (March 8, 1654,) Maria de la Montague. She was b. at sea, off the island of Madeira, Jan. 26, 1737. *Jacobus* left issue, *Johannes*, b. Feb. 3, 1655; *Jacobus*, b. Oct. 14, 1656, mar. Catharine de Hart; *Abraham*, b. Dec. 21, 1658; *Jesse*, b. Dec. 16th, 1660; *Rachel*, b. Jan. 7, 1664, mar. William Teller; *Maria*, b. Dec. 2, 1666; *Hendricus*, b. Jan. 12, 1668; *Catharine*, b. Jan. 25, 1671, mar. Hans Kiersted; *Petrus*, b. April 25, 1674; *Benjamin*, b. Aug. 6, 1678, d. A. D. 1702; and *Samuel*, b. Nov. 4, 1682. *Johannes*, eldest son of Jacobus, mar. Sept. 4, 1682, Catharine, da. of William Hans Kiersted, grand da. of Annetje Jans Bogardus. Their children were 1, Maria, b. Sept. 13, 1686; 2, Sarah, b. Nov. 19, 1688; 3, Hans, b. Oct. 5, 1690; 4, Johannes, b. Jan. 31, 1694; 5, Catharine, b. Oct. 16, 1698; 6, Henricus, b. Oct. 20, 1700; 7, Benjamin and Bladina, twins, b. March 21, 1703; Benjamin, 4th son of Johannes, removed into Westchester County, where he purchased a farm of 400 acres. He was a Justice of the Peace under the Colonial Government, d. May 24, 1782, at Westchester, mar. Dorothy Davenport; she d. Sept. 3, 1807. Benjamin left issue, (I.), Mary, b. Sept. 18, 1734, mar. Robert Runnells. (II.), William,



b. June 28, 1736, d. young. (III.), Elizabeth, b. April 9, 1738, mar. John Powell. (IV.), Jesse, b. Feb. 23, 1740, ob. Jan. 1, 1780, mar. Ann, da. of Samuel Haight, she was b. April 18, 1745. They left six sons and two da. First, *Benjamin*. Second, *Gilbert*, mar. Hannah, da. of John Searles, b. Sept. 4, 1767. Third, *John*, b. April 27, 1768, mar. Anna, da. of Samuel Quinby, and had four sons, and four da., viz., Jesse, Sophia, Quinby, mar. Corneia Halsted; Jane, Moses, mar. Martha Worden; Mary Ann, mar. William Halstead, of New York; Leonard B., and Catharine. Fourth, *Phæbe*, b. Feb. 26, 1770, mar. Abel Underhill. Fifth, *Caleb*, b. October. 23, 1771, mar. Griffeny, da. of Jacob W. Acker, and had four sons and one da. viz., Hiram, d. May 27, 1835, mar. Miss Harkwell, Solomon of the firm of Kip & Brown, New York, mar. Esther Conway, and had Griffeny, Oscar, Amanda, Warren, and Celia; Charles T., mar. Agnes Paxton, Rebecca Ann, mar. 1st, Conrad Gaynor; 2nd, Francis Sniffen, of New York, d. July 13, 1843; Elias S., mar. Elizabeth Lacy, and left Caleb. Elizabeth, wife of Francis, d. Oct. 24, 1844. *Miriam*, b. Oct. 4, 1773. Seventh, *James*, b. March. 9, 1777, mar. Abigail, da. of Sutton Reynolds; and had Reuben, mar. Maria Fowler, Eden, Miriam, and Ezra. The latter mar. Margaret Ann, da. of Seth Whitney; and had Seth, Elbert, and James. Eighth, *Jesse*, of Somerstown, b. May 25, 1780, mar. 1, Elizabeth, da. of Abel Smith, and left one da. Phæbe, who mar. Wilson Brown of N. J. Jesse, mar. 2nd, Sarah Hunt, da. of Capt. Stephen, and had two sons and three da., viz., Elizabeth H., mar. Jesse Cole of Indiana. William, mar. Adelaide Gowdy, Benjamin K., Margaret Ann, mar. Thomas Russel, and Sally Ann. (V.), Abraham, third son of Benjamin, b. March 22, 1743, mar. Phæbe, da. of Samuel Haight. They had 1st. Samuel, mar. Elizabeth Cipher, and had Abraham and Walter; 2nd. Abraham, who mar. Catharine, da. of Samuel Quinby, and left Reuben, Ann, Phæbe, Mary, Josiah, Jane, and Abraham. (VI.), Jacobus, b. Feb. 28, 1745, d. young. (VII.), Sarah, b. Sept. 20, 1746, mar. James Weeks. (VIII.), William, b. Dec. 1748, mar. Mary Merritt, and left Isaac, who mar. Mary, da. of Joseph Washburn; Sarah, mar. John Requa; Prudence, mar. John Sarles; Dorothy, mar. Gilbert Baker; Thomas. mar. Amy, da. of Isaac Conklin; Martha, mar. Moses Marshall; Abigail, mar. James Washburn; Benjamin, jun., mar. Phæbe, da. of Isaac Conklin; and left, Conklin, jun., Charles, Mary Ann, Rebecca, Sarah, Charlotte, and Aaron. Ann Kip, sixth da. of William and Mary, mar. Joseph Tompkins. Tamar, the youngest, mar. Absalom Underhill. (IX.), James, b. April 6, 1751, mar. Zipporah Carpenter, and had John of Canada, who mar. Ruth Carpenter, da. of Caleb, Daniel, Elizabeth, mar. William Green, and Charlotte, who mar. Samuel Hewlett of Dutchess Co. (X.), Samuel, b. dec. 16, 1753, mar. Freelove Totten, and left one son and three da., viz., Freelove, mar. Silas Arnold; Samuel who mar. Tamar Thorn, and had two sons, Stephen and Benjamin; Sarah and Lydia. (XI.), Thomas, b. July 14, 1756, d. Sept. 1, 1833, mar. Abigail Hatfield and had three sons and three da., viz., Mary, mar. Stephen Kingsland, of N. Y., Isaac, *Benjamin William*, Dorothy, and Jane. (XII.), Mary, b. Feb. 14, 1761, ob. s. p.

KEELERS OF NORTH SALEM.—Samuel Keeler, emigrated from Devonshire, England, and settled on Long Island and called the place Cow Bay; and left



Timothy who had Jeremiah, who left two sons, Zebediah and Job. The eldest had Job of North Salem. Nathan, ditto, Jeremiah, ditto. A da, mar. — Lobdell. A da. mar. — Brush, and a da. mar. — Smith.

LEE OF YORKTOWN.—This family, supposed to have been a younger branch of the Lee's of Lee-Magna, Kent, England, settled in Nottingham at an early period. *William Lee* emigrated from Nottingham to America in 1675, d. 1724, mar. Mary Marvin, and left three sons and seven da. His sons were, Thomas of Long Island, d. s. p.; Joseph of Long Island, and Richard, who entered the French military service in Canada, d. s. p. Joseph, second son of William, had (I.), Joseph of Yorktown, d. æt. 77; and left, 1, William, d. æt. 50; 2, Joseph, d. æt. 50; 3, Abigail, d. æt. 40; 4, Hon. Elijah, d. æt. 78, mar. 1st, — Conklin; 2d, — Brown; 3d, — Brown; 4th, — Williamson; 5, Enos, d. æt. 70; 6, Anne, mar. Capt. Saml. Haight; she d. æt. 70; 7, Hannah, mar. James Brewer, M. D., she d. æt. 70; 8, Phœbe, d. æt. 70, mar. Daniel Horton; 9, Elizabeth, d. æt. 60, mar. Joseph Ingersoll; 10, Sarah, d. æt. 20. (II.), Thomas of Woodbridge, Cortlandt's Manor, d. æt. 80; left, 1, David, d. æt. 90, mar. — Young; 2, Peter of Ohio, d. æt. 80; 3, Paul, d. æt. 70; 4, Israel of Orange Co., d. æt. 80; 5, Philip, also of Orange, Co., d. æt. 74; 6, William of New Jersey, d. æt. 80; 7, Thomas, also of New Jersey; 8, Hannah, d. s. p.; 9, Phœbe, d. s. p. (III.), John removed from Long Island to Yorktown, W. C. Co., in 1750, b. 1726, d. March 12, 1816, mar. Sarah Perine, she d. July 31, 1796, æt. 74. Their children were, 1, Thomas, d. æt. 40, s. p.; 2, John of New Jersey, d. æt. 84; 3, Sarah, d. æt. 65, mar. John Horton; 4, Henry, d. æt. 90, s. p.; 5, Hannah, d. æt. 87, s. p.; 6, Margaret, d. æt. 77, mar. Jonas Williams; 7, Abigail, d. æt. 60, mar. David Knapp; 8, Phœbe, d. æt. 78, mar. Francis Colgrove; 9, Dinah, still living æt. 85, mar. Thaddeus Rockwell; 10, Robert of Yorktown, still living æt. 81. (IV.), Phœbe, d. æt. 84, mar. 1744, Dennis Coombs. (V.), Anna, d. æt. 80, mar. — Martin. (VI.), Ruth, d. æt. 80, mar. Job Wright. (VII.), Elizabeth, d. æt. 80, mar. — Martineau. (VIII.), Sarah, d. æt. 60. (IX.), Mary, d. æt. 64. (X.), Abigail, d. æt. 18. *Arms*.—Az. on a fesse, between two fillets, or, three leopard's heads, gu. *Crest*.—A demi Moor ppr. vested gu. rimmed round the collar with two bars or, tied round the waist with a ribbon ar, wreathed about the head ar. and gu. holding in his dexter hand a gem-ring of the third.

LE COMTE, OR LE COUNT, OF NEW ROCHELLE.—The ancestors of the Le Count's were Protestants, inhabitants of La Rochelle, in France. They were of honorable and noble descent, (as the name implies), and there possessed considerable estates. On the revocation of the Edict of Nantes, Guillaume Le Comte fled from France to England, and soon after came to America. Guillaume mar. Marguerita —, and had Guillaume, Peter, and Esther. Guillaume, junior, mar. Annette Martha —, and left two sons, Francis and Josiah. Francis, the eldest, had, (I.), Paul, d. in 1815, s. p. (II.), Josias, mar. Anne Riché and John of New York, and Thomas of ditto. (III.), John, mar. Hannah Ferris, and left, 1, Samuel; 2, Hannah; 3, Eleanor. (IV.), Joseph, mar. Hannah Raymond, and had, 1, Platt; 2, Francis; 3, Joseph; 4, Elizabeth. Josiah, second son of 2d

<sup>a</sup> Elizabeth Lee, sister of the above mentioned William, bequeathed her estate in England to the heirs general.

Guillaume, mar. 1st, Susannah Solice, by whom he had 3 children, viz., Peter, who it seems was lost at sea; 2nd, John, who mar. Sarah Badeau; and 3rd, Mary, who mar. Nathaniel Lawrence. John and Sarah had offspring, 1st, Capt. Josiah of N. Rochelle, who mar. Phebe Morgan of Eastchester; 2nd, Susan, died young; 3rd, Elizabeth, who mar. Wm. Le Count of N. Rochelle; 4th, Zipparah, who mar. Rodman Bertine; 5th, Mirriam, who mar. Benjamin Yates of N. York city; 6th, Elias, d. a young man; 7th, William, who mar. Hartwell of N. Y.; 8th, Walter, who d. a young man; 9th, Sarah A., who mar. L. J. Coutant of Eastchester; 10th, John, yet unmarried. Josiah, 2nd son of 2nd Guillaume, as above stated, mar. for his 2nd wife Mary Angevine, who lived to be 105 years old. They had no children.

LE FEVRE OF NEW ROCHELLE.—*Peter Le Fevre*, a French Protestant refugee, b. at Havre de Grace, fled from France to St. Domingo, W. I., and left a son John, b. 1753, d. 1837, who removed from St. Domingo to New Rochelle. John mar. Susannah Coutant, da. of Isaac: she d. 1802. Their children are, 1, Peter E., mar. Mary Mount; 2, Prosper, mar. Palmer; 3, Rev. John W.; 4, Benjamin, mar. 1st Tool, 2nd Wall; 5, Drake; 6, Harriet, mar. Deveau; 7, Julian, mar. Foster.

LENT OF COURTLAND.—*Ryck Abrahamsen Lent*, proprietor of Ryck's Patent left Hercules, who d. about 1765. Hercules had, (I.), Jacob. (II.), Hendrick, the father of David. (III.), Abraham. (IV.), John Lent, who left John, Hercules, present proprietor of the homestead, and Lewis of Cortlandtown. (V.), Rachel mar. James Lamb. (VI.), Catharine mar. Hendricke de Rondle. (VII.), Elizabeth.

LE ROUX OF NEW ROCHELLE.—The family of Le Roux was among the French Huguenots that fled from France to America. *Charles Le Roux*, a native of France, left Charles and others. Catharine, a da. of Charles, junior, mar. Thomas Ludlow, from whom the Ludlows descend.

LISPENARD OF NEW ROCHELLE.—The Lispenard family were of French extraction, but have been in this country from an early period. Antoine or Anthony Lispenard was born in France, and emigrated to America about the year 1681 with the Huguenots. He settled at New Rochelle when the town was first purchased by his countrymen, about the year 1691.

The will of Antoine Lispenard of New Rochelle is dated July 5th, 1696, and is executed at New York. It was proved before Benjamin Fletcher, General and Governor-in-Chief of the Province of New York, etc., and is recorded in liber 5, of wills, page 161 in the Surrogates office, New York, July 29th, 1696. He gives his estate to his wife, Abigail, and to his children, Anthony, Margaret, and Abigail. This estate was the present Davenport's neck—New Rochelle.

1705, Nov. 3rd, Anthony Lispenard (the son) mar. Elizabeth, daughter of Leonard de Klyn of New York, (see Valentine's Manual for 1862.) Anthony Lispenard, last mentioned, d. in the latter part of the year 1758 at an advanced age. His wife d. before him. He left 5 children, viz.: Leonard, David, Magdalena, Abigail, Mary, and three grand-children, daughters of his deceased son Anthony (see Book of New York Marriages, in Society Library). His will is dated Aug.

16, 1755, was proved Jan. 3, 1759, and recorded in liber 21 of wills, page 171, in the office of the Surrogate in the City of New York.

Leonard Lispenard, the eldest son of Anthony, removed from New Rochelle to the City of New York before the death of his father, as he was the Assistant Alderman of the North Ward from 1750 to 1755, and Alderman of the same from 1756 to 1762. He mar. Elsie Rutgers, the daughter of Anthony Rutgers, of the Kalck Hoak. The residence of Mr. Rutgers was the site of the *present* Hospital grounds, where he lived for many years. Leonard Lispenard became a very prominent citizen of New York, and for a period of fifty years was constantly holding offices of honor and trust.

In 1765 he was a delegate to the first Congress of the American colonies, held in New York on the 7th Oct., 1765, and represented the colony of New York with Robert B. Livingston, Philip Livingston, John Cruger, and William Bayard. From 1759 to 1768 he was a representative in the colonial General Assembly of N. Y. He was also a member of the Provincial Convention which met in New York on the 20th April, 1775; and on the 23d of May, 1775, was a deputy in the 1st Provincial Congress of New York. During this period he was one of the active sons of liberty. After the death of his father-in-law, Mr. Anthony Rutgers, in 1746, he became the proprietor of that portion of the Ruiger estate, afterwards known as the Lispenard Meadows, then in the outskirts of the city, where he built a handsome mansion and resided until his death, on the 14th of February, 1790.

The following notice of his death appears in the *N. Y. Journal and Weekly Register* for Feb. 18th, 1790: "Died on Sunday last, at his seat near this city, greatly lamented, Leonard Lispenard, Esq." He was buried in his vault in the rear of Trinity church, New York, near the south-west corner of the present church, where there is a white marble slab bearing his name. Leonard Lispenard had three children by his wife Elsie Rutgers, viz.: Anthony, Leonard, and Cornelia. Cornelia Lispenard mar. Thomas Marsten, Feb. 7th, 1759. Their daughter, Alice Marsten, mar. Francis B. Winthrop, April 22, 1779. They had sons, H. R. Winthrop and F. B. Winthrop. The three streets which were cut through the old Lispenard Meadows in New York—Lispenard, Leonard, and Anthony (now Worth)—derive their names from the Lispenard family. The name is now believed to be extinct.

LOCKWOOD, OF POUNDRIDGE.—Robert, came from England, 1630, and by wife Susanna had, Jonathan, b. Sep. 10, 1634; Deborah, b. Oct. 12, 1636; Joseph, b. Aug. 6, 1638; Daniel, b. March 25, 1640; Ephraim, b. Dec. 1, 1641; Gershom, b. Sep. 6, 1643: all b. in Watertown, Mass.; and John, Abigail, Sarah, and Mary, b. in Fairfield, Ct. Jonathan, son of Robert and Susanna, b. in Watertown, Mass., Sep. 10, 1634, by wife Mary had children (third generation), Jonathan, Robert, Gershom, Joseph, and John. Joseph, (1st), son of Jonathan and Mary, b. in Stamford, Ct., 1666, removed to Poundridge in 1743, d. 1750, at. 84 years. Mar., May 19, 1698, Elizabeth Ayres, who d. Dec. 16, 1715. Mar., Aug. 10, 1716, Margery Webb, b. Oct. 4, 1683, d. Jan. 2, 1736 or 1737, da. of James and Hannah (Scofield) Webb. First wife's children (fourth generation), 1, Joseph (2nd), b. March 15, 1699, mar. Sarah Hoyt. 2, Hannah, b. March 24, 1701, mar. David Dan. 3, John, b. Sep. 18, 1703, mar. Sarah Scofield. 4, Nathaniel, b. April 1, 1706, d. young. 5, Elizabeth, b. May



15. 1708. mar. Job Hoyt. 6. Israel, b. June 4, 1710, mar. Susanna Smith. 7. Mary, mar. James Jump. 8. Reuben, b. Dec. 15, 1715, mar. 1st, Sarah Cramp; 2nd, Elizabeth Stevens. Second wife's children: 9. Nathaniel, b. May 20, 1717, mar. — Patchin. 10. Nathan, b. March 25, 1719, d. March 25, 1731. 11. James, b. July 15, 1722, mar. Mary Norton. Joseph (2nd), son of Joseph (1st) and Elizabeth Ayres, his wife, b. in Stamford, March 15, 1699, removed with his father to Poundridge, 1743, where he d. June 15, 1757, at. 58 years. Mar. Sarah, da. of Joshua Hoyt, one of the proprietors of the Stamford Patent granted in 1685; his name is spelled "*Hoyt*" in the Patent. She was b. in 1700, and d. 1790. Had children (fifth generation), 1. Eliakim, b. 1730, d. 1737. 2. Joseph (3rd), known as Captain Lockwood, d. March 15, 1792, mar. Hannah Close. 3. Elizabeth, mar. Nathaniel Waring. 4. Gilbert, d. in 1740, at. about 2 or 3 years. 5. Ebenezer, known as Major Lockwood, b. in Stamford March 31, 1737, d. in Poundridge July 29, 1821, mar. Hannah Smith. 6. Rachel, mar. Ebenezer Wood of Salem. 7. Mercy, mar. David Dan. 8. Hezekiah, d. at. about 7 years. 9. Prudence, mar. Elijah Weed. Joseph (3rd), known as Captain Lockwood, son of Joseph (2nd) and Sarah Hoyt, his wife, b. in Stamford, d. in Poundridge March 15, 1792, at. 61 years. Mar. Hannah, da. of Solomon Close of North Salem, N. Y. She mar. a second husband, Captain James Richards of New Canaan. The children of Joseph and Hannah were (sixth generation), 1. Hannah, mar. Captain Philo Lewis of Patterson. 2. Sarah, d. in Poundridge Sep. 7, 1838, in her 77th year; mar. Thaddeus Hoyt of Stamford. 3. Joseph (4th), b. Dec. 3, 1764, d. in Poundridge Oct. 25, 1799; mar. Mary Drake. 4. Solomon, b. Aug. 28, 1766, d. March 9, 1841; mar. Mary Close. 5. Prudence, d. in Poundridge Dec. 28, 1850, in her 83rd year; mar. John Smith of Poundridge; he d. Dec. 14, 1809, at. 43. 6. Mindwell, deceased. 7. Mercy, mar. Jotham Waring. 8. Matilda, d. in childhood. 9. Matilda, mar. Seth S. Kellogg of New Canaan. 10. Nancy, mar. Henry S. Jones, and resided at Wappingers Falls, N. Y. Joseph (4th), son of Captain Joseph (3rd) and Hannah Close, b. in Poundridge Dec. 3, 1764, d. Oct. 25, 1799. Their children were (seventh generation), 1. Samuel Drake, b. in Poundridge Aug. 2, 1789, d. in Batavia, Ill., April 23, 1874; was Judge of Supreme Court, Ill.; mar. Mary V. S. Nash. 2. Jesse Close, b. in Poundridge Jan. 7, 1791, removed to McLeansboro, Illinois, about 1820, where he d. June 15, 1847; mar. Elsa R. Bartholomew. 3. Rebecca Ann, b. March 25, 1792, d. June 5, 1827; mar. Jacob Potts of Victoria, Canada. 4. Cornelius, b. Nov., 1793, d. Oct. 23, 1799. Solomon, son of Captain Joseph (3rd) and Hannah Close, b. in Poundridge Aug. 28, 1766, d. in Poundridge March 9, 1841. Mar. Mary, da. of Ode Close of Greenwich, Ct. She was b. April 16, 1770, d. May 6, 1848. Their children were (seventh generation), 1. Bethia, b. June 21, 1791, d. May 14, 1803; mar. Horatio Lockwood. 2. Ode, b. May 4, 1793, d. Aug. 15, 1873; mar. Maria, da. of Justus Barnum. 3. Leander, b. Nov. 21, 1794, d. March 22, 1795. 4. Joseph, b. Sept. 23, 1796, d. Feb. 28, 1820; mar. Amelia L'Autremont. 5. Hannah, b. March 9, 1798, d. Feb. 21, 1868. 6. William, b. Sep. 14, 1800. 7. Catherine Mary, b. Oct. 13, 1802; mar. John Silliman. 8. Sarah Elizabeth, b. Sept. 10, 1805; mar. Francis N. Murray. 9. Nancy, b. Nov. 4, 1807, d. Nov., 1807. 10. Solomon, b. Sep. 5, 1810, d. Sep. 22, 1811. Ode, son of Solomon and Mary (Close), b. in Poundridge May 4, 1793, d. in New York Aug. 15, 1873. Mar., July 11, 1820, Maria, da. of Justus Barnum of



Danbury, Ct. She was b. July 1, 1796, and d. in New York Jan. 20, 1851. Their children were (eighth generation), 1, Joseph Barnum, b. in Jamaica, N. Y., Oct. 27, 1822; mar. Caroline Monroe Putnam. 2, Mary Jane, b. in New York Dec. 5, 1825, d. in Catskill, N. Y., July 24, 1873. 3, William Christmas, b. in New York May 14, 1830, d. in Poundridge Aug. 6, 1834. 4, Caroline, and her twin sister, Angeline, b. in New York Feb. 13, 1832, Joseph Barnum, son of Odle and Maria (Barnum), was b. in Jamaica, Long Island, Oct. 27, 1822. Mar., Dec. 3, 1856, Caroline Monroe, da. of Tarrant and Cornelia J. (Van Nortwick) Putnam of New York city. She was b. Oct. 27, 1832. They reside in New York. Their children are (ninth generation), 1, Joseph Barnum, jr., b. June 7, 1858. 2, Tarrant Putnam, b. Nov. 26, 1862, d. June 28, 1864. 3, Cornelia Putnam, b. July 8, 1866. 4, Maria Louise, b. May 4, 1870. William, son of Solomon and Mary (Close), b. in Poundridge Sep. 14, 1800. Removed to Bedford, 1860, where he now resides. Dec. 6, 1826, mar. Maria, da. of Rev. Daniel and Anna Crocker. She d. Dec. 14, 1843. April 29, 1847, mar. Jane, da. of Joshua and Reuhama Raymond. She d. Jan. 25, 1858. Jan. 2, 1860, mar. Rebecca, da. of Uriah and Sarah Raymond. She d. Sep. 9, 1875. First wife's children (eighth generation), 1, Emily Crocker, b. in Poundridge Oct. 14, 1827, d. in Waverly, Ill., Aug. 6, 1852. 2, William Tompkins, b. in Poundridge Feb. 2, 1830. Second wife's children, 3, Theodore Raymond, b. Jan. 16, 1848. 4, Electa Raymond, b. Feb. 15, 1850. William Tompkins, son of William and Maria (Crocker), was b. in Poundridge Feb. 2, 1830. Mar., Feb. 11, 1857, Mary Eliza, da. of John and Sarah Vanderbilt of Williamsburg, N. Y. She was b. Nov. 2, 1836. William T. is Secretary of Great Western Insurance Co. of New York. Resides at Tarrytown. Their children are (ninth generation), 1, Maria Louisa, b. in New York Nov. 9, 1857, d. in Tarrytown Feb. 10, 1876. 2, Mary Vanderbilt, b. in Brooklyn, N. Y., Sep. 23, 1859. 3, Emily Crocker, b. in New York Dec. 21, 1861. 4, Carrie Tompkins, b. in New York April 29, 1865. 5, William Tompkins, b. in Tarrytown April 17, 1867. 6, Nellie McCutcheon, b. in Tarrytown Dec. 29, 1868. 7, Edith Blanch, b. in Tarrytown Nov. 3, 1871. 8, Richard Lathers, b. in Tarrytown Nov. 4, 1877. Ebenezer, known through the Revolutionary War as Major Lockwood, son of Joseph (2nd) and Sarah (Hoyt), was b. in Stamford, Ct., March 31, 1737, d. in Poundridge July 29, 1821. Mar., Feb. 16, 1761, Hannah Smith of Stamford, who d. May 3, 1787, æt. 45 years. Major Ebenezer mar. a second wife, Sarah Waring, widow of Doctor Wilson. She d. March 3, 1821, æt. 67 years. All his children were by his first wife (sixth generation), 1, Betsey, b. April 4, 1762, d. in Poundridge Feb. 14, 1848; mar., Feb. 16, 1777, Alsop Hunt, who d. June 16, 1816. 2, Ruhamah, b. Jan. 22, 1765, d. Oct. 3, 1825; mar. about the year 1786 to Samuel Read; he d. at Woodbridge, N. J., Oct. 1834. 3, Hannah, b. April 8, 1768, d. Jan. 8, 1841; mar. David Osborn, who d. Feb. 17, 1834. 4, Mary, b. Nov. 21, 1769, d. about May 1, 1828; mar. Partridge Thatcher, who d. Sep. 8, 1845. 5, Ebenezer, b. Oct. 27, 1771, d. July 5, 1811; mar. Sarah Olmstead, who d. in 1845. 6, Clarissa, b. Dec. 29, 1773; mar. 1st. Solomon Cox, d. about the year 1808; 2nd. Jesse Richards of New Canaan, who d. Dec., 1840. 7, Ezra, b. June 27, 1777, d. May 29, 1853; mar. Sally Weed. 8, Horatio, b. in Ridgefield, Ct., Sep. 6, 1779, d. in Poundridge Nov. 5, 1853; mar. Berthia, da. of Solomon Lockwood. 9, Lewis, b. Dec. 18, 1783, licensed as attorney-at-law 1806, d. March 9, 1816. Ebenezer, jr., son of Major Ebenezer and Hannah

(Smith), b. Oct. 27, 1771, d. July 5, 1811; mar. Sarah Olmsted, who d. in 1845. Their children were (seventh generation), 1, Ebenezer, b. May, 13, 1791. 2, Eliza, b. May 25, 1793. 3, Ruhama, b. April 13, 1795. 4, Caroline, b. Jan. 23, 1797. 5, Nathan Olmsted, b. Jan. 2, 1799. 6, Thomas, b. Jan. 8, 1801. 7, George, b. Dec. 13, 1802. 8, Amy, b. Jan. 6, 1805. 9, Sarah Ambler, b. Feb. 9, 1807. 10, Hannah, b. July 6, 1809. 11, Clarissa, b. Dec. 4, 1811. Ezra, son of Major Ebenezer and Hannah (Smith), was b. June 27, 1777, d. May 29, 1853. Mar. Sally Weed, b. Aug. 14, 1779, d. Jan. 30, 1857. He was Member of Assembly in 1806, and Surrogate of Westchester County in 1811; he took the official oath as Judge of the Court of Common Pleas April 3, 1833, and again Feb. 17, 1840, having received the last appointment from Martin Van Buren, the then Governor of the State of New York. Their children were (seventh generation), 1, Albert, b. Jan. 23, 1799, d. Jan. 5, 1868. 2, Lewis, b. Sep. 5, 1804, d. Feb. 11, 1870. Horatio, son of Major Ebenezer and Hannah (Smith), was b. in Ridgefield, Ct., Sep. 6, 1779, the year his father sought a temporary home in Ridgefield, after the destruction by British troops of his residence in Poundridge; d. in Poundridge Nov. 5, 1853. Mar. Bethia, eldest da. of his cousin Solomon Lockwood; she was b. June 21, 1791, and d. May 14, 1863. Horatio represented his district in the Assembly of the State of New York in the years 18'3, '34, '35, '36, '41 and '42. Children were (seventh generation), 1, Mary, mar. Horace Reynolds. 2, Jane, d., mar. Nelson Raymond. 3, Sophia, d., mar. Philo Lockwood of Cayuga Co., N. Y. 4, Alsop Hunt, b. Sep. 17, 1814, d. Dec. 8, 1874; mar. Mary E. Reynolds. 5, Amelia D'Autremont, mar. James Betts of Stamford, Ct. 6, Betsey, d. young. 7, Solomon Read, d. Jan. 16, 1852. 8, Catharine, mar. LeGrand Keeler of Wilton, Ct. Alsop Hunt, son of Horatio and Bethia, b. in Poundridge Sep. 17, 1814, d. in New York Dec. 8, 1874. Mar., Nov. 22, 1836, Mary E., da. of Gideon Reynolds of Cross River, N. Y. Alsop H. was Sheriff of Westchester County for the term of three years, commencing January 1, 1853; he was also Member of Assembly in 1864 and '65. Their children are (eighth generation), 1, Joseph A., b. Nov. 5, 1847. 2, James Betts, b. July 18, 1849. 3, Dewitt Clinton, b. July 4, 1851. 4, Horatio, b. July 8, 1853, d. Sep. 4, 1877. James Betts, son of Alsop Hunt and Mary E. (Reynolds), b. in Poundridge July 18, 1849, mar., Oct. 31, 1877, Cora H. Martin. Resides in White Plains. Counsellor-at-law, office in New York. One child (ninth generation), Horatio, b. Jan. 29, 1879.

LYON OF NORTH CASTLE.—The first emigrants of this family, (which claims to be of Scottish origin,) settled in Massachusetts. The name of *John Lyon* occurs as early as 1648. *Peter Lyon* was admitted freeman in 1649. *William of Roxbury*, member of the artillery company, was a freeman of that place, and d. A. D. 1692. His son Joseph was b. 1654. John descended from the above, removed to Rye about 1719. His son John had four sons. (I.), Capt. Roger d. May 13, 1797; mar. Mary Wilson, of Kings' street, Rye; she died 19th May, 1813, æt. 83. Their children were, 1, Major Samuel of the Continental army, mar. Mary Lounsbury, and left Samuel, Esq., of North Castle, who married Rosalinda Fowler; the latter d. Dec. 19, 1844; 2, Roger; 3, Justus or Jesse, who left John of Bedford; 4, Gilbert of the Continental army had Jesse of Eastchester; 5, Daniel; 6, Joseph; 7, Gloriamma mar. Andrew Sniffen; 8, Sarah mar. William Wright. (II.) John. (III.), Samuel. (IV.), James, proprietor of Byram Point, left 1,

Daniel: 2, David; 3, Benjamin; 4, Woolsey; 5, James. Daniel, eldest son of James, had Lauretta, who mar. Mr. Brock, and Lavina, who mar. John Horton. Of this family was Peter Lyon, Esq., of North Castle, who had, (I.), Jonathan of New York. (II.), James of Tarrytown, the father of William P. Lyon, Esq., Principal of the Irving Institute, (III.), Samuel of Michigan. (IV.), Edward of Seneca Falls. (V.), Peter of New York. (VI.), Ann mar. William Britt. (VII.), Sarah mar. Abner Higgins. (VIII.), Phoebe mar. Harrison Palmer. (IX.), Mary mar. 1, John Tucker; 2, Benjamin Watson.

McKEEL OF YORKTOWN.—*Michael McKeel*, who was one of the earliest settlers of Yorktown, had sons Uriah, John and Isaac. The latter left issue Jesse, Jacob of Peekskill, Caleb of Scipio, New York, Joshua of Hector, Tompkins Co., N. Y., Isaac of Yorktown, and George of ditto.

MEAD OF GREENWICH AND LEWISBOROUGH.—*John Mead* emigrated from Greenwich, Kent Co., England, in the year 1642, and settled in the town of Greenwich, Fairfield, Connecticut. Of his two sons Joseph and John, the first d. young; the second (John) had eight sons and three da., viz: John, Joseph, Jonathan, Ebenezer, Benjamin, Nathaniel, David, Samuel, Susanna, Abigail and Mary. *Jonathan*, the third son of second John, left Elnathan, who had Elnathan; Ennice mar. J. Close and Deborah. Elnathan, son of Elnathan, had, (I.), Elnathan, who left Elnathan and Sarah. Elnathan, great grandson of first Elnathan, had 1, Hibbard; 2, Solomon, the father of William, Seth, Sarah, Tyler, Charles, Thomas and Solomon; 3, Tyler, who left Mans, Hetty, Abel and Floy. (II.), Henry. (III.), Abram had 1, Abram; 2, Esbon; 3, Jotham; 4, Enos; 5, Daniel; 6, Lemuel; 7, Isaac; 8, Job; 9, Zebulon; 10, Mansah mar. Electa Mead; 11, Eunice mar., 1st, Solomon Mead; 2nd, Benjamin Weed; 12, Ruth mar. Major Brown. (IV.), Stephen had 1, Stephen, who left Jane and Betsy; 2, Israel, who had James, Alfred, Alexander, Israel, Stephen, Lemuel, Hiram and Mary; 3, Edward, the father of Edward; 4, James, who had John Wolcott; 5, Amos; 6, Matthias; 7, Albert; 8, William; 9, Mary mar. Job Brown; 10, Eunice mar. Mr. Platt.

*Ebenezer*, fourth son of second John, left Ebenezer, Caleb; Sarah mar. Jonathan Hobby; Hannah mar. John Hobby; Jabez; David; Abigail mar. Isaac Holmes; Susannah mar. Moses Husted; Jemima mar. Moses Knapp. *Ebenezer*, the eldest son of second Ebenezer, mar. Mary Mead, and left, (I.), Ebenezer, whose children were, 1, Nancy; 2, Hannah; 3, Marriilda mar. T. Broughton; 4, Ebenezer, who had Ebenezer the father of William, Ebenezer, Maria, Theodore, &c.; 5, Hannah mar. T. Walker; 6, Jabez; 7, Amy mar. Epenetus Lockwood. (II.), Hannah mar. Elkanah Mead, and left Hannah, Sarah and Amos. (III.), Enoch d. Sept. 18, 1807, æt., 52, mar. Jemima Mead; she d. April 4, 1837, æt. 82; her children were, 1, Solomon, who mar.—Gilbert, and left Mary, Enoch, Gilbert, Laura and Thurza; 2, Alfred mar. Mary Brundage; 3, Thurza mar. Joseph Brundage; 4, Laura mar. Joel Todd; 5, Henry d. Dec. 10, 1811, æt. 11; 6, Rufus d. Sept. 15, 1799; 7, Nancy; 8, Sarah d. May 19, 1784. *Silas* of Quaker Ridge, Conn., second son of second Ebenezer, b. 1719, d. 1817, mar. Mary Mead; she was b. 1724, d. 1787. Their children were, (I.) Silas, b. 1748, d. 1813, mar. Sarah Mead, and left Sarah, Francis and Silas H.; the latter mar. Harriet Mead, and had Sarah, who mar.



Silas Savage, and Silas D., who mar. Emily L. Close. Silas D. has one da. Myrtilla M. (II.), Abner, b. 1750, d. 1810, s. p. (III.), Aaron mar. Sarah Mead, da. of Eliphalet, and left Aaron of Cross River, Lewisboro', mar. Miss Finch, Allen of Greenburgh mar. Mabel Todd, Amos of Cross River, Anna mar. Isaac Seely; Lucinda mar. Joseph Banks; Sarah, (Mrs. Hoyt,) Mary mar. Harvey Keeler. (IV.), Mary. (V.), Mary. (VI.), Calvin mar. Deborah Mead, da. of Julia Mead, and had 1, Leander of Quaker Ridge mar. Anna Mead; 2, Luther of Ohio mar. Alice Mead, and had Marcus, Will. M., Joseph, Thos. L. and Anna; 3, Theresa (Mrs. Palmer;) 4, Myrtilla; 5, Lisetta mar. Obadiah Peck; 6, Marcus mar. Harriett Sturges, and has Will, Elizabeth and Alice; 7, Rufus mar. Anna Waterbury, and has Lucinda, Harriet, Stephen, Catharine and Sarah: 8, Mary Jane; 9, Herman mar. Margaret West; has Marcus W; 10, Lucinda. Rev. *Abraham*, third son of second Ebenezer, d. æt. 22, *Jonas*, fourth son of second Ebenezer, b. 1723, d. 1783, mar. 1, Sarah Ferris. 2, Sarah Howe, and left 1, Solomon. (II.), Edmund, father of Solomon. (III.), Noah. (IV.), Mark, who had 1, Jonas mar. Abigail Mead, and left Isaac and Emeline; 2, Sylvester. (V.), Jonas had 1, Charles mar. Rachel Sackett, and left Sarah A. and Whitman S; 2, Hannah mar. Benj. Mead; 3, Mark; 4, Milo; 5, Sarah; 6, Sarah. Rev. *Solomon*, fifth son of second Ebenezer, removed from Greenwich to North Salem; first pastor of the Presbyterian Church in the latter place, A. D. 1752, d. Sept. 1812, mar. 1, Hannah Strong; 2, Hannah Clark, and left 1, Andrew, who mar. Miss Barton, and had Thomas, Benjamin, Strong, Alice, Lucy, Hannah and Maria; 2, Theodosia, (Mrs. Smith;) 3, Clark of Lewisboro' mar. — Gilbert and left Martin, Richard, Rufus, Sophia, Laura, Rhoda and Linus; 4, Martin of Lewisboro'.

*Deliverance*, sixth son of second Ebenezer, d. æt. 57, mar. Abigail Howe and had 1, Elizabeth, b. 1760, d. 1823, mar. Job Lyon; 2, Sarah, b. 1761, d. 1812, mar. Silas Mead; 3, Rachel, b. 1673, d. 1831, mar. Whitman Mead; 4, Hannah, b. 1765, mar. Joshua Mead, and left Solomon; 5, Jabez; 6, Robert, b. 1768, d. 1836, mar. Prudence Mead, left Edward; 7, Mary; 8, Huldah, mar. Zophar Mead; 9, Ephraim, b. 1775, mar. Zuba Mead, and had Mary, mar. W. Merritt; Huldah, mar. D. S. Mead; Thurza, Mithea, Jane, Isaac D., Elizabeth, and Ophelia; 10, Jabez, b. 1777, d. 1839, mar. Sarah Knapp, and left Julia, Belden, Mary E., and Will. K.; 11, Zenas, b. 1779, mar. Maria Leshlers, and had Abigail, mar. Jonas Mead. Lucretia, Deborah, Henry, Julia, Eliza and Lyman. *Amos*, seventh son of second Ebenezer, mar. Ruth Bush, she d. æt. 77; they had 1, Richard, mar. 1st, Sarah Mead; 2nd, Rachel Mead; he left Thomas, who mar. H. Seaman, and had Louisa, Thomas R., Seaman, Abigail R., and Elizabeth. The sisters of Thomas are Sophia, Elizabeth, mar. — Webb, and Sarah, mar. — Brush; 2, Thomas. *Hannah*, first da. of second Ebenezer, d. æt. 22. *Edmund*, eighth son of second Ebenezer, d. æt. 23. *Jabez*, ninth son of ditto, d. æt. 30. *Jared*, tenth son of ditto, mar. Lydia Smith, and had 1, Letta, mar. Ebenezer Mead; 2, Daniel, mar. Rachel Mead, and left Smith, Jared, Letta, L. Delia, Elizabeth, Adeline, Edwin, and S. Mervin; 3, Lydia, mar. — Lockwood; 4, Alma; 5, Hannah, mar. Jonas Mead; 6, Jared, mar. Anna Armstrong, and had Amzi Armstrong; 7, Alvin, mar. Eliza Peck, and left Ralph P., Warren B., Cornelia G., Melancton W., and Elvan C. *Abraham*,



eleventh son of the second Ebenezer, d. æt. 85, mar. Keziah Howe, and had, 1, Deborah; 2, Zophor, who mar. Huldah Mead, and left Abram, Amelia, Louisa, Oliver, Esther, Sarah, and Mary E.; 3, Isaac, mar. Clarinda Mead, and had Augustus; 4, Oliver; 5, Esther; 6, Lucy; 7, Lucy; 8, Lucy. Caleb, second son of first Ebenezer, the fourth son of second John, mar. and left, (I.), Elkanah, who had, 1, Sarah, mar. D. Husted; 2, Hannah, mar. B. Smith; 3, Amos, who left Elkanah, Stephen Waring, Catharine, Sarah, mar. B. Smith, Belcher, and Mary. (II.), Jonah, mar. 1st, Mary Mead; 2d, Rachel Husted; 3d, Hannah Mead. (III.), Abel, left Zadok, Benjamin, Phœbe, Lucy and Fanny. (IV.), Jemima. (V.), Deborah, mar. Jehiel Mead, and had 1, Deborah; 2, Jehiel, who left Lewis, Harriet, William, William, Mary, Mary Ann and Hanford. (VI.), Stephen. (VII.), Zadok. (VIII.), Rebecca. (IX.), Hannah. (X.) Mary, mar. Jabez Peck. (XI.), Caleb, had Rachel, Anne, Huldah, Hannah, Elizabeth, Caleb, Jemima, and Rebecca.

*Benjamin*, fifth son of second John, left a son Benjamin, who had, (I.), Benjamin, whose children were, 1, Mary; 2, Anna, mar. 1st, David Mead; 2nd, James Bailey; 3, Theodosia, mar. Edmund Mead; 4, Obadiah, engaged to Charity Mead, killed during the Revolution; 5, Phœbe, mar. Jehiel Mead. (II.), Thaddeus, who left 1, Edward Mead of Somers, mar. Miss Finch, and had Squire Mead, John, Elizabeth, mar. Henry Lade, Anne, mar. James Banks, Clarissa, mar. Mead Sutherland, Sarah, mar. David Horton, and Hannah; 2, Ebenezer, mar. Abigail Chapman, and had Harvey, mar. Amy Brown, Whitman, Solomon, mar. Nancy Ferris, and Edward; 3, Amaziah, mar. Miss Jessup, and had William and others; 4, Benjamin, left Solomon; 5, Sarah, mar. Stephen Sutherland; 6, Mary, mar. Noah Lyon; 7, Martha, mar. Andrew Quick; 8, Tamar, mar. Benjamin Jessup. (III.) Sylvanus, who had 1, Whitman, mar. Rachel Mead, and left Mary, who mar. John Sackett, Zophor, mar. Martha Seaman, and left Araminta, Mary E., and Amelia. *Whitman*, mar. Grace Corneil, and had Grace and Henrietta; 2, Platt, mar. Deborah Peck, and had Sackett, Sylvanus, Sarah, mar. John Robbins, Hannah, mar. Daniel Peck, Gideon, Nathan, and Harriet, mar. Bradley Redfield; 3, Gideon, mar. Mary Miller, and left Underhill, Mary, and Maria; 4, Asel, mar. Anne Mead, and had *Martin*, the father of Alva, Amaziah, John, and Asel; *Henry*, the father of William H., and David; *Levi*, who has Joseph; *Mary*, mar. — Bailey, and Hannah. (IV.), Gideon, left Gideon. (V.), Edward (VI.), William, who had, 1, William; 2, Abigail, 3, Anna, (VII.), Benjamin, left, 1, Margaret, mar. Hon. Nathan Rockwell; 2, Elizabeth, mar. J. Brown of Somers; 3, Sarah, mar. Joshua Peck; 4, Mary, mar. Sylvanus Ferris; 5, Rachel, mar. Caleb Lyon, jr. (VIII.), Sarah. (IX.), Elizabeth, mar. Theophilus Peck. (X.), Keziah, mar. Isaac Howe, b. Feb. 1707, d. 1808; (XI.) Eliphalet, b. 1708, d. 1796, mar. and left, 1, Eliphalet, 1738, d. 1808, mar. Anne —, and had Darius, mar. Hannah Peck, and Anne Darius left Anne, mar. Leander Mead; *Alla*, mar. Obadiah Mead; *Huldah*, *Abiah*, mar. Jane Arundel, and had Samuel E., Hannah E., Samuel E., Leander, Hannah E., and Mary E.; *Adelia*, is the youngest da. of Darius; 2, Jehiel, mar. Deborah Mead; 3, Jesse, mar. Rachel Knapp, and left a Jesse who mar. N. Compton, and had William, Elizabeth and George; *b*, *Elizabeth*, mar. Daniel Van Vard; *c*, Rachel, mar. Richard Dyckman; *d*, Rebecca; *e*, Dimions, mar. Richard Loyd; 4, Abigail, b. 1717, d. 1796; 5, Libeus, mar. 1st, Hannah Bene-

diet, and 2nd, Widow Pocock, and has Eri, Martin, Jared, Hannah, Abby, Clarissa, Eliphalet, Sarah, and Sibah; 6, Eli, mar. Deborah Brush, and had Polly, Obadiah, Orson, Hannah, and Cynthia; 7, Sarah, mar. Aaron Mead; 8, Nancy, mar. Ebenezer Mead; 9, Rachel, mar. Benjamin Knapp. (XII.) by second wife, Benjamin had Rachel. (XIII.), Obadiah had Phoebe and Mary. (XIV.), Zebediah left Henry, b. 1754, Hannah, b. 1755, Lydia, b. 1757, and Levi, b. 1761. (XV.), Nehemiah left, 1, Lucy, mar. Isaac Howe; 2, Sarah, mar. Richard Mead; 3, Rachel, mar. Charles Weed; 4, Nehemiah, mar. Miss Richards, and left Samuel, William H., James, Sarah, Laura, and Caroline; 5, Clarinda, mar. Isaac Mead, and left Augustus; 6, Bethiel, mar. Stephen Davis.

*Nathaniel*, sixth son of 2d John, had (I.), Gen'l John, who left John, the father of Seth, Walter, Hipsibeth, mar. J. Simmons, and Alice, mar. Peter Mead. (II.), Capt. Matthew had, 1, Matthew, who left *Matthew, Clemence*, mar. R. Rich, *Hannah*, mar. H. Merritt, *Justus*, mar. Nancy Hanford, and had Joseph, Justus, Matthew, Andrew J., Eliphalet, and three others; *Mary, Thomas, Amos, William*, mar. E. Lawrence, and had Jane E., &c.; *Hobby*, is the youngest son of Matthew; 2, Justus had Susan, mar. — Eldridge, Bush, Walter, James, Joseph, Rebecca, mar. — Marshall, Anne, mar. — Craft, and William; 3, Bush had Sophia, mar. — Russell, Pothena, mar. — Holmes, &c. (III.), Nathaniel left 1, Jasper, the father of Bush; 2, Nathaniel; 3, William, mar. and left John, Gilbert, Nathaniel, William, Charity, Hannah, and Mary; 4, Charity; 5, Rachel, 6, Betsy; 7, Anna. Nathaniel Mead, mar. Prudence Wood, and had, (I.), Epenetus. (II.), Nathaniel, mar. Miss Brown, and left Nehemiah, Nathaniel, William, Tyler, Epenetus, Walter and Harvey, &c. (III.), Joshua. (IV.), David, mar. Anna Mead. (V.), Israel. (VI.), Halsey. (VII.), Jonathan, mar. — Lyon. (VIII.), Hannah, mar. — Wheeler. (IX.), Dimny, mar. Thaddeus Huestead. (X.), Theodosia, mar. Benjamin Close. (XI.), Robert. (XII.), Daniel S. (XIII.), Isaac.

Samuel, seventh son of second John, left (I.), Peter, who had, 1, Peter, who had Mary, Peter, Deborah, Cyrus, Luckur, Anna, and Sandford. Luckur mar. Sarah Fletcher, and has Benjamin and Robert; 2, Zacheus has *Elsie*, who mar. Job Mead, and had Zacheus, Amanda, Abraham, Emeline, and Eliza. Hannah, youngest da. of Zacheus, mar. Mark Mead. (II.), Zacheus. (III.), Samuel, left 1, Charlotte; 2, Henry; 3, Artemas; 4, Bythem; 5, Priscilla; 6, Lavinia; 7, Martha. *Arms*, sa. a chev. betw. three pelicans or, vulned gu.

**MOTTS, OF MAMARONECK.**—Adam Mott, b. about 1596, came from Cambridge, England, to Boston in 1635 with his wife, Sarah, and children, John, Adam, Joseph, Elizabeth, Nathaniel, and Mary. His son, Adam, settled at Hempstead, L. I., about 1656, and by his first wife, Phebe, had Adam, James, Grace, John, Joseph, Gershom, and Henry: and by his second wife, Elizabeth, da. of John Richbell of Mamaroneck, had Richbell, Charles, William (b. in 1674, ancestor of Dr. Valentine Mott of N. Y.), Adam, the younger (and, as his oldest son Adam was still living, this made two sons of the same name in the same family at the same time), Mary Anne, and Elizabeth.

James, the second son of Adam Mott of Hempstead, came to Mamaroneck, and about 1670 mar. Mary, da. of John Richbell, patentee of Mamaroneck, by whom she had James, Mary, and Richbell. This Richbell Mott, son of James, had by

his wife, Elizabeth, two sons and six das., viz. : 1, Edmond of Cow Neck, who had Richbell, Edmond, John, and Margaret ; 2, Richard, who mar. Sarah Pearsall, and d. in 1743, leaving only James, b. 1741. The six das. were, 1, Elizabeth ; 2, Mary ; 3, Ann, who severally mar. Adam Mott of Staten Island, Joseph Mott of Cow Neck, and Jonathan Townsend of Oyster Bay ; 4, Jamima, who mar. Stephen Wood ; 5, Kedzie, who mar. — Jackson ; 6, Deborah.

James, b. 1741, son of the above Richard Mott and Sarah Pearsall, mar. in 1764 Mary, da. of Samuel and Ann Underhill of Mamaroneck, and had Richard, b. 1766, Ann, b. 1768, Robert, 1771, and Samuel, 1773. About 1775 James Mott settled on the Farm and Mill property in Mamaroneck, opposite New Rochelle, and long known as Mott's Neck, but afterwards as Premium Point. His house (now owned and occupied by Mr. Prior), near the upper end of the present Mill Pond, was adjacent to the mill then standing on the creek, which he owned and operated during the Revolution and long afterwards. In 1802 he and his sons built the present dam about half a mile lower down the bay and the large mill, with ten and afterwards twelve runs of stones, and supposed at that time to be superior to any mill in the country, and named it Premium Mill, and operated it till about 1815. This mill is still (1879) standing, in a somewhat dilapidated condition.

Richard, eldest son of James Mott of Mamaroneck, b. 1766, retired from Premium Mill about 1808 ; and afterwards built a cotton mill on property he called Hickory Grove, between Mamaroneck and New Rochelle, and spun spool cotton, etc., till about 1835. He was an eminent Minister of the Society of Friends, and travelled much. He had mar. Abigail Field, and of several children but one son, Robert, left issue, Richard F. of Burlington, N. J.

Anne, da. of James Mott, mar. Adam Mott, descended from Adam the younger, above named, son of Adam Mott of Hempstead, and had, 1, James of Phila., b. 1788, mar. Lucretia Coffin, celebrated as a Minister of the Society of Friends ; 2, Sarah, b. 1791, mar. Silas Cornell of Scarsdale ; 3, Mary, b. 1793, mar. Robert Hicks of New York ; 4, Abigail, mar. Lindley M. Moore ; and 5, Richard, b. 1804, mar. Elizabeth Smith ; and was Mayor of Toledo, O., 1845-6, and a member of Congress from there in 1855-9.

Robert, second son of James, mar. Lydia P. Stausbury and died in 1804, leaving several children.

Samuel, youngest son of James, mar. Elizabeth Barnard, and had, Barnard, 1795 ; Abis, 1797 ; Andrew U., 1799 ; Charles, 1801 ; Elizabeth, 1870 ; Matilda, 1809.

**PALMER OF MAMARONECK.**—William Palmer of Westchester, d. about 1670, left Joseph, Benjamin, Samuel, proprietor of Mangopson Neck, Mamaroneck, Obadiah, and Thomas. Samuel of Mangopson Neck had issue, (I.), Obadiah, d. 1748, mar. Anne and left, 1, William ; 2, Samuel ; 3, Benjamin ; 4, David ; 5, Obadiah ; 6, Caleb ; 7, Ester, mar. — Angevine ; 8, Mary Anne. (II.), Nehemiah, d. 1760, had one son and a da., Mary. The son of Nehemiah left Harrison, Drake, Aaron, Nathan, Benjamin, Nehemiah, and Elihu. (III.), Sylvanus of Mamaroneck, d. 1741, mar. Mary, and had, 1, Robert, mar. Mary — ; 2, Sylvanus ; 3, John, mar. Rebecca, and left Joseph, Philip, Marcus, Lewis, Benjamin, Thomas, Esther, and Martha ; 4, Marmaduke ; 5, Edward ; 6, Anne ; 7, Susannah ; 8, Charity ; 9, Mary. (IV.), Solomon.



Harrison Palmer of Westchester county, son of —, b. Dec. 12, 1751, d. May 11, 1814, mar. 1st, —, and had children, 1, Charlotte, who mar. John Coffin of New York; 2, Elizabeth, who mar. Robert Tallerton of New York. Mar. 2nd, March 15, 1788, Phoebe Lyon, da. of Peter of North Castle, b. Dec. 25, 1762, d. Jan. 12, 1849, and had children, 1, Richard, b. May 5, 1790, d. —, mar. Eliza White, d. 1859, *sine prole*. He was a dry goods merchant in N. Y. city with his brother Harrison: 2, Harrison, b. March 12, 1793, d. Sept. 10, 1852, mar. Ann —, and had children, Richard, Harrison, and Phebe Ann; 3, Frederick, b. June 12, 1794, d. Sept. 27, 1796; 4, Hannah Field, b. Dec. 31, 1800, d. August 11, 1863, mar. May 12, 1825, Charles Bluff, son of Christopher of Maryland, and had children, Phoebe Ann, Richard Palmer, Charles, Harrison, Phoebe Palmer, and James Berry. (The Palmers were Quakers).

POST OF YONKERS. — Post, a native of Holland, emigrated to the New Netherlands. He had two sons, Jacob and Tine. Jacob held lands in Philipsburgh under the Philipses. He mar. Anne Hegdy, and left six sons and three das. (I.), Jacob, proprietor of the homestead, Yonkers, mar. Rachel Pickney. She was b. March 22, 1752. They had 1, Lewis, b. 15 October, 1756, mar. Abigail Oakley; 2, Israel, b. May 15, 1758, mar. Nancy Rich; 3, David, b. March 28, 1760, d. October 16, 1803, mar. Margaret Fowler; 4, Frederick, b. November 16, 1762, mar. Elizabeth Lawrence; 5, James, b. September, 10, 1766, mar. Rebecca Ferris; 6, Phoebe, b. October 20, 1764, mar. William Warner; 7, Elizabeth, b. August 12, 1768, mar. Moses Warner; 8, Euphemia, b. May 7, 1772, mar. Aaron Warner; 9, Mary, b. June 11, 1774, mar. Abraham Berrian; 10, Getty, d. June 11, 1780. (II.), Abraham, mar. Rebecca Merrill, and had, 1, David of Baltimore; 2, Jacob of Rockland, mar. Peggy Graham; 3, Abraham of Haverstraw, mar. Widow Gesner; 4, Clinton of Rockland, mar. Mary Briggs; 5, Grace, mar. Daniel Gesner; 6, Elizabeth, mar. Abraham Scudder; 7, Rachel, mar. Isaac Fredeker; 8, Peggy, mar. — Hibbert. (III.), Isaac, proprietor of the Ludlow estate, Yonkers, mar. Polly Lawrence, and had, 1, Samuel, mar. Polly Post; 2, Lawrence, mar. Elizabeth Post; 3, William; 4, Betsy, mar. Timothy Briggs; 5, Mary; 6, Peggy, mar. — Hibbert. (IV.), Martin, a guide to General Washington, mar. Polly Brown, and left 1, Evert, d. s. p.; 2, Martin, mar. Polly Brown; 3, Jacob, mar. Mary Lent; 4, Peter, mar. Betsy Anderson; 5, Peggy, mar. Jacob Dyckman; 6, Polly, mar. William Dyckman; (V.), Peter, mar. Dolly Warner, and left, 1, Jacob, mar. Ann Storms; 2, William, mar. Polly Williams; 3, Harriet, mar. John Bowman; 4, Maria, mar. John Whipple; 5, Nelly, mar. Stephen Smith; 6, Peggy, mar. Jacob Storms; 7, Elizabeth, mar. Lawrence Post; 8, Susan, mar. Theodosius Rockwell. (VI.), Anthony of New York, mar. Nelly Brower, and had, 1, Anthony, mar. Elizabeth Polhamus; 2, Nelly, mar. Odell Valentine; 3, Betsy, mar. Robert Manly, M. D.; 4, Ann, mar. William Bailey; besides four other daughters who d. s. p. (VII.), Elizabeth, mar. Thomas Gregier. (VIII.), Margaret, mar. John Gregier, M. D. (IX.), Annetje, mar. Elnathan Taylor.

PURDY OF RYE. — The *Purdy* family were among the early settlers of Fairfield Connecticut. *Francis Purdy*, the first member of the family of whom we have any account, died in 1658, at Fairfield. His sons were Francis, John and Samuel. John the second left Francis, who had two sons, Joseph and John.



Joseph the eldest, one of the first proprietors of the White Plains and Lame Will's Purchases, d. about 1709, mar. Elizabeth — to whom her husband conveyed his rights in the White Plains Purchase. They had, (I.), Joseph, who left Obadiah, living in 1734, the father of Caleb, 1746. (II.), Daniel the father of Solomon and Benjamin. (III.), Samuel left the Hon. Samuel, a judge of the Court of Common Pleas, who had Samuel and Caleb. (IV.), David who had David and Nathan of Ulster County, N. Y. (V.), Jonathan of White Plains, mar. Mary Hart. He had 1, *Elijah*, mar. Lavina Hoyt, and left Samuel, David, John, Israel, Elijah, Mary, mar. John Purdy; Abby, mar. Jonathan Purdy; Fridy mar. John Haviland; Levinia, mar. Isenhardt Purdy, Hester and Melissa who mar. Thomas Halstead; 2, *Jonathan* of White Plains, mar. Charity Hadden and had *a*, Jonathan, killed by the fall of a tree, æt. 18; *b*, Benjamin of Purchase, mar. Elizabeth Purdy, da. of Samuel, and left Jonathan, d., Sylvanus of Eastchester, Jonathan, Samuel, d., and Benjamin, &c; *c*, Timothy, mar. 1st, Amy Hobbs; 2d, Mary Hunt; and had Augustus, Jonathan, Amy mar. John Stapley, Deliah mar. David Burgess, Charity mar. — Fisher and Eliza, mar. Thomas Dick; *d*, Job mar. — Gedney; *e*, Nebe, mar. Amos Purdy, and left Moses, Emery, Susan, Charlotte and Margaret; *f*, Glorianna, mar. Henry Budd; *g*, Sarah, d. s. p; *h*, Elizabeth, d. s. p; *i*, Charity; *Joseph*, mar. Charity Isenhardt, and left Jonathan, Joseph, Henry, Wermoth, Michael, a da. — De Lancey, and Charity mar. — Purdy; 4, *Elizabeth*, mar. — Williams. (VI.), John mar. Rebecca. (VII.), Francis heir to his father's lands on Budd's Neck, who left Daniel. John, the youngest son of second Francis, left a son Daniel and others.

Samuel, youngest son of first Francis, mar. Penelope Strang da. of Daniel Strang, and Charlotte his wife, and left issue three sons. *First*, Henry. *Second* Josiah, mar. — Wetmore, da. of Rev. James, and had 1, Seth, proprietor of the homestead at Rye, mar. Phoebe Ketchum of L. I., and left Joshua, Seth, Josiah, Keziah, Alatheia, Elizabeth, Charity, Melinda, and Phoebe; 2, Alatheia, mar. 1st, Joseph Purdy; 2nd, William Purdy; 3, Esther, mar. Henry Purdy of King street; 4, Hannah mar. Josiah Merritt. *Third*, Caleb, mar. Hannah Brown, da. of Samuel and had, (I.), Caleb, mar. Ruth Peck, and left 1, Caleb; 2, Elias; 3, Ruth; 4, Sarah. (II.), Samuel mar. Glorianna Fowler, and had 1, Gabriel; 2, Samuel; 3, Phoebe; 4, Elizabeth; 5, Glorianna; 6, Hannah. (III.), Josiah, mar. U. Knapp, and left 1, Josiah; 2, Joshua, who is presumed to have had two sons, *Hachaliah*, who left four sons, viz., Daniel, Hachaliah, John and Elijah. Daniel, the eldest, had William of Salem and Daniel; Hachaliah had Elijah of Somers; Elijah mar. — Park and had issue. *Joshua* of Rye mar. Mary Park, by whom he had, first, Joseph, who mar. Lætitia Guion and had three sons, viz., Isaac of North Salem, mar. Miss Hart, they left Isaac Hart of North Salem, Sally Ann, mar. Lewis Brown, Rosanna, mar. Gerard Crane, Clarissa, mar. — Perry, M. D.; Lydia, mar. Mr. Howe; Mary, mar. Rev. D. H. Short; Jane, mar. Floyd Keeler, Christina and Lætitia. Thomas of Rye, second son of Joseph and Lætitia, mar. — Purdy; and left Edward, Henry, James, Elizabeth, Cornelia and Emeline. Hon. Joshua of North Salem, third son of Joseph, is still living at North Salem. *Second*, Joshua, mar. Sarah Griffin, and had Benjamin of Rye, mar. —, da. of Jonathan Purdy, and left Edward of Rye, William, Hetty, Mary, Julia, Ann, Harriet, and Adeline. The

das, of Joshua and Sarah were Elizabeth, Deborah, Mary, Sarah, Esther, and Harriet. *Third*, Roger of Rye. *Fourth*, Isaac of Rye. (IV.), Andrew, the fourth son of Caleb and Hannah Brown, mar. Phæbe Merritt and had Robert of Eastchester, Andrew of Eastchester, John Merritt, Phæbe, and Havelindah. (V.), Nehemiah, mar. Elizabeth Burchum, and left Thomas, Nehemiah, Caleb, Hannah, Anna, Elizabeth, and Deborah. (VI.), Sylvanus. (VII.), Elias, mar. Rachel Merritt, and had Elias, John Merritt, William Henry, Caleb, Sarah, and Ophelia. (VIII.), Caroline. (IX.), Hannah. (X.), Levinia. (XI.), Anna.

*Abraham Purdy*, of Yorktown, a descendant of first Joseph of White Plains, b. 10 Oct. 1716, d. April 17, 1778, mar. Phæbe Strang, she was b. Feb. 7, 1732, d. Oct. 27, 1759; their children were, (I.), Abraham, b. April 9, 1759, d. Aug. 1769, s. p. (II.), Alvan, b. Jan'y 11, 1757, d. July 16, 1830, mar. Lydia Hunt, she d. Jan'y 27, 1842, æt. 83, and left issue: 1, Abraham, of Goshen, Orange Co., mar. Charity Strang and had William, Alvan and Howell; 2, Alsop, d. s. p.; 3, James, Post-master of Yorktown; 4, David, d. s. p.; 5, Alvan of Yorktown; 6, Elizabeth Ann, mar. J. H. Strang. (III.), Frances, b. July 23, 1753, mar. Col. John Drake. (IV.), Ebenezer, b. Dec. 6, 1754, mar. Hon. Ebenezer Foot of Delaware. *Arms*. Or, on a chevron az. between three mullets sa. pierced of the field.

RAYMOND, OF NORWALK.—He drew a lot in that town Dec. 4, 1668, No. 21. John Raymond, Jr., of Norwalk, b. 1671, mar. Mar. 7, 1690, Elizabeth, da. of Samuel St. John, and had 1, John Raymond, b. May 19, 1693; 2, Mary b. Mar. 5, 1694; 3, Elizabeth, b. Aug. 22, 1697; 4, Hannah, b. July 22, 1700; 5, Samuel, b. Jan. 7, 1702; 6, Jabez, Apr. 1, 1705; 7, Asael Raymond, b. Sept. 22, 1707; 8, Sarah, b. Nov. 12, 1711; 9, Elijah, b. Nov. 7, 1709; 10, Zuriel, b. Dec. 3, 1715; 7, Asael, son of John, removed to Mamaroneck, Westchester Co., N. Y., mar. — and had 1, Sands, b. 1769, at Mamaroneck, removed to South Salem. Twice taken prisoner during Revolution; 2, Asa, twin-brother of Sands, b. 1769; removed to South Salem, assisted in raising old Court House at White Plains, d. near Albany, Oct. 15, 1859; buried in cemetery north of Albany, and mar. Sally Northrup, b. 1780, d. Nov. 16, 1853; buried with her husband; 3, Absalom, removed to North Salem.

REIDS of Loch Hannoch, of the Clan Chattan, settled in Craighill, Ayrshire, 1844. Robert Reid, of Ayrshire, nat. Dec. 7, 1705, ob. Nov. 27, 1757, and mar., 1735, (1st), Barbara Skimming, ob. 1742, and (2nd), Janet King, in 1743, and had by the first wife, 1, Thomas; 2, Jane; 3, William. (I.), Thomas, a rich banker of Glasgow, mar. — and had, 1, Robert, nat. Oct. 10, 1789; 2, Barbara, nat. March 10, 1778. (II.), Jean, mar. Robert Spear. (III.), William, mar. 1st, Isabella Shaw; 2nd, Isabella Smith. 1743, Janet King, aunt of Daniel King of New York, and had, 1, Sarah; 2, John; 3, James; 4, David. (I.), Sarah, da. of Robert's second wife, mar. Alex. Wilson. (II.), John, son of Robert's second wife, nat. Jan. 23, 1752, at Dalmellington, Ayrshire; settled at Eastchester and bought land of John Bartow; mar. Mary Bartow, and had, 1, Charity, b. 1783, d. April 13, 1860; 2, Thomas, b. 1784, d. Oct., 1808; 3, Janet, b. 1786, d. July 18, 1854; 4, Helena, b. 1786, d. Dec. 18, 1861; 5, Phæbe, b. 1789; 6, John, b. 1790, d. Sept. 25, 1808; 7, Mary, b. 1791, d. Nov. 8, 1865; 8, Robert, b.

1793, d. June 2, 1856. (III.), James, son of Robert's second wife, mar. Janet Jenison, and had, 1, Isabella; 2, James; 3, Robert. (IV.), David, son of Robert's second wife, of Ancaster, mar. Mary Stevenson, and had, 1, Robert; 2, Jane; 3, Janet; 4, James; 5, Margaret; 6, William; 7, David. All these never married; resided down "Mill Lane" all their life; property in the family nearly a century.

RENAUD, OF NEW ROCHELLE.—The ancestors of the Renauds were Protestants, inhabitants of Rochelle, France. On the revocation of the Edict of Nantes, Daniel Renaud, or Rayneau, fled from France to England, and soon after came to America. He left a son, John, who left Stephen, who left John, b. 1743, d. 1837; mar. Mary Secor, left 1, Mary; 2, James; 3, Andrew; 4, Stephen; 5, John; Susannah, mar. Jas. Secor; and Jane, mar. Benjamin Secor. (I.), James mar. Jane Renaud, left 1, Clara; 2, Clark; 3, Annanias; 4, Eliza; 5, Sarah; 6, Margaret; 7, Deborah; 8, Maria; and 9, Frederick S. (II.), Andrew left 1, Simeon, 2, Golsbury; 3, William H.; 4, Eliza; 5, Louisa; 6, Matson S.; and 7, Andrew. (III.), Stephen mar. 1st, Sarah Travis, and left Sarah; mar. 2nd, Martha Purdy left 1, Allen; 2, Mary; and 3, Eliza Jane. (IV.), John mar. Betsey Coles, left Mary, and Fanny, mar. Andrew A. Dean.

REQUA, OF GREENBURGH.—The Requas of Westchester County all descended from Daniel Requa, who was an emigrant from La Rochelle, France. Daniel came to New Rochelle, and afterwards moved over and purchased a farm on the Hudson, about a mile and a half south of Tarrytown, where some of his descendants yet live. He left four sons, 1, Gloade or Glode; 2, John; 3, David, and 4, James. (I.), Gloade, the eldest, left six sons, 1, Isaac, b. June 3, 1758, mar. Henrietta —; 2, Gabriel; 3, Samuel; 4, Daniel; 5, James; 6, James. (II.), John, d. s. p. (III.), James, the youngest son of first Daniel, had, 1, Gabriel; 2, Joseph; 3, Daniel; 4, John; 5, James; 6, Gloade; 7, William; 8, Elijah; 9, Isaac, b. Jan. 31, 1779; 10, Gilbert.

RHINELANDER, OF NEW ROCHELLE.—Philip Jacob Rhinelander, the founder of the family, came from the Rhine, France, to America, soon after the Revocation of the Edict of Nantes. He had three sons and a da. (I.), Philip Jacob. (II.), Bernard, who left, 1, William, b. 1745, mar. Hester Devaux, and had a da. Mary Magdalen; 2, Jacob, b. Oct. 27, 1740, d. s. p. Philip, mar. Deborah Allen, and left Deborah, who mar. Isaac Underhill. (III.), William, had, 1, William C. of New York; 2, John of Long Island; 3, a da. mar. William Paulding. (IV.), a da. mar. Mr. Schureman.

RICHBELL—John Richbell was of South Hampton, England. His son John came to America and had land in Delaware, then in Oyster Bay, L. I., and in 1660 became the first proprietor of Mamaroneck. He d. 1684: his wife Ann d. 1700. They had three da., (I.), Elizabeth, who became the second wife of Adam Mott of Hamstead by whom he had 1, Richard; 2, Charles; 3, William, ancestor of Dr. Valentine Mott of New York; 4, Adam; 5, Mary Ann; and 6, Elizabeth; (II.), Mary, mar. Capt. James Mott; (III.), Ann, mar. John Emerson of Talbot Co. Maryland.



**RODMAN, OF RODMAN'S NECK.**—*Samuel Rodman*, mar. *Mary Pell*, and left, (I.), *Joseph*, proprietor of *Morse's Island*, *New Rochelle*. (II.), *William*, heir to his father's lands on *Rodman's Neck*, mar. *Leah Myers*, and had *Mary*, who mar. *Nicholas Haight*. (III.), *Samuel*, mar. *Anne Hicks* of *Hart Island*, *Pelham*, and left 1. *Samuel*; 2 *Capt. Charles Rodman* of *Eastchester*; 3, *Deborah*, mar. *John Bertine*. (IV.), *Elizabeth*, mar. *Philip Richè*.

**ROMER, OF GREENBURGH.**—*Jacob Romer*, a native of *Switzerland*, emigrated to *America* before the *Revolution*, and settled in *Greenburgh*. His sons were *Capt. John* of *Greenburgh*, *William* and *James*.

**SECOR, OF NEW ROCHELLE.**—The ancestor of this family was *Ambroise Secor* or *Sicard*, or *Seacord*, a *Protestant* refugee of *Rochelle*, who fled from *France* in 1681. He left 1, *Ambroise*; 2, *Jacques*; 3, *Daniel*; 4, *Mary*, mar. *Wm. Landrine*, and 5, *Silvia*, mar. *Francis Coguillet*; 6, *Jacques*, mar. *Catharine*, and left, (I.), *Jacques* or *James*, b. 1701, mar. *Jane Bonnett*, who left 1, *Jacques*, b. 1729; 2, *Jeanne*, b. 1731; 3, *Catharine*, b. 1733; 4, *Benjamin*, b. 1735; 5, *Jacob*, b. 1737; 6, *Abraham*, b. 1739; 7, *Solomon*, b. 1741; 8, *Marie*, b. 1742, mar. *John Renaud*; 9, *Israel*, b. 1748, mar. *Jane*, da. of *Jacob Coutant*, *Israel* left *Madaline*, mar. 1st, — *Bull*; 2nd, — *Huget*; *Elizabeth*, mar. *Jacob Lobe*. (I.) *David*, mar. *Esther Secor*. (II.), *James*, mar. *Susannah Renaud*. (III.), *Samuel* mar. *Sarah Drake*. *William*. (IV.), *Benjamin*, mar. *Jeanne Renaud*. (V.), *Abraham*, mar. 1st, *Eliza Dixon*; 2nd, *Margaret Dixon*, both sisters. (VI.), *Richard*, mar. *Maria Gallaudet*, and *Peter*. (I.), *David* left *Jane*, *Gilbert*, *Horace*, *Esther Ann*, and *Absolom T.* (II.), *James* left *Cornelius*, mar. *Maria Holmes*, *Leonard*, mar. *Maria Secor*, *Lewis*, mar. *Mary Price*, *Salmon B.*, mar. *Mary Horton*, *Hiram D.*, mar. 1st, *Mary E. Mullin*; 2nd, *Phœbe A. Horton*; *Jerome B.*, mar. *Deborah Ann Morse*; *Ambroise*, mar. *Henrietta Bailey*. (III.), *Samuel* left 1, *Catharine*; 2, *Samuel*; 3, *Sarah Maria*; 4, *Eliza*; 5, *Augusta*; and 6, *Harriet*. (IV.), *Benjamin*, left 1, *Albert*; 2, *Darius*; 3, *William Emery*; 4, *Charles Wesley*; and 5, *Edgar Raymond*. (V.), *Abraham* left 1, *Howard Dixon*; 2, *Susan Jane*; 3, *Margaret Ann*; 4, *Matilda V.*; 5, *Pauline B.*; 6, *John H.*; 7, *Mary E.*, d.; and 8, *Mary*. (VI.), *Richard* left 1, *William*; 2, *Mary Ann*; 3, *Franklin*, mar. *Susannah Ann Underhill*; and 4, *Caroline*. (II.), *Peter*, owner of the property now occupied by *Mr. Philemon Carpenter*, mar. *Esther Guion*, da. of *Isaac*; and had, 1, *Catharine*, b. *July 20*, 1742; 2, *Marie*, b. *March 24*, 1731; 3, *Esther*, b. *Jan. 22*, 1738. (III.), *Ambroise*. (IV.), *Paul*. (V.), *Daniel*, owner of the property now occupied by *Mr. Benjamin Secor*, mar. *Mary Archer*; and left, 1, *Jonathan*, b. *Feb. 8*, 1742; 2, *Jeremiah*, b. *Jan. 22*, 1740, and others.

**SEAMAN VALENTINE**—*Anna Ferris*, mar. *Valentine Seaman*. *M. D.*, of *N. Y.*, da. of *John Ferris* of *Grove Farm*, and had issue, 1, *William Ferris*, *M. D.*, mar. *Elizabeth Hicks*; 2, *James V.*, mar. *Maria B. Wright*; 3, *John Ferris*, mar. *Ann Drake*; 4, *Valentine*, mar. *Anna Amelia Ferris*, [see *Ferris*]; 5, *Percival*; 6, *Willet*, mar. *Susan W. Hendricks*; 7, *Marianna*, mar. *Geo. Middlebrook*; 8, *Anna*, mar. *Charlton Ferris*, [see *Ferris*]; 9, *Eliza*, mar. *Aug. W. Leggett*. *James V.* had, 1, *Sarah W.*, mar. *Edgar Lasak*, and had *Margaret*; 2, *Margaret L.* mar. *Stephen Paddock*, and had *James S.*, *Richard*, *Margaret*; 3, *Marianna*, mar. *Jordon L. Mott*, and had *Maria Louisa*, *Jordon L.*, *Augustus W.*; 4.



Wright; 5, Catharine, mar. Francis Randall, and had Caroline. Emmy. Maria; 6, James V. mar. Ellen Robertson, and had Alice. James. Marianna. Kate. William. *Willet* had, 1, William F.; 2, Eliza Ann, mar. Francis McFarlan, and had Frank McFarlan; 3, Louise. *Eliza* had, 1, Mortimer, mar. Jenny Whitehead, and had William, Catharine, May; 2, Percival; 3, William, mar. Annie Birdsall, and had John, Augustus, Frederick C.; 4, Margaret, mar. Lewis T. Ives, and had Augustus, Percy, Valentine; 5, Emma; 6, Elizabeth, mar. David Snow; 7, Anna, mar. 1st, Wm. Christian, and had Eliza; 2nd, mar. Corydon Randall, and had Huntley, Ferris, Chandler; 8, Augusta, mar. E. Brook Pease, and had Percy; 9, Blanch L. *See Ferris Chart—*

RICHARD SMITH, OF SMITH TOWN, SUFFOLK Co., N.Y.—1, Jonathan; 2, Obediah; 3, Richard; 4, Job; 5, Adam; 6, Samuel; 7, Daniel; 8, Elizabeth; 9, Deborah. Job, mar. Elizabeth Thompson, and had, 1, Job; 2, Richard; 3, Timothy; 4, Adam; 5, James; 6, Joseph; 7, Elizabeth. Joseph, sixth son of Job 1st, mar. Mary Aldich, and had, 1, Joseph; 2, David; 3, Stephen; 4, Graham; 5, Gilbert; 6, Rhuamah; 7, Jane; 8, Mary; 9, Mehetabel. Joseph, first son of Joseph, mar. Sarah Laxton, and had, 1, Eliphalet; 2, Joseph; 3, William; 4, Daniel; 5, Selah; 6, Catharine; 7, Rhuamah; 8, Sarah. William, second son of Joseph, mar. Sophia, da. of Benjamin Hawkins, and had, 1, Benjamin; Benjamin, mar. Deborah Harker, and had, 1, Morris; 2, Abel; 3, Benjamin; 4, Nathaniel; 5, Isaac; 6, Richard; 7, James; 8, Elizabeth; 9, Sarah; 10, Deborah; 11, Esther. Abel, second son of Benjamin, mar. Bersheta Hutchings, and had, 1, John; 2, Benjamin; 3, Abel; 4, James; 5, Isaac; 6, Charity; 7, Deborah; 8, Jerusha; 9, Bersheta; 10, Sarah; 11, Abigail. 12, Elizabeth. Abel, third son of Abel, mar. 1st, Esther Purdy, and had, 1, William; 2, Joseph; 3, John; mar. 2nd, Mary Waterbury, and had, 1, Isaac; 2, Julia Ann; 3, Thomas; 4, Elizabeth; 5, Abel; 6, David W.; 7, Mary; 8, Sarah. David W., sixth son of Abel, mar. Hannah Barnes, and had, 1, Annie B.; 2, Abel; 3, Mary Elizabeth; 4, Samuel B.; 5, Naomi.

SOULICE, OF NEW ROCHELLE.—*John Soulice*, a native of the French Pyrenees, in 1672, mar. Jane Curterrie, a native of the Rhine, and had two sons, viz., Joshua, whose da. mar. — Blauvelt, and John, b. in the Pyrenees A. D. 1692. The latter fled from the persecutions of the Protestants in France, and emigrated to America A. D. 1700. He settled at New Rochelle, and mar. Mary Bonnett, da. of Daniel; she was b. in France 1695. John and Mary left issue. (I.), John of New Rochelle, mar. Maria, and had, 1, Elizabeth, b. Aug. 24, 1729; 2, Esther, b. Sept. 5, 1731; 3, Madaline, b. Sept. 9, 1733; 4, Catharine, b. Sept. 5, 1734; 5, Susan, b. 1750; 6, Maria, b. May 30, 1745. (II.), Daniel, ancestor of the Soulices of Nova Scotia. (III.), Joshua, mar. Susannah Guion, and left, 1, Joshua of New Rochelle, mar. Mary Bonnett, great grand-daughter of Daniel Bonnett, the Huguenot, and had John Soulice of Upper New Rochelle; 2, Susannah, b. Oct. 4, 1765. (IV.), Susannah. (V.), Maria, mar. Abel Devaux. (VI.), a da. mar. — Dubois. (VII.), a da. mar. — Unerray. (VIII.), Magdaline, mar. Elias Guion. (IX.), a da. mar. —.

SUTTON, OF NEW CASTLE.—This family derive their origin from Joseph Sutton, whose father emigrated from the County of Lincolnshire, England, to Mas-

sachusetts. Joseph, who removed to Long Island, d. betw. 1765 and 1770, æt. 80, mar. Mary Sands, and had, (I.), Joseph of North Castle, d. æt. 80, mar. Deborah Haight of Chappequa, and left several children. (II.), Caleb, d. æt. 70, mar. Abby Pell, and had, 1, Edward; 2, Andrew; 3, Pell; 4, Mary; 5, Sophia, 6, Solomon; 7, Henry; 8, Caleb. (III.), James of Croton Valley, mar. Elizabeth Brown, and had, 1, Mary; 2, Jerusha; 3, Hannah; 4, Joseph; 5, Amy; 6, James. (IV.), William of Croton, d. æt. 80, mar. Dorcas Clapp, and had, 1, Jesse; 2, William; 3, Alice. (V.), Richardson of Croton, b. July, 11, 1732, d. 1776, mar. Elizabeth Quinby, da. of Moses; she was b. Feb. 28, 1736. (VI.), Abby, mar. Robert Field. (VII.), Mary, mar. Samuel Palmer. (VIII.), Sophia; (IX.), Jerusha, mar. Benjamin Field. Richardson, fifth son of Joseph, left issue, 1, Esther, b. March 15, 1752, mar. Joseph Totten. (II.), Moses, b. March 15, 1756, mar. Rebecca Underhill, da. of Issac, and left, 1, Sarah, mar. Nchemiah Merrit; 2, Abraham, mar. Esther Carpenter; 3, Hannah, mar. Joseph Pierce; 4, Isaac, mar. Sarah Underhill; 5, Mary, mar. David Merritt; 6, Aaron, mar. 1, M. Pierce, 2, Ann Haight; 7, Phœbe, mar. Aaron Quinby; 8, Moses, mar. Rebecca Underhill; 9, Abby Jane. (III.), Daniel, b. May 22, 1758, mar. Phœbe Husted, da. of Jonathan, and had, 1, Rachel, mar. Silas Birch; 2, Esther, mar. John Griffen; 3, Elizabeth, mar. Jesse Weeks; 4, Jacob, mar. — Wheeler; 5, Deborah, mar. Adonijah Underhill; 6, Ann, mar. Joseph Birdsall, 7, Henry; 8, Louisa. (IV.), Deborah, b. June 17, 1760, mar. Zopher Griffen. (V.), Robert, b. April 5, 1762, mar. Sarah Underhill, and had, 1, Phœbe; 2, Mary; 3, Thomas; 4, Deborah; 5, Gula, mar. John Mott; 6, Abby, mar. — Carpenter; 7, Lydia, mar. Walter Haight; 8, Leonard; 9, Jane. (VI.), Samuel, b. Jan. 22, 1764, mar. Sarah Underhill, da. of Abraham, and left, 1, Richardson, mar. Maria Wing; 2, Joshua, mar. Phœbe Burling; 3, Caleb, mar. Rebecca Kingsland; 4, Amy, mar. Isaiah Quinby; 5, Abraham; 6, Daniel; 7, Edmund; 8, Stephen, mar. Ann Burling; 9, Sally. (VII.), Phœbe, b. Aug. 27, 1765. (VIII.), Mary, b. March 7, 1767. (IX.), Jerusha, b. Sept. 2, 1768. (X.), Abigail, b. Dec. 12th, 1770. (XI.), Frances, b. Dec. 13, 1772. *Arms*—Ar. on a chev. betw. three annulets gu. as many crescents or. *Crest*—A greyhound; head couped, erm., collared gu., garnished and ringed or, on the collar three amulets of the last. The motto was "*Fidelis usque ad mortem.*"

TELLER, OF TELLER'S POINT.—*William Teller*, the ancestor of this family, emigrated from Holland to New Amsterdam. He d. about 1698, mar. Mary —; she d. in 1701. Their children were, (I.), Jacob, mar., 1, Anna Margaritje —; 2, Christina Ashfield, and had two da., Anna and Margaret. (II.), William of Teller's Point, d. 1710, mar. Rachel Kiersted, and had, 1, Johannes of Teller's Point, mar. — Vermilyea; 2, William; 3, Jacobus of Teller's Point mar. Marietje Vermilyea, and left John, Pierre, Tobias. James of Teller's Point, Rachel, Syrché, mar. — Valentine, Margaret, and Mary. Pierre, second son of Jacobus, had, 1, James; 2, Pierre; 3, Solomon; 4, Daniel; 5, Isaac; 6, Miriam; 7, Unas, mar. Robert McCord. (III.), Andrew, father of Andrew. (IV.), Johannes. (V), Casper. (VI.), Elizabeth. (VII.), Mary. (VIII.), Jane, mar. — Schuyler.

THOMAS OF HARRISON.—Rev. John Thomas, a missionary of the Honorable Propagation Society at Philadelphia, 1703, and first Rector of St. George's church,

Hempstead, L. I., 1704, mar. ———, d. 1723-4, buried at Hempstead, and had Hon. John Thomas, first Judge of the county of Westchester, and a Representative in General Assembly, d. May 2, 1777; interred in Trinity churchyard. He mar. 19th Feb. 1729, Abigail, da. of John Sands of Sands Point, L. I., b. Jan. 1708, d. 14th Aug. 1782; buried at Bedford, and had, 1, John; 2, Thomas Thomas; 3, William; 4, Sibell; 5, Charity; 6, Margaret; 7, Gloriana. (I.), John, Sheriff of Westchester county, b. 3d Feb., 1732, mar. Phæbe Palmer, and had, 1, Edward; 2, John T. 1, Edward, son of John, Surrogate of Westchester Co. d. 2nd May, 1806, æt. 44. He mar. Anne Oakley, d. May 12, 1807, æt. 45, and had, 1, William of N. Y., d. Aug. 22, 1836, æt. 37; 2, Capt. John T., son of John, mar. ———, d. Jan. 6, 1835, and had, 1, Capt. Benjamin, d. 16 Sept., 1813, in N. Y.; 2, John of N. Y.; 3, Sophia, mar. — Deighton, M. D.; 4, Catharine, mar. O. Dewitt. (II.), Major General Thomas Thomas, a distinguished officer of the continental army, and a member of the Legislature of the State of New York, b. 17 June, 1745, d. May 29, 1824, interred on the estate, and mar. Catharine Floyd of Mastic, L. I., b. 9th May, 1746, d. Jan. 15, 1825, æt. 79; and had, 1, Floyd, b. 1778, d. 2nd June, 1802; 2, Gloriana, b. 9th Dec., 1772, and d. 9th Dec., 1779; 3, Nancey, d. Feb. 1, 1795, æt. 19; 4, Catharine, 1795. (III.), William, b. 1st Aug., 1736, d. Sept. 21, 1740. (IV.), Sibell, b. 15th Jan., 1730, mar. Abram Field. (V.), Charity, b. 3d July, 1734, mar. James Ferris, and had, 1, George; 2, Abigail. 1, George, son of Charity, mar. — Post, and had, 1, Thomas, heir of the Thomas property, at Harrison; 2, Abigail, da. of Charity, mar. David Harrison, and had, 1, David Harrison, of N. Rochelle. (VI.), Margaret, b. Aug. 1, 1738, mar. Charles Floyd. (VII.), Gloriana, b. Sept. 27, 1740, mar. James Franklin.

TOWNSEND, OF EASTCHESTER.—This family is descended from the Townsends of Long Island. John Townsend, son of John of Oyster Bay, d. 1788-9, and had, 1, *Daniel* of Eastchester, who left John of Eastchester, Senator for the Second District in 1821, and Elijah; 2, *Free love*, who mar. William Pickney. From the Long Island family also descended Sylvanus Townsend, who removed to North Salem, and left issue William, Sylvanus, æt. 91, James, Samuel, and Justus, all residing at North Salem.

VALENTINE, OF YONKERS.—*Benjamin Valentine*, the ancestor of this family, was a dragoon in the French military service, Canada. He removed to New York circa 1680, and settled upon the farm (in Yonkers) now owned by Frederick Rich. He mar. — Odell, and had three sons, *Matthias*, first proprietor of Valentine's Hill, Yonkers, b. 1698, d. 1781, buried at Eastchester; *Nicholas*, who removed South, and *Joseph*. The latter individual was so passionately fond of the violin, that he obtained the surname of "The Fiddler." *Matthias*, the eldest son, mar. 1, Anna Rych; 2, Mary —, and left, (I.), Abraham of Yonkers, b. 1719, d. 19th Oct., 1768, buried at Eastchester, mar. Deborah Barton, and had, 1, Gilbert, b. 1748, d. 1819, mar., 1, Mary Morgan, da. of Charles. 2, Martha Briggs; by first wife he had *Abraham*, b. June 16, 1773, mar. May 27, 1798, Hannah Briggs; she was b. May 2, 1776. Abraham and Hannah left, *a*, Abraham of New York, b. May 10, 1804, mar., 1826, Jane Bates, and had Abraham, Edward, John, William, George, Mary Jane, Emily, d. 1843, and Catharine; *b*, Edward Briggs, b. Jan. 25, 1809, d. Sept. 23, 1834, mar., 1823, Eliza E. Pickney; *c*, Sam. Morgan



of Poughkeepsie, b. Nov. 14, 1814, mar., 1843, Elizabeth Hempstead, and has Sam. Hempstead; *d*, James, b. June 10, 1813, d. June 20, 1813; *e*, William Henry, b. May 10, 1822, d. Aug. 18, 1836; *f*, Anne Delia, b. June 23, 1802, mar., Dec. 8, 1821, Edward G. Faile of West Farms; *g*, Harriet, b. May 27, 1806, mar. Gilbert Bates; *h*, Hannah, b. March 9, 1811, d. s. p. Dec. 10, 1812; *i*, Mary Jane, b. Sept. 19, 1818, d. Feb. 10, 1825. Gilbert Valentine, by his second wife, Martha Briggs, left three sons and two das., viz., *a*, Matthias, mar. Hannah Briggs, and had Matthias, Thomas, Martha, Mary, Sarah, and Stacia; *b*, John, mar. Mary Bussing, and left Gilbert, John, Peter, Mary, and Georgia; *c*, Gilbert, d. s. p.; *d*, Mary; *e*, Sarah; 2, Abraham, second son of first Abraham, mar., 1; Jane Odell; 2, Fanny Newman; 3, Elizabeth Lent, and had Samuel, Odell, James, Gilbert, Jacob, and Ann, who mar. Elijah Williams; 3, Dorothy, eldest da. of first Abraham, mar. — Fowler; 4, Nancy; 5, Sally; 6, Mary; 7, Susan, b. 1756, still living, mar. Mr. Vredenburg of Yonkers. (II.), John, second son of first Matthias. (III.) Matthias. (IV.), Samuel. (V.), Thomas of Valentine's Hill, b. April 29, 1723, mar. 1, Isabel Lawrence; 2, Mary Barton, and had 1, James, who mar. Miss Warner, and had Staats, Charles, and Nathaniel; 2, Elijah, mar. — Odell, sister of General Jacob; 3, Nathaniel of Valentine's Hill, who had Bishop, Burling, Elijah, etc; 4, Thomas of Pelham had Charles of Eastchester; 5, Matthias, mar. — Deighton, and had Samson of Eastchester; 6, Margaret, mar. Isaac Odell; 7, Anna. (VI.), Dorothy, b. April 16, 1716, mar. William Warner. (VII.), Sarah b. Oct. 19, 1719, mar. Richard Archer. (VIII.), Jane, b. Jan. 27, 1724, mar. Reuben Fowler. (IX.), Mary. *Joseph* Valentine, the youngest son of first Benjamin, had Caleb, who left two sons, Caleb and Anthony. Anthony mar. — Farrington, and had 1, James; 2, Anthony; 3, Jurdan; 4, Daniel, who mar. Miriam Fisher, da. of Thomas, and left Fisher of Eastchester, David, Clerk of the Common Council, New York city, Daniel, Evaline, Elizabeth, Amelia, and Emma. *Arms*, Arg. a mullet between three human hearts gules.

VAN TASSELL, OF GREENBURGH.—Derick van Tassel of Tarrytown, had *Cornelius*, who mar. Elizabeth Storms, and left Leah, the wife of Capt. William Romer; *Joanna* mar. Aaron van Wedner; and Mary mar. Sybout Acker. The descendants of Jacob van Texel, the ancestor of this family, are very numerous in Westchester county.

VAN WART, OF GREENBURGH.—This family derive their origin from Joachim van Weert of Philipsburgh in 1697, who had several children. Isaac van Wart, one of the captors of André, probably a grandson of the above, was b. Oct. 25, 1762, d. May 23, 1828, mar. April 14, 1778, Rachel —, she was b. June 4, 1760, d. 1834: their children were, Alexander, b. Sept. 28, 1779, mar. March 27, 1822, — Eshton, and has James, Frances, Esther, Rachel Anne, and Hannah. 2, Abraham, b. Aug. 12, 1785, and has Isaac; 3, Anne, b. 1782; Fanny, b. May 12, 1793.

VERMILYA, OF GREENBURGH.—Isaac Vermilya of Yonkers d. about 1766, and left three sons and five das. (I.), Johannes of Kingsbridge mar. Charity Dyckman, and had, 1, Jacob, mar. 1st, Mary Dyckman, 2nd, Maretje Dyckman, and left Isaac of New York; 2, William, mar. Mary Forbes, and had William and



Thomas of New York; 3. Isaac, mar. Susan Myers of Haarlem, had Isaac of Yonkers; 4. Jane, mar. Edward Prior; 5. Rebecca, d. s. p.; 6. Ellida, mar. James Teller. (II.). Isaac of Croton Valley. (III.), Peter, also of Croton Valley. (IV.), Aeltje. (V.), Maretje. (VI.), Santje. (VII.), Rebecca. (VIII.), Hannah.

WALLACE.—*James Wallace*, a native of Lanarkshire, Scotland, A. D., 1676, was a scion of the parent stock from which the renowned Sir William Wallace descended. Ecinverus Gallicus, its founder, was a subscribing witness to King David's foundation charter of Kelso Abbey, A. D. 1150.

James Wallace emigrated from Scotland to Ridgefield, Conn., cir., 1676, and subsequently removed to North Salem, ob. March, 1762, æt. 87. His wife Mary Hyatt, ob. Dec. 20, 1768, æt. 84; buried at Ridgefield. His children were, 1, John of North Salem, mar. Martha Scofield; 2. James, nat. Feb. 28, 1713, ob. March 20, 1780, æt. 69, left one son Jacob; 3. Jacob of North Salem, (see Rec. of Wills, Surrogate's office, N. Y., lib. xix. 176.); 4. Thomas, ob. æt. 24; 5. Rachel, ob. Nov. 20, 1748, mar. Virus Douchy. John, the eldest son of James, was nat. 16th Oct. O. S. 1709, ob. 23d March, 1812, æt. 102 years and 5 mos. His wife Martha ob. March 1770, æt. 44. Their children were, 1, John of Nova Scotia, nat. 2d June, 1747, ob. Dec. 1828; 2, William, nat. Oct. 16, 1750; 3, Jonathan, nat. Nov. 18, 1752; 4, Samuel, nat. Nov. 1754, ob. 19th April, 1826; 5, Jacob, nat. June 1, 1759, left a son Jacob heir to his uncle Jacob; 6. James, nat. July 8, 1762; 7. Epenetus, M. D., of North Salem, nat. Nov. 18, 1766, mar. Phæbe Close, da. of Solomon; 8, Martha, nat. June 2, 1747, ob. Oct. 27, 1826; 9, Rachel, nat. Jan'y, 1749, ob. æt. 62, at Onondaga; 10, Ruth, nat. Dec. 1756; 11, Mary, nat. Aug. 28, 1769. The children of Epenetus, seventh son of John, are 1, Solomon, nat. Oct. 23, 1793; 2, Charles, nat. Sept. 17, 1796, mar. Clara Townsend; their children are Epenetus, nat. Jan. 22, 1830; Isaac, nat. March, 23, 1832; Elbert, nat. Oct. 19, 1834; Justus P., nat. Sept. 5, 1836, d. Aug. 16th, 1838; Ann Augusta, nat. July 3, 1838; Majra G., nat. Sept. 10, 1841, and Eleanor, nat. Oct. 27, 1844; 3. John, third son of Epenetus, nat. Dec. 1, 1801; 4, Tompkins Donald, nat. Jan'y 18, 1814; 5, Matilda, nat. 11th May, 1789; 6. Jane, nat. 22d Feb. 1791; 7, Abigail, nat. March 8, 1799; 8, Martha M., nat. 14th June, 1804; 9, Phæbe Ann, nat. July 29, 1807; 10, Rachel E., nat. 14th Dec. 1810. *Family Arms*—Gules, a lion rampart or. *Crest*—Two eagles' necks and heads conjoined.

WESCOTTE, OF BEDFORD.—*Richard Wescotte* was one of the early proprietors of Bedford. He mar. Rachel —, and left issue, Richard, Daniel, Rachel, Ruth, Rose, and Millison. Ananias Wescotte, a descendant of the above Richard, mar. Hannah —, she d. Nov. 24, 1833, æt. 83. The children of Ananias were, 1, Huly W. of Bedford, b. May 27, 1798, mar. Deborah Wreden, and left Ezra, William, Eliza, and Susan; 2. Stephen of Stocktown, Cayuga Co., N. Y.; 3, Smith of North Salem, b. April 23, 1790; 4. Mary, b. April 20, 1789; 5. Abigail, b. Feb. 8, 1796; 6. Ezra W.,; 7, Susan, b. Jan'y 24, 1821; 8, Sally; 9, Maria; 10, Ruth.

WHITE.—*John White* came to Southampton, Long Island, about 1640. He left two sons, viz., (I.), Rev. Ebenezer, minister of the Presbyterian church, Bridgehampton, b. 17th Feb., 1672, graduated at Harvard, 1692, and installed minister

of Southampton church, 9th Oct., 1695, d. March, 1756, mar. Miss Pierson; and (II.), Captain Thomas White. Rev. Ebenezer and Miss Pierson left, sons, Elnathan, Rev. Sylvanus, Silas, and a da. Hannah, who mar. Rev. — Rossiter of Stonington, Conn. Rev. Sylvanus, second son of Rev. Ebenezer, was. b. A. D. 1704, graduated at Harvard 1723, minister of Southampton church 1727, d. 22d Oct. 1782. mar. Phœbe Howell, da. of Hezekiah, who d. July 24, 1783. They had nine children, (I.), Sylvanus of Blooming Grove, Orange Co., N. Y., d. æt. 80, mar. Eunice Herrick of Southampton, and had Sylvanus, Nathan Herrick, Phœbe, and Eunice. (II.), Edward of New Windsor, d. June 4, 1767, æt. 36, mar. Hannah Pelletreau, da. of Francis, she d. March 1, 1810, æt. 74. Their children were, 1, Edward of Geneva, n. 1745, d. Aug. 1827, æt. 65, mar. Rachel Smith, da. of Henry, and had Harry, who d. Oct. 1833, Sophia, Phœbe, and Mary, d. æt. 12; 2, Hannah, mar. Charles Merrill; 3, Mary, d. Dec. 27, 1798, æt. 33; 4, Phœbe, mar. Reuben Colton. (III.), Hezekiah, mar. Abigail Sayre of Bridgehampton, settled at Blooming Grove, Orange Co.; they had six children. (IV.), Daniel, d. autumn of 1781, mar. Euphemia Bartow, da. of Rev. John, and left Daniel, Theophilus, Phœbe, Bathsheba, who mar. Don Joseph Barnubeau, Spanish Consul General, Matilda, and Euphemia. (V.), Silas of New Windsor, mar. Sarah Newson, and had, 1, James Tiley; 2, Silas; 3, Levi of New Windsor, who mar. Ellen Cox, and had Charles, George, Robert, Adelia, b. 1814, Elvira, b. 1816, Harriet, b. 1829, and Eleanor, b. 1830; 4, Robert; 5, Harriet. (VI.), Ebenezer, d. æt. 15mo. (VII.), Hon. Ebenezer, M. D., of Yorktown, d. 8th March 1825, æt. 81, mar. Helena Bartow, and had, 1, Bartow, M. D., member of Congress for Dutchess Co.; 2, Ebenezer, M. D., of Somers, who mar. Miss Green, and has John of N. Y., Samuel of Somers, Bartow F. of Round Hill, Conn., Henry, M. D., of Peekskill, Euphemia, Phœbe, and Eleanor; 3, Henry, M. D., of Yorktown; 4, Lewis, late of Peoria, Illinois; 5, James; 6, Theodosius, b. 1836; 7, Catharine, mar. Sam'l Strang, M. D., of Peekskill. (VIII.), Henry, M. D., mar. Ann Eels, da. of Nathaniel, and had Sylvanus, Hannah Eels, mar. James Parker, and Ann. (IX.), Phœbe, mar. James Tilly.

WILKINS, OF WESTCHESTER.—The ancestor of this family emigrated from London, Middlesex, England, to the parish of St. Dorothy, Island of Jamaica, ante 1719. He mar. Anne and left issue Martin, a large landed proprietor in the island of Jamaica, whose last will bears date September 19, 1748, and a da. Anne. Martin, mar. Jonathan Hay, and had issue a son and a da., viz. *Rev. Isaac, D. D.*, for thirty-one years Rector of St. Peter's Church, Westchester, d. Feb. 5, 1838, æt. 89, mar. Isabella Morris, da. of Hon. Lewis, she was b. Feb. 8, 1748, d. Oct. 21, 1810. *Anne*, mar. — Hawks. Rev. Isaac had (I.), Martin, a distinguished member of the New York bar and proprietor of Castle Hill Neck, Westchester, who mar. Sarah Nutter, da. of Valentine, and left 1, Gouverneur of Castle Hill Neck; 2, Martin of South Carolina; 3, Gilbert of New York; 4, Lewis of Madison County New York; 5, Catharine, mar. Henry Phelps; 6, Anne, mar. Robert Turnbull, M. D.; 7, Matina, d. s. p. (II.), Isaac of Westchester, mar. Charlotte Seabury, da. of Right Rev. Samuel Seabury. (III.), Hon. Lewis of Nova Scotia, had James of New York, Hon. Lewis of Nova Scotia, Martin and others. (IV.), Thomas, b. 1771, d. May, 1816, s. p. (V.), Sarah, mar. Archibald Burns, M. D. (VI.), Joannah. (VII.), Isabella. (VIII.), Mary.

(IX.). Euphemia, mar. Ichabod Brush of New York. *Arms*, per pale or. and ar. a wheelk vert. *Crest*, a wheelk's head, erased, vert. *Motto*, Sun ar. dy lyn.

**WILLETT OF WILLETT'S NECK.**—*Captain Thomas Willett* of Plymouth, Mass., in 1629, mar. Mary Brown, July 6, 1636, and left (I.), Colonel Thomas of New York in 1667, afterwards of Flushing, L. I., who had two sons, William, heir of his father's lands on Cornell's or Willett's Neck; and Thomas who succeeded his brother. Thomas the youngest had William who d. 1733, and left 1, William: 2, Isaac, High Sheriff of Westchester County, d. s. p. mar. Isabella Morris, da. of Lewis; 3, Thomas to whom his father bequeathed his property at Flushing; 4, Cornelius, heir to his brother, mar. Elizabeth —, and left *Elizabeth*, d. June, 1772. *Hannah*, mar. Frederick Stephens; *Mille*, mar. Rev. George Ogilby, *Mary*, mar. 1st, — Van Romer; 2d, — Graham; *Rachel*, mar. 1st, — Leecraft; 2d, — Haviland; *Martha*, mar. — Hatfield; and Sarah, mar. Mr. Berrian; 5, Mary, mar. Mr. Rodman; 6, Anne, mar. Mr. Jones (II.), James of Narragansett, second son of Captain Thomas, had Frances of Rhode Island. (III.), Andrew, (IV.), Samuel, (V.), Hezekiah, killed by the Indians during King Phillip's war, June 26, 1676. (VI.), Hester, mar. John Suffin. (VII.), Rebecca, mar. Samuel Hooker.

**WOOD OF CHERRY STREET, BEDFORD.**—Three brothers of this name emigrated from England to Connecticut, viz. Isaac, Daniel, and Obadiah. The latter removed to Salem where he died. He mar. Sarah Abbott and left (I.), Obadiah, mar. Anna Roe, and had William Wood, M. D. of Bedford. (II.), Lemuel, mar. Sarah Whitlock, and had 1, Lemuel: 2, Obadiah; 3, Thomas of Fairfield. (III.), Ebenezer of Salem, b. July 18, 1731, mar. Rachel Lockwood, da. of Ebenezer, d. 20th Oct. 1824, æt. 93. She was b. Feb. 13, 1734, mar. 1759, d. 21st July, 1825, æt. 91, and had 1, Prudence, b. May 3, 1761, d. January 9, 1815: 2, Sarah, b. August 18, 1768, d. March 12, 1844; 3, Rachel, b. October 18, 1765, d. June 8, 1785; 4, Mary, b. Aug. 29, 1770; 5, Ebenezer, b. Nov. 26, 1773; 6, Joseph, b. Nov. 15, 1778, d. Sept. 18, 1779, (IV.), James, mar. Eunice Barnum, and had, 1, Levi of Danbury; 2, James, d. æt. 20; 3, Joseph, d. (V.), Michael of Ballston, mar. Margaret Scribner, and left 1, Abraham; 2, Uriah; 3, David: 4, Michael.

**WOOLSEY OF BEDFORD.**—This family is descended from George Woolsey, "the son of Benjamin, and grandson of Thomas, a near relative of Thomas, better known in history as Cardinal Wolsey; who, to the liberality of his royal master, Henry VIII. was indebted for his extraordinary elevation. George Woolsey was b. October 27, 1610, and had probably resided some time with his father in Holland, having come over with the Dutch emigrants in 1623, while yet a mere boy." From New Amsterdam George removed to Flushing, where he purchased a plantation and established himself. He d. August 17, 1698. By his wife Rebecca, he had three sons, George, Thomas and John, and three da. Sarah Hallett, Mary Woolsey and Rebecca Wiggins. For the descendants of George, see Thompson's History of Long Island. Thomas, the second son, b. 1655 removed to Bedford, Westchester County, and left three sons, viz. Richard, William and Thomas. *Richard*, the eldest, b. 1697, d. 1777, mar. Sarah Fowler, and had (I.), Josiah, d. 1778, mar. Mary Owen and left 1, Stephen of Ulster Co., b. 1758; 2,

Thomas of Bedford, b. 1766, d. 1839; 3, Josiah of Bedford; 4, William of Bedford, b. 1770, d. 1836. (II.), Thomas of Virginia, left Simeon and Daniel of Bedford. (III.), Daniel had Aaron and others. (IV.), Benjamin had Jeremiah of New York. (V.), John had 1, John of Ulster County; 2, Henry of Ulster; 3, David; 4, Rev. Elijah; 5, Thomas. (VI.), Richard of Vermont, has Richard of Delaware Co., N. York. (VII.), Henry, killed by lightning. (VIII.), Joseph, mar. Mary Haight, and left 1, Richard of Seneca County, New York; 2, Joseph of Cayuga County; 3, Jonathan of Newcastle, Delaware; 4, Daniel of Bedford. (IX.), Mary, mar. — Loton of Albany. (X.), Sarah, d. in Ulster County. (XI.), Ruth, mar. Jacob Griffen of Fishkill. (XII.), Hannah, mar. Joseph Sarles. *William* of Bedford, second son of Thomas, left two sons, viz. John and Jonathan. John, mar. Ruth Owen, by whom he had issue, John of Bedford. The latter mar. — Knowlton and had 1, Nathaniel; 2, John of Bedford, who mar. Elizabeth Fountain, da. of Ezra. Their descendants are very numerous in the western part of this State. *Thomas*, youngest son of Thomas, resides at Bedford. *Arms*, sa. on a cross, angr. ar. a lion passant, guardant gu. crowned or. betw. four leopards' faces az, on a chief, of the second, a rose of the third, betw. two Cornise choughs, ppr. *Crest*, a naked arm, embowered, grasping a shin-bone, all ppr.

---

DIRECTIONS FOR THE READER.—In the preceding pages b. stands for born; m. or mar. for married; d. or. ob. for died; da. for daughter; æt. for aged; cir. for about, s. p. for without issue; and nat. for born.



# INDEX.

- ACKER, Jacob, i. 552**  
**Ackhongh, i. 260**  
**Ackquacknouncke River. i. 242; ii. 68**  
**Act of General Assembly, i. 225; ii. 337, 514**  
     disannulled by Queen Anne, 226  
     of the Legislature, i. 236; ii. 447  
     confirming title of Presbyterian Church in  
     Sing Sing to land, ii. 15  
     of Governor and Council, ii. 518  
     to incorporate County Hist. Society, ii. 551  
**Acts of General Assembly of New York, ii. 177**  
**Address of Rev. Isaac Wilkins, D.D., to his**  
     countrymen, ii. 392  
     of people of New Rochelle to V. P. S., i. 615  
**Admission from Gov. Moore, ii. 376**  
**Advertisement for deed of Harrison's Pur-**  
     chase, i. 370  
**Aepjen, chief Sachem of Mohegans, i. 84**  
**Agreement between Caleb Hall and others, i. 150**  
     among first proprietors of Eastchester, i. 204  
     among people of Eastchester, i. 238  
     between people of Stamford and Ponus  
     made and confirmed, ii. 105  
     confirmed by Catonah, ii. 107  
     among first settlers of Manussing Isl'd, ii. 161  
     betw'n Fred'k Philiipse and John Pell, ii. 588  
**Allaire, Alexander, i. 678**  
     James P., i. 678  
**Ander-on, Hon. Joseph H., i. 386**  
     Andrè, Major John, i. 168, 197, 275, 279  
     biographical sketch of, i. 322  
     letters and documents relating to capture  
     of, i. 311, 451  
     statement of, i. 328  
     appeal to Washington by, i. 331  
     last words of, i. 334  
     execution of, i. 279  
     will of, i. 336  
     monument to, i. 340  
     thanks voted to captors of, i. 319  
     incidents in life of, i. 716  
**Angle Fly Brook, ii. 260**  
**Anjevin family, ii. 231**  
     "Ann-hooch," alias Wampage, ii. 33  
**Annsville, i., 158**  
**Answers, Rev. Peter Stoupe's to the Bishop**  
     of London, i. 634  
**Anthony's Nose (mountain), i. 163**  
**Apawamis, or Budd's Neck, ii. 150**  
**Archer family, ii. 515**  
**Armonck, i. 713**  
**Arnold, Benedict, i. 169, 197, 275**  
**Avery, Rev. Ephraim, i. 65**  
**BALLAD of Capt. Kidd, i. 683**  
**Ball, Rev. Eliphalet, i. 50**  
**Bartow, ii. 88**  
     Rev. John, induction of, i. 229  
     letters of, ii. 324-359  
     answers of, to the Bishop of London,  
         ii., 347-349  
     death of, ii., 350  
     last will of, ii. 351  
     Rev. Theodosius, i. 66, 663, 664  
**Bayard, Pierre du Terrail Seigneurde, ii. 414**  
     Rev. Lewis Pintard, i. 242 665, 666  
**Bayside, ii. 413**  
**Bear Ridge, i. 563**  
     Swamp, ii. 264  
**Bedford, town of, i. 1**  
     deviation and etymology of the name, i. 1  
     called originally Catonah land, i. 3  
     expedition of Dutch and English against  
         Indians at, i. 8.  
     conclusion of peace at i. 12  
     settlement of, i. 13  
     name of, given, i. 19  
     land of Kohamong conveyed to proprietors  
         of, i. 19  
     discussion between New York and Con-  
         necticut as to ownership of, i. 20, 21  
     applies to Connecticut for patent, i. 22  
     protection of Connecticut granted to, i. 23  
     Governor Fletcher's proclamation to, i. 23  
     dispute about, referred to the King, i. 23  
     asks for and receives patent, i. 24  
     disputes between New York and Connecti-  
         cut about, i. 23  
     common laws of, i. 28  
     sale of land to John Johnston, by, i. 28  
     purchase of land from Katonah by, i. 29  
     released from allegiance to Connectic't, i. 29  
     meeting of Commissioners to fix the  
         boundary line of, i. 29

- Bedford finally secured to New York, i. 29  
 sale of land to John Diblee, by, i. 30  
 purchase of land from Katonah, etc., by, i. 31  
 Royal Patent obtained for, i. 34  
 purchase of land from Lackawawa and others by, i. 35  
 division of land among proprietors of, i. 36  
 the old court-house in, i. 38  
 academy of, i. 39.  
 female institute of, i. 39.  
 old burying-ground of, i. 40.  
 first religious society organized in, i. 40.  
 religious services conducted by laymen of, i. 42, 43.  
 first regular call to a minister by, i. 46.  
 change in form of church government by, i. 48  
 incorporation of Pres. Society of, i. 53  
 laying of corner stone of new Presbyterian church of, i. 57  
 organization of Presbytery in i. 57  
 dedication of new Pres. church of, i. 57  
 list of ministers of Congregational church in, i. 57  
 list of ministers of Presb church in, i. 58  
 a precinct of Rye parish, i. 58  
 vestry-men chosen for, i. 59  
 missionary appointed for, i. 60  
 rector of Rye objects to the appointment for, i. 60  
 application of Rye to V. P. S. for an assistant minister for, i. 64  
 his appointment for, i. 64  
 money left in trust for churches of North Castle and, i. 65  
 the church in, destroyed by fire, i. 65  
 first and second incorporation of present parish of, i. 65, 66  
 erection of parsonage, in, i. 66  
 endowment of churches of New Castle and, i. 66  
 call of rector to the united churches in, i. 67  
 St. Matthew's church in, i. 67  
 list of ministers and rectors of, i. 68  
 incorporation and consecration of St. Mary's church in, i. 68  
 organization of Baptist Society of, i. 69  
 election of pastor of Bapt. church of, i. 69  
 situation of Union Academy in, i. 70  
 burning of village of, i. 71  
 Turtle Rock in, i. 75  
 Deer's Delight in, i. 76  
 the Jay homestead in, i. 77  
 collection of portraits in the Jay homestead in, i. 78  
 anecdote of John Jay of, i. 79  
 Katonah, village in, i. 80  
 Beechwood, i. 549
- Beeckman family, i. 547  
 anecdote of, i. 532  
 Gerard C., i. 532  
 Mrs. Cornelia, i. 532  
 Benedict, Mr., i. 54  
 Bequest of Manor of Cortland, i. 734  
 of lands by Hercules Lent, i. 92  
 of lands by Frederick Philipse, ii. 598  
 of lands to Frederick Van Cortlandt, ii. 617  
 from Augustus Van Cortlandt, i. 618  
 Berrian family, ii. 606  
 Birch, Harvey, i. 75  
 "Bishop Rocks," ii. 25  
 Black Dog River, i. 246  
 Blatchford, Rev. Samuel, i. 53  
 Blind Brook, ii. 129  
 Bolton, Mr. James, ii. 431  
 Rev. Robert, ii. 89  
 Bondet, Rev. Daniel, i. 607  
 Bonnett, Daniel, i. 595  
 Bonrepos, Rev. David, i. 603  
 Bondinet, Elias, i. 602  
 Boutonville, ii. 124  
 Brant, Col., anecdote of, i. 187  
 Brennen, Alexander M., ii. 780  
 Brewer, Dr. James, ii. 672  
 Briar Cliff, ii. 24  
 All Saints' church erected in, ii. 24  
 Bridges, Rev. Christopher, ii. 182  
 Brimstone Alley, i. 719  
 Boscobel, i. 179  
 Brockett's Neck, ii. 268  
 Bronck, Jonas, i. 262, ii. 426  
 Bronx Dale, ii. 431  
 River, i. 250  
 Bronxville, i. 252  
 erection of Dutch Ref. Church in, i. 252  
 Brook, Andre, i. 368  
 Angle Fly, ii. 260  
 Blind, ii. 129  
 Cedar Tree, or Gravelly, i. 34  
 Hutchinson's, i. 246  
 Mill, ii. 260  
 Plum, ii. 255  
 Pockeotessen, ii. 20  
 Stillwater, ii. 124  
 Stony Hill, ii. 123  
 Stony, or Beaver Meadow, ii. 150  
 Tippet's, or Mosholu, ii. 613  
 Brown, Deliverance, i. 59  
 James, i. 412  
 Brown's Point, i. 381  
 Brundage, Rev. Albner, i. 146  
 Budd, John, ii. 155  
 Buel, Rev. Clarence, ii. 14  
 Byram River, ii. 205
- CAMPBELL, Cap't. Archibald, i. 253  
 Camp Field, i. 723

- Carter, Rev. Lawson, i. 242  
 Castle Hill Neck, ii. 264  
 Catonah, Sachem, i. 733  
   death of, i. 36  
 Cedar Tree Brook, ii. 84  
 Certificate of trustees of Eastchester, i. 238  
   of recognition by Governor of Connecticut, ii. 56  
   of General Assembly of New York, ii. 311  
   of induction, ii. 323  
   of lease of land in North Castle, i. 726  
   by Caleb Heathcote to character of Rev. Daniel Bondet, i. 610  
   of dismission to Mr. Jean Carle, i. 674  
   of incorporation of Home for Incurables, ii. 531  
 Charter, Royal, for Cortlandt Manor, i. 94  
   of Grace church, Rye, ii. 187  
   for Manor of Philipsborough, ii. 589  
   for Morrisania, ii. 470  
   of St. Peter's church, Peekskill, i. 120  
   of St. Peter's church, Westchester, i. 301  
   Trinity church New Rochelle, i. 682  
 Chastellux, Marquis of, i. 171  
 Chatterton Height, i. 356  
 Chatterton Hill, ii. 570  
 Chauncey, Rev. Peter S., ii. 12  
 Casqua River, i. 38  
 City Island, or Great Minniefords, ii. 74  
   ferries of, established, ii. 77  
   Grace church organized and erected in, ii. 82  
   rectory of Grace church in, ii. 82  
   list of rectors of Grace church in, ii. 83  
   Methodist Episcopal church in, ii. 82  
 Clapp, Thomas, ii. 385  
 Clinton, Gen., ii. 166  
   Sir Henry, ii. 275  
 Coe, John, ii. 152  
 Cohamog Pond, i. 722  
 Colgan, Rev. Mr., ii. 183  
 Commission of Rev. Daniel Bondet, i. 618  
 Conover, Rev. Edward, ii. 150  
 Constant Silas, i. 133  
 Conveyance of land, abstract of, for Friends' meeting-house at Crompond, ii. 671  
   by Andrew Johnson to Caleb Hall and others, i. 113  
   by Indians to West India Company, ii. 575  
   for church in New Rochelle, i. 672  
   by John Wale, ii. 266  
   by Lewis Morris to James Graham, ii. 448  
   to Presb. church in White Plains, ii. 545  
 Cook, Capt. Joel, ii. 638  
 Cooper, James Fenimore, ii. 249  
   residence of, ii. 249  
 Cooper's Corners, or Wilmo., i. 694  
   St. John's church in, i. 694  
   St. John's church, list of rectors of, i. 694  
 Copp, John, i. 27  
 Cornell's Neck, or "Snakapins," ii. 264  
 Cortlandt House, ii. 613  
 Cort'andt, town of, i. 83  
   Manor of, i. 83  
   first independent election for, i. 200  
   partial division and partition of, i. 105  
   Indian burying-ground in, i. 84  
   erection of Manor of, i. 94  
   Royal charter for Manor of, i. 94—98  
   Peekskill formerly in, i. 112  
   three precincts in Manor of, i. 118  
 Cortlandtville in, i. 156  
 Annsville in, i. 158  
 Verplanck in, i. 165  
 Parsonage, or Montrose's Point in, i. 172  
 Manor, the 'old Dutch church of, i. 172, 173  
   erection of first church in, i. 174  
   erection of present church in, i. 174  
 Cortlandtown, incorporation of Dutch Reformed church of, i. 177  
   list of ministers of the Ref. Dutch Church in, i. 177  
 Cruger's in, i. 180  
 Croton, village in, i. 184  
 Van Cortlandt cemetery in, i. 194  
 Coutant family, i. 689  
 County Historical Society, formation of, ii. 551  
 Covel, Samuel, i. 70  
 Cow Boys, i. 306  
 Crawbucky Point, ii. 20  
 Creek, Hutchinson's, i. 246  
   Rattlesnake, i. 245  
   Tuckahoe, ii. 656  
   Westchester, i. 422  
 Creighton, Rev. William, i. 296  
 Crompond, ii. 665, 672  
   Episcopal services held at, ii. 665  
   Presbyterian Society organized and incorporated in, ii. 666  
   erection of Pres. church in, ii. 666  
   Presbyterian church in, burned by the British, ii. 666  
   present Presbyterian church in, ii. 668  
   list of pastors and supplies of Presbyterian church in, ii. 669  
   Congregational Society of, ii. 671  
   Friends' meeting house near, ii. 671  
   Revolutionary trouble at, ii. 674  
   Davenport's house in, ii. 682  
 Cromwell family, i. 372  
   Col. John, i. 371  
   story of, i. 373  
 Crosby, Enoch, i. 199  
   Rev. Alexander H., i. 282  
 Cross or Peppeneghegk Pond, i. 488  
   river, i. 460  
   Baptist church incorporated in, i. 400  
   Meth. Epis. church incorporated in, ii. 460

- Croton, i. 154  
 Protestant Episcopal church in, i. 184  
 Methodist Episcopal church in, i. 164  
 Friends' meeting-house of, i. 184  
 Manor-house of, i. 184  
 Dam, breaking away of, i. 186  
 Falls, ii. 259
- Crotonville, ii. 705  
 Methodist church in, ii. 705  
 Friends' meeting-house in, ii. 705
- Cruger, Hon. Nicholas, i. 183  
 John, i. 181
- Cruger's, i. 180
- DANIELS, Isaac, i. 174
- Dark Valley, i. 119
- Davenport, Rev. John, i. 51, 53
- Davenport's Neck, i. 686
- Deed, abstract of, to John Paulding, i. 155  
 abstract of quit-claim, to Dutch Reformed church of Cortlandt, i. 175  
 for church lot in Cortlandt, i. 119  
 for church lot in New Rochelle, i. 644  
 for glebe to Presb. ministers of Salem, i. 443  
 for site of Second Presbyterian church of Bedford, i. 52  
 of St. Ann's church, Morrisania, ii. 493  
 to Pres. church of Bedford, i. 49  
 of glebe lands in Lewisboro, i. 432  
 partition, of Manor of Cortlandt, i. 106  
 to East Chester, i. 210  
 to John Knights, i. 92  
 to Petrus Stuyvesent, i. 265  
 warrantee from James Cockcroft to Ref Dutch church of Cortlandt, i. 174
- Deeds for church lot in Lewisboro, i. 423-429
- "Deer's Delight," i. 76
- De Graff, Henry B., i. 183
- De Kalb, Baron, i. 193
- De La Fayette, Marquis i, 112, 188
- Delafeld family, account of, ii. 624-626  
 Major Joseph, ii. 624
- De Lancy family, genealogy and arms of, i. 478, 480  
 Bishop William Heathcote, i. 487  
 James, i. 725, ii. 427  
 John Peter, ii. 736  
 Mills, ii. 423  
 Oliver, Brig. Gen., i. 109, ii. 427  
 Stephen, i. 731, 736
- De Lancy's Neck, or Long Beach Point, i. 463
- De Lauzun, Duke, i, 188
- Denham, Isaac, i. 59  
 Rev. Thomas, ii. 42
- Devil's Den, ii. 124
- Dibble, Rev. Geo. i. 65  
 John, i. 32
- Dibblee, Rev. Ebenezer, i. 742
- Disbrow, Peter, i. 498, ii. 139
- Dobb's Ferry, i. 274  
 retreat of British to, i. 275  
 meeting of Arnold and Andre at, i. 275  
 engagement of British and Americans at i. 279  
 American army encamped at, i. 280  
 Washington's head-quarters at, i. 280  
 French army encamped at, i. 281  
 meeting of British and American commanders at, i. 281
- "Dobs Jan," i. 274
- Document at Albany, i. 473  
 endorsed Van Freederick Philipse, i. 511  
 to the public, ii. 563  
 ancient in the Rich family, ii. 600
- Documents relating to Andre's capture, i. 311, 451  
 Fordham, ii. 507, 511
- Donald, Capt. Lewis M., i. 52, 66.
- Dongan, Gov., ii. 137
- "Dorman's Island," i. 413
- Doty, Rev. John, i. 128, 132
- Doughty, Elias, ii. 586  
 Gen. Geo. H., ii. 586  
 Hon. John, ii. 586  
 Rev. Franciscus, ii. 586
- Drake, Rodman, ii. 444  
 Samuel, i. 250
- Dyckman, Staats Morris, i. 178
- EASTCHESTER, town of first so called, i. 202  
 agreement of proprietors of, i. 204  
 Royal Patent of, i. 205  
 magistrates appointed for, i. 208  
 Long Reach in, i. 210  
 confirmed by deed, i. 210  
 Royal Patent of Long Reach in, i. 211  
 public lands of, i. 212  
 Mount Vernon in, i. 213  
 first settlement in, i. 213  
 name, confirmed by charter, i. 213  
 first school-house erected in, i. 214  
 election of first representative from Westchester county, i. 215  
 first Congregational church in, i. 218  
 first minister called to, i. 219  
 made a precinct of Westchester parish, i. 221  
 old church of, i. 222  
 made a distinct parish, i. 225  
 list of ministers of Cong'l church of, i. 228  
 foundation of present church in, laid, i. 234  
 St. Paul's church erected and incorporated in, i. 235  
 land appropriated to the church of, i. 240  
 second incorporation of St. Paul's church in, i. 240  
 Meth. Epis. church organized, incorporated and erected in, i. 244



- Eastchester, West Mount Vernon in, i. 250  
     erection of Dutch Reformed church of  
     Bronxville in, i. 252  
     Stephen Ward's house in, attacked by the  
     British, i. 252  
     Waverly, village in, i. 213  
     Washingtonville in, i. 213  
 East Patent, or Undivided Land, i. 402  
 East Tarrytown, i. 549.  
 "E. H.," anecdote about, i. 75  
 Euketanpnanson, or Hog-Pen Ridge, i. 134  
 Eustis, James, i. 250  
 Extract about de Lancy's movement, ii. 684  
     concerning the state of the church in West-  
     chester, ii. 337  
     from address of J. W. Tompkins, ii. 566  
     ancient town records of Westchester, ii.  
     296  
     assize records, ii. 271  
     British account of ambushade at Mile  
     Square, ii. 601.  
     Col. Morris's letter to V. P. S., ii. 519.  
     diary of Pres. Styles, ii. 73  
     family ledger of the Philipse family, i. 511.  
     Irving's life of Gen. Washington, ii. 692  
     sketch book, ii. 609  
     Wolfert's Roost, i. 537  
     journal of Judge Lewis Morris, ii. 631  
     Lee's history of the southern war, ii. 680  
     letter from Peekskill, i. 489  
     of Frederick Philipse, ii. 646.  
     of Leonard Lispenard, i. 642  
     of M. de Tracy, ii. 453  
     of Mr. John Bartow, ii. 373  
     of Mrs. Cornelia Beeckman, ii. 525  
     of Pierre Van Cortlandt, i. 565  
     of Samuel Young, ii. 442  
     of St. George Talbot, i. 743  
     of Viceroy of Canada, ii. 453  
     from Mr. Bondet's report to V. P. S., i. 613  
     from N. Netherland Vertoogh, ii. 631  
     from New York paper of 1845, ii. 573  
     from original records of old Dutch church  
     in Sleepy Hollow, i. 539  
     from Philipse family papers, ii. 641  
     from record of New York Classis, ii. 520  
     from records of Salem, i. 461  
     from Sparks's life of Washington, ii. 636  
     from town records of Harrison, i. 387  
     of North Castle, i. 713  
     of Pelham, ii. 101  
     of Yonkers, ii. 659  
     of Yorktown, ii. 706  
     of Underhill's Reminiscences of the Revo-  
     lution, ii. 693  
     of Weems life of Gen. Washington, ii. 633  
     will of Catharine Philipse, i. 529  
     will of Hon. Frederick Philipse, ii. 640  
     will of Mrs. Anne Richbell, i. 473  
 Extracts from Gen. Heath's memoirs, ii. 417,  
     570, 678  
     from letters to V. P. S., ii. 614, 623, 661  
     from Simcoe's Military Journal, ii. 622, 651  
     from Thatcher's Military Journal, i. 555, ii.  
     674  
 FANCHER, John, ii. 115  
     William, ii. 116  
 Fauconier, Peter, i. 569  
 Felch, Rev. Nathan, i. 67  
 Ferguson, Rev. Geo. W., ii. 14  
 Ferris, Hon. Charles G., i. 377  
 Flandreau family, i. 690  
 Field family, i. 378  
 Flanagan, Betty, i. 553  
 Fletcher, Gov., i. 23  
     Flora, i. 767  
 Fordham, manor of, ii. 503  
     Indian proprietors of, ii. 503  
     Manor of, confirmed by royal charter, ii. 512  
     situation of ancient village of, ii. 519  
     situation of present village of, ii. 519  
     Dutch Ref. church organized in, ii. 519  
     list of Dutch Ref. ministers in, ii. 520  
     St. James' Prot. Epis. church incorporated  
     and consecrated in, ii. 522  
     list of rectors of St. James church in, ii. 524  
     revolutionary incidents, ii. 525  
     fortifications in, ii. 528  
     St. John's college in, ii. 530  
     St. Joseph's divinity school in, ii. 530  
     Home for Incurables in, ii. 531  
 Forrest Edwin, ii. 627  
 Fort Hill, i. 723  
     Independence, i. 160, ii. 528, 614  
     Mercer, ii. 693  
     Mifflin, attack upon, ii. 692  
     Montgomery, i. 163  
     No. 8, ii. 528  
     Schuyler, ii. 417  
 Foster, Rev. Isaac, i. 53  
 Fountain, Elder Ezra, i. 69  
     James, i. 73  
 Four Corners, account of engagement between  
     British and Americans at, i. 553  
     Kosciusko's head-quarters at, i. 561  
 Fowler, Rev. Andrew, i. 132  
 Franklin, Dr. Benjamin, i. 138  
 Freeman, John, i. 149  
 Friends, or Quakers, the, i. 381.  
 GOAT Island, i. 696  
 Golden's Bridge, i. 460  
     Meth. Epis. church in, i. 460  
 Graham, Isaac G., i. 563  
     James, ii. 329, 449  
 Grant for settlement, i. 203  
     for Throckmorton's Neck, ii. 264

- Grant for Cornell's Neck, ii. 270  
 John Pell's of New Rochelle, i. 583  
 to people of Rye, ii. 536  
 of "Hop Grounds by Katoonah and others,  
 i. 13  
 Rev. Ebenezer, i. 53  
 Green, Rev. Jacob, i. 55  
 Greenburgh, town of, i. 258  
 aboriginal name of, i. 258  
 Presbyterian church organized and erected  
 in, i. 281  
 Episcopal church organized and incorpor-  
 ated in, i. 282  
 list of rectors of Zion church in, i. 282  
 erection and consecration of Zion church  
 in, i. 283  
 erection of Zion chapel in, i. 283  
 St. Barnabas' church incorporated and con-  
 secrated in, 284  
 village of Hastings in, i. 272  
 village of Dobb's Ferry in, 274  
 village of Tarrytown in, i. 294  
 location of, i. 349  
 Presbyterian church organized in, i. 349  
 list of ministers of the Pres. church in, i.  
 349  
 present Pres. church erected in, i. 350  
 attack upon cow-boys in, i. 355  
 village of Hart's Corners in, i. 357  
 village of Greenville in, i. 358  
 Greene, i. 277  
 Greenville, i. 358  
 Dutch church organized and incorporated  
 in, i. 358  
 list of ministers of Dutch church in, i. 358  
 Guion family, i. 670  
 Isaac, i. 636  
 Guion's Neck ii. 207  
 "H," Elisha, a spy, (Hames or Holmes), i. 71  
 Haight, Samuel, i. 371  
 Halliday, Rev. D. M., i. 148, 149  
 Hamilton, James A. i. 285  
 Hammond, David, i. 308  
 Harlem Bridge, ii. 488  
 River, i. 529  
 Harrison family, i. 371  
 John, i. 370  
 Harrison, town of, i. 361  
 first proprietor of, i. 361  
 settlers of, i. 371  
 Brown's Point in, i. 381  
 purchase in, i. 381  
 Friends' settlement in, i. 381  
 revolutionary engagement in, i. 386  
 Hart Island, ii. 84  
 Hart's Corners, i. 356  
 Meth. church erected in, i. 357  
 Haskell, Rev. Samuel, i. 135  
 Hastings, or Burying Hill, i. 272, ii. 160  
 officers appointed for government of, ii. 163  
 merged into Rye, ii. 163  
 fight in, between Hessians and Americans,  
 i, 272  
 Hawley, Rev. Charles, i. 677  
 Rev. Thomas, i. 738  
 Hayes, Col. Isaac, i. 436  
 Heath, Gen., i. 166  
 Heathcote, Col. Caleb, ii. 212, 217, 229  
 appointed judge advocate of a court mar-  
 tial, ii. 225  
 death of, ii. 227  
 last will and testament of, ii. 227  
 family, sketch of, ii. 215-217  
 Hill, i. 493  
 Heights of North Castle, i. 723  
 Henderson, Rev. Josiah, i. 54  
 Henlet's Island, i. 696  
 Heyward, Col. John R., i. 247  
 Holmes, Col. James, i. 70  
 Mrs. Patty, i. 73  
 Hotel, Flanagan, i. 553  
 Houdin, Rev. Michael, i. 647  
 Howe, Gen., i. 166  
 Hoyt, Rev. Warner, i. 436  
 Huggeford, Dr. John, i. 118  
 Peter, i. 117  
 Huguenots, the, or French Protestants, ii. 587  
 history of, ii. 587  
 Hunt, Stephanus, i. 177  
 Walter, i. 563  
 Hunter's Island, ii. 88  
 Huntingdon, James P., i. 677  
 Huntington, Gen., i. 166  
 Hunt's Point, ii. 444  
 Hurtlebury Island, i. 696  
 Hutchinson, Ann, ii. 29  
 murder of, by Indians, ii. 32  
 Hutchinson's Brook, i. 246  
 Creek, i. 246  
 River, i. 242, ii. 68  
 INDENTURE, i. 763  
 conveying land to Thomas Putchard, i. 62  
 between Thomas Pell and Edward Blagge,  
 ii. 60  
 between Thomas Pell, sr., and Thomas  
 Pell, jr. ii. 61  
 between Nanette Anne Bolton and Christ  
 church, Pelham, ii. 99  
 between Robert Walters and others and  
 Indians, i. 106  
 said, confirmed by Royal Patent, i. 107  
 between Frederick Felipe and Jacobus  
 Van Cortlandt, ii. 587  
 said confirmed, ii. 588  
 Indian Bridge, ii. 623  
 deed, i. 19

Indian deed confirming lands to the proprietors  
of Ridgefield, i. 393  
deed of Apawamis, ii. 150  
of Euketaupucson, ii. 135  
of Fordham, ii. 504  
of Harrison, i. 362  
of Honge, ii. 136  
of Kewigheleck, i. 93  
of Manussing, ii. 130  
of Meahagh, i. 86  
of Mentipathe, ii. 517  
of Mockquams, ii. 131  
of Neppiran, to Hon. Frederick Philipse, i. 270  
of Nippizan to Hon. Frederick Philipse, i. 269  
of Patthunck, ii. 140  
of Pekantico, to Hon. Frederick Philipse, i. 268  
of Rahonanness, ii. 130  
of Sachus, i. 83  
of Senasqua, i. 85  
of Shenorock, ii. 150  
of Shenorock, and others, ii. 152  
of Toquams, i. 104  
of Wampus's Land, i. 566  
of Wapeto and others, ii. 142  
same confirmed, ii. 143  
of Weckquaskeck, i. 507  
of Weghqueghe, to Hon. Frederick Philipse, i. 270  
of Westchester, ii. 289, 290  
of West Farms, ii. 433, 434  
of Wishqua, i. 89  
of quit claim to Sam. B. Isaacs, i. 417  
to Captain Patrick, i. 390  
of same confirmed to Mr. Stephen Goodier, i. 391  
to Col. Caleb Heathcote, ii. 211  
to Daniel Simpkins, i. 22  
to Jacobus Van Cortlandt, and Zachariah Roberts, i. 32  
to John Belden and others, i. 392  
to John Dibble, i. 31  
to John Richbell, i. 465  
to Lewis Morris, ii. 463  
to Master Roger Ludlow, i. 389  
to the planters of Norwake, i. 391  
deeds for portions of North Castle, i. 699, 700, 701, 702, 703  
to Bedford, i. 29, 31, 35  
Field, ii. 623  
money, ii. 5  
Inglis, Rev. David, ii. 56  
Inscription in cemetery of North Salem, i. 759  
in Christ church, Pelham, ii. 96  
in Christ church, Tarrytown, i. 296  
in desk Bible of Shrub Oak M. E. church, ii. 694

Inscription in old parish burial-ground in Rye, ii. 186  
on bell of old Dutch church in Sleepy Hollow, i. 527  
on bell of St. Peter's church, Westchester, ii. 478  
on foundation stone of old church in Fordham, ii. 521  
on head-stone to Major Samuel Pell in Eastchester church-yard, ii. 68  
on head-stone to Rev. John Smith, ii. 545  
to Washington Irving, i. 537  
on medal to Capt. Joel Cook, ii. 638  
on monument in Chester cathedral, England, to Frederick Philipse, i. 524  
monument to Andre's captor's, i. 345  
monument to George McChain, i. 145  
monument to Isaac Van Wart, i. 350  
monument to John Paulding, i. 142  
monument to Rev. Ebenezer Punderson, ii. 187  
monument to Rev. Silas Constant, ii. 671  
monument to Sarah Guerlain, ii. 431  
monument to Thomas Hunt, ii. 445  
monument to Thomas Paine, i. 694  
in old Dutch church in Sleep Hollow, i. 526  
in Ref. Dutch church of Tarrytown, i. 296  
on slab to Gouverneur Wilkins, ii. 400  
slab to Rev. Epenetus Townsend, i. 430  
slab to Washington Irving, i. 292  
on stone in grave-yard, i. 141  
stone to Capt. Stephen Bayard, ii. 402  
stone to Edward Underhill, ii. 401  
stone to Isabella Wilkins, ii. 393  
stone to James Bailey in Union burying-ground, Somers, ii. 250  
stone to John Jay, in family cemetery, Rye, ii. 204  
stone to Joshua Purdy, ii. 205  
stone to Judith Watkins, ii. 204  
stone to Margaret, wife of Enoch Crosby, in Somers grave-yard, ii. 261  
stone to Peter J. Munro, ii. 204  
stone to Philip Honeywell, ii. 402  
stone to Philip Livingston, ii. 403  
stone to Rev. David Foote, ii. 193  
stone to Rev. Evan Rogers, ii. 196  
stone to Rev. Isaac Wilkins, ii. 393  
stone to Rev. John Ireland, ii. 391  
stone to Rev. William Powell, ii. 397  
stone to Sir James Jay, Kn't, ii. 204  
stone to Thomas Underhill, ii. 406  
stone to William (Bailly) Query, ii. 402  
stone to Wright Post, ii. 403  
tablet in Christ Church, Rye, i. 176  
tablet in St. Peter's chapel, Peekskill, i. 138  
tablet to Col. Roger Morris, ii. 695  
tablet to Hon. Gouverneur Morris, ii. 495  
tablet to Rev. Alex. H. Crosby, ii. 643

Inscription tablet to Ebenezer Dibblee, l. 744  
 tablet to Elias Cooper, ii. 642  
 tablet to James Wetmore, in Parish burial ground, Rye, ii. 186  
 William Thompson, in Christ church, Rye, ii. 176  
 tomb of Anne Van Cortlandt, l. 195  
 tomb of Catharine Van Cortlandt, l. 395  
 tomb of Gerard G. Beeckman, l. 195  
 tomb of Pierre Van Cortlandt, l. 194  
 tomb-stone to Polycarpus Nelson, i. 495  
 tomb-stone of Rev. Samuel Seabury, ii. 374  
 tomb-stone of Rt. Rev. Sam'l Seabury, ii. 386  
 vault of Charlotte Amelia Bayley, i. 620  
 over the porch at Sunny Side, l. 286  
 Tomb-stone to Amherst Morris, i. 696  
 to Amos N. Raymond, i. 431  
 to Ann Raymond, ii. 483  
 to Barnardus Swartwout, l. 536  
 to Capt. John Buckhout, i. 536  
 to Capt. W. Morris, ii. 484  
 to Catharine Thomas, i. 378  
 to Charity Haggeförd, i. 384  
 to Charles Floyd Thomas, i. 378  
 to Col. Gilbert Budd, i. 495  
 to Col. Lewis Morris, ii. 483  
 to Col. Thaddeus Crane, i. 759  
 to Dr. Benjamin Delavan, i. 759  
 to Hannah Mead, i. 450  
 to Hon. Col. William Smith, ii. 226  
 to Isaac Lounsberry, i. 574  
 to James Bailey, i. 574  
 to James Wright, ii. 253  
 to John Bruen, i. 249  
 to John Lewis, i. 435  
 to Joseph Rodman Drake, l. 445  
 to Lemuel Wells, ii. 644  
 to Maj. Gen. Thomas Thomas, i. 435  
 to Martha Tunstall, ii. 227  
 to Miss Susannah Howland, ii. 644  
 to Mrs. Althea Lamson, l. 65  
 to Nancy Thomas, i. 378  
 to Peter Paulding, i. 536  
 to R. W. in Friends grave-yard, in Purchase, ii. 384  
 to Rev. Abraham Purdy, i. 759  
 to Rev. Augustine P. Prevost, l. 244  
 to Rev. David Scott, i. 431  
 to Rev. Ebenezer Grant, l. 55  
 to Rev. Russell Trevett, l. 760  
 to Solomon Meade, l. 450  
 to Samuel B. Isaacs, i. 418  
 to Sally Hoyt, l. 431  
 to Stephen Hoyt, l. 431  
 to Stephen Ward, i. 255  
 to William Leggett, l. 669  
 Inscriptions in burial-ground in Poundridge, ii. 112  
 in burial-ground in Rye, ii. 186-196

Inscriptions in cemetery at Clinton, l. 434  
 in cemetery at Lewisboro, i. 431  
 in cemetery of Pres. church, Lewisboro, l. 450  
 in cemetery of Pres. church, Sing Sing, ii. 16, 86  
 in Christ church, Pelham, ii. 96-98  
 in Dale cemetery Sing Sing, ii. 4-8  
 in De Lancy cemetery, Mamaroneck, l. 494  
 in Jay family cemetery, Rye, ii. 204  
 in Middle Patent burying-ground, i. 722  
 in Pelham Manor cemetery, ii. 86  
 in Purdy family burial-place in Rye, ii. 205  
 in Yorktown cemetery, ii. 665  
 on grave-stones in Bedford Cemetery, l. 40  
 on grave-stones in North Salem cemetery, i. 759  
 Monuments in Dale cemetery, Sing Sing, ii. 4-9  
 in Pres. grave-yard, White Plains, ii. 548  
 in Somer's grave-yard, ii. 261  
 to members of the Pell family, ii. 86  
 Stones in grave-yard of old Dutch church, Sleepy Hollow, i. 536  
 in old burying-ground in New Rochelle, l. 668  
 in burying-ground in Rye, ii. 196  
 tombs in Crompond grave-yard, ii. 669  
 Instructions to John Richbell, i. 465  
 Inventory of estate of Pres. society, in Lewisboro, i. 445  
 of estate of Sir Thomas Pell, ii. 46  
 of money, plate, &c., belonging to Philipse, manor-house, i. 519  
 Ireland, Rev. John, ii. 389  
 Irving, family of, i. 290  
 Irving, Washington, l. 265  
 Isaacs, Samuel B., l. 418  
 Island, City, or "Great Minniefords," ii. 74  
 Goat, i. 696  
 Hart, ii. 84  
 Henlet's, i. 696  
 Hunter's, ii. 696  
 Hurtlebury, i. 696  
 Locust, i. 696  
 Manussing, or Minneris, ii. 129  
 Maskett's, i. 696  
 Pea, i. 696  
 Vanchese, i. 696  
 JACKSON, Rev. Charles, ii. 397  
 Jay, Augustus, ii. 200  
 Homestead, l. 77  
 Hon. John, i. 37, 780  
 " " LL. D., i. 79  
 " " principal events in life of, l. 79  
 " " tribute to, l. 79  
 " " resolutions of Supreme Court upon death of, l. 79  
 Hon. John anecdote of, l. 79  
 " " biographical sketch of, ii. 201



- Jay, Isaac, ii. 199  
 Judge William, i. 37, 80  
 Judge William, death of, i. 80  
 Peter, ii. 201  
 Pierre, ii. 197
- Jeffard's Neck, ii. 449
- Jenney, Rev. Robert, ii. 183
- Jessup, Edward, ii. 435
- Johnson, Mr. William, ii. 364
- Jones, Morgan, i. 220  
 Rev. Eliphalet, ii. 170  
 Rev. John, i. 47
- "KAAKEOUT" Hill, i. 550
- Kastoniuck, ii. 2
- Katonah, i. 80  
 Katonah, situation of, i. 80  
 Katonah, churches of, i. 80  
 Katonah, incorporation of M.E. church in, i. 81  
 Kearny, Rev. Ravand, i. 241
- Keeler, Jeremiah, i. 428
- Keeler, Jonah, i. 741
- Keelerville, i. 741
- Kensico, M. E. Church in, i. 714
- Kieft, Director, i. 261
- King Street, ii. 209
- King's Bridge, ii. 433, 610
- Kinnicut, Luther, ii. 118
- Kirby's Pond, i. 578
- Kosciusko, Thaddeus, i. 561
- LAKE, Assognatah, or Trinity, i. 435  
 Byram, i. 721  
 Mohegan, ii. 693  
 Osceola, or Magrigaries, ii. 661  
 St. Mary's, ii. 573  
 Waccabuck, or Wepuck, i. 457.
- Lamson, Rev. Joseph, i. 64, ii. 187
- Larchmont, i. 502
- Laurens, Henry, i. 602
- Lawrence, Isaac, i. 247
- Lawton, William, i. 671
- Lease and release of land in North Castle, i. 723  
 for church lot in Scarsdale, ii. 244  
 of portion of Bronck's Land, ii. 451
- Lee family, ii. 664
- Le Count family, i. 679
- Leggett, Gabriel, ii. 446  
 Rev. John H., i. 147  
 Thomas, i. 447
- Leisler, Hon. Jacob, i. 585  
 table of descendants of, i. 535
- Lent, Hercules, i. 91
- Letter, from André to Gen. Washington, i. 453  
 from Augustus Van Cortlandt, ii. 618  
 from R. Lincoln, ii. 604  
 from Col. Greene, ii. 677  
 from Continental officer, ii. 122  
 from Gen. Israel Putnam, i. 153
- Letter from Gen. Samuel Parsons, i. 500  
 from Gov. Hunter, i. 629  
 from Gov. Nicoll, ii. 459  
 from Gov. Tompkins, ii. 235  
 from Gov. Tryon, i. 500  
 from Jno. Dexter, ii. 676  
 from John Jay, i. 37  
 from Joseph Strang, ii. 674  
 from Judge Young, i. 536  
 from Lewis Morris, second, ii. 475  
 from Lieut. Col. Tarleton, ii. 121  
 from M. Etienne de Lancy, i. 482  
 from Mr. Barclay, ii. 364  
 from Milner, ii. 373  
 from Oliver Cromwell, ii. 53  
 from Rev. David Bonrepos, i. 604  
 from Rev. John Jones, i. 47  
 from Rev. John Nye, ii. 55  
 from Rev. Peter Stoupe, i. 636  
 from Secretary of New York, ii. 459  
 from settlers of Hastings, i. 162  
 from vestry of Peekskill, i. 125  
 from vestry of Rye, ii. 182  
 from Washington Irving, i. 534  
 of instructions to vestries, M. 181  
 to Gen. Maunsell, ii. 76  
 to Gen. Washington, i. 348  
 to Hon. Provincial Congress, ii. 117  
 to vestry of Rye, ii. 185  
 to vestry of Trinity church, N. Y., i. 241
- Letters from the church of New Rochelle, i. 613, 614, 646  
 from Col. Caleb Heathcote, i. 368, 612, 614, ii. 331  
 from Gen. Washington, i. 695, ii. 684, 687  
 from Gen. W. W. Morris, ii. 500  
 from Gov. Peter Stuyvesant, ii. 279, 281, 593  
 from Lewis Morris, ii. 451, 561  
 from Mr. John Bartow, i. 633, ii. 324  
 from Rev. Daniel Bondet, i. 611, 626  
 from Rev. Ebenezer Dibblee, i. 419, 743  
 from Rev. Mr. Houdi, i. 648, 657  
 from Rev. Thomas Standard, ii. 354-364  
 from Thomas Hughes, ii. 681, 683  
 of administration on estate of Capt. Richard Morris, ii. 459  
 of administration on estate of Jwifrow Slagboom, ii. 453  
 of administration to Mr. William Beeckman, ii. 453  
 of institution, ii. 365, 376  
 relating to André's capture, i. 311, 451  
 to Gen. W. W. Morris, ii. 500  
 to Gov. Stuyvesant, ii. 280, 281  
 to Lewis, John, i. 433
- Lewisboro, town of, i. 339  
 original name of, i. 389  
 incorporation of, i. 359  
 name changed to, i. 389

- Lewisboro, church erected in, i. 415  
   church in, sold, i. 422  
   church in, reorganized and incorporated,  
     i. 425  
   church in, named, erected and consecrated,  
     i. 427  
   list of rectors of church in, i. 432  
   church in, endowed, i. 432  
   corner-stone of St. Paul's in, laid, i. 435  
   rectory of St. Paul's erected in, i. 436  
   Vista, village in, i. 428  
   first Presbyterian ordination in, i. 440  
   first Presbyterian church gathered in, i. 440  
   erection of first Presbyterian church in, i. 449  
   present Presbyterian church erected in, i.  
     449  
   parsonage erected in, i. 449  
   list of ministers of Presbyterian church in,  
     i. 449  
   Presbyterian church in, incorporated, i. 450  
   temporary prison of André in, i. 451  
   Cross River, village in, i. 420  
   Golden's Bridge, village in, i. 450  
 License for settlement in New Netherlands, ii.  
   204  
   from Bishop of London to Mr. Bartow, ii.  
     322  
   from Caleb Heathcote for sale of land, i. 639  
   Gov. Dongan for marriage, i. 516  
   to Adriaen Van der Donck to bequeath  
     property, i. 583  
   to Elias Bonrepos as school-master, i. 606  
   to erect a church in New Rochelle, i. 619  
 Lines by Rodman Drake, on the Bronx, ii. 444  
   of Flitz Greene Halleck, to Croton Lake, ii.  
     703  
   upon André's capture, i. 344  
 Lispenard, Antoine, i. 686  
   Leonard, i. 687  
 Livingston, Col. Henry B., i. 170, 188  
   John, i. 65  
 Lockwood, Capt. Joseph, ii. 109  
   Hon. Samuel Drake, ii. 119  
   " " " sketch of, ii. 119-12"  
   Maj. Ebenezer, ii. 113  
   " " " sketch of, ii. 113, 115  
 Locust Island, i. 696  
 Long Pond, i. 457  
 "Long Reach," i. 210  
 Lorillard, Peter, ii. 431  
 Ludlow family, ii. 627  
 Lyon " i. 721  
   James, i. 73  
   Rev. David C., i. 57  
 MAMARONACK, Indian chief, i. 84  
 Mamaroneck, town of, i. 463  
   meaning of name, i. 463  
   original inhabitants of, i. 463  
 Mamaroneck site of Indian village in, i. 464  
   records of, i. 492  
   Heathcote Hill in, i. 493  
   de Lancy cemetery in, i. 494  
   Episcopal church erected and consecrated  
     in, i. 496  
   present parish organized and incorporated  
     in, i. 496  
   list of rectors of, i. 497  
   Methodist Episcopal society organized in,  
     i. 497  
   Larchmont, village in, i. 502  
   River, i. 493  
 Mandate from Gov. Burnet, ii. 355  
   from Gov. Cornbury, ii. 323  
   from Gov. Moore, ii. 376  
   from Gov. Tryon, i. 128  
   from Lieutenant Governor Colden, ii. 306  
 Manussing Island, or Minnerris, ii. 129  
   list of first settlers of, ii. 161  
   settlers of, declare allegiance, ii. 161  
 Maramaking, or "Lame Will," ii. 128  
 Marshall, Rev. William, i. 148  
 Maskett's Island, i. 696  
 Mather, Warham, ii. 317  
 Mayaro, Indian, i. 1  
 Mead, Rev. Edward N., ii. 12  
   Rev. Solomon, i. 441  
 Mehanas River, i. 722  
 Merwin, Jesse, or "Ichabod Crane," i. 533  
   a letter of Irving's to, i. 534  
 Metsewakes, i. 84  
 Middle Patent, i. 722  
   " " M. E. church, in, i. 722  
 Mile Square, in Greenburgh, i. 539  
 Miles, Rev. John, i. 151  
 Mill Brook, ii. 260  
 Mills, Jonathan, i. 72  
   Rev. Samuel, i. 51  
 Milner, John, i. 234, ii. 356, 374, 650  
 Milton, ii. 196  
   Grace chapel in, ii. 195  
 Mohegan Lake, ii. 693  
 Mongockonone, Sachem of Weckquaskeck, i.  
   259  
 Monument to Col. Benjamin Greene, ii. 261  
   to Hon. Col. William Smith, ii. 226  
   to John Bruen, in old church of Tarvin, ii.  
     249  
   to Martha Tunstall, ii. 227  
 Morris, Col. Roger, ii. 634, 695  
   family, sketch of, ii. 455-478  
   " Yorktown branch of, ii. 695  
   Hon. Lewis, ii. 239  
   Lewis, 1st, i. 215, ii. 455  
   " 2nd, ii. 469, 478  
   Richard, ii. 453  
 Morrisania, manor of, ii. 451  
   derivation of name, ii. 451

Morrisania, first proprietor of, ii. 458  
     erected into township and manor, ii. 470  
     present proprietors of, ii. 487  
     Melrose, in, ii. 488  
     Mott Haven, in, ii. 488  
     Woodstock in, ii. 488  
     Eltona in, ii. 488  
     formerly a precinct of Westchester parish,  
         ii. 492  
     St. Ann's church, founded in, ii. 493  
     list of rectors of St. Ann's church in, ii. 497  
     St. Paul's parish, organized in, ii. 497  
     division of Continentals stationed at, ii. 498  
 Mosier, Lieut. William, i. 183  
 Mott's Neck, i. 503  
 Mount Misery, i. 396  
 Mount Pleasant, town of, i. 505  
     Sleepy Hollow in, i. 505  
     "      "      church in, i. 526  
     grave-yard of old Dutch church in, i. 536  
     Beechwood in, i. 549  
     St. Mary's church in, i. 549  
     Pleasantville in, i. 549  
     St. John's church in Pleasantville, in, i. 549  
     East Tarrytown in, i. 549  
     county poor-house in, i. 549  
     Four Corners in, i. 553  
     Unionville in, i. 562  
 Mount Vernon, i. 213  
     incorporated, i. 213  
     West, i. 250  
 Mountain, Anthony's Nose, i. 163  
     Buttermilk, i. 563  
     Turkey, ii. 698  
     Wepuck, i. 457  
 Mountains, Asproom, i. 396  
 Muirson, Rev. Geo., ii. 178  
 Munro, Peter Jay, i. 502  
 Munro's Neck, or Larchmont, i. 503  
 Muscoota River, ii. 260  
 Mutighticoos River, i. 734  
 Myanos River, i. 13  
  
 NEGRO FORT, ii. 528  
 "Neutral Ground," the ii. 612  
 New Castle, town of, i. 565  
     Indian name of, i. 565  
     aboriginal proprietor of, i. 565  
     principal proprietors of, i. 572  
     New Castle corners, village in, i. 573  
     a precinct of Rye parish, i. 573  
     St. George's church in, i. 574  
     incorporation of St. George's church in, i.  
         575  
     Methodist Episcopal church incorporated  
         in, i. 575  
     present M. E. church erected in, i. 575  
     erection and incorporation of St. Mark's  
         church in, i. 576

New Castle, list of rectors of St. Mark's church  
     in, i. 577  
     Sarlesville, hamlet in, i. 577  
     Friends' meeting-house in, i. 577  
 New Rochelle, town of, i. 581  
     the Huguenots of, i. 587  
     village of, incorporated, i. 601  
     settlement of, i. 601  
     name of, i. 601  
     first church built by Huguenots in, i. 603  
     erection of church in, i. 622  
     disturbances in the church at, i. 630  
     meeting-house erected by seceders in, i. 630  
     church closed in, i. 662  
     parish reorganized in, i. 663  
     present church edifice in, i. 666  
     old burying-ground in, i. 668  
     list of ministers and rectors of, i. 670  
     Presbyterian church incorporated, built  
         and dedicated in, i. 675  
     Presbyterian church in, i. 671  
     list of ministers of Presbyterian church in,  
         i. 676  
     present Presbyterian church erected in, i. 676  
     Beachwood cemetery incorporated in, i. 678  
     M. E. society organized and incorporated  
         in, i. 678  
     Baptist church in, i. 678  
     Roman Catholic church erected in, i. 678  
     Upper Rochelle, hamlet in, i. 694  
     Coopers' Corners, or Willmot, in, i. 694  
     sufferings of, in the Revolution, i. 695  
 Nicholls, Gov. Richard, ii. 38  
 Nippiran Island, i. 269  
 North Castle, town of, i. 697  
     origin of name of, i. 697  
     Indian name of, i. 697  
     Mount Misery in, i. 698  
     Armonck, village in, i. 713  
     Kensico, " " i. 714  
     North Castle, " " i. 714  
     St. Stephen's church organized and erected  
         in, i. 715  
     list of rectors of St. Stephen's church in, i. 715  
     old M. E. church incorporated in, i. 715  
     new M. E. church erected in, i. 715  
     Col. Jameson's headquarters at, i. 716  
     Brimstone Alley, in, i. 719  
     Heights of, i. 723  
     Fort Hill in, i. 723  
     Camp Field in, i. 723  
     Rye Pond in, i. 723  
 North Salem, town of, i. 733  
     erection of township of, i. 733  
     organization of parish in, i. 742  
     union of parish in, with churches in Ridge-  
         field and Ridgebury, i. 744  
     union of Bedford and Stephentown with,  
         i. 755

- North Salem, erection of St. James' church in, i. 757  
 list of rectors of, i. 756  
 church incorporated in, i. 757  
 erection of second church in, i. 758  
 first Presbyterian congregation in, i. 760  
 its incorporation as a Congregational church in, i. 761  
 its incorporation as a Presbyterian church in, i. 762  
 list of pastors and supplies of, i. 762  
 erection of old Presbyterian church in, i. 762  
 erection of present church in, i. 762  
 organization of M. E. society in, i. 763  
 incorporation of Baptist society in, i. 763  
 incorporation of Universalist society in, i. 763  
 erection of Friends' meeting-house in, i. 763  
 erection of academy in, i. 763  
 act of incorporation of academy in, i. 766  
 Natural Bridge in, i. 766  
 chalybeate spring in, i. 767  
 boulder-stone in, i. 767  
 first election of town officers in, i. 769  
 Notice, obituary of Andrew Corsa, ii. 532  
 of Father Orsenigo, i. 768  
 of Hon. Pierre Van Cortlandt, i. 110  
 of Hon. Robt. A. Morris, ii. 485  
 of Moses Field, ii. 698  
 of Mrs. Mary Morris, ii. 483  
 of Rev. Andrew Fowler, i. 132  
 of Rev. Isaac Wilkins, ii. 394  
 public, for sale of lands, i. 570  
 " of survey and balloting for lots, i. 706  
 " to freeholders and inhabitants of Westchester Co., ii. 556
- OBITUARY NOTICE, see notice.
- Odell, Gen. Jacob, ii. 653  
 Jonathan, i. 295
- Ogilby, Rev. John, ii. 24
- Onderdonk Rev. B. T., ii. 12
- "Oostdorp," ii. 279
- Order for invent. of Lewis Morris' estate, ii. 467  
 from Baron DeKalb, i. 193  
 from Col. L. Morris to Gov. Coloe, ii. 461  
 general of N. Y. State Society of the Cincinnati, i. 242  
 in Council, ii. 277  
 of Col. Drake, ii. 705  
 of Col. Hull, ii. 705  
 of Congress, ii. 612  
 of Council of War, i. 208  
 of Council to people of Rye, ii. 472  
 of Court of Sessions, ii. 272  
 of Dutch authorities, ii. 277  
 of Gen. Washington, ii. 676  
 of Governor and Council, ii. 155
- Order of Governor Richard Nicolls, ii. 271  
 of " Tryon, i. 128  
 of Thomas Pell, ii. 287  
 of town officers of Rye, ii. 164  
 to Capt. Jacques Cortelyou, ii. 469  
 to Thomas Pell, ii. 469
- Orders of Gen. Assembly at Hartford, ii. 280  
 to Lewis Morris, ii. 459
- Ossining, town of, ii. 1  
 orthography of, ii. 1  
 Sing Sing in, ii. 4  
 Sparta in, ii. 15  
 Crawbuck Point in, ii. 20  
 Zion Hill in, ii. 21  
 Briar Cliff in, ii. 23
- Oblong, description of, i. 396, 737  
 map of, i. 737  
 release of, to Jonah Keeler, i. 739  
 controversy concerning, i. 396  
 settlement of boundary line of, i. 397  
 ceded to New York, i. 397  
 Royal patent for lower portion of, i. 408
- PAGE, Rev. Bernard, i. 132
- Paine, Thomas, i. 691, 694
- Palmer, Benjamin, ii. 79  
 Francis A., i. 57  
 Sir Edmund, i. 153
- Parcot family, i. 689
- Parsonage, or Montrose's, Point, i. 172  
 Point, Prot. Epis. church at, i. 178
- Passport to Daniel Bonnett, i. 595
- Patent, Bedford, i. 24  
 de Lancy, i. 735  
 for Cornell's Neck, ii. 273  
 for Grove Farm, ii. 268  
 for Nepperhaem, ii. 534  
 Gov. Andros's, for Bronck's Land, ii. 462  
 letters, for Mamaroneck, i. 470  
 middle of North Castle, i. 701  
 Nicoll's, for Bronck's Land, ii. 454  
 "Rie," ii. 141  
 royal for Bedford, i. 34  
 " " Bronck's Land, ii. 454  
 " " Budd's Neck, ii. 156  
 " " church and ground at New Rochelle, i. 625  
 " " ferry, ii. 206  
 " " Harrison's Purchase, i. 364  
 " " lower portion of the Oblong, i. 408  
 " " Scarsdale, ii. 212  
 " letters, of Middle Patent, i. 704  
 " of East Chester, i. 205  
 " of Fordham, ii. 505  
 " of Long Reach, i. 211  
 " of part of North Castle, i. 728.  
 " of Rye, ii. 146  
 " of Sachus, or Ryck's Patent, i. 89  
 " of West Farms, ii. 434



Patent royal of White Plains, ii. 541  
to people of Stamford and the same confirmed by Indians, ii. 103, 106  
West of North Castle, i. 567  
Patents Royal for the Oblong, i. 399, 400  
for Pelham Manor, ii. 38, 57  
for Westchester, ii. 287, 289  
Paulding, John, i. 117, 141, 142, 156, 308, 309  
birth and death of, i. 155, 156  
William, i. 143  
Pea Island, i. 696  
Peach Pond, i. 767  
Peekskill, town of, i. 112  
Indian name of, i. 112  
earliest settlement of, i. 113  
settlement of present village of, i. 113  
village of, incorporated, i. 113  
village government of, organized, i. 113  
educational advantages of, i. 114  
military academy in, i. 115  
academy in, i. 115  
high school of, i. 115  
St. Gabriel's school (Episcopal) in, i. 115  
the Seminary of Our Lady of Angels, (Roman Catholic) in, i. 155  
young ladies' school in, i. 115  
earliest records of parish of, i. 118  
supplies for divine service in, i. 118  
erection and dedication of St. Peter's church in, i. 119  
confirmed in possession of church ground and cemetery, 120  
St. Peter's church in chartered, i. 120  
first vestry-meeting of church in, 124  
the ch. in petitions the V.P.S. for aid, i. 124  
first rector called to, i. 127  
rector admitted to the rectory in, and instituted by Gov. Tryon, i. 128  
glebe secured to parish of, i. 129  
troubles in the church in, i. 131  
religious services suspended in, i. 132  
sacked and burnt, i. 132  
Presbyterians attempt to seize church and glebe in, i. 132  
first incorporation of St. Peter's church after the revolution, i. 133  
second rector called to, i. 133  
resignation of second rector of, i. 134  
rectors of St. Peter's church in, i. 135  
sale of the glebe of, i. 136  
St. Paul's church organized in, i. 136  
St. Peter's chapel incorporated, erected and re-incorporated, as St. Peter's church of Cortlandt in, i. 139  
list of rectors of Cortlandt in, i. 140  
monument to the memory of John Paulding in, i. 141  
public honors to the memory of John Paulding in, i. 143

Peekskill, address of William Paulding in, i. 143  
Dutch Reformed church founded in, i. 144  
incorporation of Van Ness Reformed Dutch church in, i. 145  
erection of first Presbyterian church in, i. 146  
incorporation of Independent Presbyterian church in, i. 146  
organization of the present Presbyterian church in, i. 147  
organization of second Presbyterian church in, i. 148  
erection and dedication of church edifice in, i. 148  
erection of parsonage in, i. 149  
organization of first Baptist church in, i. 150  
erection and dedication of meeting-house in, i. 150  
list of pastors of Baptist church in, i. 150  
Baptist burying-ground in, i. 150  
M. E. church incorporated and erected in, i. 150  
Protestant Methodist society established and incorporated in, i. 151  
list of Wesleyan or Primitive Methodist ministers of, i. 151  
erection of Wesleyan church in, i. 151  
society of Friends organized, and meeting-house erected in, i. 151  
Rom. Cath. church and institutions in, i. 151  
execution of Edmond Palmer as a spy in, i. 153  
British in possession of, i. 157  
account of engagement with the British in, i. 157  
destruction of old Continental village of, i. 159  
remains of Fort Independence in, i. 160  
Sir Henry Hudson's impressions of this region, i. 160  
Pelham Bridge, ii. 84  
Dale, ii. 68  
Neck, ii. 70  
" landing of British forces upon, ii. 73  
Priory, ii. 37  
Pelham, town of, ii. 27  
origin of name of, ii. 27  
plantation of Ann Hutchinson in, ii. 29  
Indian Massacre in, ii. 32  
Manor of, erected, ii. 56  
Royal Patent granted to, ii. 57  
Bartow, village in, ii. 88  
parish of Christ church organized and church erected in, ii. 94  
rectory erected in, ii. 99  
list of rectors of Christ church in, ii. 100  
erection of Huguenot Forest Memorial chapel in, ii. 101

- Pelhamville, ii. 69  
   Episcopal church in, ii. 69  
 Pell family, pedigree of, ii. 39, 64  
   Rev. John, ii. 50  
     " " diary of, ii. 51  
     " " letters of, ii. 29, 52  
   Thomas, will of, ii. 63  
 Pellew, Henry Edward, i. 780  
 "Pequot Mills," i. 396  
 Perry, Rev. David, i. 753  
 Petition for patent for the church at New Rochelle, ii. 622  
   this reported upon, ii. 623  
   for royal patent for oblong, i. 400  
   " " " " " granted, i. 399  
   from Adriaen van der Donck, ii. 581  
   from church of New Rochelle, i. 642  
   from East Chester, i. 230  
   from French church at New Rochelle, i. 651  
   from John Richbell, i. 467  
   from Lower Yonkers, ii. 639  
   from Mayor and Alderman of New York, ii. 611  
   from New Rochelle, i. 588  
   from people of Fordham and West Farms, ii. 443  
   from people of Rye, ii. 145  
   " " " Westchester, ii. 285  
   from proprietors of Ridgefield, i. 397  
   from Rev. Mr. Bondet, i. 608  
   from trustees of St. Peter's church, Westchester, ii. 387  
   Westchester, ii. 367.  
   from the vestry of Peekskill, i. 126  
   " " " Salem, i. 745  
   Indian, i. 473  
   to collect funds for the erection of a minister's house at New Rochelle, i. 650  
   to Gov. Geo. Clinton, i. 405  
 Petitions from people of Bedford, i. 23, 24  
   from Richard Mills, ii. 284  
 Philipse family, sketch of, i. 508  
   Frederick, i. 508  
   Hon. Frederick, i. 268, 522  
   Mary, ii. 633  
   Philip, i. 517  
 Piamikin, i. 1  
 Pinckney, Henry, i. 248  
   Philip, i. 249  
 Pine's Bridge, ii. 705  
 Pintard, Capt. Sam., i. 679  
   Dr. John, i. 596  
 Pleasantville, i. 563  
   M. E. church in, i. 563  
 Plum Brook, ii. 255  
 Pocantico River, i. 268, 506  
   description of, i. 545  
 Pockeotessen Brook, ii. 205  
 Poem upon Andr , i. 320  
 Pomeroy, Maj. Gen. Seth, i. 141  
 Pond, Beaver, i. 251  
   Cohamong, i. 722  
   Crom, or Crooked, ii. 672  
   Cross, or Peppeneghek, i. 438  
   Long, i. 457  
   Peach, i. 767  
   Rye, ii. 723  
   Simmons', i. 578  
   Wampus, i. 578  
 Poningoe Neck, ii. 129  
 Ponus Neck proprietors of, ii. 144  
 Ponus i. 2.  
 Popham, Brigadier Maj. William, ii. 240  
   family, ii. 240  
 Portchester, ii. 206  
   Pres. church erected in, ii. 207  
   list of pastors of Pres. church in, ii. 207  
   Somerfield M. E. church built and dedicated in, ii. 208  
   Baptist church dedicated in, ii. 208  
   list of pastors of Baptist church in, ii. 208  
   Rom. Cath. church in, ii. 208  
   " " " pastors of, ii. 208  
   corner-stone of Prot. Epis. church in, 208  
   consecrated and named, ii. 209  
   rectory built in, ii. 209  
   list of rectors of, ii. 209  
 Port Morris, ii. 491  
 Poumpahowhelsheln, i. 260  
 Poundridge, town of, ii. 103  
   origin of name of, ii. 103  
   transferred from Connecticut to New York, ii. 108  
   first settlers of, ii. 109  
   Presbyterian church incorporated and erected in, ii. 109  
   government of Presbyterian church in, ii. 109  
   list of ministers of Presbyterian church in, ii. 110  
   a precinct of Rye parish, ii. 111  
   Episcopal services in, ii. 111  
   M. E. church incorporated and erected in, ii. 111  
   skirmish between British and Americans in, ii. 113  
   account of action in, ii. 121  
   Boutonville, village in, ii. 124  
 Powel, Rev. William, ii. 397  
 Powhag, or Pinaghag, ii. 105  
 Prevost, Maj. Gen. Augustine, ii. 69  
 Prince Charles's redoubt, ii. 528  
 Pritchard, Rev. Thomas, i. 60, ii. 178  
 Protest of inhabitants and freeholders of Westchester County, ii. 557, 551  
 Prudden, Rev. John, i. 41  
   " " Peter, ii. 171  
 Public notice, See notice.

- Punderson, Rev. Ebenezer, i. 65, ii. 187
- Purchase by Frederick Philipse from the Indians, and the same confirmed, ii. 3
- by Zachariah Roberts from Indians, i. 32
- of "Hop Grounds" from Indians, i. 13
- of Meahagh, (Verplanck's Point) by Hon. Stephanus Van Cortlandt, i. 86
- of Rippowams, or Bedford, from Indians, i. 2
- of Salem from Indians, i. 733
- Purchase, or Rye Woods, ii. 381
- Friend's meeting-house in, ii. 381
- Purdy family, ii. 663
- Francis, ii. 166
- Hon. Joshua, i. 597
- Purdy's Station, i. 768
- Putnam, Gen. Israel, i. 153
- QUANTINE, ISAAC, i. 636
- Quinnahung, or Great Planting Neck, ii. 444
- "RAVEN'S ROCK," i. 551, ii. 123
- Raymond Hill, ii. 117
- Receipt for manorial quit-rent, i. 98
- for money by Rachel Pell, i. 587
- for quit-rent of East Patent, i. 402
- " " on Ryck's Patent, i. 91
- " " to Bedford, i. 35
- " " from Thomas Pell, i. 687
- Receipts for quit-rent, i. 438, 477
- for rent to Lords of Philipsborough, ii. 603
- " " Purdy's of Yorktown, ii. 663
- Reed, Elder Nathan, i. 70
- Reid, Robert, ii. 246, 653
- Release between Caleb Fowler and Joseph Sutton, i. 710
- from Levinus and Anne Clarkson, to B. Smith and others, i. 708
- from Indians to Geo. Booth, i. 703
- of burial-ground of St. Peter's church, ii. 3-9
- of church glebe from executors of Joseph Pell to David Guion, i. 658
- of land to Frederick Philipse, ii. 2
- " " Huguenots, i. 586
- of Oblong proprietors to Jonah Keeler, i. 759
- Report of engineers upon navigation of Croton River, ii. 705
- Requa, Capt. James, i. 117
- Resolutions adopted by people of Rye and Westchester, ii. 552
- adopted by Provincial Congress, ii. 564
- " " Westchester, ii. 554
- Rhineland, Philip Jacob, i. 674
- Rich family, ii. 600
- Richardson, John, ii. 437
- Richbell, John, i. 465
- Riker, i. 90
- River, Acquacknounge, or Hutchinson's, i. 242, Bronx, i. 250 [ii. 63]
- Byram, or Armonck, ii. 205
- Cisqua, i. 38
- Cros3, i. 38
- Croton, i. 83
- Harlem, i. 529
- Kisco, i. 579
- Mehanas, i. 722
- Mill, i. 437
- Muscoota, ii. 260
- Pocantico, i. 268, 506
- Pockeotessen, ii. 205
- Sheldrake, i. 492
- Sin Sinck, ii. 4
- Sprains, ii. 654
- Titicus, i. 734
- Wysquaqua, i. 259
- Rivington, James, ii. 269
- Roberts, Zachariah i. 18
- Robinson, Col. Beverly, i. 129, 130, 275
- Rochambeau, Count de, i. 188, 280
- Rodman, Rev. Washington, ii. 240
- Rodman's Point, ii. 31
- Ryder, Mrs. Susannah, ii. 22
- Rye Pond, i. 723
- Rye, town of, i. 23
- protection of Connecticut granted to, i. 23
- meeting of Commissioners to fix the boundary line of, i. 29
- finally secured to New York, i. 29
- origin of name of, ii. 127
- Indian name of, ii. 127
- claim of Connecticut to, ii. 132
- annexed to Connecticut, ii. 133
- settlement of boundary of, ii. 134
- agreement for change of boundary of, ii. 138
- claims of New York and Connecticut to, referred to the King, ii. 138
- the King's proclamation regarding, ii. 139
- boundary line of, finally settled, ii. 139
- list of early inhabitants of, ii. 139
- application for Patent for, ii. 140
- list of deputies from, to General Court, ii. 142
- Royal Patent issued to, ii. 144
- people of, ask for Patent, ii. 145
- Royal Patent granted to, ii. 146
- the State claims quit-rent of, ii. 150
- Budd's Patent in, divided, ii. 159
- first settlement in, ii. 160
- Burying Hill, or Hastings in, ii. 160
- Manussing Island in, ii. 160
- Hastings merged into, ii. 163
- erected into a market-town, ii. 163
- ferry established between Long Island and, ii. 165
- first religious society of, ii. 167
- list of ministers of Cong'l church in, ii. 172

- Rye, Presbyterian church erected in, ii. 173  
 Presbyterian church in, burned and rebuilt, ii. 174  
 formal organization of Presbyterian church in, ii. 175  
 Presbyterian church and chapel erected in, ii. 175  
 list of pastors of Presbyterian church in, ii. 175  
 Grace church erected and chartered in, ii. 167, 187  
 precincts of, ii. 177  
 name of Grace church changed to Christ's church, ii. 193  
 new church built and consecrated in, ii. 193  
 Christ's church in, burned, ii. 193  
 new church built and consecrated in, ii. 193  
 Christ church incorporated in, ii. 193  
 list of rectors of Christ's church in, ii. 194  
 Methodism introduced into, ii. 195  
 Methodist Episcopal church erected and re-modeled in, ii. 195  
 Milton, village in, ii. 196  
 Jay family residence in, ii. 203  
 Port Chester, village in, ii. 206  
 ferry established in, ii. 206  
 King street M. E. church in, ii. 209  
 " " Baptist church in, ii. 209  
 " " list of pastors of, ii. 209  
 Continental forces quartered in, ii. 210
- SACKETT, REV. RICHARD, i. 50  
 Sackett, Rev. Samuel, i. 146, 668  
 Sale of land by New York, for quit-rent, i. 108  
 in Fordham, ii. 503  
 in North Castle, by Indians, i. 702  
 in Rye, by John Coe, i. 133  
 in Westchester, by John Wile, ii. 268  
 to Caleb Hall, by Andrew Johnson, i. 113  
 to Geo. Booth and others, i. 211  
 to John Johnston, by Bedford, i. 23  
 to John Sent, by Philip Verplanck, i. 107  
 lands of Pres. church in Lewisboro, i. 447  
 Sands family of North Castle, i. 715  
 Sarah Bishop cave, i. 453  
 Sarles, Nancy H. i. 71  
 Sarlesville, i. 577  
 Scarsdale, town of, ii. 211  
 origin of name of, ii. 211  
 erected into manor, ii. 212  
 parish organized in, ii. 243  
 corner-stone of church laid in, ii. 243  
 church of St. James-the-Less incorporated in, ii. 243  
 grounds conveyed to church in, ii. 243  
 list of rectors in, ii. 247  
 tragical occurrence in, ii. 248  
 British forces in, ii. 248  
 Friends' meeting-house in, ii. 250
- Schleffelin, Col. C. M., i. 246  
 Schuyler, Gen., i. 185  
 Schuylerville, ii. 422  
 Seabury, Rev. Samuel, ii. 374  
 " " " Jr., ii. 375  
 " " " institution as Rector of St. Peter's church, Westchester, ii. 376  
 Seabury, Rev. Samuel, Jr., letters of, ii. 377-384  
 consecrated Bishop, ii. 384  
 death of, ii. 385  
 Secor family, ii. 232, 689  
 Shanarockwell, or Shanarocke, ii. 117  
 Shebeck, Rev. Geo., i. 755  
 " Shippa," i. 581.  
 Shrub Oak, ii. 693  
 M. E. Church organized, incorporated and erected in, ii. 694, 696  
 St. Mary's parochial church in, ii. 696  
 Lake Mohegan, near, ii. 694  
 Shute, Elisha, i. 250  
 Simmon's Pond, i. 578  
 Sing Sing, ii. 4  
 village of, incorporated, ii. 9  
 St. Paul's Prot. Epis. church in, ii. 11  
 rectory of St. Paul's in, ii. 13  
 list of rectors of St. Paul's church in, ii. 13  
 Trinity church organized in, ii. 13  
 M. E. church in, ii. 14  
 Baptist church organized and erected in, ii. 14  
 present Baptist church erected in, ii. 14  
 list of pastors of Baptist church in, ii. 14  
 Pres. church erected in Sparta, afterwards removed to, ii. 15  
 present Pres. church erected and consecrated in, ii. 16  
 list of ministers of Pres. church in, ii. 16  
 Americans surprised by British troops in ii. 19  
 State-prison in, ii. 21  
 Crawbuck point in, ii. 20
- Sisranoy, ii. 28  
 Skinners, the, i. 306  
 Slawson, Nathan, ii. 117  
 Sleepy Hollow, i. 505  
 Dutch Reformed church in, i. 526  
 old Dutch church first organized and erected in, i. 538  
 first minister of church in, i. 538  
 list of ministers of, i. 542  
 onderlingen en diakenen of old Dutch church in, i. 543  
 Headless Horseman of, i. 546  
 Smith family of North Castle, i. 712  
 Joshua H., i. 275  
 Matson, i. 677  
 Rev. J. Ritchie, i. 149  
 Rev. John, ii. 173  
 Somers, Capt., ii. 251



- Somers,  
 town of, ii. 251  
 first name of, ii. 251  
 origin of name of, ii. 251  
 village of, ii. 255  
 St. Luke's church incorporated in, ii. 257  
 list of rectors of St. Luke's church in, ii. 257  
 Presbyterian church incorporated in, ii. 257  
 present Presbyterian church erected in, ii. 258  
 list of pastors of Presbyterian church in, ii. 258  
 first M. E. society incorporated in, ii. 258  
 Methodist brick church incorporated in, ii. 258  
 Croton Falls, village in, ii. 259  
 Presbyterian church organized and erected in, ii. 260  
 West Somers, village in, ii. 260  
 Mount Zion M. E. church incorporated and erected in, ii. 260
- Soulice family, ii. 690
- Sparta, ii. 25
- Spencer, Rev. J. Selden, i. 296
- Spicer's Neck, ii. 264
- "Spy Oak," ii. 415
- St. Mary's Lake, ii. 573
- Standard, Rev. Thomas, ii. 234, 354  
 letters of, ii. 354-364  
 death of, ii. 362  
 will of, ii. 362
- "Stepping stone light," ii. 420
- "Stoney Hills," ii. 123
- Stoupe, Rev. Pierre, i. 634
- Strang family, ii. 673  
 Maj. Thomas, ii. 673
- Strebeck, Rev. Geo., i. 67
- Stuart, Rev. Alexander, i. 60
- Studwell, Thomas, ii. 152
- Sturgeon, Rev. Robert, i. 50
- Summerville, James, i. 253
- Sunny Side, i. 285
- Surrender of rights by people of Westchester, ii. 236
- Sutton family, i. 571
- Survey of West Farms, ii. 438
- TALBOT, St. George, i. 65, 743
- Taphance, ii. 105
- Tarleton, Col., i. 74
- Tarrytown, i. 294  
 settlement of, i. 294  
 churches of, i. 294  
 erection and consecration of Christ's ch. in, i. 295  
 erection of second Ref. Dutch ch. in, i. 296  
 of first Ref. Dutch church, the old Dutch church in, i. 296  
 succession of pastors of Ref. Dutch churches in, i. 297
- Tarrytown, Asbury M. E. church, incorporated and re-organized, in, i. 297  
 erection of second M. E. church, in, i. 298  
 " " St. Paul's, i. 298  
 Baptist church, in, i. 298  
 capture of André, in, i. 299  
 monument to André's captors, in, i. 346  
 Revolutionary incidents in connection with, i. 346
- Teller, William, i. 85, 196
- Teller's Point, i. 85
- Ten Broeck, Rev. Petrus, i. 136
- Tennent, Rev. William, i. 48
- Testimony about Col. Green's surprisal, ii. 685
- Tetard's Height, or Hill, ii. 528, 614
- The old Westchester Path, ii. 128
- Thomas family, i. 373  
 Hon. John, i. 373  
 Rev. John, i. 374
- Thomson, Rev. John, i. 146
- Throckmorton, John, ii. 266
- Throckmorton's Neck, ii. 265  
 " Point, ii. 417
- Tippett's Vale, ii. 620
- Tompkins, Hon. Daniel D., ii. 233  
 ancestors of, ii. 233  
 family of, 233  
 biographical sketch of, ii. 233, 239  
 death of, ii. 239
- Townsend, Rev. Epenetus, i. 736  
 death of, i. 754
- Tremont, ii. 528  
 Mount Hope, or House of Rest for Consumptives, in, ii. 529  
 list of officers of Consumptives' Home, in, ii. 529
- Trevett, Rev. Russell, i. 760
- Tryon, Gov., i. 128
- Tuckahoe, ii. 655  
 Episcopal chapel erected in, ii. 656  
 list of Rectors of St John's chapel in, ii. 657  
 Meth. church in, ii. 653  
 settlement of, ii. 658
- Tuckahoe Hills, ii. 657  
 historical incidents connected with, ii. 657
- Turner, Nathaniel, i. 2
- "Turtle Rock," i. 75
- Twitching's Corners, i. 561  
 Isaac, i. 561
- UNDERHILL, Capt. John, i. 7, 197; ii. 30  
 battle of —, with the Indians, i. 7  
 biographical account of the family of, ii. 405  
 Elder Charles H., i. 70  
 family, ii. 698
- Unionville, i. 562  
 Dutch Ref. church organized and incorporated in, i. 563

- Upper Rochelle, i. 694  
 Meth. church in, i. 694
- VALENTINE family, ii. 603  
 Mathias, ii. 603  
 Susan, anecdote of, ii. 605
- Valentine's Hill, ii. 528
- Van Cortlandt family, ii. 616  
 Col. Philip, i. 109, 111  
 residence of, i. 184  
 brief sketch of life of, i. 111  
 Gertrude, wife of Stephanus, i. 105  
 Hon. De Heer Stephanus, i. 101  
 Pierre, i. 109  
 principal events in life of, i. 109  
 death of, i. 110  
 Jacobus, i. 36; ii. 616  
 partition of the estate of, i. 37  
 Manor, partial division of, i. 105  
 final partition of, i. 106  
 Oliver, i. 105  
 ducal arms of, i. 99  
 Oloff Stephenson, i. 100  
 autograph and seals of, i. 100  
 Stephanus, i. 86, 94, 98, 734  
 first lord of the manor, i. 98  
 descended from, i. 98
- Van Gurler, Arendt, ii. 452  
 sketch of, ii. 452
- Van der Donck, Adrien, ii. 579
- Van Elslandt, Claes, ii. 276
- Van Tassel House, i. 286  
 Jacob i. 287, 290
- Van Tassels, Abraham, ii. 23
- Van Wart, Isaac, i. 309, 552
- Varian family, ii. 247
- Vanduse Island, i. 696
- Vanet Hill, ii. 620
- Venerable Propagation Society, i. 232  
 address of people of New Rochelle to, i. 615  
 extracts from letters to, i. 614, 623  
 extracts from Mr. Bondet's report to, i. 618  
 Col. Heathcote's letters to, i. 612, 614  
 Gov. Hunter's letter to, i. 629  
 letter from, ii. 185  
 vestry of New Rochelle to, i. 646  
 letters to, i. 232, 419; ii. 182, 218  
 " " by the clergy of the Province, i. 339  
 Lewis Morris' second letter to, i. 478  
 Mr. Bartow's letters to, i. 633; ii. 324  
 Mr. Bondet's letters to, i. 611, 636  
 Mr. Houdin's letters to, i. 648, 657  
 Mr. Milner's letter to, ii. 373  
 Mr. Standard's letters to, ii. 334, 364  
 Rev. Peter Stoupe's letters to, i. 636, 645  
 R. Rev. Dr. Seabury's letters to, ii. 377-384
- Venerable, petition to, from church of New Rochelle, i. 642
- Verplanck, i. 164
- Verplanck's Point, i. 163
- Vincent, Gilbert, Jr., i. 245
- Vista, i. 438  
 churches and other public buildings of, i. 438
- Vote of thanks by Congress to Andre's captors, i. 319
- Vredeland, ii. 275
- WACCABUCK Lake, i. 450
- Waddington Point, ii. 446
- Wampum, i. 5
- Wampus Pond, i. 578
- Wapping, i. 163
- Ward, Hon. Stephen, i. 254
- Warrant for seizure of John Richbell, i. 471  
 Survey of Harrison's Purchase, i. 364
- Warren, Joseph, i. 135
- Wascussue, i. 1
- Washington, Gen. Geo., i. 167, 280  
 head-quarters of, i. 280; ii. 573, 604
- Washingtonville, i. 213
- Waverly, i. 213
- Webb, Gen. James Watson, i. 547
- Weed, Elnathan, ii. 115
- Wells, Rev. Geo., i. 67
- West Farms, town of, ii. 433  
 Kings Bridge, in, ii. 433  
 survey of, ii. 438  
 village of, ii. 440  
 churches in, ii. 440  
 Episcopal church erected, consecrated and incorporated in, ii. 440  
 Presbyterian church incorporated and erected in, ii. 441  
 list of pastors of Presbyterian church in, ii. 441  
 Dutch Ref. church organized and incorporated in, ii. 441  
 M. E. society incorporated in, ii. 442  
 during the Revolutionary war, ii. 442  
 Manor of Morrisania in, ii. 451  
 Manor of Fordham in, ii. 503  
 William's Bridge in, ii. 523  
 Tremont, in, ii. 523  
 Home for incurables first, in, ii. 531  
 " " " removed to Fordham, ii. 532  
 West Somers, ii. 260
- Westchester, town of, ii. 263  
 original purchase of, ii. 263  
 first settlers of, ii. 264  
 ancient name of, ii. 264  
 Dutch and English claims to, ii. 275  
 first patent granted to, ii. 287  
 second " " " ii. 289

- Westchester, submission of, tendered to the Dutch, ii. 289  
landing at, ii. 295  
school-districts in, ii. 295  
village, ii. 295  
first settlement of, ii. 295  
witchcraft in, ii. 297  
shiretown in county, ii. 299  
court-house in, burned, ii. 299  
market and fair in, ii. 300  
incorporated as borough-town, ii. 300  
Royal Charter granted to, ii. 300  
first settlers of, Congregationalists, ii. 314  
parish of, ii. 316  
first church edifice in, ii. 319  
second church edifice erected in, ii. 320  
first rector of, ii. 321  
charter granted to St. Peter's church in, ii. 363  
St. Peter's church incorporated in, ii. 387  
second incorporation of St. Peter's church in, ii. 390  
new parish church erected in, ii. 397  
this church burned in, ii. 398  
list of rectors in, ii. 398  
list of V. P. S. school-masters in, ii. 399  
Hicksite Friends meeting-house erected in, ii. 404  
Orthodox Friends meeting-house erected in, ii. 404  
M. E. society organized and incorporated in, ii. 404  
present M. E. church erected in, ii. 404  
Roman Catholic Church in, ii. 404  
Schuylerville, village in, ii. 422  
De Lancey's mills, in, ii. 429
- Wetmore, Mr., i. 63  
Rev. James, ii. 185
- Whippoorwill Hill, i. 719  
the, i. 719  
song of, i. 720
- White, Dr. Ebenezer, ii. 672  
family, ii. 672
- White Plains, town of, ii. 535  
derivation of name, ii. 535  
difficulties of, with Rye, ii. 536  
list of original proprietors of, ii. 540  
Presbyterian church in, incorporated, ii. 547  
erected, ii. 173  
burned, ii. 547  
list of pastors of Presbyterian church in, ii. 548  
first M. E. church erected in, ii. 548  
“ “ “ burned in, ii. 549  
second “ “ erected in, ii. 549  
third “ “ “ , ii. 549  
Memorial M. E. erected and dedicated in, ii. 549
- White Plains, Grace Protestant Episcopal ch.  
organized and incorporated in, ii. 550  
originally a precinct of Rye parish, ii. 550  
Grace church consecrated in, ii. 550  
present church erected and consecrated in, ii. 551  
list of rectors of Grace church in, ii. 551  
Roman Catholic church in, ii. 552  
Baptist church in, ii. 552  
public buildings in, ii. 552  
Declaration of Independence received by Provincial Congress at, ii. 564  
burned, ii. 565  
battle of, ii. 566  
military quarters in, ii. 566  
head-quarters of Washington in, ii. 573  
St. Mary's Lake in, ii. 573
- White Point, ii. 25  
Whitfield, Rev. Geo., i. 152, 198  
Whitlock, Rev Henry, i. 436  
Wild Boar Hill, ii. 649  
Wilkins, Rev. Isaac, i. 241; ii. 391  
Will of André, i. 336  
Capt. John Underhill, ii. 411  
Col. Caleb Heathcote, ii. 227  
David de Bonrepos, i. 605  
Edward Jessup, ii. 435  
Gabriel Leggett, ii. 447  
Frederick Philipse, i. 513  
Gertrude Van Cortlandt, i. 105  
James Brown, i. 413  
John Richardson, ii. 437  
Lewis Morris, ii. 464  
Oliver Van Cortlandt, i. 105  
Peter de Lancey, i. 736  
Philip Van Cortlandt, i. 109  
Rev. Daniel Bondet, i. 632  
Rev. John Bartow, ii. 351  
Rev. Thomas Standard, ii. 362  
Stephanus Van Cortlandt, i. 102  
Stephen de Lancey, i. 736  
Stephen Van Cortlandt, i. 108  
Thomas Pell, ii. 44  
“ “ Senr., ii. 63  
Willard, Rev. Livingston, i. 149  
Willett, Hon. Thomas, ii. 274  
William's Bridge, ii. 528  
Capt. Daniel, ii. 19  
David, i. 74, 235, 309  
Rev. C. C., i. 150  
Wilmot, or Cooper's Corners, i. 694
- YERKS, John, i. 309, 562  
Yonkers Ridge, ii. 603  
town of, ii. 575  
derivation of, name of, ii. 575  
Indian name of, ii. 576  
Mile Square in, ii. 599  
Valentine's Hill in, ii. 603

- Yonkers Ridge, Washington's head-quarters in, ii. 604  
 Berrian's Neck in, ii. 606  
 Kings Bridge in, ii. 610  
 Cortlandt House in, ii. 619  
 Vault Hill in, ii. 620  
 Indian Bridge and Field in, ii. 622  
 engagement between British and Indians in, ii. 622  
 a city, incorporated, ii. 629  
 public buildings and churches of, ii. 629  
 Kings Bridge set off from, ii. 630  
 Manor Hall in, ii. 632  
 Locust Hill in, ii. 640  
 St. John's church in, burned, repaired and consecrated, ii. 640  
 first mention of parish of, ii. 644  
 first rector of, ii. 645  
 church erected in, ii. 646  
 suffering of, during the Revolution, ii. 647  
 St. John's church incorporated in, ii. 647
- Yonkers Ridge, St. John's rectory erected in, ii. 648  
 list of rectors of St. John's church in, ii. 648  
 Dutch Ref. church incorporated and erected in, ii. 649  
 M. E. church organized in, ii. 649  
 Wild Boar Hill in, ii. 649  
 Howe's head-quarters in, ii. 651  
 Revolutionary incidents connected with, ii. 651
- Yorktown, town of, ii. 661  
 township of, erected, ii. 661  
 village of Crompond in, ii. 665  
 parish of, organized, ii. 665  
 M. E. society incorporated in, ii. 671  
 Baptist " " " " ii. 672  
 Shrub Oak village in, ii. 703  
 Croton Dam in, ii. 702  
 Crotonville in, ii. 705
- ZION HILL, ii. 21











